

PP 5262 AA

THE
Novelist's Magazine.
VOL. II.

(CONTAINING)

Solyman and Almena,
The Vicar of Wakefield,
Roderick Random,
Zadig, and
The Devil upon Two Sticks.



LONDON:

Printed for Harrifon and C^o

N^o 18, Paternoster-Row.

1780.

128
10



S O L Y M A N

A N D

A L M E N A.

A N

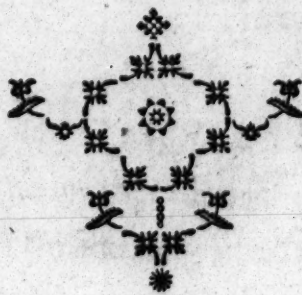
O R I E N T A L T A L E.

BY DR. LANGHORNE.

2

LIBET PARTHO TORQUERE CYDONIA CORNU
SPICULA

VIRG.



L O N D O N:

Printed for HARRISON and C^o. No. 18, Paternoster-Row.

M DCC LXXX.

TO THE

QUEEN.

MADAM,

TO the public testimonies of respect and duty offered to your
MAJESTY on the happy occasion of your nuptials, may
an individual add his wishes for the long continuance of an union
so auspicious to your people?

Distinguished by every amiable and elegant accomplishment,
your MAJESTY will not refuse your royal favour to SOLYMAN

B

and

ALMENA, since these characters are drawn, however imperfectly,
in the cause of truth and virtue.

With all possible respect and duty,

I am, MADAM,

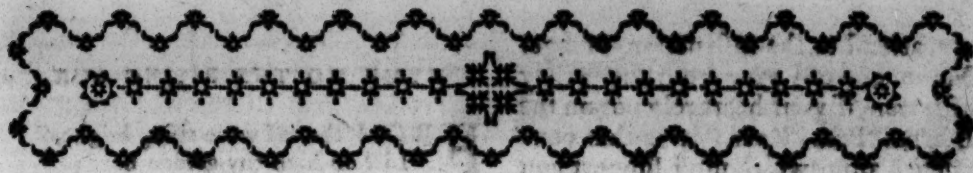
Your MAJESTY'S

Most humble

And

Most faithful servant,

JOHN LANGHORNE.



SOLYMAN AND ALMENA.

CHAP. I.



ET the sons and daughters of affliction receive comfort from hope. The motion of the sunbeams on the wave, is not more uncertain, than the condition of human life: misery, therefore, has much to hope, and happiness much to fear; but virtue has always a resource in Providence, which not only improves the blessings, but mitigates the evils of life.

In a pleasant valley of Mesopotamia, on the banks of the Irwan, lived Solyman, the son of Ardavan the sage. He was early instructed in all the learning of the east; but as his understanding opened, he grew weary of the labours of study, and thirsted only for the knowledge of mankind. With much importunity, he prevailed on his father to permit him to travel. 'My son,' said Ardavan, 'let not your curiosity interrupt your happiness: all that nature can give you, is in the valley of Irwan: here you are cherished by the eye of affection, and indulged with all the bounties of the eternal sun. Travel is often dangerous, and always inconvenient: your knowledge of men may be purchased by experiencing their treachery, their cruelty, and their pride; the unsuspecting innocence of your heart will expose you to the designs of the selfish, and the insolence of the vain; you will wander from place to place, only for amusement; as your heart

can have no connections that time or interest have rendered dear to you, you will be little affected by any thing you see: and what is more than all, your virtue will be endangered; when you behold the universal prevalence of vice, when your eye is attracted by the flowery paths in which she seems to tread, you will find it difficult to withstand the force of example, and the blandishments of pleasure.' Solyman humbled himself, and replied: 'Prince of the sages that dwell between the rivers, let your ear be patient to the words of youth. Can Ardavan doubt the integrity of the heart, which his precepts have formed to virtue; or fear that Solyman should become the slave of vice? I am not a stranger to the manners of men, though I have mixed but little among them; nor am I unacquainted with the temptations to which I shall be exposed, nor unprepared to withstand them. Travel may be attended with some inconveniences, but it has many advantages: next to the knowledge of ourselves, most valuable is the knowledge of nature; and this is to be acquired, only by attending her through the variety of her works; the more we behold of these, the more our ideas are enlarged and extended; and the nobler and more worthy conceptions we must entertain of that Power, who is the parent of universal being.'

'My son,' said Ardavan, 'if you are determined to travel, let your

ear attend to the instruction of age.
 Move not one pace from the valley
 of Irwan, if your heart rely not on the
 Eternal Providence; it is that confidence alone which must support you
 under all the possible contingencies
 of distress: O let it not depart from
 you; it is the sovereign antidote to
 the evils of life! The day is not
 lighted up in vain, let it not pass
 without the practice of virtue; dare
 not to behold the everlasting sun go
 down, if thou hast wasted his light
 in idleness or in vanity: ignorance,
 misery, or want, will always afford
 thee the means of beneficence.

May that Immortal Being, whose
 eye is over all his creatures, save thee
 from folly and from vice! may his
 hand direct thee in the hour of negligence, and his spirit guide thee
 through the maze of error! When
 thy mind shall be enriched with the
 knowledge of his works, may he restore thee, more virtuous, to the valley of Irwan, to the arms of thy aged father! and may he forgive this tear,
 which proceeds not from a distrust of
 his Providence, but falls for the loss
 of Solyman!

CHAP. II.

THE morning was spread upon the mountains, and Solyman prepared to depart: but first prostrating himself towards the sun, he thus addressed that glorious luminary. 'Incomparable, and everlasting! thou, that lightest up a thousand worlds, and extendest thy protecting power to the minutest parts of nature! let thy universal eye look with favour upon Solyman. When I wander over the wastes of desolation, may thy cheerful rays comfort and support me! when I go into the cities of men, mayest thou still look upon me; teach me to discover the dark designs of malignity, and to unfold the intricacies of fraud! so mayest thou rise with sevenfold lustre over the waves of Indus; so mayest thou be adored by those savage nations, who experience thy goodness without acknowledgment!' After this short address, he sung the following hymn.

HYMN TO THE RISING SUN.

FROM the red wave rising bright,
 Lift on high thy golden head;
 O'er the misty mountain, spread
 Thy smiling rays of orient light!

See the golden god appear!
 Flies the fiend of darkness drear;
 Flies, and in her gloomy train,
 Sable grief, and care, and pain!

See the golden god advance!
 On Taurus' heights his couriers prance:
 With him haste the vernal hours,
 Breathing sweets, and dropping flowers.

Laughing summer at his side,
 Waves her locks in rosy pride;
 And autumn bland, with aspect kind,
 Bears his golden sheaf behind.

O haste, and spread the purple day
 O'er all the wide ethereal way!
 Nature mourns at thy delay:
 God of glory, haste away!

From the red wave rising bright,
 Lift on high thy golden head;
 O'er the misty mountain, spread
 Thy smiling rays of orient light!

When Solyman had finished his devotions, he passed over the Tigris into the kingdom of Persia.

There is some secret attraction in the place where we have passed the cheerful innocence of childhood, that holds our heart to it during the remaining part of life. No sooner had Solyman ascended an eminence that gave him a retrospective view of the valley of Irwan, than he turned his eye on his native fields, and gazed for some time with a kind of pensive complacency. 'Happy scenes,' said he, 'where I have beheld the everlasting sun so often rise and set! yonder is the grove, where I reposed at noon; and that is the hill, where I mused at eve. In yon mansion, I first drew the breath of heaven; and there, perhaps, Ardavan may yet be weeping for my departure.'

The gentle heart of Solyman thus indulged itself a while, till the declining day called upon him to proceed.

CHAP. III.

WHEN he had reached the foot of Taurus, the shadows of evening fell from the mountains; he, therefore,

therefore, sought to repose himself in the village of Abdat: but as he was advancing towards it, he was stopped by an exclamation of sorrow, that proceeded from an adjacent wood. As he was in hopes of relieving some distress, he scrupled not to draw near enough to listen; and soon discovered, that the persons he heard speaking, were two lovers, who had stolen a secret interview before their final separation.

The heart of Solyman had never felt the passion of love; and he was, therefore, the more curious to see the effects of it. But how great was his astonishment, when, as he approached the place from whence the voices came, he beheld the lover lying, in all the agonies of sorrow, at the feet of his weeping mistress! 'Immortal Power,' said he, 'I have been told, that love was the best of thy gifts: is this miserable, this painful sight, a proof of it? behold that wretched youth, how his heart labours and struggles under it's oppression; while the amiable maiden, who seems to be the cause of his misery, hangs over him in tears and silence, as if incapable of relieving him! Heavens, what agonies! reason will be driven from her seat. Ha! nature gives place; he faints!'

Solyman perceiving his assistance was now become necessary, rushed into the thicket, and raised the unhappy lover from the earth. At length his senses returned; but his grief, which had before been so exquisitely violent, was changed into gloomy stupidity. Solyman, however, by the soothing sounds of pity, awoke his attention, and by gentle importunity drew from him the cause of his distress.

'Stranger,' said the youth, 'whoever thou art, thine appearance entitles thee to regard, and the compassion thou hast shewn me merits my confidence. Thou now beholdest the most unhappy of men. That lady, at whose feet I so lately lay insensible, is the daughter of a mercenary wretch, who has sold her to the Khan of Bukharia; and to-morrow she is to be conveyed to him, without expostulation or reprieve.'

'What,' replied Solyman, 'is it possible, that any thing can induce a parent to make his child miserable! I was not ignorant of the depravity

of man; but I thought the affections of nature could not have been overcome. Yet if it is so, can there be any obligation on the child, to take the portion of misery that her parent holds out to her? The obligation of children to parents, can only be founded in gratitude; and where no favour is shewn, no gratitude can be due. It is impossible that, in any circumstances, you should be more miserable; but it is very possible, that you may be happier. Fly, while the moments of liberty remain: and let not those hearts which Heaven has formed for each other, be separated by man. The roof of Ardavan has always been a refuge to innocence in distress: I will myself conduct you to the valley of Irwan, where my father's venerable character, and the retired situation of his abode, will secure you from detection; and I shall rejoice to be the means of delivering you from misery.'

This offer was too interesting to be refused. The lovers put themselves under the conduct of Solyman; and he now repassed the roads he had travelled by the light of the sun, with superior pleasure even in the gloom of night; so delightful is beneficence to a virtuous mind!

When the morning began to appear, they had reached the banks of the Tigris. 'It will not be necessary,' said Solyman, 'that I should attend you farther: yonder is the valley of Irwan, and the house of Ardavan. To know that you are unhappy, will be a sufficient motive for him to receive you; and your story will procure you his protection. I will now take leave of you, because I would not again take leave of my father. Tell him, that I recommend you to his care; he will rejoice to hear, that Solyman has been the means of your happiness: but tell him not, that I returned to the banks of the Tigris.' Having thus parted with the lovers, he proceeded on his journey, and in five days arrived at Ispahan.

The beauty and magnificence of that extensive city, engaged his attention for many days: he was now astonished at the stupendous effects of industry, and now delighted by the elegance of art. But by these, he thought himself rather amused than instructed; and he perceived

perceived that day after day departed from him, without being distinguished either by the acquisition of knowledge, or the practice of virtue; he, therefore, frequented the places of public resort, and endeavoured to form such connections as were most likely to promote both.

CHAP. IV.

AMONG those whose conversation he found most instructive and entertaining, he was particularly fond of an English merchant, who had resided some time at Ispahan, and spoke the language of the country: the merchant also perceiving in Solyman a superior understanding, and a benevolent heart, was delighted with his company, and cultivated his friendship. They frequently met; and their conversation generally turning on the manners and pursuits of men, they mutually gratified each other by accounts of their different countries.

'You,' said Solyman, 'have enjoyed the advantages which I am still to procure. You have seen many different parts of the world, and can form a collective idea of it's inhabitants: your commercial engagements must have led you much into the interests and designs of men; and you must, consequently, be well acquainted with the prevailing propensities of the heart. But I should be particularly obliged to you for an account of your own country, of which I have yet had but an imperfect description.'

'The difference of men,' said the merchant, 'lies only in their complexion and manners: their principles are the same, in all ages, and in all climates; and self-interest is the prevailing principle, from Indus to the Thames. I am not, however, such a school philosopher, as to think that the whole human species should come under this conclusion: I have experienced the delights of friendship, and the consolations of benevolence, where interest was no motive; I have even known many, who have contributed to remove the miseries of their fellow creatures, though by the diminution of their own fortune. That excellent, that truly useful spirit of munificence, in a particular manner

characterizes my countrymen. Were you, my friend, in the metropolis of Great Britain, you would behold spacious edifices erected for helpless indigence; and find the same skill and care employed for the health and the lives of the poor, that the most affluent circumstances can procure for the rich.

'But munificence is not the only ornament that distinguishes my country: there too dwell liberty and justice; liberty, that, however strange it may seem to you, delights in the protection of a monarch; and justice, which he causes to be administered without partiality. The greatest baffle in Great Britain cannot invade either the life or the property of the meanest subject with impunity; he is equally obnoxious to the laws, and would suffer indiscriminately with the most obscure malefactor.

'This general security of property and life, excites an unwearied spirit of industry, and disperses the sons of commerce over the remotest regions of the earth. Hence, my friend, we visit the towers of Ispahan, and the gulphs of Bassora; our sails are stretched from the most distant islands of the Atlantic, to the shores of Japan: and London is supplied with all the luxuries of nature, and all the labours of art.'

'You give me,' said Solyman, 'a very magnificent, and a very pleasing idea of your country. But will not commerce, as it enriches the people, corrupt their manners? Will unbounded affluence produce neither riot nor debauchery, vanity nor pride? The inhabitants of Great Britain may be more splendid and luxurious; but the dwellers in Mesopotamia are, perhaps, happier, in proportion as they are more innocent: for Ardivan, my father, has frequently told me, that wealth corrupts the heart of man.'

'All the good things of life,' answered the merchant, 'are complicated with evils. If wealth be not desirable, because it may lead us into luxury, or inflame us with pride; no more would the sanguine cheerfulness of health, lest it should betray us into licentiousness. There are, it is to be feared, many, whose manners are depraved by riches; but there are,

are, likewise, many, who employ them in the diffusion of knowledge, or the relief of indigence.

These, said Solyman, are glorious ends; and would almost excite me to turn merchant, for the acquisition of wealth. But give me some account of the literature of your country.

Of that, replied the merchant, I am scarce a competent judge, the greatest part of my time having been employed in commercial studies. I am not, however, wholly unacquainted with it; for I have always thought, that a merchant should not neglect the accomplishments of a gentleman. The present state of literature in Great Britain, will be best seen, by considering the performances of the learned in their respective classes. We have but few historians of real merit; either their style is slovenly and unharmonious, or their matter undigested and confused; they are either the tools of a faction, or the slaves of a bookseller. But I have had the pleasure of hearing, since I came to Ispahan, that the histories of England and Scotland, the two divisions of Great Britain, have lately been written with considerable spirit, accuracy, and elegance. As to the histories of other countries, which have been published in Great Britain, they are such mere compilations, that they deserve not to be called the labours of art.

From this account of your historians, said Solyman, I cannot entertain any great idea of them; but what are your orators?—As to rhetorical writings, answered the merchant, we have many that are truly excellent; spirited and elevated in sentiment, in language harmonious and correct: but the powers of composition are rendered inefficacious by a spiritless pronunciation. The art of public speaking, however important in itself, seems entirely to be neglected; and the orator pronounces his discourse from the rostrum, with as little feeling himself, and as little influence upon his audience, as if he were reading the newspaper of the day.—Then, I suppose, said Solyman, that your orators speak on unaffecting, or uninteresting sub-

jects.—That is not the case, replied the merchant; the subjects they treat are of the last importance: the duties we owe the Supreme Being, the dispensations of his providence, the eternal obligations of morality, the charms of virtue, and the delightful exercises of justice, mercy, and charity.—Holy Mithra! interrupted Solyman, can the speakers be unaffected, while they are treating these subjects? Do they then think them of that importance they really are; or do your teachers disbelieve and disregard their own doctrines; or are they unconcerned what effect they may have upon the people?—It would be uncharitable, said the merchant, to admit generally any of these suppositions. Their unanimated and unawakening manner of speaking, may proceed from innocent causes, which those you mention are not.

I take it for granted, said Solyman, that as you have orators, at least in point of composition, you have also poets; for rhetoric and poetry are nearly allied. Besides, I have been informed, that every country has its poets; and that even on the frozen mountains of the north, the hardy inhabitants open their mouths to sing.—The love of harmony, replied the merchant, is in man a natural passion. There is something metrical and numerous in his motions, his actions, and his words; and he has always endeavoured to reduce the last to a kind of poetical measure, even where the art of writing was unknown or unpractised. The art of poetry in Great Britain has of late years been brought to great perfection: the language of the country is both nervous and harmonious, and calculated to express the tender and the sublime, in both which species of writing we have poets that have never been excelled. Though the English are, in general, of a less sprightly turn, than their neighbours the French; yet, in the active powers of imagination, in the flights of fancy, and the strains of humour, their writings are by no means inferior. Hence, the English poetry is not only harmonious, but sentimental and picturesque, abounding with strong images and lively description. In short,

‘ short, my countrymen have attempted every different species of poetry, and have excelled in each.’

‘ The account you give me of your poetry,’ said Solyman, ‘ makes me very desirous to learn your language. There is no species of writing that gives me equal pleasure: I caught the enthusiasm from nature; from the harmony and symmetry of her works. If you, who have so long been accustomed to the elegance of the English, can bear a specimen of the Mesopotamian poetry, I will repeat to you a performance of my own.’

A FAREWEL HYMN TO THE VALLEY OF IRWAN.

FAREWEL the fields of Irwan’s vale,
My infant years where fancy led;
And sooth’d me with the western gale,
Her wild dreams waving round my head;
While the blythe blackbird told his tale.
Farewel, the fields of Irwan’s vale!

The primrose on the valley’s side,
The green thyme on the mountain’s head,
The wanton rose, the daisy pied,
The wilding’s blossom blushing red:
No longer I their sweets inhale.
Farewel, the fields of Irwan’s vale!

How oft, within yon vacant shade,
Has ev’ning clos’d my careless eye!
How oft, along those banks, I’ve stray’d,
And watch’d the wave that wander’d by!
Full long their loss shall I bewail.
Farewel, the fields of Irwan’s vale!

Yet still within yon vacant grove,
To mark the close of parting day;
Along yon flow’ry banks to rove,
And watch the wave that winds away;
Fair fancy sure shall never fail,
Though far from these, and Irwan’s vale!

CHAP. V.

IN this social intercourse the merchant passed many days with Solyman, and while he gratified his curiosity engaged his affections. Being suddenly called by business to the court of Bassora, he came one morning to take a final leave: but the traveller was too much attached to his friend, to suffer any thing but necessity to part them. ‘ Permit me,’ said he, ‘ to attend you on your present expedition. I have not appointed to myself any parti-

cular rout, but travel as occasion or inclination leads me; and I am sensible I shall gain more from your experience and observation, than I can from my own.’ This offer was too agreeable to the merchant, not to be eagerly embraced; and after the necessary preparations, they set out from Ispahan, and met the morning on the mountains of Arvan.

The sun appeared above the horizon, and Solyman prostrated himself in the profoundest adoration. When he arose from his devotions, he advanced towards his fellow traveller, with a look of kindness mixed with pity and concern. The merchant understood him: but as he was unwilling to controvert the principles of his religion, he made no apology for his conduct during the devotions of Solyman.

The mild morning light which was diffused over the vallies and streams, the various beauty of the meadows, the regular disposition of blossomed hedges, the soothing murmur of bees at their early labour, and the full concert of the feathered creation, drew their conversation on the universal beneficence of nature. ‘ I feel,’ said Solyman, ‘ a delight, which I can neither account for nor describe. These mountains gilded with the rays of the orient sun, those painted vallies that shame the rich carpets of Persia, yon distant waters which gleam with the shifting effulgence of light, the general busy voice of joy and activity in the animal creation, conspire to fill my heart with inexpressible pleasure.’

‘ That pleasure,’ replied the merchant, ‘ I believe proceeds from sympathy: it is scarce possible, unless you have some peculiar cause of misery, not to be pleased when you see every thing around you happy. On the contrary, if you go into the mansions of sorrow, it will be impossible to withstand the infection of it. The God of nature seems to have given us these sympathetic feelings, to link our affections in the great chain of society: hence, social virtue is not left to depend solely on the moral will, but is founded on the principles of our nature.’

‘ But the object of your adoration is so profuse of his favours, that I should now be glad to find some convenient shade. I think, I discover a

cave

cave on the southern declivity of the mountain; let us retire to it, during the heat of the day.

As they were advancing towards the cave, they perceived a beaten path leading directly from it to a distant rivulet: this made them apprehensive that it might be the habitation of some wild beast, that had worn the path by constantly going to drink at the stream: but their fears were soon removed upon the appearance of an aged hermit, advancing slowly towards the rivulet with an earthen pitcher. At sight of the travellers, he hastened to his abode with all the feeble precipitancy of age; they agreed not to disturb him, and only took the advantage of the rock which projected over his cell to shelter themselves from the sun; but they had not long continued in this situation, before the hermit, perceiving them to be inoffensive travellers, invited them into his cave.

'You will excuse,' said the hoary sage, 'the caution of years: these mountains are not secure from the ravage of human ferocity; and these grey hairs would be no defence from the wanton cruelty of man. I have suffered so much from my own species, that I have at last forsaken their society: I thought it better to give up the conveniences of it, than to bear the evils; and I have long lived in this solitary cave, on nothing more than what uncultivated nature would afford me.'—'Those sufferings,' said Solyman, 'must, indeed, have been extraordinary, that could make you give up one of the greatest advantages of life, the social intercourse of your fellow creatures.'—'The narratives of age,' replied the hermit, 'are seldom agreeable to youth; but as instruction can be gained only from experience, you will do wisely to learn it from the misfortunes of Abbas.

'I was born to a competent fortune in the province of Lurestan: but being early left an orphan, my affairs came under the cognizance of a justificatory court, which the members of it call the court of equity; but so equitable were they with regard to me, that they claimed two parts of my little fortune for their care of the third.'—'Would to God, that were never the case in Great Britain!' in-

terrupted the merchant. 'But proceed.'—'Though I had such an early and convincing proof of the treachery and rapacity of mankind; yet, as I had always exercised the benevolent virtues myself, I could not think others totally devoid of them; and at my three and twentieth year being inclined to travel, I without scruple entrusted the remains of my fortune with a person whom I had long known and respected; a person, Holy Allah! who lifted his hands to thee: but I had not been absent from Lurestan more than three moons, when he pretended a commission to dispose of my effects, and immediately left the place. Upon my return therefore to the province, I found neither friend nor fortune; and being bred to no business, I was reduced to the most distressful state of indigence. I applied, however, not without hopes of redress or relief, to a person of power and eminence, whom I had often heard speak of his friendship with my father. After long and frequent attendance, I was admitted to an interview: I laid open my distress to him with that kind of eloquence which the miseries we suffer from the treachery of others always suggests; and which, however unaffecting it may be to indifferent persons, utters its complaints with dignity and resentment. I was heard half way through my story, and dismissed with the following reply: "It is not necessary, young man, to proceed with your complaints; I perceive you have been abused, and I am sorry for you. But that shall not be the only proof of my regard for you; I will give you a little advice: you should never depend so much on the benevolence or integrity of any human being, as to trust him with your fortune or your life." Thus ended my hopes from the friend of my father; whose benevolence extended no farther, than to instruct me how to secure the fortune that was stolen, and to preserve the life which I wished to lose.

'I had now no choice, but to enter, as a common soldier, into the army of the Sophi. I had always delighted in martial exercises, and was expert in the use of arms: my dexterity and address drew upon me the

‘ short, my countrymen have attempted every different species of poetry, and have excelled in each.’

‘ The account you give me of your poetry,’ said Solyman, ‘ makes me very desirous to learn your language. There is no species of writing that gives me equal pleasure: I caught the enthusiasm from nature; from the harmony and symmetry of her works. If you, who have so long been accustomed to the elegance of the English, can bear a specimen of the Mesopotamian poetry, I will repeat to you a performance of my own.’

A FAREWEL HYMN TO THE VALLEY OF IRWAN.

FAREWEL the fields of Irwan’s vale,
My infant years where fancy led;
And sooth’d me with the western gale,
Her wild dreams waving round my head;
While the blythe blackbird told his tale.
Farewel, the fields of Irwan’s vale!

The primrose on the valley’s side,
The green thyme on the mountain’s head,
The wanton rose, the daisy pied,
The wilding’s blossom blushing red:
No longer I their sweets inhale.
Farewel, the fields of Irwan’s vale!

How oft, within yon vacant shade,
Has ev’ning clos’d my careless eye!
How oft, along those banks, I’ve stray’d,
And watch’d the wave that wander’d by!
Full long their loss shall I bewail.
Farewel, the fields of Irwan’s vale!

Yet still within yon vacant grove,
To mark the close of parting day;
Along yon flow’ry banks to rove,
And watch the wave that winds away;
Fair fancy sure shall never fail,
Though far from these, and Irwan’s vale!

CHAP. V.

IN this social intercourse the merchant passed many days with Solyman, and while he gratified his curiosity engaged his affections. Being suddenly called by business to the court of Bassora, he came one morning to take a final leave: but the traveller was too much attached to his friend, to suffer any thing but necessity to part them. ‘ Permit me,’ said he, ‘ to attend you on your present expedition. I have not appointed to myself any parti-

cular rout, but travel as occasion or inclination leads me; and I am sensible I shall gain more from your experience and observation, than I can from my own.’ This offer was too agreeable to the merchant, not to be eagerly embraced; and after the necessary preparations, they set out from Ispahan, and met the morning on the mountains of Arvan.

The sun appeared above the horizon, and Solyman prostrated himself in the profoundest adoration. When he arose from his devotions, he advanced towards his fellow traveller, with a look of kindness mixed with pity and concern. The merchant understood him: but as he was unwilling to controvert the principles of his religion, he made no apology for his conduct during the devotions of Solyman.

The mild morning light which was diffused over the vallies and streams, the various beauty of the meadows, the regular disposition of blossomed hedges, the soothing murmur of bees at their early labour, and the full concert of the feathered creation, drew their conversation on the universal beneficence of nature. ‘ I feel,’ said Solyman, ‘ a delight, which I can neither account for nor describe. These mountains gilded with the rays of the orient sun, those painted vallies that shame the rich carpets of Persia, yon distant waters which gleam with the shifting effulgence of light, the general busy voice of joy and activity in the animal creation, conspire to fill my heart with inexpressible pleasure.’

‘ That pleasure,’ replied the merchant, ‘ I believe proceeds from sympathy: it is scarce possible, unless you have some peculiar cause of misery, not to be pleased when you see every thing around you happy. On the contrary, if you go into the mansions of sorrow, it will be impossible to withstand the infection of it. The God of nature seems to have given us these sympathetic feelings, to link our affections in the great chain of society: hence, social virtue is not left to depend solely on the moral will, but is founded on the principles of our nature.’

‘ But the object of your adoration is so profuse of his favours, that I should now be glad to find some convenient shade. I think, I discover a

cave

cave on the southern declivity of the mountain; let us retire to it, during the heat of the day.

As they were advancing towards the cave, they perceived a beaten path leading directly from it to a distant rivulet: this made them apprehensive that it might be the habitation of some wild beast, that had worn the path by constantly going to drink at the stream: but their fears were soon removed upon the appearance of an aged hermit, advancing slowly towards the rivulet with an earthen pitcher. At sight of the travellers, he hastened to his abode with all the feeble precipitancy of age; they agreed not to disturb him, and only took the advantage of the rock which projected over his cell to shelter themselves from the sun; but they had not long continued in this situation, before the hermit, perceiving them to be inoffensive travellers, invited them into his cave.

'You will excuse,' said the hoary sage, 'the caution of years: these mountains are not secure from the ravage of human ferocity; and these grey hairs would be no defence from the wanton cruelty of man. I have suffered so much from my own species, that I have at last forsaken their society: I thought it better to give up the conveniences of it, than to bear the evils; and I have long lived in this solitary cave, on nothing more than what uncultivated nature would afford me.'—'Those sufferings,' said Solyman, 'must, indeed, have been extraordinary, that could make you give up one of the greatest advantages of life, the social intercourse of your fellow creatures.'—'The narratives of age,' replied the hermit, 'are seldom agreeable to youth; but as instruction can be gained only from experience, you will do wisely to learn it from the misfortunes of Abbas.

'I was born to a competent fortune in the province of Lurestan: but being early left an orphan, my affairs came under the cognizance of a judicious court, which the members of it call the court of equity; but so equitable were they with regard to me, that they claimed two parts of my little fortune for their care of the third.'—'Would to God, that were never the case in Great Britain!' in-

terrupted the merchant. 'But proceed.'—'Though I had such an early and convincing proof of the treachery and rapacity of mankind; yet, as I had always exercised the benevolent virtues myself, I could not think others totally devoid of them; and at my three and twentieth year being inclined to travel, I without scruple entrusted the remains of my fortune with a person whom I had long known and respected; a person, Holy Allah! who lifted his hands to thee: but I had not been absent from Lurestan more than three moons, when he pretended a commission to dispose of my effects, and immediately left the place. Upon my return therefore to the province, I found neither friend nor fortune; and being bred to no business, I was reduced to the most distressful state of indigence. I applied, however, not without hopes of redress or relief, to a person of power and eminence, whom I had often heard speak of his friendship with my father. After long and frequent attendance, I was admitted to an interview: I laid open my distress to him with that kind of eloquence which the miseries we suffer from the treachery of others always suggests; and which, however unaffecting it may be to indifferent persons, utters its complaints with dignity and resentment. I was heard half way through my story, and dismissed with the following reply: "It is not necessary, young man, to proceed with your complaints; I perceive you have been abused, and I am sorry for you. But that shall not be the only proof of my regard for you; I will give you a little advice: you should never depend so much on the benevolence or integrity of any human being, as to trust him with your fortune or your life." Thus ended my hopes from the friend of my father; whose benevolence extended no farther, than to instruct me how to secure the fortune that was stolen, and to preserve the life which I wished to lose.

I had now no choice, but to enter, as a common soldier, into the army of the Sophi. I had always delighted in martial exercises, and was expert in the use of arms: my dexterity and address drew upon me the

attention of my officers; and, in a short time, I obtained a small commission. I had now almost forgot my miseries, and embraced my new situation with cheerfulness and hope; but fortune, who had for a while ceased to persecute me as below her notice, as if she had been indignant at my satisfaction, and jealous of my prospects, now renewed and redoubled her severity.

My commanding officer had a daughter of extraordinary beauty, and an uncommon capacity. Zara was the object of universal admiration; but she had set her heart on the unfortunate Abbas. The first moment I beheld her, I discovered in her looks the most tender and affectionate regard for me, which I imputed to her compassion for my misfortunes; though at the same time I wished, without knowing why, that it might proceed from another cause. She asked me for the story of my life: I told it in the plainest and most pathetic manner; yet, when I had finished, she desired me to repeat it. From this moment I had done with peace: her infectious tenderness had such an influence upon my heart, that I could think of nothing but Zara; without Zara I was miserable. A thousand times did I flatter myself, that there was something more than mere compassion in her look and manner; and not many days had passed, before I was convinced of the dear fatal truth from this letter:

“ TO ABBAS.

“ **Y**OUR merit and your sufferings have a claim to something more than compassion: to espouse the cause of Abbas, is to discharge a duty which virtue cannot dispense with. Meet me on the parade this evening, and you shall know more of the sentiments of

“ ZARA.”

The emotions I felt on the receipt of this letter, can only be conceived by those, who, in the midst of despairing love, have beheld a gleam of hope. The tumult of my heart hurried me to the place appointed, long before the time: I walked backward and forward in the utmost confusion,

totally regardless of every object about me; sometimes raising my hands and eyes in the sudden effusions of transport, and sometimes smiling with the complacency of delight.

At length the day departed, and Zara came. My heart bounded at her sight: I was unable to speak, and threw myself at her feet. She was alarmed at my excessive earnestness and confusion; but commanding me to rise, “ Abbas,” said she, “ if your confusion proceeds from your modest gratitude, restrain it, till you find whether I am able to serve you; if it arise from any other cause, I must leave you this moment.” I intreated she would tell me, to what I was indebted for the happiness of this interview, and I would be calm and attentive. “ My regard for your merit, and my compassion for your sufferings,” said she, “ make me wish to serve you. Tell me, Abbas, can I assist you through the interest of my father?” I faltered out my acknowledgments; telling her, that to her I must owe all my hopes of future happiness.

She left me immediately, without reply. The singularity of my behaviour on the parade before the coming of Zara, had drawn upon me the attention of an officer who was secretly her admirer, and who, either through curiosity or suspicion, though unobserved by me, had waited at a convenient distance to watch my motions. No sooner did he perceive the approach of Zara, than as well to gratify his revenge, as to ingratiate himself with her father, he immediately told him of our interview.

CHAP. VI.

ZARA, ignorant of what had passed, with her usual freedom and good-nature, began to express her compassion for the misfortunes of Abbas, talked of his merits, and wished to see him preferred. The old general, who was naturally jealous and impetuous, exclaimed, with a burst of indignation, “ Yes, I shall prefer him!” Early the next morning he sent me my discharge; and while I was gazing in stupid astonishment upon my general’s letter, a youth, masked,

masked, brought me a small casket, with a letter from Zara, which, to the best of my remembrance, was as follows:

“ TO ABBAS.

“ **B**Y some unlucky circumstance, which I do not now understand, instead of promoting you, I have been the cause of your dismission. The bearer, who brings you a small casket of jewels for your support, has my commands to conduct you the shortest way over the mountains: follow him immediately, lest the rage of jealousy meditate new persecutions. He wears a mask, that he may not be taken notice of as one of the general's domesticks: his attachment to me, will make him faithful to you. Time may bring about happier events. Adieu, adieu!

“ ZARA.”

‘ In the anguish and confusion of my heart, I followed my guide, without knowing whither he was leading me, or what I was about to do. I vented my grief in broken ejaculations, frequently calling upon the name of Zara, but not once addressing myself to my attendant. By the evening of the second day, we had advanced forty miles southward from the province of Lurestan; when—how shall I relate the last horrid scene of my miseries!—pardon me!—these aged eyes have yet a tear left, yet a tear for the memory of Zara!—we were attacked by a band of robbers. My guide was Zara! in her fright, she threw off her mask, and cried, “Zara.” Love, rage, fear, and vengeance, gave me supernatural strength: three of the villains fell by my sabre; a fourth disarmed me; and the rest of the gang carried off Zara.’

At this crisis of his story, the spirits of the aged hermit were exhausted by their own violence; and it was some time before he could proceed.

‘ You have now,’ continued he, ‘ heard the completion of my misfortunes. When I was recovered of the wounds I had received, I spent some months in a fruitless search of Zara: at last, despairing to gain any intelligence of her, I transmitted an ac-

count of the affair to her father; not without hope, that his power, or his wealth, might be a means of finding her out, and redeeming her: but I was deceived; and had soon the mortification to hear, that the unnatural wretch exulted in our misfortunes, and uttered the most dreadful imprecations on his only child.

‘ Deprived of hope, and dejected with melancholy, I could no longer bear the society of mankind: I therefore betook myself to these solitary mountains, where this cell has been my habitation for years, that have passed away in unvaried sorrow; and where you are the first of human beings that have heard me tell my tale.’

CHAPTER VII.

SOLYMAN expatiated on the sufferings of Abbas with the most tender sensibility, and inveighed against the baseness of mankind with all the rage of honest resentment. ‘ Surely,’ said he to the merchant, ‘ man is the vilest of all creatures! in proportion as he excels them in reason, he exceeds them in the ability to do mischief; and being equally cruel, the mischief he does renders him more detestable. Sacred Mithra! why dost thou lend thy light to the villain and the tyrant? Were it not for the enjoyment of your company, my friend, I should have few inducements to go farther from the valley of Irwan; for possibly to see more of human life, is only to know more of it’s crimes and miseries.’

‘ From the complicated distresses of one person,’ replied the merchant, ‘ you draw a partial image of the life of man. But the day declines: let us hasten over these mountains, that we may repose at night in some village of the valley.’ The travellers took leave of the hermit; and about the close of day arrived at the village of Arden.

At their entrance, they were met by a person of a plain dress, and a cheerful countenance, who, without ceremony, invited them, as travellers, to partake of his house and table that night. They accepted his invitation; and the merchant, addressing himself to Solyman, said, ‘ From the family

of this man, you shall not only be convinced, that there is both happiness and virtue in human life; but you shall see also, how much the former depends upon the latter. I have been entertained by him, in travelling this way before; he is never more happy than when he has an opportunity of gratifying his benevolence. His inheritance being much lessened by the losses of his father, who was a merchant, he has but little wealth, except what arises from the industrious cultivation of a farm, which he purchased ten years ago with the chief part of his fortune; yet he is as liberal to the poor and the stranger, as if he had large possessions; his known hospitality and generosity, make his house the resort of the traveller and the indigent; and, after he has finished the labours of the day, he is always ready to entertain the one, and relieve the other; hence that serene and easy cheerfulness, which you see in his countenance. In his family you behold the influence of a good example: his wife, whom he loves, and by whom he is beloved with the most cordial sincerity, goes hand in hand with him, not only through their mutual cares, but also in the exercises of benevolence. It is the principle of her economy, that domestick frugality is the support of liberality; and she dispenses her own and her husband's bounties, with that propriety and easy cheerfulness, which double their value to the receiver. The children inherit the benevolence of their parents, and learn the exercise of it from their example. Bye and bye they will croud about your sofa, solicitous to serve you: you shall see them preventing your wants, and watching your requests, with a busy emulation which shall do you the most services.

Solyman listened, with delight, to his description of the villager's family; and hasted, with the most ardent curiosity, to behold that virtue he so much admired. When he found that every thing exceeded the merchant's account, and his own expectation. 'It is enough,' said he, 'I am again reconciled to my own species. Notwithstanding the impression I received from the story of the unfortunate

Abbas, virtue has yet her temples among men; but, surely, she is a villager, and her votaries are the inhabitants of the fields!' Full of these thoughts, and delighted with the family of his host, he retired to his chamber, and, before he slept, composed the following ode.

THE HAPPY VILLAGER.

VIRTUE dwells in Arden's vale;
There her hallow'd temples rise;
There her incense greets the skies,
Grateful as the morning gale!

There, with humble peace, and her,
Lives the happy villager;
There the golden smiles of morn
Brighter every field adorn;
There the sun's declining ray
Fairer paints the parting day:
There the woodlark louder sings,
Zephyr moves on softer wings,
Groves in greener honours rise,
Purer azure spreads the skies;
There the fountains clearer flow,
Flowers in brighter beauty blow;
For, with peace and virtue, there
Lives the happy villager!

Distant still from Arden's vale
Are the woes the bad bewail;
Distant fell remorse, and pain,
And phrenzy smiling o'er her chain!
Grief's quick pang, despair's dead groan,
Are in Arden's vale unknown:
For, with peace and virtue, there
Lives the happy villager!

In his hospitable cell,
Love, and truth, and freedom dwell;
And, with aspect mild and free,
The graceful nymph, simplicity.
Hail, ye liberal graces, hail!
Natives all of Arden's vale:
For, with peace and virtue, there
Lives the happy villager!

CHAP. VIII.

WHEN the dawn of the morning broke, Solyman and the merchant, with the most grateful acknowledgments of the hospitality with which they had been entertained, left the village of Arden, followed by the kind wishes of their host, and his amiable family. They travelled for some days through the southern provinces of Persia, without any remarkable occurrence, or any other entertainment, than such as could be found in the diversity of prospects,

prospects, and the different labours of men. Sometimes they amused themselves with the contemplation of those places, which history had marked out, as the scenes of great events; and sometimes had occasion to reflect on the perishable monuments of human magnificence.

The noble plain, on which stood the once glorious Persepolis, afforded them inexhaustible matter of curiosity and meditation: this plain, extending about nineteen leagues, abounds every where with villages, and is watered by the great river Araxes. Nature has been so industrious in the defence of it, that she has raised before it mountains, that bear all the appearance, and might answer the end of artificial fortifications. From hence the travellers were amused with the ruinous remains of many noble edifices, that had once adorned the range of mountains: but when they were come to that part of them which covered the ancient palace of Persepolis, the stupendous ruin struck them with silent astonishment. Porticoes, which had withstood the assaults of time more than two thousand years; broken columns of different lengths, rising at considerable distances within the limits of the same pile; sculptured portals, through whose frowning arches the winds passed with a hollow murmuring; numberless figures engraven on the pilastres of those portals; and multitudes of hieroglyphics on the different parts of the spacious ruin; gave the travellers a mournful and magnificent idea of the pristine grandeur of this edifice.

The merchant observing Solyman to be totally absorbed in thought, would not interrupt the melancholy pleasure of his contemplations; but waited, in silence, till, with an air of unaffected concern, he thus expressed his sentiments on Persepolis.

‘I am at a loss, my friend, in the midst of these magnificent ruins, whether I should think more highly or more meanly of mankind. Pride raised this lofty edifice, and pride destroyed it. The vanity of a Cyrus, a Darius, or a Xerxes, adorned those superb columns; and the vanity of an Alexander defaced them. These domes were not reared solely for regal magnificence and security; but to aid the appetites of poverty and

luxury, and to secrete the royal pleasures from those that toiled to gratify them. Thus, as this noble structure was possibly raised not only for vanity but for riot; so, probably, by vanity, inflamed by riot, it fell: probably, at the request of a smiling harlot, the towers of Persepolis blazed for her diversion; probably, because the conqueror had taken too large a draught of wine, this palace, the glory of eastern art, sunk to the ground: a striking instance of the vanity of human labours, and the depravity of human nature! On the other hand, while I consider the work of the artist; while I am delighted with the symmetry and proportion, which is yet to be traced through these maimed ruins, and struck with the bold relief of the ancient Persian architecture; I forget the motives both of the erection and demolition of Persepolis; and admire the industry and ingenuity of man, that gave such grace and beauty to these massy structures.’

‘Your sentiments,’ said the merchant, ‘are much the same with my own: but give me leave now to conduct you to a mountain, about two leagues distant from these ruins, and situated between two of the most beautiful plains in the world. This mountain consists of one entire rock, capable of the most exquisite polish: it is reduced to form by art, and its sides are perpendicular; so that, at a distance, it has the appearance of a wall. Upon this rock are several pieces of bas-relief, exquisitely performed; in one of which is represented a combat between the King of Persia and the King of the Indies; the latter of whom, according to the tradition of the times, was subdued. There are, besides, many other figures, of which, though you may not discover the design, you will be pleased with the execution.’

Solyman proceeded with his friend to the mountain, much delighted, as well with the extraordinary appearance of the rock, as the uncommon beauty of the plains that were spread on either hand beneath, interspersed with villas shaded by trees, extensive meadows, and pastures filled with flocks. When they had gratified their curiosity, and indulged

indulged their speculations, they proceeded on their journey, and in a short time arrived at the gulph of Bassora.

The merchant, having here found the vessel he expected, told Solyman, that if his inclination led him to Europe, he could accommodate him with a convenient passage; informing him, at the same time, that his own affairs would detain him some years longer in Persia. Solyman, whose heart was firmly attached to the merchant, long hesitated between friendship and curiosity: however, as he must have parted with him, had he continued his travels in Asia, and was not totally without hopes of seeing him in what he called the new world, he determined to accept his offer.

CHAP. IX.

AS the ship was to remain some time in the gulph, Solyman took the opportunity to make the tour of India. In his way he visited the Isle of Ormus, than which no part of nature wears a more dismal appearance. Excepting a few houses, which make the capital of the place, the whole looks like a heath, blasted by lightning, or burnt up by design: yet here, in this scene of dreary desolation, Solyman had the mortification to meet with an exile from the city of Ispahan.

'Surely,' said he to the unhappy man, 'you must have been so unfortunate as to commit some enormous crime, condemned as you are to this miserable abode!'

'Stranger,' replied the exile, 'I have been unfortunate, but not unjust. One day, being at the Persian court, I told a gentleman who stood near me, in a low whisper, that I thought the Sultana Moratte extremely beautiful. This was my crime: and it was the decree of imperial justice, that for this I should wear out the remains of life in this dreary solitude.'

'Heavens!' said Solyman, 'what madness must possess mankind, to lodge unlimited power in the hands of any one human being! When the decrees of justice must be issued by numbers united, there are many means of restraining partial or illegal sentences: self-interest, revenge, en-

vy, and every other cause of perverting justice, would then operate feebly, when opposed by public shame, divided interests, and the open appearance of equity. But what comfort can you receive from useless declamation? I can help you to the means of deliverance from this wretched prison; and I think that you are restrained by no principle of duty from embracing them; for it is impossible, that Divine Power should enforce obedience to the decrees of injustice. I am now about to travel through India: at my return, I will again visit Ormus and you; and if you shall be inclined to exchange your prison for the spacious kingdoms of Europe, I will procure you a passage thither.'

The exile heard these words with inconceivable transport: he threw himself at the feet of Solyman, and expressed his delight in one emphatical word, crying out, 'Liberty, liberty!' The pleasure of the traveller was scarce inferior to that of the exile. 'Surely,' said he to himself, 'the diffusion of happiness is the highest bliss that the human heart is capable of! I feel more delight in the hope of defeating the malice of injurious power, than in any thing I have ever met with, either before or since the beginning of my travels.'

CHAP. X.

SOLYMAN now left Ormus, and proceeded towards the frontiers of India. Though the country lies nearly in the same climate with the southern provinces of Persia, yet the aspect of it is different; and it is furnished with other kinds of plants and animals, as well as with people of a different complexion, and different manners: indeed nature seems to have made the intercourse of different nations necessary, by supplying each with some peculiar conveniences.

Solyman passed not through the provinces of the Mogul's empire, without instruction, as well as amusement. He was skilled in the natural history of plants and animals; and he found here abundant opportunity to exercise that kind of knowledge. He was often amused by observing, how nearly brutal

brutal sense borders upon human reason, in the reflecting sagacity of the elephant, and the adroit mischief of the baboon.

Small, however, in comparison, was the pleasure he received from the natural rarities of India, to that which the excellent administration of justice in the several provinces afforded him. The police of that country appeared to him most wisely calculated for the preservation of peace and property; the magistrates that were appointed to administer justice in their several districts, being obliged to keep persons continually employed to watch the dealings of commerce, and attend both to public and private transactions; for the iniquity of which themselves were to be accountable, and the emperor might always be appealed to.

But when he came to Dehli, the capital of the Mogul's empire, his opinion of the Indian policy was much altered. He there had the mortification to find a ministry of wives, and a court of concubines, at whose discretion the principal posts in the civil and military establishments were usually disposed of; and he who was most recommended by his person and address, was sure to obtain the highest office in the legislature or the army. To find that the bands of music at court consisted only of women, gave him no disgust: 'There,' said the traveller, 'the ladies are in their proper sphere. Let them cultivate all the soft and engaging graces; let them employ themselves in the embellishments of art, and the excursions of fancy: but let them not interfere in the important concerns of government; nor raise those to the places of power, whose accomplishments are suited only to their taste.'

As Solyman was displeased with the caballing arts of the Indian ladies, so he was shocked at their inhuman and unnatural superstition. With horror and amazement did he sometimes behold a woman, in the bloom of life and beauty, rush into the flames, to accompany the manes of her dead husband: and if nature shuddered at the thought of this dreadful sacrifice, or female softness shrunk into fear or irresolution; he beheld a number of diabolical priests, with execrable screams and faces of horror, pushing forward

the poor trembling reluctant woman to the burning pile. 'Eternal Mithral' said the afflicted youth, 'what havoc does superstition make among thy works! when once that fiend enters the human heart, nature and reason are driven out; their sacred lights are wholly extinguished: truth and humanity are trampled upon; and the detested fury leads her infatuated votaries through the horrors of darkness, into the arms of death!'

C H A P. XI.

SOLYMAN was the more affected by this infernal custom, as he feared it might one day be the fate of a lady, with whom he had contracted an intimate friendship, and for whom he had the most tender regard. This amiable person was a native of Dehli, and her name Almena. As the houses in which they lodged were contiguous, she first drew his attention by her music, which was her favourite employment, and in which she was greatly skilled. Solyman had a taste for all the fine arts; and after the enquiries and observations of the day, he felt an irresistible pleasure, in listening, from his portico, to the evening music of Almena. His heart soon became prejudiced in favour of a lady, who had afforded him so much entertainment; and he wished for nothing more than an opportunity of expressing his gratitude.

It was usual for Almena to take a morning walk in the suburbs of Dehli. Solyman observed this; and introduced himself to her conversation, by paying his acknowledgments. There is some secret attraction in congenial natures, which draws them together, without the forms of a long acquaintance. Solyman was soon convinced, that he discovered, in Almena, a disposition perfectly suited to his own: her conversation was the picture of a mind enlarged by virtue, and enlightened by learning: she had none of the trifling follies or the insignificant levity of her sex; yet her manner was animated and cheerful: she had no ebullitions of giddy wit; but her language was the clear and natural image of polished sense, and unaffected knowledge. Solyman left no means unattempted to cultivate a friendship that promised so much felicity.

licity. He constantly attended Almena on her morning walk; and, at every interview, entertained some new sentiments in her favour. Her heart was not less benevolent than his own; 'You have seen, my friend,' said she, 'almost every thing in-Dehli, that is worth the attention of a stranger: but I suppose you do not make it your business, as a traveller, merely to attend to what is uncommon or magnificent; not merely to explore the different operations of nature, and manners of men. Travel must afford you many opportunities, to relieve the indigent, to comfort the afflicted, to inform the ignorant, or rescue the oppressed. Within the compass of my morning walk, there is a village, the inhabitants of which I call my people; they are all poor: to those that are able to labour, I propose rewards for the greatest industry; and those who are incapacitated by age or sickness, I take under my own protection.'

It is easy to conceive how much Solyman would be delighted with this account of Almena. When he found that to all the elegant graces of female softness, she added the virtues of benevolence, his friendship for her was heightened into the most refined affection. On the other hand, her regard for Solyman increased, as she became acquainted with his improved understanding, and generous temper: for virtue loves her own image, wherever it is found.

C H A P. XII.

SOLYMAN had now passed many days at Dehli, in this pleasing intercourse of friendship; happy to assist his Almena in the diffusion of happiness, charmed with her virtues, and delighted with her conversation. The time, however, approached, when he was to think of his expedition into Europe: but the friendship of Almena, bound to his heart by stronger ties than that which he had before contracted with the merchant, overbalanced at once every thought of his voyage: he had, therefore, determined to remain at Dehli; when the poor exile at Ormus came into his mind. He started at the thought, as he would have done at the

ghost of Ardavan. 'Tis done,' said he: 'Adieu to Almena; adieu to the dear delights of her friendship, if they must be purchased at the expence of virtue!'

There is no precept of human wisdom conceived to be of greater use, and therefore none more frequently urged; than that we should learn to avoid the evils of life, from the irregularities and misfortunes of others; yet, important as this precept may be, it is, like most others, universally neglected. We observe, indeed, the events of life; and enquire into their causes with insatiable curiosity; but we seldom draw any conclusions for the direction of our own conduct: we hear or read only for amusement; and the story passes by, without leaving any traces of instruction.

Solyman, who, from the first setting out on his travels, had received the strongest convictions of the distresses of love, without the least caution or resistance, suffered that passion to make it's inroads under the appearance of friendship; and he now felt all the anguish, which he had before been a witness to near the village of Abdat. Not once, however, did he hesitate between love and virtue: the torrent of his grief for the loss of Almena, violent as it was, could not bear down his determined integrity.

With a heart full of the most piercing sorrow, he went to take leave of his beloved friend: he resolved, nevertheless, to explain the cause of his departure with the most serene indifference; determined not to affect his Almena by the appearance of sorrow; he resolved—and threw himself at her feet in speechless anguish.

Almena beheld his grief with united sorrow and surprize; and, with tears that flowed from pity and friendship, intreated him to discover the cause of his distress. 'It is in vain, Almena,' said he; 'it is in vain any longer to hide my heart from you: nor, indeed, should I act the part of friendship, to dissemble it's feelings. I, who was yesterday the happiest of mankind in the enjoyment of your conversation, am now the most miserable. By the indispensable laws of honour and humanity, I am called from Dehli: but, alas! by the love of Almena, I am induced to stay. I know, my friend,

'there

‘there is no alternative: but that knowledge is my misery. I go, then, from you and from happiness; perhaps never more to enjoy either: but when I am far from you, it will be some consolation to believe that you will remember the love and the truth of Solyman.’

Almena, as well as the emotions of her heart would give her leave, replied: ‘Go, my friend; go where your virtue leads you; and Providence be your guide! Your friendship, while I have life, shall not be forgotten: no; Almena shall always respect your memory, and love you with the same affection as she does the dearest of her friends.’

A flood of tears followed these words; and Solyman, unable any longer to behold her sorrow, precipitately withdrew.

CHAP. XIII.

DEPRIVED of that serenity which ever waits on conscious virtue, when free from the great calamities of life, the innocent, the once happy Solyman, was now become the child of affliction. He repassed the provinces of India in deep melancholy, unaffected by every thing that might excite curiosity or exercise speculation. But, behold the power of virtue! and be convinced, whoever thou art that readest this story, that there is nothing equally capable of alleviating the afflictions which are incident to human life.

When he arrived at Ormus, and beheld the joy of the poor exile at the sight of his deliverer, he felt a torrent of pleasure in his breast, overflowing all the oppositions that grief had raised against it. ‘O that Almena,’ said he, ‘were present! that I could communicate to her the happiness I feel in rescuing this poor Persian from the oppression of tyranny! how would her gentle heart rejoice and indulge itself with Solyman, in the delights of benevolence! Fate has been severe in dividing those, whose souls were made for each other: but it has left me this happiness, and I enjoy it.’

Solyman was now about to apply to his friend the merchant, who was still upon the coast, to procure a passage for the exile: but he could not resist the

desire of writing immediately to Almena; and from Ormus he sent the following letter.

‘TO ALMENA.

‘**S**HALL Solyman be pardoned, if he intrude once more on the quiet of Almena? Dearest, best of women, I come not to wound thy gentle heart with my complaints: you shall not be told what I have suffered since my departure: no, Almena! you shall only know what I have enjoyed. The poor exile whom I mentioned to you at Dehli, is still in Ormus. When he perceived me from the rocks on which he used to wander daily to watch my coming, he flew towards me in an extasy of joy, crying out, “Liberty! my deliverer! liberty!” Here was a scene, my friend, that might have overbalanced every thing but the loss of your company. For that, Almena—forgive me—for that I must yet shed a tear. Adieu!’

‘SOLYMAN.’

CHAP. XIV.

AFTER the dismissal of this letter, he went immediately to visit the merchant, who received him with the warmest expressions of friendship. ‘Welcome,’ said he, ‘my valuable friend! whose uncommon virtues have made you devote the pleasurable season of life to the acquisition of knowledge, and the distribution of happiness.’

‘For the latter of these purposes,’ said Solyman, ‘I now wait upon you. In the isle of Ormus is an unhappy Persian, whom the capricious cruelty of his prince has condemned to perpetual exile in that dismal prison. Were he a criminal, justice should have it’s course; I might then have beheld him with pity, but should not have meditated his deliverance: but he is innocent, my friend, he is innocent and suffers. Cannot you assist me to effect his escape? cannot he have that passage to Europe, which you obligingly offered me?’

‘To facilitate the escape of an exile,’ replied the merchant, ‘were as much as my interest and safety are worth in Persia.’

D

‘ Persia. I must not be concerned in it: but I will introduce you to the captain of a ship, and engage him to serve you in every thing you shall desire: after which, if you can take the exile along with you in disguise, or by any other means as your friend or attendant, perhaps he may escape without much difficulty or danger. I have dispatched my business on the coast, and am obliged to return to Ispahan: let us now therefore, if you please, wait upon the captain.’

Solyman, as he had been in hopes of procuring the exile a passage without going himself into Europe, from which the friendship of Almena had weaned his inclinations, was somewhat embarrassed by this account. However, as he was determined at all events to deliver the poor Persian, he went immediately to the apartments of the captain, to whom the merchant recommended him as a particular friend, who wanted to make the tour of Europe. The captain received them with the freedom and cheerfulness peculiar to his station, and promised Solyman the best accommodations of his ship; but told him, that she must remain there a few months before she could get out of the gulph.

Of this delay, though not answerable to his impatient wishes for the deliverance of the exile, Solyman resolved to make use, in visiting his father and the valley of Irwan. As soon, therefore, as he had acquainted the exile with what he had to hope, and advised him to provide secretly for his voyage, and his subsistence in a distant country, he sailed from the gulph up the Euphrates, as far as where the Tigris empties itself into that river, and from thence proceeded by land to the valley of Irwan.

CHAP. XV.

THE venerable Ardavan had ascended an eminence near his house, to enjoy the beauties of the summer evening, and to offer up a prayer to the departing sun for Solyman, when Solyman appeared before him.

What language can paint the emotions of paternal affection! The feeble

remains of aged life twice fainted beneath the weight of joy. At length recovering, he cried, ‘ It is enough! Solyman lives! Heaven has regarded the virtues of my son, and restored him to the arms of Ardavan.’

Solyman was not less affected by this meeting; nor less delighted to find his aged parent still enjoying health and reason, in the decline of life. But his happiness was allayed with anxiety. He visited the favourite scenes of his native valley, in hopes of finding that delight, which he thought to be connected with the idea of them; but his imagination was still at Dehli. As love and melancholy are of the sisterhood of poetry, he had not been long in the valley before he wrote the following lines.

TO ALMENA, FROM THE BANKS OF THE IRWAN.

WHERE trembling poplars shade
their parent vale,
And tune to melody the mountain gale;
Where Irwan murmurs musically slow,
And breathing breezes through his officers
blow;
Friend of my heart, behold thy poet laid
In the dear silence of his native shade!
Ye sacred vales, where oft the muse, unseen,
Led my light steps along the moon-light
green;
Ye scenes, where peace and fancy held their
reign,
For ever lov’d, and once enjoy’d again!
Ah! where is, now, that nameless bliss re-
fin’d;
That tranquil hour, that vacancy of mind?
As sweet, the wild rose bares its balmy
breast;
As soon, the breeze with murmurs soothes
to rest;
As smooth, the stream of silver Irwan flows;
As fair, each flower along his border blows:
Yet dwells not here that nameless bliss re-
fin’d,
That tranquil hour, that vacancy of mind.
Is it that knowledge is allied to woe;
And are we happy, only ere we know?
Is it that hope withholds her golden ray,
That fancy’s fairy visions fade away?
Or can I, distant far from all that’s dear,
Be happy only when Almena’s near?
That truth, the feelings of my heart disclose:
Too dear the friendship for the friend’s re-
pose.

Thus

hus mourn'd the muse, when, thro' his
offers wild,
The hill-born Irwan rais'd his head, and
smil'd:
' Child of my hopes,' he fondly cried,
' forbear:
' Nor let thy Irwan witness thy despair.
' Has peace indeed forsok my flow'ry shore?
' Shall fame and hope, and fancy charm
' no more?
' Tho' fame and hope in kindred air depart,
' Yet fancy still should hold thee to her
heart:
' For, at thy birth, the village hind has seen
' Her light wings waving o'er the shadowy
' green;
' With rosy wreaths she crown'd the new-
' born hours,
' And rival fairies fill'd thy bed with flowers:
' In vain—if grief shall waste thy blooming
' years,
' And life dissolve in solitude and tears—'

Where are the delights of the valley
of Irwan, where the flowery variety of
it's pastures and meadows, it's hills
that rose gradually to meet the morning
sun, and it's groves that spread their
foliage to exclude the heats of mid-day?
Wrapt in the gloom of pensive solitude,
the son of Ardavan was now negligent
of these, and of all that once delighted
or amused him. In vain did his father
desire a relation of his travels; and in
vain did he begin it: when he attempted
to speak of Persopolis, he gave a de-
scription of Dehli; when he was asked
after some other place, he mentioned
the village of Almena: instead of de-
scribing the people of India, he de-
scribed the person of Almena; and
when an account of their manners was
requested, ' Her manners,' he replied,
' are such, as the immortal Mithra
' looks down upon with delight.'

CHAP. XVI.

ARDAMAN was now no longer
at a loss to account for the gloomy
inconsistency of his son's behaviour:
but willing to be still more convinced
of what he suspected to be the cause,
he applied to his passions the story of
those lovers whom he had recommended
to his care. At the mention of the
lovers, Solyman was roused from his
melancholy negligence, into the most
eager attention. ' Tell me, my father,'
said the impatient youth; ' tell me, I
' intreat you, the fate of the lovers?'

' I thank you,' replied the sage, ' for
' putting it in my power to assist the
' unfortunate. From your compassion
' for the sufferings of these lovers, and
' your attempt to alleviate them, you
' will feel more sensibly the power of
' the same consolation, when your own
' heart becomes a prey to the distresses
' of love.'

Solyman discovered, by his emotions,
the effect which this short preface had
upon him.

' You know,' continued Ardavan,
' a small building which I erected some
' years ago for a retreat in the summer
' months: you remember it's situation,
' in the depth of a spacious wood;
' which is only accessible by one nar-
' row passage, to which I have provided
' a door, so beset with evergreens, that
' it is impossible for the most curious
' eye to perceive it: the canal of run-
' ning water in the middle of the
' wood, and the beautiful grass-plot,
' I have extended, since you left me,
' to the summer-house. To this place
' I conducted the lovers as soon as I
' had heard their story. There they
' continued for some time, attended
' by one of my faithful domesticks, who
' supplied them with every necessary;
' and they were visited almost every
' day by myself. O, my son, how ex-
' quisite was the delight, to behold the
' happiness of this innocent pair, and
' at the same time to consider myself
' as in some measure contributing to
' it! surely, this was to partake of the
' pleasure of the Deity, which we be-
' lieve to consist in his universal pow-
' er of removing evil and dispensing
' good!

' After some time I was informed,
' that the Khan of Bukharia, who had
' purchased the maiden of her father,
' was deposed and banished by the
' Sophi. This gave us new hopes;
' and it was agreed that the youth
' should return to Abdat, to learn the
' disposition of the unnatural parent.
' He accordingly went; and told him,
' that he would endeavour to find his
' daughter, upon condition he would
' consent to their marriage. The
' wretch, though he was no stranger
' to their mutual passion, insisted, that
' no man should ever have his daughter,
' who would not pay the same price
' for her which the Khan of Bukharia
' had offered.

‘As this price far exceeded the ability of the lover, he returned to Irwan, fallen from those pleasing hopes, which he had so lately formed, of enjoying at once his love and his liberty. The father, convinced that his daughter was in the possession of the young man, and not now without hopes of recovering her, and offering her again to sale, hired a set of ruffians to watch his return, and to extort from him a confession of the place where she was secreted. Of this design, however, he was timely apprized by an honest villager of Abdat, to whom one of the ruffians had communicated their business; and he came off in disguise, and escaped their notice.’

‘About two months after, it was reported that the father had died of vexation for the disappointment of his avaricious views: I, therefore, dispatched a servant to enquire into the truth of this report; and finding it confirmed, conducted the lovers to Abdat without farther apprehension. The maiden, who was an only child, inherited her father’s fortune, which was very considerable: but as great part of it had been amassed by oppression, she made restitution to those whom his avarice had injured, and she now enjoys the remainder with happiness and her lover.’

‘What you tell me,’ said Solyman, ‘gives me inexpressible satisfaction: for the lovers are possessed of eminent virtue; and to be instrumental to the happiness of virtuous lovers, is the most delightful task within the province of benevolence. Indeed those hearts only, that are generous and noble, can be capable of the tender sensibility of love: for the breast which harbours malignity and envy, can never feel the sympathetic tenderness, which is the very essence of that gentle passion.’

‘Your observation,’ replied the sage, ‘may be very just; and it is, therefore, the more necessary for those, to whom nature and the principles of a virtuous education have given the blessing of an open heart, to guard against the inroads of that passion: if there is no probability of an uninterrupted enjoyment of its object, they should look upon its advances, as of an evil that will destroy their peace.’

‘The pleasures of real love are, perhaps, the most refined, the most delicate and sensible, of any that we are capable of enjoying: but, believe me, those are fortunate lovers, who are indemnified, by these, for the many uneasy hours, the restless anxieties, and the painful apprehensions they undergo.’

In these general terms did Ardavan deliver his instructions to his son, who received them with a silent conviction of their truth and propriety; and immediately after this conversation, retired to offer up the following prayer to the sun for Almena.

‘Incomparable, and Everlasting! whose universal eye sees nothing fairer, nothing more virtuous than Almena; O let that eye look upon her with the vigilance of a parent. She most resembles thee in the continual exercise of beneficence; cherish, therefore, those virtues, that are congenial with thy own; and let the dear possessor, through thy benignant influence, enjoy the constant blessings of health and cheerfulness: but if some portion of sorrow be the birth-right of every human being, Immortal Mithra! may Almena only sigh for the absence of her friend.’

C H A P. XVII.

IN such exercises did Solyman employ his retired hours, till the time approached for his return to Ormus. As he was determined, if possible, to avoid going into Europe, he made no mention of that circumstance to his father: his engagements to the exile were a sufficient reason for his departure; and, in a short time, he arrived at the gulph, and waited upon the English captain, who was preparing for his voyage. Solyman informed him, that upon some interesting occasion he was obliged to relinquish his design of visiting Europe; but that he would recommend a Persian lady to his care, who was bound for England; and he begged that she might enjoy all the retirement her situation could afford. As no objection was made to this proposal, he privately purchased the habit of a Persian lady, which he concealed some days on the coast of Ormus; and under favour of the night, he found no difficulty

difficulty to procure a boat to the English vessel. In a few hours they got under sail; and having received repeated assurances of the captain's care, and engaged the good offices of his crew by a handsome gratuity, he procured a passage by sea to the coast of India.

The state of his heart was now very different from what it had been a few days before: he had discharged his engagements to the exile, with all the success that he could wish; and his face was now set towards Dehli. On he travelled with the eager pace of a lover, and in a few days reached the capital of the Mogul's empire.

The evening he arrived, he flew to the house of Almena, who received him with emotions of tenderness which she was scarcely able to conceal. When the first salutations were passed, she asked him, how he had disposed of the exile, and why he did not accompany him to Europe as he had proposed. He informed her by what means he had procured the exile's escape; adding, that from the letters he had written, if she had received them, she might at once see the reason both of his rejecting the European voyage, and his return to Dehli.

'What would it avail me,' said he, 'to have visited the distant regions of the universe? What pleasure or amusement could I have expected to find in Europe, when all my heart holds dear was still in Asia? Believe me, this place is now more than the whole world to me; and the friendship of Almena is the only pleasure I can enjoy.'

'I have received your letters,' said she; 'and if they speak the language of your heart, I am no stranger to its feelings. To deal ingenuously with you, I am sensible of your merit, and admire your virtues: and were I not more happy in my present condition, than I could hope to be in any other; I know not the man, with whom I would rather divide the enjoyments of life, than with Solyman.'

'Is it possible then,' said Solyman, 'that you can think the condition of celibacy happier than that of marriage? Undoubtedly, the principal happiness of mankind depends on the intercourse of society, and the connections of friendship: marriage is

nothing else but a state of friendship, in which the friends, by uniting their interests, have a constant and uninterrupted enjoyment of each other. Nature aids this union, and reason approves it: can any condition bid fairer for happiness, than that in which the mutual delights of friendship can only be torn from us by the hand of death?'

'There may be some truth,' answered she, 'in what you observe; but there is an inconsistency in human nature, that makes it dangerous even for two friends to enter into any connection that cannot be broken; and an unaccountable caprice, that makes us quarrel with our happiness, because we are sure of enjoying it.'

'Were we deterred from every pursuit,' said Solyman, 'by the apprehension of those inconveniences which the foibles and frailties of our nature might bring upon us; we should never be either virtuous or happy, but might languish away our lives in solitary and unsocial indolence. To avoid the inconveniences of human inconsistency, marriage is, surely, the best institution in the world; for what could be more likely to fix the inconstant, than the habitual intercourse of kindness and good offices; than that gratitude, which is due to the long exercise of affectionate tenderness; and those dear pledges, which must depend for happiness and support on the unanimity of their parents?'

'There is, indeed, an insuperable objection to your being married in India: I mean that contempt, or the horrid alternative of torture, which is entailed on the unhappy woman who survives her husband. But that objection shall vanish immediately,' continued the lover with a look of passionate earnestness: 'let us go, my friend, let us go to love and happiness, in the valley of Irwan. That place, which so lately afforded a retreat to the lovers whose distresses I have related to you, shall then become eternally sacred to love and friendship: that place, whose beautiful scenes I so lately beheld with indifference, I shall then visit with rapture. Extasy is in the thought! to enjoy, with Almena, the shades of Irwan; with her to walk in my native

‘tive fields; with her to sit down on
‘the banks of my favourite stream;
‘for her to pluck the flower, whose
‘beauty may have drawn her atten-
‘tion: to lead her through those ro-
‘mantic scenes, that delighted the in-
‘nocent enthusiasm of my childhood;
‘and to shew her the more solitary
‘retreats, which I sought when her
‘friendship had first taught me to sigh!’

Thus Solyman poured out the natural and passionate sensations of love; and Almena, whose heart was far from being indifferent to him, easily caught the enthusiasm. ‘To your honour, and your friendship,’ said she, ‘I can trust every thing. I am ready to attend you to those scenes, of which you have given me so lively a description: whether they may answer it or not, or whatever they may be, the friendship of Solyman will make them agreeable.’

It is easier to conceive than to express the joy which the lover felt upon this declaration. Within a few days they set forward from Dehli, on their journey to the valley of Irwan; and for the greater expedition, and the less fatigue, they determined to go by sea, and accordingly proceeded to the coast, where they went on board a trading vessel bound for the Persian gulph.

CHAP. XVIII.

AT that time there was war between two petty princes of the hither peninsula of India; and unfortunately, the ship in which they embarked belonged to one of these powers. They had not proceeded above five leagues from the coast, when they were pursued by the foe. After an obstinate and bloody engagement, they were boarded; and their enemies, when they had stripped the vessel of every thing valuable, dismissed it.

They dismissed the vessel; but they took Almena. What heart does not bleed, what eye does not shed a tear, for the miserable Solyman! They dismissed the vessel; but they took Almena. Prayers and tears, and agony and anguish, were vain. The lover saw his dear, trembling, fainting maid, dragged by the hands of the unfeeling sailors into their own ship, after they had bound him to prevent the effects of his rage. ‘I ask not for your mer-

cy,’ cried the wretched youth: ‘only take me into your vessel along with that lady, and prepare your tortures, your racks, and wheels; for me prepare them, and let me perish before these eyes lose sight of Almena!’

While Solyman was vainly uttering these pitiable exclamations, the enemy steered away, and was in a short time out of sight. The men of the ship in which he was, apprehensive of some bad consequences from the violence of his rage, were prudent enough to let him continue bound; while he now loaded them with the reproachful terms of slaves and cowards, and now excited them by promises, or intreated them by prayers, to pursue the foe. The ship having lost her freight, did not proceed on her intended voyage, but returned to the coast of India.

When they arrived, Solyman was informed, that the vessel which had taken them belonged to the King of Sundah, who at that time was at war with the King of Kanara. Upon this information, as soon as he had received intelligence of the situation of the kingdom of Sundah, he went immediately in quest of Almena. Though almost worn to death with fatigue and sorrow, he travelled night and day, till he reached the country. But alas! when he was there, what could he do! Stranger as he was to the people, and in a great measure to their language, he had as much to hope from chance, as from application, for the discovery of Almena.

He would now have sunk under the weight of his misfortunes, had he not availed himself of the first advice of Ardavan, and firmly relied on the Eternal Providence. ‘Immortal Mi-thral!’ said the afflicted youth; ‘thou beholdest me oppressed with misery: but thy beams still shine upon me; and while I enjoy thy light, I will hope for thy favour!’

Thus comforting himself, he still continued his search: depending, for the necessary supports of nature, on the precarious bounty of the villages through which he passed; frequently making the mountain rocks the refuge of his night’s repose, when nature, exhausted with toil and sorrow, in her own defence inclined him to sleep. He wandered incessantly from town to town, and from province to province; often

often exposed to the attacks of savage beasts, and often suffering the insults of the more savage people.

Having in vain gone over a large tract of the inland country, he now confined his search to the coast, in hopes that he might again see the vessel which took his Almena. Day by day he wandered on the beach, constantly casting his eyes on the immense waste of waters, and watching the approach of every vessel that he saw, with the same impatience of expectation, as if he had been assured that it contained Almena.

CHAP. XIX.

AS he was walking one evening by the castle of Sevasir, he heard a mournful voice proceeding from a garden within the fort. Solyman never neglected the voice of sorrow: he went nearer to the place from whence it seemed to proceed; and looking through the iron palisadoes with which the garden was encompassed, he beheld a lady sitting in a melancholy posture on a flower-bank at a small distance.

In the irresistible transport of his heart, he cried aloud, 'Almena!' The lady rose; and as she came towards him, he perceived his mistake: 'Pardon me, Madam,' said he; 'I am an unhappy man, who have lost every thing that is dear to me in a lady, whom I have sought in vain for many months in this province; where I have still reason to believe she is confined, if, indeed, she yet lives; if she is not fallen a sacrifice to her own miseries, or to the barbarous cruelty of the villains who tore her from me.'

'Stranger,' said the lady, 'it is long since I have known any comfort myself, and I am afraid I can have little for you. Your miseries affect me much: the same did my beloved husband once undergo, for whom I now mourn, and must for ever mourn in hopeless sorrow.'

'Is your husband then dead,' said Solyman; 'or is he only lost to you, as Almena is to me? If the latter is the case, you may yet have hope: the all-seeing eye of Providence looks down upon all his creatures, and he will assuredly redress the misfortunes of the virtuous.'

'We were inhabitants,' replied the lady, 'of the kingdom of Kanara. The Sundians, who made an incursion into our territories, and amongst many other wretched people, carried off my husband and me—' 'How, Madam!' interrupted Solyman: 'they were merciful, if they suffered your husband to accompany you.'—'Their mercy,' said she, 'did not extend so far: they presented me to the governor of this castle; and my husband they imprisoned in a distant part of the kingdom.'

'Ever since I came within these hated walls, their savage master has aggravated my miseries, by the mortifying offers of his love; totally regardless of my sorrow and distraction, a thousand times has the unfeeling wretch insulted my torn heart with odious caresses, and still continues to persecute me in the same manner, upbraiding me with ingratitude for what he calls his kindness in permitting me to live. But I am not alone in my misfortunes: here are numbers of unhappy women under the same confinement, whose sufferings too nearly resemble my own. Some of them, like me, have still resisted the importunities of the tyrant; while others, more, I hope, through fear than inclination, have unhappily submitted to his will.'

At these words, terror and apprehension were again roused in the heart of Solyman, and created a conflict which shook his frame. He stood aghast and motionless for a moment: at last recollecting himself, 'Is there,' said he, 'tell me, Madam, is there a lady within these walls, a native of Dehli, who was taken some months ago from on board a Kanarian vessel by the Sundians?'

'To that question,' said the lady, 'I can make no answer: we are all kept in different apartments, and not allowed to converse with each other; we are not even permitted, but alone, to walk in these gardens: and should I now be observed to talk with you, though through these detested bars, my future liberty would probably be endangered. All that you can do to know, whether the lady you have lost be in this place, is to attend at the different hours of the day near these palisadoes; where you will be able to observe,

‘observe, in their respective turns, the appearance of the women in the gardens. But you will incur great danger in the experiment: and after all, should you find that your lady is here, what can it avail you? You will only have the mortification to know it, without being able to rescue her.’

CHAP. XX.

SOLYMAN took his leave of the lady; and having formed his resolution, waited with the utmost impatience for the light of morning. He happened, indeed, to be so far secured from suspicion, as to be dressed in a Sundian habit, which belonged to an officer of the ship that carried off Almena, who compelled him to take it in exchange for his own. But insensible of danger, at the earliest dawn he hastened to his post, and passed the day in alternate hope and despair: he saw many women, but he saw not Almena. In the evening, therefore, regretting the disappointment even of those expectations which he dreaded to have confirmed, he resolved to quit his station till the return of morning, when, by the glimmering of the moon, he perceived another lady enter the garden.

As she came nearer, her image glanced through his heart more swiftly, than the lightning smites the traveller on the mountains of Hima. The lady was Almena. In a burst of transport, he cried, ‘Almena! Solyman!’ struck at once with the voice, the name, and the figure of Solyman, surprise overcame her, and she fell senseless upon the terras.

Solyman, unable to enter the garden, in an agony of terror, cried out, ‘Save, save my Almena!’ at the same time running round the walls in the utmost distraction. His exclamations alarmed the guard, who immediately secured him; though, from his cries and confusion, they concluded him to be mad, and made their report of him as such to the governor of the castle, who ordered him to be immediately brought before him.

Solyman, the moment he beheld the governor, fiercely cried out, ‘I conjure thee, if thou art a human being, let me instantly fly to the relief of a

‘lady in thy gardens.’ The governor was alarmed by an appearance of reason in this request, and ordered him to be secured, while he went himself into the gardens to know if there was any foundation for it. There he found Almena supporting herself against the wall, not having perfectly recovered either her strength or reason. ‘Art thou indeed my Solyman?’ said she, ‘If thou art my Solyman, support me in thy arms.’ In his arms he took her, and bore her to a pavilion, where he held her till her reason returned. She turned her eyes full upon him, and, with a look of fear and horror, shrunk from his embrace.

‘Tell me, Madam; I beseech you, tell me,’ said the governor, ‘what is the cause of this distraction? Why are those dear eyes so full of wildness and horror, and why do you look upon your protector with such aversion? Is there then some other person more happy in your favour and affection, and must I for ever languish at your feet in vain?’

‘If thou hast any other affection for me,’ said Almena, ‘than that which is inspired by brutal instinct; if thou hast more feeling than the walls that surround thee, thou wilt surely pity me. The dear unhappy man, whom I fear ere now thy guards have seized, is the friend for whose loss thou hast known me mourn ever since I came within thy power. Yes, thou wilt pity me; for thou hast wept: when I related to thee my miseries, the tears of compassion flowed from thine eyes. Let us throw ourselves at thy feet; let us owe our happiness to thee, and thou shalt have all the affection which is not due to Solyman.’

The weeping beauty, as she uttered these words, threw herself before him in such an agony of sorrow, and such a posture of supplication, as would have moved any heart in which vice had not extinguished every spark of humanity. Far from being affected by it, the governor of Sevasir made her the following answer: ‘Absurd and vain! to suppose that I should tamely yield that happiness to another, which I could never obtain myself. Know, Madam, that both you and your lover are now in my power; and that he has no indulgence to hope for, but what your kindness to me may procure.’

vernor
f rea-
him to
f into
as any
found
nst the
overed
' Art
d she,
ort me
e took
where
rned.
, and,
hrunk

n you,
that is
Why
wild-
o you
a fuch
other
avour
r ever

on for
which
f thou
s that
y pity
whom
eized,
u haft
came
u wilt
when
e tears
eyes.
feet;
e, and
which

ttered
e him
d fuch
d have
ad not
anity.
e go-
llow-
n! to
yield
hich I
now,
lover
aat he
, but
y pro-
cure





'cure him.' With these words he withdrew; rather less offended at the thought of having a rival in Almena's affections, than pleased with the hope that he might terrify her into compliance by his menaces against her lover.

Almena remained in the most pitiable distress, sharpened by painful apprehensions for her own honour, and the life of Solyman; and wandering alone into the garden, she added one night of sorrow more to the many she had suffered.

Great God! what misery may one villain, armed with power, bring upon thy creatures! Were there not a state of existence, where vice shall be punished and virtue rewarded, how would thy works seem to reproach their Almighty Maker! But let the sons of men learn, that he who is infinitely wise, is also perfectly just; and that he can as easily take cognizance of the moral conduct of his creatures, as he could at first create this immense system of the universe, in which the minutest creature declares the skill of the Architect.

CHAP. XXI.

THE impious tyrant of Sevasir enjoyed the balm of sleep and the refreshment of rest, while the virtuous Solyman and Almena suffered the most grievous affliction.

When the morning appeared, Nagrakut, that was the wretch's name, went at his usual hour into the garden. Almena, who was still there, overcome by the weight of continued sorrow, had sunk into a transient slumber on a bench in the pavilion. Nagrakut approached and stood by her as she slumbered. There was a fight that might have excited tenderness in the breast of a savage: but it moved not the heart of Nagrakut, nor awakened any other passion in him but that of a libidinous desire. In a dream, she waved her hand, and cried, with a voice of mournful tenderness, 'Do not murder him, Nagrakut! Let my Solyman live!' then letting fall the hand she had raised, she sunk again into silent slumber.

Nagrakut yet felt no pity; but placing himself near her on the bench, inclosed her in his arms. She awoke; and, finding herself in the embraces of the

tyrant, shrieked out with the most distressful horror. Her cries pierced the cell where Solyman was confined. With the united strength of rage and terror, he burst the door of his prison; and running through the apartments of the castle with a dagger in his hand, which he had fortunately snatched up in the way, he flew to the garden.

Almena was still shrieking and struggling in the arms of Nagrakut, who endeavouring to sooth her to his embraces, had not observed the approach of Solyman. 'Villain,' said Solyman, 'remove thy execrable hands from the person of that lady, and employ them in the defence of thy own!' Nagrakut, who was the most abject coward, called aloud to his guards. 'Coward! slave!' said Solyman; 'draw this instant, or my dagger shall pierce thy heart.' Nagrakut then fell at his feet; and begging for mercy, promised him Almena and liberty. 'This moment then,' said Solyman, 'dismiss us from thy cursed prison.' No sooner had he uttered these words than the guards appeared. Nagrakut immediately beckoned to them to seize him: but Solyman, observing his motion, hastily ran up to him, and plunged his dagger into his heart.

The tyrant fell. No way of escape, however, was left for Solyman: he was instantly seized by the soldiers, loaded with heavy chains, and shut up, with Almena, in a strong apartment of the castle: with Almena he was shut up, for jealousy now no longer parted them; and she was considered as an accomplice in the murder of the governor.

This circumstance administered inexpressible consolation to them both. 'At last, my Almena,' said the lover, 'fortune has brought thee to my arms: but after what miseries, good Heaven! and in what circumstances! Yet my heart never once doubted the justice or the care of Providence; we shall yet be happy in the valley of Irwan.'

The spirits of Almena were so exhausted by the successive ravages of terror, sorrow, and surprize, that she reclined for some time in the arms of Solyman, unable to speak, and only venting her grief in broken and feeble sighs. The officers of the castle of Sevasir had sent in the mean time to the King of Sundah, to know in what manner he

would have the murderers of the governor executed.

The death of a villain is seldom regretted, even by those to whom his villainies have been of service. The King of Sundah always hated the governor of Sevasir; but he dared not depose him, because he had been established under him by the Mogul: he, therefore, sent no other commands to the officers of the castle, but that the prisoners should remain there till farther orders.

Not long after this, a body of Kanarians entered the country of Sundah, and laid siege to the castle of Sevasir. As the death of the governor had thrown all into confusion, the fort was easily carried; and the Kanarians took prisoners all that were within the castle. Solyman and Almena, though they could not be displeased at this change of fortune, had yet another to encounter, which might prove as fatal to their happiness as any they had escaped could have been.

It is a custom in the eastern nations, to present the women that are taken in war to the kings, that they may select whom they like: and the rest are divided among the officers, according to their several ranks. All the ladies that were taken in the castle of Sevasir, had this fate to undergo; and as the governor had been curious in his choice, these women were looked upon as a most valuable capture.

C H A P. XXII.

THEY were immediately conveyed to the court of Kanara, and presented to the king for his choice. They all stood before him at the same time; and he looked upon each of them for some minutes: but his eye dwelt longer on Almena, than the rest. Unfortunately, she observed this; and her fear and confusion new animated her features, and gave fresh beauties to her complexion. The king immediately selected her, and the rest were dismissed.

Solyman was all this time kept with the garrison of Sevasir, as a prisoner of war: but at length, having convinced the Kanarians, that he had no connections with the King of Sundah, and that he was willing to enter into the

service of their prince, his liberty was restored him. This was the only means by which he could attempt the recovery of Almena; who, as he was now informed, was retained by the king. He immediately repaired to the capital of Kanara; and signifying to the officers of the court, that he had some important intelligence relating to the war, to communicate to his majesty, he gained an easy admittance to him.

When the king appeared, he prostrated himself before him; and being commanded to speak, he thus expressed himself: 'Let the King of Kanara live! for his ear is open to the complaints of the unhappy, and he despiseth no man for the miseries which chance hath brought upon him.'—'I am a man,' interposed the king, 'proceed.'—'It was my hand that put an end to the life of your enemy, the governor of Sevasir.'—'In that,' replied the prince, 'you did me a signal service: but let me know your motives; and I shall be better able to judge of the action, as well as of my obligations to you for it.'

'O prince!' said Solyman, 'I was possessed of a lady, more beautiful than the star that overflows it's urn in the evening, and dearer to me than the life-drops of my heart. We were on board a Kanarian vessel that was trading to the Persian Gulph; and were bound to the valley of Irwan in Mesopotamia, the place of my nativity: but alas! before we had proceeded many leagues from our coast, we were boarded by a pirate of Sundah. We were plundered, and dismissed; but the dear partner of my heart was taken from me. After long search, I found that she was in the possession of the governor of Sevasir; who, regardless of her miseries, or the prepossession of her heart, cruelly continued to insult her with the offer of his love.'—'Inhuman wretch!' interrupted the king: 'but proceed.' This ejaculation gave Solyman new hopes, and he continued his relation.

'Walking one evening by the gardens of the fort, I discovered her on a terras at a small distance. She was so much surprized by the suddenness of my appearance, that she fainted. Being unable to enter the gardens, in my distraction I cried for help; and my cries alarming the guard, I

was

SOLYMAN AND ALMENA.

was seized. That night I was confined in a dungeon of the castle; but early the next morning hearing the shrieks of a female voice, which I either knew or fear imagined to be that of my love, rage and terror gave me more than natural strength, and I burst open the door of my prison. I was unarmed; but, fortunately, a dagger lying in my way, I snatched it up, and flew to the garden from whence the voice proceeded. There I beheld the dear object of my affections trembling in the embraces of the tyrant: at the sight of me, he called aloud to his guards, cowardly refusing the offer I gave him of defending himself against my dagger: nay, he meanly begged his life, and offered me, on that condition, liberty for myself and the lady; but the guards immediately after coming up, he beckoned to them to seize me: I found time, however, to thrust my dagger into his base heart. Thus the villain perished.—‘And justice,’ said the king, ‘directed your arm.’

‘O prince!’ continued Solyman, ‘I am still miserable. I have reason to believe, that some of your officers will detain that lady, as a prize taken in the castle of Sevasir.’—‘No officer of mine,’ replied the king, ‘shall be suffered to detain her: let me know her name, and she shall be immediately restored to you.’—‘Her name,’ said Solyman, ‘is Almena.’

The king appeared disturbed, and walked backward and forward for some moments in the utmost confusion. He knew, that Almena was the lady whom he had selected from the captives; and he had the most ardent affection for her. In a few moments he withdrew, and commanded Solyman to attend him the following day:

C H A P. XXIII.

THE heart of the king was, in the mean time, distracted by different passions; urged by the most powerful love to detain Almena, and dissuaded from that by truth, humanity, and shame. ‘Am I,’ said he, ‘possessed of a throne, and shall I have no more power to indulge my wishes, than the peasant of the field! what is the worth or the end of absolute power,

if kings must tamely sacrifice their inclinations, to the creatures they were born to command! Shall I give up such beauty as that of Almena! a beauty that has smitten my heart, and inspired me with such tenderness of affection as I never yet felt for woman!—But Almena was Solyman’s!—It might be so; but she is now mine. Possession goes from one to another, according to the laws of nations; and, by those laws, Almena is mine.

‘Why then do I feel these uneasy sensations, as much at the thoughts of keeping, as of parting with her! the laws of nature, the unvariable laws of nature and truth create them. The laws of nations ought always to be founded on these; and these suggest to me, that to keep Almena, would be most injurious and inhuman. Shall I, who have condemned that in another, as a crime which deserved the punishment of death, commit the very same myself! what a detestable hypocrite should I appear! Shall I, who promised the lover that none of my officers should deprive him of Almena; shall I degrade the king, by doing what I would have punished in a subject? I love Almena, and should be exquisitely happy in the enjoyment of her; but shall I, therefore, make her miserable! How should I ever partake of happiness, if the object of my affections lived with me in sullen discontent, or inconsolable sorrow? Base and unworthy of the heart of man, must be that love, which would purchase its gratification by the misery of its object! The heart of Almena is Solyman’s, and so shall be her person; painful is the alternative; but truth, and honour, and virtue, must prevail!’

Thus the generous king of Kanara overcame the efforts of importunate desire, by the force of virtue and reason; and nobly scorned to avail himself of his power against an unhappy man, who had been long persecuted by misfortune, and distressed in his love.

The hour came at which he had ordered Solyman to attend him. The king received him with a condescending smile; and without the least appearance of uneasiness or dissatisfaction in his countenance, desired him not to be apprehensive about Almena, for that he

should

SOLYMAN AND ALMENA.

should shortly be put in possession of her.

Having thus spoken, he went immediately to her apartment, and gently taking her hand, 'Most beautiful of the daughters of India,' said he, 'cease your sorrows! I am not now come to offer you my love; but to recommend to you another lover, who possibly may be happier in your favour than I could ever hope to be: he is now in the palace; and if you will give me leave, I will introduce him to you.'—'My heart,' said Almena, 'has been so much accustomed to new distresses, that it is not now shocked by their frequency: but if you have any pity for me, suffer me to bewail my miseries in solitude. Not to be interrupted in my sorrows, is all I ask; and that is not, surely, too much for you to grant.' The king answered with a smile, 'If I am not to be happy in your love, I am determined that none but the person whom I am about to introduce to you, shall be so;' and hastily quitting the apartment, he returned with Solyman.

The lovers flew to each other's arms; 'My Solyman!—' 'My Almena!' In a few moments being recollected, they threw themselves at the feet of the king; and Solyman, as well as the transports of his heart would give him leave, expressed his gratitude: 'Generous prince,' said he, 'the thanks of Solyman are not worth your acceptance. But you will not be without a reward: yours shall be the supreme pleasure of conscious goodness; yours shall be the care of the Eternal Providence, and the prayers and blessings of Solyman and Almena!'

In the gratitude of his heart, Solyman offered the king his assistance in the prosecution of the war with the Sundians: but he humanely refused his offer; telling him, that love and war were no allies; that his sufferings had already been too many and too great; and that neither he should be exposed to danger, nor Almena to fear, on his account. He moreover told them, that if they were inclined to return by sea to the valley of Irwan, they should be attended by an armed vessel, to secure them from the assaults of an enemy. But this obliging offer they declined: Solyman was unwilling any more to risque

that which was dearer than life; and Almena yet trembled at the thoughts of the Sundian pirate. They, therefore, notwithstanding the length and tediousness of the way, determined to go by land; and having taken leave of the king, who supplied them with every necessary, and lent them his own beasts and attendants, they set their faces towards Dehli.

C H A P. XXIV.

THEIR road was through a mountainous country, troublesome to the traveller; little cultivated by the labours, or enlivened by the habitations of men. But what are the difficulties which love and hope cannot surmount! they despise the threats of danger, and the toils of labour; and proceed with resolution through those perplexities, which by other eyes are beheld with despair. The travellers, thus animated, and looking forward to those delightful scenes of rest, those days of rural ease and happiness which they should enjoy in the valley of Irwan, passed over the rugged mountains that opposed their way, without the least sense of weariness or fear.

After travelling many days, without any accident or delay, more than the necessary refreshment of nature required, they arrived at Dehli. At the sight of her native place, Almena shed a tear of joy, and the lovers embraced each other with more than common tenderness: so much is there in the power of external circumstances, to improve and exalt the pleasures of the mind. Almena always loved her Solyman with the most tender affection; but she loved him at Dehli, more than in any other place: delight is inseparable from the idea of those scenes, where we have passed the happy hours of childhood; and though, when in the maturity of life we revisit our native countries, we cannot enjoy that innocent thoughtless cheerfulness, of which we still retain some notion; yet we are delighted with the remembrance of it, and those scenes are always dear to us.

Almena forgot not to visit her village, and the people whom she called her own. The poor inhabitants, at the sight of their benefactress, wept with pleasure;

pleasure; and she did not leave them, without giving them new exhortations to their duty, and new instances of her beneficence. Indeed, in all generous acts she now doubled her assiduities; for she concluded, that, on account of her great and singular obligations to Providence, she ought in gratitude to have a superior portion of virtue.

After a short stay at Dehli, Solyman and Almena renewed their journey, and set forward to Ispahan. This rout was longer; but it was more easy, and less exposed to robbers, than that which led to the Persian Gulph. When they arrived at Ispahan, Solyman had the pleasure to find his friend the merchant, who was still detained by business in that city. He easily made his apology for not accepting, as he had proposed, his kind offer of a passage into Europe, by introducing him to Almena. He related to him their various interesting adventures, to which he listened with the eager curiosity and concern of a friend, acknowledging all along the hand of Providence in their preservation. For the amiable and accomplished Almena, he felt great esteem: her pathetic descriptions, and her just and natural observations, were extremely entertaining and affecting. But he was most charmed with the character of the King of Kanara; and requested Almena to relate every particular of his behaviour.

“When I first beheld him,” said she, “I perceived in his countenance a noble affability and openness, which seemed to speak a great and generous mind. This gave me some pleasure; as I might have hopes from his compassion, should it be my fate to be selected by him: such, you know, it was. When I was conducted into an apartment of the palace, he waited on me with the most affable politeness; and seeing me in tears, he gently took my hand, and spoke to the following effect: “Be not distressed, fair Almena! Though you are in the power of a prince, you are not in the hands of a tyrant. If time and the assiduities of tenderness may prevail on you to return my love, I shall be happy; if not, you shall never be made miserable by cruelty or by violence.” Consistent with this declaration, was

his whole conduct to me, during the time I was in his possession. How I regained my liberty, you have already heard.”

“To the character which you have already received of the Kanarian prince,” said Solyman to the merchant, “I will add a poetical portrait, which possibly may not be disagreeable to you: my gratitude for his favours, and my admiration of his virtues, induced me to attempt it.”

THE AMIABLE KING.

THE freeborn muse her tribute rarely brings,
Or burns her incense to the power of kings:
But virtue ever shall her voice command,
Alike a spade or sceptre in her hand.
Is there a prince untainted with a throne,
That makes the interest of mankind his own;
Whose bounty knows no bounds of time or place;
Who nobly feels for all the human race:
A prince, that acts in reason's steady sphere,
No slave to passion, and no dupe to fear;
A breast, where mild humanity resides,
Where virtue dictates, and where wisdom guides;
A mind, that stretch'd beyond the years of youth,
Explores the secret springs of taste and truth.
These, these are virtues, which the muse shall sing;
And plant, for these, her laurels round a king!
Kanara's monarch! this shall be thy praise:
For this, be crown'd with never-fading bays!

“Your verses,” said the merchant, “are very agreeable to me: for they are justly applicable to a prince whom every merchant in Great Britain has the greatest reason to respect; and who is beloved by his subjects, as much as a father by his children: He too is young, as is the king of Kanara. But I have lately had the pleasure to hear of his marriage: and at the same time I received, from a literary correspondent, an ode on the occasion; which, as you have a poetical taste, I shall make no scruple to offer you.”

HYMENEAL.

HYMENEAL.

I.

AWAKE, thou everlasting lyre!
That once the mighty Pindar strung,
When, rapt with more than mortal fire,
The gods of Greece he sung:

Awake!

Arrest the rapid foot of time again,
With liquid notes of joy, and pleasure's
melting strain.

II.

Crown'd with each beauteous flower that
blows

On Acidalia's tuneful side;
With all Aonia's rosy pride,
Where numerous Aganippe flows;
From Thespian groves and fountains wild,
Come, thou yellow-vested boy,
Redolent of youth and joy,
* Fair Urania's favourite child!
George to thee devotes the day:
Io Hymen! haste away!

III.

Daughter of the genial main!
Queen of youth and rosy smiles,
Queen of dimple-dwelling wiles;
Come, with all thy Paphian train!
O give the fair that blooms for Britain's
throne,
Thy melting charms of love, thy soul-en-
chanting zone!

IV.

Daughter of the genial main!
Bring that heart-dissolving power,
Which once in Ida's sacred bower
The soul of Jove oppos'd in vain:
The fire of gods thy conquering charms
confest;
And vanquish'd sunk, sunk down on Juno's
fostering breast.

V.

She comes! The conscious sea subsides;
Old ocean curbs his thund'ring tides;
Smooth the silken surface lies,
Where Venus' flowery chariot flies:
Paphian airs in ambush sleep
On the still bosom of the deep;
Paphian maids around her move,
Keen-eyed hope, and joy, and love;
Their rosy breasts a thousand Cupids lave;
And dip their wanton wings, and beat the
buxom wave.

VI.

But mark, of more than vulgar mien,
With regal grace, and radiant eye,
A form in youthful majesty!
Britain, hail thy favour'd queen!

For her, the conscious sea subsides;
Old ocean curbs his thund'ring tides:
O'er the glassy-bosom'd main,
Venus leads her laughing train;
The Paphian maids move graceful by her
side;
And, o'er the buxom waves, the rosy Cupids
ride.

VII.

Fly, ye fairy-footed hours!
Fly, with aromatic flowers!
Such as bath'd in orient dews,
Beauty's living glow diffuse;
Such as in Idalia's grove
Breathe the sweets, the soul of love!

VIII.

Come, genial god of chaste delight,
With wreaths of festive roses crown'd,
And torch that burns with radiance
bright,
And liberal robe that sweeps the
ground!
Bring thy days of golden joy,
Pleasures pure that never cloy!
Bring to Britain's happy pair,
All that's kind, and good, and fair!
George to thee devotes the day:
Io Hymen! haste away!

IX.

Daughters of Jove! ye virgins sage,
That wait on Camus' hoary age;
That oft his winding vales along
Have smooth'd your silver-woven song;
O wake once more those lays sublime,
That live beyond the wrecks of time!
To crown your Albion's boasted pair,
The never-fading wreath prepare;
While her rocks echo to this grateful strain,
* The friends of Freedom and of Britain
reign!

* The ode you have obliged me with,
said Solyman, ' though I do not very
' well understand it, gives me some
' idea of the enthusiasm and harmony
' of the English poetry. But I am
' less pleased with the productions of
' art in your country, than with the
' affectionate duty which the people
' shew to their king: for that is the
' basis of civil happiness; and in-
' deed every humane prince, who has
' the interest of his subjects at heart,
' will always reign in their affections.
' But now, my friend, if you are
' not too much taken up with your
' concerns at Ispahan, will you be pre-
' vailed on to visit the valley of Irwan?
' As you are a lover of nature, and of
' the muses, you will there meet with
' much to entertain you; at least, you

* See Catullus.

* will

will find a retreat from the fatigues of business, and the plagues of popularity. Almena too joins in this request, and will be glad of so entertaining a friend in the first stages of her retirement.

The merchant accepted the invitation, and they left Ispahan the following day. He was desirous to hear from Almena the story of her captivity, and took the first opportunity to request it: 'I have heard,' said he, 'from Solyman, the greatest part of your adventures; but I have not been informed how you passed that unhappy period of time, from your being taken by the Sundians, to your departure from the castle at Sevasir.'

'You call back memory, Sir,' said Almena, 'to the days of misery: but as I can, at this distance, look upon them without terror, I will endeavour to describe them to you.'

'When I was first taken by the Sundians, my distraction was so great, that I retain no idea of what passed, till the captain of the vessel conveyed me on shore to the castle of Sevasir, and presented me, terrified and almost frantic as I was, to the detested governor; who, as I have been since informed, received such kind of acknowledgments from the seamen, for protecting them in their illegal and piratical captures.'

'The wretch, as well as I remember, seemed totally insensible to my misery; and, with a smile upon his countenance, ordered his domesticks to convey me to my apartments. These, indeed, wanted neither elegance nor convenience; but I despised the one, and neglected the other. The first evening I passed in the most painful anguish for the loss of Solyman, and the most dreadful apprehensions of injurious treatment from the governor. The women that were about me, seemed the wretched remains of ruined innocence, who had first been victims to the desires of the tyrant, and afterwards made his slaves. Dreadful was the scene I had before me! Some of these unhappy creatures seemed to pity me, and to be concerned for my approaching misfortunes; while others, who with their virtue had lost their humanity, looked upon me with a careless scorn; pleased, I fear,

with the thought, that they should see one woman more, as miserable and as despicable as themselves.'

'Early the next morning, the governor came into my apartment; and casting his eyes upon the bed, on which I had not reposed, "It seems," Madam," said he, with a scornful smile, "that you approve not of your lodgings; but a little time, it is to be presumed, will reconcile you to us." These morning visits he constantly paid me; and as he always found me in sullen sorrow, he behaved much in the same manner. At last, he changed his address; seemed to pity me; asked me for the story of my misfortunes; and, I believe, wept when he heard it: but as I was aware of the hypocrite, I was equally regardless of his pity, as I had been of his scorn; and still continued to look upon him, with the same forbidding aversion and disdain.'

'Thus passed my days in this confinement; but they would have been more intolerable, had I not found a harp in my apartments, which probably had been left there by some unhappy lady, who had possessed them before me. With this instrument I amused myself for many a melancholy hour, which must otherwise have passed away in the most miserable languor. I also composed a song, suitable to my state of mind and misfortune; which I adapted to my harp, and which, I think, was as follows:

S O N G.

I.

TIS o'er—the pleasing prospect's o'er!
My weary heart can hope no more;
Then welcome, woe despair!
Approach with all thy dreadful train;
Wild anguish, discontent, and pain,
And thorny-pillow'd care!

II.

Gay hope, and ease, and joy, and rest,
All, all that charms the peaceful breast,
For ever I resign:
Let pale anxiety, instead,
That has not where to lay her head,
And lasting woe be mine.

III.

It comes! I feel the painful woe;
My eyes, for Solyman, will flow

In silent grief again;
Who wand'ring o'er some mountain drear,
Now haply sheds the pensive tear,
And calls on me in vain.

IV.

Perhaps, along the lonely shores,
He now the sea's blue breast explores,
To watch the distant sail:
Perhaps, on Sundah's hills forlorn,
He faints, with aching toil o'erborne;
And life's last spirits fail.

V.

Ah! no—the cruel thought forbear!
Avaunt, thou fiend of fell despair,
That only death canst give!
While Heaven eternal rules above,
Almena yet may find her love,
And Solyman may live!

'Such, Sir, was my life in the castle
of Sevasir; which passed like the wa-
ters of Zenderoud, that in some
places are tortured by rocks and pre-
cipices, and in others languish in dull
stagnation.'

CHAP. XXV.

THE travellers had now proceeded on their way to the valley of Irwan, as far as the village of Abdat; where Solyman proposed that they should visit the lovers who owed their preservation to him. Of this he was the more desirous, as he had never seen them, since he had first recommended them to the protection of his father; but the pleasure he proposed to himself from this visit, arose not from a desire of being flattered with their acknowledgments; but of beholding and enjoying their happiness.

The lovers received their benefactor, with the greatest ardour of gratitude; but at the same time with that delicacy, which proved it to be sincere: they were not loud in their acknowledgments, nor officious in their compliments; but yet their attention to their guests, shewed how much they were delighted with this opportunity of expressing their respect for Solyman. The travellers, in the mean time, were not less pleased to behold the peculiar happiness of the lovers, who seemed to have but one heart, and one inclination. Solyman and Almena beheld, in them, a picture of themselves; and felt more sen-

sibly their own felicity, when they had before them so pleasing an image of it.

The merchant too was delighted with this scene of conjugal happiness. 'Such,' said he to Solyman, 'are the genuine fruits of those alliances, which are made by love. When I behold them, I blush for myself and for my countrymen; for love, genuine love, as if it were no longer a passion essential to human nature, is looked upon as an Utopian idea, existing only in the imagination of poets and enthusiasts: hence, every tendency to it is ridiculed as romantic, and modern marriages are only contracts of convenience. A British lady is exposed to sale; and if she has a good person, as well as an ample fortune, she hopes by that addition only to fetch a higher price, and make a better market. This, however, it must be owned, is not the foible of the women only; the men are equally, if not more mercenary; and have, if possible, more selfish views in their marriages: so that, in this case, cunning is only opposed to cunning. All this proceeds from that mischievous opinion, which measures happiness by the possessions of fortune. Hence, that mutual coldness and indifference, which both experience before the marriage torch is extinct: from new acquisitions of wealth, each expects new degrees of felicity, and both are disappointed; when they find themselves mistaken, destitute of that affectionate tenderness which endears the married state, they look upon each other as the cause of discontent, and disgust and aversion succeed. Thus, they sacrifice to vanity, and reap the fruits of it!'

From the village of Abdat, Solyman and Almena, with their friend the merchant, proceeded to the valley of Irwan, where they found the aged Ardavan still living, and enjoying all the faculties of nature. The benevolent sage rejoiced to receive his son, not only safe from the dangers of travel, but happy in the enjoyment of his love; and with a heart full of tenderness, he thus conferred on both, his paternal benediction:

'Children of the heart, and comfort
of the years of Ardavan! Solyman
shall be as the sun, when he cometh
from the chambers of the east, when
he

he spreadeth his glories over the waves of Ganges: my son shall be as the Euphrates, the river of plenty, whose waves are the delight of a thousand meadows; he shall be like the roe upon the mountains, that danceth in the vigour of his heart, and faith to the fence of the husbandman, What art thou? His head shall be crowned with the rays of Mithra; because his heart melted with compassion, and because his hand was stretched forth to relieve the children of affliction!

Almena is fairer than the women of the east; she is more virtuous than the daughters of men: love dwelleth in her heart, and benevolence sitteth in her eye. She shall be like the tree that droppeth balm upon the flowers of Irwan; as the star of the evening reflected from the river. Her countenance shall be pleasant as the calm surface of the ocean, when the gilded clouds of evening blaze upon it's bosom: she shall be as the moon, when she lendeth her rays to the traveller, and sheddeth a mild light over the groves and vallies. Her voice shall be as the voice of the turtle, calling to her mate in the thickets of the forest. Like the stars that surround the chariot of the moon, shall be the children of Almena; beautiful as the plants of the cedar, and sprightly as the fawns upon the mountains!

Thus blessed by the voice of Ardavan, and happy in themselves, the virtuous Solyman and Almena live in the valley of Irwan! Each day is endeared by the delights of tender love; and the remembrance of past distresses is attended only with the pleasing sensations of gratitude to that Being, whose providence is over all his works.

HYMN TO THE ETERNAL PROVIDENCE.

I.

LIFE of the world, immortal mind! Father of all the human kind, Whose boundless eye that knows no rest, Intent on nature's ample breast,

Explores the space of earth and skies,
And sees eternal incense rise!
To thee, my humble voice I raise:
Forgive, while I presume to praise.

II.

Though short the life thy goodness gave,
And soon descending to the grave;
Yet 'twas thy bounty, still to give
A being that can think and live;
In all thy works thy wisdom see,
And stretch it's tow'ring mind to thee!
To thee, my humble voice I raise:
Forgive, while I presume to praise.

III.

And still this poor contracted span,
This life, that bears the name of man;
From thee derives it's vital ray,
Eternal source of life and day!
Thy bounty still the sunshine pours,
That gilds it's morn and evening hours.
To thee, my humble voice I raise:
Forgive, while I presume to praise.

IV.

Through error's maze, through folly's night,
The lamp of reason lends me light.
When stern affliction waves her rod,
My heart confides in thee, my God!
When nature shrinks, oppress'd with woes;
E'en then she finds in thee repose.
To thee, my humble voice I raise:
Forgive, while I presume to praise.

V.

Affliction flies, and hope returns;
Her lamp with brighter splendor burns.
Gay love with all his smiling train,
And peace and joy are here again.
These, these, I know, 'twas thine to give:
I trusted; and, behold! I live.
To thee, my humble voice I raise:
Forgive, while I presume to praise.

VI.

O may I still thy favour prove!
Still grant me gratitude and love.
Let truth and virtue guide my heart;
Nor peace, nor hope, nor joy depart.
But yet, whate'er my life may be,
My heart shall still repose on thee!
To thee, my humble voice I raise:
Forgive, while I presume to praise!

In silent grief again;
Who wand'ring o'er some mountain drear,
Now haply sheds the pensive tear,
And calls on me in vain.

IV.

Perhaps, along the lonely shores,
He now the sea's blue breast explores,
To watch the distant sail:
Perhaps, on Sundah's hills forlorn,
He faints, with aching toil o'erborne;
And life's last spirits fail.

V.

Ah! no—the cruel thought forbear!
Avaunt, thou fiend of fell despair,
That only death canst give!
While Heaven eternal rules above,
Almena yet may find her love,
And Solyman may live!

'Such, Sir, was my life in the castle
' of Sevasir; which passed like the wa-
' ters of Zenderoud, that in some
' places are tortured by rocks and pre-
' cipices, and in others languish in dull
' stagnation.'

C H A P. XXV.

THE travellers had now proceeded on their way to the valley of Irwan, as far as the village of Abdat; where Solyman proposed that they should visit the lovers who owed their preservation to him. Of this he was the more desirous, as he had never seen them, since he had first recommended them to the protection of his father; but the pleasure he proposed to himself from this visit, arose not from a desire of being flattered with their acknowledgments; but of beholding and enjoying their happiness.

The lovers received their benefactor, with the greatest ardour of gratitude; but at the same time with that delicacy, which proved it to be sincere: they were not loud in their acknowledgments, nor officious in their compliments; but yet their attention to their guests, shewed how much they were delighted with this opportunity of expressing their respect for Solyman. The travellers, in the mean time, were not less pleased to behold the peculiar happiness of the lovers, who seemed to have but one heart, and one inclination. Solyman and Almena beheld, in them, a picture of themselves; and felt more sen-

sibly their own felicity, when they had before them so pleasing an image of it.

The merchant too was delighted with this scene of conjugal happiness. 'Such,' said he to Solyman, 'are the genuine fruits of those alliances, which are made by love. When I behold them, I blush for myself and for my countrymen; for love, genuine love, as if it were no longer a passion essential to human nature, is looked upon as an Utopian idea, existing only in the imagination of poets and enthusiasts: hence, every tendency to it is ridiculed as romantic, and modern marriages are only contracts of convenience. A British lady is exposed to sale; and if she has a good person, as well as an ample fortune, she hopes by that addition only to fetch a higher price, and make a better market. This, however, it must be owned, is not the foible of the women only; the men are equally, if not more mercenary; and have, if possible, more selfish views in their marriages: so that, in this case, cunning is only opposed to cunning. All this proceeds from that mischievous opinion, which measures happiness by the possessions of fortune. Hence, that mutual coldness and indifference, which both experience before the marriage torch is extinct: from new acquisitions of wealth, each expects new degrees of felicity, and both are disappointed; when they find themselves mistaken, destitute of that affectionate tenderness which endears the married state, they look upon each other as the cause of discontent, and disgust and aversion succeed. Thus, they sacrifice to vanity, and reap the fruits of it!'

From the village of Abdat, Solyman and Almena, with their friend the merchant, proceeded to the valley of Irwan, where they found the aged Ardavan still living, and enjoying all the faculties of nature. The benevolent sage rejoiced to receive his son, not only safe from the dangers of travel, but happy in the enjoyment of his love; and with a heart full of tenderness, he thus conferred on both, his paternal benediction:

'Children of the heart, and comfort
' of the years of Ardavan! Solyman
' shall be as the sun, when he cometh
' from the chambers of the east, when
' he

‘ he spreadeth his glories over the
‘ waves of Ganges: my son shall be
‘ as the Euphrates, the river of plenty,
‘ whose waves are the delight of a
‘ thousand meadows; he shall be like
‘ the roe upon the mountains, that
‘ danceth in the vigour of his heart,
‘ and faith to the fence of the huf-
‘ bandman, What art thou? His head
‘ shall be crowned with the rays of
‘ Mithra; because his heart melted
‘ with compassion, and because his
‘ hand was stretched forth to relieve
‘ the children of affliction!

‘ Almena is fairer than the women
‘ of the east; she is more virtuous than
‘ the daughters of men: love dwelleth
‘ in her heart, and benevolence sitteth
‘ in her eye. She shall be like the tree
‘ that droppeth balm upon the flowers
‘ of Irwan; as the star of the evening
‘ reflected from the river. Her coun-
‘ tenance shall be pleasant as the calm
‘ surface of the ocean, when the gilded
‘ clouds of evening blaze upon it’s
‘ bosom: she shall be as the moon,
‘ when she lendeth her rays to the tra-
‘ veller, and sheddeth a mild light over
‘ the groves and vallies. Her voice shall
‘ be as the voice of the turtle, calling
‘ to her mate in the thickets of the fo-
‘ rest. Like the stars that surround the
‘ chariot of the moon, shall be the chil-
‘ dren of Almena; beautiful as the
‘ plants of the cedar, and sprightly as
‘ the fawns upon the mountains!’

Thus blessed by the voice of Ar-
davan, and happy in themselves, the
virtuous Solyman and Almena live in
the valley of Irwan! Each day is en-
deared by the delights of tender love;
and the remembrance of past distresses
is attended only with the pleasing sen-
sations of gratitude to that Being, whose
providence is over all his works.

HYMN TO THE ETERNAL PROVIDENCE.

I.

LIFE of the world, immortal mind!
Father of all the human kind,
Whose boundless eye that knows no rest,
Intent on nature’s ample breast,

Explores the space of earth and skies,
And sees eternal incense rise!
To thee, my humble voice I raise:
Forgive, while I presume to praise.

II.

Though short the life thy goodness gave,
And soon descending to the grave;
Yet ’twas thy bounty, still to give
A being that can think and live;
In all thy works thy wisdom see,
And stretch it’s tow’ring mind to thee!
To thee, my humble voice I raise:
Forgive, while I presume to praise.

III.

And still this poor contracted span,
This life, that bears the name of man;
From thee derives it’s vital ray,
Eternal source of life and day!
Thy bounty still the sunshine pours,
That gilds it’s morn and evening hours.
To thee, my humble voice I raise:
Forgive, while I presume to praise.

IV.

Through error’s maze, through folly’s night,
The lamp of reason lends me light.
When stern affliction waves her rod,
My heart confides in thee, my God!
When nature shrinks, oppress’d with woes;
E’en then she finds in thee repose.
To thee, my humble voice I raise:
Forgive, while I presume to praise.

V.

Affliction flies, and hope returns;
Her lamp with brighter splendor burns.
Gay love with all his smiling train,
And peace and joy are here again.
These, these, I know, ’twas thine to give:
I trusted; and, behold! I live.
To thee, my humble voice I raise:
Forgive, while I presume to praise.

VI.

O may I still thy favour prove!
Still grant me gratitude and love.
Let truth and virtue guide my heart;
Nor peace, nor hope, nor joy depart.
But yet, whate’er my life may be,
My heart shall still repose on thee!
To thee, my humble voice I raise:
Forgive, while I presume to praise!

COLLEMAN AND ALMENA

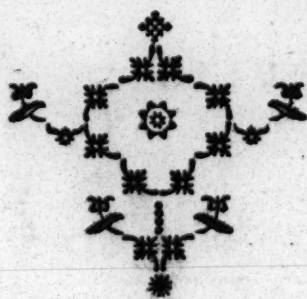


THE
VICAR
OF
WAKEFIELD.
A
TALE.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

BY DR. GOLDSMITH.

SPERATE MISERI, CAVEYE FELICES.



L O N D O N :

Printed for HARRISON and Co. No. 18, Paternoster-Row.

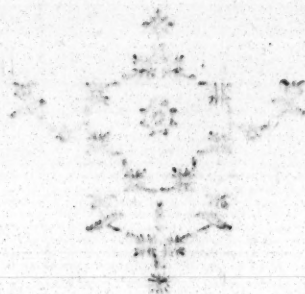
M DCC LXXX.

THE
VOLUME
OF
WALKER FIELD

TALF

IN TWO VOLUMES

BY DR. GOLDSMITH



LONDON

Printed for Harrison and Co. No. 18, Paternoster-Row.

M DCC LXXX.



ADVERTISEMENT.

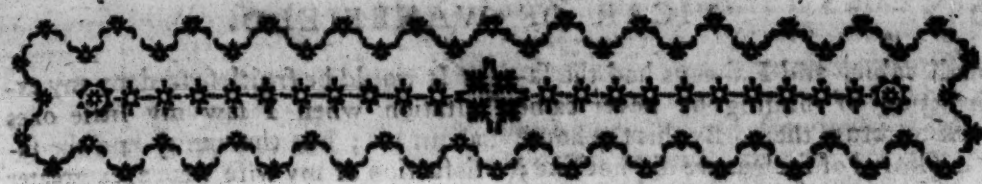
THERE are an hundred faults in this Thing, and an hundred things might be said to prove them beauties. But it is needless. A book may be amusing with numerous errors, or it may be very dull without a single absurdity. The hero of this piece unites in himself the three greatest characters upon earth ; he is a priest, an husbandman, and the father of a family. He is drawn as ready to teach, and ready to obey, as simple in affluence, and majestic in adversity. In this age of opulence and refinement whom can such a character please ? Such as are fond of high life, will turn with disdain from the simplicity of his country fire-side ; such as mistake ribaldry for humour, will find no wit in his harmless conversation ; and such as have been taught to deride religion, will laugh at one whose chief stores of comfort are drawn from futurity.

OLIVER GOLDSMITH.

ADVERTISEMENT

There are an hundred books in this Town and an hundred things might be said to prove the necessity of a book to be carried with numerous errors, and may be very dull without a single repetition. The hero of the piece will illustrate the above great object of the present is a piece of ballad-making, and the father of a family. The drawn as ready to teach, and ready to obey, as in the and majestic in adversity. In this one of our own and foreign whom can such a character stand? Such a one is not of high will run with dignity from the impetuous of the common people; such as make liberty the banner, and find no war in the narrow convention; and yet as have been known to debate in light, will laugh at one who chief force of content are drawn from nature.

OLIVER GOLDSMITH



T H E
VICAR OF WAKEFIELD.

VOLUME THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

THE DESCRIPTION OF THE FAMILY OF WAKEFIELD; IN WHICH A KINDRED LIKENESS PREVAILS AS WELL OF MINDS AS OF PERSONS.

I Was ever of opinion, that the honest man who married and brought up a large family, did more service than he who continued single, and only talked of population. From this motive, I had scarce taken orders a year, before I began to think seriously of matrimony, and chose my wife as she did her wedding gown, not for a fine glossy surface, but such qualities as would wear well. To do her justice, she was a good-natured notable woman; and as for breeding, there were few country ladies who could shew more. She could read any English book without much spelling; but for pickling, preserving, and cookery, none could excel her. She prided herself also upon being an excellent contriver in house-keeping; though I could never find that we grew richer with all her contrivances.

However, we loved each other tenderly, and our fondness increased as we grew old. There was in fact nothing that could make us angry with the world, or each other. We had an elegant house, situated in a fine country, and a good neighbourhood. The year was spent in a moral or rural a-

musement; in visiting our rich neighbours, and relieving such as were poor. We had no revolutions to fear, nor fatigues to undergo; all our adventures were by the fire-side, and all our migrations from the blue bed to the brown.

As we lived near the road, we often had the traveller or stranger visit us to taste our gooseberry-wine, for which we had great reputation; and I profess, with the veracity of an historian, that I never knew one of them find fault with it. Our cousins too, even to the fortieth remove, all remembered their affinity, without any help from the herald's office, and came very frequently to see us. Some of them did us no great honour by these claims of kindred; as we had the blind, the maimed, and the halt, amongst the number. However, my wife always insisted that as they were the same *flesh and blood*, they should sit with us at the same table. So that if we had not very rich, we generally had very happy friends about us; for this remark will hold good through life, that the poorer the guest, the better pleased he ever is with being treated; and as some men gaze with admiration at the colours of a tulip, or the wing of a butterfly, so I was by nature an admirer of happy human faces. However, when any one of our relations was found to be a person of a very bad character, a troublesome guest, or one we desired to get rid of, upon his leaving my house, I ever took care to lend him a riding-coat, or a pair of boots, or sometimes an horse of small

small value, and I always had the satisfaction of finding he never came back to return them. By this the house was cleared of such as we did not like; but never was the family of Wakefield known to turn the traveller or the poor dependant out of doors.

Thus we lived several years in a state of much happiness, not but that we sometimes had those little rubs which Providence sends to enhance the value of its favours. My orchard was often robbed by school-boys, and my wife's custards plundered by the cats or the children. The squire would sometimes fall asleep in the most pathetic parts of my sermon, or his lady return my wife's civilities at church with a mutilated curtsy. But we soon got over the uneasiness caused by such accidents, and usually in three or four days began to wonder how they vexed us.

My children, the offspring of temperance, as they were educated without softness, so they were at once well formed and healthy; my sons hardy and active, my daughters beautiful and blooming. When I stood in the midst of the little circle, which promised to be the supports of my declining age, I could not avoid repeating the famous story of Count Abensberg, who, in Henry II.'s progress through Germany, while other courtiers came with their treasures, brought his thirty-two children, and presented them to his sovereign as the most valuable offering he had to bestow. In this manner, though I had but six, I considered them as a very valuable present made to my country, and consequently looked upon it as my debtor. Our eldest son was named George after his uncle, who left us ten thousand pounds. Our second child, a girl, I intended to call after her aunt Grissel; but my wife, who during her pregnancy had been reading romances, insisted upon her being called Olivia. In less than another year we had another daughter, and now I was determined that Grissel should be her name; but a rich relation taking a fancy to stand godmother, the girl was, by her directions, called Sophia; so that we had two romantic names in the family; but I solemnly protest I had no hand in it. Moses was our next; and after an interval of twelve years, we had two sons more.

It would be fruitless to deny my exultation when I saw my little ones about me; but the vanity and the satisfaction of my wife were even greater than mine. When our visitors would say, 'Well, upon my word, Mrs. Primrose, you have the finest children in the whole country.'—'Ay, neighbour,' she would answer, 'they are as Heaven made them, handsome enough, if they be good enough; for handsome is, that handsome does.' And then she would bid the girls hold up their heads; who, to conceal nothing, were certainly very handsome. Mere outside is so very trifling a circumstance with me, that I should scarce have remembered to mention it, had it not been a general topic of conversation in the country. Olivia, now about eighteen, had that luxuriance of beauty with which painters generally draw Hebe; open, sprightly, and commanding. Sophia's features were not so striking at first; but often did more certain execution; for they were soft, modest, and alluring. The one vanquished by a single blow, the other by efforts successfully repeated.

The temper of a woman is generally formed from the turn of her features, at least it was so with my daughters. Olivia wished for many lovers, Sophia to secure one. Olivia was often affected from too great a desire to please. Sophia even repress excellence, from her fears to offend. The one entertained me with her vivacity when I was gay, the other with her sense when I was serious. But these qualities were never carried to excess in either, and I have often seen them exchange characters for a whole day together. A suit of mourning has transformed my coquet into a prude, and a new set of ribbands has given her youngest sister more than natural vivacity. My eldest son, George, was bred at Oxford, as I intended him for one of the learned professions. My second boy, Moses, whom I designed for business, received a sort of a miscellaneous education at home. But it is needless to attempt describing the particular characters of young people that had seen but very little of the world. In short, a family likeness prevailed through all; and, properly speaking, they had but one character, that of being all equally generous,

nerous, credulous, simple, and inoffensive.

CHAP. II.

FAMILY MISFORTUNES. THE LOSS OF FORTUNE ONLY SERVES TO INCREASE THE PRIDE OF THE WORTHY.

THE temporal concerns of our family were chiefly committed to my wife's management; as to the spiritual, I took them entirely under my own direction. The profits of my living, which amounted to about thirty-five pounds a year, I made over to the orphans and widows of the clergy of our diocese; for having a sufficient fortune of my own, I was careless of temporalities, and felt a secret pleasure in doing my duty without reward. I also set a resolution of keeping no curate, and of being acquainted with every man in the parish, exhorting the married men to temperance, and the bachelors to matrimony; so that in a few years it was a common saying, that there were three strange wants at Wakefield, a parson wanting pride, young men wanting wives, and ale-houses wanting customers.

Matrimony was always one of my favourite topics, and I wrote several sermons to prove it's happiness; but there was a peculiar tenet which I made a point of supporting; for I maintained with Whiston, that it was unlawful for a priest of the church of England, after the death of his first wife, to take a second; or to express it in one word, I valued myself upon being a strict monogamist.

I was early initiated into this important dispute, on which so many laborious volumes have been written. I published some tracts upon the subject myself, which, as they never sold, I have the consolation of thinking are read only by the happy few. Some of my friends called this my weak side; but alas! they had not like me made it the subject of long contemplation. The more I reflected upon it, the more important it appeared. I even went a step beyond Whiston in displaying my principles: as he had engraven upon his wife's tomb that she was the *only* wife

of William Whiston; so I wrote a similar epitaph for my wife, though still living, in which I extolled her prudence, oeconomy, and obedience till death; and having got it copied fair, with an elegant frame, it was placed over the chimney-piece, where it answered several very useful purposes. It admonished my wife of her duty to me, and my fidelity to her; it inspired her with a passion for fame, and constantly put her in mind of her end.

It was thus, perhaps, from hearing marriage so often recommended, that my eldest son, just upon leaving college, fixed his affections upon the daughter of a neighbouring clergyman, who was a dignitary in the church, and in circumstances to give her a large fortune: but fortune was her smallest accomplishment. Miss Arabella Wilmot was allowed by all (except my two daughters) to be compleatly pretty. Her youth, health, and innocence, were still heightened by a complexion so transparent, and such an happy sensibility of look, as even age could not gaze on with indifference. As Mr. Wilmot knew that I could make a very handsome settlement on my son, he was not averse to the match; so both families lived together in all that harmony which generally precedes an expected alliance. Being convinced by experience that the days of courtship are the most happy of our lives, I was willing enough to lengthen the period; and the various amusements which the young couple every day shared in each other's company, seemed to increase their passion. We were generally awakened in the morning by music, and on fine days rode a hunting. The hours between breakfast and dinner the ladies devoted to dress and study: they usually read a page, and then gazed at themselves in the glass, which even philosophers might own often presented the page of greatest beauty. At dinner my wife took the lead; for, as she always insisted upon carving every thing herself, it being her mother's way, she gave us upon these occasions the history of every dish. When we had dined, to prevent the ladies leaving us, I generally ordered the table to be removed; and sometimes, with the music master's assistance, the girls would give us a very agreeable concert. Walking out, drinking tea, country dances, and forfeits,

B shortened

shortened the rest of the day, without the assistance of cards, as I hated all manner of gaming, except backgammon, at which my old friend and I sometimes took a twopenny hit. Nor can I here pass over an ominous circumstance that happened the last time we played together; I only wanted to sling a quatre, and yet I threw deuce ace five times running.

Some months were elapsed in this manner, till at last it was thought convenient to fix a day for the nuptials of the young couple, who seemed earnestly to desire it. During the preparations for the wedding, I need not describe the busy importance of my wife, nor the sly looks of my daughters: in fact, my attention was fixed on another object, the completing a tract which I intended shortly to publish in defence of my favourite principle. As I looked upon this as a master-piece both for argument and style, I could not in the pride of my heart avoid shewing it to my old friend Mr. Wilmot, as I made no doubt of receiving his approbation: but not till too late, I discovered that he was most violently attached to the contrary opinion, and with good reason; for he was at that time actually courting a fourth wife. This, as may be expected, produced a dispute attended with some acrimony, which threatened to interrupt our intended alliance; but on the day before that appointed for the ceremony, we agreed to discuss the subject at large.

It was managed with proper spirit on both sides; he asserted that I was heterodox, I retorted the charge: he replied, and I rejoined. In the mean time, while the controversy was hottest, I was called out by one of my relations, who, with a face of concern, advised me to give up the dispute, at least till my son's wedding was over. 'How,' cried I, 'relinquish the cause of truth, and let him be an husband, already driven to the very verge of absurdity. You might as well advise me to give up my fortune as my argument.'—'Your fortune,' returned my friend, 'I am now sorry to inform you, is almost nothing. The merchant in town, in whose hands your money was lodged, has gone off, to avoid a statute of bankruptcy, and is thought not to have left a shilling in the pound. I was unwilling to shock you or the

family with the account till after the wedding: but now it may serve to moderate your warmth in the argument; for, I suppose, your own prudence will enforce the necessity of dissembling, at least till your son has the young lady's fortune secured.'—'Well,' returned I, 'if what you tell me be true, and if I am to be a beggar, it shall never make me a rascal, or induce me to disavow my principles. I'll go this moment, and inform the company of my circumstances; and as for the argument, I even here retract my former concessions in the old gentleman's favour, nor will I allow him now to be my husband in any sense of the expression.'

It would be endless to describe the different sensations of both families when I divulged the news of our misfortune; but what others felt was slight to what the lovers appeared to endure. Mr. Wilmot, who seemed before sufficiently inclined to break off the match, was by this blow soon determined: one virtue he had in perfection, which was prudence; too often the only one that is left us at seventy-two.

C H A P. III.

A MIGRATION. THE FORTUNATE CIRCUMSTANCES OF OUR LIVES ARE GENERALLY FOUND AT LAST TO BE OF OUR OWN PROCURING.

THE only hope of our family now was, that the report of our misfortunes might be malicious or premature: but a letter from my agent in town soon came with a confirmation of every particular. The loss of fortune to myself alone would have been trifling; the only uneasiness I felt was for my family, who were to be humble without an education to render them callous to contempt.

Near a fortnight had passed before I attempted to restrain their affliction; for premature consolation is but the remembrancer of sorrow. During this interval, my thoughts were employed on some future means of supporting them; and at last a small cure of fifteen pounds a year was offered me in a distant neighbourhood where I could still enjoy my principles without molesta-

tion.

tion. With this proposal I joyfully closed, having determined to increase my salary, by managing a little farm.

Having taken this resolution, my next care was to get together the wrecks of my fortune; and all debts collected and paid, out of fourteen thousand pounds we had but four hundred remaining. My chief attention therefore was now to bring down the pride of my family to their circumstances; for I well knew that aspiring beggary is wretchedness itself. 'You cannot be ignorant, my children,' cried I, 'that no prudence of ours could have prevented our late misfortune; but prudence may do much in disappointing it's effects. We are now poor, my fondlings, and wisdom bids us conform to our humble situation. Let us then, without repining, give up those splendours with which numbers are wretched, and seek in humbler circumstances that peace with which all may be happy. The poor live pleasantly without our help, why then should not we learn to live without theirs! No, my children, let us from this moment give up all pretensions to gentility; we have still enough left for happiness if we are wise, and let us draw upon content for the deficiencies of fortune.'

As my eldest son was bred a scholar, I determined to send him to town, where his abilities might contribute to our support and his own. The separation of friends and families, is, perhaps, one of the most distressful circumstances attendant on penury. The day soon arrived on which we were to disperse for the first time. My son, after taking leave of his mother and the rest, who mingled their tears with their kisses, came to ask a blessing from me. This I gave him from my heart, and which, added to five guineas, was all the patrimony I had now to bestow. 'You are going, my boy,' cried I, 'to London on foot, in the manner Hooker, your great ancestor, travelled there before you. Take from me the same horse that was given him by the good Bishop Jewel, this staff, and take this book too, it will be your comfort on the way: these two lines in it are worth a million; *I have been young and now am old; yet never saw I the righteous man forsaken, or his seed begging their bread.*

'Let this be your consolation as you travel on. Go, my boy, whatever be thy fortune, let me see thee once a year; still keep a good heart, and farewell.' As he was possessed of integrity and honour, I was under no apprehensions from throwing him naked into the amphitheatre of life; for I knew he would act a good part, whether vanquished or victorious.

His departure only prepared the way for our own, which arrived a few days afterwards. The leaving a neighbourhood in which we had enjoyed so many hours of tranquility, was not without a tear, which scarce fortitude itself could suppress. Besides, a journey of seventy miles to a family that had hitherto never been above ten from home, filled us with apprehension, and the cries of the poor, who followed us for some miles, contributed to increase it. The first day's journey brought us in safety within thirty miles of our future retreat, and we put up for the night at an obscure inn in a village by the way. When we were shewn a room, I desired the landlord, in my usual way, to let us have his company, with which he complied, as what he drank would increase the bill next morning. He knew, however, the whole neighbourhood to which I was removing, particularly Squire Thornhill, who was to be my landlord, and who lived within a few miles of the place. This gentleman he described as one who desired to know little more of the world than it's pleasures, being particularly remarkable for his attachment to the fair sex. He observed that no virtue was able to resist his arts and assiduity, and that scarce a farmer's daughter within ten miles round but what had found him successful and faithless. Though this account gave me some pain, it had a very different effect upon my daughters, whose features seemed to brighten with the expectation of an approaching triumph; nor was my wife less pleased and confident of their allurements and virtue. While our thoughts were thus employed, the hostess entered the room to inform her husband, that the strange gentleman, who had been two days in the house, wanted money, and could not satisfy them for his reckoning. 'Want money!' replied the host, 'that must be impossible; for it was no later

than yesterday he paid three guineas to our beadle to spare an old broken soldier that was to be whipped through the town for dog-stealing. The hostess, however, still persisting in her first assertion, he was preparing to leave the room, swearing that he would be satisfied one way or another, when I begged the landlord would introduce me to a stranger of so much charity as he described. With this he complied, shewing in a gentleman who seemed to be about thirty, dressed in clothes that once were laced. His person was well formed, and his face marked with the lines of thinking. He had something short and dry in his address, and seemed not to understand ceremony, or to despise it. Upon the landlord's leaving the room, I could not avoid expressing my concern to the stranger at seeing a gentleman in such circumstances, and offered him my purse to satisfy the present demand. 'I take it with all my heart, Sir,' replied he, 'and am glad that a late oversight in giving what money I had about me, has shewn me, that there are still some men like you. I must, however, previously intreat being informed of the name and residence of my benefactor, in order to repay him as soon as possible.' In this I satisfied him fully, not only mentioning my name and late misfortune, but the place to which I was going to remove. 'This,' cried he, 'happens still more lucky than I hoped for, as I am going the same way myself, having been detained here two days by the floods, which, I hope, by to-morrow, will be found passable.' I testified the pleasure I should have in his company, and my wife and daughters joining in entreaty, he was prevailed upon to stay supper. The stranger's conversation, which was at once pleasing and instructive, induced me to wish for a continuance of it; but it was now high time to retire and take refreshment against the fatigues of the following day.

The next morning we all set forward together: my family on horseback, while Mr. Burchell, our new companion, walked along the foot-path by the road side, observing with a smile, that as we were ill mounted, he would be too generous to attempt leaving us behind. As the floods were not yet

subsided, we were obliged to hire a guide, who trotted on before, Mr. Burchell and I bringing up the rear. We lightened the fatigues of the road with philosophical disputes, which he seemed to understand perfectly. But what surprized me most was, that though he was a money-borrower, he defended his opinions with as much obstinacy as if he had been my patron. He now and then also informed me to whom the different seats belonged that lay in our view as we travelled the road. 'That,' cried he, pointing to a very magnificent house which stood at some distance, 'belongs to Mr. Thornhill, a young gentleman, who enjoys a large fortune, though entirely dependent on the will of his uncle, Sir William Thornhill, a gentleman, who content with a little himself, permits his nephew to enjoy the rest, and chiefly resides in town.'—'What!' cried I, 'is my young landlord then the nephew of a man whose virtues, generosity, and singularities, are so universally known? I have heard Sir William Thornhill represented as one of the most generous, yet whimsical men in the kingdom; a man of consummate benevolence.'—'Something, perhaps, too much so,' replied Mr. Burchell, 'at least he carried benevolence to an excess when young; for his passions were then strong, and as they all were upon the side of virtue, they led it up to a romantic extreme. He early began to aim at the qualifications of the soldier and the scholar; was soon distinguished in the army, and had some reputation among men of learning. Adulation ever follows the ambitious; for such alone receive most pleasure from flattery. He was surrounded with crowds, who shewed him only one side of their character; so that he began to lose a regard for private interest in universal sympathy. He loved all mankind; for fortune prevented him from knowing that there were rascals. Physicians tell us of a disorder in which the whole body is so exquisitely sensible, that the slightest touch gives pain: what some have thus suffered in their persons, this gentleman felt in his mind. The slightest distress, whether real or fictitious, touched him to the quick, and his soul laboured under a sickly
' sen-

sensibility of the miseries of others. Thus disposed to relieve, it will be easily conjectured, he found numbers disposed to solicit: his profusions began to impair his fortune, but not his good-nature; that, indeed, was seen to increase as the other seemed to decay: he grew improvident as he grew poor; and though he talked like a man of sense, his actions were those of a fool. Still, however, being surrounded with importunity, and no longer able to satisfy every request that was made him, instead of money he gave *promises*. They were all he had to bestow, and he had not resolution enough to give any man pain by a denial. By this he drew round him crowds of dependants whom he was sure to disappoint; yet wished to relieve. These hung upon him for a time, and left him with merited reproaches and contempt. But in proportion as he became contemptible to others, he became despicable to himself. His mind had leaned upon their adulation, and that support taken away, he could find no pleasure in the applause of his heart, which he had never learnt to reverence. The world now began to wear a different aspect; the flattery of his friends began to dwindle into simple approbation. Approbation soon took the more friendly form of advice, and advice, when rejected, produced their reproaches. He now, therefore, found that such friends as benefits had gathered round him, were little estimable: he now found that a man's own heart must be ever given to gain that of another. I now found, that—that—I forgot what I was going to observe:—in short, Sir, he resolved to respect himself, and laid down a plan of restoring his falling fortune. For this purpose, in his own whimsical manner, he travelled through Europe on foot, and now, though he has scarce attained the age of thirty, his circumstances are more affluent than ever. At present, his bounties are more rational and moderate than before; but still he preserves the character of an humourist, and finds most pleasure in eccentric virtues.

My attention was so much taken up by Mr. Burchell's account, that I scarce looked forward as we went along, till

we were alarmed by the cries of my family; when turning, I perceived my youngest daughter in the midst of a rapid stream, thrown from her horse, and struggling with the torrent. She had sunk twice, nor was it in my power to disengage myself in time to bring her relief. My sensations were even too violent to permit my attempting her rescue: she must have certainly perished, had not my companion, perceiving her danger, instantly plunged in to her relief, and, with some difficulty, brought her in safety to the opposite shore. By taking the current a little farther up, the rest of the family got safely over; where we had an opportunity of joining our acknowledgments to her's. Her gratitude may be more readily imagined than described: she thanked her deliverer more with looks than words, and continued to lean upon his arm, as if still willing to receive assistance. My wife also hoped one day to have the pleasure of returning his kindness at her own house. Thus, after we were refreshed at the next inn, and had dined together, as Mr. Burchell was going to a different part of the country, he took leave; and we pursued our journey. My wife observing as we went, that she liked him extremely, and protesting, that if he had birth and fortune to entitle him to match into such a family as our's, she knew no man she would sooner fix upon. I could not but smile to hear her talk in this lofty strain: *But I was never much displeased with those harmless delusions that tend to make us more happy.*

CHAP. IV.

A PROOF THAT EVEN THE HUMBLESF FORTUNE MAY GRANT HAPPINESS, WHICH DEPENDS NOT ON CIRCUMSTANCE, BUT CONSTITUTION.

THE place of our retreat was in a little neighbourhood, consisting of farmers, who tilled their own grounds, and were equal strangers to opulence and poverty. As they had almost all the conveniences of life within themselves, they seldom visited towns or cities in search of superfluities. Remote from the polite, they still retained the primeval simplicity of manners; and frugal

frugal by habit, they scarce knew that temperance was a virtue. They wrought with cheerfulness on days of labour; but observed festivals as intervals of idleness and pleasure. They kept up the Christmas carol, sent true-love knots on Valentine morning, eat pancakes on Shrove-tide, shewed their wit on the first of April, and religiously cracked nuts on Michaelmas eve. Being apprized of our approach, the whole neighbourhood came out to meet their minister, dressed in their fine clothes, and preceded by a pipe and tabor: a feast also was provided for our reception, at which we sat cheerfully down; and what the conversation wanted in wit, was made up in laughter.

Our little habitation was situated at the foot of a sloping hill, sheltered with a beautiful underwood behind, and a prattling river before; on one side a meadow, on the other a green. My farm consisted of about twenty acres of excellent land, having given an hundred pounds for my predecessor's goodwill. Nothing could exceed the neatness of my little enclosures: the elms and hedge-rows appearing with inexpressible beauty. My house consisted of but one story, and was covered with thatch, which gave it an air of great snugness; the walls on the inside were nicely white-washed, and my daughters undertook to adorn them with pictures of their own designing. Though the same room served us for parlour and kitchen, that only made it the warmer. Besides, as it was kept with the utmost neatness, the dishes, plates, and coppers, being well scoured, and all disposed in bright rows on the shelves, the eye was agreeably relieved, and did not want richer furniture. There were three other apartments, one for my wife and me, another for our two daughters, within our own, and the third, with two beds, for the rest of the children.

The little republic to which I gave laws, was regulated in the following manner: by sun-rise we all assembled in our common apartment; the fire being previously kindled by the servant. After we had saluted each other with proper ceremony, for I always thought it to keep up some mechanical forms of good-breeding, without which freedom ever destroys friendship, we all bent in gratitude to that Being who gave us another day. This duty being

performed, my son and I went to pursue our usual industry abroad, while my wife and daughters employed themselves in providing breakfast, which was always ready at a certain time. I allowed half an hour for this meal, and an hour for dinner; which time was taken up in innocent mirth between my wife and daughters, and in philosophical arguments between my son and me.

As we rose with the sun, so we never pursued our labour after it was gone down, but returned home to the expecting family; where smiling looks, a neat hearth, and pleasant fire, were prepared for our reception. Nor were we without guests: sometimes Farmer Flamborough, our talkative neighbour, and often the blind piper, would pay us a visit, and taste our gooseberry wine; for the making of which we had lost neither the receipt nor the reputation. These harmless people had several ways of being good company; while one played, the other would sing some soothing ballad, Johnny Armstrong's last good-night, or the cruelty of Barbara Allen. The night was concluded in the manner we began the morning, my youngest boys being appointed to read the lessons of the day, and he that read loudest, distinctest, and best, was to have an halfpenny on Sunday to put into the poor's box.

When Sunday came, it was indeed a day of finery, which all my sumptuary edicts could not restrain. How well soever I fancied my lectures against pride had conquered the vanity of my daughters; yet I still found them secretly attached to all their former finery: they still loved laces, ribbands, bugles and catgut; my wife herself retained a passion for her crimson paduasoy, because I formerly happened to say it became her.

The first Sunday in particular their behaviour served to mortify me: I had desired my girls the preceding night to be dressed early the next day; for I always loved to be at church a good while before the rest of the congregation. They punctually obeyed my directions; but when we were to assemble in the morning at breakfast, down came my wife and daughters, dressed out in all their former splendour, their hair plastered up with pomatum, their faces patched to taste, their trains bundled up into an heap behind, and rustling

at every motion. I could not help smiling at their vanity, particularly that of my wife, from whom I expected more discretion. In this exigence, therefore, my only resource was to order my son, with an important air, to call our coach. The girls were amazed at the command; but I repeated it with more solemnity than before. 'Surely, my dear, you jest,' cried my wife, 'we can walk it perfectly well: we want no coach to carry us now.'—'You mistake, child,' returned I, 'we do want a coach; for if we walk to church in this trim, the very children in the parish will hoot after us.'—'Indeed,' replied my wife, 'I always imagined that my Charles was fond of seeing his children neat and handsome about him.'—'You may be as neat as you please,' interrupted I, 'and I shall love you the better for it; but all this is not neatness, but frippery. These ruffings, and pinkings, and patchings, will only make us hated by all the wives of our neighbours.'—No, my children, continued I, more gravely, 'those gowns may be altered into something of a plainer cut; for finery is very unbecoming in us, who want the means of decency. I do not know whether such flouncing and shredding is becoming even in the rich, if we consider, upon a moderate calculation, that the nakedness of the indigent world may be clothed from the trimmings of the vain.'

This remonstrance had the proper effect; they went with great composure, that very instant, to change their dress; and the next day I had the satisfaction of finding my daughters, at their own request, employed in cutting up their trains into Sunday waistcoats for Dick and Bill, the two little ones; and what was still more satisfactory, the gowns seemed improved by this curtailing.

CHAP. V.

▲ NEW AND GREAT ACQUAINTANCE INTRODUCED. WHAT WE PLACE MOST HOPES UPON GENERALLY PROVES MOST FATAL.

AT a small distance from the house my predecessor had made a seat, overshadowed by an hedge of hawthorn and honey-suckle. Here, when the wea-

ther was fine and our labour soon finished, we usually sat together, to enjoy an extensive landscape, in the calm of the evening. Here too we drank tea, which now was become an occasional banquet; and as we had it but seldom, it diffused a new joy, the preparations for it being made with no small share of bustle and ceremony. On these occasions, our two little ones always read for us, and they were regularly served after we had done. Sometimes, to give a variety to our amusements, the girls sung to the guitar; and while they thus formed a little concert, my wife and I would stroll down the sloping field, that was embellished with blue bells and centuary, talk of our children with rapture, and enjoy the breeze that wafted both health and harmony.

In this manner we began to find that every situation in life may bring its own peculiar pleasures: every morning waked us to a repetition of toil; but the evening repaid it with vacant hilarity.

It was about the beginning of autumn, on a holiday, for I kept such as intervals of relaxation from labour, that I had drawn out my family to our usual place of amusement, and our young musicians began their usual concert. As we were thus engaged, we saw a stag bound nimbly by, within about twenty paces of where we were sitting, and by its panting, it seemed prest by the hunters. We had not much time to reflect upon the poor animal's distress, when we perceived the dogs and horsemen come sweeping along at some distance behind, and making the very path it had taken. I was instantly for returning in with my family; but either curiosity or surprize, or some more hidden motive, held my wife and daughters to their seats. The huntsman, who rode foremost, past us with great swiftness, followed by four or five persons more, who seemed in equal haste. At last, a young gentleman of a more genteel appearance than the rest, came forward, and for a while regarding us, instead of pursuing the chase, stooped short, and giving his horse to a servant who attended, approached us with a careless superior air. He seemed to want no introduction, but was going to salute my daughters as one certain of a kind reception; but they had early learnt the lesson of looking presumption

presumption out of countenance. Upon which he let us know that his name was Thornhill; and that he was owner of the estate that lay for some extent round us. He again, therefore, offered to salute the female part of the family; and such was the power of fortune and fine clothes, that he found no second reptilse. As his address, though confident, was easy, we soon became more familiar; and perceiving musical instruments lying near, he begged to be favoured with a song. As I did not approve of such disproportioned acquaintance, I winked upon my daughters, in order to prevent their compliance; but my hint was counteracted by one from their mother; so that with a cheerful air they gave us a favourite song of Dryden's. Mr. Thornhill seemed highly delighted with their performance and choice, and then took up the guitar himself. He played but very indifferently; however, my eldest daughter repaid his former applausive with interest, and assured him that his tones were louder than even those of her master. At this compliment he bowed, which she returned with a curtsy. He praised her taste, and she commended his understanding: an age could not have made them better acquainted. While the fond mother too, equally happy, insisted upon her landlord's stepping in, and tasting a glass of her gooseberry. The whole family seemed earnest to please him: my girls attempted to entertain him with topicks they thought most modern; while Moses, on the contrary, gave him a question or two from the ancients, for which he had the satisfaction of being laughed at: my little ones were no less busy, and fondly stuck close to the stranger. All my endeavours could scarce keep their dirty fingers from handling and tarnishing the lace on his clothes, and lifting up the flaps of his pocket holes, to see what was there. At the approach of evening he took leave; but not till he had requested permission to renew his visit, which, as he was our landlord, we most readily agreed to.

As soon as he was gone, my wife called a council on the conduct of the day. She was of opinion, that it was a most fortunate hit; for that she had known even stranger things than that brought to bear. She hoped again to see the day in which we might hold up

our heads with the best of them; and concluded, she protested she could see no reason why the two Miss Wrinklers should marry great fortunes, and her children get none. As this last argument was directed to me, I protested I could see no reason for it neither; nor why Mr. Simpkins got the ten thousand pound prize in the lottery, and we fate down with a blank. 'I protest,' Charles, cried my wife, 'this is the way you always damp my girls and me when we are in spirits.—Tell me, Soph, my dear, what do you think of our new visitor? Don't you think he seemed to be good-natured?'—'Immensely so, indeed, mama,' replied she; 'I think he has a great deal to say upon every thing, and is never at a loss; and the more trifling the subject, the more he has to say.'—'Yes,' cried Olivia, 'he is well enough for a man; but for my part, I don't much like him, he is so extremely impudent and familiar; but on the guitar he is shocking.' These two last speeches I interpreted by contraries. I found by this, that Sophia internally despised, as much as Olivia secretly admired him. 'Whatever may be your opinions of him, my children,' cried I, 'to confess a truth, he has not prepossessed me in his favour. Disproportioned friendships ever terminate in disgust: and I thought, notwithstanding all his ease, that he seemed perfectly sensible of the distance between us. Let us keep to companions of our own rank. There is no character more contemptible, than a man that is a fortune-hunter; and I can see no reason why fortune-hunting women should not be contemptible too. Thus, at best, we shall be contemptible if his views are honourable; but if they be otherwise! I should shudder but to think of that! It is true, I have no apprehensions from the conduct of my children, but I think there are some from his character.' I would have proceeded, but for the interruption of a seryant from the squire, who, with his compliments, sent us a side of venison, and a promise to dine with us some days after. This well-timed present pleaded more powerfully in his favour, than any thing I had to say could obviate. I therefore continued silent, satisfied with just having pointed out danger, and leaving it

to their own discretion to avoid it. That virtue which requires to be ever guarded, is scarce worth the centinel.

CHAP. VI.

THE HAPPINESS OF A COUNTRY
FIRE-SIDE.

AS we carried on the former dispute with some degree of warmth, in order to accommodate matters, it was universally agreed, that we should have a part of the venison for supper, and the girls undertook the task with alacrity. 'I am sorry,' cried I, 'that we have no neighbour or stranger to take part in this good cheer: feasts of this kind acquire a double relish from hospitality.'—'Bless me,' cried my wife, 'here comes our good friend Mr. Burchell, that saved our Sophia, and that run you down fairly in the argument.'—'Confute me in argument, child!' cried I. 'You mistake there, my dear. I believe there are but few that can do that: I never dispute your abilities at making a goose-pye, and I beg you'll leave argument to me.' As I spoke, poor Mr. Burchell entered the house, and was welcomed by the family, who shook him heartily by the hand, while little Dick officiously reached him a chair.

I was pleased with the poor man's friendship for two reasons; because I knew that he wanted mine, and I knew him to be friendly as far as he was able. He was known in our neighbourhood by the character of the poor gentleman that would do no good when he was young, though he was not yet thirty. He would at intervals talk with great good sense; but in general he was fondest of the company of children, whom he used to call harmless little men. He was famous, I found, for singing them ballads, and telling them stories; and seldom went out without something in his pockets for them, a piece of gingerbread, or an half-penny whistle. He generally came for a few days into our neighbourhood once a year, and lived upon the neighbours hospitality. He sat down to supper among us, and my wife was not sparing of her gooseberry wine. The tale went round; he sung us old songs, and gave the children the story of the

Buck of Beverland, with the history of Patient Grizzel, the adventures of Cat-skin, and then Fair Rosamond's bower. Our cock, which always crew at eleven, now told us it was time for repose; but an unforeseen difficulty started about lodging the stranger: all our beds were already taken up, and it was too late to send him to the next ale-house. In this dilemma, little Dick offered him his part of the bed, if his brother Moses would let him lie with him. 'And I,' cried Bill, 'will give Mr. Burchell my part, if my sisters will take me to theirs.'—'Well done, my good children,' cried I, 'hospitality is one of the first christian duties. The beast retires to his shelter, and the bird flies to its nest; but helpless man can only find refuge from his fellow creature. The greatest stranger in this world, was he that came to save it. He never had an house, as if willing to see what hospitality was left remaining amongst us.—Deborah, my dear,' cried I to my wife, 'give those boys a lump of sugar each; and let Dick's be the largest, because he spoke first.'

In the morning early I called out my whole family to help at saving an after-growth of hay, and our guest offering his assistance, he was accepted among the number. Our labours went on lightly, we turned the swath to the wind, I went foremost, and the rest followed in due succession. I could not avoid, however, observing the assiduity of Mr. Burchell in assisting my daughter Sophia in her part of the task. When he had finished his own, he would join in her's, and enter into a close conversation: but I had too good an opinion of Sophia's understanding, and was too well convinced of her ambition, to be under any uneasiness from a man of broken fortune. When we were finished for the day, Mr. Burchell was invited as on the night before; but he refused, as he was to lie that night at a neighbour's to whose child he was carrying a whistle. When gone, our conversation at supper turned upon our late unfortunate guest. 'What a strong instance,' said I, 'is that poor man of the miseries attending a youth of levity and extravagance! He by no means wants sense, which only serves to aggravate his former folly. Poor forlorn creature, where are now the revellers, the

C

'flatterers,

‘ flatterers, that he could once inspire
 ‘ and command! gone, perhaps, to at-
 ‘ tend the bagnio pander, grown rich
 ‘ by his extravagance. They once
 ‘ praised him, and now they applaud
 ‘ the pander: their former raptures at
 ‘ his wit, are now converted into sar-
 ‘ casms at his folly: he is poor, and
 ‘ perhaps deserves poverty; for he
 ‘ has neither the ambition to be inde-
 ‘ pendent, nor the skill to be useful.’
 Prompted perhaps by some secret rea-
 sons, I delivered this observation with
 too much acrimony, which my Sophia
 gently reproved. ‘ Whatsoever his for-
 ‘ mer conduct may be, papa, his cir-
 ‘ cumstances should exempt him from
 ‘ censure now. His present indigence
 ‘ is a sufficient punishment for former
 ‘ folly; and I have heard my papa him-
 ‘ self say, that we should never strike
 ‘ one unnecessary blow at a victim over
 ‘ whom Providence holds the scourge
 ‘ of it’s resentment.’—‘ You are right,
 ‘ Sophia,’ cried my son Moses, ‘ and
 ‘ one of the ancients finely represents
 ‘ so malicious a conduct, by the at-
 ‘ tempts of a rustic to slay Marfyas,
 ‘ whose skin, the fable tells us, had
 ‘ been wholly stript off by another.
 ‘ Besides, I don’t know if this poor
 ‘ man’s situation be so bad as my fa-
 ‘ ther would represent it. We are not
 ‘ to judge of the feelings of others by
 ‘ what we might feel if in their place.
 ‘ However dark the habitation of the
 ‘ mole to our eyes, yet the animal
 ‘ itself finds the apartment suffici-
 ‘ ently lightsome. And to confess the
 ‘ truth, this man’s mind seems fitted
 ‘ to his station; for I never heard any
 ‘ one more sprightly than he was to-
 ‘ day, when he conversed with you.’
 This was said without the least design,
 however it excited a blush, which she
 strove to cover by an affected laugh;
 assuring him, that she scarce took any
 notice of what he said to her; but that
 she believed he might once have been a
 very fine gentleman. The readiness
 with which she undertook to vindicate
 herself, and her blushing, were symp-
 toms I did not internally approve; but
 I repress my suspicions.

As we expected our landlord the
 next day, my wife went to make the
 venison patty; Moses sat reading, while
 I taught the little ones: my daughters
 seemed equally busy with the rest; and
 I observed them for a good while cook-

ing something over the fire. I at first
 supposed they were assisting their mo-
 ther; but little Dick informed me in a
 whisper, that they were making a wash
 for the face. Washes of all kinds I
 had a natural antipathy to; for I knew
 that instead of mending the complexion
 they spoiled it. I therefore approached
 my chair by sly degrees to the fire,
 and grasping the poker, as if it wanted
 mending, seemingly by accident, over-
 turned the whole composition, and it
 was too late to begin another.

C H A P. VII.

A TOWN WIT DESCRIBED. THE
 DULLEST FELLOWS MAY LEARN
 TO BE COMICAL FOR A NIGHT
 OR TWO.

WHEN the morning arrived on
 which we were to entertain our
 young landlord, it may be easily sup-
 posed what provisions were exhausted
 to make an appearance. It may also be
 conjectured that my wife and daugh-
 ters expanded their gayest plumage
 upon this occasion. Mr. Thornhill
 came with a couple of friends, his chap-
 lain and feeder. The servants, who
 were numerous, he politely ordered to
 the next alehouse: but my wife, in the
 triumph of her heart, insisted on enter-
 taining them all; for which, by the
 bye, our family was pinched for three
 weeks after. As Mr. Burchell had
 hinted to us the day before, that he was
 making some proposals of marriage to
 Miss Wilmot, my son George’s for-
 mer mistress, this a good deal damped
 the heartiness of his reception: but ac-
 cident, in some measure, relieved our
 embarrassment; for one of the com-
 pany happening to mention her name,
 Mr. Thornhill observed with an oath,
 that he never knew any thing more ab-
 surd than calling such a fright a beauty:
 ‘ For, strike me ugly,’ continued he, ‘
 ‘ I should not find as much pleasure in
 ‘ chusing my mistress by the informa-
 ‘ tion of a lamp under the clock at St.
 ‘ Dunstan’s.’ At this he laughed, and
 so did we: the jests of the rich are ever
 successful. Olivia too could not avoid
 whispering, loud enough to be heard,
 that he had an infinite fund of hu-
 mour.

After dinner I began with my usual
 toast,

toast, the church; for this I was thanked by the chaplain, as he said the church was the only mistress of his affections. 'Come, tell us honestly, Frank,' said the squire, with his usual archness, 'suppose the church, your present mistress, dressed in lawn sleeves, on one hand, and Miss Sophia, with no lawn about her, on the other, which would you be for?'—'For both, to be sure,' cried the chaplain. 'Right, Frank,' cried the squire; 'for may this glass suffocate me, but a fine girl is worth all the priestcraft in the creation. For what are tythes and tricks but an imposition, all a confounded imposture, and I can prove it.'—'I wish you would,' cried my son Moses, 'and I think,' continued he, 'that I should be able to answer you.'—'Very well, Sir,' cried the squire, who immediately smoked him, and winked on the rest of the company, to prepare us for the sport, 'if you are for a cool argument upon that subject, I am ready to accept the challenge. And first, whether are you for managing it analogically, or dialogically?'—'I am for managing it rationally,' cried Moses, quite happy at being permitted to dispute. 'Good again,' cried the squire; 'and firstly, of the first. I hope you'll not deny that whatever is, is: if you don't grant me that, I can go no farther.'—'Why,' returned Moses, 'I think I may grant that, and make the best of it.'—'I hope too,' returned the other, 'you will grant that a part is less than the whole.'—'I grant that too,' cried Moses, 'it is but just and reasonable.'—'I hope,' cried the squire, 'you will not deny, that the two angles of a triangle are equal to two right ones.'—'Nothing can be plainer,' returned the other; and looked round with his usual importance. 'Very well,' cried the squire, speaking very quick, 'the premises being thus settled, I proceed to observe, that the concatenation of self-existences, proceeding in a reciprocal duplicate ratio, naturally produce a problematical dialogism, which in some measure proves that the essence of spirituality may be referred to the second predicable.'—'Hold, hold,' cried the other, 'I deny that. Do you think I can thus tamely submit to such heterodox doctrines?'—'What,'

replied the squire, as if in a passion, 'not submit! Answer me one plain question: Do you think Aristotle right, when he says that relatives are related?'—'Undoubtedly,' replied the other. 'If so then,' cried the squire, 'answer me directly to what I propose: Whether do you judge the analytical investigation of the first part of my enthymem deficient secundum quoad, or quoad minus, and give me your reasons: I say, directly.'—'I protest,' cried Moses, 'I don't rightly comprehend the force of your reasoning; but if it be reduced to one simple proposition, I fancy it may then have an answer.'—'O, Sir,' cried the squire, 'I am your most humble servant; I find you want me to furnish you with argument and intellects too. No, Sir, there I protest you are too hard for me.' This effectually raised the laugh against poor Moses, who sat the only dismal figure in a groupe of merry faces: nor did he offer a single syllable more during the whole entertainment.

But though all this gave me no pleasure, it had a very different effect upon Olivia, who mistook it for humour, though but a mere act of the memory. She thought him therefore a very fine gentleman; and such as consider what powerful ingredients a good figure, fine clothes, and fortune, are in that character, will easily forgive her. Mr. Thornhill, notwithstanding his real ignorance, talked with ease, and could expatiate upon the common topics of conversation with fluency. It is not surprising then that such talents should win the affections of a girl, who by education was taught to value an appearance in herself, and consequently to set a value upon it in another.

Upon his departure, we again entered into a debate upon the merits of our young landlord. As he directed his looks and conversation to Olivia, it was no longer doubted but that she was the object that induced him to be our visitor. Nor did she seem to be much displeased at the innocent raillery of her brother and sister upon this occasion. Even Deborah herself seemed to share the glory of the day, and exulted in her daughter's victory as if it were her own. 'And now, my dear,' cried she to me, 'I'll fairly own, that it was I

‘that instructed my girls to encourage our landlord’s addresses. I had always some ambition, and you now see that I was right; for who knows how this may end?’—‘Aye, who knows that indeed!’ answered I with a groan: ‘for my part I don’t much like it; and I could have been better pleased with one that was poor and honest, than this fine gentleman with his fortune and infidelity: for, depend on’t, if he be what I suspect him, no free-thinker shall ever have a child of mine.’

‘Sure, father,’ cried Moses, ‘you are too severe in this; for Heaven will never arraign him for what he thinks, but for what he does. Every man has a thousand vicious thoughts, which arise without his power to suppress. Thinking freely of religion may be involuntary with this gentleman: so that allowing his sentiments to be wrong, yet as he is purely passive in his assent, he is no more to be blamed for his errors, than the governor of a city without walls for the shelter he is obliged to afford an invading enemy.’

‘True, my son,’ cried I; ‘but if the governor invites the enemy there, he is justly culpable. And such is always the case with those who embrace error. The vice does not lie in assenting to the proofs they see; but in being blind to many of the proofs that offer. So that, though our erroneous opinions be involuntary when formed, yet as we have been wilfully corrupt, or very negligent in forming them, we deserve punishment for our vice, or contempt for our folly.’

My wife now kept up the conversation, though not the argument: she observed, that several very prudent men of our acquaintance were free-thinkers, and made very good husbands; and she knew some sensible girls that had skill enough to make converts of their spouses: ‘And who knows, my dear,’ continued she, ‘what Olivia may be able to do. The girl has a great deal to say upon every subject, and to my knowledge is very well skilled in controversy.’

‘Why, my dear, what controversy can she have read?’ cried I. ‘It does not occur to me that I ever put such books into her hands: you certainly over-rate her merit.’—‘Indeed, papa,’

replied Olivia, ‘she does not: I have read a great deal of controversy. I have read the disputes between Thwackum and Square; the controversy between Robinson Crusoe and Friday the savage, and I am now employed in reading the controversy in Religious Courtship.’—‘Very well,’ cried I, ‘that’s a good girl; I find you are perfectly qualified for making converts, and so go help your mother to make the gooseberry-pye.’

C H A P. VIII.

AN AMOUR, WHICH PROMISES LITTLE GOOD FORTUNE, YET MAY BE PRODUCTIVE OF MUCH.

THE next morning we were again visited by Mr. Burchell, though I began, for certain reasons, to be displeased with the frequency of his return; but I could not refuse him my company and fire-side. It is true his labour more than requited his entertainment; for he wrought among us with vigour, and either in the meadow, or at the hay-rick, put himself foremost. Besides, he had always something amusing to say that lessened our toil, and was at once so out of the way, and yet so sensible, that I loved, laughed at, and pitied him. My only dislike arose from an attachment he discovered to my daughter: he would in a jesting manner call her his little mistress, and when he bought each of the girls a set of ribbands, her’s was the finest. I knew not how, but he every day seemed to become more amiable, his wit to improve, and his simplicity to assume the superior airs of wisdom.

Our family dined in the field, and we sat, or rather reclined, round a temperate repast, our cloth spread upon the hay, while Mr. Burchell gave cheerfulness to the feast. To heighten our satisfaction, two black-birds answered each other from opposite hedges, the familiar red-breast came and pecked the crumbs from our hands, and every sound seemed but the echo of tranquillity. ‘I never sit thus,’ says Sophia, ‘but I think of the two lovers, so sweetly described by Mr. Gay, who were struck dead in each other’s arms. There is something so pathetic in the description, that I have read it

‘ it an hundred times with new rap-
 ‘ ture.’—‘ In my opinion,’ cried my
 son, ‘ the finest strokes in that descrip-
 ‘ tion are much below those in the
 ‘ Acis and Galatea of Ovid. The Ro-
 ‘ man poet understands the use of *con-*
 ‘ *trast* better, and upon that figure art-
 ‘ fully managed all strength in the pa-
 ‘ thetic depends.’—‘ It is remarka-
 ‘ ble,’ cried Mr. Burchell, ‘ that both
 ‘ the poets you mention have equally
 ‘ contributed to introduce a false taste
 ‘ into their respective countries, by
 ‘ loading all their lines with epithet.
 ‘ Men of little genius found them most
 ‘ easily imitated in their defects, and
 ‘ English poetry, like that in the lat-
 ‘ ter empire of Rome, is nothing at
 ‘ present but a combination of luxu-
 ‘ riant images, without plot or con-
 ‘ nection; a string of epithets that im-
 ‘ prove the sound without carrying on
 ‘ the sense. But perhaps, Madam,
 ‘ while I thus reprehend others, you’ll
 ‘ think it just that I should give them
 ‘ an opportunity to retaliate; and in-
 ‘ deed I have made this remark only
 ‘ to have an opportunity of introducing
 ‘ to the company a ballad, which,
 ‘ whatever be it’s other defects, is, I
 ‘ think, at least free from those I have
 ‘ mentioned.’

A BALLAD.

‘ **T**URN, gentle hermit of the dale,
 ‘ And guide my lonely way,
 ‘ To where yon taper cheers the vale,
 ‘ With hospitable ray.

‘ For here forlorn and lost I tread,
 ‘ With fainting steps and slow;
 ‘ Where wilds immeasurably spread,
 ‘ Seem lengthening as I go.’

‘ Forbear, my son,’ the hermit cries,
 ‘ To tempt the dangerous gloom;
 ‘ For yonder faithless phantom flies
 ‘ To lure thee to thy doom.

‘ Here to the houseless child of want,
 ‘ My door is open still;
 ‘ And though my portion is but scant,
 ‘ I give it with good will.

‘ Then turn to-night, and freely share
 ‘ Whate’er my cell bestows;
 ‘ My rushy couch, and frugal fare,
 ‘ My blessing and repose.

‘ No flocks that range the valley free,
 ‘ To slaughter I condemn;
 ‘ Taught by that Power that pities me,
 ‘ I learn to pity them.

‘ But from the mountain’s grassy side,
 ‘ A guiltless feast I bring;
 ‘ A scrip with herbs and fruits supply’d,
 ‘ And water from the spring.

‘ Then, pilgrim, turn, thy cares forgo;
 ‘ All earth-born cares are wrong:
 ‘ Man wants but little here below,
 ‘ Nor wants that little long.’

Soft as the dew from heav’n descends,
 His gentle accents fell.
 The modest stranger lowly bends,
 And follows to the cell.

Far in a wilderness obscure
 The lonely mansion lay;
 A refuge to the neighbouring poor,
 And strangers led astray.

No stores beneath it’s humble thatch
 Requir’d a master’s care;
 The wicket opening with a latch,
 Receiv’d the harmless pair.

And now when busy crowds retire
 To take their evening rest,
 The hermit trimm’d his little fire,
 And cheer’d his pensive guest:

And spread his vegetable store,
 And gayly prest and smil’d;
 And skill’d in legendary lore,
 The lingering hours beguil’d.

Around in sympathetic mirth
 It’s tricks the kitten tries;
 The cricket chirrups in the hearth,
 The crackling faggot flies.

But nothing could a charm impart
 To sooth the stranger’s woe;
 For grief was heavy at his heart,
 And tears began to flow.

His rising cares the hermit spy’d,
 With answering care oppress’d:
 ‘ And whence, unhappy youth,’ he cry’d,
 ‘ The sorrows of thy breast?’

‘ From better habitations spurn’d,
 ‘ Reluctant dost thou rove;
 ‘ Or grieve for friendship unreturn’d,
 ‘ Or unregarded love?’

‘ Alas! the joys that fortune brings,
 ‘ Are trifling, and decay;
 ‘ And those who prize the paltry things,
 ‘ More trifling still than they.

‘ And what is friendship but a name,
 ‘ A charm that lulls to sleep;
 ‘ A shade that follows wealth or fame,
 ‘ But leaves the wretch to weep?’

‘ And

' And love is still an emptier sound,
 ' The modern fair one's jest;
 ' On earth unseen, or only found
 ' To warm the turtle's nest.

 ' For shame, fond youth, thy sorrows hush,
 ' And spurn the sex,' he said:
 But, while he spoke, a rising blush
 His love-lorn guest betray'd.

 Surpriz'd he sees new beauties rise
 Swift mantling to the view,
 Like colours o'er the morning skies;
 As bright, as transient too.

 The bashful look, the rising breast,
 Alternate spread alarms;
 The lovely stranger stands confest,
 A maid, in all her charms.

 And, ' Ah, forgive a stranger rude,
 ' A wretch forlorn,' she cry'd;
 ' Whose feet unhallow'd thus intrude
 ' Where Heav'n and you reside!

 ' But let a maid thy pity share,
 ' Whom love has taught to stray;
 ' Who seeks for rest, but finds despair
 ' Companion of her way.

 ' My father liv'd beside the Tyne,
 ' A wealthy lord was he;
 ' And all his wealth was mark'd as mine,
 ' He had but only me.

 ' To win me from his tender arms,
 ' Unnumber'd suitors came;
 ' Who prais'd me for imputed charms,
 ' And felt or feign'd a flame.

 ' Each hour a mercenary crowd
 ' With richest proffers strove:
 ' Among the rest young Edwin bow'd,
 ' But never talk'd of love.

 ' In humble, simplest habit clad,
 ' No wealth nor power had he;
 ' Wisdom and worth were all he had,
 ' But these were all to me.

 ' The blossom opening to the day,
 ' The dews of heav'n refin'd,
 ' Could nought of purity display,
 ' To emulate his mind.

 ' The dew, the blossom on the tree,
 ' With charms inconstant shine;
 ' Their charms were his, but woe to me,
 ' Their constancy was mine.

 ' For still I try'd each sly art,
 ' Importunate and vain:
 ' And while his passion touch'd my heart,
 ' I triumph'd in his pain.

 ' Till quite dejected with my scorn,
 ' He left me to my pride;
 ' And sought a solitude forlorn,
 ' In secret, where he died.

' But mine the sorrow, mine the fault,
 ' And well my life shall pay;
 ' I'll seek the solitude he sought,
 ' And stretch me where he lay.

 ' And there forlorn despairing hid,
 ' I'll lay me down and die:
 ' 'Twas so for me that Edwin did,
 ' And so for him will I.

 ' Forbid it, Heav'n!' the hermit cry'd,
 And clasp'd her to his breast.
 The wondering fair-one turn'd to chide,
 'Twas Edwin's self that prest.

 ' Turn, Angelina, ever dear,
 ' My charmer, turn to see,
 ' Thy own, thy long lost Edwin here,
 ' Restor'd to love and thee.

 ' Thus let me hold thee to my heart,
 ' And ev'ry care resign:
 ' And shall we never, never part,
 ' My life—my all that's mine!

 ' No, never from this hour to part:
 ' We'll live and love so true;
 ' The sigh that rends thy constant heart,
 ' Shall break thy Edwin's too.'

While this ballad was reading, Sophia seemed to mix an air of tenderness with her approbation. But our tranquillity was soon disturbed by the report of a gun just by us, and immediately after a man was seen bursting through the hedge, to take up the game he had killed. This sportsman was the squire's chaplain, who had shot one of the blackbirds that so agreeably entertained us. So loud a report, and so near, startled my daughters; and I could perceive that Sophia in the fright had thrown herself into Mr. Burchell's arms for protection. The gentleman came up, and asked pardon for having disturbed us, affirming that he was ignorant of our being so near. He therefore sat down by my youngest daughter, and sportsman like, offered her what he had killed that morning. She was going to refuse, but a private look from her mother soon induced her to correct the mistake, and accept his present, though with some reluctance. My wife, as usual, discovered her pride in a whisper; observing that Sophia had made a conquest of the chaplain, as well as her sister had of the squire. I suspected, however, with more probability, that her affections were placed upon a different object. The chaplain's errand was to inform us, that Mr. Thornhill had provided music and refreshments,

and intended that night giving the young ladies a ball by moon-light, on the grass plot before our door. 'Nor can I deny,' continued he, 'but I have an interest in being first to deliver this message, as I expect for my reward to be honoured with Miss Sophia's hand as a partner.' To this my girl replied, that she should have no objection, if she could do it with honour: 'But here,' continued she, 'is a gentleman,' looking at Mr. Burchell, 'who has been my companion in the task for the day, and it is fit he should share in it's amusements.' Mr. Burchell returned her a compliment for her intentions; but resigned her up to the chaplain, adding that he was to go that night five miles, being invited to an harvest supper. His refusal appeared to me a little extraordinary; nor could I conceive how so sensible a girl as my youngest, could thus prefer a man of broken fortunes to one whose expectations were much greater. But as men are most capable of distinguishing merit in women, so the ladies often form the truest judgments of us. The two sexes seem placed as spies upon each other, and are furnished with different abilities, adapted for mutual inspection.

CHAP. IX.

TWO LADIES OF GREAT DISTINCTION INTRODUCED. SUPERIOR FINERY EVER SEEMS TO CONFER SUPERIOR BREEDING.

MR. Burchell had scarce taken leave, and Sophia consented to dance with the chaplain, when my little ones came running out to tell us, that the squire was come, with a crowd of company. Upon our return, we found our landlord with a couple of under gentlemen and two young ladies richly dressed, whom he introduced as women of very great distinction and fashion from town. We happened not to have chairs enough for the whole company; but Mr. Thornhill immediately proposed that every gentleman should sit in a lady's lap. This I positively objected to, notwithstanding a look of disapprobation from my wife. Moses was therefore dispatched to borrow a couple of chairs; and as we were in want of ladies to make up a

set at country dances, the two gentlemen went with him in quest of a couple of partners. Chairs and partners were soon provided. The gentlemen returned with my neighbour Flamborough's rosy daughters, flaunting with red top-knots. But an unlucky circumstance was not adverted to: though the Miss Flamboroughs were reckoned the very best dancers in the parish, and understood the jig and the round-about to perfection; yet they were totally unacquainted with country dances. This at first discomposed us: however, after a little shoving and dragging, they at last went merrily on. Our music consisted of two fiddles, with a pipe and tabor. The moon shone bright, Mr. Thornhill and my eldest daughter led up the ball, to the great delight of the spectators; for the neighbours hearing what was going forward, came flocking about us. My girl moved with so much grace and vivacity, that my wife could not avoid discovering the pride of her heart, by assuring me, that though the little chit did it so cleverly, all the steps were stolen from herself. The ladies of the town strove hard to be equally easy, but without success. They swam, sprawled, languished, and frisked; but all would not do: the gazers indeed owned that it was fine; but neighbour Flamborough observed, that Miss Livy's feet seemed as pat to the music as it's echo. After the dance had continued about an hour, the two ladies, who were apprehensive of catching cold, moved to break up the ball. One of them, I thought, expressed her sentiments upon this occasion in a very coarse manner, when she observed, that by the *living jingo*, *she was all of a muck of sweat*. Upon our return to the house, we found a very elegant cold supper, which Mr. Thornhill had ordered to be brought with him. The conversation at this time, was more reserved than before. The two ladies threw my girls quite into the shade; for they would talk of nothing but high life, and high lived company; with other fashionable topics, such as pictures, taste, Shakespeare, and the musical glasses. 'Tis true, they once or twice mortified us sensibly by slipping out an oath; but that appeared to me as the surest symptom of their distinction, (though I am since informed that swearing is perfectly unfashionable.)

able.) Their finery, however, threw a veil over any grossness in their conversation. My daughters seemed to regard their superior accomplishments with envy; and what appeared amiss was ascribed to tip-top quality breeding. But the condescension of the ladies was still superior to their other accomplishments. One of them observed, that had Miss Olivia seen a little more of the world, it would greatly improve her. To which the other added, that a single winter in town would make her little Sophia quite another thing. My wife warmly assented to both; adding, that there was nothing she more ardently wished than to give her girls a single winter's polishing. To this I could not help replying, that their breeding was already superior to their fortune; and that greater refinement would only serve to make their poverty ridiculous, and give them a taste for pleasures they had no right to possess. 'And what pleasures,' cried Mr. Thornhill, 'do they not deserve to possess, who have so much in their power to bestow? As for my part,' continued he, 'my fortune is pretty large; love, liberty, and pleasure, are my maxims; but curse me if a settlement of half my estate could give my charming Olivia pleasure, it should be her's; and the only favour I would ask in return, would be to add myself to the benefit.' I was not such a stranger to the world as to be ignorant that this was the fashionable cant to disguise the insolence of the basest proposal; but I made an effort to suppress my resentment. 'Sir,' cried I, 'the family which you now condescend to favour with your company, has been bred with as nice a sense of honour as you. Any attempts to injure that, may be attended with very dangerous consequences. Honour, Sir, is our only possession at present, and of that last treasure we must be particularly careful.' I was soon sorry for the warmth with which I had spoken this, when the young gentleman, grasping my hand, swore he commended my spirit, though he disapproved my suspicions. 'As to your present hint,' continued he, 'I protest nothing was farther from my heart than such a thought. No, by all that's tempting, the virtue that will stand a regular siege was never

to my taste; for all my amours are carried by a coup de main.'

The two ladies, who affected to be ignorant of the rest, seemed highly displeased with this last stroke of freedom, and began a very discreet and serious dialogue upon virtue: in this my wife, the chaplain and I, soon joined; and the squire himself was at last brought to confess a sense of sorrow for his former excesses. We talked on the pleasures of temperance, and of the sun-shine in the mind unpolled with guilt: I was so well pleased, that my little ones were kept beyond the usual time to be edified by so much good conversation. Mr. Thornhill even went beyond me, and demanded if I had any objection to giving prayers. I joyfully embraced the proposal, and in this manner the night was passed in a most comfortable way, till at last the company began to think of returning. The ladies seemed very unwilling to part with my daughters: for whom they had conceived a particular affection, and joined in a request to have the pleasure of their company home. The squire seconded the proposal, and my wife added her entreaties: the girls too looked upon me as if they wished to go. In this perplexity I made two or three excuses, which my daughters as readily removed; so that at last I was obliged to give a peremptory refusal: for which we had nothing but sullen looks and short answers the whole day ensuing.

CHAP. X.

THE FAMILY ENDEAVOUR TO COPE WITH THEIR BETTERS. THE MISERIES OF THE POOR WHEN THEY ATTEMPT TO APPEAR ABOVE THEIR CIRCUMSTANCES.

I Now began to find that all my long and painful lectures upon temperance, simplicity and contentment, were entirely disregarded. The distinctions lately paid us by our betters awaked that pride which I had laid asleep, but not removed. Our windows again, as formerly, were filled with washes for the neck and face. The sun was dreaded as an enemy to the skin without doors, and the fire as a spoiler of the complexion within. My wife observed, that rising too early would hurt her

her daughters eyes, that working after dinner would redden their noses, and she convinced me that the hands never looked so white as when they did nothing. Instead, therefore, of finishing George's shirts, we now had them new-modelling their old gauzes, or flourishing upon catgut. The poor Miss Flamboroughs, their former gay companions, were cast off as mean acquaintance, and the whole conversation ran upon high life and high-lived company, with pictures, taste, Shakespeare, and the musical glasses.

But we could have borne all this, had not a fortune-telling gypsy come to raise us into perfect sublimity. The tawney sybil no sooner appeared, than my girls came running to me for a shilling apiece to cross her hand with silver. To say the truth, I was tired of being always wise, and could not help gratifying their request, because I loved to see them happy. I gave each of them a shilling; though, for the honour of the family, it must be observed, that they never went without money themselves, as my wife always generously let them have a guinea each, to keep in their pockets; but with strict injunctions never to change it. After they had been closeted up with the fortune-teller for some time, I knew by their looks, upon their returning, that they had been promised something great. 'Well, my girls, how have you sped? Tell me, Livy, has the fortune-teller given thee a penny-worth?'—'I protest, papa,' says the girl, 'I believe she deals with some body that's not right; for she positively declared, that I am to be married to a squire in less than a twelve-month!'—'Well, now, Sophy, my child,' said I, 'and what sort of a husband are you to have?'—'Sir,' replied she, 'I am to have a lord soon after my sister has married the squire.'—'How,' cried I, 'is that all you are to have for your two shillings! Only a lord and a squire for two shillings! You fools, I could have promised you a prince and a nabob for half the money.'

This curiosity of theirs, however, was attended with very serious effects: we now began to think ourselves designed by the stars to something exalted, and already anticipated our future grandeur.

It has been a thousand times observed, and I must observe it once more, that the hours we pass with happy prospects in view, are more pleasing than those crowned with fruition. In the first case, we cook the dish to our own appetite; in the latter, nature cooks it for us. It is impossible to repeat the train of agreeable reveries we called up for our entertainment. We looked upon our fortunes as once more rising; and as the whole parish asserted that the squire was in love with my daughter, she was actually so with him; for they persuaded her into the passion. In this agreeable interval, my wife had the most lucky dreams in the world, which she took care to tell us every morning, with great solemnity and exactness. It was one night a coffin and cross bones, the sign of an approaching wedding: at another time she imagined her daughters pockets filled with farthings, a certain sign they would shortly be stuffed with gold. The girls themselves had their omens. They felt strange kisses on their lips; they saw rings in the candle; purses bounced from the fire, and true love-knots lurked in the bottom of every tea-cup.

Towards the end of the week we received a card from the town ladies; in which, with their compliments, they hoped to see all our family at church the Sunday following. All Saturday morning I could perceive, in consequence of this, my wife and daughters in close conference together, and now and then glancing at me with looks that betrayed a latent plot. To be sincere, I had strong suspicions that some absurd proposal was preparing for appearing with splendor the next day. In the evening they began their operations in a very regular manner, and my wife undertook to conduct the siege. After tea, when I seemed in spirits, she began thus: 'I fancy, Charles, my dear, we shall have a great deal of good company at our church to-morrow.'—'Perhaps we may, my dear,' returned I; 'though you need be under no uneasiness about that, you shall have a sermon whether there be or not.'—'That is what I expect,' returned she: 'but I think, my dear, we ought to appear there as decently as possible, for who knows what may happen?'—'Your precautions,' replied I, 'are highly
D com-

‘ commendable. A decent behaviour and appearance at church is what charms me. We should be devout and humble, chearful and serene.’— ‘ Yes,’ cried she, ‘ I know that; but I mean we should go there in as proper a manner as possible, not altogether like the scrubs about us.’— ‘ You are quite right, my dear,’ returned I, ‘ and I was going to make the very same proposal. The proper manner of going is, to go there as early as possible, to have time for meditation before the service begins.’— ‘ Phoo, Charles,’ interrupted she, ‘ all this is very true; but not what I would be at. I mean, we should go there genteelly. You know the church is two miles off, and I protest I don’t like to see my daughters trudging up to their pew all blowzed and red with walking, and looking for all the world as if they had been winners at a smock race. Now, my dear, my proposal is this: there are our two plough horses, the colt that has been in our family these nine years, and his companion Blackberry, that has scarce done an earthly thing for this month past. They are both grown fat and lazy. Why should they not do something as well we? And let me tell you, when Moses has trimmed them a little, they will cut a very tolerable figure.’

To this proposal I objected, that walking would be twenty times more genteel than such a paltry conveyance, as Blackberry was wall-eyed, and the colt wanted a tail: that they had never been broke to the rein; but had an hundred vicious tricks; and that we had but one saddle and pillion in the whole house. All these objections however were over-ruled: so that I was obliged to comply. The next morning I perceived them not a little busy in collecting such materials as might be necessary for the expedition; but as I found it would be a business of time, I walked on to the church before, and they promised speedily to follow. I waited near an hour in the reading-desk for their arrival; but not finding them come as expected, I was obliged to begin, and went through the service, not without some uneasiness at finding them absent. This was increased when all was finished, and no appearance of the family. I therefore

walked back by the horse-way, which was five miles round, though the foot-way was but two, and when got about half way home, perceived the procession marching slowly forward towards the church; my son, my wife, and the two little ones exalted upon one horse, and my two daughters upon the other. I demanded the cause of their delay; but I soon found by their looks they had met with a thousand misfortunes on the road. The horses had at first refused to move from the door, till Mr. Burchell was kind enough to beat them forward for about two hundred yards with his cudgel. Next the straps of my wife’s pillion broke down, and they were obliged to stop to repair them before they could proceed. After that, one of the horses took it into his head to stand still, and neither blows nor entreaties could prevail with him to proceed. It was just recovering from this dismal situation that I found them; but perceiving every thing safe, I own their present mortification did not much displease me, as it would give me many opportunities of future triumph, and teach my daughters more humility.

CHAP. XI.

THE FAMILY STILL RESOLVE TO HOLD UP THEIR HEADS.

MICHAELMAS eve happening on the next day, we were invited to burn nuts and play tricks at neighbour Flamborough’s. Our late mortifications had humbled us a little, or it is probable we might have rejected such an invitation with contempt: however, we suffered ourselves to be happy. Our honest neighbour’s goose and dumplings were fine; and the lamb’s wool, even in the opinion of my wife, who was a connoisseur, was excellent. It is true, his manner of telling stories was not quite so well. They were very long, and very dull, and all about himself, and we had laughed at them ten times before: however, we were kind enough to laugh at them once more.

Mr. Burchell, who was of the party, was always fond of seeing some innocent amusement going forward, and set the boys and girls to blind man’s buff. My wife too was persuaded to join in the

the diversion, and it gave me pleasure to think she was not yet too old. In the mean time, my neighbour and I looked on, laughed at every feat, and praised our own dexterity when we were young. Hot cockles succeeded next, questions and commands followed that, and last of all, they sat down to hunt the slipper. As every person may not be acquainted with this primæval pastime, it may be necessary to observe, that the company at this play plant themselves in a ring upon the ground, all except one who stands in the middle, whose business is to catch a shoe, which the company shove about under their hams from one to another, something like a weaver's shuttle. As it is impossible, in this case, for the lady who is up to face all the company at once, the great beauty of the play lies in hitting her a thump with the heel of the shoe on that side least capable of making defence. It was in this manner that my eldest daughter was hemmed in and thumped about, all blowed, in spirits, and bawling for fair play, with a voice that might deafen a ballad-singer; when, confusion on confusion, who should enter the room but our two great acquaintances from town, Lady Blarney and Miss Carolina Wilhelmina Amelia Skeggs! Description would but beggar, therefore it is unnecessary to describe this new mortification. Death! to be seen by ladies of such high breeding in such vulgar attitudes! Nothing better could ensue from such a vulgar play of Mr. Flam-borough's proposing. We seemed struck to the ground for some time, as if actually petrified with amazement.

The two ladies had been at our house to see us, and finding us from home, came after us hither, as they were uneasy to know what accident could have kept us from church the day before. Olivia undertook to be our prolocutor, and delivered the whole in a summary way, only saying, 'We were thrown from our horses.' At which account the ladies were greatly concerned; but being told the family received no hurt, they were extremely glad: but being informed that we were almost killed by the fright, they were vastly sorry; but hearing that we had a very good night, they were extremely glad again. Nothing could exceed their complaisance

to my daughters; their professions the last evening were warm, but now they were ardent. They protested a desire of having a more lasting acquaintance. Lady Blarney was particularly attached to Olivia; Miss Carolina Wilhelmina Amelia Skeggs (I love to give the whole name) took a greater fancy to her sister. They supported the conversation between themselves, while my daughters sat silent, admiring their exalted breeding. But as every reader, however beggarly himself, is fond of high-lived dialogues, with anecdotes of lords, ladies, and knights of the garter, I must beg leave to give him the concluding part of the present conversation.

'All that I know of the matter,' cries Mrs. Skeggs, 'is this; that it may be true, or it may not be true: but this I can assure your ladyship, that the whole rout was in amaze; his lordship turned all manner of colours, my lady fell into a swoon; but Sir Tomkyn, drawing his sword, swore he was her's to the last drop of his blood.'

'Well,' replied our peers, 'this I can say, that the duchess never told me a syllable of the matter, and I believe her grace would keep nothing a secret from me. This you may depend on as fact, that the next morning my lord duke cried out three times to his valet de chambre, "Jernigan, Jernigan, Jernigan, bring me my garters."

But previously I should have mentioned the very impolite behaviour of Mr. Burchell; who, during this discourse, sat with his face turned to the fire, and at the conclusion of every sentence would cry out *fudge*, an expression which displeased us all, and in some measure damped the rising spirit of the conversation.

'Besides, my dear Skeggs,' continued our peers, 'there is nothing of this in the copy of verses that Dr. Burdock made upon the occasion.' *Fudge!*

'I am surprized at that,' cried Miss Skeggs; 'for he seldom leaves any thing out, as he writes only for his own amusement. But can your ladyship favour me with a sight of them?' *Fudge!*

'My dear creature,' replied our peers, 'do you think I carry such

'things about me? Though they are very fine to be sure, and I think myself something of a judge; at least I know what pleases myself. Indeed I was ever an admirer of all Dr. Burdock's little pieces; for except what he does, and our dear countess at Hanover Square, there's nothing comes out but the most lowest stuff in nature; not a bit of high life among them.' *Fudge!*

'Your ladyship should except,' says t'other, 'your own things in the Lady's Magazine. I hope you'll say there's nothing low-lived there? But I suppose we are to have no more from that quarter?' *Fudge!*

'Why, my dear,' says the lady, 'you know my reader and companion has left me to be married to Captain Roach, and as my poor eyes won't suffer me to write myself, I have been for some time looking out for another. A proper person is no easy matter to find, and to be sure thirty pounds a year is a small stipend for a well-bred girl of character, that can read, write, and behave in company; as for the chits about town, there is no bearing them about one.' *Fudge!*

'That I know,' cried Miss Skeggs, 'by experience. For of the three companions I had this last half year, one of them refused to do plain-work an hour in the day, another thought twenty-five guineas a year too small a salary, and I was obliged to send away the third, because I suspected an intrigue with the chaplain. Virtue, my dear Lady Blarney, virtue is worth any price; but where is that to be found?' *Fudge!*

My wife had been for a long time all attention to this discourse; but was particularly struck with the latter part of it. Thirty pounds and twenty-five guineas a year made fifty-six pounds five shillings English money, all which was in a manner going a begging, and might easily be secured in the family. She for a moment studied my looks for approbation; and, to own a truth, I was of opinion, that two such places would fit our two daughters exactly. Besides, if the squire had any real affection for my eldest daughter, this would be the way to make her every way qualified for her fortune. My wife therefore was resolved that we

should not be deprived of such advantages for want of assurance, and undertook to harangue for the family. 'I hope,' cried she, 'your ladyship will pardon my present presumption. It is true we have no right to pretend to such favours; but yet it is natural for me to wish putting my children forward in the world. And I will be bold to say, my two girls have had a pretty good education, and capacity, at least the country can't shew better. They can read, write, and cast accounts; they understand their needle, breadstitch, cross and change, and all manner of plain-work; they can pink, point, and frill; and know something of music; they can do up small clothes, work upon catgut; my eldest can cut paper, and my youngest has a very pretty manner of telling fortunes upon the cards.' *Fudge!*

When she had delivered this pretty piece of eloquence, the two ladies looked at each other a few minutes in silence, with an air of doubt and importance. At last Miss Carolina Wilhelmina Amelia Skeggs condescended to observe, that the young ladies, from the opinion she could form of them from so slight an acquaintance, seemed very fit for such employments: 'But a thing of this kind, Madam,' cried she, addressing my spouse, 'requires a thorough examination into characters, and a more perfect knowledge of each other. Not, Madam,' continued she, 'that I in the least suspect the young ladies virtue, prudence and discretion: but there is a form in these things, Madam; there is a form.' *Fudge!*

My wife approved her suspicions very much, observing that she was very apt to be suspicious herself; but referred her to all the neighbours for a character: but this our peers declined as unnecessary, alledging that her cousin Thornhill's recommendation would be sufficient, and upon this we rested our petition.

CHAPTER XII.

FORTUNE SEEMS RESOLVED TO
HUMBLE THE FAMILY OF WAKE-
FIELD. MORTIFICATIONS ARE
OFTEN

OFTEN MORE PAINFUL THAN
REAL CALAMITIES.

WHEN we were returned home, the night was dedicated to schemes of future conquest. Deborah exerted much sagacity in conjecturing which of the two girls was likely to have the best place, and most opportunities of seeing good company. The only obstacle to our preferment was in obtaining the squire's recommendation; but he had already shewn us too many instances of his friendship to doubt of it now. Even in bed my wife kept up the usual theme: 'Well, faith, my dear Charles, between ourselves, I think we have made an excellent day's work of it.'—'Pretty well,' cried I, not knowing what to say.—'What only pretty well!' returned she. 'I think it is very well. Suppose the girls should come to make acquaintances of taste in town! This I am assured of, that London is the only place in the world for all manner of husbands. Besides, my dear, stranger things happen every day: and as ladies of quality are so often taken with my daughter, what will not men of quality be! Entre nous, I protest I like my Lady Blarney vastly, so very obliging. However, Miss Carolina Wilhelmina Amelia Skeggs has my warm heart. But yet, when they came to talk of places in town, you saw at once how I nailed them. Tell me, my dear, don't you think I did for my children there?'—'Ay,' returned I, not knowing well what to think of the matter, 'Heaven grant they may be both the better for it this day three months!' This was one of those observations I made to impress my wife with an opinion of my sagacity; for if the girls succeeded, then it was a pious wish fulfilled; but if any thing unfortunate ensued, then it might be looked upon as a prophecy. All this conversation, however, was only preparatory to another scheme, and indeed I dreaded as much. This was nothing less than, as we were now to hold up our heads a little higher in the world, it would be proper to sell the colt, which was grown old, at a neighbouring fair, and buy us an horse that would carry single or double upon an occasion, and make a pretty appearance at church or upon a visit. This at first I opposed

stoutly; but it was as stoutly defended. However, as I weakened, my antagonists gained strength, till at last it was resolved to part with him.

As the fair happened on the following day, I had intentions of going myself; but my wife persuaded me that I had got a cold, and nothing could prevail upon her to permit me from home. 'No, my dear,' said she, 'our son Moses is a discreet boy, and can buy and sell to very good advantage; you know all our great bargains are of his purchasing. He always stands out and higgles, and actually tires them till he gets a bargain.'

As I had some opinion of my son's prudence, I was willing enough to entrust him with this commission; and the next morning I perceived his sisters mighty busy in fitting out Moses for the fair; trimming his hair, brushing his buckles, and cocking his hat with pins. The business of the toilet being over, we had at last the satisfaction of seeing him mounted upon the colt, with a deal box before him to bring home groceries in. He had on a coat made of that cloth they call thunder and lightning, which, though grown too short, was much too good to be thrown away. His waistcoat was of gosling green, and his sisters had tied his hair with a broad black ribband. We all followed him several paces from the door, bawling after him, 'Good luck, good luck,' till we could see him no longer.

He was scarce gone, when Mr. Thornhill's butler came to congratulate us upon our good fortune, saying, that he overheard his young master mention our names with great commendation.

Good fortune seemed resolved not to come alone. Another footman from the same family followed, with a card for my daughters, importing, that the two ladies had received such pleasing accounts from Mr. Thornhill of us all, that after a few previous enquiries, they hoped to be perfectly satisfied. 'Ay,' cried my wife, 'I now see it is no easy matter to get into the families of the great; but when one once gets in, then, as Moses says, one may go sleep.' To this piece of humour, for she intended it for wit, my daughters assented with a loud laugh of pleasure. In short, such was her satisfaction at this message, that she

she actually put her hand in her pocket, and gave the messenger seven-pence halfpenny.

This was to be our visiting-day. The next that came was Mr. Burchell, who had been at the fair. He brought my little ones a pennyworth of ginger-bread each, which my wife undertook to keep for them, and give them by letters at a time. He brought my daughters also a couple of boxes, in which they might keep wafers, snuff, patches, or even money, when they got it. My wife was usually fond of a weazel-skin purse, as being the most lucky; but this by the bye. We had still a regard for Mr. Burchell, though his late rude behaviour was in some measure displeasing; nor could we now avoid communicating our happiness to him, and asking his advice: although we seldom followed advice, we were all ready enough to ask it. When we read the note from the two ladies, he shook his head, and observed, that an affair of this sort demanded the utmost circumspection. This air of diffidence highly displeased my wife. 'I never doubted, Sir,' cried she, 'your readiness to be against my daughters and me. You have more circumspection than is wanted. However, I fancy when we come to ask advice, we shall apply to persons who seem to have made use of it themselves.'—'Whatever my own conduct may have been, Madam,' replied he, 'is not the present question; though as I have made no use of advice myself, I should in conscience give it to those that will.' As I was apprehensive this answer might draw on a repartee, making up by abuse what it wanted in wit, I changed the subject, by seeming to wonder what could keep our son so long at the fair, as it was now almost night-fall. 'Never mind our son,' cried my wife; 'depend upon it he knows what he is about. I'll warrant we'll never see him sell his hen of a rainy day. I have seen him buy such bargains as would amaze one. I'll tell you a good story about that, that will make you split your sides with laughing. But as I live, yonder comes Moses, without an horse, and the box at his back.'

As she spoke, Moses came slowly on foot, and sweating under the deal box,

which he had strapped round his shoulders like a pedlar. 'Welcome, welcome, Moses; well, my boy, what have you brought us from the fair?'—'I have brought you myself,' cried Moses, with a sly look, and resting the box on the dresser. 'Aye, Moses,' cried my wife, 'that we know, but where is the horse?'—'I have sold him,' cried Moses, 'for three pounds five shillings and two-pence.'—'Well done, my good boy,' returned she, 'I knew you would touch them off. Between ourselves, three pounds five shillings and two-pence is no bad day's work. Come let us have it then.'—'I have brought back no money,' cried Moses again. 'I have laid it all out in a bargain, and here it is,' pulling out a bundle from his breast: 'here they are; a groce of green spectacles, with silver rims and shagreen cases.'—'A groce of green spectacles!' repeated my wife in a faint voice. 'And you have parted with the colt, and brought us back nothing but a groce of green paltry spectacles!'—'Dear mother,' cried the boy, 'why won't you listen to reason? I had them a dead bargain, or I should not have bought them. The silver rims alone will sell for double the money.'—'A fig for the silver rims,' cried my wife, in a passion: 'I dare swear they won't sell for above half the money at the rate of broken silver, five shillings an ounce.'—'You need be under no uneasiness,' cried I, 'about selling the rims; for they are not worth six-pence, for I perceive they are only copper varnished over.'—'What,' cried my wife, 'not silver! the rims not silver!'—'No,' cried I, 'no more silver than your saucepan.'—'And so,' returned she, 'we have parted with the colt, and have only got a groce of green spectacles, with copper rims and shagreen cases! A murrain take such trumpery. The blockhead has been imposed upon, and should have known his company better.'—'There, my dear,' cried I, 'you are wrong, he should not have known them at all.'—'Marry, hang the idiot,' returned she, 'to bring me such stuff; if I had them, I would throw them in the fire.'—'There again you are wrong, my dear,' cried I; 'for though they be copper, we will keep

‘ keep them by us, as copper spectacles, you know, are better than nothing.’

By this time the unfortunate Moses was undeceived. He now saw that he had indeed been imposed upon by a prowling sharper, who, observing his figure, had marked him for an easy prey. I therefore asked him the circumstances of his deception. He sold the horse, it seems, and walked the fair in search of another. A reverend looking man brought him to a tent, under pretence of having one to sell. ‘ Here,’ continued Moses, ‘ we met another man, very well drest, who desired to borrow twenty pounds upon these, saying, that he wanted money, and would dispose of them for a third of the value. The first gentleman, who pretended to be my friend, whispered me to buy them, and cautioned me not to let so good an offer pass. I sent for Mr. Flamborough, and they talked him up as finely as they did me, and so at last we were persuaded to buy the two groce between us,’

CHAP. XIII.

MR. BURCHELL IS FOUND TO BE AN ENEMY; FOR HE HAS THE CONFIDENCE TO GIVE DISAGREEABLE ADVICE.

OUR family had now made several attempts be fine; but some unforeseen disaster demolished each as soon as projected. I endeavoured to take the advantage of every disappointment, to improve their good sense in proportion as they were frustrated in ambition. ‘ You see, my children,’ cried I, ‘ how little is to be got by attempts to impose upon the world, in coping with our betters. Such as are poor and will associate with none but the rich, are hated by those they avoid, and despised by those they follow. Unequal combinations are always disadvantageous to the weaker side: the rich having the pleasure, and the poor the inconveniences that result from them. But come, Dick, my boy, and repeat the fable you were reading to-day, for the good of the company.’

‘ Once upon a time,’ cried the child, ‘ a giant and a dwarf were friends,

and kept together. They made a bargain that they would never forsake each other, but go seek adventures. The first battle they fought was with two Saracens, and the dwarf, who was very courageous, dealt one of the champions a most angry blow. It did the Saracen but very little injury, who lifting up his sword, fairly struck off the poor dwarf’s arm. He was now in a woeful plight; but the giant coming to his assistance, in a short time left the two Saracens dead on the plain, and the dwarf cut off the dead man’s head out of spite. They then travelled on to another adventure. This was against three bloody-minded satyrs, who were carrying away a damsel in distress. The dwarf was not quite so fierce now as before; but for all that, struck the first blow, which was returned by another that knocked out his eye: but the giant was soon up with them, and had they not fled, would certainly have killed them every one. They were all very joyful for this victory, and the damsel who was relieved fell in love with the giant, and married him. They now travelled far, and farther than I can tell, till they met with a company of robbers. The giant, for the first time, was foremost now; but the dwarf was not far behind. The battle was stout and long. Wherever the giant came, all fell before him; but the dwarf had like to have been killed more than once. At last the victory declared for the two adventurers; but the dwarf lost his leg. The dwarf had now lost an arm, a leg, and an eye, while the giant was without a single wound. Upon which he cried out to his little companion, “ My little hero, this is glorious sport; let us get one victory more, and then we shall have honour for ever.”— “ No,” cries the dwarf, who was by this time grown wiser, “ no, I declare off; I’ll fight no more: for I find in every battle, that you get all the honour and rewards, but all the blows fall upon me.”

I was going to moralize this fable, when our attention was called off to a warm dispute between my wife and Mr. Burchell, upon my daughters intended expedition to town. My wife very strenuously insisted upon the advantages that

that would result from it. Mr. Burchell, on the contrary, dissuaded her with great ardour, and I stood neuter. His present dissuasions seemed but the second part of those which were received with so ill a grace in the morning. The dispute grew high, while poor Deborah, instead of reasoning stronger, talked louder, and at last was obliged to take shelter from a defeat in clamour. The conclusion of her harangue, however, was highly displeasing to us all: she knew, she said, of some who had their secret reasons for what they advised; but, for her part, she wished such to stay away from her house for the future. 'Madam,' cried Burchell, with looks of great composure, which tended to enflame her the more, 'as for secret reasons, you are right; I have secret reasons, which I forbear to mention, because you are not able to answer those of which I make no secret: but I find my visits here are become troublesome; I'll take my leave therefore now, and perhaps come once more to take a final farewell when I am quitting the country.' Thus saying, he took up his hat, nor could the attempts of Sophia, whose looks seemed to upbraid his precipitancy, prevent his going.

When gone, we all regarded each other for some minutes with confusion. My wife, who knew herself to be the cause, strove to hide her concern with a forced smile, and an air of assurance, which I was willing to reprove: 'How, woman,' cried I to her, 'is it thus we treat strangers? Is it thus we return their kindness? Be assured, my dear, that these were the harshest words, and to me the most unpleasant that ever escaped your lips!'—'Why would he provoke me then?' replied she: 'but I know the motives of his advice perfectly well. He would prevent my girls from going to town, that he may have the pleasure of my youngest daughter's company here at home. But, whatever happens, she shall chuse better company than such low-lived fellows as he.'—'Low-lived, my dear, do you call him?' cried I; 'it is very possible we may mistake this man's character: for he seems upon some occasions the most finished gentleman I ever knew.—Tell me, Sophia, my girl, has he ever given you any secret instances of his

'attachment?'—'His conversation with me, Sir,' replied my daughter, 'has ever been sensible, modest, and pleasing. As to aught else; no, never. Once indeed, I remember to have heard him say he never knew a woman who could find merit in a man that seemed poor.'—'Such, my dear,' cried I, 'is the common cant of all the unfortunate or idle. But I hope you have been taught to judge properly of such men, and that it would be even madness to expect happiness from one who has been so very bad an economist of his own. Your mother and I have now better prospects for you. The next winter, which you will probably spend in town, will give you opportunities of making a more prudent choice.'

What Sophia's reflections were upon this occasion, I cannot pretend to determine; but I was not displeased at the bottom, that we were rid of a guest from whom I had much to fear. Our breach of hospitality went to my conscience a little: but I quickly silenced that monitor by two or three specious reasons, which served to satisfy and reconcile me to myself. The pain which conscience gives the man who has already done wrong, is soon got over. Conscience is a coward, and those faults it has not strength to prevent, it seldom has justice enough to accuse.

CHAP. XIV.

FRESH MORTIFICATIONS, OR A DEMONSTRATION THAT SEEMING CALAMITIES MAY BE REAL BLESSINGS.

THE journey of my daughters to town was now resolved upon, Mr. Thornhill having kindly promised to inspect their conduct himself, and inform us by letter of their behaviour. But it was thought indispensably necessary that their appearance should equal the greatness of their expectations, which could not be done without expence. We debated therefore in full council what were the easiest methods of raising money; or, more properly speaking, what we could most conveniently sell. The deliberation was soon finished; it was found that our remaining horse was utterly useless

less for the plough, without his companion, and equally unfit for the road, as wanting an eye: it was therefore determined that we should dispose of him for the purposes above mentioned, at the neighbouring fair; and, to prevent imposition, that I should go with him myself. Though this was one of the first mercantile transactions of my life, yet I had no doubt about acquitting myself with reputation. The opinion a man forms of his own prudence is measured by that of the company he keeps; and as mine was mostly in the family way, I had conceived no unfavourable sentiments of my worldly wisdom. My wife, however, next morning, at parting, after I had got some paces from the door, called me back, to advise me, in a whisper, to have all my eyes about me.

I had, in the usual forms, when I came to the fair, put my horse through all his paces; but for some time had no bidders. At last a chapman approached, and after he had for a good while examined the horse round, finding him blind of one eye, he would have nothing to say to him; a second came up, but observing he had a spavin, declared he would not take him for the driving home; a third perceived he had a windgall, and would bid no money; a fourth knew by his eye that he had the botts; a fifth wondered what a plague I could do at the fair with a blind, spavined, galled hack, that was only fit to be cut up for a dog-kennel. By this time I began to have a most hearty contempt for the poor animal myself, and was almost ashamed at the approach of every customer: for though I did not entirely believe all the fellows told me; yet I reflected that the number of witnesses was a strong presumption they were right, and St. Gregory upon good works, professes himself to be of the same opinion.

I was in this mortifying situation, when a brother clergyman, an old acquaintance, who had also business to the fair, came up, and shaking me by the hand, proposed adjourning to a public-house and taking a glass of whatever we could get. I readily closed with the offer, and entering an ale-house, we were shewn into a little back room, where there was only a venerable old man, who sat wholly intent over a large book, which he was reading. I

never in my life saw a figure that prepossessed me more favourably. His locks of silver grey venerably shaded his temples, and his green old age seemed to be the result of health and benevolence. However, his presence did not interrupt our conversation; my friend and I discoursed on the various turns of fortune we had met; the Whistonian controversy, my last pamphlet, the archdeacon's reply, and the hard measure that was dealt me. But our attention was in a short time taken off by the appearance of a youth, who, entering the room, respectfully said something softly to the old stranger: 'Make no apologies, my child,' said the old man; 'to do good is a duty we owe to all our fellow-creatures: take this, I wish it were more; but five pounds will relieve your distress, and you are welcome.' The modest youth shed tears of gratitude, and yet his gratitude was scarce equal to mine. I could have hugged the good old man in my arms, his benevolence pleased me so. He continued to read, and we resumed our conversation, until my companion, after some time, recollecting that he had business to transact in the fair, promised to be soon back; adding, that he always desired to have as much of Dr. Primrose's company as possible. The old gentleman, hearing my name mentioned, seemed to look at me with attention, for some time, and when my friend was gone, most respectfully demanded if I was any way related to the great Primrose, that courageous monogamist, who had been the bulwark of the church. Never did my heart feel sincerer rapture than at that moment. 'Sir,' cried I, 'the applause of so good a man, as I am sure you are, adds to that happiness in my breast which your benevolence has already excited. You behold before you, Sir, that Doctor Primrose, the monogamist, whom you have been pleased to call great. You here see that unfortunate divine, who has so long, and it would ill become me to say successfully, fought against the deuterogamy of the age.'—'Sir,' cried the stranger, struck with awe, 'I fear I have been too familiar; but you'll forgive my curiosity, Sir: I beg pardon.'—'Sir,' cried I, grasping his hand, 'you are so far from displeasing me by your familiarity, that I must

that would result from it. Mr. Burchell, on the contrary, dissuaded her with great ardour, and I stood neuter. His present dissuasions seemed but the second part of those which were received with so ill a grace in the morning. The dispute grew high, while poor Deborah, instead of reasoning stronger, talked louder, and at last was obliged to take shelter from a defeat in clamour. The conclusion of her harangue, however, was highly displeasing to us all: she knew, she said, of some who had their secret reasons for what they advised; but, for her part, she wished such to stay away from her house for the future. 'Madam,' cried Burchell, with looks of great composure, which tended to enflame her the more, 'as for secret reasons, you are right; I have secret reasons, which I forbear to mention, because you are not able to answer those of which I make no secret: but I find my visits here are become troublesome; I'll take my leave therefore now, and perhaps come once more to take a final farewell when I am quitting the country.' Thus saying, he took up his hat, nor could the attempts of Sophia, whose looks seemed to upbraid his precipitancy, prevent his going.

When gone, we all regarded each other for some minutes with confusion. My wife, who knew herself to be the cause, strove to hide her concern with a forced smile, and an air of assurance, which I was willing to reprove: 'How, woman,' cried I to her, 'is it thus we treat strangers? Is it thus we return their kindness? Be assured, my dear, that these were the harshest words, and to me the most unpleasant that ever escaped your lips!'—'Why would he provoke me then?' replied she: 'but I know the motives of his advice perfectly well. He would prevent my girls from going to town, that he may have the pleasure of my youngest daughter's company here at home. But, whatever happens, she shall chuse better company than such low-lived fellows as he.'—'Low-lived, my dear, do you call him?' cried I; 'it is very possible we may mistake this man's character: for he seems upon some occasions the most finished gentleman I ever knew.'—'Tell me, Sophia, my girl, has he ever given you any secret instances of his

'attachment?'—'His conversation with me, Sir,' replied my daughter, 'has ever been sensible, modest, and pleasing. As to aught else; no, never. Once indeed, I remember to have heard him say he never knew a woman who could find merit in a man that seemed poor.'—'Such, my dear,' cried I, 'is the common cant of all the unfortunate or idle. But I hope you have been taught to judge properly of such men, and that it would be even madness to expect happiness from one who has been so very bad an economist of his own. Your mother and I have now better prospects for you. The next winter, which you will probably spend in town, will give you opportunities of making a more prudent choice.'

What Sophia's reflections were upon this occasion, I cannot pretend to determine; but I was not displeased at the bottom, that we were rid of a guest from whom I had much to fear. Our breach of hospitality went to my conscience a little: but I quickly silenced that monitor by two or three specious reasons, which served to satisfy and reconcile me to myself. The pain which conscience gives the man who has already done wrong, is soon got over. Conscience is a coward, and those faults it has not strength to prevent, it seldom has justice enough to accuse.

CHAP. XIV.

FRESH MORTIFICATIONS, OR A DEMONSTRATION THAT SEEMING CALAMITIES MAY BE REAL BLESSINGS.

THE journey of my daughters to town was now resolved upon, Mr. Thornhill having kindly promised to inspect their conduct himself, and inform us by letter of their behaviour. But it was thought indispensably necessary that their appearance should equal the greatness of their expectations, which could not be done without expence. We debated therefore in full council what were the easiest methods of raising money; or, more properly speaking, what we could most conveniently sell. The deliberation was soon finished; it was found that our remaining horse was utterly useless

less for the plough, without his companion, and equally unfit for the road, as wanting an eye: it was therefore determined that we should dispose of him for the purposes above mentioned, at the neighbouring fair; and, to prevent imposition, that I should go with him myself. Though this was one of the first mercantile transactions of my life, yet I had no doubt about acquitting myself with reputation. The opinion a man forms of his own prudence is measured by that of the company he keeps; and as mine was mostly in the family way, I had conceived no unfavourable sentiments of my worldly wisdom. My wife, however, next morning, at parting, after I had got some paces from the door, called me back, to advise me, in a whisper, to have all my eyes about me.

I had, in the usual forms, when I came to the fair, put my horse through all his paces; but for some time had no bidders. At last a chapman approached, and after he had for a good while examined the horse round, finding him blind of one eye, he would have nothing to say to him; a second came up, but observing he had a spavin, declared he would not take him for the driving home; a third perceived he had a windgall, and would bid no money; a fourth knew by his eye that he had the botts; a fifth wondered what a plague I could do at the fair with a blind, spavined, galled hack, that was only fit to be cut up for a dog-kennel. By this time I began to have a most hearty contempt for the poor animal myself, and was almost ashamed at the approach of every customer: for though I did not entirely believe all the fellows told me; yet I reflected that the number of witnesses was a strong presumption they were right, and St. Gregory upon good works, professes himself to be of the same opinion.

I was in this mortifying situation, when a brother clergyman, an old acquaintance, who had also business to the fair, came up, and shaking me by the hand, proposed adjourning to a public-house and taking a glass of whatever we could get. I readily closed with the offer, and entering an ale-house, we were shewn into a little back room, where there was only a venerable old man, who sat wholly intent over a large book, which he was reading. I

never in my life saw a figure that prepossessed me more favourably. His locks of silver grey venerably shaded his temples, and his green old age seemed to be the result of health and benevolence. However his presence did not interrupt our conversation; my friend and I discoursed on the various turns of fortune we had met; the Whistonian controversy, my last pamphlet, the archdeacon's reply, and the hard measure that was dealt me. But our attention was in a short time taken off by the appearance of a youth, who, entering the room, respectfully said something softly to the old stranger: 'Make no apologies, my child,' said the old man; 'to do good is a duty we owe to all our fellow-creatures: take this, I wish it were more; but five pounds will relieve your distress, and you are welcome.' The modest youth shed tears of gratitude, and yet his gratitude was scarce equal to mine. I could have hugged the good old man in my arms, his benevolence pleased me so. He continued to read, and we resumed our conversation, until my companion, after some time, recollecting that he had business to transact in the fair, promised to be soon back; adding, that he always desired to have as much of Dr. Primrose's company as possible. The old gentleman, hearing my name mentioned, seemed to look at me with attention, for some time, and when my friend was gone, most respectfully demanded if I was any way related to the great Primrose, that courageous monogamist, who had been the bulwark of the church. Never did my heart feel sincerer rapture than at that moment. 'Sir,' cried I, 'the applause of so good a man, as I am sure you are, adds to that happiness in my breast which your benevolence has already excited. You behold before you, Sir, that Doctor Primrose, the monogamist, whom you have been pleased to call great. You here see that unfortunate divine, who has so long, and it would ill become me to say successfully, fought against the deuterogamy of the age.'—'Sir,' cried the stranger, struck with awe, 'I fear I have been too familiar; but you'll forgive my curiosity, Sir: I beg pardon.'—'Sir,' cried I, grasping his hand, 'you are so far from displeasing me by your familiarity, that I must

'beg you'll accept my friendship, as you already have my esteem.'— 'Then with gratitude I accept the offer,' cried he, squeezing me by the hand, 'thou glorious pillar of unshaken orthodoxy; and do I behold—' I here interrupted what he was going to say; for though, as an author, I could digest no small share of flattery, yet now my modesty would permit no more. However, no lovers in romance ever cemented a more instantaneous friendship. We talked upon several subjects: at first, I thought him rather devout than learned, and began to think he despised all human doctrines as dross. Yet this no way lessened him in my esteem: for I had for some time begun privately to harbour such an opinion myself. I therefore took occasion to observe, that the world in general began to be blameably indifferent as to doctrinal matters, and followed human speculation too much. 'Aye,' 'Sir,' replied he, as if he had reserved all his learning to that moment; 'Aye, Sir, the world is in it's dotage, and yet the cosmogony or creation of the world has puzzled philosophers of all ages. What a medley of opinions have they not broached upon the creation of the world? Sanconiaton, Manetho, Berofus, and Ocellus Lucanus, have all attempted it in vain. The latter has these words, *Anarchon ara kai atelutaion to pan*, which imply that all things have neither beginning nor end. Manetho also, who lived about the time of Nebuchadon-Affer, Affer being a Syriac word usually applied as a surname to the kings of that country, as Teglat Phael-Affer, Nabon-Affer; he, I say, formed a conjecture equally absurd; for as we usually say, *ek to biblion kubernetes*, which implies that books will never teach the world; so he attempted to investigate. But, Sir, I ask pardon, I am straying from the question.' That he actually was; nor could I for my life see how the creation of the world had any thing to do with the business I was talking of; but it was sufficient to shew me that he was a man of letters, and I now revered him the more. I was resolved therefore to bring him to the touchstone; but he was too mild and too gentle to contend for victory. Whenever I made any observation that

looked like a challenge to controversy, he would smile, shake his head, and say nothing; by which I understood he could say much, if he thought proper. The subject therefore insensibly changed from the business of antiquity to that which brought us to the fair; mine, I told him, was to sell an horse, and very luckily, indeed, his was to buy one for one of his tenants. My horse was soon produced, and in fine we struck a bargain. Nothing now remained but to pay me, and he accordingly pulled out a thirty pound note, and bid me change it. Not being in a capacity of complying with his demand, he ordered his footman to be called up, who made his appearance in a very genteel livery. 'Here, Abraham,' cried he, 'go and get gold for this; you'll do it at neighbour Jack-son's, or any where.' While the fellow was gone, he entertained me with a pathetic harangue on the great scarcity of silver, which I undertook to improve, by deploring also the great scarcity of gold; so that by the time Abraham returned, we had both agreed that money was never so hard to be come at as now. Abraham returned to inform us, that he had been over the whole fair and could not get change, though he had offered half a crown for doing it. This was a very great disappointment to us all; but the old gentleman having paused a little, asked me if I knew one Solomon Flam-borough in my part of the country: upon replying that he was my next door neighbour, 'If that be the case then,' returned he, 'I believe we shall deal. You shall have a draft upon him, payable at sight; and let me tell you he is as warm a man as any within five miles round him. Honest Solomon and I have been acquainted for many years together. I remember I always beat him at three jumps; but he could hop upon one leg farther than I.' A draft upon my neighbour was to me the same as money; for I was sufficiently convinced of his ability; the draft was signed and put into my hands, and Mr. Jenkinson, the old gentleman, his man Abraham, and my horse, old Blackberry, trotted off very well pleased with each other.

After a short interval, being left to reflection, I began to recollect that I had done wrong in taking a draft from

from a stranger, and so prudently resolved upon following the purchaser, and having back my horse. But this was now too late: I therefore made directly homewards, resolving to get the draft changed into money at my friend's as fast as possible. I found my honest neighbour smoking his pipe at his own door, and informing him that I had a small bill upon him, he read it twice over. 'You can read the name,' I suppose,' cried I, 'Ephraim Jenkinson.'—'Yes,' returned he, 'the name is written plain enough, and I know the gentleman too, the greatest rascal under the canopy of heaven. This is the very same rogue who sold us the spectacles. Was he not a venerable looking man, with grey hair, and no flaps to his pocket-holes? And did he not talk a long string of learning about Greek, and cosmogony, and the world?' To this I replied with a groan. 'Aye,' continued he, 'he has but one piece of learning in the world, and he always talks it wherever he finds a scholar in company: but I know the rogue, and will catch him yet.'

Though I was already sufficiently mortified, my greatest struggle was to come, in facing my wife and daughters. No truant was ever more afraid of returning to school, there to behold the master's visage, than I was of going home. I was determined, however, to anticipate their fury, by first falling into a passion myself.

But, alas! upon entering, I found the family no way disposed for battle. My wife and girls were all in tears, Mr. Thornhill having been there that day to inform them, that their journey to town was entirely over. The two ladies having heard reports of us from some malicious person about us, were that day set out for London. He could neither discover the tendency, nor the author of these, but whatever they might be, or whoever might have broached them, he continued to assure our family of his friendship and protection. I found, therefore, that they bore my disappointment with great resignation, as it was eclipsed in the greatness of their own. But what perplexed us most was to think who could be so base as to asperse the character of a family so harmless as ours; too hum-

ble to excite envy, and too inoffensive to create disgust.

CHAP. XV.

ALL MR. BURCHELL'S VILLAINY AT ONCE DETECTED. THE FOLLY OF BEING OVER-WISE.

THAT evening and part of the following day was employed in fruitless attempts to discover our enemies: scarce a family in the neighbourhood but incurred our suspicions, and each of us had reasons for our opinion best known to ourselves. As we were in this perplexity, one of our little boys, who had been playing abroad, brought in a letter-case, which he found on the green. It was quickly known to belong to Mr. Burchell, with whom it had been seen, and upon examination, contained some hints upon different subjects; but what particularly engaged our attention, was a sealed note superscribed, *The copy of a letter to be sent to the ladies at Thornhill Castle*. It instantly occurred that he was the base informer, and we deliberated whether the note should not be broke open. I was against it; but Sophia, who said she was sure that of all men he would be the last to be guilty of so much baseness, insisted upon its being read. In this she was seconded by the rest of the family; and, at their joint solicitation, I read as follows:

LADIES,

THE bearer will sufficiently satisfy you as to the person from whom this comes: one at least the friend of innocence, and ready to prevent its being seduced. I am informed for a truth, that you have some intention of bringing two young ladies to town, whom I have some knowledge of, under the character of companions. As I would neither have simplicity imposed upon, nor virtue contaminated, I must offer it as my opinion, that the impropriety of such a step will be attended with dangerous consequences. It has never been my way to treat the infamous or the lewd with severity; nor should I now have taken this

method

‘method of explaining myself, or reproving folly, did it not aim at guilt. Take therefore the admonition of a friend, and seriously reflect on the consequences of introducing infamy and vice into retreats where peace and innocence have hitherto resided.’

Our doubts were now at an end. There seemed indeed something applicable to both sides in this letter, and its censures might as well be referred to those to whom it was written, as to us; but the malicious meaning was obvious, and we went no farther. My wife had scarce patience to hear me to the end, but railed at the writer with unrestrained resentment. Olivia was equally severe, and Sophia seemed perfectly amazed at his baseness. As for my part, it appeared to me one of the vilest instances of unprovoked ingratitude I had met with. Nor could I account for it in any other manner than by imputing it to his desire of detaining my youngest daughter in the country, to have the more frequent opportunities of an interview. In this manner we all sat ruminating upon schemes of vengeance, when our other little boy came running in to tell us that Mr. Burchell was approaching at the other end of the field. It is easier to conceive than describe the complicated sensations which are felt from the pain of a recent injury, and the pleasure of approaching vengeance. Though our intentions were only to upbraid him with his ingratitude; yet it was resolved to do it in a manner that would be perfectly cutting. For this purpose we agreed to meet him with our usual smiles, to chat in the beginning with more than ordinary kindness, to amuse him a little; and then, in the midst of the flattering calm, to burst upon him like an earthquake, and overwhelm him with the sense of his own baseness. This being resolved upon, my wife undertook to manage the business herself, as she really had some talents for such an undertaking. We saw him approach, he entered, drew a chair, and sat down. ‘A fine day, Mr. Burchell.’ — ‘A very fine day, doctor; though I fancy we shall have some rain, by the shooting of my corns.’ — ‘The shooting of your horns,’ cried my wife in a loud fit of laughter, and then asked pardon for being fond of a joke.

‘Dear Madam,’ replied he, ‘I pardon you with all my heart; for I protest I should not have thought it a joke, had you not told me.’ — ‘Perhaps not,’ Sir, cried my wife, winking at us; ‘and yet I dare say you can tell us how many jokes go to an ounce.’ — ‘I fancy, Madam,’ returned Burchell, ‘you have been reading a jest book this morning, that ounce of jokes is so very good a conceit; and yet, Madam, I had rather see half an ounce of understanding.’ — ‘I believe you might,’ cried my wife, still smiling at us, though the laugh was against her; ‘and yet I have seen some men pretend to understanding, that have very little.’ — ‘And no doubt,’ replied her antagonist, ‘you have known ladies set up for wit that had none.’ I quickly began to find that my wife was likely to gain but little at this business; so I resolved to treat him in a style of more severity myself. ‘Both wit and understanding,’ cried I, ‘are trifles without integrity; it is that which gives value to every character. The ignorant peasant, without fault, is greater than the philosopher with many; for what is genius or courage without an heart? *An honest man is the noblest work of God.*’

‘I always held that hackney’d maxim of Pope,’ returned Mr. Burchell, ‘as very unworthy a man of genius, and a base desertion of his own superiority. As the reputation of books is raised not by their freedom from defect, but the greatness of their beauties; so should that of men be prized not from their exemption from fault, but the size of those virtues they are possessed of. The scholar may want prudence, the statesman may have pride, and the champion ferocity; but shall we prefer to these the low mechanic, who laboriously plods on through life, without censure or applause? We might as well prefer the tame correct paintings of the Flemish school, to the erroneous, but sublime animations of the Roman pencil.’

‘Sir,’ replied I, ‘your present observation is just, when there are shining virtues and minute defects; but when it appears that great vices are opposed in the same mind to as extraordinary virtues, such a character deserves contempt.’

‘Perhaps,’



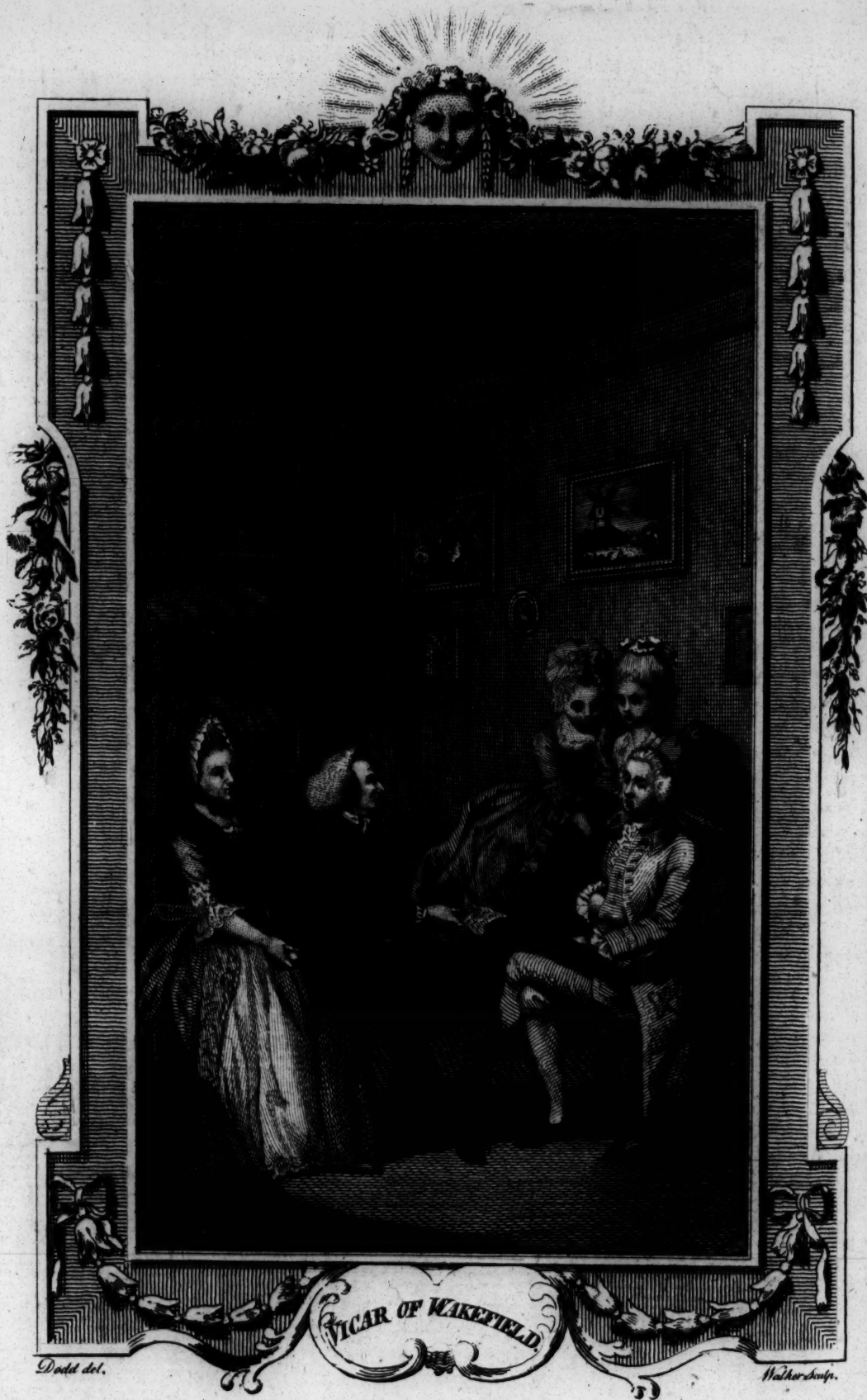


Plate I.

Published as the Act directs by Harrison & Co. 20, May 1780.

‘Perhaps,’ cried he, ‘there may be some such monsters as you describe, of great vices joined to great virtues; yet in my progress through life, I never yet found one instance of their existence: on the contrary, I have ever perceived, that where the mind was capacious, the affections were good. And indeed Providence seems kindly our friend in this particular, thus to debilitate the understanding where the heart is corrupt, and diminish the power where there is the will to do mischief. This rule seems to extend even to other animals: the little vermin race are ever treacherous, cruel, and cowardly; whilst those endowed with strength and power, are generous, brave, and gentle.’

‘These observations sound well,’ returned I, ‘and yet it would be easy this moment to point out a man,’ and I fixed my eye steadfastly upon him, whose head and heart form a most detestable contrast. ‘Aye, Sir,’ continued I, raising my voice, ‘and I am glad to have this opportunity of detecting him in the midst of his fancied security. Do you know this, Sir, this pocket-book?’—‘Yes, Sir,’ returned he, with a face of impenetrable assurance, ‘that pocket-book is mine, and I am glad you have found it.’—‘And do you know,’ cried I, ‘this letter? Nay, never fault, man; but look me full in the face: I say, do you know this letter?’—‘That letter,’ returned he; ‘yes, it was I that wrote that letter.’—‘And how could you,’ said I, ‘so basely, so ungratefully, presume to write this letter?’—‘And how came you,’ replied he, with looks of unparalleled effrontery, ‘so basely to presume to break open this letter? Don’t you know, now, I could hang you all for this?’ ‘All that I have to do, is to swear at the next justice’s that you have been guilty of breaking open the lock of my pocket-book, and so hang you all up at this door.’ This piece of unexpected insolence raised me to such a pitch, that I could scarce govern my passion. ‘Ungrateful wretch, be gone, and no longer pollute my dwelling with thy baseness. Be gone, and never let me see thee again: go from my door, and the only punishment I wish thee, is an alarmed conscience, which

‘will be a sufficient tormentor!’ So saying, I threw him his pocket-book, which he took up with a smile, and shutting the clasps with the utmost composure, left us, quite astonished at the serenity of his assurance. My wife was particularly enraged that nothing could make him angry, or make him seem ashamed of his villainies. ‘My dear,’ cried I, willing to calm those passions that had been raised too high among us, ‘we are not to be surprized that bad men want shame; they only blush at being detected in doing good, but glory in their vices.’

‘Guilt and shame, (says the allegory) were at first companions, and in the beginning of their journey inseparably kept together. But their union was soon found to be disagreeable and inconvenient to both; guilt gave shame frequent uneasiness, and shame often betrayed the secret conspiracies of guilt. After long disagreement, therefore, they at length consented to part for ever. Guilt boldly walked forward alone, to overtake fate, that went before in the shape of an executioner: but shame being naturally timorous, returned back to keep company with virtue, which, in the beginning of their journey, they had left behind.—Thus, my children, after men have travelled through a few stages in vice, shame forsakes them, and returns back to wait upon the few virtues they have still remaining.’

CHAP. XVI.

THE FAMILY USE ART, WHICH IS
OPPOSED WITH STILL GREATER.

WHATEVER might have been Sophia’s sensations, the rest of the family was easily consoled for Mr. Burchell’s absence by the company of our landlord, whose visits now became more frequent and longer. Though he had been disappointed in procuring my daughters the amusements of the town, as he designed, he took every opportunity of supplying them with those little recreations which our retirement would admit of. He usually came in the morning, and while my son and I followed our occupations abroad, he sat with the family at home, and amused

mused them by describing the town, with every part of which he was particularly acquainted. He could repeat all the observations that were retailed in the atmosphere of the play-houses, and had all the good things of the high wits by rote long before they made way into the jest books. The intervals between conversation were employed in teaching my daughters piquet; or, sometimes in setting my two little ones to box to make them *sharp*, as he called it: but the hopes of having him for a son-in-law, in some measure blinded us to all his imperfections. It must be owned that my wife laid a thousand schemes to entrap him; or, to speak it more tenderly, used every art to magnify the merit of her daughter. If the cakes at tea eat short and crisp, they were made by Olivia; if the gooseberry wine was well knit, the gooseberries were of her gathering: it was her fingers which gave the pickles their peculiar green; and in the composition of a pudding, it was her judgment that mixed the ingredients. Then the poor woman would sometimes tell the squire, that she thought him and Olivia extremely of a size, and would bid both stand up to see which was tallest. These instances of cunning, which she thought impenetrable, yet which every body saw through, were very pleasing to our benefactor, who gave every day some new proofs of his passion, which though they had not arisen to proposals of marriage, yet we thought fell but very little short of it; and his slowness was attributed sometimes to native bashfulness, and sometimes to his fear of offending his uncle. An occurrence, however, which happened soon after, put it beyond a doubt, that he designed to become one of our family; my wife even regarded it as an absolute promise.

My wife and daughters happening to return a visit to neighbour Flamborough's, found that family had lately got their pictures drawn by a limner, who travelled the country, and took likenesses for fifteen shillings a head. As this family and ours had long a sort of rivalry in point of taste, our spirit took the alarm at this stolen march upon us, and notwithstanding all I could say, and I said much, it was resolved that we should have our pictures done too. Having, therefore,

engaged the limner, for what could I do! our next deliberation was to shew the superiority of our taste in the attitudes. As for our neighbour's family, there were seven of them, and they were drawn with seven oranges, a thing quite out of taste, no variety in life, no composition in the world. We desired to have something in a brighter style, and after many debates, at length came to a unanimous resolution of being drawn together, in one large historical family piece. This would be cheaper, since one frame would serve for all, and it would be infinitely more genteel; for all families of any taste were now drawn in the same manner. As we did not immediately recollect an historical subject to hit us, we were contented each with being drawn as independent historical figures. My wife desired to be represented as Venus, and the painter was desired not to be too frugal of his diamonds in her stomacher and hair. Her two little ones were to be as Cupids by her side, while I, in my gown and band, was to present her with my books on the Whistonian controversy. Olivia would be drawn as an Amazon, sitting upon a bank of flowers, dressed in a green Joseph, richly laced with gold, and a whip in her hand. Sophia was to be a shepherdess, with as many sheep as the painter could put in for nothing; and Moses was to be dressed out with an hat and white feather. Our taste so much pleased the squire, that he insisted on being put in as one of the family in the character of Alexander the Great, at Olivia's feet. This was considered by us all as an indication of his desire to be introduced into the family, nor could we refuse his request. The painter was therefore set to work, and as he wrought with assiduity and expedition, in less than four days the whole was compleated. The piece was large, and it must be owned he did not spare his colours; for which my wife gave him great encomiums. We were all perfectly satisfied with his performance; but an unfortunate circumstance had not occurred till the picture was finished, which now struck us with dismay. It was so very large that we had no place in the house to fix it. How we all came to disregard so material a point is inconceivable; but certain it is, we had been all greatly remiss.

The

The picture, therefore, instead of gratifying our vanity, as we hoped, leaned in a most mortifying manner, against the kitchen wall, where the canvas was stretched and painted, much too large to be got through any of the doors, and the jest of all our neighbours. One compared it to Robinson Crusoe's long boat, too large to be removed; another thought it more resembled a reel in a bottle; some wondered how it could be got out, but still more were amazed how it ever got in.

But though it excited the ridicule of some, it effectually raised more malicious suggestions in many. The squire's portrait being found united with ours, was an honour too great to escape envy. Scandalous whispers began to circulate at our expence, and our tranquility was continually disturbed by persons who came as friends to tell us what was said of us by enemies. These reports we always resented with becoming spirit: but scandal ever improves by opposition.

We once again therefore entered into a consultation upon obviating the malice of our enemies, and at last came to a resolution which had too much cunning to give me entire satisfaction. It was this: as the principal object was to discover the honour of Mr. Thornhill's address, my wife undertook to find him, by pretending to ask his advice in the choice of a husband for her eldest daughter. If this was not found sufficient to induce him to a declaration, it was then resolved to terrify him with a rival. To this last step, however, I would by no means give my consent, till Olivia gave me the most solemn assurances that she would marry the person provided to rival him upon this occasion, if he did not prevent it, by taking her himself. Such was the scheme laid, which though I did not strenuously oppose, I did not entirely approve.

The next time, therefore, that Mr. Thornhill came to see us, my girls took care to be out of the way, in order to give their mama an opportunity of putting her scheme in execution; but they only retired to the next room, from whence they could over-hear the whole conversation: My wife artfully introduced it, by observing, that one of the Miss Flamboroughs was like to have a very good match of it in Mr. Spanker. To this the squire assenting,

she proceeded to remark, that they who had warm fortunes were always sure of getting good husbands: 'But Heaven help,' continued she, 'the girls that have none. What signifies beauty, Mr. Thornhill? or what signifies all the virtue, and all the qualifications in the world, in this age of self-interest? It is not, what is she? but what has she? is all the cry.'

'Madam,' returned he, 'I highly approve the justice, as well as the novelty of your remarks; and if I were a king, it should be otherwise. It should then, indeed, be fine times with the girls without fortunes: our two young ladies should be the first for whom I would provide.'

'Ah, Sir!' returned my wife, 'you are pleased to be facetious: but I wish I were a queen, and then I know where my eldest daughter should look for an husband. But now, that you have put it into my head, seriously, Mr. Thornhill, can't you recommend me a proper husband for her? she is now nineteen years old, well grown, and well educated; and, in my humble opinion, does not want for parts.'

'Madam,' replied he, 'if I were to chuse, I would find out a person possessed of every accomplishment that can make an angel happy. One with prudence, fortune, taste, and sincerity; such, Madam, would be, in my opinion, the proper husband.'—'Aye, Sir,' said she, 'but do you know of any such person?'—'No, Madam,' returned he, 'it is impossible to know any person that deserves to be her husband: she's too great a treasure for one man's possession; she's a goddess. Upon my soul, I speak what I think; she's an angel.'—'Ah, Mr. Thornhill, you only flatter my poor girl: but we have been thinking of marrying her to one of your tenants, whose mother is lately dead, and who wants a manager; you know whom I mean, Farmer Williams; a warm man, Mr. Thornhill, able to give her good bread; and who has several times made her proposals: (which was actually the case.)' 'But, Sir,' concluded she, 'I should be glad to have your approbation of our choice.'—'How, Madam!' replied he, 'my approbation! My approbation of such a choice! Never. What! sacrifice

‘crifice so much beauty, and sense, and goodness, to a creature insensible of the blessing! Excuse me, I can never approve of such a piece of injustice! And I have my reasons.’— ‘Indeed, Sir,’ cried Deborah, ‘if you have your reasons, that’s another affair; but I should be glad to know those reasons.’— ‘Excuse me,’ Madam, returned he, ‘they lie too deep for discovery;’ (laying his hand upon his bosom:) ‘they remain buried, rivetted here.’

After he was gone, upon general consultation, we could not tell what to make of these fine sentiments. Olivia considered them as instances of the most exalted passion; but I was not quite so sanguine; it seemed to me pretty plain, that they had more of love than matrimony in them: yet, whatever they might portend, it was resolved to prosecute the scheme of Farmer Williams, who, from my daughter’s first appearance in the country, had paid her his addresses.

C H A P. XVII.

SCARCE ANY VIRTUE FOUND TO RESIST THE POWER OF LONG AND PLEASING TEMPTATION.

AS I only studied my child’s real happiness, the assiduity of Mr. Williams pleased me, as he was in easy circumstances, prudent, and sincere. It required but very little encouragement to revive his former passion; so that in an evening or two he and Mr. Thornhill met at our house, and surveyed each other for some time with looks of anger: but Williams owed his landlord no rent, and little regarded his indignation. Olivia, on her side, acted the coquet to perfection; if that might be called acting, which was her real character, pretending to lavish all her tenderness on her new lover. Mr. Thornhill appeared quite dejected at this preference, and with a pensive air took leave; though I own it puzzled me to find him so much in pain as he appeared to be, when he had it in his power so easily to remove the cause, by declaring an honourable passion. But whatever uneasiness he seemed to endure, it could easily be perceived that Olivia’s anguish was still greater. Af-

ter any of these interviews between her lovers, of which there were several, she usually retired to solitude, and there indulged her grief. It was in such a situation I found her one evening, after she had been for some time supporting a fictitious gaiety. ‘You now see,’ my child,’ said I, ‘that your confidence in Mr. Thornhill’s passion was all a dream: he permits the rivalry of another, every way his inferior, though he knows it lies in his power to secure you to himself by a candid declaration.’— ‘Yes, papa,’ returned she, ‘but he has his reasons for this delay: I know he has. The sincerity of his looks and words convinced me of his real esteem. A short time, I hope, will discover the generosity of his sentiments, and convince you that my opinion of him has been more just than yours.’— ‘Olivia, my darling,’ returned I, ‘every scheme that has been hitherto pursued to compel him to a declaration, has been proposed and planned by yourself, nor can you in the least say that I have constrained you. But you must not suppose, my dear, that I will ever be instrumental in suffering his honest rival to be the dupe of your ill-placed passion. Whatever time you require to bring your fancied admirer to an explanation shall be granted: but at the expiration of that term, if he is still regardless, I must absolutely insist that honest Mr. Williams shall be rewarded for his fidelity. The character which I have hitherto supported in life demands this from me, and my tenderness as a parent, shall never influence my integrity as a man. Name then your day, let it be as distant as you think proper, and in the meantime take care to let Mr. Thornhill know the exact time on which I design delivering you up to another. If he really loves you, his own good sense will readily suggest that there is but one method alone to prevent his losing you for ever. This proposal, which she could not avoid considering as perfectly just, was readily agreed to. She again renewed her most positive promise of marrying Mr. Williams, in case of the other’s insensibility; and at the next opportunity, in Mr. Thornhill’s presence, that day month was fixed upon for her nuptials with his rival.

Such

Such vigorous proceedings seemed to redouble Mr. Thornhill's anxiety: but what Olivia really felt gave me some uneasiness. In this struggle between prudence and passion, her vivacity quite forsook her, and every opportunity of solitude was sought, and spent in tears. One week passed away; but Mr. Thornhill made no efforts to restrain her nuptials. The succeeding week he was still assiduous, but not more open. On the third he discontinued his visits entirely, and instead of my daughter testifying any impatience, as I expected, she seemed to retain a penlive tranquillity, which I looked upon as resignation. For my own part, I was now sincerely pleased with thinking that my child was going to be secured in a continuance of competence and peace, and frequently applauded her resolution, in preferring happiness to ostentation.

It was within about four days of her intended nuptials, that my little family at night were gathered round a charming fire, telling stories of the past, and laying schemes for the future. Bused in forming a thousand projects, and laughing at whatever folly came uppermost, 'Well, Moses,' cried I, 'we shall soon, my boy, have a wedding in the family; what is your opinion of matters and things in general?'—'My opinion, father, is, that all things go on very well; and I was just now thinking, that when sister Livy is married to Farmer Williams, we shall then have the loan of his cyder-press and brewing-tubs for nothing.'—'That we shall, Moses,' cried I, 'and he will sing us Death and the Lady to raise our spirits into the bargain.'—'He has taught that song to our Dick,' cried Moses; 'and I think he goes through it very prettily.'—'Does he so?' cried I, 'then let us have it: where's little Dick?'—'let him up with it boldly.'—'My brother Dick,' cried Bill, my youngest, 'is just gone out with sister Livy; but Mr. Williams has taught me two songs, and I'll sing them for you, papa. Which song do you chuse, *The dying Swan*, or the *Elegy on the Death of a Mad Dog*?'—'The elegy, child, by all means,' said I; 'I never heard that yet—and Deborah, let us life, grief you know is dry; let us have a bottle of the best gooseberry wine, to keep up our spirits. I have

' wept so much at all sorts of elegies of late, that without an enlivening glass I am sure this will overcome me.—And Sophy, love, take your guitar, and thrum in with the boy a little.'

AN ELEGY ON THE DEATH OF A MAD-DOG.

GOOD people all, of every sort,
Give ear unto my song;
And if you find it wondrous short,
It cannot hold you long.

In Islington there was a man,
Of whom the world might say,
That still a godly race he ran,
Whene'er he went to pray.

A kind and gentle heart he had,
To comfort friends and foes;
The naked every day he clad,
When he put on his clothes.

And in that town a dog was found,
As many dogs there be,
Both mongrel, puppy, whelp and hound,
And curs of low degree.

This dog and man at first were friends;
But when a pique began,
The dog, to gain his private ends,
Went mad and bit the man.

Around from all the neighbouring streets,
The wond'ring neighbours ran;
And swore the dog had lost his wits,
To bite so good a man.

The wound it seem'd both sore and sad,
To every christian eye;
And while they swore the dog was mad,
They swore the man would die.

But soon a wonder came to light,
That shew'd the rogues they lyed;
The man recover'd of the bite,
The dog it was that died.

'A very good boy, Bill, upon my word; and an elegy that may truly be called tragical.—Come, my children, here's Bill's health, and may he one day be a bishop!'

'With all my heart,' cried my wife; 'and if he but preaches as well as he sings, I make no doubt of him. The most of his family, by the mother's side, could sing a good song: it was a common saying in our country, that the family of the Blenkinsops could never look straight before them, nor the Hugginsons blow out a candle; that there were none of the Grograms but could sing a song, or of the Mar-

‘jorams but could tell a story.—
 ‘However that be,’ cried I, ‘the most
 ‘vulgar ballad of all generally pleases
 ‘me better than the fine modern odes,
 ‘and things that petrify in a single
 ‘stanza; productions that we at once
 ‘detest and praise. Put the glass to
 ‘your brother, Moses. The great
 ‘fault of these elegiacs is, that they
 ‘are in despair for griefs that give the
 ‘sensible part of mankind very little
 ‘pain. A lady loses her muff, her
 ‘fan, or her lap-dog, and so the silly
 ‘poet runs home to versify the disaster.’

‘That may be the mode,’ cried
 Moses, ‘in sublimer composition; but
 ‘the Ranelagh songs that come down
 ‘to us are perfectly familiar, and all
 ‘cast in the same mould: Collin meets
 ‘Dolly, and they hold a dialogue to-
 ‘gether; he gives her a fairing to put
 ‘in her hair, and she presents him with
 ‘a nosegay; and then they go toge-
 ‘ther to church, where they give good
 ‘advice to young nymphs and swains
 ‘to get married as fast as they can.’

‘And very good advice too,’ cried
 I; ‘and I am told there is not a place
 ‘in the world where advice can be
 ‘given with so much propriety as
 ‘there; for, as it persuades us to
 ‘marry, it also furnishes us with a
 ‘wife; and surely that must be an ex-
 ‘cellent market, my boy, where we
 ‘are told what we want, and supplied
 ‘with it when wanting.’

‘Yes, Sir,’ returned Moses, ‘and
 ‘I know but of two such markets for
 ‘wives in Europe, Ranelagh in Eng-
 ‘land, and Fontarabia in Spain. The
 ‘Spanish market is open once a year,
 ‘but our English wives are saleable
 ‘every night.’

‘You are right, my boy,’ cried his
 mother, ‘Old England is the only
 ‘place in the world for husbands to
 ‘get wives.’—‘And for wives to ma-
 ‘nage their husbands,’ interrupted I.
 ‘It is a proverb abroad, that if a
 ‘bridge were built across the sea, all
 ‘the ladies of the Continent would
 ‘come over to take pattern from ours:
 ‘for there are no such wives in Europe
 ‘as our own. But let us have one
 ‘bottle more, Deborah, my life—and
 ‘Moses give us a good song. What
 ‘thanks do we not owe to Heaven for
 ‘thus bestowing tranquility, health,
 ‘and competence! I think myself hap-
 ‘pier now than the greatest monarch
 ‘upon earth. He has no such fire-side,

‘nor such pleasant faces about it. Yes,
 ‘Deborah, we are now growing old;
 ‘but the evening of our life is likely
 ‘to be happy. We are descended from
 ‘ancestors that knew no stain, and we
 ‘shall leave a good and virtuous race
 ‘of children behind us. While we
 ‘live they will be our support and our
 ‘pleasure here, and when we die they
 ‘will transmit our honour untainted
 ‘to posterity.—Come, my son, we wait
 ‘for a song: let us have a chorus.
 ‘But where is my darling Olivia;
 ‘that little cherub’s voice is always
 ‘sweetest in the concert?’ Just as I
 spoke, Dick came running in, ‘O
 ‘papa, papa, she is gone from us, she
 ‘is gone from us; my sister Livy is
 ‘gone from us for ever.’—‘Gone,
 ‘child!’—‘Yes, she is gone off with
 ‘two gentlemen in a post-chaise; and
 ‘one of them kissed her, and said he
 ‘would die for her; and she cried very
 ‘much, and was for coming back;
 ‘but he persuaded her again, and she
 ‘went into the chaise, and said, “O,
 ‘what will my poor papa do when he
 ‘knows I am undone.”—‘Now, then,’
 cried I, ‘my children, go and be miser-
 ‘able: for we shall never enjoy one hour
 ‘more. And O may Heaven’s ever-
 ‘lasting fury light upon him and his!
 ‘Thus to rob me of my child! And
 ‘sure it will, for taking back my
 ‘sweet innocent that I was leading up
 ‘to heaven. Such sincerity as my
 ‘child was possessed of! But all our
 ‘earthly happiness is now over! Go,
 ‘my children, go, and be miserable
 ‘and infamous; for my heart is bro-
 ‘ken within me!’—‘Father,’ cried my
 son, ‘is this your fortitude?’—‘For-
 ‘titude, child! Yes, he shall see I
 ‘have fortitude! Bring me my pistols.
 ‘I’ll pursue the traitor. While he is
 ‘on earth I’ll pursue him. Old as I
 ‘am, he shall find I can sting him yet.
 ‘The villain! the perfidious villain!’
 I had by this time reached down my
 pistols, when my poor wife, whose
 passions were not so strong as mine,
 caught me in her arms. ‘My dearest,
 ‘dearest husband,’ cried she, ‘the
 ‘Bible is the only weapon that is fit for
 ‘your old hands now. Open that,
 ‘my love, and read our anguish into
 ‘patience, for she has vilely deceived
 ‘us.’—‘Indeed, Sir,’ resumed my
 son, after a pause, ‘your rage is too
 ‘violent and unbecoming. You should
 ‘be my mother’s comforter, and you
 ‘increase

‘increase her pain. It ill suited you
 ‘and your reverend character thus to
 ‘curse your greatest enemy: you should
 ‘not have cursed him, villain as he is.’
 — ‘I did not curse him, child, did I?’
 — ‘Indeed, Sir, you did; you cursed
 ‘him twice.’ — ‘Then may Heaven
 ‘forgive me and him if I did. And
 ‘now, my son, I see it was more than
 ‘human benevolence that first taught
 ‘us to bless our enemies! Blest be his
 ‘holy name for all the good he hath
 ‘given, and for all that he hath taken
 ‘away. But it is not, it is not a small
 ‘distress that can wring tears from
 ‘these old eyes, that have not wept for
 ‘so many years. My child! To
 ‘undo my darling! May confusion
 ‘seize!—Heaven forgive me, what am
 ‘I about to say!—You may remember,
 ‘my love, how good she was, and
 ‘how charming; till this vile moment,
 ‘all her care was to make us happy.
 ‘Had she but died! But she is gone,
 ‘the honour of our family contami-
 ‘nated, and I must look out for hap-
 ‘piness in other worlds than here.—
 ‘But, my child, you saw them go off:
 ‘perhaps he forced her away? If he
 ‘forced her, she may yet be innocent.’
 — ‘Ah, no, Sir,’ cried the child; ‘he
 ‘only kissed her, and called her his
 ‘angel, and she wept very much, and
 ‘leaned upon his arm, and they drove
 ‘off very fast.’ — ‘She’s an ungrateful
 ‘creature,’ cried my wife, who could
 ‘scarce speak for weeping, ‘to use us
 ‘thus. She never had the least con-
 ‘straint put upon her affections. The
 ‘vile strumpet has basely deserted her
 ‘parents without any provocation,
 ‘thus to bring your grey hairs to the
 ‘grave, and I must shortly follow.’

In this manner that night, the first
 of our real misfortunes, was spent in
 the bitterness of complaint, and ill-
 supported sallies of enthusiasm. I de-
 termined, however, to find out our
 betrayer, wherever he was, and re-
 proach his baseness. The next morn-
 ing we missed our wretched child at
 breakfast, where she used to give life
 and cheerfulness to us all. My wife,
 as before, attempted to ease her heart
 by reproaches. ‘Never,’ cried she,
 ‘shall that vilest stain of our family
 ‘again darken these harmless doors. I
 ‘will never call her daughter more. No,
 ‘let the strumpet live with her vile se-

‘ducer: she may bring us to shame, but
 ‘she shall never more deceive us.’

‘Wife,’ said I, ‘do not talk thus
 ‘hardly: my detestation of her guilt
 ‘is as great as your’s; but ever shall
 ‘this house and this heart be open to
 ‘a poor returning repentant sinner.
 ‘The sooner she returns from her
 ‘transgression, the more welcome shall
 ‘she be to me. For the first time the
 ‘very best may err; art may persuade,
 ‘and novelty spread out it’s charm.
 ‘The first fault is the child of simpli-
 ‘city; but every other the offspring of
 ‘guilt. Yes, the wretched creature
 ‘shall be welcome to this heart and
 ‘this house, though stained with ten
 ‘thousand vices. I will again hearken
 ‘to the music of her voice, again will
 ‘I hang fondly on her bosom, if I find
 ‘but repentance there.—My son, bring
 ‘hither my Bible and my staff: I will
 ‘pursue her, wherever she is; and
 ‘though I cannot save her from shame,
 ‘I may prevent the continuance of
 ‘iniquity.’

C H A P. XVIII.

THE PURSUIT OF A FATHER TO
RECLAIM A LOST CHILD TO VIR-
TUE.

THOUGH the child could not
 describe the gentleman’s person
 who handed his sister into the post-chaise,
 yet my suspicions fell entirely upon our
 young landlord, whose character for
 such intrigues was but too well known.
 I therefore directed my steps towards
 Thornhill Castle, resolving to upbraid
 him, and, if possible, to bring back my
 daughter: but before I had reached
 his seat, I was met by one of my pa-
 rishioners, who said he saw a young
 lady resembling my daughter in a post-
 chaise with a gentleman, whom, by the
 description, I could only guess to be
 Mr. Burchell, and that they drove very
 fast. This information, however, did
 by no means satisfy me. I therefore
 went to the young squire’s, and though
 it was yet early, insisted upon seeing
 him immediately: he soon appeared
 with the most open familiar air, and
 seemed perfectly amazed at my daugh-
 ter’s elopement, protesting upon his
 honour that he was quite a stranger to
 it.

it. I now therefore condemned my former suspicions, and could turn them only on Mr. Burchell, who I recollected had of late several private conferences with her : but the appearance of another witness left me no room to doubt of his villainy, who averred that he and my daughter were actually gone towards the Wells, about thirty miles off, where there was a great deal of company. Being driven to that state of mind in which we are more ready to act precipitately than to reason right, I never debated with myself, whether these accounts might not have been given by persons purposely placed in my way, to mislead me, but resolved to pursue my daughter and her fancied deluder thither. I walked along with earnestness, and enquired of several by the way ; but received no accounts, till entering the town, I was met by a person on horseback, whom I remembered to have seen at the squire's, and he assured me, that if I followed them to the races, which were but thirty miles farther, I might depend upon overtaking them ; for he had seen them dance there the night before, and the whole assembly seemed charmed with my daughter's performance. Early the next day I walked forward to the races, and about four in the afternoon, I came upon the course. The company made a very brilliant appearance, all earnestly employed in one pursuit, that of pleasure ; how different from mine, that of reclaiming a lost child to virtue ! I thought I perceived Mr. Burchell at some distance from me : but as if he dreaded an interview, upon my approaching him, he mixed among a crowd, and I saw him no more. I now reflected that it would be to no purpose to continue my pursuit farther, and resolved to return home to an innocent family, who wanted my assistance. But the agitations of my mind, and the fatigues I had undergone, threw me into a fever, the symptoms of which I perceived before I came off the course. This was another unexpected stroke, as I was more than seventy miles distant from home : however, I retired to a little ale-house by the road-side, and in this place, the usual retreat of indigence and frugality, I laid me down patiently to wait the issue of my disorder. I languished here for near three weeks ; but

at last my constitution prevailed, though I was unprovided with money to defray the expences of my entertainment. It is possible the anxiety from this last circumstance alone might have brought on a relapse, had I not been supplied by a traveller, who stopt to take a curfory refreshment. This person was no other than the philanthropic bookseller in St. Paul's Church-yard, who has written so many little books for children : he called himself their friend ; but he was the friend of all mankind. He was no sooner alighted, but he was in haste to be gone ; for he was ever on business of the utmost importance, and was at that time actually compiling materials for the history of one Mr. Thomas Trip. I immediately recollected this good-natured man's red pimpled face ; for he had published for me against the Deuterogamists of the age, and from him I borrowed a few pieces to be paid at my return. Leaving the inn, therefore, as I was yet but weak, I resolved to return home by easy journeys of ten miles a day. My health and usual tranquillity were almost restored, and I now condemned that pride which had made me refractory to the hand of correction. Man little knows what calamities are beyond his patience to bear till he tries them ; as in ascending the heights of ambition, which look bright from below, every step we rise shews us some new and gloomy prospect of hidden disappointment ; so in our descent from the summit of pleasure, though the vale of misery below may appear at first dark and gloomy, yet the busy mind, still attentive to it's own amusement, finds as we descend something to flatter and please. Still as we approach, the darkest objects appear to brighten, and the mental eye becomes adapted to it's gloomy situation.

I now proceeded forward, and had walked about two hours, when I perceived what appeared at a distance like a waggon, which I was resolved to overtake ; but when I came up with it, found it to be a strolling company's cart, that was carrying their scenes and other theatrical furniture to the next village, where they were to exhibit. The cart was attended only by the person who drove it, and one of the company, as the rest of the players were to follow

follow the ensuing day. 'Good company upon the road,' says the proverb, 'is the shortest cut.' I therefore entered into conversation with the poor player; and as I once had some theatrical powers myself, I disserted on such topicks with my usual freedom: but as I was pretty much unacquainted with the present state of the stage, I demanded who were the present theatrical writers in vogue, who the Drydens and Otways of the day. 'I fancy, Sir,' cried the player, 'few of our modern dramatists would think themselves much honoured by being compared to the writers you mention. Dryden and Rowe's manner, Sir, are quite out of fashion; our taste has gone back a whole century; Fletcher, Ben Johnson, and all the plays of Shakespeare, are the only things that go down.'—'How,' cried I, 'is it possible the present age can be pleased with that antiquated dialect, that obsolete humour, those over-charged characters, which abound in the works you mention?'—'Sir,' returned my companion, 'the publick think nothing about dialect, or humour, or character; for that is none of their business; they only go to be amused, and find themselves happy when they can enjoy a pantomime, under the sanction of Johnson's or Shakespeare's name.'—'So then, I suppose,' cried I, 'that our modern dramatists are rather imitators of Shakespeare than nature.'—'To say the truth,' returned my companion, 'I don't know that they imitate any thing at all; nor indeed does the public require it of them: it is not the composition of the piece, but the number of starts and attitudes that may be introduced that elicits applause. I have known a piece with not one jest in the whole, shrugged into popularity, and another saved by the poet's throwing in a fit of the gripes. No, Sir, the works of Congreve and Farquhar have too much wit in them for the present taste; our modern dialect is much more natural.'

By this time the equipage of the strolling company was arrived at the village, which, it seems, had been apprized of our approach, and was come out to gaze at us; for my companion observed, that strollers always have more spectators without doors than within. I did not consider the impropriety of my

being in such company, till I saw a mob gather about me. I therefore took shelter, as fast as possible, in the first ale-house that offered; and being shewn into the common room, was accosted by a very well-drest gentleman, who demanded whether I was the real chaplain of the company, or whether it was only to be my masquerade character in the play. Upon informing him of the truth, and that I did not belong in any sort to the company, he was condescending enough to desire me and the player to partake in a bowl of punch, over which he discussed modern politicks with great earnestness and interest. I set him down in my own mind for nothing less than a parliament-man at least; but was almost confirmed in my conjectures, when upon asking what there was in the house for supper, he insisted that the player and I should sup with him at his house; with which request, after some entreaties, we were prevailed on to comply.

CHAP. XIX.

THE DESCRIPTION OF A PERSON DISCONTENTED WITH THE PRESENT GOVERNMENT, AND APPREHENSIVE OF THE LOSS OF OUR LIBERTIES.

THE house where we were to be entertained, lying at a small distance from the village, our inviter observed, that as the coach was not ready, he would conduct us on foot, and we soon arrived at one of the most magnificent mansions I had seen in that part of the country. The apartment into which we were shewn was perfectly elegant and modern; he went to give orders for supper, while the player, with a wink, observed that we were perfectly in luck. Our entertainer soon returned, an elegant supper was brought in, two or three ladies in an easy dishabille were introduced, and the conversation began with some sprightliness. Politicks, however, was the subject on which our entertainer chiefly expatiated; for he asserted that liberty was at once his boast and his terror. After the cloth was removed, he asked me if I had seen the last Monitor; to which replying in the negative, 'What, nor the Auditor, I suppose?' cried he. 'Neither,

‘Neither, Sir,’ returned I. ‘That’s strange, very strange,’ replied my entertainer. ‘Now, I read all the politicks that come out. The Daily, the Public, the Ledger, the Chronicle, the London Evening, the Whitehall Evening, the seventeen Magazines, and the two Reviews; and though they hate each other, I love them all. Liberty, Sir, liberty is the Briton’s boast; and by all my coal mines in Cornwall, I reverence it’s guardians.’—‘Then it is to be hoped,’ cried I, ‘you reverence the king.’—‘Yes,’ returned my entertainer, ‘when he does what we would have him; but if he goes on as he has done of late, I’ll never trouble myself more with his matters. I say nothing. I think only, I could have directed some things better. I don’t think there has been a sufficient number of advisers: he should advise with every person willing to give him advice, and then we should have things done in another guelt manner.’

‘I wish,’ cried I, ‘that such intruding advisers were fixed in the pillory. It should be the duty of honest men to assist the weaker side of our constitution, that sacred power that has for some years been every day declining, and losing it’s due share of influence in the state. But these ignorants still continue the cry of liberty, and if they have any weight, basely throw it into the subsiding scale.’

‘How,’ cried one of the ladies, ‘do I live to see one so base, so sordid, as to be an enemy to liberty, and a defender of tyrants? Liberty, that sacred gift of Heaven, that glorious privilege of Britons!’

‘Can it be possible,’ cried our entertainer, ‘that there should be any found at present advocates for slavery? Any who are for meanly giving up the privileges of Britons? Can any, Sir, be so abject?’

‘No, Sir,’ replied I, ‘I am for liberty, that attribute of gods! Glorious liberty! that theme of modern declamation. I would have all men kings. I would be a king myself. We have all naturally an equal right to the throne: we are all originally equal. This is my opinion, and was once the opinion of a set of honest men who were called Levellers. They

tried to erect themselves into a community, where all should be equally free. But, alas! it would never answer; for there were some among them stronger, and some more cunning than others, and these became masters of the rest; for as sure as your groom rides your horses, because he is a cunninger animal than they, so surely will the animal that is cunninger or stronger than he, sit upon his shoulders in turn. Since then it is entailed upon humanity to submit, and some are born to command, and others to obey, the question is, as there must be tyrants, whether it is better to have them in the same house with us, or in the same village, or still farther off, in the metropolis. Now, Sir, for my own part, as I naturally hate the face of a tyrant, the farther off he is removed from me the better pleased am I. The generality of mankind also are of my way of thinking, and have unanimously created one king, whose election at once diminishes the number of tyrants, and puts tyranny at the greatest distance from the greatest number of people. Now the great, who were tyrants themselves before the election of one tyrant, are naturally averse to a power raised over them, and whose weight must ever lean heaviest on the subordinate orders. It is the interest of the great, therefore, to diminish kingly power as much as possible; because whatever they take from that, is naturally restored to themselves; and all they have to do in the state, is to undermine the single tyrant, by which they resume their primæval authority. Now the state may be so circumstanced, or it’s laws may be so disposed, or it’s men of opulence so minded, as all to conspire in carrying on this business of undermining monarchy. For, in the first place, if the circumstances of our state be such, as to favour the accumulation of wealth, and make the opulent still more rich, this will encrease their ambition. An accumulation of wealth, however, must necessarily be the consequence, when, as at present, more riches flow in from external commerce than arise from internal industry: for external commerce can only be managed to advantage by the

rich,

rich, and they have also at the same time all the emoluments arising from internal industry; so that the rich, with us, have two sources of wealth, whereas the poor have but one. For this reason, wealth, in all commercial states, is found to accumulate, and all such have hitherto in time become aristocratical. Again, the very laws also of this country may contribute to the accumulation of wealth; as when by their means the natural ties that bind the rich and poor together are broken, and it is ordained, that the rich shall only marry with the rich; or when the learned are held unqualified to serve their country as counsellors merely from a defect of opulence, and wealth is thus made the object of a wise man's ambition; by these means, I say, and such means as these, riches will accumulate. Now the possessor of accumulated wealth, when furnished with the necessaries and pleasures of life, has no other method to employ the superfluity of his fortune but in purchasing power; that is, differently speaking, in making dependants, by purchasing the liberty of the needy or the venal, of men who are willing to bear the mortification of contiguous tyranny for bread. Thus each very opulent man generally gathers round him a circle of the poorest of the people; and the polity abounding in accumulated wealth, may be compared to a Cartesian system, each orb with a vortex of its own. Those, however, who are willing to move in a great man's vortex, are only such as much be slaves, the rabble of mankind, whose souls and whose education are adapted to servitude, and who know nothing of liberty except the name. But there must still be a large number of the people without the sphere of the opulent man's influence, namely, that order of men which subsists between the very rich and the very rabble; those men who are possessed of too large fortunes to submit to the neighbouring man in power, and yet are too poor to set up for tyranny themselves. In this middle order of mankind are generally to be found all the arts, wisdom, and virtues of society. This order alone is known to be the true preserver of freedom,

and may be called the people. Now it may happen that this middle order of mankind may lose all its influence in a state, and its voice be in a manner drowned in that of the rabble: for if the fortune sufficient for qualifying a person at present to give his voice in state affairs, be ten times less than was judged sufficient upon forming the constitution, it is evident that great numbers of the rabble will thus be introduced into the political system, and they, ever moving in the vortex of the great, will follow where greatness shall direct. In such a state, therefore, all that the middle order has left, is to preserve the prerogative and privileges of the one principal governor with the most sacred circumspection. For he divides the power of the rich, and calls off the great from falling with tenfold weight on the middle order placed beneath them. The middle order may be compared to a town, of which the opulent are forming the siege, and which the governor from without is hastening the relief. While the besiegers are in dread of an enemy over them, it is but natural to offer the townsmen the most specious terms; to flatter them with sounds, and amuse them with privileges; but if they once defeat the governor from behind, the walls of the town will be but a small defence to its inhabitants. What they may then expect, may be seen by turning our eyes to Holland, Genoa, or Venice, where the laws govern the poor, and the rich govern the law. I am then for, and would die for, monarchy, sacred monarchy; for if there be any thing sacred amongst men, it must be the anointed SOVEREIGN of his people, and every diminution of his power in war, or in peace, is an infringement upon the real liberties of the subject. The sounds of liberty, patriotism, and Britons, have already done much; it is to be hoped that the true sons of freedom will prevent them ever doing more. I have known many of those pretended champions for liberty in my time, yet do I not remember one that was not in his heart and in his family a tyrant.

My warmth, I found, had lengthened this harangue beyond the rules of good-breeding: but the impatience of my enter-

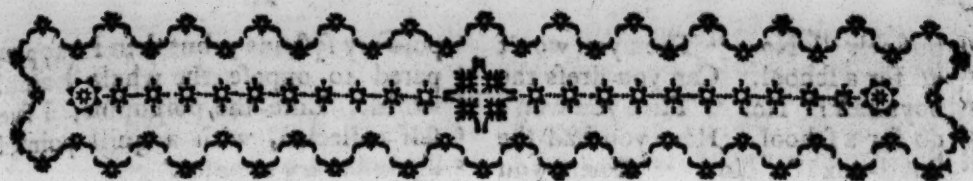
entertainer, who often strove to interrupt it, could be restrained no longer. 'What,' cried he, 'then I have been all this while entertaining a Jesuit in parson's clothes: but by all the coal mines of Cornwall, out he shall pack, if my name be Wilkinson.' I now found I had gone too far, and asked pardon for the warmth with which I had spoken. 'Pardon,' returned he in a fury: 'I think such principles demand ten thousand pardons. What give up liberty, property, and as the Gazetteer says, lie down to be saddled with wooden shoes! Sir, I insist upon your marching out of this house immediately, to prevent worse consequences. Sir, I insist upon it.' I was going to repeat my remonstrances; but just then we heard a footman's rap at the door, and the two ladies cried out, 'As sure as death, there is our master and mistress come home.' It seems, my entertainer was all this while only the butler, who, in his master's absence, had a mind to cut a figure, and be for a while the gentleman himself; and, to say the truth, he talked politicks as well as most country gentlemen do. But nothing could now exceed my confusion, upon seeing the gentleman and his lady enter; nor was their surprize, at finding such company and good cheer, less than ours. 'Gentlemen,' cried the real master of the house, to me and my companion, 'my wife and I are your most humble servants; but I protest this is so unexpected a favour, that we almost sink under the obligation.' However unexpected our company might be to them, theirs, I am sure, was still more so to us, and I was struck dumb with the apprehensions of my own absurdity, when, whom should I next see enter the room but my dear Miss Arabella Wilmot, who was formerly designed to be married to my son George; but whose match was broken off, as already related. As soon as she saw me, she flew to my arms with the utmost joy. 'My dear Sir,' cried she, 'to what happy accident is it that we owe so unexpected a visit? I am sure my uncle and aunt will be in raptures when they find they have got the good Doctor Primrose for their guest.' Upon hearing my name, the old gentleman and lady very politely stepped up, and

welcomed me with most cordial hospitality. Nor could they forbear smiling, upon being informed of the nature of my present visit: but the unfortunate butler, whom they at first seemed disposed to turn away, was at my intercession forgiven.

Mr. Arnold and his lady, to whom the house belonged now, insisted upon having the pleasure of my stay for some days, and as their niece, my charming pupil, whose mind, in some measure, had been formed under my own instructions, joined in their entreaties, I complied. That night I was shewn to a magnificent chamber, and the next morning early, Miss Wilmot desired to walk with me in the garden, which was decorated in the modern manner. After some time spent in pointing out the beauties of the place, she enquired, with seeming unconcern, when last I had heard from my son George. 'Alas! Madam,' cried I, 'he has now been near three years absent, without ever writing to his friends or me. Where he is I know not; perhaps I shall never see him or happiness more. No, my dear Madam, we shall never more see such pleasing hours as were once spent by our fire-side at Wakefield. My little family are now dispersing very fast, and poverty has brought not only want, but infamy upon us.' The good-natured girl let fall a tear at this account; but as I saw her possessed of too much sensibility, I forbore a more minute detail of our sufferings. It was, however, some consolation to me to find that time had made no alteration in her affections, and that she had rejected several matches that had been made her since our leaving her part of the country. She led me round all the extensive improvements of the place, pointing to the several walks and arbours, and at the same time catching from every object a hint for some new question relative to my son. In this manner we spent the forenoon, till the bell summoned us to dinner, where we found the manager of the strolling company that I mentioned before, who was come to dispose of tickets for the Fair Penitent, which was to be acted that evening; the part of Horatio by a young gentleman who had never appeared on any stage. He seemed to be very warm in the praise of the

new performer, and averred that he never saw any who bid so fair for excellence. Acting, he observed, was not learned in a day: 'But this gentleman,' continued he, 'seems born to tread the stage. His voice, his figure, and attitudes, are all admirable. We caught him up accidentally in our journey down.' This account in some measure excited our curiosity, and, at the entreaty of the ladies, I was prevailed upon to accompany them to the play-house, which was no other than a barn. As the company with which I went was incontestibly the chief of the place, we were received with the greatest respect, and placed in the front seat of the theatre; where we sat for some time with no small impatience to see Horatio make his appearance. The new performer advanced at last; and let parents think of my sensations by their own, when I found it was my unfortunate son. He was going to begin; when, turning his eyes upon the audience, he perceived Miss Wilmot and me, and stood at once speechless and immoveable. The actors behind the scene, who ascribed this pause to his natural timidity, attempted to encourage him; but instead of going on, he burst into a flood of tears, and retired off the stage. I don't

know what were my feelings on this occasion; for they succeeded with too much rapidity for description: but I was soon awaked from this disagreeable reverie by Miss Wilmot; who, pale and with a trembling voice, desired me to conduct her back to her uncle's. When got home, Mr. Arnold, who was as yet a stranger to our extraordinary behaviour, being informed that the new performer was my son, sent his coach, and an invitation, for him; and as he persisted in his refusal to appear again upon the stage, the players put another in his place, and we soon had him with us. Mr. Arnold gave him the kindest reception, and I received him with my usual transport: for I could never counterfeit a false resentment. Miss Wilmot's reception was mixed with seeming neglect, and yet I could perceive she acted a studied part. The tumult in her mind seemed not yet abated; she said twenty giddy things that looked like joy, and then laughed loud at her own want of meaning. At intervals she would take a sly peep at the glass, as if happy in the consciousness of irresistible beauty, and often would ask questions, without giving any manner of attention to the answers.



T H E

VICAR OF WAKEFIELD.

VOLUME THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

THE HISTORY OF A PHILOSOPHIC
VAGABOND, PURSUING NOVEL-
TY, BUT LOSING CONTENT.

FTER we had supped, Mrs. Arnold politely offered to send a couple of her footmen for my son's baggage, which he at first seemed to decline; but upon her pressing the request, he was obliged to inform her, that a stick and a wallet were all the moveable things upon this earth which he could boast of. 'Why, aye, my son,' cried I, 'you left me but poor, and poor I find you are come back; and yet I make no doubt you have seen a great deal of the world.'—'Yes, Sir,' replied my son, 'but travelling after fortune is not the way to secure her; and, indeed, of late, I have desisted from the pursuit.'—'I fancy, Sir,' cried Mrs. Arnold, 'that the account of your adventures would be amusing: the first part of them I have often heard from my niece; but could the company prevail for the rest, it would be an additional obligation.'—'Madam,' replied my son, 'I promise you the pleasure you have in hearing, will not be half so great as my vanity in repeating them, and yet in the whole narrative I can scarce promise you one adventure, as my account is rather of what I saw, than what I did. The first misfortune of my life, which you all knew, was great; but though

it distressed, it could not sink me. No person ever had a better knack at hoping than I. The less kind I found fortune at one time, the more I expected from her another; and being now at the bottom of her wheel, every new revolution might lift, but could not depress me. I proceeded, therefore, towards London in a fine morning, no way uneasy about to-morrow, but chearful as the birds that carolled by the road; and comforted myself with reflecting, that London was the mart where abilities of every kind were sure of meeting distinction and reward.

Upon my arrival in town, Sir, my first care was to deliver your letter of recommendation to our cousin, who was himself in little better circumstances than I. My first scheme, you know, Sir, was to be usher at an academy, and I asked his advice on the affair. Our cousin received the proposal with a true Sardonic grin. "Aye," cried he, "this is indeed a very pretty career that has been chalked out for you. I have been an usher to a boarding-school myself; and may I die by an anodyne necklace, but I had rather be an under-turnkey in Newgate. I was up early and late: I was brow-beat by the master, hated for my ugly face by the mistress, worried by the boys within, and never permitted to stir out to meet civility abroad. But are you sure you are fit for a school? Let me examine you a little. Have you been bred an apprentice to the
G 2 "business?"

“business?” No. “Then you won’t do for a school. Can you dress the boys hair?” No. “Then you won’t do for a school. Have you had the small-pox?” No. “Then you won’t do for a school. Can you lie three in a bed?” No. “Then you will never do for a school. Have you got a good stomach?” Yes. “Then you will by no means do for a school. No, Sir, if you are for a genteel easy profession, bind yourself seven years as an apprentice to turn a cutler’s wheel; but avoid a school by any means. Yet come,” continued he, “I see you are a lad of spirit and some learning, what do you think of commencing author, like me? You have read in books, no doubt, of men of genius starving at the trade: at present I’ll shew you forty very dull fellows about town that live by it in opulence. All honest jog-trot men, who go on smoothly and dully, and write history and politicks, and are praised: men, Sir, who, had they been bred cobblers, would all their lives have only mended shoes, but never made them.”

“Finding that there was no degree of gentility affixed to the character of an usher, I resolved to accept his proposal; and having the highest respect for literature, hailed the antiqua master of Grub-street with reverence. I thought it my glory to pursue a track which Dryden and Otway trod before me. I considered the goddess of this region as the parent of excellence; and however an intercourse with the world might give us good-sense, the poverty she granted I supposed to be the nurse of genius! Big with these reflections, I sat down, and finding that the best things remained to be said on the wrong side, I resolved to write a book that should be wholly new. I therefore dressed up three paradoxes with some ingenuity. They were false, indeed, but they were new. The jewels of truth have been so often imported by others, that nothing was left for me to import but some splendored things that at a distance looked every bit as well. Witness, you powers, what fancied importance sat perched upon my quill while I was writing. The whole learned world, I made no doubt, would rise to op-

pose my systems; but then I was prepared to oppose the whole learned world. Like the porcupine, I sat self-collected, with a quill pointed against every opposer.”

“Well said, my boy,” cried I, “and what subject did you treat upon? I hope you did not pass over the importance of monogamy. But I interrupt, go on; you published your paradoxes; well, and what did the learned world say to your paradoxes?”

“Sir,” replied my son, “the learned world said nothing to my paradoxes; nothing at all, Sir. Every man of them was employed in praising his friends and himself, or condemning his enemies; and unfortunately, as I had neither, I suffered the cruellest mortification, neglect.”

“As I was meditating one day in a coffee-house on the fate of my paradoxes, a little man happening to enter the room, placed himself in the box before me, and after some preliminary discourse, finding me to be a scholar, drew out a bundle of proposals, begging me to subscribe to a new edition he was going to give the world of Propertius, with notes. This demand necessarily produced a reply that I had no money; and that concession led him to enquire into the nature of my expectations. Finding that my expectations were just as great as my purse, “I see,” cried he, “you are unacquainted with the town. I’ll teach you a part of it. Look at these proposals; upon these very proposals I have subsisted very comfortably for twelve years. The moment a nobleman returns from his travels, a Creolian arrives from Jamaica, or a dowager from her country-seat, I strike for a subscription. I first besiege their hearts with flattery, and then pour in my proposals at the breach. If they subscribe readily the first time, I renew my request to beg a dedication fee. If they let me have that, I smite them once more for engraving their coat of arms at the top. Thus,” continued he, “I live by vanity, and laugh at it. But between ourselves, I am now too well known, I should be glad to borrow your face a bit: a nobleman of distinction has just returned from Italy; my face is familiar to his porter; but if you bring this copy of verses, my life for it”

‘ it you succeed, and we divide the “ spoil.”

‘ Bless us, George,’ cried I, ‘ and is this the employment of poets now ! Do men of their exalted talents thus stoop to beggary ! Can they so far disgrace their calling, as to make a vile traffic of praise for bread ?’

‘ O no, Sir,’ returned he, ‘ a true poet can never be so base ; for wherever there is genius there is pride. The creatures I now describe are only beggars in rhyme. The real poet, as he braves every hardship for fame, so he is equally a coward to contempt ; and none but those who are unworthy protection, condescend to solicit it.

‘ Having a mind too proud to stoop to such indignities, and yet a fortune too humble to hazard a second attempt for fame, I was now obliged to take a middle course, and write for bread. But I was unqualified for a profession where mere industry alone was to ensure success. I could not suppress my lurking passion for applause ; but usually consumed that time in efforts after excellence which takes up but little room, when it should have been more advantageously employed in the diffusive productions of fruitful mediocrity. My little piece would therefore come forth in the midst of periodical publications, unnoticed and unknown. The public were more importantly employed than to observe the easy simplicity of my style, or the harmony of my periods. Sheet after sheet was thrown off to oblivion. My essays were buried among the essays upon liberty, eastern tales, and cures for the bite of a mad dog ; while Philautus, Philalethes, Philelutheros, and Philanthropos, all wrote better, because they wrote faster than I.

‘ Now, therefore, I began to associate with none but disappointed authors, like myself, who praised, deplored, and despised each other. The satisfaction we found in every celebrated writer’s attempts, was inversely as their merits. I found that no genius in another could please me. My unfortunate paradoxes had entirely dried up that source of comfort. I could neither read nor write with satisfaction ; for excellence in another was my aversion, and writing was my trade.

‘ In the midst of these gloomy reflections, as I was one day sitting on a bench in St. James’s Park, a young gentleman of distinction, who had been my intimate acquaintance at the university, approached me. We saluted each other with some hesitation, he almost ashamed of being known to one who made so shabby an appearance, and I afraid of a repulse. But my suspicions soon vanished ; for Ned Thornhill was at the bottom a very good-natured fellow.’

‘ What did you say, George ?’ interrupted I. ‘ Thornhill ! was not that his name ? It can certainly be no other than my landlord.’—‘ Bless me,’ cried Mrs. Arnold, ‘ is Mr. Thornhill so near a neighbour of your’s ? He has long been a friend in our family, and we expect a visit from him shortly.’

‘ My friend’s first care,’ continued my son, ‘ was to alter my appearance by a very fine suit of his own clothes, and then I was admitted to his table upon the footing of half friend, half underling. My business was to attend him at auctions, to put him in spirits when he sat for his picture, to take the left-hand in his chariot when not filled by another, and to assist at tattering a kip, as the phrase was, when we had a mind for a frolick. Besides this, I had twenty other little employments in the family. I was to do many small things without bidding ; to carry the corkscrew ; to stand godfather to all the butler’s children ; to sing when I was bid ; to be never out of humour ; always to be humble ; and, if I could, to be very happy.

‘ In this honourable post, however, I was not without a rival. A captain of marines, who was formed for the place by nature, opposed me in my patron’s affections. His mother had been laundress to a man of quality, and thus he early acquired a taste for pimping and pedigree. As this gentleman made it the study of his life to be acquainted with lords, though he was dismissed from several for his stupidity ; yet he found many of them, who were as dull as himself, that permitted his assiduities. As flattery was his trade, he practised it with the easiest address imaginable ; but it came awkward and stiff from me ;

me; and as every day my patron's desire of flattery increased, so every hour, being better acquainted with his defects, I became more unwilling to give it. Thus I was once more fairly going to give up the field to the captain, when my friend found occasion for my assistance. This was nothing less than to fight a duel for him, with a gentleman whose sister it was pretended he had used ill. I readily complied with his request; and though I see you are displeased at my conduct, yet as it was a debt indispensibly due to friendship, I could not refuse. I undertook the affair, disarmed my antagonist, and soon after had the pleasure of finding that the lady was only a woman of the town, and the fellow her bully and a sharper. This piece of service was repaid with the warmest professions of gratitude; but as my friend was to leave town in a few days, he knew no other method of serving me, but by recommending me to his uncle Sir William Thornhill, and another nobleman of great distinction, who enjoyed a post under the government. When he was gone, my first care was to carry his recommendatory letter to his uncle, a man whose character for every virtue was universal, yet just. I was received by his servants with the most hospitable smiles; for the looks of the domesticks ever transmit their master's benevolence. Being shewn into a grand apartment, where Sir William soon came to me, I delivered my message and letter, which he read, and after pausing some minutes, "Pray, Sir," cried he, "inform me what you have done for my kinsman, to deserve this warm recommendation? But I suppose, Sir, I guess your merits, you have fought for him; and so you would expect a reward from me for being the instrument of his vices. I wish, sincerely wish, that my present refusal may be some punishment for your guilt; but still more, that it may be some inducement to your repentance." The severity of this rebuke I bore patiently, because I knew it was just. My whole expectations now, therefore, lay in my letter to the great man. As the doors of the nobility are almost ever beset with beggars, all ready to thrust in

some sly petition, I found it no easy matter to gain admittance. However, after bribing the servants with half my worldly fortune, I was at last shewn into a spacious apartment, my letter being previously sent up for his lordship's inspection. During this anxious interval I had full time to look round me. Every thing was grand and of happy contrivance; the paintings, the furniture, the gildings, petrified me with awe, and raised my idea of the owner. Ah, thought I to myself, how very great must the possessor of all these things be, who carries in his head the business of the state, and whose house displays half the wealth of the kingdom: sure his genius must be unfathomable! During these awful reflections I heard a step come heavily forward. Ah, this is the great man himself! No, it was only a chambermaid. Another foot was heard soon after. This must be he! No, it was only the great man's valet de chambre. At last his lordship actually made his appearance. "Are you," cried he, "the bearer of this here letter?" I answered with a bow. "I learn by this," continued he, "as how that —" But just at that instant a servant delivered him a card; and without taking farther notice, he went out of the room, and left me to digest my own happiness at leisure. I saw no more of him, till told by a footman that his lordship was going to his coach at the door. Down I immediately followed, and joined my voice to that of three or four more, who came, like me, to petition for favours. His lordship, however, went too fast for us, and was gaining his chariot door with large strides, when I hallooed out to know if I was to have any reply. He was by this time got in, and muttered an answer, half of which I only heard, the other half was lost in the rattling of his chariot wheels. I stood for some time with my neck stretched out, in the posture of one that was listening to catch the glorious sounds, till, looking round me, I found myself alone at his lordship's gate.

"My patience," continued my son, "was now quite exhausted: stung with the thousand indignities I had met with, I was willing to cast myself away,

away, and only wanted the gulph to receive me. I regarded myself as one of those vile things that nature designed should be thrown by into her lumber-room, there to perish in obscurity. I had still, however, half a guinea left, and of that I thought nature herself should not deprive me: but in order to be sure of this, I was resolved to go instantly and spend it while I had it, and then trust to occurrences for the rest. As I was going along with this resolution, it happened that Mr. Crispe's office seemed invitingly open to give me a welcome reception. In this office Mr. Crispe kindly offers all his majesty's subjects a generous promise of 30l. a year, for which promise all they give in return is their liberty for life, and permission to let him transport them to America as slaves. I was happy at finding a place where I could lose my fears in desperation, and entered this cell, for it had the appearance of one, with the devotion of a monastic. Here I found a number of poor creatures, all in circumstances like myself, expecting the arrival of Mr. Crispe, presenting a true epitome of English impatience. Each untractable soul at variance with fortune, wreaked her injuries on their own hearts: but Mr. Crispe at last came down, and all our murmurs were hushed. He deigned to regard me with an air of peculiar approbation, and indeed he was the first man who for a month past talked to me with smiles. After a few questions, he found I was fit for every thing in the world. He paused a while upon the properest means of providing for me, and slapping his forehead, as if he had found it, assured me, that there was at that time an embassy talked of from the synod of Pensylvania to the Chickasaw Indians, and that he would use his interest to get me made secretary. I knew in my own heart that the fellow lied, and yet his promise gave me pleasure, there was something so magnificent in the sound. I fairly, therefore, divided my half guinea, one half of which went to be added to his thirty thousand pounds, and with the other half I resolved to go to the next tavern, to be there more happy than he.

As I was going out with that resolution, I was met at the door by the captain of a ship, with whom I had formerly some little acquaintance, and he agreed to be my companion over a bowl of punch. As I never chose to make a secret of my circumstances, he assured me that I was upon the very point of ruin, in listening to the office-keeper's promises; for that he only designed to sell me to the plantations. "But," continued he, "I fancy you might by a much shorter voyage, be very easily put into a genteel way of bread. Take my advice. My ship sails tomorrow for Amsterdam: what if you go in her as a passenger? The moment you land, all you have to do is to teach the Dutchmen English, and I'll warrant you'll get pupils and money enough. I suppose you understand English," added he, "by this time, or the deuce is in it." I confidently assured him of that; but expressed a doubt whether the Dutch would be willing to learn English. He affirmed with an oath that they were fond of it to distraction; and upon that affirmation I agreed with his proposal, and embarked the next day to teach the Dutch English in Holland. The wind was fair, our voyage short, and after having paid my passage with half my moveables, I found myself, fallen as from the skies, a stranger in one of the principal streets of Amsterdam. In this situation I was unwilling to let any time pass unemployed in teaching. I addressed myself therefore to two or three of those I met, whose appearance seemed most promising; but it was impossible to make ourselves mutually understood. It was not till this very moment I recollected, that in order to teach Dutchmen English, it was necessary that they should first teach me Dutch. How I came to overlook so obvious an objection, is to me amazing; but certain it is I overlooked it.

This scheme thus blown up, I had some thoughts of fairly shipping back to England again; but happening into company with an Irish student, who was returning from Louvain, our conversation turned upon topics of literature (for, by the way, it may be observed, that I always forgot the meanness

‘ meanness of my circumstances when I could converse upon such subjects ;) from him I learned, that there were not two men in his whole university who understood Greek. This amazed me. I instantly resolved to travel to Louvain, and there live by teaching Greek ; and in this design I was heartened by my brother student, who threw out some hints that a fortune might be got by it.

‘ I set boldly forward the next morning. Every day lessened the burden of my moveables, like *Æsop* and his basket of bread ; for I paid them for my lodgings to the Dutch as I travelled on. When I came to Louvain, I was resolved not to go sneaking to the lower professors, but openly tendered my talents to the principal himself. I went, had admittance, and offered him my service as a master of the Greek language, which I had been told was a desideratum in his university. The principal seemed at first to doubt of my abilities ; but of these I offered to convince him, by turning a part of any Greek author he should fix upon into Latin. Finding me perfectly earnest in my proposal, he addressed me thus : “ You see me, young man,” continued he ; “ I never learned Greek, and I don’t find that I have ever missed it. I have had a doctor’s cap and gown without Greek ; I have ten thousand florins a year without Greek ; I eat heartily without Greek ; and in short,” continued he, “ as I don’t know Greek, I do not believe there is any good in it.”

‘ I was now too far from home to think of returning ; so I resolved to go forward. I had some knowledge of music, with a tolerable voice ; I now turned what was once my amusement into a present means of subsistence. I passed among the harmless peasants of Flanders, and among such of the French as were poor enough to be very merry ; for I ever found them sprightly in proportion to their wants. Whenever I approached a peasant’s house, towards night-fall I played one of my most merry tunes, and that procured me not only a lodging, but subsistence for the next day. I once or twice attempted to play for people of fashion ; but they always thought my performance odious, and

‘ never rewarded me even with a trifle. This was to me the more extraordinary, as whenever I used in better days to play for company, when playing was my amusement, my music never failed to throw them into raptures, and the ladies especially ; but as it was now my only means, it was received with contempt : a proof how ready the world is to under-rate those talents by which a man is supported.

‘ In this manner, I proceeded to Paris, with no design but just to look about me, and then to go forward. The people of Paris are much fonder of strangers that have money, than of those that have wit. As I could not boast much of either, I was no great favourite. After walking about the town four or five days, and seeing the outsidings of the best houses, I was preparing to leave this retreat of venal hospitality ; when passing through one of the principal streets, whom should I meet but our cousin, to whom you first recommended me ! This meeting was very agreeable to me, and I believe not displeasing to him. He enquired into the nature of my journey to Paris, and informed me of his own business there, which was to collect pictures, medals, intaglios, and antiques of all kinds, for a gentleman in London, who had just stepped into taste and a large fortune. I was the more surprized at seeing our cousin pitched upon for this office, as he himself had often assured me he knew nothing of the matter. Upon asking how he had been taught the art of *connoissance* so very suddenly, he assured me that nothing was more easy. The whole secret consisted in a strict adherence to two rules : the one always to observe, that the picture might have been better if the painter had taken more pains ; and the other to praise the works of *Pietro Perugino*. “ But,” says he, “ as I once taught you how to be an author in London, I’ll now undertake to instruct you in the art of picture-buying in Paris.”

‘ With this proposal I very readily closed, as it was living, and now all my ambition was to live. I went therefore to his lodgings, improved my dress by his assistance, and after some time, accompanied him to auc-

tions

tions of pictures, where the English gentry were expected to be purchasers. I was not a little surprized at his intimacy with people of the best fashion, who referred themselves to his judgment, upon every picture or medal, as an unerring standard of taste. He made very good use of my assistance upon these occasions; for when asked his opinion, he would gravely take me aside, and ask mine, thrug, look wise, return, and assure the company that he could give no opinion upon an affair of so much importance. Yet there was sometimes an occasion for a more supported assurance. I remember to have seen him, after giving his opinion that the colouring of a picture was not mellow enough, very deliberately take a brush with brown varnish, that was accidentally lying by, and rub it over the piece with great composure before all the company, and then ask if he had not improved the tints.

When he had finished his commission in Paris, he left me strongly recommended to several men of distinction, as a person very proper for a travelling tutor; and after some time I was employed in that capacity by a gentleman who brought his ward to Paris, in order to set him forward on his tour through Europe. I was to be the young gentleman's governor, but with a promise that he should always govern himself. My pupil in fact understood the art of guiding in money concerns, much better than I. He was heir to a fortune of about two hundred thousand pounds, left him by an uncle in the West Indies; and his guardians, to qualify him for the management of it, had bound him apprentice to an attorney. Thus avarice was his prevailing passion: all his questions on the road were how much money might be saved; which was the least expensive course of travel; whether any thing could be bought, that would turn to account when disposed of again in London. Such curiosities on the way as could be seen for nothing he was ready enough to look at; but if the sight of them was to be paid for, he usually asserted that he had been told they were not worth seeing. He never paid a bill that he would not observe,

how amazingly expensive travelling was; and all this though he was not yet twenty-one. When arrived at Leghorn, as we took a walk to look at the port and shipping, he enquired the expence of the passage by sea home to England. This he was informed was but a trifle, compared to his returning by land, he was therefore unable to withstand the temptation; so paying me the small part of my salary that was due, he took leave, and embarked with only one attendant for London.

I now therefore was left once more upon the world at large; but then it was a thing I was used to. However, my skill in music could avail me nothing in a country where every peasant was a better musician than I; but by this time I had acquired another talent, which answered my purpose as well, and this was a skill in disputation. In all the foreign universities and convents, there are upon certain days philosophical theses maintained against every adventitious disputant; for which, if the champion opposes with any dexterity, he can claim a gratuity in money, a dinner, and a bed for one night. In this manner, therefore, I fought my way towards England; walked along from city to city; examined mankind more nearly; and, if I may so express it, saw both sides of the picture. My remarks, however, are but few: I found that monarchy was the best government for the poor to live in, and commonwealths for the rich. I found that riches in general were in every country another name for freedom; and that no man is so fond of liberty himself, as not to be desirous of subjecting the will of some individuals in society to his own.

Upon my arrival in England, I resolved to pay my respects first to you, and then to enlist as a volunteer in the first expedition that was going forward; but on my journey down, my resolutions were changed, by meeting an old acquaintance, who I found belonged to a company of comedians, that were going to make a summer campaign in the country. The company seemed not much to disapprove of me for an associate. They all, however, apprized me of the importance

‘ meanness of my circumstances when I could converse upon such subjects ;) from him I learned, that there were not two men in his whole university who understood Greek. This amazed me. I instantly resolved to travel to Louvain, and there live by teaching Greek ; and in this design I was heartened by my brother student, who threw out some hints that a fortune might be got by it.

‘ I set boldly forward the next morning. Every day lessened the burden of my moveables, like *Æsop* and his basket of bread ; for I paid them for my lodgings to the Dutch as I travelled on. When I came to Louvain, I was resolved not to go sneaking to the lower professors, but openly tendered my talents to the principal himself. I went, had admittance, and offered him my service as a master of the Greek language, which I had been told was a desideratum in his university. The principal seemed at first to doubt of my abilities ; but of these I offered to convince him, by turning a part of any Greek author he should fix upon into Latin. Finding me perfectly earnest in my proposal, he addressed me thus : “ You see me, young man,” continued he ; “ I never learned Greek, and I don’t find that I have ever missed it. I have had a doctor’s cap and gown without Greek ; I have ten thousand florins a year without Greek ; I eat heartily without Greek ; and in short,” continued he, “ as I don’t know Greek, I do not believe there is any good in it.”

‘ I was now too far from home to think of returning ; so I resolved to go forward. I had some knowledge of music, with a tolerable voice ; I now turned what was once my amusement into a present means of subsistence. I passed among the harmless peasants of Flanders, and among such of the French as were poor enough to be very merry ; for I ever found them sprightly in proportion to their wants. Whenever I approached a peasant’s house, towards night-fall I played one of my most merry tunes, and that procured me not only a lodging, but subsistence for the next day. I once or twice attempted to play for people of fashion ; but they always thought my performance odious, and

‘ never rewarded me even with a trifle. This was to me the more extraordinary, as whenever I used in better days to play for company, when playing was my amusement, my music never failed to throw them into raptures, and the ladies especially ; but as it was now my only means, it was received with contempt : a proof how ready the world is to under-rate those talents by which a man is supported.

‘ In this manner, I proceeded to Paris, with no design but just to look about me, and then to go forward. The people of Paris are much fonder of strangers that have money, than of those that have wit. As I could not boast much of either, I was no great favourite. After walking about the town four or five days, and seeing the outsidings of the best houses, I was preparing to leave this retreat of venal hospitality ; when passing through one of the principal streets, whom should I meet but our cousin, to whom you first recommended me ! This meeting was very agreeable to me, and I believe not displeasing to him. He enquired into the nature of my journey to Paris, and informed me of his own business there, which was to collect pictures, medals, intaglios, and antiques of all kinds, for a gentleman in London, who had just stepped into taste and a large fortune. I was the more surprized at seeing our cousin pitched upon for this office, as he himself had often assured me he knew nothing of the matter. Upon asking how he had been taught the art of *connoissance* so very suddenly, he assured me that nothing was more easy. The whole secret consisted in a strict adherence to two rules : the one always to observe, that the picture might have been better if the painter had taken more pains ; and the other to praise the works of *Pietro Perugino*. “ But,” says he, “ as I once taught you how to be an author in London, I’ll now undertake to instruct you in the art of picture-buying in Paris.”

‘ With this proposal I very readily closed, as it was living, and now all my ambition was to live. I went therefore to his lodgings, improved my dress by his assistance, and after some time, accompanied him to auc-

tions

tions of pictures, where the English gentry were expected to be purchasers. I was not a little surprized at his intimacy with people of the best fashion, who referred themselves to his judgment, upon every picture or medal, as an unerring standard of taste. He made very good use of my assistance upon these occasions; for when asked his opinion, he would gravely take me aside, and ask mine, thrug, look wise, return, and assure the company that he could give no opinion upon an affair of so much importance. Yet there was sometimes an occasion for a more supported assurance. I remember to have seen him, after giving his opinion that the colouring of a picture was not mellow enough, very deliberately take a brush with brown varnish, that was accidentally lying by, and rub it over the piece with great composure before all the company, and then ask if he had not improved the tints.

When he had finished his commission in Paris, he left me strongly recommended to several men of distinction, as a person very proper for a travelling tutor; and after some time I was employed in that capacity by a gentleman who brought his ward to Paris, in order to set him forward on his tour through Europe. I was to be the young gentleman's governor, but with a promise that he should always govern himself. My pupil in fact understood the art of guiding in money concerns, much better than I. He was heir to a fortune of about two hundred thousand pounds, left him by an uncle in the West Indies; and his guardians, to qualify him for the management of it, had bound him apprentice to an attorney. Thus avarice was his prevailing passion: all his questions on the road were how much money might be saved; which was the least expensive course of travel; whether any thing could be bought that would turn to account when disposed of again in London. Such curiosities on the way as could be seen for nothing he was ready enough to look at; but if the sight of them was to be paid for, he usually asserted that he had been told they were not worth seeing. He never paid a bill that he would not observe,

how amazingly expensive travelling was; and all this though he was not yet twenty-one. When arrived at Leghorn, as we took a walk to look at the port and shipping, he enquired the expence of the passage by sea home to England. This he was informed was but a trifle, compared to his returning by land, he was therefore unable to withstand the temptation; so paying me the small part of my salary that was due, he took leave, and embarked with only one attendant for London.

I now therefore was left once more upon the world at large; but then it was a thing I was used to. However, my skill in music could avail me nothing in a country where every peasant was a better musician than I; but by this time I had acquired another talent, which answered my purpose as well, and this was a skill in disputation. In all the foreign universities and convents, there are upon certain days philosophical theses maintained against every adventitious disputant; for which, if the champion opposes with any dexterity, he can claim a gratuity in money, a dinner, and a bed for one night. In this manner, therefore, I fought my way towards England; walked along from city to city; examined mankind more nearly; and, if I may so express it, saw both sides of the picture. My remarks, however, are but few: I found that monarchy was the best government for the poor to live in, and commonwealths for the rich. I found that riches in general were in every country another name for freedom; and that no man is so fond of liberty himself, as not to be desirous of subjecting the will of some individuals in society to his own.

Upon my arrival in England, I resolved to pay my respects first to you, and then to enlist as a volunteer in the first expedition that was going forward; but on my journey down, my resolutions were changed, by meeting an old acquaintance, who I found belonged to a company of comedians, that were going to make a summer campaign in the country. The company seemed not much to disapprove of me for an associate. They all, however, apprized me of the impor-

H

tance

‘tance of the task at which I aimed ;
 ‘that the public was a many-headed
 ‘monster, and that only such as had very
 ‘good heads could please it : that act-
 ‘ing was not to be learnt in a day ;
 ‘and that without some traditional
 ‘shrugs, which had been on the stage,
 ‘and only on the stage, these hundred
 ‘years, I could never pretend to please.
 ‘The next difficulty was in fitting me
 ‘with parts, as almost every character
 ‘was in keeping. I was driven for
 ‘some time from one character to ano-
 ‘ther, till at last Horatio was fixed
 ‘upon, which the presence of the pre-
 ‘sent company has happily hindered
 ‘me from acting.’

CHAP. II.

THE SHORT CONTINUANCE OF
 FRIENDSHIP AMONGST THE VI-
 CIOUS, WHICH IS COEVAL ONLY
 WITH MUTUAL SATISFACTION.

MY son's account was too long to
 be delivered at once ; the first
 part of it was begun that night, and
 he was concluding the rest after dinner
 the next day, when the appearance of
 Mr. Thornhill's equipage at the door
 seemed to make a pause in the general
 satisfaction. The butler, who was
 now become my friend in the family,
 informed me with a whisper, that the
 squire had already made some overtures
 to Miss Wilmot, and that her aunt and
 uncle seemed highly to approve the
 match. Upon Mr. Thornhill's enter-
 ing, he seemed, at seeing my son and
 me, to start back ; but I readily im-
 puted that to surprize, and not displea-
 sure. However, upon our advancing to
 salute him, he returned our greeting
 with the most apparent candour ; and
 after a short time, his presence seemed
 only to increase the general good-hu-
 mour.

After tea he called me aside, to en-
 quire after my daughter ; but upon my
 informing him that my enquiry was
 unsuccessful, he seemed greatly sur-
 prized ; adding, that he had been since
 frequently at my house, in order to
 comfort the rest of the family, whom
 he left perfectly well. He then asked
 if I had communicated her misfortune
 to Miss Wilmot or my son : and upon
 my replying that I had not told them as

yet, he greatly approved my prudence
 and precaution, desiring me by all
 means to keep it a secret : ‘For at best,’
 cried he, ‘it is but divulging one's own
 ‘infamy ; and perhaps Miss Livy may
 ‘not be so guilty as we all imagine.’
 We were here interrupted by a servant,
 who came to ask the squire in, to stand
 up at country-dances ; so that he left
 me quite pleased with the interest he
 seemed to take in my concerns. His
 addresses, however, to Miss Wilmot,
 were too obvious to be mistaken : and
 yet she seemed not perfectly pleased,
 but bore them rather in compliance to
 the will of her aunt, than from real in-
 clination. I had even the satisfaction
 to see her lavish some kind looks upon
 my unfortunate son, which the other
 could neither extort by his fortune nor
 assiduity. Mr. Thornhill's seeming
 composure, however, not a little sur-
 prized me : we had now continued here
 a week, at the pressing instances of Mr.
 Arnold ; but each day the more ten-
 derness Miss Wilmot shewed my son,
 Mr. Thornhill's friendship seemed pro-
 portionably to increase for him.

He had formerly made us the most
 kind assurances of using his interest to
 serve the family ; but now his gene-
 rosity was not confined to promises a-
 lone : the morning I designed for my
 departure, Mr. Thornhill came to me
 with looks of real pleasure, to inform
 me of a piece of service he had done for
 his friend George. This was nothing
 less than his having procured him an
 ensign's commission in one of the regi-
 ments that was going to the West In-
 dies, for which he had promised but one
 hundred pounds, his interest being suf-
 ficient to get an abatement of the other
 two : ‘As for this trifling piece of ser-
 ‘vice,’ continued the young gentle-
 man, ‘I desire no other reward but the
 ‘pleasure of having served my friend ;
 ‘and as for the hundred pounds to be
 ‘paid, if you are unable to raise it
 ‘yourselves, I will advance it, and you
 ‘shall repay me at your leisure.’ This
 was a favour we wanted words to ex-
 press our sense of : I readily therefore
 gave my bond for the money, and tes-
 tified as much gratitude as if I never in-
 tended to pay.

George was to depart for town the
 next day to secure his commission, in
 pursuance of his generous patron's di-
 rections, who judged it highly expe-
 dient

dient to use dispatch, lest in the mean time another should step in with more advantageous proposals. The next morning, therefore, our young soldier was early prepared for his departure, and seemed the only person among us that was not affected by it. Neither the fatigues and dangers he was going to encounter, nor the friends and mistress, for Miss Wilmot actually loved him, he was leaving behind, any way damped his spirits. After he had taken leave of the rest of the company, I gave him all that I had, my blessing: 'And now, my boy,' cried I, 'thou art going to fight for thy country; remember how thy brave grandfather fought for his sacred king, when loyalty among Britons was a virtue. Go, my boy; and imitate him in all but his misfortunes; if it was a misfortune to die with Lord Falkland. Go, my boy; and if you fall, though distant, exposed, and unwept by those that love you, the most precious tears are those with which Heaven bedews the unburied head of a soldier.'

The next morning I took leave of the good family, that had been kind enough to entertain me so long, not without several expressions of gratitude to Mr. Thornhill for his late bounty. I left them in the enjoyment of all that happiness which affluence and good-breeding procure, and returned towards home, despairing of ever finding my daughter more, but sending a sigh to Heaven to spare and forgive her. I was now come within about twenty miles of home, having hired a horse to carry me, as I was yet but weak, and comforted myself with the hopes of soon seeing all I held dearest upon earth. But the night coming on, I put up at a little public-house by the road side, and asked for the landlord's company over a pint of wine. We sat beside his kitchen-fire, which was the best room in the house, and chatted on politicks and the news of the country. We happened, among other topics, to talk of young Squire Thornhill, who the host assured me was hated as much as his uncle Sir William, who sometimes came down to the country, was loved. He went on to observe, that he made it his whole study to betray the daughters of such as received him to their houses, and after a fortnight or three weeks pos-

session, turned them out unrewarded and abandoned to the world. As we continued our discourse in this manner, his wife, who had been out to get change, returned, and perceiving that her husband was enjoying a pleasure in which she was not a sharer, she asked him, in an angry tone, what he did there; to which he only replied in an ironical way, by drinking her health: 'Mr. Symmonds,' cried she, 'you use me very ill, and I'll bear it no longer. Here three parts of the business is left for me to do, and the fourth left unfinished; while you do nothing but soak with the guests all day long, whereas if a spoonful of liquor were to cure me of a fever, I never touch a drop.' I now found what she would be at, and immediately poured out a glass, which she received with a curtsy, and drinking towards my good health, 'Sir,' resumed she, 'it is not so much for the value of the liquor I am angry, but one cannot help it, when the house is going out of the windows. If the customers or guests are to be dunned, all the burden lies upon my back; he'd as lief eat that glass as budge after them himself. There now above stairs, we have a young woman who has come to take up her lodgings here, and I don't believe she has got any money by her over civility. I am certain she is very slow of payment, and I wish she were put in mind of it.'—'What signifies minding her,' cried the host; 'if she be slow, she is sure.'—'I don't know that,' replied the wife; 'but I know that I am sure she has been here a fortnight, and we have not yet seen the cross of her money.'—'I suppose, my dear,' cried he, 'we shall have it all in a lump.'—'In a lump,' cried the other, 'I hope we may get it any way; and that I am resolved we will this very night, or out she, tramps, bag and baggage.'—'Consider, my dear,' cried the husband, 'she is a gentlewoman, and deserves more respect.'—'As for the matter of that,' returned the hostess, 'gentle or simple, out she shall pack with a fuslarara. Gentry may be good things where they take; but for my part I never saw much good of them at the sign of the Harrow.' Thus saying, she ran up a narrow flight of

stairs that went from the kitchen to a room over head, and I soon perceived by the loudness of her voice, and the bitterness of her reproaches, that no money was to be had from her lodger. I could hear the remonstrances very distinctly: 'Out, I say; pack 'out this moment! tramp, thou infamous strumpet, or I'll give thee a mark thou won't be the better for these three months. What! you trumpery, to come and take up an honest house, without cross or coin to bless yourself with; come along I say.'—'O dear Madam,' cried the stranger; 'pity me, pity a poor abandoned creature for one night, and death will soon do the rest.' I instantly knew the voice of my poor ruined child Olivia. I flew to her rescue, while the woman was dragging her along by her hair, and I caught the dear forlorn wretch in my arms. 'Welcome, any way welcome, my dearest lost one, my treasure, to your poor old father's bosom. Though the vicious forsake thee, there is yet one in the world that will never forsake thee: though thou hast ten thousand crimes to answer for, he will forget them all.'—'O my own dear—' for minutes she could say no more, 'my own dearest good papa! Could angels be kinder! How do I deserve so much! The villain, I hate him and myself to be a reproach to so much goodness. You can't forgive me. I know you can't.'—'Yes, my child, from my heart I do forgive thee! Only repent, and we both shall yet be happy. We shall see many pleasant days yet, my Olivia.'—'Ah! never, Sir, never. The rest of my wretched life must be infamy abroad, and shame at home. But, alas! papa, you look much paler than you used to do. Could such a thing as I am give you so much uneasiness? Sure you have too much wisdom to take the miseries of my guilt upon yourself.'—'Our wisdom, young woman,' replied I. 'Ah, why so cold a name, papa?' cried she. 'This is the first time you ever called me by so cold a name.'—'I ask pardon, my darling,' returned I; 'but I was going to observe, that wisdom makes but a slow defence against trouble, though at last a sure one.'

The landlady now returned to know if we did not chuse a more genteel ap-

partment; to which assenting, we were shewn a room where we could converse more freely. After we had talked ourselves into some degree of tranquillity, I could not avoid desiring some account of the gradations that led to her present wretched situation. 'That villain, Sir,' said she, 'from the first day of our meeting; made me honourable, though private, proposals.' 'Villain indeed,' cried I; 'and yet it in some measure surprizes me, how a person of Mr. Burchell's good-sense and seeming honour, could be guilty of such deliberate baseness, and thus step into a family to undo it.'

'My dear papa,' returned my daughter, 'you labour under a strange mistake. Mr. Burchell never attempted to deceive me. Instead of that, he took every opportunity of privately admonishing me against the artifices of Mr. Thornhill, who I now find was even worse than he represented him.'—'Mr. Thornhill!' interrupted I, 'can it be?'—'Yes, Sir,' returned she, 'it was Mr. Thornhill who seduced me, who employed the two ladies, as he called them, but who in fact were abandoned women of the town, without breeding or pity, to decoy us up to London. Their artifices, you may remember, would have certainly succeeded but for Mr. Burchell's letter, who directed those reproaches at them, which we all applied to ourselves. How he came to have so much influence as to defeat their intentions, still remains a secret to me; but I am convinced he was ever our warmest, sincerest friend.'

'You amaze me, my dear,' cried I; 'but now I find my first suspicions of Mr. Thornhill's baseness were too well grounded: but he can triumph in security; for he is rich, and we are poor. But tell me, my child; sure it was no small temptation that could thus obliterate all the impressions of such an education, and so virtuous a disposition as thine?'

'Indeed, Sir,' replied she, 'he owes all his triumph to the desire I had of making him, and not myself, happy. I knew that the ceremony of our marriage, which was privately performed by a popish priest, was no way binding, and that I had nothing to trust to but his honour.'—'What,'

inter-

interrupted I, 'and were you indeed married by a priest in orders?'—'Indeed, Sir, we were,' replied she, 'though we were both sworn to conceal his name.'—'Why then, my child, come to my arms again, and now you are a thousand times more welcome than before; for you are now his wife to all intents and purposes; nor can all the laws of man, though written upon tables of adamant, lessen the force of that sacred connection.'

'Alas, papa,' replied she, 'you are but little acquainted with his villainies: he has been married already, by the same priest, to six or eight wives more, whom, like me, he has deceived and abandoned.'

'Has he so?' cried I, 'then we must hang the priest, and you shall inform against him to-morrow.'—'But, Sir,' returned she, 'will that be right, when I am sworn to secrecy?'—'My dear,' I replied, 'if you have made such a promise, I cannot, nor will I tempt you to break it. Even though it may benefit the public, you must not inform against him.' In all human institutions, a smaller evil is allowed to procure a greater good; as in politicks, a province may be given away to secure a kingdom; in medicine, a limb may be lopped off, to preserve the body. But in religion, the law is written, and inflexibly, never to do evil. And this law, my child, is right: for otherwise, if we commit a smaller evil, to procure a greater good, certain guilt would be thus incurred, in expectation of contingent advantage. And though the advantage should certainly follow, yet the interval between commission and advantage, which is allowed to be guilty, may be that in which we are called away to answer for the things we have done, and the volume of human actions is closed for ever. But I interrupt you, my dear; go on.'

The very next morning, continued she, 'I found what little expectation I was to have from his sincerity. That very morning he introduced me to two unhappy women more, whom, like me, he had deceived, but who lived in contented prostitution. I loved him too tenderly to bear such rivals in his af-

fections, and strove to forget my infamy in a tumult of pleasures. With this view, I danced, dressed, and talked; but still was unhappy. The gentlemen who visited there told me every moment of the power of my charms, and this only contributed to increase my melancholy, as I had thrown all their power quite away. Thus each day I grew more pensive, and he more insolent, till at last the monster had the assurance to offer me to a young baronet of his acquaintance. Need I describe, Sir, how his ingratitude stung me. My answer to this proposal was almost madness. I desired to part. As I was going, he offered me a purse; but I flung it at him with indignation, and burst from him in a rage, that for a while kept me insensible of the miseries of my situation. But I soon looked round me, and saw myself a vile, abject, guilty thing, without one friend in the world to apply to. Just in that interval, a stage-coach happening to pass by, I took a place, it being my only aim to be driven at a distance from a wretch I despised and detested. I was set down here; where, since my arrival, my own anxiety, and this woman's unkindness, have been my only companions. The hours of pleasure that I have passed with my mama and sister, now grow painful to me. Their sorrows are much; but mine are greater than theirs; for mine are mixed with guilt and infamy.'

'Have patience, my child,' cried I, 'and I hope things will yet be better. Take some repose to-night, and to-morrow I'll carry you home to your mother and the rest of the family, from whom you will receive a kind reception. Poor woman, this has gone to her heart; but she loves you still, Olivia, and will forget it.'

CHAP. III.

OFFENCES ARE EASILY PARDONED WHERE THERE IS LOVE AT BOTTOM.

THE next morning I took my daughter behind me, and set out on my return home. As we travelled along, I strove, by every persuasion, to calm

calm her sorrows and fears, and to arm her with resolution to bear the presence of her offended mother. I took every opportunity, from the prospect of a fine country, through which we passed, to observe how much kinder Heaven was to us, than we to each other; and that the misfortunes of nature's making were but very few. I assured her, that she should never perceive any change in my affections, and that during my life, which yet might be long, she might depend upon a guardian and an instructor. I armed her against the censures of the world, shewed her that books were sweet unrepublishing companions to the miserable, and that if they could not bring us to enjoy life, they would at least teach us to endure it.

The hired horse that we rode was to be put up that night at an inn by the way, within about five miles from my house; and as I was willing to prepare my family for my daughter's reception, I determined to leave her that night at the inn, and to return for her, accompanied by my daughter Sophia, early the next morning. It was night before we reached our appointed stage: however, after seeing her provided with a decent apartment, and having ordered the hostess to prepare proper refreshments, I kissed her, and proceeded towards home. And now my heart caught new sensations of pleasure, the nearer I approached that peaceful mansion. As a bird that had been frightened from its nest, my affections out-went my haste, and hovered round my little fire-side, with all the rapture of expectation. I called up the many fond things I had to say, and anticipated the welcome I was to receive. I already felt my wife's tender embrace, and smiled at the joy of my little ones. As I walked but slowly, the night waned apace. The labourers of the day were all retired to rest; the lights were out in every cottage; no sounds were heard but of the shrilling cock, and the deep-mouthed watch-dog, at hollow distance. I approached my abode of pleasure, and before I was within a furlong of the place, our honest mastiff came running to welcome me.

It was now near midnight that I came to knock at my door: all was still and silent; my heart dilated with unutterable happiness; when, to my

amazement, I saw the house bursting out in a blaze of fire, and every aperture red with conflagration! I gave a loud convulsive out-cry, and fell upon the pavement insensible. This alarmed my son, who had till this been asleep, and he perceiving the flames, instantly waked my wife and daughter, and all running out, naked, and wild with apprehension, recalled me to life with their anguish. But it was only to objects of new terror; for the flames had by this time caught the roof of our dwelling; part after part continuing to fall in, while the family stood with silent agony, looking on, as if they enjoyed the blaze. I gazed upon them and upon it by turns, and then looked round me for my two little ones; but they were not to be seen. O misery! 'Where,' cried I, 'where are my little ones?'—'They are burnt to death in the flames,' says my wife calmly, 'and I will die with them.'—That moment I heard the cry of the babes within, who were just awaked by the fire, and nothing could have stopped me. 'Where, where are my children?' cried I, rushing through the flames, and bursting the door of the chamber in which they were confined, 'Where are my little ones?'—'Here, dear papa; here we are,' cried they together, while the flames were just catching the bed where they lay. I caught them both in my arms, and snatched them through the fire as fast as possible, while just as I was got out, the roof sunk in. 'Now,' cried I, holding up my children, 'now let the flames burn on, and all my possessions perish. Here they are, I have saved my treasure. Here, my dearest, here are our treasures, and we shall yet be happy.' We kissed our little darlings a thousand times, they clasped us round the neck, and seemed to share our transports, while their mother laughed and wept by turns.

I now stood a calm spectator of the flames, and after some time, began to perceive that my arm to the shoulder was scorched in a terrible manner. It was therefore out of my power to give my son any assistance, either in attempting to save our goods, or preventing the flames spreading to our corn. By this time, the neighbours were alarmed, and came running to our assistance; but all they could do was to stand, like

the spectators of the calamity. My goods, among which were the notes I had reserved for my daughters fortunes, were entirely consumed, except a box, with some papers, that stood in the kitchen, and two or three things more of little consequence, which my son brought away in the beginning. The neighbours contributed, however, what they could to lighten our distress. They brought us clothes, and furnished one of our outhouses with kitchen utensils; so that by day-light we had another, though a wretched dwelling to retire to. My honest next neighbour, and his children, were not the least assiduous in providing us with every thing necessary, and offering whatever consolation untutored benevolence could suggest.

When the fears of my family had subsided, curiosity to know the cause of my long stay began to take place; having therefore informed them of every particular, I proceeded to prepare them for the reception of our lost one, and though we had nothing but wretchedness now to impart, I was willing to procure her a welcome to what we had. This task would have been more difficult but for our recent calamity, which had humbled my wife's pride, and blunted it by more poignant afflictions. Being unable to go for my poor child myself, as my arm grew very painful, I sent my son and daughter, who soon returned, supporting the wretched delinquent, who had not the courage to look up at her mother, whom no instructions of mine could persuade to a perfect reconciliation; for women have a much stronger sense of female error than men. 'Ah, Madam,' cried her mother, 'this is but a poor place you are come to after so much finery. My daughter Sophy and I can afford but little entertainment to persons who have kept company only with people of distinction. Yes, Miss Livy, your poor father and I have suffered very much of late; but I hope Heaven will forgive you.' During this reception, the unhappy victim stood pale and trembling, unable to weep or to reply; but I could not continue a silent spectator of her distress; wherefore, assuming a degree of severity in my voice and manner, which was ever followed with instant submission, 'I entreat, woman, that my words may be now

marked once for all: I have here brought you back a poor deluded wanderer; her return to duty demands the revival of our tenderness. The real hardships of life are now coming fast upon us, let us not therefore increase them by dissension among each other. If we live harmoniously together, we may yet be contented, as there are enough of us to shut out the censuring world, and keep each other in countenance. The kindness of Heaven is promised to the penitent, and let ours be directed by the example. Heaven, we are assured, is much more pleased to view a repentant sinner, than ninety-nine persons who have supported a course of undeviating rectitude. And this is right; for that single effort by which we stop short in the down-hill path to perdition, is itself a greater exertion of virtue, than an hundred acts of justice.'

CHAP. IV.

NONE BUT THE GUILTY CAN BE LONG AND COMPLETELY MISERABLE.

SOME assiduity was now required to make our present abode as convenient as possible, and we were soon again qualified to enjoy our former serenity. Being disabled myself from assisting my son in our usual occupations, I read to my family from the few books that were saved, and particularly from such as, by amusing the imagination, contributed to ease the heart. Our good neighbours too came every day with the kindest condolence, and fixed a time in which they were all to assist at repairing my former dwelling. Honest Farmer Williams was not last among these visitors; but heartily offered his friendship. He would even have renewed his addresses to my daughter; but she rejected them in such a manner as totally repress his future solicitations. Her grief seemed formed for continuing, and she was the only person of our little society that a week did not restore to cheerfulness. She now lost that unblushing innocence which once taught her to respect herself, and to seek pleasure by pleasing.

Anxiety

Anxiety had now taken strong possession of her mind, her beauty began to be impaired with her constitution, and neglect still more contributed to diminish it. Every tender epithet bestowed on her sister brought a pang to her heart and a tear to her eye; and as one vice, though cured, ever plants others where it has been, so her former guilt, though driven out by repentance, left jealousy and envy behind. I strove a thousand ways to lessen her care, and even forgot my own pain in a concern for her's, collecting such amusing passages of history, as a strong memory and some reading could suggest. 'Our happiness, my dear,' I would say, 'is in the power of One who can bring it about a thousand unforeseen ways, that mock our foresight. If example be necessary to prove this, I'll give you a story, my child, told us by a grave, though sometimes a romantic historian.'

'Matilda was married very young to a Neapolitan nobleman of the first quality, and found herself a widow and a mother at the age of fifteen. As she stood one day caressing her infant son in the open window of an apartment, which hung over the river Volturna, the child, with a sudden spring, leaped from her arms into the flood below; and disappeared in a moment. The mother, struck with instant surprize, and making an effort to save him, plunged in after; but, far from being able to assist the infant, she herself with great difficulty escaped to the opposite shore, just when some French soldiers were plundering the country on that side, who immediately made her their prisoner.'

'As the war was then carried on between the French and Italians with the utmost inhumanity, they were going at once to perpetrate those two extremes, suggested by appetite and cruelty. This base resolution, however, was opposed by a young officer, who, though his retreat required the utmost expedition, placed her behind him, and brought her in safety to his native city. Her beauty at first caught his eye, her merit soon after his heart. They were married; he rose to the highest posts; they lived long together, and were happy. But the felicity of a soldier can never be called permanent: after an interval of

several years, the troops which he commanded having met with a reverse, he was obliged to take shelter in the city where he had lived with his wife. Here they suffered a siege, and the city at length was taken. Few histories can produce more various instances of cruelty, than those which the French and Italians at that time exercised upon each other. It was resolved by the victors, upon this occasion, to put all the French prisoners to death; but particularly the husband of the unfortunate Matilda, as he was principally instrumental in protracting the siege. Their determinations were, in general, executed almost as soon as resolved upon. The captive soldier was led forth, and the executioner, with his sword, stood ready, while the spectators in gloomy silence awaited the fatal blow, which was only suspended till the general, who presided as judge, should give the signal. It was in this interval of anguish and expectation, that Matilda came to take her last farewell of her husband and deliverer, deploring her wretched situation, and the cruelty of fate, that had saved her from perishing by a premature death in the river Volturna, to be the spectator of still greater calamities. The general, who was a young man, was struck with surprize at her beauty, and pity at her distress; but with still stronger emotions when he heard her mention her former dangers. He was her son, the infant for whom she had encountered so much danger, acknowledged her at once as his mother, and fell at her feet. The rest may be easily supposed: the captive was set free, and all the happiness that love, friendship and duty, could confer on each, were united.'

In this manner I would attempt to amuse my daughter; but she listened with divided attention; for her own misfortunes engrossed all the pity she once had for those of another, and nothing gave her ease. In company she dreaded contempt; and in solitude she only found anxiety. Such was the colour of her wretchedness, when we received certain information, that Mr. Thornhill was going to be married to Miss Wilmot, for whom I always suspected he had a real passion, though he took every opportunity before me to express

express his contempt both of her person and fortune. This news served only to increase poor Olivia's affliction; for such a flagrant breach of fidelity was more than her courage could support. I was resolved, however, to get more certain information, and to defeat, if possible, the completion of his designs, by sending my son to old Wilmot's, with instructions to know the truth of the report, and to deliver Miss Wilmot a letter, intimating Mr. Thornhill's conduct in my family. My son went, in pursuance of my directions, and in three days returned, assuring us of the truth of the account; but that he had found it impossible to deliver the letter, which he was therefore obliged to leave, as Mr. Thornhill and Miss Wilmot were visiting round the country. They were to be married, he said, in a few days, having appeared together at church the Sunday before he was there, in great splendour, the bride attended by six young ladies, and he by as many gentlemen. Their approaching nuptials filled the whole country with rejoicing, and they usually rode out together in the grandest equipage that had been in the country for many years. All the friends of both families, he said, were there, particularly the squire's uncle, Sir William, who bore so good a character. He added, that nothing but mirth and feasting were going forward; that all the country praised the young bride's beauty, and the bridegroom's fine person, and that they were immensely fond of each other; concluding, that he could not help thinking Mr. Thornhill one of the most happy men in the world.

'Why, let him if he can,' returned I: 'but, my son, observe this bed of straw, and unsheltering roof; those mouldering walls, and humid floor; my wretched body thus disabled by fire, and my children weeping round me for bread: you have come home, my child, to all this; yet here, even here, you see a man that would not for a thousand worlds exchange situations. O, my children, if you could but learn to commune with your own hearts, and know what noble company you can make them, you would little regard the elegance and splendours of the worthless. Almost all men have been taught to call life a passage, and them-

selves the travellers. The similitude still may be improved, when we observe that the good are joyful and serene, like travellers that are going towards home; the wicked but by intervals happy, like travellers that are going into exile.'

My compassion for my poor daughter, overpowered by this new disaster, interrupted what I had farther to observe. I bade her mother support her, and after a short time she recovered. She appeared from that time more calm, and I imagined had gained a new degree of resolution: but appearances deceived me; for her tranquility was the languor of overwrought resentment. A supply of provisions, charitably sent us by my kind parishioners, seemed to diffuse new cheerfulness among the rest of my family, nor was I displeased at seeing them once more sprightly and at ease. It would have been unjust to damp their satisfactions, merely to condole with resolute melancholy, or to burden them with a sadness they did not feel. Thus, once more, the tale went round, and the song was demanded, and cheerfulness condescended to hover round our little habitation.

CHAP. V.

FRESH CALAMITIES.

THE next morning the sun arose with peculiar warmth for the season; so that we agreed to breakfast together on the honey-suckle bank: where, while we sate, my youngest daughter, at my request, joined her voice to the concert on the trees about us. It was in this place my poor Olivia first met her seducer, and every object served to recal her sadness. But that melancholy, which is excited by objects of pleasure, or inspired by sounds of harmony, soothes the heart instead of corroding it. Her mother, too, upon this occasion, felt a pleasing distress, and wept, and loved her daughter as before. 'Do, my pretty Olivia,' cried she, 'let us have that little melancholy air your papa was so fond of; your sister Sophy has already obliged us. Do, child, it will please your old father.' She complied in a manner so exquisitely pathetic, as moved me.

I

WHEN

WHEN lovely woman stoops to folly,
And finds too late that men betray,
What charm can sooth her melancholy,
What art can wash her guilt away?

The only art her guilt to cover,
To hide her shame from every eye,
To give repentance to her lover,
And wring his bosom—is to die.

As she was concluding the last stanza, to which an interruption in her voice from sorrow gave peculiar softness, the appearance of Mr. Thornhill's equipage at a distance alarmed us all, but particularly increased the uneasiness of my eldest daughter, who, desirous of shunning her betrayer, returned to the house with her sister. In a few minutes he was alighted from his chariot, and making up to the place where I was still sitting, enquired after my health with his usual air of familiarity. 'Sir,' replied I, 'your present assurance only serves to aggravate the baseness of your character; and there was a time when I would have chastised your insolence, for presuming thus to appear before me. But now you are safe; for age has cooled my passions, and my calling restrains them.'

'I vow, my dear Sir,' returned he, 'I am amazed at all this; nor can I understand what it means! I hope you don't think your daughter's late excursion with me had any thing criminal in it.'

'Go,' cried I, 'thou art a wretch, a poor pitiful wretch, and every way a liar; but your meanness secures you from my anger! Yet, Sir, I am descended from a family that would not have borne this! And so, thou vile thing, to gratify a momentary passion, thou hast made one poor creature wretched for life, and polluted a family that had nothing but honour for their portion.'

'If she or you,' returned he, 'are resolved to be miserable, I cannot help it. But you may still be happy; and whatever opinion you may have formed of me, you shall ever find me ready to contribute to it. We can marry her to another in a short time; and what is more, she may keep her lover beside; for I protest I shall ever continue to have a true regard for her.'

I found all my passions alarmed at this new degrading proposal; for though the mind may often be calm under great injuries, little villainy can at any time get within the soul, and sting it into rage. 'Avoid my sight, thou reptile,' cried I, 'nor continue to insult me with thy presence. Were my brave son at home, he would not suffer this; but I am old, and disabled, and every way undone.'

'I find,' cried he, 'you are bent upon obliging me to talk in a harsher manner than I intended. But as I have shewn you what may be hoped from my friendship, it may not be improper to represent what may be the consequences of my resentment. My attorney, to whom your late bond has been transferred, threatens hard, nor do I know how to prevent the course of justice, except by paying the money myself, which, as I have been at some expences lately, previous to my intended marriage, is not so easy to be done. And then my steward talks of driving for the rent; it is certain he knows his duty; for I never trouble myself with affairs of that nature. Yet still I could wish to serve you, and even to have you and your daughter present at my marriage, which is shortly to be solemnized with Miss Wilmot: it is even the request of my charming Arabella herself, whom I hope you will not refuse.'

'Mr. Thornhill,' replied I, 'hear me once for all: as to your marriage with any but my daughter, that I never will consent to; and though your friendship could raise me to a throne, or your resentment sink me to the grave, yet would I despise both. Thou hast once woefully, irreparably, deceived me. I reposed my heart upon thine honour, and have found it's baseness. Never more, therefore, expect friendship from me. Go, and possess what fortune has given thee, beauty, riches, health, and pleasure. Go, and leave me to want, infamy, disease, and sorrow. Yet humbled as I am, shall my heart still vindicate it's dignity, and though thou hast my forgiveness, thou shalt ever have my contempt.'

'If so,' returned he, 'depend upon it you shall feel the effects of this insolence.'

solence, and we shall shortly see which is the fittest object of scorn, you or me.' Upon which he departed abruptly.

My wife and son, who were present at this interview, seemed terrified with the apprehension. My daughters also, finding that he was gone, came out to be informed of the result of our conference; which, when known, alarmed them not less than the rest. But as to myself, I disregarded the utmost stretch of his malevolence: he had already struck the blow, and now I stood prepared to repel every new effort. Like one of those instruments used in the art of war, which, however thrown, still presents a point to receive the enemy.

We soon however, found that he had not threatened in vain; for the very next morning his steward came to demand my annual rent, which, by the train of accidents already related, I was unable to pay. The consequence of my incapacity was his driving my cattle that evening, and their being appraised and sold the next day for less than half their value. My wife and children now therefore intreated me to comply upon any terms, rather than incur certain destruction. They even begged of me to admit his visits once more, and used all their little eloquence to paint the calamities I was going to endure: the terrors of a prison in so rigorous a season as the present, with the danger that threatened my health from the late accident that happened by the fire. But I continued inflexible.

'Why, my treasures,' cried I, 'why will you thus attempt to persuade me to the thing that is not right! My duty has taught me to forgive him; but my conscience will not permit me to approve. Would you have me applaud to the world what my heart must internally condemn? Would you have me tamely sit down and flatter our infamous betrayer; and to avoid a prison, continually suffer the more galling bonds of mental confinement! No, never! If we are to be taken from this abode, only let us hold to the right, and wherever we are thrown, we can still retire to a charming apartment, when we can look round our own hearts with intrepidity and with pleasure!'

In this manner we spent that even-

ing. Early the next morning, as the snow had fallen in great abundance in the night, my son was employed in clearing it away, and opening a passage before the door. He had not been thus engaged long, when he came running in, with looks all pale, to tell us that two strangers, whom he knew to be officers of justice, were making towards the house.

Just as he spoke they came in, and approaching the bed where I lay, after previously informing me of their employment and business, made me their prisoner, bidding me prepare to go with them to the county gaol, which was eleven miles off.

'My friends,' said I, 'this is severe weather in which you have come to take me to a prison; and it is particularly unfortunate at this time, as one of my arms has lately been burnt in a terrible manner, and it has thrown me into a slight fever, and I want clothes to cover me, and I am now too weak and old to walk far in such deep snow: but if it must be so—'

I then turned to my wife and children, and directed them to get together what few things were left us, and to prepare immediately for leaving this place. I intreated them to be expeditious: and desired my son to assist his elder sister; who, from a consciousness that she was the cause of all our calamities, was fallen, and had lost anguish in insensibility. I encouraged my wife, who, pale and trembling, clasped our affrighted little ones in her arms, that clung to her bosom in silence, dreading to look round at the strangers. In the mean time my youngest daughter prepared for our departure, and as she received several hints to use dispatch, in about an hour we were ready to depart.

CHAP. VI.

NO SITUATION, HOWEVER WRETCHED IT SEEMS, BUT HAS SOME SORT OF COMFORT ATTENDING IT.

WE set forward from this peaceful neighbourhood, and walked on slowly. My eldest daughter, being enfeebled by a slow fever, which had begun for some days to undermine her constitution, one of the officers,

who had an horse, kindly took her behind him: for even these men cannot entirely divest themselves of humanity. My son led one of the little ones by the hand, and my wife the other; while I leaned upon my youngest girl, whose tears fell not for her own but my distresses.

We were now got from my late dwelling about two miles, when we saw a crowd running and shouting behind us, consisting of about fifty of my poorest parishioners. These, with dreadful imprecations, soon seized upon the two officers of justice, and swearing they would never see their minister go to a gaol while they had a drop of blood to shed in his defence, were going to use them with great severity. The consequence might have been fatal, had I not immediately interposed, and with some difficulty rescued the officers from the hands of the enraged multitude. My children, who looked upon my delivery now as certain, appeared transported with joy, and were incapable of containing their raptures. But they were soon undeceived, upon hearing me address the poor deluded people, who came as they imagined to do me service.

'What! my friends,' cried I, 'and is this the way you love me! Is this the manner you obey the instructions I have given you from the pulpit! Thus to fly in the face of justice, and bring down ruin on yourselves and me! Which is your ringleader? Shew me the man that has thus seduced you. As sure as he lives, he shall feel my resentment. Alas! my poor deluded flock, return back to the duty you owe to God, to your country, and to me. I shall yet perhaps one day see you in greater felicity here, and contribute to make your lives more happy. But let it at least be my comfort when I pen my fold for immortality, that not one here shall be wanting.'

They now seemed all repentance, and melting into tears, came one after the other to bid me farewell. I shook each tenderly by the hand, and leaving them my blessing, proceeded forward without meeting any farther interruption. Some hours, before night we reached the town, or rather village; for it consisted but of a few mean houses, having lost all its former opulence,

and retaining no marks of its ancient superiority but the gaol.

Upon entering we put up at an inn, where we had such refreshments as could most readily be procured, and I supped with my family with my usual cheerfulness. After seeing them properly accommodated for that night, I next attended the sheriff's officers to the prison, which had formerly been built for the purposes of war, and consisted of one large apartment, strongly grated, and paved with stone, common to both felons and debtors at certain hours in the four and twenty. Besides this, every prisoner had a separate cell, where he was locked in for the night.

I expected upon my entrance to find nothing but lamentations, and various sounds of misery; but it was very different. The prisoners seemed all employed in one common design, that of forgetting thought in merriment or clamour. I was apprized of the usual perquisite required upon these occasions, and immediately complied with the demand, though the little money I had was very near being all exhausted. This was immediately sent away for liquor, and the whole prison was soon filled with riot, laughter, and profaneness.

'How,' cried I to myself, 'shall men so very wicked be cheerful, and shall I be melancholy! I feel only the same confinement with them, and I think I have more reason to be happy.'

With such reflections I laboured to become cheerful; but cheerfulness was never yet produced by effort, which is itself painful. As I was sitting therefore in a corner of the gaol, in a pensive posture, one of my fellow-prisoners came up, and sitting by me, entered into conversation. It was my constant rule in life never to avoid the conversation of any man who seemed to desire it: for if good, I might profit by his instruction; if bad, he might be assisted by mine. I found this to be a knowing man, of strong unlettered sense; but a thorough knowledge of the world, as it is called; or, more properly speaking, of human nature on the wrong side. He asked me if I had taken care to provide myself with a bed, which was a circumstance I had never once attended to.

'That's unfortunate,' cried he, 'as you are allowed nothing but straw, and your apartment is very large and cold.'

gold. However, you seem to be something of a gentleman, and as I have been one myself in my time, part of my bed-clothes are heartily at your service.

I thanked him, professing my surprise at finding such humanity in a gaol, in misfortunes; adding, to let him see that I was a scholar, that the sage ancient seemed to understand the value of company in affliction, when he said, *ton kosmon aite, ei dos ton etairon*; 'And in fact,' continued I, 'what is the world, if it affords only solitude?'

'You talk of the world, Sir,' returned my fellow-prisoner; 'the world is in it's dotage, and yet the cosmogony or creation of the world has puzzled the philosophers of every age. What a medley of opinions have they not broached upon the creation of the world. *Sanchoniathon, Manetho, Berosus, and Ocellus Lucanus*, have all attempted it in vain. The latter has these words, *Anarchion ara kai atelutaion to pan*, which implies—' 'I ask pardon, Sir,' cried I, 'for interrupting so much learning; but I think I have heard all this before. Have I not had the pleasure of once seeing you at Welbridge fair, and is not your name Ephraim Jenkinson?' At this demand he only sighed. 'I suppose you must recollect,' resumed I, 'one Doctor Primrose, from whom you bought a horse.'

He now at once recollected me; for the gloominess of the place and the approaching night had prevented his distinguishing my features before. 'Yes, Sir,' returned Mr. Jenkinson, 'I remember you perfectly well; I bought an horse, but forgot to pay for him. Your neighbour Flamborough is the only prosecutor I am any way afraid of the next assizes; for he intends to swear positively against me as a coiner. I am heartily sorry, Sir, I ever deceived you, or indeed any man; for you see,' continued he, shewing his shackles, 'what my tricks have brought me to.'

'Well, Sir,' replied I, 'your kindness in offering me assistance, when you could expect no return, shall be repaid with my endeavours to soften or totally suppress Mr. Flamborough's evidence, and I will send my son to him for that purpose the first oppor-

tunity; nor do I in the least doubt but he will comply with my request; and as to my own evidence, you need be under no uneasiness about that.'

'Well, Sir,' cried he, 'all the return I can make shall be your's. You shall have more than half my bed-clothes to-night, and I'll take care to stand your friend in the prison, where I think I have some influence.'

I thanked him, and could not avoid being surprized at the present youthful change in his aspect; for at the time I had seen him before, he appeared at least sixty. 'Sir,' answered he, 'you are little acquainted with the world; I had at that time false hair, and have learnt the art of counterfeiting every age from seventeen to seventy. Ah, Sir, had I but bestowed half the pains in learning a trade, that I have in learning to be a scoundrel, I might have been a rich man at this day. But rogue as I am, still I may be your friend; and that, perhaps, when you least expect it.'

We were now prevented from farther conversation, by the arrival of the gaoler's servants, who came to call over the prisoners names, and lock up for the night. A fellow also with a bundle of straw for my bed attended, who led me along a dark narrow passage into a room paved like the common prison, and in one corner of this I spread my bed; and the clothes given me by my fellow-prisoner; which done, my conductor, who was civil enough, bade me a good night. After my usual meditations, and having praised my Heavenly Corrector, I laid myself down and slept with the utmost tranquility till morning.

CHAP. VII.

A REFORMATION IN THE GAOL. TO MAKE LAWS COMPLEAT, THEY SHOULD REWARD AS WELL AS PUNISH.

THE next morning early I was awakened by my family, whom I found in tears at my bed-side. The gloomy strength of every thing about us, it seems, had daunted them. I gently rebuked their sorrow, assuring them

them I had never slept with greater tranquility, and next enquired after my eldest daughter, who was not among them. They informed me that yesterday's uneasiness and fatigue had increased her fever, and it was judged proper to leave her behind. My next care was to send my son to procure a room or two to lodge my family in, as near the prison as conveniently could be found. He obeyed; but could only find one apartment, which was hired at a small expence, for his mother and sisters, the gaoler with humanity consenting to let him and his two little brothers lie in the prison with me. A bed was therefore prepared for them in a corner of the room, which I thought answered very conveniently. I was willing, however, previously to know whether my little children chose to lie in a place which seemed to fright them upon entrance.

'Well,' cried I, 'my good boys, how do you like your bed? I hope you are not afraid to lie in this room, dark as it appears.'

'No, papa,' says Dick, 'I am not afraid to lie any where, where you are.'

'And I,' says Bill, who was yet but four years old, 'love every place best that my papa is in.'

After this, I allotted to each of the family what they were to do. My daughter was particularly directed to watch her declining sister's health; my wife was to attend me; my little boys were to read to me: 'And as for you, my son,' continued I, 'it is by the labour of your hands we must all hope to be supported. Your wages, as a day-labourer, will be full sufficient, with proper frugality, to maintain us all, and comfortably too. Thou art now sixteen years old, and hast strength, and it was given thee, my son, for very useful purposes: for it must save from famine your helpless parents and family. Prepare then this evening to look out for work against to-morrow, and bring home every night what money you earn for our support.'

Having thus instructed him, and settled the rest, I walked down to the common prison, where I could enjoy more air and room. But I was not long there, when the execrations, lewdness and brutality, that invaded me on every side, drove me back to my apart-

ment again. Here I sat for some time, pondering upon the strange infatuation of wretches, who, finding all mankind in open arms against them, were labouring to make themselves a future and a tremendous Enemy.

Their insensibility excited my highest compassion, and blotted my own uneasiness from my mind. It even appeared a duty incumbent upon me to attempt to reclaim them. I resolved therefore once more to return, and in spite of their contempt to give them my advice, and conquer them by perseverance. Going therefore among them again, I informed Mr. Jenkinson of my design; at which he laughed heartily, but communicated it to the rest. The proposal was received with the greatest good-humour, as it promised to afford a new fund of entertainment to persons who had now no other resource for mirth, but what could be derived from ridicule or debauchery.

I therefore read them a portion of the service with a loud unaffected voice, and found my audience perfectly merry upon the occasion. Lewd whispers, groans of contrition burlesqued, winking and coughing, alternately excited laughter. However, I continued with my natural solemnity to read on, sensible that what I did might amend some, but could itself receive no contamination from any.

After reading, I entered upon my exhortation, which was rather calculated at first to amuse them than to reprove. I previously observed, that no other motive but their welfare could induce me to this; that I was their fellow prisoner, and now got nothing by preaching. I was sorry, I said, to hear them so very prophane; because they got nothing by it, and might lose a great deal: 'For be assured, my friends,' cried I, '(for you are my friends, however the world may disclaim your friendship) though you swore twelve thousand oaths in a day, it would not put one penny in your purse. Then what signifies calling every moment upon the devil, and courting his friendship, since you find how scurvily he uses you. He has given you nothing here, you find, but a mouthful of oaths and an empty belly; and by the best accounts I have of him, he will give you nothing that's good hereafter.'

‘ If used ill in our dealings with one man, we naturally go elsewhere. Were it not worth your while then, just to try how you may like the usage of another Master, who gives you fair promises at least to come to him? Surely, my friends, of all stupidity in the world, his must be the greatest, who after robbing an house, runs to the thief-takers for protection. And yet how are you more wise? You are all seeking comfort from one that has already betrayed you, applying to a more malicious being than any thief-taker of them all; for they only decoy and then hang you; but he decoys and hangs, and what is worst of all, will not let you loose after the hangman has done.’

When I had concluded, I received the compliment of my audience, some of whom came and shook me by the hand, swearing that I was a very honest fellow, and that they desired my further acquaintance. I therefore promised to repeat my lecture next day, and actually conceived some hopes of making a reformation here; for it had ever been my opinion, that no man was past the hour of amendment, every heart lying open to the shafts of reproof, if the archer could but take a proper aim. When I had thus satisfied my mind, I went back to my apartment, where my wife prepared a frugal meal, while Mr. Jenkinson begged leave to add his dinner to ours, and partake of the pleasure, as he was kind enough to express it, of my conversation. He had not yet seen my family, for as they came to my apartment by a door in the narrow passage already described, by this means they avoided the common prison. Jenkinson at the first interview therefore seemed not a little struck with the beauty of my youngest daughter, which her pensive air contributed to heighten, and my little ones did not pass unnoticed.

‘ Alas, doctor,’ cried he, ‘ these children are too handsome and too good for such a place as this!’

‘ Why, Mr. Jenkinson,’ replied I, ‘ thank Heaven, my children are pretty tolerable in morals, and if they be good, it matters little for the rest.’

‘ I fancy, Sir,’ returned my fellow prisoner, ‘ that it must give you great comfort to have this little family about you.’

‘ A comfort, Mr. Jenkinson,’ replied I, ‘ yes, it is indeed a comfort, and I would not be without them for all the world; for they can make a dungeon seem a palace. There is but one way in this life of wounding my happiness, and that is by injuring them.’

‘ I am afraid then, Sir,’ cried he, ‘ that I am in some measure culpable; for I think I see here,’ (looking at my son Moses) ‘ one that I have injured, and by whom I wish to be forgiven.’

My son immediately recollected his voice and features, though he had before seen him in disguise, and taking him by the hand, with a smile forgave him. ‘ Yet,’ continued he, ‘ I can’t help wondering at what you could see in my face, to think me a proper mark for deception.’

‘ My dear Sir,’ returned the other, ‘ it was not your face, but your white stockings and the black ribband in your hair, that allured me. But no disparagement to your parts, I have deceived wiser men than you in my time; and yet, with all my tricks, the blockheads have been too many for me at last.’

‘ I suppose,’ cried my son, ‘ that the narrative of such a life as yours must be extremely instructive and amusing.’

‘ Not much of either,’ returned Mr. Jenkinson. ‘ Those relations which describe the tricks and vices only of mankind, by increasing our suspicion in life, retard our success. The traveller that distrusts every person he meets, and turns back upon the appearance of every man that looks like a robber, seldom arrives in time at his journey’s end.’

‘ Indeed I think, from my own experience, that the knowing one is the silliest fellow under the sun. I was thought cunning from my very childhood; when but seven years old the ladies would say that I was a perfect little man; at fourteen, I knew the world, cocked my hat, and loved the ladies; at twenty, though I was perfectly honest, yet every one thought me so cunning, that not one would trust me. Thus I was at last obliged to turn sharper in my own defence, and have lived ever since, my head throbbing with schemes to deceive, and

‘and my heart palpitating with fears of detection. I used often to laugh at your honest simple neighbour Flamborough, and one way or another generally cheated him once a year. Yet still the honest man went forward without suspicion, and grew rich, while I still continued tricky and cunning, and was poor, without the consolation of being honest. However,’ continued he, ‘let me know your case, and what has brought you here; perhaps, though I have not skill to avoid a gaol myself, I may extricate my friends.’

In compliance with this curiosity, I informed him of the whole train of accidents and follies that had plunged me into my present troubles, and my utter inability to get free.

After hearing my story, and pausing some minutes, he slapt his forehead, as if he had hit upon something material, and took his leave, saying, he would try what could be done.

C H A P. VIII.

THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED.

THE next morning I communicated to my wife and children the scheme I had planned of reforming the prisoners, which they received with universal disapprobation, alledging the impossibility and impropriety of it; adding, that my endeavours would no way contribute to their amendment, but might probably disgrace my calling.

‘Excuse me,’ returned I; ‘these people, however fallen, are still men, and that is a very good title to my affections. Good counsel rejected returns to enrich the giver’s bosom; and though the instruction I communicate may not mend them, yet it will assuredly mend myself. If these wretches, my children, were princes, there would be thousands ready to offer their ministry; but in my opinion, the heart that is buried in a dungeon is as precious as that seated upon a throne. Yes, my treasures, if I can mend them I will; perhaps they will not all despise me. Perhaps I may catch up even one from the gulph, and that will be

‘great gain; for is there upon earth a gem so precious as the human soul?’

Thus saying, I left them, and descended to the common prison, where I found the prisoners very merry, expecting my arrival; and each prepared with some gaol trick to play upon the doctor. Thus, as I was going to begin, one turned my wig awry, as if by accident, and then asked my pardon. A second, who stood at some distance, had a knack of spitting through his teeth, which fell in showers upon my book. A third would cry Amen in such an affected tone as gave the rest great delight. A fourth had slyly picked my pocket of my spectacles. But there was one whose trick gave more universal pleasure than all the rest; for observing the manner in which I had disposed my books on the table before me, he very dextrously displaced one of them, and put an obscene jest book of his own in the place. However, I took no notice of all that this mischievous groupe of little beings could do; but went on, perfectly sensible that what was ridiculous in my attempt, would excite mirth only the first or second time, while what was serious would be permanent. My design succeeded, and in less than six days some were penitent, and all attentive.

It was now that I applauded my perseverance and address, at thus giving sensibility to wretches divested of every moral feeling, and now began to think of doing them temporal services also, by rendering their situation somewhat more comfortable. Their time had hitherto been divided between famine and excess, tumultuous riot and bitter repining. Their only employment was quarrelling among each other, playing at cribbage, and cutting tobacco stoppers. From this last mode of idle industry I took the hint of setting such as chose to work at cutting pegs for tobacco-nists and shoemakers, the proper wood being bought by a general subscription, and when manufactured, sold by my appointment: so that each earned something every day; a trifle indeed, but sufficient to maintain him.

I did not stop here, but instituted fines for the punishment of immorality, and rewards for peculiar industry. Thus, in less than a fortnight, I had formed them into something social and humane,

humane, and had the pleasure of regarding myself as a legislator, who had brought men from their native ferocity into friendship and obedience.

And it were highly to be wished, that legislative power would thus direct the law rather to reformation than severity. That it would seem convinced that the work of eradicating crimes is not by making punishments familiar, but formidable. Then, instead of our present prisons, which find or make men guilty, which inclose wretches for the commission of one crime, and return them, if returned alive, fitted for the perpetration of thousands; it were to be wished we had, as in other parts of Europe, places of penitence and solitude, where the accused might be attended by such as could give them repentance if guilty, or new motives of virtue if innocent. And this, but not the increasing punishments, is the way to mend a state: nor can I avoid even questioning the validity of that right which social combinations have assumed, of capitally punishing offences of a slight nature. In cases of murder their right is obvious, as it is the duty of us all, from the law of self-defence, to cut off that man who has shewn a disregard for the life of another. Against such, all nature rises in arms, but it is not so against him who steals my property. Natural law gives me no right to take away his life, as by that the horse he steals is as much his property as mine. If then I have any right, it must be from a compact made between us, that he who deprives the other of his horse shall die. But this is a false compact; because no man has a right to barter his life, no more than take it away, as it is not his own. And beside, the compact is inadequate, and would be set aside even in a court of modern equity, as there is a great penalty for a trifling convenience, since it is far better that two men should live, than one man should ride. But a compact that is false between two men, is equally so between an hundred and an hundred thousand; for as ten millions of circles can never make a square, so the united voice of myriads cannot lend the smallest foundation to falsehood. It is thus that reason speaks, and untutored nature says the same thing. Savages, that are directed by natural

law alone, are very tender of the lives of each other; they seldom shed blood but to retaliate former cruelty.

Our Saxon ancestors, fierce as they were in war, had but few executions in times of peace; and in all commencing governments that have the print of nature still strong upon them, scarce any crime is held capital.

It is among the citizens of a refined community that penal laws, which are in the hands of the rich, are laid upon the poor. Government, while it grows older, seems to require the moroseness of age; and as if our property were become dearer in proportion as it increased, as if the more enormous our wealth, the more extensive our fears, all our possessions are paled up with new edicts every day, and hung round with gibbets to scare every invader.

I cannot tell whether it is from the number of our penal laws, or the licentiousness of our people, that this country should shew more convicts in a year, than half the dominions of Europe united. Perhaps it is owing to both; for they mutually produce each other. When by indiscriminate penal laws a nation beholds the same punishment affixed to dissimilar degrees of guilt, from perceiving no distinction in the penalty, the people are led to lose all sense of distinction in the crime, and this distinction is the bulwark of all morality: thus the multitude of laws produce new vices, and new vices call for fresh restraints.

It were to be wished then that power, instead of contriving new laws to punish vice, instead of drawing hard the cords of society till a convulsion come to burst them, instead of cutting away wretches as useless, before we have tried their utility, instead of converting correction into vengeance, it were to be wished that we tried the restrictive arts of government, and made law the protector, but not the tyrant of the people. We should then find that creatures whose souls are held as dross, only wanted the hand of a refiner; we should then find that wretches, now stuck up for long tortures, lest luxury should feel a momentary pang, might, if properly treated, serve to sinew the state in times of danger; that as their faces are like ours, their hearts are so too; that few minds are so base, as that per-

severance cannot amend; that a man may see his last crime without dying for it; and that very little blood will serve to cement our security.

CHAP. IX.

HAPPINESS AND MISERY RATHER
THE RESULT OF PRUDENCE
THAN OF VIRTUE IN THIS LIFE;
TEMPORAL EVILS OR FELICITIES
BEING REGARDED BY HEAVEN
AS THINGS MERELY IN
THEMSELVES TRIFLING, AND
UNWORTHY ITS CARE IN THE
DISTRIBUTION.

I Had now been confined more than a fortnight, but had not since my arrival been visited by my dear Olivia, and I greatly longed to see her. Having communicated my wishes to my wife, the next morning the poor girl entered my apartment, leaning on her sister's arm. The change which I saw in her countenance struck me. The numberless graces that once resided there were now fled, and the hand of death seemed to have moulded every feature to alarm me. Her temples were sunk, her forehead was tense, and a fatal paleness sat upon her cheek.

'I am glad to see thee, my dear,' cried I; 'but why this dejection, Livy? I hope, my love, you have too great a regard for me, to permit disappointment thus to undermine a life which I prize as my own. Be cheerful, child, and we yet may see happier days.'

'You have ever, Sir,' replied she, 'been kind to me, and it adds to my pain, that I shall never have an opportunity of sharing that happiness you promise. Happiness, I fear, is no longer reserved for me here; and I long to be rid of a place where I have only found distress. Indeed, Sir, I wish you would make a proper submission to Mr. Thornhill; it may, in some measure, induce him to pity you, and it will give me relief in dying.'

'Never, child,' replied I, 'never will I be brought to acknowledge my daughter a prostitute; for though the world may look upon your offence with scorn, let it be mine to regard it as a mark of credulity, not of

guilt. My dear, I am no ways miserable in this place, however dismal it may seem, and be assured that while you continue to bless me by living, he shall never have my consent to make you more wretched by marrying another.'

After the departure of my daughter, my fellow prisoner, who was by at this interview, sensibly enough expostulated upon my obstinacy, in refusing a submission which promised to give me freedom. He observed, that the rest of my family was not to be sacrificed to the peace of one child alone, and she the only one who had offended me. 'Beside,' added he, 'I don't know if it be just thus to obstruct the union of man and wife, which you do at present, by refusing to consent to a match which you cannot hinder, but may render unhappy.'

'Sir,' replied I, 'you are unacquainted with the man that oppresses us. I am very sensible that no submission I can make could procure me liberty even for an hour. I am told that even in this very room a debtor of his, no later than last year, died for want. But though my submission and approbation could transfer me from hence to the most beautiful apartment he is possessed of; yet I would grant neither, as something whispers me, that it would be giving a sanction to adultery. While my daughter lives, no other marriage of his shall ever be legal in my eye. Were she removed, indeed, I should be the basest of men, from any resentment of my own, to attempt putting asunder those who wish for an union. No, villain as he is, I should then wish him married, to prevent the consequences of his future debaucheries. But now should I not be the most cruel of all fathers, to sign an instrument which must send my child to the grave, merely to avoid a prison myself; and thus to escape one pang, break my child's heart with a thousand?'

He acquiesced in the justice of this answer, but could not avoid observing, that he feared my daughter's life was already too much wasted to keep me long a prisoner. 'However,' continued he, 'though you refuse to submit to the nephew, I hope you have no objections to laying your case

before

before the uncle, who has the first character in the kingdom for every thing that is just and good. I would advise you to send him a letter by the post, intimating all his nephew's ill usage, and my life for it, that in three days you shall have an answer.' I thanked him for the hint, and instantly set out about complying; but I wanted paper, and unluckily all our money had been laid out that morning in provisions; however, he supplied me.

For the three ensuing days I was in a state of anxiety, to know what reception my letter might meet with; but in the mean time was frequently solicited by my wife to submit to any conditions rather than remain here, and every hour received repeated accounts of the decline of my daughter's health. The third day and the fourth arrived, but I received no answer to my letter: the complaints of a stranger against a favourite nephew, were no way likely to succeed; so that these hopes soon vanished like all my former. My mind, however, still supported itself, though confinement and bad air began to make a visible alteration in my health, and my arm that had suffered in the fire grew worse. My children, however, sat by me, and while I was stretched on my straw, read to me by turns, or listened and wept at my instructions. But my daughter's health declined faster than mine; every message from her contributed to increase my apprehensions and pain. The fifth morning after I had written the letter which was sent to Sir William Thornhill, I was alarmed with an account that she was speechless. Now it was that confinement was truly painful to me; my soul was bursting from its prison to be near the pillow of my child, to comfort, to strengthen her, to receive her last wishes, and teach her soul the way to heaven! Another account came; she was expiring, and yet I was debarred the small comfort of weeping by her. My fellow prisoner, some time after, came with the last account. He bade me be patient; she was dead! The next morning he returned, and found me with my two little ones, now my only companions, who were using all their innocent efforts to comfort me. They intreated to read to me, and bade me not to cry, for I was now too old to weep.

'And is not my sister an angel now, papa,' cried the eldest, 'and why then are you sorry for her? I wish I were an angel out of this frightful place, if my papa were with me.'— 'Yes,' added my youngest darling, 'heaven, where my sister is, is a finer place than this, and there are none but good people there, and the people here are very bad.'

Mr. Jenkinson interrupted their harmless prattle, by observing, that now my daughter was no more, I should seriously think of the rest of my family, and attempt to save my own life, which was every day declining, for want of necessaries and wholesome air. He added, that it was now incumbent on me to sacrifice any pride or resentment of my own, to the welfare of those who depended on me for support; and that I was now, both by reason and justice, obliged to try to reconcile my landlord.

'Heaven be praised,' replied I, 'there is no pride left me now. I should detest my own heart, if I saw either pride or resentment lurking there. On the contrary, as my oppressor has been once my parishioner, I hope one day to present him up an unpolluted soul at the eternal tribunal. No, Sir, I have no resentment now; and though he has taken from me what I held dearer than all his treasures, though he has wrung my heart, for I am sick almost to fainting, very sick, my fellow prisoner, yet that shall never inspire me with vengeance. I am now willing to approve his marriage, and if this submission can do him any pleasure, let him know, that if I have done him any injury, I am sorry for it.' Mr. Jenkinson took pen and ink, and wrote down my submission nearly as I have expressed it, to which I signed my name. My son was employed to carry the letter to Mr. Thornhill, who was then at his seat in the country. He went, and in about six hours returned with a verbal answer. He had some difficulty, he said, to get a sight of his landlord, as the servants were insolent and suspicious; but he accidentally saw him as he was going out upon business, preparing for his marriage, which was to be in three days. He continued to inform us, that he stepped up in the humblest manner, and delivered the

letter, which, when Mr. Thornhill had read, he said that all submission was now too late and unnecessary; that he had heard of our application to his uncle, which met with the contempt it deserved; and as for the rest, that all future applications should be directed to his attorney, not to him. He observed, however, that as he had a very good opinion of the discretion of the two young ladies, they might have been the most agreeable intercessors.

'Well, Sir,' said I to my fellow prisoner, 'you now discover the temper of the man who oppresses me. He can at once be facetious and cruel; but let him use me as he will, I shall soon be free, in spite of all his bolts to restrain me. I am now drawing towards an abode that looks brighter as I approach it: this expectation cheers my afflictions, and though I leave an helpless family of orphans behind me, yet they will not be utterly forsaken; some friend, perhaps, will be found to assist them for the sake of their poor father, and some may charitably relieve them for the sake of their Heavenly Father.'

Just as I spoke, my wife, whom I had not seen that day before, appeared with looks of terror, and making efforts, but unable to speak. 'Why, my love,' cried I, 'why will you thus increase my afflictions by your own? What though no submission can turn our severe master, though he has doomed me to die in this place of wretchedness, and though we have lost a darling child, yet still you will find comfort in your other children when I shall be no more.'—'We have indeed lost,' returned she, 'a darling child. My Sophia, my dearest, is gone; snatched from us, carried off by ruffians!'

'How, Madam,' cried my fellow prisoner, 'Miss Sophia carried off by villains! Sure it cannot be?'

She could only answer with a fixed look, and a flood of tears. But one of the prisoners wives, who was present, and came in with her, gave us a more distinct account: she informed us that as my wife, my daughter, and herself, were taking a walk together on the great road, a little way out of the village, a post-chaise and pair drove up to them, and instantly stopt. Upon which a well dressed man, but not Mr. Thornhill, stepping out, clasped my

daughter round the waist, and forcing her in, bid the postilion drive on, so that they were out of sight in a moment.

'Now,' cried I, 'the sum of my miseries is made up, nor is it in the power of any thing on earth to give me another pang. What! not one left! not leave me one! the monster! the child that was next my heart! she had the beauty of an angel, and almost the wisdom of an angel. But support that woman, nor let her fall. Not to leave me one!'—'Alas, my husband,' said my wife, 'you seem to want comfort even more than I. Our distresses are great; but I could bear this and more, if I saw you but easy. They may take away my children, and all the world, if they leave me but you.'

My son, who was present, endeavoured to moderate our grief; he bade us take comfort, for he hoped that we might still have reason to be thankful.—'My child,' cried I, 'look round the world, and see if there be any happiness left me now. Is not every ray of comfort shut out; while all our bright prospects only lie beyond the grave.'—'My dear father,' returned he, 'I hope there is still something that will give you an interval of satisfaction; for I have a letter from my brother George.'—'What of him, child,' interrupted I, 'does he know our misery? I hope my boy is exempt from any part of what his wretched family suffers?'—'Yes, Sir,' returned he, 'he is perfectly gay, cheerful, and happy. His letter brings nothing but good news; he is the favourite of his colonel, who promises to procure him the very next lieutenancy that becomes vacant!'

'And are you sure of all this,' cried my wife; 'are you sure that nothing ill has befallen my boy?'—'Nothing indeed, Madam,' returned my son; 'you shall see the letter, which will give you the highest pleasure: and if any thing can procure you comfort, I am sure that will.'—'But are you sure,' still repeated she, 'that the letter is from himself, and that he is really so happy?'—'Yes, Madam,' replied he, 'it is certainly his, and he will one day be the credit and the support of our family!'

—'Then I thank Providence,' cried she, 'that my last letter to him has miscarried.—Yes, my dear,' continued she,

she, turning to me, 'I will now confess, that though the hand of Heaven is sore upon us in other instances, it has been favourable here. By the last letter I wrote my son, which was in the bitterness of anger, I desired him, upon his mother's blessing, and if he had the heart of a man, to see justice done his father and sister, and avenge our cause. But thanks be to Him who directs all things, it has miscarried, and I am at rest.'—'Woman,' cried I, 'thou hast done very ill, and at another time my reproaches might have been more severe. Oh! what a tremendous gulph hast thou escaped, that would have buried both thee and him in endless ruin. Providence, indeed, has here been kinder to us than we to ourselves. It has reserved that son to be the father and protector of my children when I shall be away. How unjustly did I complain of being stripped of every comfort, when still I hear that he is happy and insensible of our afflictions; still kept in reserve to support his widowed mother, and to protect his brothers and sisters. But what sisters has he left! he has no sisters now, they are all gone, robbed from me, and I am undone!'—'Father,' interrupted my son, 'I beg you will give me leave to read his letter, I know it will please you.' Upon which, with my permission, he read as follows:

'HONOURED SIR,

'I Have called off my imagination a few moments from the pleasures that surround me, to fix it upon objects that are still more pleasing, the dear little fire-side at home. My fancy draws that harmless groupe as listening to every line of this with great composure. I view those faces with delight which never felt the deforming hand of ambition or distress! But whatever your happiness may be at home, I am sure it will be some addition to it, to hear that I am perfectly pleased with my situation, and every way happy here.

'Our regiment is countermanded, and is not to leave the kingdom; the colonel, who professes himself my friend, takes me with him to all com-

'panies where he is acquainted, and after my first visit, I generally find myself received with increased respect upon repeating it. I danced last night with Lady G—, and could I forget you know whom, I might be perhaps successful. But it is my fate still to remember others, while I am myself forgotten by most of my absent friends; and in this number, I fear, Sir, that I must consider you, for I have long expected the pleasure of a letter from home to no purpose. Olivia and Sophia, too, promised to write, but seem to have forgotten me. Tell them they are two arrant little baggages, and that I am this moment in a most violent passion with them: yet still, I know not how, though I want to bluster a little, my heart is respondent only to softer emotions. Then tell them, Sir, that after all, I love them affectionately; and be assured of my ever remaining your dutiful son.'

'In all our miseries,' cried I, 'what thanks have we not to return, that one at least of our family is exempted from what we suffer. Heaven be his guard, and keep my boy thus happy to be the support of his widowed mother, and the father of these two babes, which is all the patrimony I can now bequeath him! May he keep their innocence from the temptations of want, and be their conductor in the paths of honour!' I had scarce said these words, when a noise, like that of a tumult, seemed to proceed from the prison below; it died away soon after, and a clanking of fetters was heard along the passage that led to my apartment. The keeper of the prison entered, holding a man all bloody, wounded, and fettered with the heaviest irons. I looked with compassion on the wretch as he approached me, but with horror when I found it was my own son. 'My George! my George! and do I behold thee thus! Wounded! fettered! Is this thy happiness! Is this the manner you return to me? O that this sight could break my heart at once, and let me die!'

'Where, Sir, is your fortitude?' returned my son with an intrepid voice; 'I must suffer, my life is forfeited, and let them take it.'

I tried

I tried to restrain my passion for a few minutes in silence, but I thought I should have died with the effort. 'O my boy, my heart weeps to behold thee thus, and I cannot, cannot help it. In the moment that I thought thee blest, and prayed for thy safety, to behold thee thus again! chained, wounded. And yet the death of the youthful is happy. But I am old, a very old man, and have lived to see this day. To see my children all untimely falling about me, while I continue a wretched survivor in the midst of ruin! May all the curses that ever sunk a soul fall heavy upon the murderer of my children. May he live, like me, to see——'

'Hold, Sir,' replied my son, 'or I shall blush for thee. How, Sir, forgetful of your age, your holy calling, thus to arrogate the justice of Heaven, and sling those curses upward that must soon descend to crush thy own grey head with destruction! No, Sir, let it be your care now to fit me for that vile death I must shortly suffer, to arm me with hope and resolution, to give me courage to drink of that bitterness which must shortly be my portion.'

'My child, you must not die: I am sure no offence of thine can deserve so vile a punishment. My George could never be guilty of any crime to make his ancestors ashamed of him.'

'Mine, Sir,' returned my son, 'is I fear, an unpardonable one. When I received my mother's letter from home, I immediately came down, determined to punish the betrayer of our honour, and sent him an order to meet me, which he answered, not in person, but by dispatching four of his domesticks to seize me. I wounded one who first assaulted me, and I fear desperately: but the rest made me their prisoner. The coward is determined to put the law in execution against me; the proofs are undeniable; I have sent a challenge, and as I am the first transgressor upon the statute, I see no hopes of pardon. But you have often charmed me with your lessons of fortitude; let me now, Sir, find them in your example.'

'And, my son, you shall find them. I am now raised above this world, and all the pleasures it can produce. From this moment I break from my

heart all the ties that held it down to earth, and will prepare to fit us both for eternity. Yes, my son, I will point out the way, and my soul shall guide yours in the ascent, for we will take our flight together. I now see and am convinced you can expect no pardon here, and I can only exhort you to seek it at that greatest tribunal where we both shall shortly answer. But let us not be niggardly in our exhortation, but let all our fellow-prisoners have a share.—Good gaoler, let them be permitted to stand here, while I attempt to improve them.' Thus saying, I made an effort to rise from my straw, but wanted strength, and was able only to recline against the wall. The prisoners assembled according to my directions, for they loved to hear my counsel; my son and his mother supported me on either side; I looked, and saw that none were wanting, and then addressed them with the following exhortation.

CHAP. X.

THE EQUAL DEALINGS OF PROVIDENCE DEMONSTRATED WITH REGARD TO THE HAPPY AND THE MISERABLE HERE BELOW. THAT FROM THE NATURE OF PLEASURE AND PAIN, THE WRETCHED MUST BE REPAID THE BALANCE OF THEIR SUFFERINGS IN THE LIFE HEREAFTER.

MY friends, my children, and fellow sufferers, when I reflect on the distribution of good and evil here below, I find that much has been given man to enjoy, yet still more to suffer. Though we should examine the whole world, we shall not find one man so happy as to have nothing left to wish for; but we daily see thousands who by suicide shew us they have nothing left to hope. In this life then it appears that we cannot be entirely blest; but yet we may be compleatly miserable.

'Why man should thus feel pain, why our wretchedness should be requisite in the formation of universal felicity, why, when all other systems are made perfect by the perfection of their subordinate parts, the great system should require for it's perfection

tion, parts that are not only subordinate to others, but imperfect in themselves? These are questions that never can be explained, and might be useless if known. On this subject Providence has thought fit to elude our curiosity, satisfied with granting us motives to consolation.

In this situation, man has called in the friendly assistance of philosophy, and Heaven seeing the incapacity of that to console him, has given him the aid of religion. The consolations of philosophy are very amusing, but often fallacious. It tells us that life is filled with comforts, if we will but enjoy them; and on the other hand, that though we unavoidably have miseries here, life is short, and they will soon be over. Thus do these consolations destroy each other; for if life is a place of comfort, it's shortness must be misery, and if it be long, our griefs are protracted. Thus philosophy is weak; but religion comforts in an higher strain. Man is here, it tells us, fitting up his mind, and preparing it for another abode. When the good man leaves the body, and is all a glorious mind, he will find he has been making himself a heaven of happiness here, while the wretch that has been maimed and contaminated by his vices, shrinks from his body with terror, and finds that he has anticipated the vengeance of Heaven. To religion then we must hold in every circumstance of life for our truest comfort; for if already we are happy, it is a pleasure to think that we can make that happiness unending; and if we are miserable, it is very consoling to think that there is a place of rest. Thus, to the fortunate, religion holds out a continuance of bliss; to the wretched, a change from pain.

But though religion is very kind to all men, it has promised peculiar rewards to the unhappy; the sick, the naked, the houseless, the heavy-laden, and the prisoner, have ever most frequent promises in our sacred law. The Author of our religion every where professes himself the wretch's friend; and, unlike the false ones of this world, bestows all his caresses upon the forlorn. The un-

thinking have censured this as partiality, as a preference without merit to deserve it. But they never reflect that it is not in the power even of Heaven itself to make the offer of unceasing felicity as great a gift to the happy as to the miserable. To the first, eternity is but a single blessing, since at most it but increases what they already possess. To the latter, it is a double advantage; for it diminishes their pain here, and rewards them with heavenly bliss hereafter.

But Providence is in an other respect kinder to the poor than the rich; for as it thus makes the life after death more desirable, so it smooths the passage there. The wretched have had a long familiarity with every face of terror. The man of sorrows lays himself quietly down, with no possessions to regret, and but few ties to stop his departure: he feels only nature's pang in the final separation, and this is no way greater than he has often fainted under before; for after a certain degree of pain, every new breach that death opens in the constitution, nature kindly covers with insensibility.

Thus Providence has given the wretched two advantages over the happy in this life, greater felicity in dying, and in heaven all that superiority of pleasure which arises from contrasted enjoyment. And this superiority, my friends, is no small advantage, and seems to be one of the pleasures of the poor man in the parable; for though he was already in heaven, and felt all the raptures it could give, yet it was mentioned as an addition to his happiness, that he had once been wretched and now was comforted; that he had known what it was to be miserable, and now felt what it was to be happy.

Thus, my friends, you see, religion does what philosophy could never do: it shews the equal dealings of Heaven to the happy and the unhappy, and levels all human enjoyments to nearly the same standard. It gives to both rich and poor the same happiness hereafter, and equal hopes to aspire after it; but if the rich have the advantage of enjoying pleasure here, the poor have the endless satisfaction of knowing what it was once to be miserable,

‘miserable, when crowned with endless felicity hereafter; and even though it should be called a small advantage, yet being an eternal one, it must make up by duration what the temporal happiness of the great may have exceeded by intenseness.

‘These are therefore the consolations which the wretched have peculiar to themselves, and in which they are above the rest of mankind; in other respects they are below them. They who would know the miseries of the poor, must see life, and endure it. To declaim on the temporal advantages they enjoy, is only repeating what none either believe or practise. The men who have the necessities of living are not poor, and they who want them must be miserable. Yes, my friends, we must be miserable. No vain efforts of a refined imagination can soothe the wants of nature, can give elastic sweetness to the dank vapour of a dungeon, or ease to the throbbings of a broken heart. Let the philosopher from his couch of softness tell us we can resist all these. Alas! the effort by which we resist them is still the greatest pain! Death is flight, and any man may sustain it; but torments are dreadful, and these no man can endure.

‘To us, then, my friends, the promises of happiness in heaven should be peculiarly dear; for if our reward be in this life alone, we are indeed of all men the most miserable. When I look round these gloomy walls, made to terrify, as well as to confine us; this light that only serves to shew the horrors of the place; those shackles that tyranny has imposed, or crime made necessary; when I survey these emaciated looks, and hear those groans, O my friends, what a glorious exchange would heaven be for these! To fly through regions unconfined as air, to bask in the sunshine of eternal bliss, to crouch over endless hymns of praise, to have no master to threaten or insult us, but the form of Goodness himself for ever in our eyes; when I think of these things, death becomes the messenger of very glad tidings; when I think of these things, his sharpest arrow becomes the staff of my support; when I think of these things, what

‘is there in life worth having? when I think of these things, what is there that should not be spurned away? kings in their palaces should groan for such advantages; but we, humbled as we are, should yearn for them. And shall these things be ours? Ours they will certainly be if we but try for them; and what is a comfort, we are shut out from many temptations that would retard our pursuit. Only let us try for them, and they will certainly be ours; and, what is still a comfort, shortly too; for if we look back on past life, it appears but a very short span, and whatever we may think of the rest of life, it will yet be found of less duration; as we grow older, the days seem to grow shorter, and our intimacy with time, ever lessens the perception of his stay. Then let us take comfort now, for we shall soon be at our journey’s end; we shall soon lay down the heavy burden laid by Heaven upon us; and though death, the only friend of the wretched, for a little while mocks the weary traveller with the view, and like his horizon, still flies before him; yet the time will certainly and shortly come, when we shall cease from our toil; when the luxurious great ones of the world shall no more tread us to the earth; when we shall think with pleasure on our sufferings below; when we shall be surrounded with all our friends, or such as deserved our friendship; when our bliss shall be unutterable, and still, to crown all, unending.’

C H A P. XI.

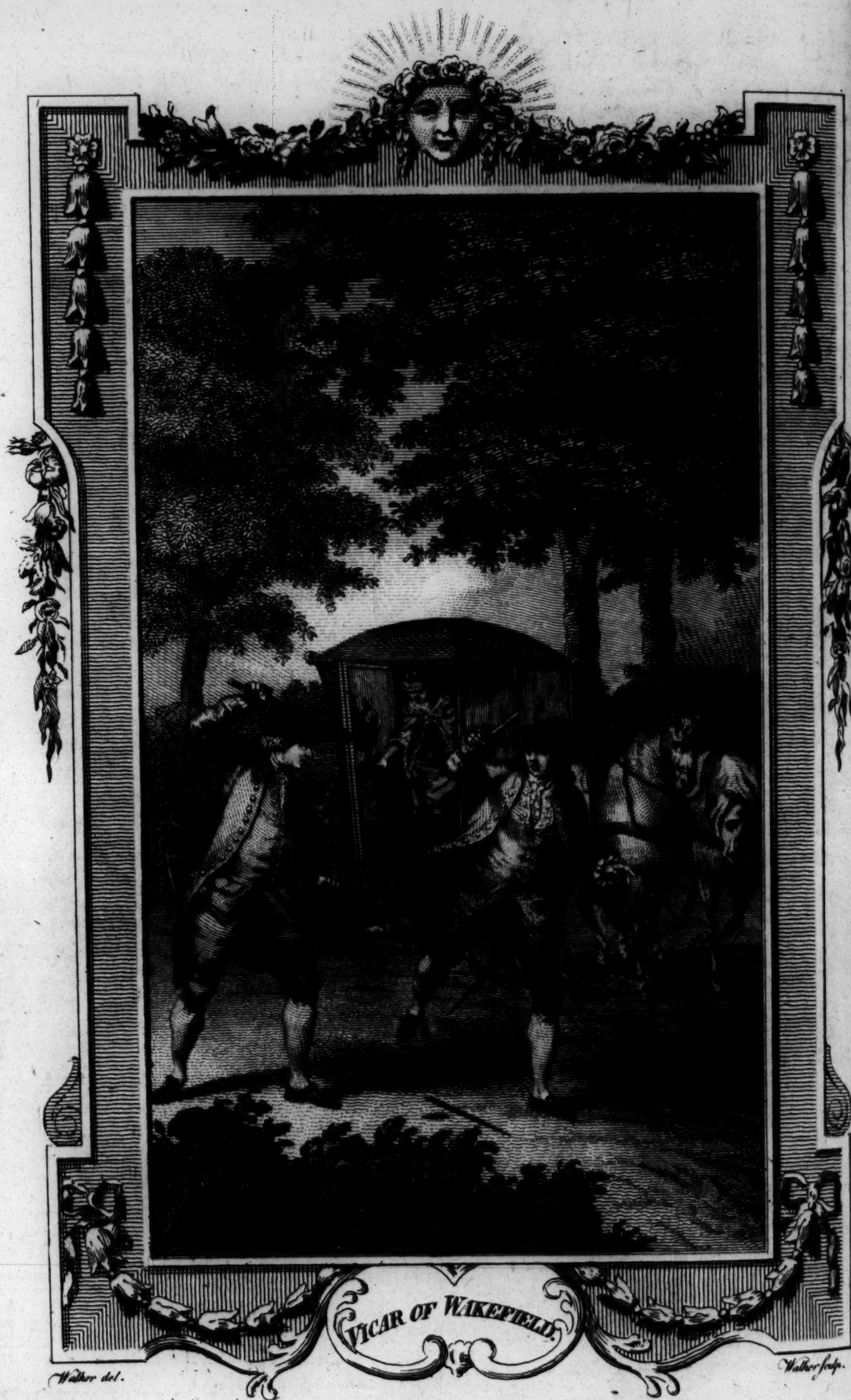
HAPPIER PROSPECTS BEGIN TO APPEAR. LET US BE INFLEXIBLE, AND FORTUNE WILL AT LAST CHANGE IN OUR FAVOUR.

WHEN I had thus finished, and my audience was retired, the gaoler, who was one of the most humane of his profession, hoped I would not be displeased, as what he did was but his duty; observing, that he must be obliged to remove my son into a stronger cell, but he should be permitted to visit me every morning. I thanked him for his clemency, and grasping



TO
LEX-
L AT
OUR.

l, and
d, the
ott hu-
would
id was
he must
into a
oe per-
ing. I
y, and
grasping



grasping my boy's hand, bade him farewell, and be mindful of the great duty that was before him.

I again, therefore, laid me down, and one of my little ones sat by my bedside reading, when Mr. Jenkinson entering, informed me that there was news of my daughter; for that she was seen by a person about two hours before, in a strange gentleman's company, and that they had stopt at a neighbouring village for refreshment, and seemed as if returning to town. He had scarce delivered this news, when the gaoler came with looks of haste and pleasure, to inform me that my daughter was found. Moses came running in a moment after, crying out that his sister Sophy was below, and coming up with our old friend Mr. Burchell.

Just as he delivered this news, my dearest girl entered, and with looks almost wild with pleasure, ran to kiss me in a transport of affection. Her mother's tears and silence also shewed her pleasure. 'Here, papa,' cried the charming girl, 'here is the brave man to whom I owe my delivery; to this gentleman's intrepidity I am indebted for my happiness and safety—' A kiss from Mr. Burchell, whose pleasure seemed even greater than her's, interrupted what she was going to add.

'Ah, Mr. Burchell,' cried I, 'this is but a wretched habitation you now find us in; and we are now very different from what you last saw us. You were ever our friend: we have long discovered our errors with regard to you, and repented of our ingratitude. After the vile usage you then received at my hands, I am almost ashamed to behold your face; yet I hope you'll forgive me, as I was deceived by a base ungenerous wretch, who, under the mask of friendship, has undone me.'

'It is impossible,' replied Mr. Burchell, 'that I should forgive you, as you never deserved my resentment. I partly saw your delusion then, and as it was out of my power to restrain, I could only pity it!'

'It was ever my conjecture,' cried I, 'that your mind was noble; but now I find it so.—But tell me, my dear child, how hast thou been relieved, or who the ruffians were who carried thee away?'

'Indeed, Sir,' replied she, 'as to

the villain who carried me off, I am yet ignorant. For as my mama and I were walking out, he came behind us, and almost before I could call for help, forced me into the post-chaise, and in an instant the horses drove away. I met several on the road, to whom I cried out for assistance; but they disregarded my entreaties. In the mean time the ruffian himself used every art to hinder me from crying out: he flattered and threatened me by turns, and swore that if I continued but silent, he intended no harm. In the mean time, I had broken the canvas that he had drawn up, and whom should I perceive at some distance but your old friend Mr. Burchell, walking along with his usual swiftness, with the great stick for which we used so much to ridicule him. As soon as we came within hearing, I called out to him by name, and intreated his help. I repeated my exclamations several times; upon which, with a very loud voice, he bid the postilion stop; but the boy took no notice, but drove on with still greater speed. I now thought he could never overtake us, when in less than a minute I saw Mr. Burchell come running up by the side of the horses, and with one blow knock the postilion to the ground. The horses when he was fallen soon stopt of themselves, and the ruffian stepping out with oaths and menaces drew his sword, and ordered him at his peril to retire; but Mr. Burchell running up, shivered his sword to pieces, and then pursued him for near a quarter of a mile; but he made his escape. I was at this time come out myself, willing to assist my deliverer; but he soon returned to me in triumph. The postilion, who was recovered, was going to make his escape too; but Mr. Burchell ordered him at his peril to mount again, and drive back to town. Finding it impossible to resist, he reluctantly complied, though the wound he had received seemed, to me at least, to be dangerous. He continued to complain of the pain as we drove along, so that he at last excited Mr. Burchell's compassion; who at my request exchanged him for another at an inn where we called on our return.'

L

'Welcome,

'Welcome, then,' cried I, 'my child; and thou her gallant deliverer, a thousand welcomes. Though our cheer is but wretched, yet our hearts are ready to receive you. And now, Mr. Burchell, as you have delivered my girl, if you think her a recompence she is yours; if you can stoop to an alliance with a family so poor as mine, take her, obtain her consent, as I know you have her heart, and you have mine. And let me tell you, Sir, that I give you no small treasure; she has been celebrated for beauty it is true, but that is not my meaning, I give you up a treasure in her mind.'

'But, I suppose, Sir,' cried Mr. Burchell, 'that you are apprized of my circumstances, and of my incapacity to support her as she deserves?'

'If your present objection,' replied I, 'be meant as an evasion of my offer, I desist: but I know no man so worthy to deserve her as you; and if I could give her thousands, and thousands sought her from me, yet my honest brave Burchell should be my dearest choice.'

To all this his silence alone seemed to give a mortifying refusal, and without the least reply to my offer, he demanded if we could not be furnished with refreshments from the next inn; to which being answered in the affirmative, he ordered them to send in the best dinner that could be provided upon such short notice. He bespoke also a dozen of their best wine; and some cordials for me. Adding, with a smile, that he would stretch a little for once, and though in a prison, asserted he was never better disposed to be merry. The waiter soon made his appearance with preparations for dinner, a table was lent us by the gaoler, who seemed remarkably assiduous, the wine was disposed in order, and two very well-dressed dishes were brought in.

My daughter had not yet heard of her poor brother's melancholy situation, and we all seemed unwilling to damp her cheerfulness by the relation. But it was in vain that I attempted to appear cheerful, the circumstances of my unfortunate son broke through all efforts to dissemble; so that I was at last obliged to damp our mirth by relating his misfortunes, and wishing he might be permitted to share with us in this

little interval of satisfaction. After my guests were recovered from the consternation my account had produced, I requested also that Mr. Jenkinson, a fellow-prisoner, might be admitted, and the gaoler granted my request with an air of unusual submission. The clanking of my son's irons was no sooner heard along the passage, than his sister ran impatiently to meet him; while Mr. Burchell, in the mean time, asked me if my son's name was George; to which replying in the affirmative, he still continued silent. As soon as my boy entered the room, I could perceive he regarded Mr. Burchell with a look of astonishment and reverence.

'Come on,' cried I, 'my son, though we are fallen very low, yet Providence has been pleased to grant us some small relaxation from pain. Thy sister is restored to us, and there is her deliverer: to that brave man it is that I am indebted for yet having a daughter; give him, my boy, the hand of friendship, he deserves our warmest gratitude.'

My son seemed all this while regardless of what I said, and still continued fixed at respectful distance. 'My dear brother,' cried his sister, 'why don't you thank my good deliverer? the brave should ever love each other.'

He still continued his silence and astonishment, till our guest at last perceived himself to be known, and assuming all his native dignity, desired my son to come forward. Never before had I seen any thing so truly majestic as the air he assumed upon this occasion. The greatest object in the universe, says a certain philosopher, is a good man struggling with adversity; yet there is still a greater, which is the good man that comes to relieve it. After he had regarded my son for some time with a superior air, 'I again find,' said he, 'unthinking boy, that the same crime—' But here he was interrupted by one of the gaoler's servants, who came to inform us that a person of distinction, who had driven into town with a chariot and several attendants, sent his respects to the gentleman that was with us, and begged to know when he should think proper to be waited upon. 'Bid the fellow wait,' cried our guest, 'till I shall have leisure to receive him;' and then turning to my

my son, 'I again find, Sir,' proceeded he, 'that you are guilty of the same offence for which you once had my reproof, and for which the law is now preparing it's justest punishments. You imagine, perhaps, that a contempt for your own life, gives you a right to take that of another: but where, Sir, is the difference between a duellist who hazards a life of no value, and the murderer who acts with greater security? Is it any diminution of the gamester's fraud, when he alleges that he has staked a counter?'

'Alas, Sir,' cried I, 'whoever you are, pity the poor misguided creature; for what he has done was in obedience to a deluded mother, who in the bitterness of her resentment required him upon her blessing to avenge her quarrel. Here, Sir, is the letter, which will serve to convince you of her imprudence, and diminish his guilt.'

He took the letter, and hastily read it over. 'This,' says he, 'though not a perfect excuse, is such a palliation of his fault, as induces me to forgive him.—And now, Sir,' continued he, kindly taking my son by the hand, 'I see you are surprized at finding me here; but I have often visited prisons upon occasions less interesting. I am now come to see justice done a worthy man, for whom I have the most sincere esteem. I have long been a disguised spectator of thy father's benevolence. I have at his little dwelling enjoyed respect uncontaminated by flattery, and have received that happiness that courts could not give, from the amusing simplicity round his fire-side. My nephew has been apprized of my intentions of coming here, and I find he is arrived; it would be wronging him and you to condemn him without examination: if there be injury, there shall be redress; and this I may say without boasting, that none have ever taxed the injustice of Sir William Thornhill.'

We now found the personage whom we had so long entertained as an harmless amusing companion, was no other than the celebrated Sir William Thornhill, to whose virtues and singularities scarce any were strangers. The poor Mr. Burchell was in reality a man of large fortune and great interest, to

whom senates listened with applause, and whom party heard with conviction; who was the friend of his country, but loyal to his king. My poor wife recollecting her former familiarity, seemed to shrink with apprehension; but Sophia, who a few moments before thought him her own, now perceiving the immense distance to which he was removed by fortune, was unable to conceal her tears.

'Ah, Sir,' cried my wife, with a piteous aspect, 'how is it possible that I can ever have your forgiveness; the flights you received from me the last time I had the honour of seeing you at our house, and the jokes which I audaciously threw out; these, Sir, I fear, can never be forgiven.'

'My dear good lady,' returned he with a smile, 'if you had your joke, I had my answer: I'll leave it to all the company if mine were not as good as yours. To say the truth, I know nobody whom I am disposed to be angry with at present but the fellow who so frightened my little girl here. I had not even time to examine the rascal's person so as to describe him in an advertisement. Can you tell me, Sophia, my dear, whether you should know him again?'

'Indeed, Sir,' replied she, 'I can't be positive; yet, now I recollect, he had a large mark over one of his eyes.—I ask pardon, Madam,' interrupted Jenkinson, who was by, 'but be so good as to inform me if the fellow wore his own red hair?'—'Yes, I think so,' cried Sophia. 'And did you honour,' continued he, turning to Sir William, 'observe the length of his legs?'—'I can't be sure of their length,' cried the Baronet, 'but I am convinced of their swiftness; for he out-ran me, which is what I thought few men in the kingdom could have done.'—'Please your honour,' cried Jenkinson, 'I know the man: it is certainly the same; the best runner in England; he has beaten Pinwire of Newcastle; Timothy Baxter is his name, I know him perfectly, and the very place of his retreat this moment. If your honour will bid Mr. Gaoler let two of his men go with me, I'll engage to produce him to you in an hour at farthest.' Upon this the gaoler was called, who instantly appearing, Sir

William demanded if he knew him. 'Yes, please your honour,' replied the gaoler, 'I know Sir William Thornhill well, and every body that knows anything of him, will desire to know more of him.'—'Well then,' said the baronet, 'my request is, that you will permit this man and two of your servants to go upon a message by my authority, and as I am in the commission of the peace, I undertake to secure you.'—'Your promise is sufficient,' replied the other, 'and you may at a minute's warning send them over England whenever your honour thinks fit.'

In pursuance of the gaoler's compliance, Jenkinson was dispatched in search of Timothy Baxter, while we were amused with the assiduity of our youngest boy Bill, who had just come in and climbed up to Sir William's neck in order to kiss him. His mother was immediately going to chastise his familiarity, but the worthy man prevented her; and taking the child, all ragged as he was, upon his knee, 'What, Bill, you chubby rogue,' cried he, 'do you remember your old friend Burchell?—and Dick too, my honest veteran, are you here! you shall find I have not forgot you.' So saying, he gave each a large piece of gingerbread, which the poor fellows eat very heartily, as they had got that morning but a very scanty breakfast.

We now sat down to dinner, which was almost cold; but previously, my arm still continuing painful, Sir William wrote a prescription, for he had made the study of physic his amusement, and was more than moderately skilled in the profession: this being sent to an apothecary who lived in the place, my arm was dressed, and I found almost instantaneous relief. We were waited upon at dinner by the gaoler himself, who was willing to do our guest all the honour in his power. But before we had well dined, another message was brought from his nephew, desiring permission to appear, in order to vindicate his innocence and honour; with which request the Baronet complied, and desired Mr. Thornhill to be introduced.

C H A P. XII.

FORMER BENEVOLENCE NOW RE-

PAID WITH UNEXPECTED INTEREST.

MR Thornhill made his entrance with a smile, which he seldom wanted, and was going to embrace his uncle, which the other repulsed with an air of disdain. 'No fawning, Sir, at present,' cried the baronet, with a look of severity, 'the only way to my heart is by the road of honour; but here I only see complicated instances of falsehood, cowardice, and oppression. How is it, Sir, that this poor man, for whom I know you professed a friendship, is used thus hardly? His daughter vilely seduced, as a recompence for his hospitality, and he himself thrown into prison perhaps but for resenting the insult? His son too, whom you feared to face as a man—'

'Is it possible, Sir,' interrupted his nephew, 'that my uncle could object that as a crime, which his repeated instructions alone have persuaded me to avoid.'

'Your rebuke,' cried Sir William, 'is just; you have acted in this instance prudently and well, though not quite as your father would have done: my brother indeed was the soul of honour; but thou—yes you have acted in this instance perfectly right, and it has my warmest approbation.'

'And I hope,' said his nephew, 'that the rest of my conduct will not be found to deserve censure. I appeared, Sir, with this gentleman's daughter at some places of public amusement; thus what was levity, scandal called by a harsher name, and it was reported that I had debauched her. I waited on her father in person, willing to clear the thing to his satisfaction, and he received me only with insult and abuse. As for the rest, with regard to his being here, my attorney and steward can best inform you, as I commit the management of business entirely to them. If he has contracted debts and is unwilling or even unable to pay them, it is their business to proceed in this manner, and I see no hardship or injustice in pursuing the most legal means of redress.'

'If this,' cried Sir William, 'be as you have stated it, there is nothing unpardonable

unpardonable in your offence; and though your conduct might have been more generous, in not suffering this gentleman to be oppressed by subordinate tyranny, yet it has been at least equitable.'

'He cannot contradict a single particular,' replied the squire, 'I defy him to do so, and several of my servants are ready to attest what I say. Thus, Sir,' continued he, finding that I was silent, for in fact I could not contradict him; 'thus, Sir, my own innocence is vindicated: but though at your intreaty I am ready to forgive this gentleman every other offence, yet his attempts to lessen me in your esteem, excite a resentment that I cannot govern; and this too at a time when his son was actually preparing to take away my life; this, I say, was such guilt, that I am determined to let the law take its course. I have here the challenge that was sent me, and two witnesses to prove it; one of my servants has been wounded dangerously, and even though my uncle himself should dissuade me, which I know he will not, yet I will see public justice done, and he shall suffer for it.'

'Thou monster,' cried my wife, 'hast thou not had vengeance enough already, but must my poor boy feel thy cruelty? I hope that good Sir William will protect us, for my son is as innocent as a child; I am sure he is, and never did harm to man.'

'Madam,' replied the good man, 'your wishes for his safety are not greater than mine; but I am sorry to find his guilt too plain; and if my nephew persists——' But the appearance of Jenkinson and the gaoler's two servants now called off our attention, who entered hauling in a tall man, very genteely dressed, and answering the description already given of that ruffian who had carried off my daughter—'Here,' cried Jenkinson, pulling him in, 'here we have him; and if ever there was a candidate for Tyburn, this is one.'

The moment Mr. Thornhill perceived the prisoner, and Jenkinson, who had him in custody, he seemed to shrink backward with terror. His face became pale with conscious guilt, and he would have withdrawn; but Jenkinson, who perceived his design, stopped

him. 'What, squire,' cried he, 'are you ashamed of your two old acquaintances, Jenkinson and Baxter? But this is the way that all great men forget their friends, though I am resolved we will not forget you. Our prisoner, please your honour,' continued he, turning to Sir William, 'has already confessed all. This is the gentleman reported to be dangerously wounded: he declares that it was Mr. Thornhill who first put him upon this affair, that he gave him the clothes he now wears to appear like a gentleman, and furnished him with the post-chaise. The plan was laid between them, that he should carry off the young lady to a place of safety, and that there he should threaten and terrify her; but Mr. Thornhill was to come in, in the mean time, as if by accident, to her rescue, and that they should fight a while, and then he was to have run off, by which Mr. Thornhill would have the better opportunity of gaining her affections himself under the character of her defender.'

Sir William remembered the coat to have been frequently worn by his nephew, and all the rest the prisoner himself confirmed by a more circumstantial account; concluding, that Mr. Thornhill had often declared to him that he was in love with both sisters at the same time.

'Heavens,' cried Sir William, 'what a viper have I been fostering in my bosom! And so fond of public justice too as he seemed to be. But he shall have it; secure him, Mr. Gaoler—yet hold, I fear there is not legal evidence to detain him.'

Upon this Mr. Thornhill, with the utmost humility, intreated that two such abandoned wretches might not be admitted as evidences against him, but that his servants should be examined. 'Your servants?' replied Sir William; 'wretch, call them yours no longer: but come, let us hear what those fellows have to say; let his butler be called.'

When the butler was introduced, he soon perceived by his former master's looks that all his power was now over. 'Tell me,' cried Sir William sternly, 'have you ever seen your master, and that fellow dressed up in his clothes, in company together?'—'Yes, please your

‘ your honour,’ cried the butler, ‘ a thousand times : he was the man that always brought him his ladies.’— ‘ How,’ interrupted young Mr. Thornhill, ‘ this to my face !’— ‘ Yes,’ replied the butler, ‘ or to any man’s face. To tell you a truth, Master Thornhill, I never either loved you or liked you, and I don’t care if I tell you now a piece of my mind.’— ‘ Now then,’ cried Jenkinson, ‘ tell his honour whether you know any thing of me.’— ‘ I can’t say,’ replied the butler, ‘ that I know much good of you. The night that gentleman’s daughter was deluded to our house, you were one of them.’— ‘ So then,’ cried Sir William, ‘ I find you have brought a very fine witness to prove your innocence : thou stain to humanity ! to associate with such wretches !—But,’ (continuing his examination) ‘ you tell me, Mr. Butler, that this was the person who brought him this old gentleman’s daughter.’— ‘ No, please your honour,’ replied the butler, ‘ he did not bring her, for the squire himself undertook that business ; but he brought the priest that pretended to marry them.’— ‘ It is but too true,’ cried Jenkinson, ‘ I cannot deny it, that was the employment assigned me, and I confess it to my confusion.’

‘ Good heavens !’ exclaimed the Baronet, ‘ how every new discovery of his villainy alarms me ! All his guilt is now too plain, and I find his present prosecution was dictated by tyranny, cowardice, and revenge ; at my request, Mr. Gaoler, set this young officer, now your prisoner, free, and trust to me for the consequences. I’ll make it my business to set the affair in a proper light to my friend the magistrate who has committed him. But where is the unfortunate young lady herself ? let her appear to confront this wretch ; I long to know by what arts he has seduced her. Intreat her to come in. Where is she ?’

‘ Ah, Sir,’ said I, ‘ that question stings me to the heart ; I was once indeed happy in a daughter, but her miseries—’ Another interruption here prevented me ; for who should make her appearance but Miss

Arabella Wilmot, who was next day to have been married to Mr. Thornhill. Nothing could equal her surprise at seeing Sir William and his nephew here before her ; for her arrival was quite accidental. It happened that she and the old gentleman her father were passing through the town, on the way to her aunt’s, who had insisted that her nuptials with Mr. Thornhill should be consummated at her house ; but stopping for refreshment, they put up at an inn at the other end of the town. It was there from the window that the young lady happened to observe one of my little boys playing in the street, and instantly sending a footman to bring the child to her, she learnt from him some account of our misfortunes ; but was still kept ignorant of young Mr. Thornhill’s being the cause. Though her father made several remonstrances on the impropriety of going to a prison to visit us, yet they were ineffectual : she desired the child to conduct her, which he did, and it was thus she surprised us at a juncture so unexpected.

Nor can I go on, without a reflection on those accidental meetings, which, though they happen every day, seldom excite our surprise but upon some extraordinary occasion. To what a fortuitous concurrence do we not owe every pleasure and convenience of our lives ! How many seeming accidents must unite, before we can be clothed or fed ! The peasant must be disposed to labour, the shower must fall, the wind fill the merchant’s sail, or numbers must want the usual supply.

We all continued silent for some moments, while my charming pupil, which was the name I generally gave this young lady, united in her looks compassion and astonishment, which gave new finishings to her beauty. ‘ Indeed, my dear Mr. Thornhill,’ cried she to the squire, who she supposed was come here to succour, and not to oppress us, ‘ I take it a little unkindly that you should come here without me, or never inform me of the situation of a family so dear to us both : you know I should take as much pleasure in contributing to the relief of my reverend old master here, whom I shall ever esteem, as you can. But I find that, like your

‘ uncle,

‘uncle, you take a pleasure in doing good in secret.’

‘He find pleasure in doing good!’ cried Sir William, interrupting her; ‘no, my dear, his pleasures are as base as he is. You see in him, Madam, as compleat a villain as ever disgraced humanity. A wretch, who, after having deluded this poor man’s daughter, after plotting against the innocence of her sister, has thrown the father into prison, and the eldest son into fetters, because he had courage to face his betrayer. And give me leave, Madam, now to congratulate you upon an escape from the embraces of such a monster.’

‘O goodness,’ cried the lovely girl, ‘how have I been deceived! Mr. Thornhill informed me for certain, that this gentleman’s eldest son, Captain Primrose, was gone off to America with his new-married lady.’

‘My sweetest miss,’ cried my wife, ‘he has told you nothing but falsehoods. My son George never left the kingdom, nor never was married. Though you have forsaken him, he has always loved you too well to think of any body else; and I have heard him say he would die a bachelor for your sake.’ She then proceeded to expatiate upon the sincerity of her son’s passion, she set his duel with Mr. Thornhill in a proper light, from thence she made a rapid digression to the squire’s debaucheries, his pretended marriages, and ended with a most insulting picture of his cowardice.

‘Good heavens!’ cried Miss Wilmot, ‘how very near have I been to the brink of ruin! But how great is my pleasure to have escaped it! Ten thousand falsehoods has this gentleman told me! He had at last art enough to persuade me that my promise to the only man I esteemed was no longer binding, since he had been unfaithful. By his falsehoods I was taught to detest one equally brave and generous!’

But by this time my son was freed from the incumbrances of justice, as the person supposed to be wounded was detected to be an impostor. Mr. Jenkinson also, who had acted as his valet de chambre, had dressed up his hair, and furnished him with whatever was necessary to make a genteel

appearance. He now therefore entered, handsomely dressed in his regimentals, and, without vanity (for I am above it) he appeared as handsome a fellow as ever wore a military dress. As he entered, he made Miss Wilmot a modest and distant bow, for he was not as yet acquainted with the change which the eloquence of his mother had wrought in his favour. But no decorums could restrain the impatience of his blushing mistress to be forgiven. Her tears, her looks, all contributed to discover the real sensations of her heart, for having forgotten her former promise, and having suffered herself to be deluded by an impostor. My son appeared amazed at her condescension, and could scarce believe it real.—

‘Sure, Madam,’ cried he, ‘this is but delusion! I can never have merited this! To be blest thus, is to be too happy.’—‘No, Sir,’ replied she, ‘I have been deceived, basely deceived, else nothing could have ever made me unjust to my promise. You know my friendship, you have long known it; but forget what I have done, and as you once had my warmest vows of constancy, you shall now have them repeated; and be assured that if your Arabella cannot be yours, she shall never be another’s.’—‘And no other’s you shall be,’ cried Sir William, ‘if I have any influence with your father.’

This hint was sufficient for my son Moses, who immediately flew to the inn where the old gentleman was, to inform him of every circumstance that had happened. But in the mean time the squire, perceiving that he was on every side undone, now finding that no hopes were left from flattery or dissimulation, concluded that his wisest way would be to turn and face his pursuers. Thus, laying aside all shame, he appeared the open hardy villain. ‘I find then,’ cried he, ‘that I am to expect no justice here; but I am resolved it shall be done me. You shall know, Sir,’ turning to Sir William, ‘I am no longer a poor dependant upon your favours. I scorn them. Nothing can keep Miss Wilmot’s fortune from me, which, I thank her father’s assiduity, is pretty large. The articles, and a bond for her fortune, are signed, and safe in my possession. It was her fortune,

not

'not her person, that induced me to wish for this match; and possessed of the one, let who will take the other.'

This was an alarming blow; Sir William was sensible of the justness of his claims, for he had been instrumental in drawing up the marriage-articles himself. Miss Wilmot therefore perceiving that her fortune was irretrievably lost, turning to my son, she asked if the loss of fortune could lessen her value to him: 'Though fortune,' said she, 'is out of my power, at least I have my hand to give.'

'And that, Madam,' cried her real lover, 'was indeed all that you ever had to give: at least, all that I ever thought worth the acceptance. And I now protest, my Arabella, by all that's happy, your want of fortune this moment increases my pleasure, as it serves to convince my sweet girl of my sincerity.'

Mr. Wilmot now entering, he seemed not a little pleased at the danger his daughter had just escaped, and readily consented to a dissolution of the match. But finding that her fortune, which was secured to Mr. Thornhill by bond, would not be given up, nothing could exceed his disappointment. He now saw that his money must all go to enrich one who had no fortune of his own. He could bear his being a rascal, but to want an equivalent to his daughter's fortune was wormwood. He sat therefore, for some minutes, employed in the most mortifying speculation, till Sir William attempted to lessen his anxiety. 'I must confess, Sir,' cried he, 'that your present disappointment does not entirely displease me. Your immoderate passion for wealth is now justly punished. But though the young lady cannot be rich, she has still a sufficient competence to give content. Here you see an honest young soldier, who is willing to take her without fortune; they have long loved each other, and for the friendship I bear his father, my interest shall not be wanting in his promotion. Leave, then, that ambition which disappoints you, and for once admit that happiness which courts your acceptance.'

'Sir William,' replied the old gentleman, 'be assured I never yet forced her inclinations, nor will I now. If

she still continues to love this young gentleman, let her have him with all my heart. There is still, thank Heaven, some fortune left, and your promise will make it something more. Only let my old friend here' (meaning me) 'give me a promise of settling six thousand pounds upon my girl, if ever he should come to his fortune, and I am ready this night to be the first to join them together.'

As it now remained with me to make the young couple happy, I readily gave a promise of making the settlement he required; which, to one who had such little expectations as I, was no great favour. We had now therefore the satisfaction of seeing them fly into each other's arms in a transport. 'After all my misfortunes,' cried my son George, 'to be thus rewarded! Sure this is more than I could ever have presumed to hope for. To be possessed of all that's good, and after such an interval of pain! My warmest wishes could never rise so high!'—'Yes, my George,' returned his lovely bride, 'now let the wretch take my fortune; since you are happy without it, so am I. O what an exchange have I made, from the basest of men to the dearest, best! Let him enjoy our fortune, I now can be happy even in indigence.'

—'And I promise you,' cried the squire, with a malicious grin, 'that I shall be very happy with what you despise.'—'Hold, hold, Sir,' cried Jenkinson, 'there are two words to that bargain. As for that lady's fortune, Sir, you shall never touch a single stiver of it.—Pray, your honour,' continued he to Sir William, 'can the squire have this lady's fortune if he be married to another?'—'How can you make such a simple demand?' replied the Baronet; 'undoubtedly he cannot.'—'I am sorry for that,' cried Jenkinson; 'for as this gentleman and I have been old fellow-sporters, I must declare, well as I love him, that his contract is not worth a tobacco-stopper, for he is married already.'—'You lye like a rascal,' returned the squire, who seemed roused by this insult; 'I never was legally married to any woman.'—'Indeed, begging your honour's pardon,' replied the other, 'you were; and I hope you will shew a proper return of friendship

friendship to your own honest Jenkinson, who brings you a wife, and if the company restrains their curiosity a few minutes, they shall see her."—So saying, he went off with his usual celerity, and left us all unable to form any probable conjecture as to his design. "Aye, let him go," cried the squire; "whatever else I may have done, I defy him there. I am too old now to be frightened with squibs."

"I am surprized," said the baronet, "what the fellow can intend by this. Some low piece of humour, I suppose!"—"Perhaps, Sir," replied I, "he may have a more serious meaning. For when we reflect on the various schemes this gentleman has laid to seduce innocence, perhaps some one more artful than the rest has been found able to deceive him. When we consider what numbers he has ruined, how many parents now feel with anguish the infamy and the contamination which he has brought into their families, it would not surprize me if some of them—Amazement! Do I see my lost daughter! Do I hold her! It is, it is my life, my happiness. I thought thee lost, my Olivia, yet still I hold thee, and still thou shalt live to bless me." The warmest transports of the fondest lover were not greater than mine, when I saw him introduce my child, and held my daughter in my arms, whose silence only spoke her raptures. "And art thou returned to me, my darling," cried I, "to be my comfort in age!"—"That she is," cried Jenkinson, "and make much of her, for she is your own honourable child, and as honest a woman as any in the whole room, let the other be who she will.—And as for you, squire, as sure as you stand there, this young lady is your lawful wedded wife. And to convince you that I speak nothing but truth, here is the licence by which you were married together." So saying, he put the licence into the baronet's hands, who read it, and found it perfect in every respect. "And now, gentlemen," continued he, "I find you are surprized at all this; but a few words will explain the difficulty. That there squire of renown, for whom I have a great friendship, but that's between ourselves, has often employed me in doing odd little things

for him. Among the rest, he commissioned me to procure him a false licence and a false priest, in order to deceive this young lady. But as I was very much his friend, what did I do but went and got a true licence and a true priest, and married them both as fast as the cloth could make them. Perhaps you'll think it was generosity that made me do all this. But no. To my shame I confess it, my only design was to keep the licence and let the squire know that I could prove it upon him whenever I thought proper, and so make him come down whenever I wanted money." A burst of pleasure now seemed to fill the whole apartment; our joy reached even to the common room, where the prisoners themselves sympathized,

And shook their chains
In transport and rude harmony.

Happiness was expanded upon every face, and even Olivia's cheek seemed flushed with pleasure. To be thus restored to reputation, to friends and fortune at once, was a rapture sufficient to stop the progress of decay, and restore former health and vivacity. But perhaps among all there was not one who felt sincerer pleasure than I. Still holding the dear-loved child in my arms, I asked my heart if these transports were not delusive. "How could you," cried I, turning to Mr. Jenkinson, "how could you add to my miseries by the story of her death? But it matters not; my pleasure at finding her again, is more than a recompence for the pain."

"As to your question," replied Jenkinson, "that is easily answered. I thought the only probable means of freeing you from prison, was by submitting to the squire, and consenting to his marriage with the other young lady. But these you had vowed never to grant while your daughter was living; there was therefore no other method to bring things to bear, but by persuading you that she was dead. I prevailed on your wife to join in the deceit, and we have not had a fit opportunity of undeceiving you till now."

In the whole assembly now there only appeared two faces that did not glow with transport. Mr. Thornhill's

M

assurance

assurance had entirely forsaken him: he now saw the gulph of infamy and want before him, and trembled to take the plunge. He therefore fell on his knees before his uncle, and in a voice of piercing misery implored compassion. Sir William was going to spurn him away, but at my request he raised him, and after pausing a few moments, 'Thy vices, crimes, and ingratitude,' cried he, 'deserve no tenderness; yet thou shalt not be entirely forsaken, a bare competence shall be supplied, to support the wants of life, but not it's follies. This young lady, thy wife, shall be put in possession of a third part of that fortune which once was thine, and from her tenderness alone thou art to expect any extraordinary supplies for the future.' He was going to express his gratitude for such kindness in a set speech; but the baronet prevented him, by bidding him not aggravate his meanness, which was already but too apparent. He ordered him at the same time to be gone, and from all his former domesticks to chuse one such as he should think proper, which was all that should be granted to attend him.

As soon as he left us, Sir William very politely stepped up to his new niece with a smile, and wished her joy. His example was followed by Miss Wilmot and her father; my wife too kissed her daughter with much affection, as, to use her own expression, she was now made an honest woman of. Sophia and Moses followed in turn, and even our benefactor Jenkinson desired to be admitted to that honour. Our satisfaction seemed scarce capable of increase. Sir William, whose greatest pleasure was in doing good, now looked round with a countenance open as the sun, and saw nothing but joy in the looks of all except that of my daughter Sophia, who, for some reasons we could not comprehend, did not seem perfectly satisfied. 'I think now,' cried he with a smile, 'that all the company, except one or two, seem perfectly happy. There only remains an act of justice for me to do. You are sensible, Sir,' continued he, turning to me, 'of the obligations we both owe Mr. Jenkinson. And it is but just we should both reward him for it. Miss Sophia will, I am sure, make him very happy, and he shall

have from me five hundred pounds as her fortune, and upon this I am sure they can live very comfortably together. Come, Miss Sophia, what say you to this match of my making? Will you have him? My poor girl seemed almost sinking into her mother's arms at the hideous proposal. 'Have him, Sir!' cried she faintly. 'No, Sir, never.'—'What,' cried he again, 'not Mr. Jenkinson, your benefactor, a handsome young fellow, with five hundred pounds and good expectations!'—'I beg, Sir,' returned she, scarce able to speak, 'that you'll desist, and not make me so very wretched.'—'Was ever such obstinacy known,' cried he again, 'to refuse a man whom the family has such infinite obligations to, who has preserved your sister, and who has five hundred pounds! What, not have him!'—'No, Sir, never,' replied she angrily; 'I'd sooner die first.'—'If that be the case then,' cried he, 'if you will not have him—I think I must have you myself.' And so saying, he caught her to his breast with ardour. 'My loveliest, my most sensible of girls,' cried he, 'how could you ever think you own Burchell could deceive you, or that Sir William Thornhill could ever cease to admire a mistress that loved him for himself alone? I have for some years sought for a woman, who, a stranger to my fortune, could think that I had merit as a man. After having tried in vain, even among the pert and the ugly, how great at last must be my rapture, to have made a conquest over such sense and such heavenly beauty!' Then turning to Jenkinson, 'As I cannot, Sir, part with this young lady myself, for she has taken a fancy to the cut of my face, all the recompence I can make is to give you her fortune, and you may call upon my steward to-morrow for five hundred pounds.' Thus we had all our compliments to repeat, and Lady Thornhill underwent the same round of ceremony that her sister had done before. In the meantime Sir William's gentleman appeared to tell us that the equipages were ready to carry us to the inn, where every thing was prepared for our reception. My wife and I led the van, and left those gloomy mansions of sorrow. The

generous

generous baronet ordered forty pounds to be distributed among the prisoners, and Mr. Wilmot, induced by his example, gave half that sum. We were received below by the shouts of the villagers, and I saw and shook by the hand two or three of my honest parishioners, who were among the number. They attended us to our inn, where a sumptuous entertainment was provided, and coarser provisions distributed in great quantities among the populace.

After supper, as my spirits were exhausted by the alteration of pleasure and pain which they had sustained during the day, I asked permission to withdraw, and leaving the company in the midst of their mirth, as soon as I found myself alone, I poured out my heart in gratitude to the Giver of joy as well as sorrow, and then slept undisturbed till morning.

CHAP. XIII.

THE CONCLUSION.

THE next morning as soon as I awaked, I found my eldest son sitting at my bedside, who came to increase my joy with another turn of fortune in my favour. First having released me from the settlement that I had made the day before in his favour, he let me know that my merchant who had failed in town was arrested at Antwerp, and there had given up effects to a much greater amount than what was due to his creditors. My boy's generosity pleased me almost as much as this unlooked for good fortune. But I had some doubts whether I ought in justice to accept his offer. While I was pondering upon this, Sir William entered the room, to whom I communicated my doubts. His opinion was, that as my son was already possessed of a very affluent fortune by his marriage, I might accept his offer without any hesitation. His business, however, was to inform me, that as he had the night before sent for the licences, and expected them every hour, he hoped that I would not refuse my assistance in making all the company happy that morning. A footman entered while we were speaking, to tell us that the messenger was returned; and as I was by

this time ready, I went down, where I found the whole company as merry as affluence and innocence could make them. However, as they were now preparing for a very solemn ceremony, their laughter entirely displeased me. I told them of the grave, becoming, and sublime deportment, they should assume upon this mystical occasion, and read them too homilies and a thesis of my own composing, in order to prepare them. Yet they still seemed perfectly refractory and ungovernable. Even as we were going along to church, to which I led the way, all gravity had quite forsaken them, and I was often tempted to turn back in indignation. In church a new dilemma arose, which promised no easy solution. This was, which couple should be married first; my son's bride warmly insisted, that Lady Thornhill (that was to be) should take the lead; but this the other refused with equal ardour, protesting she would not be guilty of such rudeness for the world. The argument was supported for some time between both with equal obstinacy and good-breeding. But as I stood all this time with my book ready, I was at last quite tired of the contest, and shutting it, 'I perceive,' cried I, 'that none of you have a mind to be married, and I think we had as good go back again; for I suppose there will be no business done here to-day.' This at once reduced them to reason. The baronet and his lady were first married, and then my son and his lovely partner.

I had previously that morning given orders that a coach should be sent for my honest neighbour Flamborough and his family, by which means, upon our return to the inn, we had the pleasure of finding the two Miss Flamboroughs alighted before us. Mr. Jenkinson gave his hand to the eldest, and my son Moses led up the other; (and I have since found that he has taken a real liking to the girl, and my consent and bounty he shall have whenever he thinks proper to demand them.) We were no sooner returned to the inn, but numbers of my parishioners, hearing of my success, came to congratulate me, but among the rest were those who rose to rescue me, and whom I formerly rebuked with such sharpness. I told the story to Sir William, my son-in-law,

in-law, who went out and reproved them with great severity; but finding them quite disheartened by this harsh reproof, he gave them half a guinea apiece to drink his health and raise their dejected spirits.

Soon after this we were called to a very genteel entertainment, which was dressed by Mr. Thornhill's cook. And it may not be improper to observe with respect to that gentleman, that he now resides in quality of companion at a relation's house, being very well liked and seldom sitting at the side-table except when there is no room at the other; for they make no stranger of him. His time is pretty much taken up in keeping his relation, who is a little melancholy, in spirits, and in learning to blow the French horn. My eldest daughter, however, still remembers him with regret; and she has even told me, though I make a great secret of it, that when he reforms she may be brought to relent. But to return, for I am not apt to digress thus; when we were to sit down to dinner, our ceremonies were going to be renewed. The question was, whether my eldest daughter, as being a matron, should not sit above the two young brides; but the debate was cut short by my son George, who proposed that the company should sit indiscriminately, every gentleman by his lady. This was re-

ceived with great approbation by all, excepting my wife, who I could perceive was not perfectly satisfied, as she expected to have had the pleasure of sitting at the head of the table and carving all the meat for all the company. But notwithstanding this, it is impossible to describe our good-humour. I can't say whether we had more wit amongst us now than usual; but I am certain we had more laughing, which answered the end as well. One jest I particularly remember; old Mr. Wilmot drinking to Moses, whose head was turned another way, my son replied, 'Madam, I thank you.' Upon which, the old gentleman winking upon the rest of the company, observed that he was thinking of his mistress. At which jest I thought the two Miss Flamboroughs would have died with laughing. As soon as dinner was over, according to my old custom, I requested that the table might be taken away, to have the pleasure of seeing all my family assembled once more by a cheerful fire-side. My two little ones sat upon each knee, the rest of the company by their partners. I had nothing now on this side of the grave to wish for, all my cares were over, my pleasure was unspeakable. It now only remained, that my gratitude in good fortune should exceed my former submission in adversity.

F I N I S.

4 APR 1844

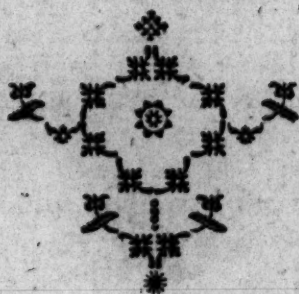
THE
ADVENTURES
OF
RODERICK RANDOM.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

BY DR. SMOLLET.

ET GENUS ET VIRTUS, NISI CUM RE, VILIOR ALGA EST.

HOR.



L O N D O N :

Printed for HARRISON and Co. No. 18, Paternoster-Row.

M DCC LXXX.



THE
P R E F A C E.

OF all kinds of satire, there is none so entertaining and universally improving, as that which is introduced, as it were, occasionally, in the course of an interesting story, which brings every incident home to life; and by representing familiar scenes in an uncommon and amusing point of view, invests them with all the graces of novelty, while nature is appealed to in every particular.

The Reader gratifies his curiosity, in pursuing the adventures of a person in whose favour he is prepossessed; he espouses his cause, he sympathizes with him in distress, his indignation is heated against the authors of his calamity; the humane passions are inflamed; the contrast between dejected virtue, and insulting vice, appears with greater aggravation, and every impression having a double force on the imagination, the memory retains the circumstance, and the heart improves by the example. The attention is not tired with a bare catalogue of characters, but agreeably diverted with all the variety of invention; and the vicissitudes of life appear in their peculiar circumstances, opening an ample field for wit and humour.

Romance, no doubt, owes its origin to ignorance, vanity, and superstition. In the dark ages of the world, when a man had rendered himself famous for wisdom or valour, his family and adherents availed themselves of his superior qualities, magnified his virtues, and represented his character and person as sacred and supernatural. The vulgar easily swallowed the bait, implored his protection, and yielded the tribute of homage and praise even to adoration; his exploits were handed down to posterity with a thousand exaggerations; they were repeated as incitements to virtue; divine honours were paid, and altars erected to his memory, for the encouragement of those who attempted to imitate his example; and hence arose the heathen mythology, which is no other than a collection of extravagant romances. As learning advanced, and genius received cultivation, these stories were embellished with the graces of poetry; that they might the better recommend themselves to the attention, they were sung in public, at festivals, for the instruction and delight of the audience; and rehearsed before battle,

as incentives to deeds of glory. Thus tragedy and the epic muse were born; and, in the progress of taste, arrived at perfection.—— It is no wonder, that the ancients could not relish a fable in prose, after they had seen so many remarkable events celebrated in verse, by their best poets; we therefore find no romance among them, during the æra of their excellence, unless the *Cyropædia* of Xénophon may be so called; and it was not till arts and sciences began to revive, after the irruption of the Barbarians into Europe, that any thing of this kind appeared. But when the minds of men were debauched by the imposition of priest-craft to the most absurd pitch of credulity; the authors of romance arose, and losing sight of probability, filled their performances with the most monstrous hyperboles. If they could not equal the ancient poets in point of genius, they were resolved to excel them in fiction, and apply to the wonder rather than the judgment of their readers: Accordingly they brought necromancy to their aid, and instead of supporting the character of their heroes by dignity of sentiment and practice, distinguished them by their bodily strength, activity, and extravagance of behaviour. Although nothing could be more ludicrous and unnatural than the figures they drew, they did not want patrons and admirers, and the world actually began to be infected with the spirit of knight-errantry; when Cervantes, by an inimitable piece of ridicule, reformed the taste of mankind, representing chivalry in the right point of view, and converting romance to purposes far more useful and entertaining, by making it assume the sock, and point out the follies of ordinary life.

The same method has been practised by other Spanish and French authors, and by none more successfully than by *Monfieur Le Sage*, who in his *Adventures of Gil Blas*, has described the knavery and foibles of life, with infinite humour and sagacity.—— The following sheets I have modelled on his plan, taking the liberty, however, to differ from him in the execution, where I thought his particular situations were uncommon, extravagant, or peculiar to the country in which the scene is laid.—— The disgraces of *Gil Blas* are, for the most part, such as rather excite mirth than compassion; he himself laughs at them; and his transitions from distress to happiness, or at least ease, are so sudden, that neither the reader has time to pity him, nor himself to be acquainted with affliction. This conduct, in my opinion, not only deviates from probability, but prevents that generous indignation which ought to animate the reader, against the sordid and vicious disposition of the world.

I have attempted to represent modest merit struggling with every difficulty to which a friendless orphan is exposed, from his own want of experience, as well as from the selfishness, envy, malice, and base indifference of mankind.—— To secure a favourable prepossession, I have allowed him the advantages of birth and education, which in the series of his misfortunes will, I hope, engage the ingenious more warmly in his behalf; and though I foresee, that some people will be offended at the mean scenes in which he is involved, I persuade myself the judicious will not only perceive the necessity of describing those situations to which he must of course be confined, in his low estate, but also find entertainment in viewing those parts of life, where the humours and passions are disguised by affectation, ceremony,

P R E F A C E.

v

ceremony, or education; and the whimsical peculiarities of disposition appear as nature has implanted them.—But, I believe, I need not trouble myself is vindicating a practice authorized by the best writers in this way, some of whom I have already named.

Every intelligent reader will, at first sight, perceive I have not deviated from nature, in the facts; which are all true in the main, although the circumstances are altered and disguised, to avoid personal satire.

It now remains to give my reasons for making the chief personage of this work a North Briton; which are chiefly these: I could at a small expence bestow on him such education as I thought the dignity of his birth and character required, which could not possibly be obtained in England, by such slender means as the nature of my plan would afford.—In the next place, I could represent simplicity of manners in a remote part of the kingdom, with more propriety than in any place near the capital; and lastly, the disposition of the Scots, addicted to travelling, justifies my conduct in deriving an adventurer from that country.

That the delicate reader may not be offended at the unmeaning oaths which proceed from the mouths of some persons in these memoirs, I beg leave to premise, that I imagined nothing could more effectually expose the absurdity of such miserable expletives, than a natural and verbal representation of the discourse in which they occur.

B

A P O.

A P O L O G U E.

A Young painter indulging a vein of pleasantry, sketched a kind of conversation-piece, representing a bear, an owl, a monkey, and an ass; and to render it more striking, humorous, and moral, distinguished every figure by some emblem of human life:

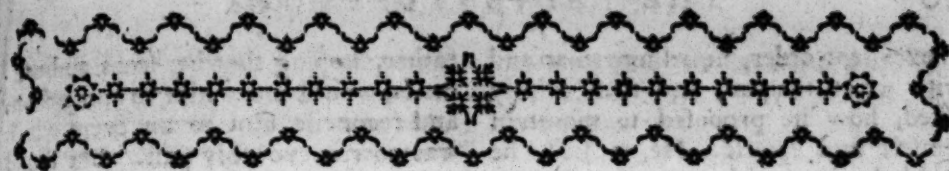
Bruin was exhibited in the garb and attitude of an old, toothless, drunken soldier; the owl perched upon the handle of a coffee-pot, with spectacles on nose, seemed to contemplate a newspaper; and the ass ornamented with a huge tye-wig, (which, however, could not conceal his long ears) sat for his picture to the monkey, who appeared with the implements of painting. This whimsical groupe afforded some mirth, and met with general approbation, until some mischievous wag hinted that the whole was a lampoon upon the friends of the performer: an insinuation which was no sooner circulated, than those very people who applauded it before, began to be alarmed, and even to fancy themselves signified by the several figures of the piece.

Among others, a worthy personage in years, who had served in the army with reputation, being incensed at the supposed outrage, repaired to the lodgings of the painter, and finding him at home, 'Hark ye, Mr. Monkey,' said he, 'I have a good mind to convince you, that though the bear has lost his teeth, he retains his paws, and that he is not so drunk but he can perceive your impertinence. 'Sblood! Sir, that toothless jaw is a damned scandalous libel; but don't you imagine me so chopfallen as not to be able to chew the cud of resentment.'—Here he was interrupted by the arrival of a learned physician, who advancing to the culprit with fury in his aspect, exclaimed, 'Suppose the augmentation of the ass's ears should prove the diminution of the baboon's: nay, seek not to prevaricate; for, by the beard of Æsculapius! there is not one hair in this periwig that will not stand up in judgment to convict thee of personal abuse.—Do but observe, captain, how this pitiful little fellow has copied the very curls; the colour, indeed, is different, but then the form and foretop are quite similar.'—While he thus remonstrated in a strain of vociferation, a venerable senator entered, and waddling up to the delinquent, 'Jackanapes!' cried he, 'I will now let thee see I can read something else than a newspaper, and that without the help of spectacles. Here is your own note of hand, sirrah, for money, which if I had not advanced, you yourself would have resembled an owl, in not daring to shew your face by day, you ungrateful, slanderous knave!'

In vain the astonished painter declared that he had no intention to give offence, or to characterize particular persons: they affirmed the resemblance was too palpable to be overlooked; they taxed him with insolence, malice, and ingratitude; and their clamours being overheard by the public, the captain was a bear, the doctor an ass, and the senator an owl, to his dying day:

Christian reader, I beseech thee, in the bowels of the Lord, remember this example while thou art employed in the perusal of the following sheets; and seek not to appropriate to thyself that which equally belongs to five hundred different people. If thou shouldest meet with a character that reflects thee in some ungracious particular, keep thy own counsel; consider that one feature makes not a face, and that though thou art, perhaps, distinguished by a bottle-nose, twenty of thy neighbours may be in the same predicament.

THE



T H E
A D V E N T U R E S
O F
R O D E R I C K R A N D O M.

VOLUME THE FIRST.

C H A P. I.

OF MY BIRTH AND PARENTAGE.

I Was born in the northern part of this united kingdom, in the house of my grandfather, a gentleman of considerable fortune and influence, who had on many occasions signalized himself in behalf of his country; and was remarkable for his abilities in the law, which he exercised with great success, in the station of a judge, particularly against beggars, for whom he had a singular aversion.

My father (his youngest son) falling in love with a poor relation, who lived with the old gentleman in quality of house-keeper, espoused her privately; and I was the first fruit of that marriage. During her pregnancy, a dream discomposed my mother so much, that her husband, tired with her importunity, at last consulted a highland seer, whose favourable interpretation he would have secured before-hand by a bribe, but found him incorruptible. She dreamed, she was delivered of a tennis-ball, which the devil (who, to her great surprise, acted the part of midwife) struck so forcibly with a racket, that it disappeared in an instant: and she was for some time inconsolable for the loss of her offspring; when, all of a sudden, she beheld it return with equal violence, and enter the earth beneath her feet,

whence immediately sprung up a goodly tree covered with blossoms, the scent of which operated so strongly on her nerves that she awoke. The attentive sage, after some deliberation, assured my parents, that their first-born would be a great traveller; that he would undergo many dangers and difficulties, and at last return to his native land, where he would flourish in happiness and reputation. How truly this was foretold, will appear in the sequel. It was not long before some officious person informed my grandfather of certain familiarities that passed between his son and house-keeper, which alarmed him so much that, a few days after, he told my father it was high time for him to think of settling; and that he had provided a match for him, to which he could in justice have no objections. My father, finding it would be impossible to conceal his situation much longer, frankly owned what he had done; and excused himself for not having asked the consent of his father, by saying, he knew it would have been to no purpose; and that, had his inclination been known, my grandfather might have taken such measures as would have effectually put the gratification of it out of his power: he added, that no exceptions could be taken to his wife's virtue, birth, beauty, and good sense; as for fortune, it was beneath his care. The old gentleman, who kept all his passions, except one, in

in excellent order, heard him to an end with great temper; and then calmly asked, how he proposed to maintain himself and spouse. He replied, he could be in no danger of wanting, while his father's tenderness remained, which he and his wife should always cultivate with the utmost veneration: that he was persuaded his allowance would be suitable to the dignity and circumstances of his family; and to the provision already made for his brothers and sisters, who were happily settled under his protection. 'Your brothers and sisters,' said my grandfather, 'did not think it beneath them to consult me in an affair of such importance as matrimony; neither, I suppose, would you have omitted that piece of duty, had not you some secret fund in reserve; to the comforts of which I leave you, with a desire that you will this night seek out another habitation for yourself and wife; whither, in a short time, I will send you an account of the expense I have been at in your education, with a view of being reimbursed. Sir, you have made the grand tour; you are a polite gentleman; a very pretty gentleman; I wish you a great deal of joy, and am your very humble servant.' So saying, he left my father in a situation easily imagined. However, he did not long hesitate; for, being perfectly well acquainted with his father's disposition, he did not doubt that he was glad of this pretence to get rid of him; and his resolves being invariable as the laws of the Medes and Persians, he knew that it would be to no purpose to attempt him by prayers and intreaties; so without any farther application, he betook himself, with his disconsolate bedfellow, to a farm-house, where an old servant of his mother dwelt; there they remained for some time in a situation but ill adapted to the elegance of their desires and tenderness of their love; which nevertheless my father chose to endure, rather than supplicate an unnatural and inflexible parent: but my mother, foreseeing the inconveniences to which she must have been exposed, had she been delivered in this place, (and her pregnancy was very far advanced) without communicating her design to her husband, went in disguise to the house of my grand-

father, hoping that her tears and condition would move him to compassion, and reconcile him to an event which was now irrevocably past. She found means to deceive the servants, and was introduced as an unfortunate lady, who wanted to complain of some matrimonial grievances, it being my grandfather's particular province to decide in all cases of scandal. She was accordingly admitted into his presence, where discovering herself she fell at his feet, and in the most affecting manner implored his forgiveness; at the same time, representing the danger that threatened not only her life, but that of his own grand-child which was about to see the light. He told her, he was sorry that the indiscretion of her and his son had compelled him to make a vow, which put it out of his power to give any assistance. That he had already imparted his thoughts on that subject to her husband, and was surprised that they should disturb his peace with any farther importunity. This said, he retired. The violence of my mother's affliction had such an effect on her constitution, that she was immediately seized with the pains of childbed; and had not an old maid-servant, to whom she was very dear, afforded her pity and assistance, at the hazard of incurring my grandfather's displeasure, she and the innocent fruit of her womb must have fallen miserable victims to his rigour and inhumanity. By the friendship of this poor woman, she was carried up to a garret, and immediately delivered of a man-child, the story of whose unfortunate birth he himself now relates. My father being informed of what had happened, flew to the embraces of his darling spouse, and while he loaded his offspring with paternal caresses, could not forbear shedding a flood of tears, on beholding the dear partner of his heart (for whose ease he would have sacrificed the treasures of the East) stretched upon a flock-bed, in a miserable apartment, unable to protect her from the inclemencies of the weather. It is not to be supposed that the old gentleman was ignorant of what passed, though he affected to know nothing of the matter, and pretended to be very much surprised, when one of his grandchildren, by his eldest son deceased, who lived with him as his heir-apparent, acquaint-

ed him with the affair; he determined therefore to observe no medium, but immediately (on the third day after her delivery) sent her a peremptory order to be gone, and turned off the servant who had preserved her life. This behaviour so exasperated my father, that he had recourse to the most dreadful imprecations; and on his bare knees implored that Heaven would renounce him, if ever he should forget or forgive the barbarity of his fire. The injuries which this unhappy mother received from her removal in such circumstances, and the want of necessities where she lodged, together with her grief and anxiety of mind, soon threw her into a languishing disorder, which put an end to her life. My father, who loved her tenderly, was so affected with her death, that he remained six weeks deprived of his senses: during which time, the people where he lodged carried the infant to the old man, who relented so far, on hearing the melancholy story of his daughter-in-law's death, and the deplorable condition of his son, as to send the child to nurse, and he ordered my father to be carried home to his house, where he soon recovered the use of his reason. Whether this hard-hearted judge felt any remorse for his cruel treatment of his son and daughter; or (which is more probable) was afraid his character would suffer in the neighbourhood; he professed great sorrow for his conduct to my father, whose delirium was succeeded by a profound melancholy and reserve. At length he disappeared, and notwithstanding all imaginary inquiry, could not be heard of, a circumstance which confirmed most people in the opinion of his having made away with himself in a fit of despair. How I understood the particulars of my birth, will appear in the course of these memoirs.

CHAP. II.

I GROW UP—AM HATED BY MY RELATIONS—SENT TO SCHOOL—NEGLECTED BY MY GRANDFATHER—MALTREATED BY MY MASTER—SEASONED TO ADVERSITY—I FORM CABALS AGAINST THE PEDANT—AM DEBARRED ACCESS TO MY GRANDFATHER

—HUNTED BY HIS HEIR—I DEMOLISH THE TEETH OF HIS TUTOR.

THERE were not wanting some, who suspected my uncles of being concerned in my father's fate, on the supposition that they would all share in the patrimony destined for him: and this conjecture was strengthened by reflecting, that in all his calamities they never discovered the least inclination to serve him; but, on the contrary, by all the artifices in their power, fed his father's resentment, and supported his resolution of leaving him to misery and want. But people of judgment treated this insinuation as an idle chimera; because, had my relations been so wicked as to consult their interest by committing such an atrocious crime, the fate of my father would have extended to me too, whose life was another obstacle to their expectation. Meanwhile, I grew apace, and as I strongly resembled my father, who was the darling of the tenants, I wanted nothing which their indigent circumstances could afford: but their favour was a weak resource against the jealous enmity of my cousins; who the more my infancy promised, conceived the more implacable hatred against me; and before I was six years of age, had so effectually blockaded my grandfather, that I never saw him but by stealth, when I sometimes made up to his chair as he sat to view his labourers in the field: on which occasions, he would stroak my head, bid me be a good boy, and promise to take care of me. I was soon after sent to school at a village hard by, of which he had been dictator time out of mind: but, as he never paid for my board, nor supplied me with clothes, books, and other necessities I required, my condition was very ragged and contemptible, and the schoolmaster, who, through fear of my grandfather, taught me *gratis*, gave himself no concern about the progress I made under his instruction. In spite of all these difficulties and disgraces, I became a good proficient in the Latin tongue; and as soon as I could write tolerably, pestered my grandfather with letters to such a degree, that he sent for my master, and chid him severely for bestowing such pains on my education; telling him, that

that if ever I should be brought to the gallows for forgery, which he had taught me to commit, my blood would lie on his head. The pedant, who dreaded nothing more than the displeasure of his patron, assured his honour that the boy's ability was more owing to his own genius and application, than to any instruction or encouragement he received; that although he could not divest him of the knowledge he had already imbibed, unless he would impower him to disable his fingers, he should endeavour, with God's help, to prevent his future improvement. And indeed he punctually performed what he had undertaken; for, on pretence that I had writ impertinent letters to my grandfather, he caused a board to be made with five holes in it, through which he thrust the fingers and thumb of my right-hand, and fastened it by whipcord to my wrist, in such a manner as effectually debarred me the use of my pen. But this restraint I was freed from in a few days by an accident which happened in a quarrel between me and another boy, who taking upon him to insult my poverty, I was so incensed at his ungenerous reproach, that with one stroke of my machine, I cut him to the skull, to the great terror of myself and school-fellows, who left him bleeding on the ground, and ran to inform the master of what had happened. I was so severely punished for this trespass, that, were I to live to the age of Methusalem, the impression it made on me would not be effaced; no more than the antipathy and horror I conceived for the merciless tyrant who inflicted it. The contempt which my appearance naturally produced in all who saw me, the continual wants to which I was exposed, and my own haughty disposition, impatient of affronts, involved me in a thousand troublesome adventures, by which I was at length inured to adversity, and emboldened to undertakings far above my years. I was often inhumanly scourged for crimes I did not commit, because, having the character of a vagabond in the village, every piece of mischief whose author lay unknown, was charged upon me. I have been found guilty of robbing orchards I never entered, of killing cats I never hurted, of stealing

gingerbread I never touched, and of abusing old women I never saw. Nay, a stammering carpenter had eloquence enough to persuade my master, that I fired a pistol loaded with small shot into his windows: though my landlady and the whole family bore witness, that I was a-bed fast asleep at the time when this outrage was committed. I was once flogged for having narrowly escaped drowning, by the sinking of a ferry-boat in which I was passenger. Another time, for having recovered of a bruise occasioned by a horse and cart running over me. A third time, for being bit by a baker's dog. In short, whether I was guilty or unfortunate, the correction and sympathy of this arbitrary pedagogue were the same. Far from being subdued by this infernal usage, my indignation triumphed over that slavish awe which had hitherto enforced my obedience; and the more my years and knowledge increased, the more I perceived the injustice and barbarity of his behaviour. By the help of an uncommon genius, and the advice and direction of our usher, who had served my father in his travels, I made a surprizing progress in the classicks, writing, and arithmetic; so that before I was twelve years old, I was allowed by every body to be the best scholar in the school. This qualification, together with a boldness of temper, and strength of make, which had subjected almost all my contemporaries, gave me such influence over them, that I began to form cabals against my persecutor; and was in hope of being able to bid him defiance in a very short time. Being at the head of a faction consisting of thirty boys, most of them of my own age, I was determined to put their mettle to trial, that I might know how far they were to be depended upon, before I put my grand scheme in execution; with this view we attacked a body of stout apprentices, who had taken possession of a part of the ground allotted to us for the scene of our diversions, and who were then playing at nine-pins on the spot: but I had the mortification to see my adherents routed in an instant, and a leg of one of them broke in his flight, by the bowl which one of our adversaries had detached in pursuit of us. This discomfiture did not hinder us from
engaging

CHAP. III.

MY MOTHER'S BROTHER ARRIVES
—RELIEVES ME—A DESCRIPTION OF HIM—HE GOES ALONG WITH ME TO THE HOUSE OF MY GRANDFATHER—IS ENCOUNTERED BY HIS DOGS—DEFEATS THEM AFTER A BLOODY ENGAGEMENT—IS ADMITTED TO THE OLD GENTLEMAN—A DIALOGUE BETWEEN THEM.

engaging them afterwards in frequent skirmishes, which we maintained by throwing stones at a distance, wherein I received many wounds, the scars of which still remain. Our enemies were so harassed and interrupted by these alarms, that they at last abandoned their conquest, and left us to the peaceable enjoyment of our own territories. It would be endless to enumerate the exploits we performed in the course of this confederacy, which became the terror of the whole village; inasmuch, that when different interests divided it, one of the parties commonly courted the assistance of Roderick Random (by which name I was known) to cast the balance and keep the opposite faction in awe. Meanwhile, I took the advantage of every play-day, to present myself before my grandfather, to whom I seldom found access, by reason of his being closely besieged by a numerous family of his female grand-children, who, though they perpetually quarrelled among themselves, never failed to join against me, as the common enemy of all. His heir, who was about the age of eighteen, minded nothing but fox-hunting, and indeed was qualified for nothing else, notwithstanding his grandfather's indulgence, in entertaining a tutor for him at home; who at the same time performed the office of parish clerk. This young Asteon, who inherited his grandfather's antipathy to every thing in distress, never set eyes on me, without uncoupling his beagles, and hunting me into some cottage or other, whither I generally fled for shelter. In this christian amusement, he was encouraged by his preceptor; who, no doubt, took such opportunities to ingratiate himself with the rising sun, observing that the old gentleman, according to the course of nature, had not long to live, for he was already on the verge of fourscore. The behaviour of this rascally sycophant incensed me so much, that one day, when I was beleagured by him and his hounds in a farmer's house, where I had found protection, I took aim at him (being an excellent marksman) with a large pebble, which struck out four of his fore-teeth, and effectually incapacitated him for doing the office of a clerk.

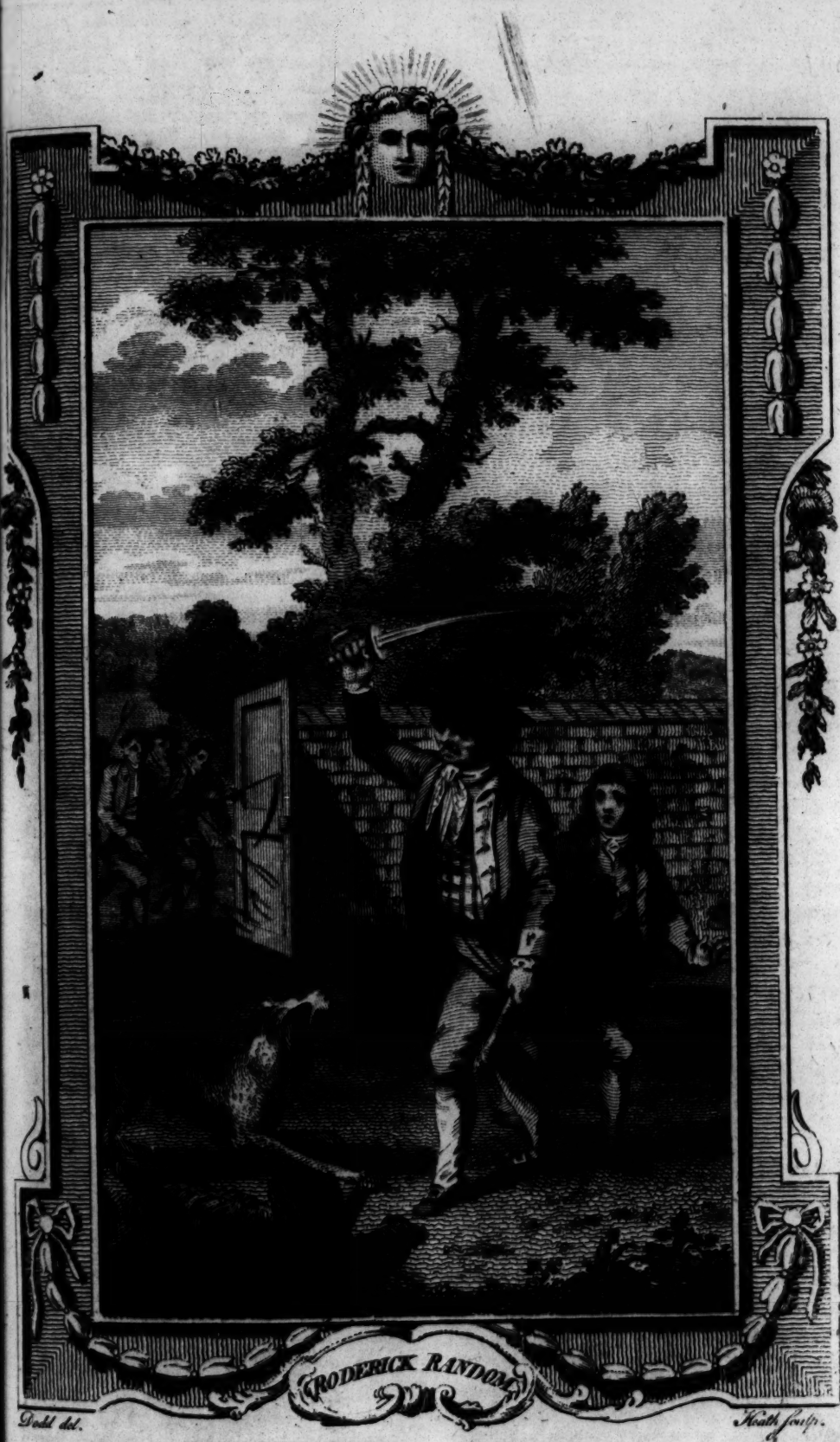
ABOUT this time my mother's only brother, who had been long abroad, lieutenant of a man of war, arrived in his own country; where, being informed of my condition, he came to see me, and out of his slender finances not only supplied me with what necessities I wanted for the present, but resolved not to leave the country until he had prevailed on my grandfather to settle something handsome for the future. This was a task to which he was by no means equal, being entirely ignorant not only of the judge's disposition, but also of the ways of men in general, to which his education on board had kept him an utter stranger. He was a strong-built man, somewhat bandy-legged, with a neck like that of a bull, and a face which (you might easily perceive) had withstood the most obstinate assaults of the weather. His dress consisted of a soldier's coat altered for him by the ship's taylor, a striped flannel jacket, a pair of red breeches japanned with pitch, clean grey worsted stockings, large silver buckles that covered three-fourths of his shoes, a silver-laced hat whose crown over-looked the brims about an inch and a half, a black bob wig in buckle, a check shirt, a silk handkerchief, an hanger with a brass handle girded on his thigh by a tarnished laced belt, and a good oak plant under his arm. Thus equipped, he set out with me (who by his bounty made a very decent appearance) for my grandfather's house, where we were saluted by Jowler and Cæsar, whom my cousin, young master, had let loose at our approach. Being well acquainted with the inveteracy of these curs, I was a-

C

bout

bout to betake myself to my heels, when my uncle seized me with one hand, brandished his cudgel with the other, and at one blow laid Cæsar sprawling on the ground: but, finding himself attacked at the same time in the rear by Jowler, and fearing Cæsar might recover, he drew his hanger, wheeled about, and by a lucky stroke, severed Jowler's head from his body. By this time the young fox-hunter and three servants armed with pitch-forks and flails, were come to the assistance of the dogs, whom they found breathless upon the field: and my cousin was so provoked at the death of his favourites, that he ordered his attendants to advance and take vengeance on their executioner, whom he loaded with all the curses and reproaches his anger could suggest. Upon which my uncle stepped forward, with an undaunted air, at the sight of whose bloody weapon his antagonists fell back with precipitation; when he accosted their leader thus: 'Look'e, brother, your dogs have boarded me without provocation, what I did was in my own defence. So you had best be civil, and let us shoot a-head, clear of you.' Whether the young squire misinterpreted my uncle's desire of peace, or was enraged at the fate of his hounds beyond his usual pitch of resolution, I know not; but he snatched a flail from one of his followers, and came up with a shew of assaulting the lieutenant; who, putting himself in a posture of defence, proceeded thus: 'Look'e, you lubberly son of a w—e, if you come a-thwart me, 'ware your gingerbread-work. I'll be foul of your quarter, d—n me.' This declaration, followed by a flourish of his hanger, seemed to check the progress of the young gentleman's choler; who, looking behind him, perceived his attendants had flunk into the house, shut the gate, and left him to decide the contention by himself. Here a parley ensued, which was introduced by my cousin's asking, 'Who the d—l are you? What do you want? Some scoundrel of a seaman, I suppose, who has deserted and turned thief. But don't think you shall escape, sirrah; I'll have you hang'd, you dog, I will; your blood shall pay for that of my two hounds, you raga-muffin. I would not have parted

with them to save your whole generation from the gallows, you ruffian, you.'—'None of your jaw, you swab, none of your jaw;' replied my uncle, 'else I shall trim your lac'd jacket for you. I shall rub you down with an oaken towel, my boy, I shall.' So saying, he sheathed his hanger, and grasped his cudgel. Meanwhile the people of the house being alarmed, one of my female cousins opened a window, and asked what was the matter. 'The matter!' answered the lieutenant; 'no great matter, young woman. I have business with the old gentleman, and this spark, belike, won't allow me to come along-side of him, that's all.' After a few minutes pause, we were admitted and conducted to my grandfather's chamber, through a lane of my relations, who honoured me with very significant looks, as I passed along. When we came into the judge's presence, my uncle, after two or three sea bows, expressed himself in this manner: 'Your servant, your servant. What cheer, father? what cheer? I suppose you don't know me, may-hap you don't; My name is Tom Bowling, and this here boy, you look as if you did not know him neither, 'tis like you mayn't. He's new rigg'd, i'faith; his cloth don't shake in the wind so much as it wont to do. 'Tis my nephew, d'ye see, Roderick Random, your own flesh and blood, old gentleman.—Don't lag a-stern, you dog!' pulling me forward. My grandfather, who was laid up with the gout, received this relation, after his long absence, with that coldness of civility which was peculiar to him; told him he was glad to see him, and desired him to sit down. 'Thank ye, thank ye, Sir, I had as lief stand,' said my uncle: 'for my own part, I desire nothing of you; but if you have any conscience at all, do something for this poor boy, who has been used at a very unchristian rate. Unchristian do I call it? I am sure the Moors in Barbary have more humanity than to leave their little ones to want. I would fain know why my sister's son is more neglected than that there fair-weather Jack,' pointing to the young squire, who with the rest of my cousins had followed us into the room: 'Is not he as near a-kin to you as the other?



Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. June 3^d 1780.

BRITISH
4 APR 1901
MUSEUM

other? Is not he much handsomer and better built than that great chucklehead? Come, come, confider, old gentleman, you are going in a short time to give an account of your evil actions. Remember the wrongs you did his father; and make all the satisfaction in your power, before it be too late. The least thing you can do, is to settle his father's portion on him.' The young ladies, who thought themselves too much concerned to contain themselves any longer, set up their throats all together against my protector. 'Scurvy companion! saucy tarpaulin! rude, impertinent fellow, did he think to prescribe to grand-papa! His sister's brat had been too well taken care of. Grand-papa was too just, not to make a difference between an unnatural rebellious son, and his dutiful loving children, who took his advice in all things!' and such expressions, were vented against him with great violence; until the judge at length commanded silence. He calmly rebuked my uncle for his unmannerly behaviour, which he said he would excuse on account of his education: he told him, he had been very kind to the boy, whom he had kept at school seven or eight years, although he was informed he made no progress in his learning, but was addicted to all manner of vice; which he rather believed, because he himself was witness to a barbarous piece of mischief he had committed on the jaws of his chaplain. But, however, he would see what the lad was fit for, and bind him apprentice to some honest tradesman or other, provided he would mend his manners, and behave for the future as became him. The honest tar, whose pride and indignation boiled within him, answered my grandfather, that it was true he had sent him to school, but it had cost him nothing, for he had never been at one shilling expence, to furnish him with food, raiment, books, or other necessaries; so that it was not much to be wondered at, if the boy made small progress; and yet, whoever told him so, was a lying lubberly rascal, and deserved to be keel-hauled: for thof he (the lieutenant) did not understand those matters himself, he was well informed as how Rory was the best scholar of his age, in all the country; the truth of which he would

maintain, by laying a wager of his whole half-year's pay on the boy's head; (with these words he pulled out his purse, and challenged the company:) 'Neither is he *predicted* to vice, as you affirm, but rather left like a wreck, d'ye see, at the mercy of the wind and weather, by your neglect, old gentleman. As for what happened to your chaplain, I am only sorry that he did not knock out the scoundrel's brains, instead of his teeth. By the Lord, if ever I come up with him, he had better be in Greenland, that's all. Thank you for your courteous offer of binding the lad apprentice to a tradesman. I suppose you would make a taylor of him, would you? I had rather see him hang'd, d'ye see.—Come along, Rory, I perceive how the land lies, my boy, let's tack about; i'faith, while I have a shilling, thou shalt want a tester.—B'bye, old gentleman, you're bound for the other world, but I believe damnably ill provided for the voyage.' Thus ended our visit; and we returned to the village, my uncle muttering curses all the way against the old shark and the young fry that surrounded him.

CHAP. IV.

MY GRANDFATHER MAKES HIS WILL—OUR SECOND VISIT—HE DIES—HIS WILL IS READ IN PRESENCE OF ALL HIS LIVING DESCENDANTS—THE DISAPPOINTMENT OF MY FEMALE COUSINS—MY UNCLE'S BEHAVIOUR.

A Few weeks after our first visit, we were informed that the old judge, at the end of a fit of thoughtfulness, which lasted three days, had sent for a notary and made his will; that the distemper had mounted from his legs to his stomach, and being conscious of his approaching end, he had desired to see all his descendants without exception. In obedience to this summons, my uncle set out with me a second time, to receive the last benediction of my grandfather; often repeating by the road, 'Ey, ey, we have brought up the old hulk at last. You shall see; you shall see the effect of my admonition'. When we entered his chamber, which

was crowded with his relations, we advanced to the bed-side, where we found him in his last agonies, supported by two of his grand-daughters, who sat on each side of him, sobbing most piteously, and wiping away the froth and flaver as it gathered on his lips, which they frequently kissed with a show of great anguish and affection. My uncle approached him with these words: 'What! he's not a-weigh. How fare ye—how fare ye, old gentleman? Lord have mercy upon your poor sinful soul.' Upon which the dying man turned his languid eyes towards us, and Mr. Bowling went on: 'Here's poor Rory come to see you before you die, and receive your blessing. What, man! don't despair, you have been a great sinner, 'tis true; what then? There's a righteous judge above, an't there?—He minds me no more than a porpoise. Yes, yes, he's a going; the land-crabs will have him, I see that; his anchor's a-peak, 'faith. This homely consolation scandalized the company so much, and especially the parson, who probably thought his province invaded, that we were obliged to retire into the other room, where, in a few minutes, we were convinced of my grandfather's decease, by a dismal yell uttered by the young ladies in his apartment; whither we immediately hastened, and found his heir, who had retired a little before into a closet, under pretence of giving vent to his sorrow, asking, with a countenance beslobbered with tears, if his grand-papa was certainly dead? 'Dead!' says my uncle, looking at the body; 'ay, ay, I'll warrant him as dead as a herring. Odd's fish! now my dream is out for all the world. I thought I stood upon the fore-castle, and saw a parcel of carrion crows foul of a dead shark that floated along-side, and the devil perching on our sprit-sail yard, in the likeness of a blue bear; who, d'ye see, jumped over-board upon the carcase, and carried it to the bottom in his claws.'—'Out upon thee, reprobate,' cries the parson; 'out upon thee, blasphemous wretch! Dost thou think his honour's soul is in the possession of Satan?' The clamour immediately arose, and my poor uncle, being shouldered from one corner of the room to the other, was obliged to lug out in his

own defence, and swear he would turn out for no man, till such time as he knew who had a title to set him a drift. 'None of your tricks upon travellers,' said he; 'mayhap old Buff has left my kinsman here, his heir: if he has, it will be the better for his miserable soul. Odds bob, I'd desire no better news; I'd soon make him a clear ship I warrant you.' To avoid any farther disturbance, one of my grandfather's executors, who was present, assured Mr. Bowling, that his nephew should have all manner of justice; that a day should be appointed, after the funeral, for examining the papers of the deceased, in presence of all his relations; till which time every desk and cabinet in the house should remain close sealed; and that he was very welcome to be witness to this ceremony, which was immediately performed to his satisfaction. In the mean time, orders were given to provide mourning for all the relations, in which number I was included; but my uncle would not suffer me to accept of it, until I should be assured whether or no I had reason to honour his memory so far. During this interval, the conjectures of people, with regard to the old gentleman's will, were various; as it was well known he had, besides his landed estate, which was worth 700*l.* per annum, six or seven thousand pounds at interest; some imagined, that the whole real estate, which he had greatly improved, would go to the young man whom he always entertained as his heir; and that the money would be equally divided between my female cousins (five in number) and me. Others were of opinion, that as the rest of the children had been already provided for, he would only bequeath two or three hundred pounds to each of his grand-daughters, and leave the bulk of the sum to me, to atone for his unnatural usage of my father. At length the important hour arrived, and the will was produced in the midst of the expectants, whose looks and gestures formed a group that would have been very entertaining to an unconcerned spectator. But the reader can scarce conceive the astonishment and mortification, that appeared, when an attorney pronounced aloud, the young squire sole heir of all his grandfather's estate personal and real. My uncle,

uncle, who had listened with great attention, sucking the head of his cudgel all the while, accompanied these words of the attorney with a stare, and *rubew*, that alarmed the whole assembly. The eldest and pertest of my female competitors, who had been always very officious about my grandfather's person, enquired with a faltering accent, and visage as yellow as an orange, if there were no legacies; and was answered, 'None at all.' Upon which she fainted away. The rest, whose expectations perhaps, were not so sanguine, supported their disappointment with more resolution, though not without giving evident marks of indignation, and grief at least as genuine as that which appeared in them at the old gentleman's death. My conductor, after having kicked with his heel for some time against the wainscot, began: 'So there's no legacy, friend, ha? here's an old succubus; but somebody's soul howls for it, d—n me!' The parson of the parish, who was one of the executors, and had acted as ghostly director to the old man, no sooner heard this exclamation, than he cried out, 'Avaunt, unchristian reviler! avaunt! wilt thou not allow the soul of his honour to rest in peace?' But this zealous pastor did not find himself so warmly seconded as formerly, by the young ladies, who now joined my uncle against him, and accused him of having acted the part of a busy body with their grand-papa, whose ears he had certainly abused by false stories, to their prejudice, or else he would not have neglected them in such an unnatural manner. The young squire was much diverted with this scene; and whispered to my uncle, that if he had not murdered his dogs, he would have shewn them glorious fun, by hunting a black badger: so he termed the clergyman. The surly lieutenant, who was not in an humour to relish this amusement, replied, 'You and your dogs may be d—ned. I suppose you will find them with your old dad, in the latitude of hell.—Come, Rory! about ship, my lad; we must steer another course, I think.' And away we went.

C H A P. V.

THE SCHOOLMASTER USES ME BARBAROUSLY—I FORM A PROJECT OF REVENGE, IN WHICH I AM ASSISTED BY MY UNCLE—I LEAVE THE VILLAGE—AM SETTLED AT AN UNIVERSITY BY HIS GENEROSITY.

ON our way back to the village, my uncle spoke not a word during the space of a whole hour, but whistled with great vehemence, the tune of, *Why should we quarrel for riches, &c.* his visage being contracted all the while into a most formidable frown. At length his pace increased to such a degree, that I was left behind a considerable way: then he waited for me; and when I was almost up with him, called out in a surly tone, 'Bear a hand, damme! must I bring to every minute for you, you lazy dog!' Then laying hold of me by the arm, hauled me along until his good-nature, of which he had a great share, and reflection getting the better of his passion, he said, 'Come my boy, don't be cast down; the old rascal is in hell, that's some satisfaction: you shall go to sea with me, my lad. *A light heart and a thin pair of breeches, goes thorough the world, brave boys;* as the song goes, eh?' Though this proposal did not at all suit my inclination, I was afraid of discovering my aversion to it, lest I should disoblige the only friend I had in the world; and he was so much a seaman, that he never dreamt I could have any objection to his design; consequently, gave himself no trouble in consulting my approbation. But this resolution was soon dropt, by the advice of our usher, who assured Mr. Bowling, it would be a thousand pities to baulk my genius, which would certainly, one day, make my fortune on shore, provided it received due cultivation. Upon which this generous tar determined, though he could ill afford it, to give me university education; and accordingly settled my board and other expences, at a town not many miles distant,

distant, famous for it's colleges, whither we repaired in a short time. But, before the day of our departure, the schoolmaster, who no longer had the fear of my grandfather before his eyes, laid aside all decency and restraint, and not only abused me in the grossest language, his rancour could suggest, as a wicked, profligate, dull, beggarly miscreant, whom he had taught out of charity, but also inveighed in the most bitter manner against the memory of the judge, who by the bye had procured that settlement for him; hinting, in pretty plain terms, that the old gentleman's soul was damn'd to all eternity, for his injustice in neglecting to pay for my learning. This brutal behaviour, added to the sufferings I had formerly undergone, made me think it high time to be revenged of this insolent pedagogue. Having consulted my adherents, I found them all staunch in their promises to stand by me, and our scheme was this: In the afternoon preceding the day of my departure for the university, I resolved to take the advantage of the usher's going out to make water, which he regularly did at four o'clock, and shut the great door, that he might not come to the assistance of his superior. This being done, the assault was to be begun, by my advancing to my master and spitting in his face. I was to be seconded by two of the strongest boys in the school, who were devoted to me; their business was to join me in dragging the tyrant to a bench, over which he was to be laid, and his bare posteriors heartily flogged with his own birch, which we proposed to wrest from him in the struggle; but if we should find him too many for us all three, we were to demand the assistance of our competitors, who should be ready to reinforce us, or oppose any thing that might be undertaken for the master's relief. One of my principal assistants was called Jeremy Gawky, son and heir to a wealthy gentleman in the neighbourhood; and the name of the other Hugh Strap, the cadet of a family which had given shoemakers to the village time out of mind. I had once saved Gawky's life by plunging into a river and dragging him on shore, when he was on the point of being drowned. I had often rescued him

from the clutches of those whom his unsufferable arrogance had provoked to a resentment he was not able to sustain; and many times saved his reputation and posteriors, by performing his exercises at school; so that it is not to be wondered at, if he had a particular regard for me and my interests. The attachment of Strap, flowed from a voluntary, disinterested inclination, which had manifested itself on many occasions, in my behalf; he having once rendered me the same service that I had done Gawky, by saving my life at the risk of his own; and often fathered offences that I had committed, for which he suffered severely, rather than I should feel the weight of the punishment I deserved. These two champions were the more willing to engage in this enterprize, because they intended to leave the school the next day, as well as I; the first being ordered by his father to return into the country, and the other being bound apprentice to a barber, at a market town not far off.

In the mean time, my uncle being informed of my master's behaviour to me, was enraged at his insolence, and vowed revenge so heartily, that I could not refrain from telling the scheme I had concerted, which he heard with great satisfaction, and at every sentence squirted out a mouthful of spittle, tinged with tobacco, of which he constantly chewed a large quid. At last, pulling up his breeches, he cried, 'No, no, z—ds! that won't do neither; howsomever, 'tis a bold undertaking, my lad, that I must say, i'faith! but look'e, look'e, how dost propose to get clear off? won't the enemy give chace, my boy? Ay, ay, that he will, I warrant, and alarm the whole coast. Ah! God help thee! more sail than ballast, Rory. Let me alone for that, leave the whole to me, I'll shew him the fore top-sail, I will. If so be your ship-mates are jolly boys, and won't flinch, you shall see, you shall see, egad, I'll play him a salt-water trick, I'll bring him to the gang-way, and anoint him with the cat and nine tails; he shall have a round dozen doubled, my lad, he shall, and be left lashed, to his meditations.' We were very proud of our associate, who immediately went to work,

work, and prepared the instrument of his revenge with great skill and expedition; after which, he ordered our baggage to be packed up and sent off, a day before our attempt, and got horses ready to be mounted, as soon as the affair should be over. At length the hour arrived, when our auxiliary, seizing the opportunity of the usher's absence, bolted in, secured the door, and immediately laid hold of the pedant by his collar, who bawled out, 'Murder! thieves!' with the voice of a Stentor. Though I trembled all over like an aspen-leaf, I knew there was no time to be lost, and accordingly got up, and summoned our associates to my assistance. Strap without any hesitation obeyed the signal, and seeing me leap upon the master's back, ran immediately to one of his legs, which pulling with all his force, his dreadful adversary was humbled to the ground: upon which Gawky, who had hitherto remained in his place, under the influence of an universal trepidation, hastened to the scene of action, and insulted the fallen tyrant with a loud huzza, in which the whole school joined. This noise alarmed the usher, who finding himself shut out, endeavoured, partly by threats and partly by entreaties, to procure admission. My uncle bade him have a little patience, and he would let him in presently: but if he pretended to move from that place, it should fare worse with the son of a b—h his superior, on whom he intended only to bestow a little wholesome chastisement for his barbarous usage of Rory; 'to which,' said he, 'you are no stranger.' By this time we had dragged the criminal to a post, to which Bowling tied him with a rope he had provided on purpose, after having secured his hands and stript his back. In this ludicrous posture he stood (to the no small entertainment of the boys, who crowded about him, and shouted with great exultation at the novelty of the sight) venting bitter imprecations against the lieutenant, and reproaching his scholars with treachery and rebellion; when the usher was admitted, whom my uncle accosted in this manner: 'Hark'e, Mr. Syntax, I believe you are an honest man, d'ye see, and I have a respect for you; but for all that, we must for our own security, d'ye see, belay you for a short time.'

With these words, he pulled out some fathoms of cord, which the honest man no sooner saw, than he protested with great earnestness, he would allow no violence to be offered to him, at the same time accusing me of perfidy and ingratitude. But Bowling representing that it was in vain to resist, and that he did not mean to use him with violence and indecency; but only to hinder him from raising the hue and cry against us, before we should be out of their power; he allowed himself to be bound to his own desk, where he sat a spectator of the punishment inflicted on his principal. My uncle having upbraided this arbitrary wretch with his inhumanity to me, told him, that he proposed to give him a little discipline for the good of his soul, which he immediately put in practice, with great vigour and dexterity. This smart application to the pedant's withered posteriors, gave him such exquisite pain, that he roared like a mad bull, danced, cursed, and blasphemed, like a frantic bedlamite. When the lieutenant thought himself sufficiently revenged, he took his leave of him in these words, 'Now, friend, you'll remember me the longest day you have to live. I have given you a lesson that will let you know what flogging is, and teach you to have more sympathy for the future.—Shout, boys, shout.' This ceremony was no sooner over, than my uncle proposed they should quit the school, and convoy their old comrade Rory to a public house, about a mile from the village, where he would treat them all. His offer being joyfully embraced, he addressed himself to Mr. Syntax, and begged him to accompany us; but this invitation he refused with great disdain, telling my benefactor he was not the man he took him to be. 'Well, well, old furly,' replied my uncle, shaking his hand, 'thou art an honest fellow notwithstanding; and if ever I have the command of a ship, thou shalt be our schoolmaster, i'faith.' So saying, he dismissed the boys; and, locking the door, left the two preceptors to console one another; while we moved forwards on our journey, attended by a numerous retinue, whom he treated according to his promise. We parted with many tears, and lay that night at an inn on the road, about ten

ten miles short of the town where I was to remain, at which we arrived next day, and I found I had no cause to complain of the accommodations provided for me; in being boarded at the house of an apothecary, who had married a distant relation of my mother. In a few days after, my uncle set out for his ship, having settled the necessary funds for my maintenance and education.

CHAP. VI.

I MAKE GREAT PROGRESS IN MY STUDIES—AM CARESSED BY EVERY BODY—MY FEMALE COUSINS TAKE NOTICE OF ME—I REJECT THEIR INVITATION—THEY ARE INCENSED AND CONSPIRE AGAINST ME—I AM LEFT DESTITUTE BY A MISFORTUNE THAT BEFALS MY UNCLE—GAWKY'S TREACHERY—MY REVENGE.

AS I was now capable of reflection, I began to consider my precarious situation; that I was utterly abandoned by those whose duty it was to protect me; and that my sole dependance was on the generosity of one man, who was not only exposed by his profession to continual dangers, which might one day deprive me of him for ever; but also, no doubt, subject to those vicissitudes of disposition, which a change of fortune usually creates; or, which a better acquaintance with the world might produce: for I always ascribed his benevolence to the dictates of a heart as yet undebauched by a commerce with mankind. Alarmed at these considerations, I resolved to apply myself with great care to my studies, and enjoy the opportunity in my power; this I did with such success, that in the space of three years, I understood Greek very well, was pretty far advanced in the mathematicks, and no stranger to moral and natural philosophy: logic I made no account of; but above all things, I valued myself on my taste in the *belle lettre*, and a talent for poetry, which had already produced some pieces that met with a very favourable reception. These qualifications, added to a good face and shape, acquired the esteem and ac-

quaintance of the most considerable people in town, and I had the satisfaction to find myself in some degree of favour with the ladies; an intoxicating piece of good fortune, to one of my amorous complexion! which I obtained, or at least preserved, by gratifying their propensity to scandal, in lampooning their rivals. Two of my female cousins lived in this place, with their mother, since the death of their father, who left his whole fortune equally divided between them; so that if they were not the most beautiful, they were at least the richest toasts in town; and received daily the addresses of all the beaux and cavaliers of the country. Although I had hitherto been looked upon by them with the most supercilious contempt, my character now attracted their notice so much, that I was given to understand I might be honoured with their acquaintance, if I pleased. The reader will easily perceive, that this condescension either flowed from the hope of making my poetical capacity subservient to their malice, or at least of screening themselves from the lash of my resentment, which they had effectually provoked. I enjoyed this triumph with great satisfaction; and not only rejected their offer with disdain, but in all my performances, whether satire or panegyric, industriously avoided mentioning their names, even while I celebrated those of their intimates: this neglect mortified their pride exceedingly, and incensed them to such a degree, that they were resolved to make me repent of my indifference. The first stroke of their revenge consisted in their hiring a poor collegian to write verses against me, the subject of which was my own poverty, and the catastrophe of my unhappy parents; but besides the badness of the composition (of which they themselves were ashamed) they did not find their account in endeavouring to reproach me with those misfortunes which they and their relations had brought upon me; and which, consequently, reflected much more dishonour on themselves than on me, who was the innocent victim of their barbarity and avarice. Finding this plan miscarry, they found means to irritate a young gentleman against me, by telling him I had lampooned his mistress; and so effectually succeeded in

in the quality of incendiaries, that this enraged lover determined to seize me next night, as I returned to my lodgings from a friend's house that I frequented: with this view, he waited in the street, attended by two of his companions, to whom he had imparted his design of carrying me down to the river, in which he proposed to have me heartily ducked, notwithstanding the severity of the weather, it being then about the middle of December. But this stratagem did not succeed: for, being apprized of their ambush, I got home another way; and, by the help of my landlord's apprentice, discharged a volley from the garret windows, which did great execution upon them; and next day occasioned so much mirth at their expence, that they found themselves under a necessity of leaving the town until the adventure should be entirely forgotten. My cousins (though twice baffled in their expectation) did not however desist from persecuting me, who had now enraged them beyond a possibility of forgiveness, by detecting their malice, and preventing it's effects; neither should I have found them more humane, had I patiently submitted to their rancour, and bore without murmuring the rigour of their unreasonable hate; for I have found by experience, that though small favours may be acknowledged, and slight injuries atoned, there is no wretch so ungrateful as he whom you have most generously obliged; and no enemy so implacable, as those who have done you the greatest wrong. These good-natured creatures, therefore, had recourse to a scheme which conspired with a piece of bad news I soon after received, to give them all the satisfaction they desired: this plan was, to debauch the faith of my companion and confident, who betrayed the trust I reposed in him, by imparting to them the particulars of my small amours, which they published with such exaggerations, that I suffered very much in the opinion of every body, and was utterly discarded by the dear creatures whose names had been called in question. While I was busy in tracing out the author of this treachery, that I might not only be revenged on him, but also vindicate my character to my friends, I one day perceived the looks of my landlady much altered

when I went home to dinner; and enquiring into the cause, she skrewed up her mouth, and fixing her eyes on the ground, told me her husband had received a letter from Mr. Bowling, with one inclosed for me; she was very sorry for what had happened, both for my sake and his own. People should be more cautious of their conduct. She was always afraid his brutal behaviour would bring him into some misfortune or other. As for her part, she should be very ready to befriend me; but she had a small family of her own to maintain. The world would do nothing for her if she should come to want; charity begins at home: she wished I had been bound to some substantial handicraft, such as a weaver or a shoemaker, rather than loiter away my time in learning foolish nonsense that would never bring me in a penny; but some are wise, and some are otherwise. I was listening to this mysterious discourse with great amazement, when her husband entered, and, without speaking a syllable, put both the letters into my hand. I received them trembling, and read what follows:

‘ TO MR. ROGER POTION.

‘ SIR,

‘ THIS is to let you know that I have quitted the Thunder man of war; being obliged to sheer off for killing my captain, which I did fairly on the beach at Cape Tiberoon, in the island of Hispaniola; having received his fire and returned it, which went through his body: and I would serve the best man so that ever stept between stem and stern, if so be that he struck me, as Captain Oakhum did. I am (thank God) safe among the French, who are very civil, thof I don't understand their lingo; and I hope to be restored in a little time, for all the great friends and parliamentary interest of the captain, for I have sent over to my lord in Deal, an account of the whole affair, with our bearings and distances while we were engaged, whereby I have desired him to lay it before his Majesty, who (God ble's him) will not suffer an honest tar to be wronged.

D

‘ My

‘ My love to your spouse, and am your
 ‘ loving friend, and servant to com-
 ‘ mand, while

‘ THOMAS BOWLING.’

‘ TO RODERICK RANDOM.

‘ DEAR RORY,

‘ **D**ON’T be grieved at my mis-
 ‘ fortune, but mind your book,
 ‘ my lad. I have got no money to
 ‘ send you; but what of that! Mr.
 ‘ Potion will take care of you, for the
 ‘ love he bears to me, and let you
 ‘ want for nothing; and it shall go hard
 ‘ but I will see him one day repaid.
 ‘ No more at present, but rests your
 ‘ dutiful uncle and servant, till death,
 ‘ THOMAS BOWLING.’

This letter (which with the other was dated from Port Louis in Hispaniola) I had no sooner read, than the apothecary, shaking his head, began :
 ‘ I have a very great regard for Mr.
 ‘ Bowling, that’s certain, and could
 ‘ be well content; but times are very
 ‘ hard. There’s no such thing as mo-
 ‘ ney to be got; I believe ’tis all va-
 ‘ nished under-ground, for my part.
 ‘ Besides, I have been out of pocket al-
 ‘ ready, having entertained you since
 ‘ the beginning of this month with-
 ‘ out receiving a six-pence; and God
 ‘ knows if ever I shall; for I believe
 ‘ it will go hard with your uncle :
 ‘ and more than that, I was thinking
 ‘ of giving you warning, for I want
 ‘ your apartment for a new prentice,
 ‘ whom I expect from the country
 ‘ every hour. So I desire you will this
 ‘ week provide yourself with another
 ‘ lodging.’ The indignation which
 this harangue inspired, gave me spirits
 to support my reverse of fortune; and
 to tell him I despised his mean selfish
 disposition so much, that I would ra-
 ther starve than be beholden to him for
 one single meal. Upon which, out of
 my pocket-money, I paid him to the
 last farthing of what I owed, and as-
 sured him I would not sleep another
 night under his roof. This said, I
 sallied out in a transport of rage and
 sorrow, without knowing whither to
 fly for shelter, having not one friend
 in the world capable of relieving me,
 and only three shillings in my purse.

After giving way for a few minutes to the dictates of my rage, I went and hired a small bed-room at the rate of one shilling and six-pence per week, which I was obliged to pay per advance, before the landlord would receive me: thither I removed my luggage; and next morning got up, with a view of craving the advice and assistance of a person who had on all occasions loaded me with caresses, and made frequent offers of friendship, while I was under no necessity of accepting them. He received me with his wonted affability, and insisted on my breakfasting with him, a favour which I did not think fit to refuse. But when I communicated the occasion of my visit, he appeared, so disconcerted, that I concluded him wonderfully affected with the misery of my condition, and looked upon him as a man of the most extensive sympathy and benevolence. He did not leave me long under this mistake; for recovering himself from his confusion, he told me he was grieved at my misfortune, and desired to know what had passed between my landlord, Mr. Potion, and me. Whereupon I recounted the conversation; and when I repeated the answer I made to his ungenerous remonstrance with regard to my leaving his house, this pretended friend affected a stare, and exclaimed, ‘ Is it possible you could
 ‘ behave so ill to the man who had treat-
 ‘ ed you so kindly all along?’ My surprise at hearing this was not at all affected, whatever his might be; and I gave him to understand, with some warmth, that I did not imagine he would so unreasonably espouse the cause of a scoundrel, who ought to be expelled from every social community. This heat of mine gave him all the advantage he desired over me, and our discourse (after much altercation) concluded in his desiring never to see me again in that place; to which desire I yielded my consent, assuring him, that had I been as well acquainted with his principles formerly as I was now, he never should have had an opportunity of making that request. And thus we parted.

On my return I met my comrade Squire Gawky, whom his father had sent some time ago to town, for his improvement in writing, dancing, fencing, and other modish qualifications.

As I had lived with him since his arrival, on the footing of our old intimacy, I made no scruple of informing him of the lowness of my circumstances, and asking a small supply of money to answer my present expence; upon which he pulled out a handful of half-pence, with a shilling or two among them, and swore that was all he had to keep his pocket till next quarter-day, he having lost the greatest part of his allowance the night before at billiards. Though this assertion might very well be true, I was extremely mortified at his indifference; for he neither expressed any sympathy for my mishap, nor desire of alleviating my distress; and accordingly I left him without uttering one word: But when I afterwards understood that he was the person who had formerly betrayed me to the malice of my cousins, to whom likewise he had carried the tidings of my forlorn situation, which afforded them great matter of triumph and exultation, I determined with myself to call him to a severe account; for which purpose I borrowed a sword, and wrote a challenge, desiring him to meet me at a certain time and place, that I might have an opportunity of punishing his perfidy, at the expence of his blood. He accepted the invitation, and I betook myself to the field, though not without feeling considerable repugnance to the combat, which frequently attacked me in cold sweats by the way; but the desire of revenge, the shame of retracting, and hope of conquest, conspired to repel these unmanly symptoms of fear, and I appeared on the plain with a good grace; there I waited an hour beyond the time appointed, and was not ill pleased to find he had no mind to meet me; because I should have an opportunity of exposing his cowardice, displaying my own courage, and of beating him soundly wheresoever I should find him, without any dread of the consequence. Elevated with these suggestions, which entirely banished all thoughts of my deplorable condition, I went directly to Gawky's lodgings, where I was informed of his precipitate retreat, he having set out for the country in less than an hour after he had received my billet: and I was vain enough to have the whole story inserted in the news, although I was fain to sell a gold-laced hat to my landlord for less than half

price, to defray the expence, and contribute to my subsistence.

C H A P. VII.

I AM ENTERTAINED BY MR. CRAB
—A DESCRIPTION OF HIM—I AC-
QUIRE THE ART OF SURGERY—
CONSULT CRAB'S DISPOSITION
—BECOME NECESSARY TO HIM
—AN ACCIDENT HAPPENS—HE
ADVISES ME TO LAUNCH OUT
INTO THE WORLD—ASSISTS ME
WITH MONEY—I SET OUT FOR
LONDON.

THE fumes of my resentment being dissipated, as well as the vanity of my success, I found myself deserted to all the horrors of extreme want, and avoided by mankind as a creature of a different species, or rather as a solitary being, no ways comprehended within the scheme or protection of Providence. My despair had rendered me almost quite stupified, when I was one day told, that a gentleman desired to see me at a certain public-house, whither immediately I repaired, and was introduced to one Mr. Launcelot Crab, a surgeon in town, who was engaged with two more in drinking a liquor called *pop-in*, composed by mixing a quartern of brandy with a quart of small-beer. Before I relate the occasion of this message, I believe it will not be disagreeable to the reader, if I describe the gentleman who sent for me, and mention some circumstances of his character and conduct, which may illustrate what follows, and account for his behaviour to me.

This member of the faculty was aged fifty, about five feet high, and ten round the belly; his face was capacious as a full moon, and much of the complexion of a mulberry: his nose, resembling a powder-horn, was swelled to an enormous size, and studded all over with carbuncles; and his little grey eyes reflected the rays in such an oblique manner, that while he looked a person full in the face, one would have imagined he was admiring the buckle of his shoe. He had long entertained an implacable resentment against Potion; who, though a young practitioner, was better employed than

he, and once had the assurance to perform a cure, whereby he disappointed and disgraced the prognostic of the said Crab. This quarrel, which was at one time upon the point of being made up by the intervention and mediation of friends, had been lately inflamed beyond a possibility of conciliation by the respective wives of the opponents; who, chancing to meet at a christening, disagreed about precedence, proceeded from invectives to blows, and were with great difficulty, by the gossips, prevented from converting the occasion of joy into a scene of lamentation.

The difference between these rivals was in the height of rancour, when I received the message of Crab, who received me as civilly as I could have expected from one of his disposition; and after desiring me to sit, enquired into the particulars of my leaving the house of Potion: which when I had related, he said, with a malicious grin, 'There's a sneaking dog! I always thought him a fellow without a soul, d—n me! a canting scoundrel, who has crept into business by his hypocrisy, and kissing the ass of every body.'—'Aye, aye,' says another, 'one might see with half an eye, that the rascal had no honesty in him, by his going so regularly to church.' This sentence was confirmed by a third, who assured his companions, that Potion was never known to be disguised in liquor but once, at a meeting of the godly, where he had distinguished himself by an extempore prayer an hour long. After this preamble, Crab addressed himself to me in these words, 'Well, my lad, I have heard a good character of you, and I'll do for you. You may send your things to my house when you please. I have given orders for your reception. Z—ds! what does the booby stare at? If you have no mind to embrace my courteous offer, you may let it alone and be d—n'd.' I answered, with a submissive bow, that I was far from rejecting his friendly offer, which I would immediately accept, as soon as he would inform me on what footing I was to be entertained. 'What footing! D—n my blood,' cried he, 'd'ye expect to have a footman and a couple of horses kept for you?'—'No, Sir,' I replied, 'my expectations are not quite so san-

guine. That I may be as little burdensome as possible, I would willingly serve in your shop, by which means I may save you the expence of a journeyman, or porter at least, for I understand a little pharmacy, having employed some of my leisure hours in the practice of that art, while I lived with Mr. Potion: neither am I altogether ignorant of surgery, which I have studied with great pleasure and application.'—'O ho! you did?' says Crab.—'Gentlemen, here is a compleat artist!—Studied surgery! what, in books, I suppose. I shall have you disputing with me one of these days, on points of my profession. You can already account for muscular motion, I warrant, and explain the mystery of the brain and nerves; ha! You are too learned for me, d—n me. But let's hear no more of this stuff; can you bleed and give a clyster, spread a plaister, and prepare a potion?' Upon my answering in the affirmative, he shook his head, telling me, he believed he should have little good of me, for all my fair promises; but, however, he would take me in for the sake of charity. I was accordingly that very night admitted to his house, and had an apartment assigned to me in the garret, which I was fain to put up with, notwithstanding the mortification my pride suffered in this change of circumstances. I was soon convinced of the real motives which induced Crab to receive me in this manner: for, besides the gratification of his revenge, by exposing the selfishness of his antagonist, in opposition to his own generosity, which was all affectation, he had occasion for a young man who understood something of the profession, to fill up the place of his eldest apprentice, lately dead, not without violent suspicion of foul play from his master's brutality. The knowledge of this circumstance, together with his daily behaviour to his wife and the young apprentice, did not at all contribute to my enjoying my new situation with ease; however, as I did not perceive how I could bestow myself to better advantage, I resolved to study Crab's temper with all the application, and manage it with all the address, in my power. And it was not long before I found out a strange peculiarity of humour, which governed his behaviour

haviour towards all his dependants. I observed, when he was pleased, he was such a niggard of his satisfaction, that if his wife or servants betrayed the least symptom of participation, he was offended to an insupportable degree of choler and fury, the effects of which they seldom failed to feel. And when his indignation was roused, submission and soothing always exasperated it beyond the bounds of reason and humanity. I therefore pursued a contrary plan; and one day, when he honoured me with the names of ignorant whelp, lazy ragamuffin; I boldly replied, I was neither ignorant nor lazy, since I both understood, and performed my business, as well as he could do for his soul; neither was it just to call me ragamuffin, for I had a whole coat on my back, and was descended from a better family than any he could boast an alliance with. He gave tokens of great amazement at this assurance of mine, and shook his cane over my head, regarding me all the time with a countenance truly diabolical. Although I was terribly startled at his menacing looks and posture, I yet had reflection enough left, to convince me I had gone too far to retract, and that this was the critical minute which must decide my future lot in his service; I therefore snatched up the pottle of a mortar, and swore, if he offered to strike me without a cause, I should see whether his scull or my weapon was hardest. He continued silent for some time, and at last broke forth into these ejaculations: 'This is fine usage from a servant to a master, very fine! damnation! but no matter, you shall pay for this, you dog, you shall; I'll do your business; yes, yes, I'll teach you to lift your hand against me.' So saying, he retired, and left me under dreadful apprehensions, which vanished entirely at our next meeting, when he behaved with unusual complacency, and treated me with a glass of punch after dinner. By this conduct, I got the ascendancy over him in a short time, and became so necessary to him, in managing his business while he was engaged at the bottle, that fortune began to wear a kinder aspect; and I consoled myself for the disregard of my former acquaintance, with the knowledge I daily imbibed, by a close application to the duties of my employ-

ment, in which I succeeded beyond my own expectation. I was on very good terms with my master's wife; whose esteem I acquired and cultivated, by representing Mrs. Potion in the most ridiculous lights my satirical talents could invent, as well as by rendering her some christian offices, when she had been too familiar with the dram bottle, to which she had oftentimes recourse for consolation, under the affliction she suffered from a barbarous husband. In this manner I lived, without hearing the least tidings of my uncle, for the space of two years; during which time I kept little or no company, being neither in a humour to relish, nor in a capacity to maintain, much acquaintance: for the Nabal my master allowed me no wages; and the small perquisites of my station scarce supplied me with the common necessities of life. I was no longer a pert, unthinking coxcomb, giddy with popular applause, and elevated with the extravagance of hope; my misfortunes had taught me how little the caresses of the world, during a man's prosperity, are to be valued by him; and how seriously and expeditiously he ought to set about making himself independent of them. My present appearance, therefore, was the least of my care, which was wholly engrossed in laying up a stock of instruction that might secure me against the caprice of fortune for the future. I became such a sloven, and contracted such an air of austerity, that every body pronounced me crest-fallen; and Gawky returned to town without running any risk from my resentment, which was by this time pretty much cooled, and restrained by prudential reasons so effectually, that I never so much as thought of obtaining satisfaction for the injuries he had done me. When I deemed myself sufficiently master of my business, I began to cast about for an opportunity of launching into the world, in hope of finding some provision, that might make amends for the difficulties I had undergone: but, as this could not be effected without a small sum of money to equip me for the field, I was in the utmost perplexity how to raise it, well knowing that Crab, for his own sake, would never put me in a condition to leave him, when his interest was so much concerned in my stay. But a small accident,

dent, which happened about this time, determined him in my favour. This was no other than the pregnancy of his maid-servant, who declared her situation to me, assuring me at the same time, that I was the occasion of it. Although I had no reason to question the truth of this imputation, I was not ignorant of the familiarities which had passed between her master and her; taking the advantage of which, I represented to her the folly of laying the burden at my door, when she might dispose of it to much better purpose with Mr. Crab: She listened to my advice, and next day acquainted him with the pretended success of their mutual endeavours. He was so far from being over-joyed at this proof of his vigour, which he foresaw might be of very troublesome consequences; not that he dreaded any domestic grumbings and reproaches from his wife, whom he kept in perfect subjection; but because he knew it would furnish his rival Potion with a handle for insulting and undermining his reputation, there being no scandal equal to that of uncleanness, in the opinion of those who inhabit the part of the island where he lived. He therefore took a resolution worthy of himself, which was, to persuade the girl that she was not with child, but only afflicted with a disorder incident to young women, which he could easily remove. With this view, as he pretended, he prescribed for her such medicines as he thought would infallibly procure abortion: but in this scheme he was disappointed; for the maid, being advertised by me of his design, and at the same time well acquainted with her own condition, absolutely refused to follow his directions; and threatened to publish her situation to the world, if he would not immediately take some method of providing for the important occasion, which she expected in a few months. It was not long before I guessed the result of his deliberation, by his addressing himself to me, one day, in this manner: 'I am surprized that a young fellow like you discovers no inclination to push his fortune in the world. Before I was of your age, I was broiling on the coast of Guinea. Damme! what's to hinder you from profiting by the war, which will certainly be declared in a short time

' against Spain? you may easily get on board of a king's ship in quality of surgeon's mate, where you will certainly see a great deal of practice, and stand a good chance of getting prize-money.' I laid hold of this declaration, which I had long wished for, and assured him I would follow his advice with pleasure, if it was in my power; but that it was impossible for me to embrace an opportunity of that kind, as I had no friend to advance a little money, to supply me with what necessaries I should want, and defray the expences of my journey to London. He told me, that few necessaries were required; and as for the expence of my journey, he would lend me money sufficient not only for that purpose, but also to maintain me comfortably in London, until I should procure a warrant for my provision on board of some ship. I gave him a thousand thanks for his obliging offer, (although I was very well apprized of his motive, which was no other than a design to lay the bastard to my charge, after my departure;) and accordingly set out in a few weeks for London; my whole fortune consisting of one suit of clothes, half a dozen of ruffled shirts, as many plain; two pair of worsted, and a like number of thread stockings; a case of pocket instruments, a small edition of Horace, Wiseman's Surgery, and ten guineas in cash; for which Crab took my bond, bearing 5l. per cent. interest; at the same time gave me a letter to the member of parliament for our town, which he said would do my business effectually.

C H A P. VIII.

I ARRIVE AT NEWCASTLE—MEET WITH MY OLD SCHOOLFELLOW STRAP—WE DETERMINE TO WALK TOGETHER TO LONDON—SET OUT ON OUR JOURNEY—PUT UP AT A SOLITARY ALLEY—HOUSE—ARE DISTURBED BY A STRANGE ADVENTURE IN THE NIGHT.

THERE is no such convenience as a waggon in this country, and my finances were too weak to support the expence of hiring a horse; I determined therefore to set out with the carriers,

carriers, who transport goods from one place to another on horseback; and this scheme I accordingly put in execution, on the first day of November 1739, sitting upon a pack-saddle between two baskets; one of which contained my goods in a knapsack. But by the time we arrived at Newcastle upon Tyne, I was so fatigued with the tediousness of the carriage, and benumbed with the coldness of the weather, that I resolved to travel the rest of my journey on foot, rather than proceed in such a disagreeable manner.

The hostler of the inn at which we put up, understanding I was bound for London, advised me to take my passage in a collier, which would be both cheap and expeditious, and withal much easier than to walk upwards of three hundred miles through deep roads, in the winter time; a journey which he believed I had not strength enough to perform. I was almost persuaded to take his advice, when one day stepping into a barber's shop to be shaved, the young man, while he lathered my face, accosted me thus: 'Sir, I presume you are a Scotch-man.' I answered in the affirmative. 'Pray,' continued he, 'from what part of Scotland?' I no sooner told him, than he discovered great emotion, and not confining his operation to my chin and upper-lip, besmeared my whole face with great agitation. I was so offended at this profusion, that starting up, I asked him what the devil he meant by using me so. He begged pardon, telling me his joy at meeting with a countryman had occasioned some confusion in him; and craved my name. But when I declared my name was Random, he exclaimed in a rapture, 'How! Rory Random?' The same, I replied, 'looking at him with astonishment. 'What,' cried he, 'don't you know your old school-fellow, Hugh Strap?' At that instant recollecting his face, I flew into his arms, and in the transport of my joy, gave him back one half of the fuds he had so lavishly bestowed on my countenance, so that we made a very ludicrous appearance, and furnished a great deal of mirth for his master and shop-mates, who were witnesses of this scene. When our mutual caresses were over, I sat down again to be shaved, but the poor fellow's nerves

were so discomposed by this unexpected meeting, that his hand could scarcely hold the razor, with which, nevertheless, he found means to cut me in three places, in as many strokes. His master, perceiving his disorder, bade another supply his place, and after the operation was performed, gave Strap leave to pass the rest of the day with me. We retired immediately to my lodgings, where calling for some beer, I desired to be informed of his adventures; which contained nothing more, than that his master dying before his time was out, he had come to Newcastle about a year ago, in expectation of journey-work, along with three young fellows of his acquaintance who worked in the keels; that he had the good fortune of being employed by a very civil master, with whom he intended to stay till the spring, at which time he proposed to go to London, where he did not doubt of finding encouragement. When I communicated to him my situation and design, he did not approve of my taking a passage by sea, by reason of the danger of a winter voyage, which is very hazardous along that coast, as well as the precariousness of the wind, which might possibly detain me a great while, to the no small detriment of my fortune: whereas, if I would venture by land, he would bear me company, carry my baggage all the way; and if we should be fatigued before we could perform the journey, it would be no hard matter for us to find on the road, either returned horses or waggons, of which we might take the advantage for a very trifling expence. I was so ravished at this proposal, that I embraced him affectionately, and assured him he might command my purse to the last farthing; but he gave me to understand, he had saved money sufficient to answer his own occasions; and that he had a friend in London, who would soon introduce him into business, in that capital; and might possibly have it in his power to serve me also.

Having concerted the plan and settled our affairs that night, we departed next morning by day-break, armed with a good cudgel each (my companion being charged with the furniture of us both, crammed into one knapsack;) and our money sewed between the lining and waistband of our breeches, except

cept some loose silver for our immediate expence on the road. We travelled all day at a round pace; but being ignorant of the proper stages, were benighted at a good distance from any inn, so that we were compelled to take up our lodging at a small hedge-ale-house, that stood on a bye-road, about half a mile from the highway: There we found a pedlar of our own country, in whose company we regaled ourselves with bacon and eggs, and a glass of good ale, before a comfortable fire, conversing all the while very sociably with the landlord and his daughter, an hale buxom lass, who entertained us with great good-humour, and in whose affection I was vain enough to believe I had made some progress. About eight o'clock, we were all three, at our own desire, shewn into an apartment furnished with two beds, in one of which Strap and I betook ourselves to rest, and the pedlar occupied the other, though not before he had prayed a considerable time extempore, searched into every corner of the room, and fastened the door on the inside with a strong iron screw, which he carried about with him for that use. I slept very sound till midnight, when I was disturbed by a violent motion of the bed, which shook under me with a continual tremor. Alarmed at this phenomenon, I jogged my companion, whom, to my no small amazement, I found drenched in sweat, and quaking through every limb; he told me with a low faltering voice, that we were undone; for there was a bloody highwayman loaded with pistols in the next room; then bidding me make as little noise as possible, he directed me to a small chink in the board partition, through which I could see a thickset brawny fellow, with a fierce countenance, sitting at a table with our young landlady, having a bottle of ale and a brace of pistols before him. I listened with great attention, and heard him say in a terrible tone; 'D—n that son of a bitch, Smack the coachman! he has served me a fine trick, indeed! but d—tion seize me if I don't make him repent it! I'll teach the scoundrel to give intelligence to others, while he is under articles with me.' Our landlady endeavoured to appease this exasperated robber, by saying he might be mistaken in Smack,

who perhaps kept no correspondence with the other gentleman that robbed his coach, and that if an accident had disappointed him to day, he might soon find opportunities enough to atone for his trouble. 'I'll tell thee what, my dear Bet,' replied he, 'I never had, nor never will, while my name is Rifle, have such a glorious booty as I missed to day. Z—ds! there was 400 l. in cash to recruit men for the king's service, besides the jewels, watches, swords and money, belonging to the passengers; had it been my fortune to have got clear off with so much treasure, I would have purchased a commission in the army, and made you an officer's lady, you jade, I would.'—'Well, well,' cried Betty, 'we must trust to Providence for that; but did you find nothing worth taking, which escaped the other gentlemen of the road?'—'Not much, faith,' said the lover, 'I gleaned a few things, such as a pair of pops, silver mounted, here they are, I took them loaded from the captain who had the charge of the money, together with a gold watch, which he had concealed in his breeches. I likewise found ten Portugal pieces in the shoes of a quaker, whom the spirit moved to revile me with great bitterness and devotion; but what I value myself mostly for, is this here purchase, a gold snuff-box, my girl, with a picture on the inside of the lid: which I untied out of the tail of a pretty lady's smock.' Here, as the devil would have it, the pedlar snored so loud, that the highwayman snatching his pistols, started up, crying, 'Hell, and d—tion! I am betrayed, who's that in the next room?' Mrs. Betty told him, he need not be uneasy, there were only three poor wearied travellers, who missing the road, had taken up their lodgings in the house, and were asleep long ago. Travellers! says he; 'spies, you b—ch! but no matter, I'll send them all to hell in an instant.' He accordingly ran towards our door; when his sweetheart interposing, assured him, there was only a couple of poor young Scotchmen, who were too raw and ignorant to give him the least cause of suspicion; and the third was a presbyterian pedlar of the same nation, who had often lodged in the house before. This declaration

tion satisfied the thief, who swore he was glad there was a pedlar, for he wanted some linen. Then in a jovial manner, he put about the glass, mingling his discourse to Betty, with caresses and familiarities that spoke him very happy in his amours. During that part of the conversation which regarded us, Strap had crept under the bed, where he lay in the agonies of fear; so that it was with great difficulty I persuaded him our danger was over, and prevailed on him to wake the pedlar, and inform him of what he had seen and heard. This itinerant merchant no sooner felt somebody shaking him by the shoulder, than he started up, calling as loud as he could, 'Thieves, thieves! Lord have mercy on us.' And Rifle, alarmed at this exclamation, jumped up, cocked one of his pistols, and turned towards the door, to kill the first man who should enter; for he verily believed himself beset; when his Dulcinea, after an immoderate fit of laughter, persuaded him, that the poor pedlar dreaming of thieves, had only cried out in his sleep. Meanwhile my comrade had undeceived our fellow lodger, and informed him of his reason for disturbing him; upon which, getting up softly, he peeped through the hole, and was so terrified with what he saw, that falling down on his bare knees, he put up a long petition to Heaven, to deliver him from the hands of that ruffian, and promised never to defraud a customer for the future of a pin's point, provided he might be rescued from the present danger. Whether or not his disburdening his conscience afforded him any ease, I know not; but he slipped into bed again, and lay very quiet until the robber and his mistress were asleep, and snored in concert; then rising softly, he untied a rope that was round his pack, which making fast to one end of it, he opened the window with as little noise as possible, and lowered his goods into the yard with great dexterity; then he moved gently to our bed-side, and bade us farewell; telling us, that as we ran no risk, we might take our rest with great confidence, and in the morning assure the landlord that we knew nothing of his escape: and lastly, shaking us by the hands, and wishing us all manner of success, he let himself drop from the

window without any danger, for the ground was not above a yard from his feet as he hung on the outside. Although I did not think proper to accompany him in his flight, I was not at all free from apprehension, when I reflected on what might be the effect of the highwayman's disappointment; as he certainly intended to make free with the pedlar's ware. Neither was my companion at more ease in his mind; but on the contrary, so possessed with the dreadful idea of Rifle, that he solicited me strongly to follow our countryman's example, and so elude the fatal resentment of that terrible adventurer, who would certainly wreak his vengeance on us, as accomplices of the pedlar's elopement. But I represented to him the danger of giving Rifle cause to think we knew his profession; and suggested, that if ever he should meet us again on the road, he would look upon us as dangerous acquaintance, and find it his interest to put us out of the way. I told him withal, my confidence in Betty's good-nature, in which he acquiesced; and, during the remaining part of the night, we concerted a proper method of behaviour to render us unsuspected in the morning.

It was no sooner day, than Betty, entering our chamber, and perceiving our window open, cried out, 'Ods bobs! sure you Scotchmen must have hot constitutions, to lie all night with the window open, in such cold weather.' I feigned to start out of sleep, and withdrawing the curtain, called, 'What's the matter?' When she shewed me, I affected surprise, and said, 'Bless me! the window was shut when we went to bed.'—'I'll be hanged,' said she, 'if Sawny Waddle the pedlar has not got up in a dream and done it, for I heard him very obstrepulous in his sleep. Sure I put a chamber-pot under his bed.' With these words she advanced to the bed in which he lay, and finding the sheets cold, exclaimed, 'Good lack a daisy! the rogue is fled!'—'Fled,' cried I, with feigned amazement, 'God forbid! Sure he has not robbed us.' Then springing up, I laid hold of my breeches, and emptied all my loose money into my hand; which having reckoned, I said, 'Heaven be praised, our money is all safe. Strap, look to the knapsack.'

E

He

He did so, and found all was right. Upon which we asked, with seeming concern, if he had stole nothing belonging to the house. 'No, no,' replied she, 'he has stole nothing but 'his reckoning:' which, it seems, this pious pedlar had forgot to discharge, in the midst of his devotion. Betty, after a moment's pause, withdrew, and immediately we could hear her waken Rifle, who no sooner heard of Waddle's flight, than he jumped out of bed and dressed, venting a thousand execrations, and vowing to murder the pedlar if ever he should set eyes on him again; 'For,' said he, 'the scoundrel has by 'this time raised the hue and cry against me.' Having dressed himself in a hurry, he mounted his horse, and for that time rid us of his company, and a thousand fears that were the consequence of it. While we were at breakfast, Betty endeavoured, by all the cunning she was mistress of, to learn whether or no we suspected our fellow-lodger, whom we saw take horse; but as we were on our guard, we answered her sly questions with a simplicity she could not distrust; when, all of a sudden, we heard the trampling of a horse's feet at the door. This noise alarmed Strap so much, whose imagination was wholly engrossed by the image of Rifle, that with a countenance as pale as milk, he cried, 'O Lord! 'there's the highwayman returned!' Our landlady staring at these words, said, 'What highwayman, young man? 'Do you think any highwaymen harbour here?' Though I was very much disconcerted at this piece of indiscretion in Strap, I had presence of mind enough to tell her, we had met a horseman the day before, whom Strap had foolishly supposed to be a highwayman, because he rode with pistols; and that he had been terrified at the sound of a horse's feet ever since. She forced a smile at the ignorance and timidity of my comrade; but I could perceive, not without great concern, that this account was not at all satisfactory to her.

CHAP. IX.

WE PROCEED ON OUR JOURNEY—
ARE OVERTAKEN BY AN HIGH-
WAYMAN, WHO FIRES AT STRAP,

IS PREVENTED FROM SHOOTING
ME BY A COMPANY OF HORSE-
MEN, WHO RIDE IN PURSUIT OF
HIM—STRAP IS PUT TO BED
AT AN INN—ADVENTURES AT
THAT INN.

AFTER having paid our score, and taken leave of our hosts, who embraced me tenderly at parting, we proceeded on our journey, blessing ourselves that we had come off so well. We had not walked above five miles, when we observed a man on horseback galloping after us, whom we in a short time recognized to be no other than this formidable hero who had already given us so much vexation. He stopped hard by me, and asked if I knew who he was. My astonishment had disconcerted me so much, that I did not hear his question, which he repeated with a volley of oaths and threats; but I remained as mute as before. Strap seeing my discomposure, fell upon his knees in the mud, uttering with a lamentable voice, these words: 'For Christ's sake, have mercy upon us, Mr. Rifle; we know you very well.'—'Oho!' cried the thief, 'you do! but you never shall be evi-
'dence against me in this world, you dog!' So saying, he drew a pistol, and fired it at the unfortunate shaver, who fell flat upon the ground, without speaking one word. My comrade's fate, and my own situation, rivetted me to the place where I stood, deprived of all sense and reflection; so that I did not make the least attempt either to run away, or deprecate the wrath of this barbarian, who snapped a second pistol at me; but before he had time to prime again, perceiving a company of horsemen coming up, he rode off, and left me standing motionless as a statue, in which posture I was found by those whose appearance had saved my life. This company consisted of three men in livery, well armed, with an officer, who, as I afterwards learned, was the person from whom Rifle had taken the pocket-pistols the day before; and who, making known his misfortune to a nobleman he met on the road, and assuring him his non-resistance was altogether owing to his consideration for the ladies in the coach, procured the assistance of his lordship's servants to go in quest of the plunderer. This holiday

holiday captain scampered up to me with great address, and asked who fired the pistol which he had heard. As I had not yet recovered my reason, he, before I could answer, observed a body lying on the ground: at which sight his colour changed, and he pronounced with a faltering tongue, 'Gentlemen, here's murder committed! Let us alight.'—'No, no,' said one of his followers, 'let us rather pursue the murderer.—Which way went he, young man?' By this time I had recollected myself so far as to tell them that he could not be a quarter of a mile before; and to beg of one of them to assist me in conveying the corpse of my friend to the next house, in order to it's being interred. The captain, foreseeing that in case he should pursue, he must soon come to action, began to curb his horse, and give him the spur at the same time, which treatment making the creature rear up and snort, he called out his horse was frightened, and would not proceed; at the same time wheeling him round and round, stroking his neck, whistling, and wheedling him with, 'Sirrah, Sirrah; gently, gently, &c.'—'Z—ds!' cried one of the servants, 'sure my lord's Sorrel is not resty!' With these words, he bestowed a lash on his buttocks, and Sorrel, disdainful of the rein, sprung forward with the captain at a pace that would have soon brought him up with the robber, had not the girth (happily for him) given way, by which means he landed in the dirt; and two of his attendants continued their pursuit, without minding his situation. Meanwhile one of the three who remained at my desire, turning the body of Strap, in order to see the wound which had killed him, found him still warm, and breathing; upon which I immediately let him blood, and saw him with inexpressible joy recover; he having received no other wound than what his fear had inflicted. Having raised him upon his legs, we walked together to an inn, about half a mile from the place, where Strap, who was not quite recovered, went to bed; and in a little time, the third servant returned with the captain's horse and furniture, leaving him to crawl after as well as he could. This gentleman of the sword, upon his arrival, complained grievously of the bruise occa-

sioned by his fall; and on the recommendation of the servant, who warranted my ability, I was employed to bleed him, for which service he rewarded me with half a crown.

The time between this event and dinner, I passed in observing a game at cards between two farmers, an exciseman, and a young fellow in a rusty gown and cassock, who, as I afterwards understood, was curate of a neighbouring parish. It was easy to perceive that the match was not equal; and that the two farmers, who were partners, had to do with a couple of sharpers, who stripped them of all their cash in a very short time. But what surprized me very much, was to hear this clergyman reply to one of the countrymen who seemed to suspect foul play, in these words: 'D—n me, friend, d'ye question my honour?' I did not at all wonder to find a cheat in canonicals, this being a character frequent in my own country; but I was scandalized at the indecency of his behaviour, which appeared in the oaths he swore, and the bawdy songs which he sung. At last, to make amends, in some sort, for the damage he had done to the unwary boors, he pulled out a fiddle from the lining of his gown, and promising to treat them at dinner, began to play most melodiously, singing in concert all the while. This good-humour of the parson inspired the company with so much glee, that the farmers soon forgot their losses, and all present went to dancing in the yard. While we were agreeably amused in this manner, our musician spying a horseman riding towards the inn, stooped all of a sudden, crying out, 'Gad so! gentlemen, I beg your pardon; there's our dog of a doctor coming into the inn.' He immediately concealed his instrument, and ran towards the gate, where he took hold of the vicar's bridle, and helped him off, enquiring very cordially into the state of his health. This rosy son of the church (who might be about the age of fifty) having alighted, and entrusted the curate with his horse, stalked with great solemnity into the kitchen, where, sitting down by the fire, he called for a bottle of ale and a pipe; scarce deigning an answer to the submissive questions of those who enquired about the welfare of his family. While he indulged himself in this state, amidst a

profound silence, the curate approaching him with great reverence, asked if he would not be pleased to honour us with his company at dinner? To which interrogation he answered in the negative, saying, he had been to visit Squire Bumpkin, who had drank himself into a high fever at the last assizes; and that he had, on leaving his own house, told Betty he should dine at home. Accordingly, when he had made an end of his bottle and pipe, he rose and moved with prelatical dignity to the door, where his journeyman stood ready with his nag. He had no sooner mounted, than the facetious curate coming into the kitchen, held forth in this manner: 'There the old rascal goes, and the d—l go with him. You see how the world wags, gentlemen. By Gad, this rogue of a vicar does not deserve to live; and yet he has two livings worth 400l. per annum, while poor I am fain to do all his drudgery, and ride twenty miles every Sunday to preach; for what? why, truly, for 20l. a year. I scorn to boast of my own qualifications, but comparisons are odious. I should be glad to know how this swag-bellied doctor deserves to be more at ease than me. He can loll in his elbow chair at home, indulge himself in the best of victuals and wine, and enjoy the conversation of Betty, his house-keeper. You understand me, gentlemen. Betty is the doctor's poor kinswoman, and a pretty girl she is; but no matter for that: ay, and a dutiful girl to her parents, whom she visits regularly every year; though, I must own, I could never learn in what county they live. My service t'ye, gentlemen.' By this time dinner being ready, I waked my companion, and we ate all together with great cheerfulness. When our meal was ended, and every man's share of the reckoning adjusted, the curate went out on pretence of some necessary occasion, and mounting his horse, left the two farmers to satisfy the host in the best manner they could. We were no sooner informed of this piece of finesse, than the exciseman, who had been silent hitherto, began to open with a malicious grin: 'Ay, ay, this is an old trick of Shuffle; I could not help smiling, when he talked of treating. You must know, this is a very

curious fellow. He picked up some scraps of learning while he served young Lord Trifle at the university. But what he most excels in is pimping. No man knows his talents better than I; for I was *valet de chambre* to Squire Tattle, an intimate companion of Shuffle's lord. He got himself into a scrape, by pawning some of his lordship's clothes, on which account he was turned away; but, as he was acquainted with some particular circumstances of my lord's conduct, he did not care to exasperate him too much, and so made interest for his receiving orders, and afterwards recommended him to the curacy which he now enjoys. However, the fellow cannot be too much admired for his dexterity in making a comfortable livelihood, in spite of such a small allowance. You hear he plays a good stick, and is really diverting company. These qualifications make him agreeable, wherever he goes; and as for playing at cards, there is not a man within three counties a match for him: the truth is, he is a damnable cheat; and can shift a card with such address, that it is impossible to discover him.' Here he was interrupted by one of the farmers, who asked why he had not justice enough to acquaint them with these particulars before they engaged in play. The exciseman replied, without any hesitation, that it was none of his business to intermeddle between man and man; besides, he did not know they were ignorant of Shuffle's character, which was notorious to the whole country. This did not satisfy the other, who taxed him with abetting and assisting the curate's knavery, and insisted on having his share of the winnings returned; this demand the exciseman as positively refused, affirming, that whatsoever slights Shuffle might practise on other occasions, he was very certain, that he had play'd on the square with them, and would answer it before any bench in Christendom. So saying, he got up, and having paid his reckoning, sneaked off. The landlord thrusting his neck into the passage, to see if he was gone, shook his head, saying, 'Ah! Lord help us! if every sinner was to have his deserts. Well, we victuallers must not disoblige the excisemen.' But

‘ But I know what: if parson Shuffle and he were weighed together, a straw thrown into either scale, would make the balance kick the beam. But, masters, this is under the rose,’ continued Boniface with a whisper.

C H A P. X.

THE HIGHWAYMAN IS TAKEN—WE ARE DETAINED AS EVIDENCE AGAINST HIM—PROCEED TO THE NEXT VILLAGE—HE ESCAPES—WE ARRIVE AT ANOTHER INN, WHERE WE GO TO BED—IN THE NIGHT ARE AWAKED BY A DREADFUL ADVENTURE—NEXT NIGHT WE LODGE AT THE HOUSE OF A SCHOOLMASTER—OUR TREATMENT THERE.

STRAP and I were about to depart on our journey, when we perceived a crowd on the road, coming towards us shouting and hallooing all the way. As it approached, we could discern a man on horseback in the middle, with his hands tied behind him, whom we soon knew to be Rifle. This highwayman not being so well mounted as the two servants who went in pursuit of him, was soon overtaken, and after having discharged his pistols, made prisoner without any farther opposition. They were carrying him in triumph, amidst the acclamations of the country people, to a justice of peace in a neighbouring village, but stopt at our inn to join their companion, and take refreshment. When Rifle was dismounted, and placed in the yard, within a circle of peasants, armed with pitchforks, I was amazed to see what a pitiful dejected fellow he now appeared, who had but a few hours before filled me with such terror and confusion. My companion was so much encouraged by this alteration in his appearance, that going up to the thief, he presented his clenched fists to his nose, and declared, he would either cudgel or box with the prisoner for a guinea, which he immediately produced, and began to strip; but was dissuaded from this adventure by me, who represented to him the folly of the undertaking, as Rifle was now in the hands of justice, which would, no doubt, give us all satisfaction enough.

But what made me repent of our impertinent curiosity, was our being detained by the captors, as evidence against him, when we were just going to set forward. However, there was no remedy; we were obliged to comply; and accordingly joined in the cavalcade, which luckily took the same road that we had proposed to follow. About the twilight we arrived at the place of our destination, but as the justice was gone to visit a gentleman in the country, with whom we understood he would probably stay all night, the robber was confined in an empty garret three stories high, from which it seemed impossible for him to escape: This, nevertheless, was the case; for the next morning, when they went up stairs to bring him before the justice, the bird was flown, having got out at the window upon the roof, from whence he continued his rout along the tops of the adjoining houses, and entered another garret window, where he skulked until the family were asleep, at which time he ventured down stairs, and let himself out by the street-door, which was found open. This event was a great disappointment to those that apprehended him, who were flushed with the hopes of the reward; but gave me great joy, as I was permitted now to continue my journey without any farther molestation. Resolving to make up for the small progress we had hitherto made, we this day travelled with great vigour, and before night reached a market-town, twenty miles from the place from whence we set out in the morning, without meeting any adventure worth notice. Here having taken up our lodging at an inn, I found myself so fatigued, that I began to despair of performing our journey on foot, and desired Strap to enquire if there were any waggon, return-horses, or other cheap carriage, in this place, to depart for London next day. He was informed, that the waggon from Newcastle to London had halted here two nights ago; and that it would be an easy matter to overtake it, if not the next day, at farthest the day after the next. This piece of news gave us some satisfaction; and, after having made a hearty supper on hashed mutton, we were shewn to our room, which contained two beds, the one allotted for us, and the other for a very honest gen-

gentleman, who, we were told, was then drinking below. Though we could have very well dispensed with his company, we were glad to submit to this disposition, as there was not another bed empty in the house; and accordingly went to rest, after having secured our baggage under the bolster. About two or three o'clock in the morning, I was awaked out of a very profound sleep, by a dreadful noise in the chamber, which did not fail to throw me into an agony of consternation, when I heard these words pronounced in a terrible voice: 'Blood and wounds! run the halbert into the guts of him that's next you, and I'll blow the other's brains out presently.' This dreadful salutation had no sooner reached the ears of Strap, than starting out of bed, he ran against somebody in the dark, and overturned him in an instant; at the same time bawling out, 'Fire! murder! fire!', a cry which in a moment alarmed the whole house, and filled our chamber with a crowd of naked people. When lights were brought, the occasion of all this disturbance soon appeared; which was no other than our fellow-lodger, whom we found lying on the floor scratching his head, with a look testifying the utmost astonishment, at the concourse of apparitions that surrounded him. This honest gentleman was, it seems, a recruiting-serjeant; who, having lifted two country fellows over night, dreamed they had mutinied, and threatened to murder him and the drummer who was along with him. This made such an impression on his imagination, that he got up in his sleep, and expressed himself as above. When our apprehension of danger vanished, the company beheld one another with great surprize and mirth; but what attracted the notice of every one, was our landlady with nothing on her but her shift and a large pair of buckskin breeches with the backside before, which she had slept on in the hurry, and her husband with her petticoat about his shoulders: one had wrapt himself in a blanket, another was covered with a sheet, and the drummer, who had given his only shirt to be washed, appeared in *cuerpo* with the bolster rolled about his middle. When this affair was discussed, every body retired to his own apartment, the serjeant slept into bed, and my companion and I slept

without any farther disturbance till morning; when we got up, went to breakfast, paid our reckoning, and set forward, in expectation of overtaking the waggon; in which hope, however, we were disappointed for that day. As we exerted ourselves more than usual, I found myself quite spent with fatigue, when we entered a small village in the twilight. We enquired for a public house, and were directed to one of a very sorry appearance. At our entrance, the landlord, who seemed to be a venerable old man, with long grey hair, rose from a table placed by a large fire in a very neat paved kitchen, and with a chearful countenance accosted us in these words: '*Salvete, pueri, ingredimini.*' I was not a little pleased to hear our host speak Latin, because I was in hope of recommending myself to him by my knowledge in that language; I therefore answered without hesitation, '*Dissolve frigus, ligna super foco, large reponens.*' I had no sooner pronounced these words, than the old gentleman running toward me, shook me by the hand, crying, '*Fili mi dilectissime! unde venis? a superis ni fallor!*' In short, finding we were both read in the classicks, he did not know how to testify his regard enough; but ordered his daughter, a jolly rosy-cheeked damsel, who was his sole domestic, to bring us a bottle of his *quadrimum*, repeating from Horace at the same time, '*Deprome quadrimum sabinâ, O Tballiarche, merum diotâ.*' This *quadrimum* was excellent ale of his own brewing, of which he told us he had always an *amphora* four years old, for the use of himself and friends. In the course of our conversation, which was interlarded with scraps of Latin, we understood, that this facetious person was a schoolmaster, whose income being small, he was fain to keep a glass of good liquor for the entertainment of passengers, by which he made shift to make the two ends of the year meet. 'I am this day,' said he, 'the happiest old fellow in his majesty's dominions. My wife, rest her soul, is in heaven. My daughter is to be married next week; but the two chief pleasures of my life are these: pointing to the bottle, and a large edition of Horace that lay on the table. 'I am old, 'tis true, what then? the more reason I should enjoy the small share

share of life that remains, as my friend Flaccus advises: *Tu ne quaeris, (scire nefas) quem mihi, quem tibi finem dii dederint. Carpe diem quam minum credula postero.* As he was very inquisitive about our affairs, we made no scruple of acquainting him with our situation, which when he had learned, he enriched us with advices how to behave in the world, telling us that he was no stranger to the deceits of mankind. In the mean time he ordered his daughter to lay a fowl to the fire for supper, for he was resolved this night to regale his friends, *permittens diuis catera.* While our entertainment was preparing, our host recounted the adventures of his own life; which, as they contain nothing remarkable, I forbear to rehearse. When we had fared sumptuously, and drank several bottles of his *quadrimum*, I expressed a desire of going to rest, which was with some difficulty complied with, after he had informed us that we should overtake the waggon by noon next day; and that there was room enough in it for half a dozen, for there were only four passengers as yet in that convenience. Before my comrade and I fell asleep, we had some conversation about the good-humour of our landlord, which gave Strap such an idea of his benevolence, that he positively believed we should pay nothing for our lodging and entertainment. 'Don't you observe,' said he, 'that he has conceived a particular affection for us; nay, even treated us at supper with extraordinary fare, which, to be sure, we should not of ourselves have called for?' I was partly of Strap's opinion; but the experience I had of the world made me suspend my belief till the morning; when getting up betimes, we breakfasted with our host and his daughter on hasty-pudding and ale, and desired to know what we had to pay. 'Biddy will let you know, gentlemen,' said he, 'for I never mind these matters. Money matters are beneath the concern of one who lives upon the Horatian plan. *Crescentem sequitur cura pecuniam.*' Meanwhile, Biddy having consulted a slate that hung in the corner, told us our reckoning came to 8s. 7d. 'Eight shillings and seven pence!' cried Strap; 'tis impossible, you must be mistaken, young woman.'—'Reckon again, child,' says her father, very deliberately, 'perhaps

you have miscounted.'—'No, indeed father,' she replied, 'I know my business better.' I could contain my indignation no longer, but said it was an unconscionable bill, and demanded to know the particulars; upon which the old man got up, muttering, 'Aye, aye, let us see the particulars; that's but reasonable.' And taking pen, ink, and paper, wrote the following items:

	s.	d.
To bread and beer	0	6
To a fowl and sausages	2	6
To four bottles <i>quadrim</i>	2	0
To fire and tobacco	0	7
To lodging	2	0
To breakfast	1	0
	8	7

As he had not the appearance of a common publican, and had raised a sort of veneration in me by his demeanor the preceding night, it was not in my power to upbraid him as he deserved; therefore I contented myself with saying I was sure he did not learn to be an extortioner from Horace. He answered, I was but a young man, and did not know the world, or I would not tax him with extortion, whose only aim was to live *contentus parvo*, and keep off *importuna pauperies*. My fellow-traveller could not so easily put up with this imposition; but swore he should either take one-third of the money or go without. While we were engaged in this dispute, I perceived the daughter go out, and conjecturing the occasion, immediately paid the exorbitant demand, which was no sooner done, than Biddy returned with two stout fellows, who came in on pretence of taking their morning draught, but in reality to frighten us into compliance. Just as we departed, Strap, who was half distracted on account of this piece of expence, went up to the school-master, and grinning in his face, pronounced with great emphasis, '*Semper avarus eget.*' To which the pedant replied, with a malicious smile, '*Animum rege, qui, nisi paret, imperat.*'

CHAP. XI.

WE DESCRIBE THE WAGGON—GET INTO IT—ARRIVE AT AN INN—OUR FELLOW TRAVELLERS DESCRIBED—

SCRIBED—A MISTAKE IS COMMITTED BY STRAP, WHICH PRODUCES STRANGE THINGS.

WE travelled half a mile without exchanging one word; my thoughts being engrossed by the knavery of the world, to which I must be daily exposed; and the contemplation of my finances, which began sensibly to diminish. At length Strap, who could hold no longer, addressed me thus: 'Well, fools and their money are soon parted. If my advice had been taken, that old skin-flint should have been damn'd before he had got more than the third of his demand. 'Tis a sure sign you came easily by your money, when you squander it away in this manner. Ah, God help you, how many bristly beards must I have mowed before I earned four shillings and three pence half-penny, which is all thrown to the dogs? How many days have I sat weaving hair, till my toes were numbed by the cold, my fingers cramp'd, and my nose as blue as the sign of the periwig that hung over the door? What the devil was you afraid of? I would have engaged to box with any one of those fellows that came in, for a guinea. I'm sure I have beat stouter men than either of them.' And indeed my companion would have fought any body, when his life was in no danger; but he had a mortal aversion to fire arms, and all instruments of death. In order to appease him, I assured him no part of this extraordinary expence should fall upon his shoulders; at which declaration he was affronted, and told me, he would have me to know, that although he was a poor barber's boy, he had a soul to spend his money with the best squire of the land. Having walked all day at a great pace, without halting for a refreshment, we descried, towards the evening, to our inexpressible joy, the waggon about a quarter of a mile before us; and by that time we reached it, were both of us so weary, that I verily believe it would have been impracticable for us to have walked one mile farther. We therefore bargained with the driver, whose name was Joey, to give us a cast to the next stage for a shilling; at which place we should meet the master of the

waggon, with whom we might agree for the rest of the journey.

Accordingly the convenience stopt, and Joey having placed the ladder, Strap, being loaded with our baggage, mounted first; but just as he was getting in, a tremendous voice assailed his ears in these words: 'God's fury! there shall no passengers come here.' The poor shaver was so disconcerted at this exclamation, which both he and I imagined proceeded from the mouth of a giant, that he descended with great velocity, and a countenance as white as paper. Joey perceiving our astonishment, called, with an arch sneer, 'Waunds, captain, whay woa'n't you suffer the poor waggoner to make a penny?—Coom, coom, young man, get oop, get oop; never moind the captain. I fe not afear'd of the captain.' This was not encouragement sufficient to Strap, who could not be prevailed upon to venture up again; upon which I attempted, though not without a quaking heart, when I heard the same voice muttering like distant thunder: 'Hell and the devil confound me, if I don't make you smart for this!' However I crept in, and by accident got an empty place in the straw, which I immediately took possession of, without being able to discern the faces of my fellow travellers in the dark. Strap following with the knapsack on his back, chanced to take the other side, and by a jolt of the carriage, pitched directly upon the stomach of the captain, who bellowed out in a most dreadful manner: 'Blood and thunder, where's my sword!' At these words, my frightened comrade started up, and at one spring bounced against me with such force, that I thought he was the supposed son of Anak, who intended to press me to death. In the mean time a female voice cried, 'Bless me! what is the matter, my dear?'—'The matter,' replied the captain, 'damn my blood! my guts are squeezed into a pancake, by that Scotchman's hump.' Strap trembling all the while at my back, asked him pardon, and laid the blame of what had happened upon the jolting of the waggon; and the woman who spoke before, went on: 'Aye, aye, my dear, it is our own fault; we may thank ourselves for all the in-

con-



Plate V.

Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. 1st July 1780.

64

[Faint, mostly illegible text, possibly bleed-through from the reverse side of the page]

BRITISH
4 APR 1914
MUSEUM

‘conveniencies we meet with. I thank God, I never travelled so before. I’m sure, if my lady or Sir John was to know where we are, they would not sleep this night for vexation. I wish to God we had writ for the chariot: I know we shall never be forgiven.’ — ‘Come, come, my dear,’ replied the captain, ‘it don’t signify fretting now, we shall laugh it over as a frolic: I hope you will not suffer in your health. I shall make my lord very merry with our adventures in the *Diligence*.’ This discourse gave me such a high notion of the captain and his lady, that I durst not venture to join in the conversation: but immediately after, another female voice began; ‘Some people give themselves a great many needless airs; better folks than any here have travelled in waggons before now. Some of us have rode in coaches and chariots with three footmen behind them, without making so much fuss about it. What then? we are now all upon a footing; therefore let’s be sociable and merry. What do you say, Isaac? Is not this a good motion, you doating rogue? Speak, you old cent. per cent. fornicator. What desperate debts are you thinking of? What mortgage are you planning? Well, Isaac, positively you shall never gain my favour, till you turn over a new leaf, grow honest, and live like a gentleman. In the mean time, give me a kiss, you old fumbler.’ These words, accompanied with a hearty smack, enlivened the person to whom they were addressed, to such a degree, that he cried in a transport, though with a faltering voice, ‘Ah, you wanton baggage; upon my credit, you are a waggish girl; he, he, he!’ This laugh introduced a fit of coughing, which almost suffocated the poor usurer (such, we afterwards found, was the profession of this our fellow-traveller.) About this time I fell asleep, and enjoyed a comfortable nap till such time as we arrived at the inn where we put up. Here, having alighted from the waggon, I had an opportunity of viewing the passengers in order as they entered. The first who appeared was a brisk airy girl, about twenty years old, with a silver-laced hat on her head, instead of a cap, a blue stuff riding-suit trimmed with silver, very much tar-

nished, and a whip in her hand. After her, came limping, an old man with a worsted night cap, buttoned under his chin, and a broad-brimmed hat slouched over it, an old rusty blue cloak tied about his neck, under which appeared a brown furtout, that covered a threadbare coat and waistcoat, and, as we afterwards discerned, a dirty flannel jacket. His eyes were hollow, bleared, and gummy; his face was shrivelled into a thousand wrinkles, his gums were destitute of teeth, his nose sharp and drooping, his chin peaked and prominent, so that when he mumped or spoke, they approached one another like a pair of nut-crackers; he supported himself on an ivory-headed cane, and his whole figure was a just emblem of winter, famine, and avarice. But how was I surprized, when I beheld the formidable captain in the shape of a little thin creature, about the age of forty, with a long withered visage, very much resembling that of a baboon, through the upper part of which, two little grey eyes peeped! He wore his own hair in a queue that reached to his rump, which immoderate length, I suppose, was the occasion of a baldness that appeared on the crown of his head, when he deigned to take off his hat, which was very much of the size and cock of Pistol’s. Having laid aside his great coat, I could not help admiring the extraordinary make of this man of war: He was about five feet and three inches high, sixteen inches of which went to his face and long scraggy neck; his thighs were about six inches in length, his legs resembling spindles or drum-sticks, two feet and an half, and his body, which put me in mind of extension without substance, engrossed the remainder; so that on the whole, he appeared like a spider or grasshopper erect, and was almost a *vox, et preterea nihil*. His dress consisted of a frock of what is called bear-skin, the skirts of which were about half a foot long, an hussar waistcoat, scarlet breeches reaching half-way down his thighs, worsted stockings rolled up almost to his groin, and shoes with wooden heels at least two inches high; he carried a sword very near as long as himself in one hand, and with the other conducted his lady, who seemed to be a woman of his own age, and still retained some remains of

an agreeable person; but so ridiculously affected, that had I not been a novice in the world, I might have easily perceived in her, the deplorable vanity and second-hand airs of a lady's woman. We were all assembled in the kitchen, when Captain Weazel (for that was his name) desired a room with a fire for himself and spouse; and told the landlord, they would sup by themselves. The inn-keeper replied, that he could not afford them a room by themselves; and as for supping, he had prepared victuals for the passengers in the waggon, without respect of persons, but if he could prevail on the rest to let him have his choice in a separate manner he should be very well pleased. This was no sooner said, than all of us declared against the proposal, and Miss Jenny (our other female passenger) observed, that if Captain Weazel and his lady had a mind to sup by themselves, they might wait until we should have done. At this hint, the captain put on a martial frown, and looked very big, without speaking; while his yoke-fellow, with a disdainful toss of her nose, muttered something about 'creature;' which Miss Jenny over-hearing, stepped up to her, saying, 'None of your names, good Mrs. Abigail; creature, quotha! I'll assure you. No such creature as you, neither; no ten pound sneaker; no quality coupler.' Here the captain interposed with a 'Damme, Madam, what do you mean by that?'—'Damn you, Sir, who are you?' replied Miss Jenny: 'who made you a captain, you pitiful, trencher-scraping, pimping curler? Sdeath! the army is come to a fine pass, when such fellows as you get commissions. What, I suppose you think I don't know you? Agad, you and your helpmate are well met; a cast-off mistress, and a bald valet de chambre, are well yoked together.'—'Blood and wounds!' cried Weazel, 'd'ye question the honour of my wife, Madam! Hell and damnation! No man in England durst say so much. I would flea him, carbonado him! Fury and destruction! I would have his liver for my supper.' So saying, he drew his sword, and flourished with it, to the great terror of Strap; while Miss Jenny snapping her fingers, told him, she did not value his resentment a

louse. In the midst of this quarrel, the master of the waggon alighted, who understanding the cause of the disturbance, and fearing the captain and his lady would take umbrage, and leave his carriage, was at great pains to have every thing made up, which he at last accomplished, and we sat down to supper all together. At bed-time we were shewed to our apartments: the old usurer, Strap and I, to one room; the captain, his wife, and Miss Jenny, to another. About midnight, my companion's bowels being disordered, he got up in order to go backward; but in his return, mistaking one door for another, entered Weazel's chamber, and without any hesitation went to bed to his wife, who was fast asleep; the captain being at another end of the room, groping for some empty vessel, in lieu of his own chamber-pot, which was leaky. As he did not perceive Strap coming in, he went toward his own bed, after having found a convenience; but no sooner did he feel a rough head, covered with a cotton night-cap, than it came into his mind, that he had mistaken Miss Jenny's bed instead of his own, and that the head he felt was that of some gallant, with whom she had made an assignation. Full of this conjecture, and scandalized at the prostitution of his apartment, he snatched up the vessel he had just before filled, and emptied it at once on the astonished barber, and his own wife, who waking at that instant, broke forth into lamentable cries, which not only alarmed the husband beyond measure, but frightened poor Strap almost out of his senses; for he verily believed himself bewitched; especially when the incensed captain seized him by the throat, with a volley of oaths, asking him how he durst have the presumption to attempt the chastity of his wife. Poor Strap was so amazed and confounded, that he could say nothing; but, 'I take God to witness she's a virgin for me.' Mrs. Weazel, enraged to find herself in such a pickle, through the precipitation of her husband, arose in her shift, and with the heel of her shoe, which she found by the bed-side, belaboured the captain's bald pate till he roared murder. 'I'll teach you to empty your stink-pots on me,' cried she, 'you pitiful, hop-o'-my-thumb coxcomb. What!

I war-

'I warrant you're jealous, you man of lath. Was it for this I condescended to take you to my bed, you poor, withered, sapless twig?' The noise, occasioned by this adventure, had brought the master of the waggon and me to the door, where we overheard all that passed with great satisfaction. In the mean time we were alarmed with the cry of 'Rape! Murder! Rape!' which Miss Jenny pronounced with great vociferation. 'O! you vile, abominable old villain,' said she, 'would you rob me of my virtue: But I'll be revenged of you, you old goat! I will?—Help! for Heaven's sake, help!—I shall be ravished, ruined! help!' Some servants of the inn, hearing this cry, came running up stairs with lights, and such weapons as chance afforded; when we beheld a very diverting scene. In one corner stood the poor captain shivering in his shirt, which was all torn to rags; with a woeful visage, scratched all over by his wife; who had by this time wrapped the counterpane about her, and sat sobbing on the side of her bed. In the other end lay the old usurer sprawling on Miss Jenny's bed, with his flannel jacket over his shirt, and his tawny meagre limbs exposed to the air; while she held him fast by the two ears, and loaded him with execrations. When we asked what was the matter, she affected to weep, told us, she was afraid that wicked rogue had ruined her in her sleep, and bade us take notice of what we saw, for she intended to make use of our evidence against him. The poor wretch looked like one more dead than alive, and begged to be released; a favour which he had no sooner obtained, than he protested she was no woman, but a devil incarnate; that she had first seduced his flesh to rebel, and then betrayed him. 'Yes, cockatrice,' continued he, 'you know you laid this snare for me: but you shan't succeed; for I will hang myself before you shall get a farthing of me.' So saying, he crawled to his own bed, groaning all the way. We then advanced to the captain, who told us, 'Gentlemen, here has been a damn'd mistake; but I'll be reveng'd on him who was the occasion of it. That Scotchman who carries the knapsack shall not breathe this vital air another day, if my name

be Weazel.—My dear, I ask you ten thousand pardons, you are sensible I could mean no harm to you.'—'I know not what you meant,' replied she, sighing, 'but I know I have got enough to send me to my grave.' At length they were reconciled. The wife was complimented with a share of Miss Jenny's bed (her own being overflowed) and the master of the waggon invited Weazel to sleep the remaining part of the night with him. I retired to mine, where I found Strap mortally afraid, he having stole away in the dark, while the captain and his lady were at logger-heads.

CHAPTER XII.

CAPTAIN WEAZEL CHALLENGES STRAP, WHO DECLINES THE COMBAT—AN AFFAIR BETWEEN THE CAPTAIN AND ME—THE USURER IS FAIN TO GIVE MISS JENNY FIVE GUINEAS FOR A RELEASE—WE ARE IN DANGER OF LOSING A MEAL—THE BEHAVIOUR OF WEAZEL, JENNY, AND JOEY, ON THAT OCCASION—AN ACCOUNT OF CAPTAIN WEAZEL AND HIS LADY—THE CAPTAIN'S COURAGE TRIED—ISAAC'S MIRTH AT THE CAPTAIN'S EXPENCE.

NEXT morning, I agreed to give the master of the waggon ten shillings for my passage to London, provided Strap should be allowed to take my place when I should be disposed to walk. At the same time I desired him to appease the incensed captain, who had entered the kitchen, with a drawn sword in his hand, and threatened with many oaths, to sacrifice the villain who attempted to violate his bed; but it was to no purpose for the master to explain the mistake, and assure him of the poor lad's innocence, who stood trembling behind me all the while: the more submission that appeared in Strap, the more implacable seemed the resentment of Weazel, who swore he must either fight him, or he would instantly put him to death. I was extremely provoked at this insolence, and told him, it could not be supposed that a poor barber lad would engage a man of the sword at his own

weapon; but I was persuaded he would wrestle or box with him. To which proposal Strap immediately gave assent, by saying he would box with him for a guinea. Weazel replied, with a look of disdain, that it was beneath any gentleman of his character to fight like a porter, or even to put himself on a footing, in any respect, with such a fellow as Strap. 'Odds bodikins!' cries Joey, 'sure, captain, yaw would not commit moorder! Here's a poor lad that is willing to make atone-ment for his offence; and an that woan't fatishe yaw, offers to fight yaw fairly. An yaw woan't box, I dare say he will coodgel with yaw.—' 'Woan't yaw, my lad?' Strap, after some hesitation, answered, 'Ye—yes, I'll cudgel with him.' But this expedient being also rejected by the captain, I began to smell his character; and tipping Strap the wink, told the company that I had always heard it said, the person who receives a challenge should have the choice of the weapons; this therefore being the rule in point of honour, I would venture to promise on the head of my companion, that he would even fight Captain Weazel at sharps; but it should be with such sharps as Strap was best acquainted with, namely, razors. At my mentioning razors, I could perceive the captain's colour change, while Strap, pulling me by the sleeve, whispered with great eagerness; 'No, no, no; for the love of God, don't make any such bargain.' At length Weazel, recovering himself, turned towards me, and, with a ferocious countenance, asked, 'Who the devil are you? will you fight me?' With these words, putting himself in a posture, I was grievously alarmed at seeing the point of a sword within half a foot of my breast; and springing to one side, snatched up a spit that stood in the chimney-corner, with which I kept my formidable adversary at bay, who made a great many half-longes, skipping backward at every push, till at last I pinned him up in a corner, to the no small diversion of the company. While he was in this situation, his wife entered, and seeing her husband in these dangerous circumstances, uttered a dreadful scream: in this emergency, Weazel demanded a cessation, which was immediately granted; and at last was contented

with the submission of Strap, who falling on his knees before him, protested the innocence of his intention, and asked pardon for the mistake he had committed. This affair being ended without bloodshed, we went to breakfast, but missed two of our company, namely, Miss Jenny and the usurer. As for the first, Mrs. Weazel informed us, that she had kept her awake all night with her groans; and that when she rose in the morning, Miss Jenny was so much indisposed, that she could not proceed on her journey. At that instant, a message came from her to the master of the waggon, who immediately went into her chamber, followed by us all. She told him, in a lamentable tone, that she was afraid of a miscarriage, owing to the fright she received last night, from the brutality of Isaac; and as the event was uncertain, desired the usurer might be detained to answer for the consequence. Accordingly, this ancient Tarquin was found in the waggon, whither he had retired to avoid the shame of last night's disgrace, and brought by force into her presence. He no sooner appeared, than she began to weep and sigh most piteously, and told us, if she died, she would leave her blood upon the head of that ravisher. Poor Isaac turned up his eyes and hands to heaven, prayed that God would deliver him from the machinations of that Jezabel, and assured us, with tears in his eyes, that his being found in bed with her, was the result of her own invitation. The waggoner understanding the case, advised Isaac to make it up, by giving her a sum of money: to which advice he replied with great vehemence, 'A sum of money! a halter for the cockatrice!'—'O! 'tis very well,' said Miss Jenny: 'I see it is in vain to attempt that flinty heart of his, by fair means.—Joey, be so good as to go to the justice, and tell him there is a sick person here, who wants to see him on an affair of consequence.' At the name of justice, Isaac trembled, and bidding Joey stay, asked with a quavering voice, 'what she would have?' She told him, that as he had not perpetrated his wicked purpose, she would be satisfied with a small matter. And though the damage she might sustain in her health might be irreparable, she would give him

him a release for an hundred guineas. 'An hundred guineas!' cried he, in an extasy; 'an hundred furies! Where should a poor old wretch like me have an hundred guineas? If I had so much money, d'ye think I should be found travelling in a waggon, at this season of the year?'—'Come, come,' replied Jenny, 'none of your miserly artifice here. You think I don't know Isaac Rapine, the money-broker in the Minorities. Ah, you old rogue! many a pawn have you had of me and my acquaintance, which was never redeemed.' Isaac finding it was in vain to disguise himself, offered twenty shillings for a discharge, which she absolutely refused under fifty pounds: at last, however, she was brought down to five, which he paid, with great reluctance, rather than be prosecuted for a rape. After which accommodation the sick person made shift to get into the waggon, and we set forwards in great tranquility, Strap being accommodated with Joey's horse, the driver himself chusing to walk. This morning and forenoon we were entertained with an account of the valour of Captain Weazel, who told us he had once knocked down a soldier that made game of him; tweaked a drawer by the nose, who found fault with his picking his teeth with a fork, at another time; and that he had moreover challenged a cheese-monger, who had the presumption to be his rival: for the truth of which exploits he appealed to his wife. She confirmed whatever he said, and observed, 'The last affair happened that very day on which I received a love-letter from Squire Gobble; and don't you remember, my dear, I was prodigiously sick that very night with eating ortolans, when my Lord Diddle took notice of my complexion's being altered, and my lady was so alarmed that she had well nigh fainted.'—'Yes, my dear,' replied the captain, 'you know, my lord said to me, with a sneer, "Billy, Mrs. Weazel is certainly breeding." And I answered cavalierly, "My lord, I wish I could return the compliment." Upon which the whole company broke out into an immoderate fit of laughter; and my lord, who loves a repartee dearly, came round and buffed me.' We travelled in this manner five days with-

out interruption, or meeting any thing worth notice: Miss Jenny, who soon recovered her spirits, entertaining us every day with diverting songs, of which she could sing a great number; and rallying her old gallant, who notwithstanding would never be reconciled to her. On the sixth day, while we were about to sit down to dinner, the inn-keeper came and told us that three gentlemen, just arrived, had ordered the victuals to be carried to their apartment, although he had informed them that they were bespoke by the passengers in the waggon. To which information they had replied, 'The passengers in the waggon might be damn'd; their betters must be served before them; they supposed it would be no hardship on such travellers to dine upon bread and cheese for one day.' This was a terrible disappointment to us all; and we laid our heads together how to remedy it; when Miss Jenny observed that Captain Weazel, being by profession a soldier, ought in this case to protect and prevent us from being insulted. But the captain excused himself, saying, he would not for all the world be known to have travelled in a waggon; swearing at the same time, that could he appear with honour, they should eat his sword sooner than his provision. Upon this declaration, Miss Jenny, snatching his weapon, drew it, and ran immediately into the kitchen, where she threatened to put the cook to death if he did not send the victuals into our chamber immediately. The noise she made, brought the three strangers down, one of whom no sooner perceived her, than he cried, 'Ha, Jenny Ramper! what the devil brought you hither?'—'My dear Jack Rattle!' replied she, running into his arms, 'is it you? then Weazel may go to hell for a dinner, I shall dine with you.' They consented to this proposal with a great deal of joy; and we were on the point of being reduced to a very uncomfortable meal, when Joey understanding the whole affair, entered the kitchen with a pitchfork in his hand, and swore he would be the death of any man who should pretend to seize the victuals prepared for the waggon. This menace had like to have produced fatal consequences; the three strangers drawing their swords, and being joined by their servants, and we ranging ourselves on the

the side of Joey; when the landlord interposing, offered to part with his own dinner to keep the peace, which was accepted by the strangers; and we sat down at table without any farther molestation. In the afternoon, I chose to walk along with Joey, and Strap took my place. Having entered into a conversation with this driver, I soon found him to be a merry, facetious, good-natured fellow, and withal very arch: He informed me, that Miss Jenny was a common girl upon the town, who falling into company with a recruiting officer, he carried her down in the stage-coach from London to Newcastle, where he had been arrested for debt, and was now in prison; upon which she was fain to return to her former way of life by this conveyance. He told me likewise, that one of the gentlemen's servants, whom we left at the inn, having accidentally seen Weazel, immediately knew him, and acquainted Joey with some particulars of his character. That he had served my lord Frizzle in quality of valet de chambre many years; while he lived separately from his lady: but upon their reconciliation, she expressly insisted upon Weazel's being turned off, as well as the woman he kept; when his lordship, to get rid of them both with a good grace, proposed that he should marry his mistress, and he would procure a commission for him in the army. This expedient was agreed to, and Weazel is now, by his lordship's interest, ensign in ———'s regiment. I found he and I had the same sentiments with regard to Weazel's courage, which he resolved to put to the trial, by alarming the passengers with the cry of, 'an highwayman!' as soon as an horseman should appear. This scheme we put in practice towards the dusk, when we descried a man on horseback approaching us. Joey had no sooner intimated to the people in the waggon, that he was afraid we should be all robbed, than a general consternation arose: Strap jumped out of the waggon, and hid himself behind a hedge. The usurper put forth ejaculations, and made a rustling among the straw, which made us conjecture he had hid something under it. Mrs. Weazel wringing her hands, uttered lamentable cries; and the captain, to our great amazement, began to snore; but this artifice did

not succeed; for Miss Jenny, shaking him by the shoulder, bawled out, 'Sdeath, captain! is this a time to snore, when we are going to be robbed? Get up for shame, and behave like a soldier and a man of honour.' Weazel pretended to be in a great passion for being disturbed, and swore he would have his nap out if all the highwaymen in England surrounded him. 'D—n my blood! what are you afraid of?' continued he; at the same time trembling with such agitation that the whole carriage shook. This singular piece of behaviour incensed Miss Ramper so much, that she cried, 'D—n your pitiful soul, you are as arrant a poltroon as ever was drummed out of a regiment. Stop the waggon, Joey; let me get out, and by G—d, if I have rhetorick enough, the thief shall not only take your purse, but your skin also.' So saying, she leapt out with great agility. By this time the horseman came up with us, and happened to be a gentleman's servant well known to Joey, who communicated the scheme, and desired him to carry it on a little farther, by going up to the waggon, and questioning those within. The stranger consenting, for the sake of diversion, approached it, and in a terrible tone, demanded, 'Who have we got here?' Isaac replied, with a lamentable voice, 'Here's a poor miserable sinner, who has got a small family to maintain, and nothing in the world wherewithal, but these fifteen shillings, which if you rob me of, we must all starve together.' — 'Who's that sobbing in the other corner?' said the supposed highwayman. 'A poor unfortunate woman,' answered Mrs. Weazel, 'upon whom I beg you for Christ's sake to have compassion.' — 'Are you maid or wife?' said he. 'Wife, to my sorrow,' cried she. 'Who, or where is your husband?' continued he. 'My husband,' replied Mrs. Weazel, 'is an officer in the army, and was left sick at the last inn where we dined.' — 'You must be mistaken, Madam,' said he, 'for I myself saw him get into the waggon this afternoon. But pray what smell is that? Sure your lap-dog has befouled himself; let me catch hold of the nasty cur, I'll teach him better manners.' Here he laid hold of one of Weazel's legs, and pulled

pulled him out from under his wife's petticoats, where he had concealed himself. The poor trembling captain being detected in this inglorious situation, rubbed his eyes, and affecting to wake out of sleep, cried, 'What's the matter? What's the matter?'—'The matter is not much,' answered the horseman, 'I only called in to enquire after your health, and so adieu, most noble captain.' So saying, he clapped spurs to his horse, and was out of sight in a moment. It was some time before Weazel could recollect himself, but at length re-assuming the big look, he said, 'Damn the fellow! why did he ride away, before I had time to ask him how his lord and lady do? Don't you remember Tom, my dear?' addressing himself to his wife. 'Yes,' replied she, 'I think I do remember something of the fellow; but you know I seldom converse with people of his station.'—'Hey-day!' cried Joey, 'do yaw know the young mon, captain?'—'Know him,' said Weazel, 'many a time has he filled a glass of Burgundy for me, at my Lord Tripper's table.'—'And what may his neame be, captain?' said Joey. 'His name! his name,' replied Weazel, 'is Tom Rinser.'—'Waunds!' cried Joey, 'a has changed his own neame then! for I fe lay any wager he was christened John Trotter.' This observation raised a laugh against the captain, who seemed very much disconcerted; when Isaac broke silence, and said, 'It was no matter who or what he was, since he has not proved the robber we suspected. And we ought to bleis God for our narrow escape.'—'Bleis God,' said Weazel, 'bleis the devil! for what? had he been a highwayman, I should have eat his blood, body and guts, before he had robbed me, or any one in this *Diligence*.'—'Ha, ha, ha!' cried Miss Jenny, 'I believe you will eat all you kill, indeed, captain.' The usurer was so well pleased at the event of this adventure, that he could not refrain from being severe; and took notice that Captain Weazel seemed to be a good christian, for he had armed himself with patience and resignation, instead of carnal weapons; and worked out his salvation with fear and trembling. This piece of satire occasioned a great deal of mirth at Wea-

zel's expence, who muttered a great many oaths, and threatened to cut Isaac's throat. The usurer taking hold of this menace, said, 'Gentlemen and ladies, I take you all to witness, that my life is in danger from this bloody-minded officer. I'll have him bound over to the peace.' This second sneer procured another laugh against him, and he remained crest-fallen during the remaining part of our journey.

CHAP. XIII.

STRAP AND I ARE TERRIFIED BY AN APPARITION—STRAP'S CONJECTURE—THE MYSTERY EXPLAINED BY JOEY—WE ARRIVE AT LONDON—OUR DRESS AND APPEARANCE DESCRIBED—WE ARE INSULTED IN THE STREET—AN ADVENTURE IN AN ALE-HOUSE—WE ARE IMPOSED UPON BY A WAGGISH FOOTMAN—SET TO RIGHTS BY A TOBACCONIST—TAKE LODGINGS—DIVE FOR A DINNER—AN ACCIDENT AT OUR ORDINARY.

WE arrived at our inn, supped, and went to bed; but Strap's distemper continuing, he was obliged to rise in the middle of the night, and taking the candle in his hand, which he had left burning for the purpose, he went down to the house of office, whence in a short time he returned in a great hurry, with his hair standing on end, and a look betokening horror and astonishment. Without speaking a word, he set down the light, and jumped into bed behind me, where he lay and trembled with great violence. When I asked him what was the matter? he replied with a broken accent, 'God have mercy on us! I have seen the devil.' Though my prejudice was not quite so strong as his, I was not a little alarmed at this exclamation, and much more so, when I heard the sound of bells approaching our chamber, and felt my bed-fellow cling close to me, uttering these words, 'Christ have mercy upon us! there he comes.' At that instant, a monstrous over-grown raven entered our chamber, with bells at his feet, and made directly towards our bed. As
this

this creature is reckoned in our country, a common vehicle for the devil and witches to play their pranks in, I verily believed we were haunted; and in a violent fright, shrunk under the bed-clothes. This terrible apparition leapt upon the bed, and after giving us several severe dabs with its beak through the blankets, hopped away and vanished. Strap and I recommended ourselves to the protection of Heaven with great devotion, and when we no longer heard the noise, ventured to peep up and take breath. But we had not been long freed from this phantom, when another appeared that had well nigh deprived us both of our senses. We perceived an old man enter the room, with a long white beard that reached to his middle; there was a certain wild peculiarity in his eyes and countenance, that did not favour of this world; and his dress consisted of a brown stuff coat buttoned behind and at the wrists, with an odd fashioned cap of the same stuff upon his head. I was so amazed, that I had not power to move my eyes from such a ghastly object, but lay motionless, and saw him come straight up to me: when he reached the bed he wrung his hands, and cried, with a voice that did not seem to belong to a human creature, 'Where is Ralph?' I made no reply; upon which he repeated in an accent still more preternatural; 'Where is 'Ralpho?' He had no sooner pronounced these words, than I heard the sound of the bells at a distance; which the apparition having listened to, tript away, and left me almost petrified with fear. It was a good while before I could recover myself so far as to speak: and when at length I turned to Strap, I found him in a fit, which, however, did not last long. When he came to himself, I asked his opinion of what had happened; and he assured me that the first must certainly be the soul of some person damned, which appeared by the chains about its legs; (for his fears had magnified the creature to the bigness of a horse, and the sound of small morrice bells to the clanking of massy chains.) As for the old man, he took it to be the spirit of somebody murdered long ago in this place, which had power granted it to torment the assassin in the shape of a raven, and that Ralpho was the name of the said

murderer. Although I had not much faith in this interpretation, I was too much troubled to enjoy any sleep; and in all my future adventures never passed a night so ill. In the morning, Strap imparted the whole affair to Joey, who, after an immoderate fit of laughter, explained the matter, by telling him the old man was the landlord's father, who had been an idiot some years, and diverted himself with a tame raven, which, it seems, had hopped away from his apartment in the night, and induced him to follow it to our chamber, where he had enquired after it under the name of Ralpho.

Nothing remarkable happened during the remaining part of our journey, which continued six or seven days longer. At length we entered the great city and lodged all night at the inn where the waggon put up. Next morning, all the passengers parted different ways; while my companion and I sallied out to enquire for the member of parliament, to whom I had a letter of recommendation from Mr. Crab. As we had discharged our lodging at the inn, Strap took up our baggage, and marched behind me in the street with the knapsack on his back, as usual, so that we made a very whimsical appearance. I had dressed myself to the greatest advantage; that is, put on a clean ruffled shirt, and my best thread stockings: my hair (which was of the deepest red) hung down upon my shoulders, as lank and straight as a pound of candles; and the skirts of my coat reached to the middle of my leg; my waistcoat and breeches were of the same piece, and cut in the same taste; and my hat very much resembled a barber's bason in the shallowness of the crown and narrowness of the brims. Strap was habited in a much less awkward manner; but a short crop-eared wig that very much resembled Scrub's in the play, and the knapsack on his back, added to what is called a queer phiz, occasioned by a long chin, and hook nose and high cheek bones, rendered him on the whole a very fit subject of mirth and pleasantry. As we walked along, Strap, at my desire, inquired of a carman whom we met, whereabouts Mr. Cringer lived; and was answered by a stare, accompanied with the word 'Anan!' Upon which I came up, in order to explain the ques-

tion; but had the misfortune to be unintelligible likewise, the carman damning us for a lousy Scotch guard, and whipping his horses with a 'Gee ho!' which nettled me to the quick, and roused the indignation of Strap so far, that after the fellow was gone a good way, he told me he would fight him for a farthing. While we were deliberating upon what was to be done, an hackney coachman driving softly along, and perceiving us standing by the kennel, came up close to us, and calling, 'A coach, master?' by a dexterous management of the reins, made his horses stumble in the wet, and bedaub us all over with mud. After which exploit he drove on, applauding himself with a hearty laugh, in which several people joined, to my great mortification; but one more compassionate than the rest, seeing us strangers, advised me to go into an ale-house, and dry myself. I thanked him for his advice, which I immediately complied with; and going into the house he pointed out, called for a pot of beer, and sat down by a fire in the public room, where we cleaned ourselves as well as we could. In the mean time, a wag, who sat in a box smoking his pipe, understanding by our dialect that we were from Scotland, came up to me, and, with a grave countenance, asked how long I had been caught. As I did not know the meaning of this question, I made no answer; and he went on, saying, it could not be a great while, for my tail was not yet cut: at the same time taking hold of my hair, and tipping the wink to the rest of the company, which seemed highly entertained with his wit. I was incensed at this usage, but afraid of resenting it, because I happened to be in a strange place, and perceived the person who spoke to me was a brawny fellow, for whom I thought myself by no means a match. However, Strap having either more courage or less caution, could not put up with the insults that I suffered; but told him in a peremptory tone, he was an uncivil fellow, for making so free with his betters. Then the wit going toward him, asked what he had got in his knapsack. 'Is it oatmeal or brimstone, Sawney?' said he, seizing him by the chin, which he shook, to the inexpressible diversion of all present. My companion feeling

himself assaulted in such an opprobrious manner, disengaged himself in a trice, and lent his antagonist such a box on the ear, as made him stagger to the other side of the room; and in a moment a ring was formed for the combatants. Seeing Strap beginning to strip, and my blood being heated with indignation, which banished all other thoughts, I undressed myself to the skin in an instant, and declared, that as the affront that occasioned the quarrel was offered to me, I would fight it out myself; upon which one or two cried out, 'That's a brave Scotch boy; you shall have fair play, by G—d.' This assurance gave me fresh spirits, and going up to my adversary, who by his pale countenance did not seem much inclined to the battle, I struck him so hard on the stomach, that he reeled over a bench, and fell to the ground. Then I attempted to keep him down, in order to improve my success, according to the manner of my own country; but was restrained by the spectators, one of whom endeavoured to raise up my opponent, but in vain; for he protested he would not fight, for he was not quite recovered of a late illness. I was very well pleased with this excuse, and immediately dressed myself, having acquired the good opinion of the company for my bravery, as well as of my comrade Strap, who shook me by the hand, and wished me joy of the victory. After having drank our pot, and dried our clothes, we inquired of the landlord if he knew Mr. Cringer the member of parliament; and were amazed at his replying in the negative; for we imagined he must be altogether as conspicuous here as in the borough he represented; but he told us we might possibly hear of him as we passed along. We betook ourselves therefore to the street, where seeing a footman standing at a door, we made up to him, and asked if he knew where our patron lived. This member of the party-coloured fraternity surveying us both very minutely, said he knew Mr. Cringer very well, and bade us turn down the first street on our left, then turn to the right, and then to the left again, after which perambulation we would observe a lane, through which we must pass, and at the other end we should find an alley that leads to another street, where we should see the sign of the Thistle and

Three Pedlars, and there he lodged. We thanked him for his information, and went forwards, Strap telling me that he knew this person to be an honest friendly man by his countenance, before he opened his mouth; in which opinion I acquiesced, ascribing his good manners to the company he daily saw in the house where he served. We followed his directions punctually, in turning to the left and to the right, and to the left again; but instead of seeing a lane before us, found ourselves at the side of the river, a circumstance that perplexed us not a little; and my fellow-traveller ventured to pronounce, that we had certainly missed our way. By this time we were pretty much fatigued with our walk, and not knowing how to proceed, I went into a small snuff-shop hard by, encouraged by the sign of the Highlander, where I found, to my inexpressible satisfaction, the shopkeeper was my countryman. He was no so soon informed of our peregrination, and the directions we had received from the footman, than he informed us we had been imposed upon; telling us Mr. Cringer lived in the other end of the town, and that it would be to no purpose for us to go thither to-day, for by that time he was gone to the house. I then asked if he could recommend us to a lodging. He readily gave us a line to one of his acquaintance, who kept a chandler's shop not far from St. Martin's Lane; there we hired a bed-room up two pair of stairs, at the rate of 2s. per week, so very small, that when the bed was let down, we were obliged to carry out every other piece of furniture that belonged to the apartment, and use the bedstead by way of chairs. About dinner-time our landlord asked us how we proposed to live: to which interrogation we answered that we would be directed by him. 'Well, then,' says he, 'there are two ways of eating in this town for people of your condition, the one more creditable and expensive than the other; the first is, to dine at an eating-house frequented by well-dressed people only; and the other is called diving, practised by those who are either obliged or inclined to live frugally.' I gave him to understand, that provided the last was not infamous, it would suit much

better with our circumstances than the other. 'Infamous!' cried he, 'God forbid! there are many creditable people, rich people, aye and fine people, that dive every day. I have seen many a pretty gentleman with a laced waistcoat, dine in that manner very comfortable for threepence half-penny, and go afterwards to the coffee-house, where he made a figure with the best lord in the land; but your own eyes shall bear witness, I will go along with you to-day, and introduce you.' He accordingly conducted us to a certain lane, where stopping, he bade us observe him, and do as he did, and walking a few paces, dived into a cellar, and disappeared in an instant. I followed his example, and descending very successfully, found myself in the middle of a cook's shop, almost suffocated with the steams of boiled beef, and surrounded by a company of hackney coachmen, chairmen, draymen, and a few footmen out of place or on board wages, who sat eating shin of beef, tripe, cow-heel, or sausages, at separate boards, covered with cloths which turned my stomach. While I stood in amaze, undetermined whether to sit down or walk upwards again, Strap in his descent missing one of the steps, tumbled headlong into this infernal ordinary, and overturned the cook as she carried a porringer of soup to one of the guests. In her fall she dashed the whole mess against the legs of a drummer belonging to the footguards, who happened to be in her way, and scalded him so miserably, that he started up, and danced up and down, uttering a volley of execrations that made my hair stand on end. While he entertained the company in this manner, with an eloquence peculiar to himself, the cook got up, and after a hearty curse on the poor author of this mischance, who lay under the table scratching his rump with a woeful countenance, emptied a salt-seller in her hand, and stripping down the patient's stocking, which brought the skin along with it, applied the contents to the sore. This poultice was scarce laid on, when the drummer, who had begun to abate of his exclamation, broke forth into such a hideous yell, as made the whole company tremble; then seizing a pewter pint-pot that stood by him, squeezed the

the sides of it together, as if it had been made of pliant leather, grinding his teeth at the same time with the most horrible grin. Guessing the cause of this violent transport, I bade the woman wash off the salt, and bathe the part with oil, which she did, and procured him immediate ease. But here another difficulty occurred, which was no other than the landlady's insisting on his paying for the pot he had rendered useless. He swore he would pay for nothing but what he had eaten, and bade her be thankful for his moderation, or else he would prosecute her for damages. Strap foreseeing the whole affair would lie at his door, promised to satisfy the cook, and called for a dram of gin to treat the drummer, which entirely appeased him, and composed all animosities. After this accommodation, our landlord and we sat down at a board, and dined upon shin of beef most deliciously; our reckoning amounting to two pence halfpenny each, bread and small-beer included.

CHAP. XIV.

WE VISIT STRAP'S FRIEND—A DESCRIPTION OF HIM—HIS ADVICE—WE GO TO MR. CRINGER'S HOUSE—ARE DENIED ADMITTANCE—AN ACCIDENT BEFALLS STRAP—HIS BEHAVIOUR THEREUPON—AN EXTRAORDINARY ADVENTURE OCCURS, IN THE COURSE OF WHICH I LOSE ALL MY MONEY.

IN the afternoon, my companion proposed to call at his friend's house, which, we were informed, was in the neighbourhood, whither we accordingly went, and were so lucky as to find him at home. This gentleman, who had come from Scotland three or four years before, kept a school in town, where he taught the Latin, French, and Italian languages; but what he chiefly professed, was the pronunciation of the English tongue, after a method more speedy and uncommon than any practised heretofore; and indeed if his scholars spoke like their master, the latter part of his undertaking was certainly performed to a tittle; for although I could easily understand every word of what I had heard hitherto since

I entered England, three parts in four of his dialect were as unintelligible to me, as if he had spoke in Arabic or Irish. He was a middle-sized man, and stooped very much, though not above the age of forty; his face was frightfully pitted with the small-pox, and his mouth extended from ear to ear. He was dressed in a night-gown of plaid, fastened about his middle with a serjeant's old sash, and a tie periwig with a fore-top three inches high, in the fashion of King Charles the Second's reign. After he had received Strap (who was related to him) very courteously, he inquired of him who I was: and being informed, took me by the hand, telling me he was at school with my father. When he understood my situation, he assured me that he would do me all the service in his power, both by his advice and otherwise; and while he spoke these words, eyed me with great attention, walking round me several times, and muttering, 'O Ch—st! O Ch—st! fat a faight is here?' I soon guessed the reason of his ejaculation, and said, 'I suppose, Sir, you are not pleased with my dress.'—'Dress,' answered he, 'you may caal it fat you please in your country, but I vaw to Gad, 'tis a masquerade here. No christian will admit such a figure into his hawse. Upon my conscience! I wonder the dogs did not hunt you. Did you pass through St. James's market? God blefs my eye-faight! you look like a cousin-german of Ouran Outang.' I began to be a little serious at this discourse, and asked him, if he thought I should obtain entrance tomorrow at the house of Mr. Cringer, on whom I chiefly depended, for an introduction into business. 'Mr. Cringer, Mr. Cringer,' replied he, scratching his cheek, 'may be a very honest gentleman; I know nothing to the contrary; but is your sole dependence upon him? Who recommended you to him?' I pulled out Mr. Crab's letter, and told him the foundation of my hopes; at which he stared at me, and repeated, 'Ch—st!' I began to conceive bad omens from this behaviour of his, and begged he would assist me with his advice; which he promised to give very frankly; and as a specimen, directed us to a periwig warehouse, in the neighbourhood, in

order to be accommodated; laying strong injunctions on me not to appear before Mr. Cringer, till I had parted with these carrotty locks, which (he said) were sufficient to beget an antipathy against me, in all mankind. And as we were going to pursue this advice, he called me back, and bade me be sure to deliver my letter into Mr. Cringer's own hand. As we walked along, Strap triumphed greatly in our reception with his friend, who (it seems) had assured him, he would in a day or two provide for him, with some good master; 'And now,' says he, 'you shall see how I will fit you with a wig. There's ne'er a barber in London (and that's a bold word) can palm a rotten caul, or a pennyweight of dead hair upon me.' And indeed this zealous adherent did wrangle so long with the merchant, that he was desired twenty times to leave the shop, and see if he could get one cheaper elsewhere. At length I made choice of a good handsome bob, for which I paid ten shillings; and returned to our lodging, where Strap, in a moment, rid me of that hair which had given the schoolmaster so much offence.

We got up next day betimes, having been informed that Mr. Cringer gave audience by candle-light to all his dependants; he himself being obliged to attend the levee of my Lord Terrier at break of day, because his lordship made one at the minister's between eight and nine o'clock. When we came to Mr. Cringer's door, Strap, to give me an instance of his politeness, ran to the knocker, which he employed so loud and so long, that he alarmed the whole street; and a window opening in the second story of the next house, a chamber-pot was discharged upon him so successfully, that the poor barbar was wet to the skin, while I, being luckily at some distance, escaped the unfavoury deluge. In the mean time a footman opening the door, and seeing nobody in the street but us, asked with a stern countenance, if it was I who made such a damned noise, and what I wanted. I told him I had business with his master, whom I desired to see. Upon which he clapped the door in my face, telling me, I must learn better manners before I could have access to his master. Vexed at this disappointment, I turned my resentment against

Strap, whom I sharply reprimanded for his presumption; but he not in the least regarding what I said, wrung the urine out of his periwig, and lifting up a large stone, flung it with such force against the street-door of the house from whence he had been bedewed, that the lock giving way, it flew wide open, and he took to his heels, leaving me to follow him as I could. Indeed there was no time for deliberation; I therefore pursued him with all the speed I could exert, until we found ourselves, about the dawn, in a street we did not know. Here, as we wandered along, gaping about, a very decent sort of a man passing by me, stopped of a sudden, and took up something, which having examined, he turned, and presented it to me with these words, 'Sir, you have dropt half a crown.' I was not a little surprized at this instance of honesty, and told him it did not belong to me; but he bade me recollect, and see if all my money was safe: upon which I pulled out my purse (for I had bought one since I came to town) and reckoning my money in my hand, which was now reduced to five guineas seven shillings and two pence, assured him I had lost nothing. 'Well then,' says he, 'so much the better; this is God-send; and as you two were present when I picked it up, you are entitled to equal shares with me.' I was astonished at these words, and looked upon this person to be a prodigy of integrity, but absolutely refused to take any part of the sum. 'Come, gentlemen,' said he, 'you are too modest. I see you are strangers; but you shall give me leave to treat you with a wet this cold raw morning.' I would have declined this invitation, but Strap whispered to me, that the gentleman would be affronted, and I complied. 'Where shall we go?' said the stranger; 'I am quite ignorant of this part of the town. I informed him that we were in the same situation. Upon which he proposed to go into the first public house we should find open; and as we walked together, he began in this manner. 'I find by your tongues you are from Scotland, gentlemen. My grandmother by the father's side was of your country, and I am so prepossessed in it's favour, that I never meet a Scotchman but my

my heart warms. The Scots are a very brave people. There is scarce a great family in the kingdom that cannot boast of some exploits performed by it's ancestors many hundred years ago. There's your Douglasses, Gordons, Campbells, Hamiltons. We have no such ancient families here in England. Then you are all well educated. I have known a pedlar talk in Greek and Hebrew, as well as if they had been his mother-tongue. And for honesty, I once had a servant, his name was Gregory Macgregor, I would have trusted him with untold gold.' This eulogium on my native country, gained my affection so strongly, that I believe I could have gone to death to serve the author; and Strap's eyes swam in tears. At length, as we passed through a dark narrow lane, we perceived a public house, which we entered; and found a man sitting by the fire, smoking a pipe, with a pint of puri before him. Our new acquaintance asked us, if ever we had drank egg flip: to which question we answering in the negative, he assured us of a regale, and ordered a quart to be prepared, calling for pipes and tobacco at the same time. We found this composition very palatable, and drank heartily; the conversation (which was introduced by the gentleman) turning upon the snares that young unexperienced people are exposed to in this metropolis. He described a thousand cheats that are daily practised upon the ignorant and unwary; and warned us of them with so much good-nature and concern, that we blessed the opportunity which threw us in his way. After we had put the can about for some time, our new friend began to yawn, telling us he had been up all night with a sick person; and proposed we should have recourse to some diversion to keep him awake. 'Suppose,' said he, 'we should take a hand at whist for pastime. But let me see, that won't do, there's only three of us; and I cannot play at any other game. The truth is, I seldom or never play, but out of complaisance, or at such a time as this, when I am in danger of falling asleep.' Although I was not much inclined to gaming, I felt no aversion to pass an hour or two at cards with a friend; and knowing that Strap

understood as much of the matter as I, made no scruple of saying, 'I wish we could find a fourth hand.' While we were in this perplexity, the person whom we found in the house at our entrance over-hearing our discourse, took the pipe from his mouth very gravely, and accosted us thus: 'Gentlemen, my pipe is out you see,' shaking the ashes into the fire, 'and rather than you should be baulked, I don't care if I take a hand with you for a trifle; but remember I won't play for any thing of consequence.' We accepted his proffer with pleasure; having cut for partners, it fell to my lot to play with him against our friend and Strap, for three pence a game. We were so successful, that in a short time I was half a crown gainer; when the gentleman whom we had met in the street observing we had no luck to-day, proposed to leave off, or change partners. By this time I was inflamed with my good fortune and the expectation of improving it, as I perceived the two strangers played but indifferently: therefore I voted for giving him his revenge; and cutting again, Strap and I (to our mutual satisfaction) happened to be partners. My good fortune attended me still, and in less than an hour we had got thirty shillings of their money; for as they lost, they grew the keener, and doubled stakes every time. At last the inconstant goddess began to veer about, and we were very soon stript of all our gains, and about forty shillings of our own money. This loss mortified me extremely, and had a visible effect on the muscles of Strap's face, which lengthened apace; but our antagonists perceiving our condition, kindly permitted us to retrieve our loss, and console ourselves with a new acquisition. Then my companion wisely suggested it was time to be gone; upon which the person who had joined us in the house began to curse the cards; and muttered that we were indebted to fortune only for what we had got, no part of our success being owing to our good play. This insinuation nettled me so much, that I challenged him to a game of piquet for a crown; and he was with difficulty persuaded to accept the invitation. This contest ended in less than an hour, to my inexpressible affliction, who lost every shilling of my own money, Strap absolute-

ly

ly refusing to supply me with a sixpence. The gentleman, at whose request we had come in, perceiving by my disconsolate looks the situation of my heart, which well nigh burst with grief and resentment, when the other stranger got up, and went away with my money, began in this manner: 'I am truly afflicted at your bad luck, and would willingly repair it, was it in my power. But what in the name of goodness could provoke you to tempt your fate so long? It is always a maxim with gamblers, to pursue success as far as it will go, and to stop whenever fortune shifts about. You are a young man, and your passions too impetuous; you must learn to govern them better. However, there is no experience like that which is bought; you will be the better for this the longest day you have to live. As for the fellow who has got your money, I don't half like him. Did not you observe me tip you the wink, to leave off in time?' I answered, 'No.'—'No,' continued he, 'you was too eager to mind any thing but the game. But, hark'e,' said he in a whisper, 'are you satisfied of that young man's honesty? his looks are a little suspicious; but I may be mistaken; he made a great many grimaces while he stood behind you; this is a very wicked town.' I told him I was very well convinced of my comrade's integrity, and that the grimaces he mentioned were doubtless owing to his anxiety at my loss. 'O ho! if that be the case, I ask his pardon.—Landlord, see what's to pay?' The reckoning amounted to eighteen pence, which having discharged, the gentleman shook us both by the hand, and saying he should be very glad to see us again, departed.

CHAP. XV.

STRAP MORALIZES—PRESENTS HIS PURSE TO ME—WE INFORM OUR LANDLORD OF MY MISFORTUNE; HE UNRAVELS THE MYSTERY—I PRESENT MYSELF TO CRINGER—HE RECOMMENDS AND TURNS ME OVER TO MR. STAYTAPE—I BECOME ACQUAINTED WITH A FELLOW DEPENDANT, WHO EXPLAINS THE CHARACTERS OF CRINGER AND STAYTAPE—AND

INFORMS ME OF THE METHOD TO BE PURSUED AT THE NAVY-OFFICE AND SURGEON'S HALL—STRAP IS EMPLOYED.

IN our way to our lodging, after a profound silence on both sides, Strap with a hideous groan observed, that we had brought our pigs to a fine market. To this observation I made no reply, and he went on: 'God send us well out of this place, we have not been in London eight and forty hours, and I believe we have met with eight and forty thousand misfortunes. We have been jeered, reproached, buffeted, pissed upon, and at last stript of our money; and, I suppose, by and by we shall be stript of our skins. Indeed, as to the money-part of it, that was owing to our own folly; Solomon says, *Bray a fool in a mortar, and he will never be wise.* Ah! God help us, an ounce of prudence is worth a pound of gold.' This was no time for him to tamper with my disposition, already mad with my loss, and inflamed with resentment against him for having refused me a little money to attempt to retrieve it. I therefore turned towards him with a stern countenance, and asked, 'Who he called fool?' Being altogether unaccustomed to such looks from me, he stood still, and stared in my face for some time; then with some confusion, uttered, 'Fool! I called nobody fool but myself; I am sure I am the greatest fool of the two, for being so much concerned at other people's misfortunes: but *Nemo umbus boris sapit*; that's all, that's all.' Upon which a silence ensued, that brought us to our lodging, where I threw myself upon the bed in an agony of despair, resolved to perish rather than apply to my companion or any other body for relief; but Strap, who knew my temper, and whose heart bled within him at my distress, after some pause came to the bed-side, and putting a leathern purse into my hand, burst into tears, crying, 'I know what you think: but I scorn your thoughts. There's all I have in the world, take it, and I'll perhaps get more for you before that be done. If not, I'll beg for you, steal for you, go through the wide world with you, and starve with you; for though I be a poor cobbler's son, I am no scout.' I was

so touched with the generous passion of this poor creature, that I could not refrain from weeping also, and we mingled our tears together for some time. Upon examining the purse, I found in it two half-guineas and half a crown, which I would have returned to him, saying, he knew better than I how to manage it; but he absolutely refused my proposal, and told me, it was more reasonable and decent that he should depend upon me who was a gentleman, than that I should be controuled by him.

After this friendly contest was over, and our minds more at ease, we informed our landlord of what had happened to us, taking care to conceal the extremity to which we were reduced: He no sooner heard the story, than he assured us we had been grievously imposed upon by a couple of sharpers, who were associates; and that this polite, honest, friendly, humane person, who had treated us so civilly, was no other than a rascally money-dropper, who made it his business to decoy strangers in that manner to one of his own haunts, where an accomplice or two were always waiting to assist in pillaging the prey he had run down. Here the good man recounted a great many stories of people who had been seduced, cheated, pilfered, beaten, even murdered by such villains. I was confounded at the artifice and wickedness of mankind; and Strap, lifting up his eyes and hands to heaven, prayed that God would deliver him from such scenes of iniquity; for surely the devil had set up his throne in London. Our landlord being curious to know what reception we had met with at Mr. Cringer's, we acquainted him with the particulars, at which he shook his head, and told us, we had not gone the right way to work; that there was nothing to be done with a m—b—r of p—m—t without a bribe; that the servant was commonly infected with the master's disease, and expected to be paid for his work, as well as his betters. He therefore advised me to give the footman a shilling the next time I should desire admittance to my patron, or else I should scarce find an opportunity to deliver my letter. Accordingly, next morning, when the door was opened, I slipped a shilling into his hand, and told him I had a letter

for his master. I found the good effects of my liberality; for the fellow let me in immediately, and taking the letter out of my hand, desired me to wait in a kind of passage, for an answer. In this place I continued standing for three quarters of an hour, during which time I saw a great many young fellows, whom I formerly knew in Scotland, pass and repass, with an air of familiarity, in their way to and from the audience chamber; while I was fain to stand shivering in the cold, and turn my back to them, that they might not perceive the lowness of my condition. At length Mr. Cringer came out to see a young gentleman to the door, who was no other than Squire Gawky, dressed in a very gay suit of clothes. At parting, Mr. Cringer shook him by the hand, and told him he hoped to have the pleasure of his company at dinner. Then turning about towards me, asked what were my commands; when he understood I was the person who had brought the letter from Mr. Crab, he affected to recollect my name, which however, he pretended he could not do, till he had consulted the letter again; to save him that trouble, I told him my name was Random. Upon which he went on, 'Ay, ay, Random, Random, Random—I think I remember the name:' and very well he might; for this very individual Mr. Cringer had many a time rode before my grandfather's cloak-bag, in quality of a footman. 'Well,' says he, 'you propose to go on board a man of war, as surgeon's mate.' I replied by a low bow. 'I believe it will be a difficult matter,' continued he, 'to procure a warrant, there being already such a swarm of Scotch surgeons at the navy-office, in expectation of the next vacancy, that the commissioners are afraid of being torn to pieces, and have actually applied for a guard to protect them. However, some ships will soon be put into commission, and then we shall see what's to be done.' So saying, he left me exceedingly mortified at the different reception Mr. Gawky and I had met with from this upstart, proud, mean member; who, I imagined, would have been glad of an opportunity to be grateful for the obligations he owed to my family.

At my return, I was surprized with the

the agreeable news of Strap's being employed on the recommendation of his friend the schoolmaster, by a periwig-maker in the neighbourhood, who allowed him five shillings per week, besides bed and board. I continued to dance attendance every other morning at the levee of Mr. Cringer, during a fortnight, in which time I became acquainted with a young fellow of my own country and profession, who also depended on the member's interest; but was treated with much more respect than I, both by the servants and the master, and often admitted into a parlour, where there was a fire for the convenience of the better sort of those who waited for him. Thither I was never permitted to penetrate, on account of my appearance, which was not at all fashionable; but was obliged to stand blowing my fingers in a cold lobby, and take the first opportunity of Mr. Cringer's going to the door to speak with him. One day, while I enjoyed this occasion, a person was introduced whom Mr. Cringer no sooner saw, than running towards him, he saluted him with a bow to the very ground, and afterwards shaking him by the hand with great heartiness and familiarity, called him his good friend, and asked very kindly after Mrs. Staytape, and the young ladies; then, after a whisper which continued some minutes, wherein I overheard the word honour repeated several times with great emphasis, Mr. Cringer introduced me to this gentleman, as to a person whose advice and assistance I might depend upon; and having given me his direction, followed me to the door, where he told me, I need not give myself the trouble to call at his house any more, for Mr. Staytape would do my business. At that instant, my fellow dependant coming out after me, overheard the discourse of Mr. Cringer, and making up to me in the street, accosted me very civilly: this address I looked upon as no small honour, considering the figure he made; for he was dressed in a blue frock with a gold button, a green silk waistcoat trimmed with gold, black velvet breeches, white silk stockings, silver buckles, a gold-faced hat, a spencer wig, and a silver-hilted hanger, with a fine clouded cane in his hand. 'I perceive,' says he, 'your are but lately come from Scot-

land; pray what may your business with Mr. Cringer be? I suppose it is no secret, and I may possibly give you some advice that will be serviceable; for I have been surgeon's second mate on board of a seventy-gun ship, and consequently know a good deal of the world.' I made no scruple to disclose my situation; which when he had learned, he shook his head, and told me he had been pretty much in the same circumstances about a year ago; that he had relied on Cringer's promises, until his money, which was considerable, as well as his credit, was quite exhausted; and when he wrote to his relations for a fresh supply, instead of money, he received nothing but reproaches, and the epithets of idle, debauched fellow: that after he had waited at the Navy Office many months for a warrant to no purpose, he was fain to pawn some of his clothes, which raised a small sum, wherewith he bribed the s—t—y, who soon procured a warrant for him, notwithstanding he had affirmed the same day, that there was not one vacancy. That he had gone on board, where he remained nine months; at the end of which the ship was put out of commission; and he said the company were to be paid off in Broad Street the very next day. That his relations being reconciled to him, had charged him to pay his debts regularly to Mr. Cringer, who had informed them by letter, that his interest alone had procured the warrant; in obedience to which command, he came to his levee every morning, as I saw, though he looked upon him to be a very pitiful scoundrel. In conclusion, he asked me if I had yet passed at Surgeon's Hall: to which question I answered, I did not so much as know it was necessary, 'Necessary,' cried he, 'O Lord, O Lord! I find I must instruct you; come along with me, and I'll give you some information about that matter.' So saying, he carried me into an ale-house, where he called for some beer and bread and cheese, on which we breakfasted. While we sat in this place, he told me I must first go to the Navy Office, and write to the board, desiring them to order a letter for me to the Surgeon's Hall, that I may be examined touching my skill in surgery: that the surgeons, after having examined me, would give me my

my qualifications sealed up in form of a letter directed to the commissioners, which qualification I must deliver to the secretary of the board, who would open it in my presence, and read the contents. After which I must employ my interest to be provided for as soon as possible. That the expence of his qualification for second mate of a third rate, amounted to thirteen shillings, exclusive of the warrant, which cost him half a guinea and half a crown, besides the present to the secretary, which consisted of a three-pound-twelve piece. This calculation was like a thunderbolt to me, whose whole fortune did not amount to twelve shillings. I accordingly made him acquainted with this part of my distress, after having thanked him for his information and advice. He consoled me on this occasion; but bade me be of good cheer, for he had conceived a friendship for me, and would make all things easy. He was run out at present, but to-morrow or next day he was certain of receiving a considerable sum; of which he would lend me what would be sufficient to answer my exigencies. This frank declaration pleased me so much, that I pulled out my purse, and emptied it before him, begging him to take what he pleased for pocket expence, until he should receive his own money. With a good deal of pressing he was prevailed upon to take five shillings, telling me that he might have what money he wanted at any time for the trouble of going into the city; but as he had met with me, he would defer his going thither till to-morrow, when I should go along with him, and he would put me in a way of acting for myself, without a servile dependance on that rascal Cringer, much less on the lousy taylor to whom I heard him turn you over. 'How,' cried I, 'is Mr. Staytape a taylor?' 'No less, I'll assure you,' answered he, 'and I confess more likely to serve you than the member: for provided you can entertain him with politicks and conundrums, you may have credit with him for as many and as rich clothes as you please.' I told him I was utterly ignorant of both, and so incensed at Cringer's usage, that I would never set foot within his door again. After a good deal more conversation, my new acquaintance and I

parted, having made an appointment to meet next day at the same place, in order to set out for the city. I went immediately to Strap, and related every thing which had happened; but he did not at all approve of my being so forward to lend money to a stranger, especially as we had already been so much imposed upon by appearances. 'However,' said he, 'if you are sure he is a Scotchman, I believe you are safe.'

C H A P. XVI.

MY NEW ACQUAINTANCE BREAKS AN APPOINTMENT—I PROCEED BY MYSELF TO THE NAVY-OFFICE—ADDRESS MYSELF TO A PERSON THERE, WHO ASSISTS ME WITH HIS ADVICE—WRITE TO THE BOARD—THEY GRANT ME A LETTER TO THE SURGEONS AT THE HALL—AM INFORMED OF THE BEAU'S NAME AND CHARACTER—FIND HIM—HE MAKES ME HIS CONFIDENT, IN AN AMOUR—DESIRES ME TO PAWN MY LINEN, FOR HIS OCCASIONS—I RECOVER WHAT I LENT HIM—SOME CURIOUS OBSERVATIONS OF STRAP ON THAT OCCASION—HIS VANITY.

IN the morning I rose and went to the place of rendezvous, where I waited two hours in vain; and was so exasperated against him for breaking his appointment, that I set out for the city by myself, in hope of finding the villain, and being revenged on him for his breach of promise. At length I found myself at the Navy Office, which I entered and saw crowds of young fellows walking below; many of whom made no better appearance than myself. I consulted the physiognomy of each, and at last made up to one whose countenance I liked; and asked, if he could instruct me in the form of the letter which was to be sent to the board, to obtain an order for examination: he answered me in broad Scotch, that he would shew me the copy of what he had writ for himself, by the direction of another who knew the form; and accordingly pulled it out of his pocket for my perusal; and told me, that if I was expeditious, I might send it in to the board before

H dinner,

dinner, for they did no business in the afternoon. He then went with me to a coffee-house hard by, where I wrote the letter, which was immediately delivered to the messenger; who told me, I might expect an order to-morrow about the same time. Having transacted this piece of business, my mind was a good deal composed; and as I met with so much civility from this stranger, I desired farther acquaintance with him, fully resolved, however, not to be deceived by him so much to my prejudice as I had been by the beau. He agreed to dine with me at the cook's shop which I frequented; and on our way thither, carried me to change, where I was in some hopes of finding Mr. Jackson, (for that was the name of the person who had broke his appointment.) I sought him there to no purpose, and on our way towards the other end of the town, imparted to my companion his behaviour towards me; upon which he gave me to understand that he was no stranger to the name of Beau Jackson, (so he was called at the Navy Office) although he did not know him personally; that he had the character of a good-natured careless fellow, who made no scruple of borrowing from any body that would lend; that most people who knew him, believed he had a good principle at bottom; but his extravagance was such, he would probably never have it in his power to manifest the honesty of his intention. This account made me sweat for my five shillings, which I nevertheless did not altogether despair of recovering, provided I could find out the debtor. This young man likewise added another circumstance of Squire Jackson's history; which was, that being destitute of all means to equip himself for sea, when he received his last warrant, he had been recommended to a person who lent him a little money, after he had signed a will and power, entitling that person to lift his wages when they should become due, as also to inherit his effects in case of his death. That he was still under the tutorage and direction of that gentleman, who advanced him small sums from time to time upon this security, at the rate of 50l. per cent. But at present his credit was very low, because his funds would do little more than pay what he had already received, this moderate interest

included. After the stranger (whose name was Thomson) had entertained me with this account of Jackson, he informed me that he himself had passed for third mate of a third rate, about four months ago; since which time he had constantly attended at the Navy Office, in hope of a warrant, having been assured from the beginning, both by a Scotch member and one of the commissioners to whom the member recommended him, that he should be put into the first vacancy; notwithstanding which promise, he had the mortification to see six or seven appointed in the same station almost every week; that now being utterly impoverished, his sole hope consisted in the promise of a friend lately come to town, to lend him a small matter, for a present to the s—t—y; without which he was persuaded he might wait a thousand years to no purpose. I conceived a mighty liking for this young fellow, which I believe proceeded from the similitude of our fortunes. We spent the whole day together, and as he lived at Wapping, I desired him to take a share of my bed. Next day we returned to the Navy Office, where, after being called before the board, and questioned about the place of my nativity and education, they ordered a letter to be made out for me, which upon paying half a crown to the clerk, I received, and delivered into the hands of the clerk at Surgeons Hall, together with a shilling for his trouble in registering my name. By this time my whole stock was diminished to two shillings, and I saw not the least prospect of relief, even for present subsistence, much less to enable me to pay the fees at Surgeons Hall for my examination, which would come on in a fortnight. In this state of perplexity I consulted Strap, who assured me he would pawn every thing he had in the world, even to his razors, before I should want; but this expedient I absolutely rejected, telling him I would a thousand times rather lift for a soldier, of which I had some thoughts, than be any longer a burden to him. At the word soldier, he grew pale as death, and begged on his knees I would think no more of that scheme. 'God preserve us all in our right wits!' cried he; 'would you turn soldier, and perhaps be sent abroad against the Spaniards, where you must stand and

be shot at like a woodcock? Heaven keep cold lead out of my carcase! and let me die in a bed like a christian, as all my forefathers have done. What signifies all the riches and honours of this life, if one enjoys not content; and in the next there is no respect of persons. Better be a poor honest barber with a good conscience, and time to repent of my sins upon my death-bed, than be cut off, God bless us, by a musket-shot, as it were in the very flower of one's age, in the pursuit of riches and fame. What signify riches, my dear friend! do not they make unto themselves wings, as the wise man saith; and does not Horace observe, *Non domus aut fundus, non aris acervus aut auri agrote domino deduxit corpore febrem, non animo curas*. I could moreover mention many other sayings in contempt of riches, both from the Bible and other good books; but as I know you are not very fond of those things, I shall only assure you, that if you take on to be a soldier, I will do the same; and then if we should both be slain, you will not only have your own blood to answer for, but mine also: and peradventure the lives of all those whom we shall kill in battle. Therefore, I pray you, consider whether you will sit down contented with small things, and share the fruits of my industry in peace, till Providence shall send better tidings: or by your despair plunge both our souls and bodies into everlasting perdition, which God of his infinite mercy forbid. I could not help smiling at this harangue, which was delivered with great earnestness, the tears standing in his eyes all the time: and promised to do nothing of that sort without his consent and concurrence. He was much comforted with this declaration; and told me in a few days he should receive a week's wages which should be at my service, but advised me in the mean time to go in quest of Jackson, and recover, if possible, what he had borrowed of me. I accordingly trudged about from one end of the town to the other for several days without being able to learn any thing concerning him: and, one day, being extremely hungry and allured by the steams that regaled my nostrils from a boiling cel-

lar, I went down with an intention to gratify my appetite with twopenny-worth of beef: when, to my no small surprize, I found Mr. Jackson sitting at dinner with a footman. He no sooner perceived me, than he got up, and shook me by the hand, saying, he was glad to see me, for he intended to have called at my lodgings in the afternoon. I was so well pleased with this rencounter, and the apologies he made for not keeping his appointment, that I forgot my resentment, and sat down to dinner, with the happy expectation of not only recovering my own money before we should part, but also of reaping the benefit of his promise to lend me wherewithal to pass examination; and this hope my sanguine complexion suggested, though the account Thomson gave me of him ought to have moderated my expectation. When we had feasted sumptuously, he took his leave of the footman, and adjourned with me to an ale-house hard by; where, after shaking me by the hand again, he began thus: 'I suppose you think me a sad dog, Mr. Random, and I do confess that appearances are against me. But I dare say you will forgive me when I tell you, my not coming at the time appointed, was owing to a peremptory message, I received from a certain lady, whom—hark'e, (but this is a great secret) I am to marry very soon. You think this strange, perhaps, but it is not less true for all that—a five thousand pounder, I'll assure you, besides expectations. For my own part, devil take me if I know what any woman can see engaging about me; but a whim, you know—and then one would not baulk one's good fortune. You saw that footman who dined with us, he's one of the honestest fellows that ever wore a livery. You must know, it was by his means I was introduced to her, for he made me first acquainted with her woman, who is his mistress; aye, many a crown has he and his sweetheart had of my money, but what of that! things are now brought to a bearing. I have, (come a little this way) I have proposed marriage, and the day is fixed. She's a charming creature! writes like an angel. O Lord! she can repeat all the English tragedies as well as e'er

H 2

a player

' a player in Drury-Lane! and indeed is so fond of plays, that to be near the stage, she has taken lodgings in a court hard by the theatre. But you shall see, you shall see; here's the last letter she sent me.' With these words he put it into my hand, and I read (to the best of my remembrance) as follows:

' DEER KREETER,

' **A**S you are the animable hopjack of my contemptplayshins, your aydear is infernally skimming before my keymerycal fansee, when Murfy sends his puppies to the heys of slipping mortals; and when Febus shines from his merrydying throne: whereupon, I shall consecif old whorie time has lost his pinners, as also Cupid his harrows, until thou enjoy sweet propose in the loafseek harms of thy faithfool to commend,

' CLAYRENDER.'

' Wingar-year'd, Droory-lane,
' January 12th.'

While I was reading, he seemed to be in an extasy, rubbing his hands, and bursting out into fits of laughter; at last he caught hold of my hand, and squeezing it, cried, 'There is style for you! what do you think of this billet-doux?' I answered, it might be sublime for aught I knew, for it was altogether above my comprehension. — 'O ho,' said he, 'I believe it is, both tender and sublime, she's a divine creature! and so doats upon me! Let me see, what shall I do with this money, when I have once got it into my hands? In the first place, I shall do for you—I'm a man of few words—but say no more—that's determined. Whether would you advise me to purchase some post, by which I may rise in the state; or lay out my wife's fortune in land, and retire to the country at once?' I gave my opinion without hesitation, that he could not do better than buy an estate and improve; especially since he had already seen so much of the world. Then I launched out into the praises of a country life, as described by the poets whose works he had read. He seemed to relish my advice; but withal

told me, that although he had seen a great deal of the world both by land and sea, having cruized three months in the Channel, yet he should not be satisfied until he had visited France, which he proposed to do before he should settle; and to carry his wife along with him. I had nothing to object to his proposal; and asked how soon he hoped to be happy. 'As to that,' he replied, 'nothing obstructs my happiness, but the want of a little ready cash; for you must know, my friend in the city has gone out of town for a week or two; and I unfortunately missed my pay at Broad Street, by being detained too long by the dear charmer; but there will be a recal at Chatham next week, whither the ship's books are sent, and I have commissioned a friend in that place to receive the money.'—'If that be all,' said I, 'there's no great harm in deferring your marriage a few days.'—'Yes, faith! but there is,' said he, 'you don't know how many rivals I have, who would take all advantages against me. I would not baulk the impatience of her passion for the world; the least appearance of coldness and indifference would ruin all: and such offers don't occur every day.' I acquiesced in this observation, and inquired how he intended to proceed: At this question he rubbed his chin, and said, 'Why, truly I must be obliged to some friend or other; do you know nobody that would lend me a sum for a day or two?' I assured him, I was such an utter stranger in London, that I did not believe I could borrow a guinea if my life depended upon it. 'No!' said he, 'that's hard; that's hard; I wish I had any thing to pawn—upon my soul, you have got excellent linen,' (feeling the sleeve of my shirt;) 'how many shirts of this kind have you got?' I answered, 'Six ruffled, and six plain,' at which he testified great surprize, and swore that no gentleman ought to have more than four. 'How many d'ye think I have got?' continued he; 'but this and another, as I hope to be saved! I dare say we shall be able to raise a good sum out of your superfluity: let me see, let me feel each of these shirts are worth sixteen shillings at a moderate computation, now suppose we pawn them for half price; eight

eight times eight is sixty-four, that's three pounds four: z—ds! that will do; give me your hand.'—Softly, softly, Mr. Jackson, said I, 'don't dispose of my linen without my consent: first pay me the crown you owe me, and then we shall talk of other matters. He protested he had not above one shilling in his pocket, but that he would pay me out of the first of the money raised from the shirts. This piece of assurance incensed me so much, that I swore I would not part with him until I had received satisfaction for what I had lent him; and as for the shirts, I would not pawn one of them to save him from the gallows. At this expression he laughed aloud, and then complained it was damned hard, that I should refuse him a trifle, that would infallibly enable him not only to make his own fortune, but mine also. 'You talk of pawning my shirts,' said I; 'suppose you should sell this hanger, Mr. Jackson; I believe it would fetch a good round sum?'—No, hang it, said he, 'I can't appear decently without my hanger, or ead it should go.' However, seeing me inflexible with regard to my linen, he at length unbuckled his hanger, and shewing me the sign of the Three Blue Balls, desired me to carry it thither, and pawn it for two guineas. This office I would by no means have performed, had I seen any likelihood of having my money otherwise; but not willing, out of a piece of false delicacy, to neglect the only opportunity I should perhaps ever have, I ventured into a pawn-broker's shop, where I demanded two guineas on the pledge, in the name of Thomas Williams. 'Two guineas!' said the pawnbroker, looking at the hanger, 'this piece of goods has been here several times before for thirty shillings; however, since I believe the gentleman to whom it belongs will redeem it, he shall have what he wants; and accordingly he paid me the money, which I carried to the house where I had left Jackson, and calling for change, counted out to him seven and thirty shillings, reserving the other five for myself. After looking at the money some time, he said, 'D—n it! it don't signify—this won't do my business; so you may as well take half a guinea or a whole one, as the five

shillings you have kept.' I thanked him kindly, but I refused to accept of any more than was my due, because I had no prospect of repaying it. Upon which declaration, he stared in my face, and told me, I was excessively raw, or I would not talk in that manner. 'Blood!' cried he, 'I have a very bad opinion of a young fellow who won't borrow of his friend when he is in want; 'tis the sign of a sneaking spirit. Come, come, Random, give me back the five shillings, and take this half-guinea, and if ever you are able to pay me, I believe you will; if not, d—n me if ever I ask it.' When I reflected on my present necessity, I suffered myself to be persuaded; and after making my acknowledgments to Mr. Jackson, who offered to treat me with a play, I returned to my lodgings with a much better opinion of this gentleman than I had in the morning: and at night imparted my day's adventures to Strap, who rejoiced at my good luck, saying, I told you if he was a Scotchman you was safe enough; and who knows but this marriage may make us all. You have heard, I suppose, as how a countryman of ours, a journeyman baker, ran away with a great lady of this town, and now keeps his coach. Ecod! I say nothing; but yesterday morning as I was a shaving a gentleman at his own house, there was a young lady in the room, a fine buxom wench, i' faith! and she threw so many sheep's eyes at a certain person, whom I shall not name, that my heart went knock, knock, knock, like a fulling mill, and my hand sh—sh—shook so much that I sliced a piece of skin off the gentleman's nose: whereby he swore a deadly oath, and was going to horse-whip me, when she prevented him and made my peace. *Omen haud malum!* Is not a journeyman barber as good as a journeyman baker? The only difference is, the baker uses flour for the belly, and the barber uses it for the head: and as the head is a more noble member than the belly, so is a barber more noble than a baker; for what's the belly without the head? Besides, I am told he could neither read nor write; now you know I can do both, and more over speak Latin; but I will say no more,

'more, for I despise vanity; nothing is more vain than vanity.' With these words he pulled out of his pocket a wax-candle's end, which he applied to his forehead; and upon examination, I found he had combed his own hair over the toupee of his wig, and was indeed in his whole dress become a very smart shaver. I congratulated him on his prospect with a satirical smile, which he understood very well; and shaking his head, observed I had very little faith, but the truth would come to light in spite of my incredulity.

C H A P. XVII.

I GO TO SURGEONS HALL, WHERE I MEET WITH MR. JACKSON—AM EXAMINED—A FIERCE DISPUTE ARISES BETWEEN TWO OF THE EXAMINERS—JACKSON DISGUISES HIMSELF TO ATTRACT RESPECT—IS DETECTED—IN HAZARD OF BEING SENT TO BRIDEWELL—HE TREATS US AT A TAVERN—CARRIES US TO A NIGHT HOUSE—A TROUBLESOME ADVENTURE THERE—WE ARE COMMITTED TO THE ROUND-HOUSE—CARRIED BEFORE A JUSTICE—HIS BEHAVIOUR.

WITH the assistance of this faithful adherent, who gave me almost all the money he earned, I preserved my half-guinea entire, till the day of examination, when I went with a quaking heart to Surgeons Hall, in order to undergo that ceremony. Among a crowd of young fellows who walked in the outward hall, I perceived Mr. Jackson, to whom I immediately went up, and inquiring into the state of his amour, understood it was still undetermined, by reason of his friend's absence, and the delay of the recal at Chatham, which put it out of his power to bring it to a conclusion. I then asked what his business was in this place: he replied, he was resolved to have two strings to his bow, that in case the one failed he might use the other; and with this view, he was to pass that night for a higher qualification. At that instant, a young fellow

came out from the place of examination, with a pale countenance, his lip quivering, and his looks as wild as if he had seen a ghost. He no sooner appeared, than we all flocked about him with the utmost eagerness, to know what reception he had met with; which after some pause, he described, recounting all the questions they had asked, with the answers he made. In this manner we obliged no less than twelve to recapitulate, which now the danger was past they did with pleasure, before it fell to my lot. At length the beadle called my name, with a voice that made me tremble as much as if it had been the sound of the last trumpet; however, there was no remedy. I was conducted into a large hall, where I saw about a dozen of grim faces sitting at a long table; one of whom bade me come forward in such an imperious tone, that I was actually for a minute or two bereft of my senses. The first question he put to me was, 'Where was you born?' To which I answered, 'In Scotland.'—'In Scotland,' said he, 'I know that very well; we have scarce any other countrymen to examine here; you Scotchmen have overspread us of late, as the locusts did Egypt: I ask you in what part of Scotland was you born?' I named the place of my nativity, which he had never before heard of. He then proceeded to interrogate me about my age, the town where I served my time, with the term of my apprenticeship; and when I informed him that I served three years only, he fell into a violent passion; swore it was a shame and a scandal to send such raw boys into the world as surgeons; that it was a great presumption in me, and an affront upon the English, to pretend to sufficient skill in my business, having served so short a time, when every apprentice in England was bound seven years at least; that my friends would have done better if they had made me a weaver or shoemaker, but their pride would have me a gentleman, he supposed, at any rate, and their poverty could not afford the necessary education. This exordium did not at all contribute to the recovery of my spirits, but on the contrary reduced me to such a situation that I was scarce able to stand; which being perceived by a

plump

plump gentleman who sat opposite to me, with a skull before him, he said Mr. Snarler was too severe upon the young man; and turning towards me, told me, I need not to be afraid, for nobody would do me any harm; then bidding me take time to recollect myself, he examined me touching the operation of the trepan, and was very well satisfied with my answers. The next person who questioned me was a wag, who began by asking if I had ever seen amputation performed; and I replying in the affirmative, he shook his head, and said, 'What! upon a dead subject, I suppose? If,' continued he, 'during an engagement at sea, a man should be brought to you with his head shot off, how would you behave?' After some hesitation, I owned such a case had never come under my observation; neither did I remember to have seen any method of cure proposed for such an accident, in any of the systems of surgery I had perused. Whether it was owing to the simplicity of my answer, or the archness of the question, I know not, but every member at the board deigned to smile, except Mr. Snarler, who seemed to have very little of the *animal risibile* in his constitution. The facetious member, encouraged by the success of his last joke, went on thus: 'Suppose you was called to a patient of a plethoric habit, who had been bruised by a fall, what would you do?' I answered, I would bleed him immediately. 'What,' said he, 'before you had tied up his arm?' But this stroke of wit not answering his expectation, he desired me to advance to the gentleman who sat next him; and who, with a pert air, asked what method of cure I would follow in wounds of the intestines. I repeated the method of cure as it is prescribed by the best surgical writers; which he heard to an end, and then said with a supercilious smile, 'So you think by such treatment the patient might recover?' I told him, I saw nothing to make me think otherwise. 'That may be,' resumed he, 'I won't answer for your foresight; but did you ever know a case of this kind succeed?' I acknowledged I did not, and was about to tell him I had never seen a wounded intestine; but he stopt me, by saying with some precipitation, 'Nor never will. I af-

firm that all wounds of the intestines, whether great or small, are mortal.' — 'Pardon me, brother,' says the fat gentleman, 'there is very good authority—' Here he was interrupted by the other, with 'Sir, excuse me, I despise all authority. *Nullius in verba*. I stand upon my own bottom.' — 'But, Sir, Sir,' replied his antagonist, 'the reason of the thing shews.' — 'A fig for reason,' cried this sufficient member, 'I laugh at reason, give me ocular demonstration.' The corpulent gentleman began to wax warm, and observed that no man acquainted with the anatomy of the parts, would advance such an extravagant assertion. This inuendo enraged the other so much, that he started up, and in a furious tone exclaimed, 'What, Sir! do you question my knowledge in anatomy?' By this time all the examiners had espoused the opinion of one or other of the disputants, and raised their voice all together, when the chairman commanded silence, and ordered me to withdraw. In less than a quarter of an hour, I was called in again, received my qualifications sealed up, and was ordered to pay five shillings. I laid down my half-guinea upon the table, and stood some time, until one of them bade me be gone; to this I replied, 'I will, when I have got my change:' upon which another threw me five shillings and sixpence, saying, I should not be a true Scotchman if I went away without my change. I was afterwards obliged to give three shillings and sixpence to the beadles, and a shilling to an old woman who swept the hall. This disbursement sunk my finances to thirteen pence halfpenny, with which I was sneaking off, when Jackson perceiving it, came up to me, and begged I would tarry for him, and he would accompany me to the other end of the town as soon as his examination should be over. I could not refuse this to a person that was so much my friend—but I was astonished at the change of his dress, which was varied in half an hour from what I have already described, to a very grotesque fashion. His head was covered with an old smoaked tye-wig that did not boast one crooked hair, and a slouched hat over it, which would have very well become a chimney-sweeper or a dust-man; his neck was adorned

adorned with a black crape, the ends of which he had twisted, and fixed in the button-hole of a shabby great-coat that wrapped up his whole body; his white silk stockings were converted into black worsted hose; and his countenance was rendered venerable by wrinkles, and a beard of his own painting. When I expressed my surprise at this metamorphosis, he laughed, and told me, it was done by the advice and assistance of a friend who lived over the way, and would certainly produce something very much to his advantage; for it gave him the appearance of age, which never fails of attracting respect. I applauded his sagacity, and waited with impatience for the effects of it. At length he was called in, but whether the oddness of his appearance excited a curiosity more than usual in the board, or his behaviour was not suitable to his figure, I know not, he was discovered to be an impostor, and put into the hands of the beadle, in order to be sent to Bridewell. So that instead of seeing him come out with a chearful countenance, and a surgeon's qualification in his hand, I perceived him led through the outward hall as a prisoner; and was very much alarmed, and anxious to know the occasion; when he called with a lamentable voice and piteous aspect to me, and some others who knew him, 'For God's sake, gentlemen, bear witness that I am the same individual John Jackson, who served as surgeon's second mate on board the Elizabeth, or else I shall go to Bridewell.' It would have been impossible for the most austere hermit that ever lived, to have refrained from laughing at his appearance and address; we therefore indulged ourselves a good while at his expence, and afterwards pleaded his cause so effectually with the beadle, who was gratified with half a crown, that the prisoner was dismissed, and in a few moments resumed his former gaiety; swearing, since the board had refused his money, he would spend it every shilling before he went to bed in treating his friends; at the same time inviting us all to favour him with our company. It was now ten o'clock at night, and as I had a great way to walk through the streets that were utterly unknown to me, I was prevailed upon to be of their party, in hopes

he would afterwards accompany me to my lodgings, according to his promise. He conducted us to his friend's house, who kept a tavern over the way, where we continued drinking punch, until the liquor mounted up to our heads, and made us all extremely frolicksome. I in particular was so much elevated, that nothing would serve me but a wench; at which demand Jackson expressed much joy, and assured me I should have have my desire before we parted. Accordingly, when he had paid the reckoning, we sallied out, roaring and singing; and were conducted by our leader to a place of nocturnal entertainment, where I immediately attached myself to a fair one, with whom I proposed to spend the remaining part of the night; but she not relishing my appearance, refused to grant my request before I should have made her an acknowledgment, which not suiting with my circumstances, we broke off our correspondence, to my no small mortification and resentment, because I thought the mercenary creature had not done justice to my merit. In the meantime, Mr. Jackson's drefs had attracted the inclinations and assiduities of two or three nymphs, who loaded him with caresses, in return for the arrack punch with which he treated them; till at length, notwithstanding the sprightly sallies of those charmers, sleep began to exert his power over us all: and our conductor called, 'To pay.' When the bill was brought, which amounted to twelve shillings, he put his hand in his pocket, but might have saved himself the trouble, for his purse was gone. This accident disconcerted him a good deal at first, but after some recollection, he seized the two dulcineas, who sat by him, one in each hand; and swore if they did not immediately restore his money, he would charge a constable with them. The good lady at the bar seeing what passed, whispered something to the drawer, who went out; and then with great composure asked what was the matter? Jackson told her he was robbed; and swore, if she refused him satisfaction, he would have her and her whores committed to Bridewell. 'Robbed,' cried she; 'robbed in my house!—Gentlemen and ladies, I take you all to witness, this person has scandalized
' my

'my reputation.' At that instant seeing the constable and watch enter, she proceeded: 'What! you must not only endeavour by your false aspersions to ruin my character; but even commit an assault upon my family?—Mr. Constable, I charge you with this uncivil person, who has been guilty of a riot here; I shall take care and bring an action against him for defamation.' While I was reflecting on this melancholy event, which had made me quite sober, the lady whose favours I had solicited, being piqued at some repartee that passed between us, cried, 'They are all concerned:' and desired the constable to take us all into custody; an arrest which was performed instantly, to the utter astonishment and despair of us all, except Jackson, who having been often in such scrapes, was very little concerned, and charged the constable in his turn, with the landlady and her whole bevy. Upon which we were carried all together prisoners to the round-house; where Jackson, after a word of comfort to us, informed the constable of his being robbed, to which he said he would swear next morning before the justice. 'Ay, ay,' says the bawd, 'we shall see whose oath will most signify.' In a little time the constable calling Jackson into another room, spoke to him thus: 'I perceive that you and your company are strangers, and am very sorry for your being involved in such an ugly business. I have known this woman a great while: she has kept a notorious house in the neighbourhood this many years; and although often complained of as a nuisance, still escapes through her interest with the justices, to whom she and all of her employment, pay contribution quarterly for protection. As she charged me with you first, her complaint will have the preference, and she can procure evidence to swear whatever she shall please to desire of them. So that unless you can make it up before morning, you and your companions may think yourselves happily quit for a month's hard labour in Bridewell. Nay, if she should swear a robbery or assault against you, you will be committed to Newgate, and tried next sessions at the Old Bailey for your life.' This last piece of information had

such an effect upon Jackson, that he agreed to make it up, provided his money might be restored. The constable told him, that instead of retrieving what he had lost, he was pretty certain it would cost him some more before they would come to any composition. But however he had compassion on him, and would, if he pleased, sound them about a mutual release. The unfortunate beau thanked him for his friendship, and returning to us, acquainted us with the substance of this dialogue; while the constable desiring to speak in private with our adversary, carried her into the next room, and pleaded our cause so effectually, that she condescended to make him umpire. He accordingly proposed an arbitration, to which we gave our assent; and he fined each party in three shillings, to be laid out in a bowl of punch, wherein we drowned all animosities, to the inexpressible joy of my two late acquaintances and me, who had been in the state of the damned ever since Jackson mentioned Bridewell and Newgate. By the time we had finished our bowl, to which, by the bye, I had contributed my last shilling, it was morning; and I proposed to move homeward, when the constable gave me to understand, he could discharge no prisoners but by order of the justice, before whom we must appear. This renewed my chagrin, and I cursed the hour in which I had yielded to Jackson's invitation. About nine o'clock we were escorted to the house of a certain justice not many miles distant from Covent Garden; who no sooner saw the constable enter with a train of prisoners at his heels, than he saluted him as follows: 'So, Mr. Constable, you are a diligent man; what den of rogues have you been scouring?' Then looking at us, who appeared very much dejected, he continued: 'Ay, ay, thieves I see; old offenders.—O your humble servant, Mrs. Harridan! I suppose these fellows have been taken robbing your house—yes, yes, here's an old acquaintance of mine.—You have used expedition,' said he to me, 'in returning from transportation; but we shall save you the trouble for the future; the surgeons will fetch you from your next transportation at their expense.' I assured his worship he was mistaken in me, for he had never seen me in his life before. To this declaration

claration he replied, 'How! you impudent rascal, dare you say so to my face? do you think I am to be imposed upon by that northern accent which you have assumed? But it shan't avail you, you shall find me too far north for you.—Here, clerk, write this fellow's mittimus: his name is Patrick Gaghagan.' Here Mr. Jackson interposed, and told him I was a Scotchman lately come to town, descended of a good family, and that my name was Random. The justice looked upon this assertion as an outrage upon his memory, on which he valued himself much, and strutting up to Jackson, with a fierce countenance, put his hands in his sides, and said, 'Who are you, Sir? do you give me the lie?—Take notice, gentlemen, here's a fellow who affronts me upon the bench—but I'll lay you fast, sirrah, I will; for, notwithstanding your laced jacket, I believe you are a notorious felon.' My friend was so much abashed at this menace, which was thundered out with great vociferation, that he changed colour, and remained speechless. This confusion his worship took for a symptom of guilt; and to compleat his discovery, continued his threats: 'Now I am convinced you are a thief, your face discovers it, you tremble all over, your conscience won't lie still; you'll be hanged, sirrah!' raising his voice; 'you'll be hanged! and happy had it been for the world, as well as your own miserable soul, if you had been detected and cut off in the beginning of your career.—Come hither, clerk, and take this man's confession.' I was in an agony of consternation, when the constable going into another room with his worship, acquainted him with the truth of the story: which having learned, he returned with a smiling countenance, and addressing himself to us all, said, it was always his way to terrify young people when they came before him, that his threats might make a strong impression on their minds, and deter them from engaging in scenes of riot and debauchery, which commonly ended before the judge. Thus having cloaked his own want of discernment, under the disguise of paternal care, we were dismissed; and I found myself as much lightened as if a mountain had been lifted off my breast.

C H A P. XVIII.

I CARRY MY QUALIFICATION TO THE NAVY OFFICE—THE NATURE OF IT—THE BEHAVIOUR OF THE S—T—Y. — STRAP'S CONCERN FOR MY ABSENCE—A BATTLE BETWEEN HIM AND A BLACKSMITH—THE TROUBLESOME CONSEQUENCE OF IT—HIS HARANGUE TO ME—HIS FRIEND THE SCHOOLMASTER RECOMMENDS ME TO A FRENCH APOTHECARY, WHO ENTERTAINS ME AS A JOURNEYMAN.

I Would willingly have gone home to sleep, but was told by my companion, that we must deliver our letters of qualification at the Navy Office before one o'clock; accordingly we went thither, and gave them to the s—t—y, who opened and read them, and I was mightily pleased to find myself qualified for second mate of a third rate. When he had stuck them all together on a file, one of our company asked if there were any vacancies; to which interrogation he answered, 'No.' Then I ventured to enquire if any ships were to be put in commission soon. At which question he surveyed me with a look of ineffable contempt, and pushing us out of his office, locked the door without deigning us another word. We went down stairs, and conferred together on our expectations; when I understood that each of them had been recommended to one or other of the commissioners, and each of them promised the first vacancy that should fall; but that none of them relied solely upon that interest, without a present to the s—t—y, with whom some of the c——s went snacks. For which reason each of them had provided a small purse; and I was asked what I proposed to give. This was a vexatious question to me, who (far from being in a capacity to gratify a ravenous s—t—y) had not wherewithal to purchase a dinner. I therefore answered, I had not yet determined what to give; and sneaked off towards my own lodgings, curling my fate all the way, and inveighing with much bitterness against the barbarity of my grandfather, and the sordid avarice of my relations, who left me a prey to contempt and indigence.

gence. Full of these disagreeable reflections, I arrived at the house where I lodged, and relieved my landlord from great anxiety on my account; for this honest man believed I had met with some dismal accident, and that he should never see me again. Strap, who had come to visit me in the morning, understanding I had been abroad all night, was almost distracted; and after having obtained leave of his master, had gone in quest of me, though he was even more ignorant of the town than I. Not being willing to inform my landlord of my adventure, I told him I had met an acquaintance at Surgeons Hall, with whom I spent the evening and night, but being very much infected by bugs, I had not slept much, and therefore intended to take a little repose; so saying, I went to bed, and desired to be awakened if Strap should happen to come while I should be asleep. I was accordingly roused by my friend himself, who entered my chamber about three o'clock in the afternoon; and presented a figure to my eyes, that I could scarce believe real. In short, this affectionate shaver, setting out towards Surgeons Hall, had inquired for me there to no purpose; from thence he found his way to the Navy Office, where he could hear no tidings of me, because I was unknown to every body then present; he afterwards went upon Change in hopes of seeing me upon the Scotch Walk, but without success. At last being almost in despair of finding me, he resolved to ask every body he met in the street, if perchance any one could give him information about me: and actually put his resolution in practice, in spite of the scoffs, curses and reproaches, with which he was answered, until a blacksmith's prentice, seeing him stop a porter with a burden on his back, and hearing his question, for which he received a hearty curse, called to him, and asked if the person he enquired after was not a Scotchman. Strap replied with great eagerness, 'Yes, and had on a brown coat with long skirts.'—'The same,' said the blacksmith; 'I saw him pass by an hour ago.'—'Did you so?' cried Strap, rubbing his hands; 'Odds! I am very glad of that. Which way went he?'—'Towards Tyburn, in a cart,' said he: 'if you make good speed you may get thither time enough

'to see him hanged.' This piece of wit incensed my friend to such a degree, that he called the blacksmith scoundrel, and protested he would fight him for half a farthing. 'No, no,' said the other, stripping, 'I'll have none of your money; you Scotchmen seldom carry any about you; but I'll fight you for love.' There was a ring immediately formed by the mob: and Strap finding he could not get off honourably without fighting, at the same time burning with resentment against his adversary, quitted his clothes to the care of the multitude, and the battle began with great violence on the side of Strap, who in a few minutes exhausted his breath and spirits on his patient antagonist; who sustained the assault with great coolness, till finding the barber quite spent, he returned the blows he had lent him with such interest, that Strap, after having received three falls on the hard stones, gave out, and allowed the blacksmith to be the better man. The victory being thus decided, it was proposed to adjourn to a cellar hard by, and drink friends. But when my friend began to gather up his clothes, he perceived that some honest person or other had made free with his shirt, neckcloth, hat and wig, which were carried off; and probably his coat and waistcoat would have met with the same fate, had they been worth stealing. It was in vain for him to make a noise, which only yielded mirth to the spectators; he was fain to get off in this manner, which he accomplished with much difficulty, and appeared before me all besmeared with blood and dirt. Notwithstanding this misfortune, such was his transport at finding me safe and sound, that he had almost stifled and stunk me to death with his embraces. After he had cleaned himself, and put on one of my shirts and a woollen night-cap, I recounted to him the particulars of my night's campaign, which filled him with admiration, and made him repeat with great energy an observation which was often in his mouth, namely, 'that surely London is the devil's drawing-room.' As neither of us had dined, he desired me to get up; and the milk-woman coming round at that instant, he went down stairs and brought up a quart, with a penny brick, on which we made a comfortable meal. He then

shared his money with me, which amounted to eighteen-pence, and left me, with an intention to borrow an old wig and hat of his friend the schoolmaster.

He was no sooner gone, than I began to consider my situation with great uneasiness, and revolved all the schemes my imagination could suggest, in order to chuse and pursue some one that would procure me bread; for it is impossible to express the pangs I felt, when I reflected on the miserable dependance in which I lived at the expence of a poor barber's boy. My pride took the alarm, and having no hopes of succeeding at the Navy Office, I came to a resolution of enlisting in the foot-guards next day, be the event what it would. This extravagant design, by flattering my disposition, gave great satisfaction; and I was charging the enemy at the head of my own regiment, when Strap's return interrupted my reverie. The schoolmaster had made him a present of the tye-wig which he wore when I was introduced to him, together with an old hat, whose brims would have overshadowed a Colossus. Though Strap had ventured to wear them in the dusk, he did not chuse to entertain the mob by day; therefore went to work immediately, and reduced them both to a moderate size. While he was employed in this office, he addressed me thus: 'To be sure, Mr. Random, you are born a gentleman, and have a great deal of learning; and indeed look like a gentleman—for as to person, you may hold up your head with the best of them. On the other hand, I am a poor, but honest cobbler's son: my mother was as industrious a woman as ever broke bread, till such time as she took to drinking, which you very well know; but every body has failings, *humanum est errare*. Now for myself, I am a poor journeyman barber, tolerably well made, and understand some Latin, and have a smattering of Greek; but what of that? perhaps I might also say that I know a little of the world, but that is to no purpose; though you be gentle and I simple, it does not follow but that I who am simple may do a good office to you who are gentle. Now this is the case: my kinsman, the schoolmaster—perhaps you did not know

how nearly he is related to me, I'll satisfy you in that presently—his mother and my grandmother's sister's nephew—no, that's not it—my grandfather's brother's daughter—rabbit it! I have forgot the degree; but this I know, he and I are cousins seven times removed.' My impatience to know the good offices he had done me, got the better of my temper, and interrupted him at this place, with, 'D—n your relation and pedigree! if the schoolmaster or you can be of any advantage to me, why don't you tell me without all this preamble!' When I pronounced these words with some vehemence, Strap looked at me for some time with a grave countenance, and then went on: 'Surely, our pedigree is not to be d—n'd, because it is not so noble as yours. I am very sorry to see such an alteration in your temper of late; you was always fiery, but now you are grown as crabbed as old Periwinkle the drunken tinker, on whom you and I (God forgive us!) played so many unlucky tricks, while we were at school. But I will no longer detain you in suspense, because, doubtless, nothing is more uneasy than doubt; *dubio procul dubio nil dubius*. My friend, or relation, or which you will, or both, the schoolmaster, being informed of the regard I have for you—for you may be sure, I did not fail to let him know your good qualities—by the bye, he has undertaken to teach you the pronunciation of the English tongue, without which, he says, you will be unfit for business in this country. I say, my relation has spoke in your behalf to a French apothecary who wants a journeyman; and on his recommendation, you may have fifteen pounds per year, bed and board, whenever you please.' I was too much interested in this piece of news, to entertain it with indifference; but jumping up, insisted on Strap's immediately accompanying me to the house of his friend, that I might not lose this opportunity through the least delay or neglect on my part. We were informed that the schoolmaster was in company at a public house in the neighbourhood, whither we repaired, and found him drinking with the very individual apothecary in question. When he was called to the door at our desire,

fire, and observed my impatience, he broke out into his usual term of admiration: 'O Ch—st! I suppose when you heard of this offer, you did not take leisure enough to come down stairs, but leapt out of the window; did you overturn no porter or oyster-woman in your way! It is a mercy of God you did not knock your brains out against some post in your career. O' my conscience! I believe had I been in the inmost recesses of my habitation, the very *penetrabilia*, even in bed with my wife; your eagerness would have surmounted bolts, bars, decency, and every thing. The den of Cacus, or *Sanctum Sanctorum*, could not have hid me from you. But come along, the gentleman of whom I spoke is in the house, I will present you to him forthwith.' When I entered the room, I perceived four or five people smoaking, one of whom the schoolmaster accosted thus: 'Mr. Lavement, here's the young man of whom I spoke to you.' The apothecary, who was a little old withered man, with a forehead about an inch high, a nose turned up at the end, large cheek bones that helped to form a pit for his little grey eyes, a great bag of loose skin hanging down on each side in wrinkles like the alforjas of a baboon; and a mouth so accustomed to that contraction which produces grinning, that he could not pronounce a syllable without discovering the remains of his teeth, which consisted of four yellow fangs, not improperly, by anatomists, called *canine*. This person, I say, after having eyed me some time; said, 'Oho, 'tis ver well, Monsr. Concordance.—Young man, you are ver welcome, take one coup of bierre; and come to mine house to-morrow morning; Monsr. Concordance vil shew you de way.' Upon this I made my bow, and as I went out of the room, could hear him say, '*Ma foy! c'est un beau garçon, c'est un galliard.*' As I had by my own application while I served Crab, acquired the French tongue well enough to read authors written in that language, and understand any thing that occurred in conversation, I determined to pretend ignorance to my new master, that he and his family, whom I supposed to be of the same country, not being on the reserve before me, might possibly dis-

cover something in discourse, which would either yield me amusement or advantage. Next morning Mr. Concordance carried me to the apothecary's house; where the bargain was made, and orders given to provide an apartment for me immediately. But before I entered upon business, the schoolmaster recommended me to his taylor, who gave me credit for a suit of clothes to be paid out of the first moiety of my wages, and they were begun upon that very day; he afterwards accommodated me with a new hat on the same terms; so that in a few days I hoped to make a very fashionable appearance. In the mean time, Strap conveyed my baggage to the place allotted for me, which was a back room up two pair of stairs, furnished with a pallet for me to lie upon, a chair without a back, an earthen chamber-pot without a handle, a bottle by way of candlestick, and a triangular piece of glass instead of a mirror; the rest of it's ornaments having been lately removed to one of the garrets, for the convenience of the servant of an Irish captain who lodged in the first floor.

CH A P. XIX.

THE CHARACTERS OF MR. LAVEMENT, HIS WIFE, AND DAUGHTER—SOME ANECDOTES OF THE FAMILY—THE MOTHER AND DAUGHTER RIVALS—I AM GUILTY OF A MISTAKE THAT GIVES ME PRESENT SATISFACTION, BUT IS ATTENDED WITH TROUBLESOME CONSEQUENCES.

NEXT day, while I was at work in the shop, a bouncing damsel well dressed came in, on pretence of finding a vial for some use or other; and taking an opportunity, when she thought I did not mind her, of observing me narrowly, went away with a silent look of disdain. I easily guessed her sentiments, and my pride took the resolution of entertaining the same indifference and neglect towards her. At dinner, the maids, with whom I dined in the kitchen, gave me to understand that this was my master's only daughter, who would have a very handsome fortune, on account of which, and her beauty, a great many young gentlemen made

made their addresses to her; that she had been twice on the brink of marriage, but disappointed by the stinginess of her father, who refused to part with a shilling to promote the match; for which reason the young lady did not behave to her father with all the filial veneration that might be expected: in particular, she harboured the most perfect hatred for his countrymen; in which disposition she resembled her mother, who was an English woman; and by the hints they dropped, I learned the grey mare was the better horse; that she was a matron of high spirit, which was often manifested at the expence of her dependants; that she loved diversions, and looked upon Miss as her rival in all parties, which was indeed the true cause of her disappointments; for had the mother been hearty in her interest, the father would not have ventured to refuse her demands. Over and above this intelligence, I of myself soon made more discoveries; Mr. Lavement's significant grins at his wife, while she looked another way, convinced me that he was not at all content with his lot; and his behaviour in presence of the captain, made me believe his chief torment was jealousy. As for my own part, I was considered in no other light than that of a menial servant, and had been already six days in the house without being honoured with one word from either mother or daughter; the latter, as I understood from the maids, having at table one day expressed some surprize that her papa should entertain such an awkward mean-looking journeyman. I was nettled at this piece of information, and next Sunday, it being my turn to take my diversion, dressed myself in my new clothes to the greatest advantage; and, vanity apart, made no contemptible figure. After having spent most part of the day in company with Strap and some of his acquaintance, I came home in the afternoon, and was let in by miss; who, not knowing me, dropt a low curtsy as I advanced, which I returned with a profound bow, and shut the door. By that time I had turned about, she had perceived her mistake, and changed colour, but did not withdraw. The passage being narrow, I could not get away without jostling her; so I was forced to remain where I was, with my eyes fixed on the

ground, and my face glowing with blushes. At length her vanity coming to her assistance, she went away tittering, and I could hear her pronounce the word 'Creature.' From this day forward she came into the shop fifty times every day, upon various pretences, and put in practice so many ridiculous airs, that I could easily perceive her opinion of me was changed, and that she did not think me altogether an unworthy conquest. But my heart was so steeled against her charms by pride and resentment, which were two chief ingredients in my disposition, that I remained insensible to all her arts; and notwithstanding some advances she made, could not be prevailed upon to yield her the least attention. This neglect soon banished all the favourable impressions she felt for me, and the rage of a slighted woman took place in her heart. This she manifested not only in all the suggestions her malice could invent to my prejudice with her father, but also in procuring for me such servile employments as she hoped would sufficiently humble my spirit. One day in particular she ordered me to brush my master's coat; but I refusing, a smart dialogue ensued, which ended in her bursting into tears of rage; when her mother interposing, and examining into the merits of the cause, determined it in my favour: and this good office I owed not to any esteem or consideration she had for me, but solely to the desire of mortifying her daughter, who on this occasion observed, that let people be never so much in the right, there were some folks who would never do them justice; but to be sure they had their reasons for it, which some people were ignorant of, although they despised their little arts. This insinuation of some people, and some folks, put me upon observing the behaviour of my mistress more narrowly for the future; and it was not long before I had reason to believe that she looked upon her daughter as a rival in the affections of Captain Odonnell, who lodged in the house. In the mean time, my industry and knowledge gained me the good will of my master, who would often say in French, '*Mardy! c'est un bon garçon.*' He had a great deal of business; but as he was mostly employed among his fellow refugees, his profits were small. However, his expence for medicines was not great, for he

he was the most expert man at a succedaneum of any apothecary in London; so that I have been sometimes amazed to see him, without the least hesitation, make up a physician's prescription, though he had not in his shop one medicine mentioned in it. Oyster-shells he could convert into crabs eyes; common oil, into oil of sweet almonds; syrup of sugar, into balsamic syrup; Thames water, into aqua cinnamoni; turpentine, into capivi; and a hundred more costly preparations were produced in an instant, from the cheapest and coarsest drugs of the *materia medica*: and when any common thing was ordered for a patient, he always took care to disguise it in colour or taste, or both, in such a manner as that it could not possibly be known. For which purpose cochineal and oil of cloves were of great service. Among many nostrums which he possessed, there was one for the venereal disease, that brought him a good deal of money; and this he concealed so artfully from me, that I could never learn it's composition: but during the eight months I stayed in his service, he was so unfortunate in the use of it, that three parts in four of those who took it, were fain to confirm the cure by a salivation under the direction of another doctor. This bad success, in all appearance, attached him the more to his specific; and before I left him, I may venture to say, he would have sooner renounced the Trinity (notwithstanding his being a good Hugonot) than his confidence in the never-failing power of this remedy. Mr. Lavement had attempted more than once, to introduce a vegetable diet into his family, by launching out into the praise of roots and greens, and decrying the use of flesh, both as a physician and philosopher; but all his rhetoric could not make one proselyte to his opinion, and even the wife of his bosom declared against the proposal. Whether it was owing to the little regard she paid to her husband's admonition in this particular, or to the natural warmth of her constitution, I know not; but this lady's passions became every day more and more violent, till at last she looked upon decency as an unnecessary restraint; and one afternoon, when her husband was abroad, and her daughter gone to visit, ordered me to call a hackney-coach, in which she and the

captain drove towards Covent Garden. Miss came home in the evening, and supping at her usual hour, went to bed. About eleven o'clock my master entered, and asked if his wife was gone to sleep: upon which I told him, my mistress went out in the afternoon, and was not yet returned. This was like a clap of thunder to the poor apothecary, who starting back, cried, '*Mort de ma vie!* vat you tell me? My wife not at home!' At that instant a patient's servant arrived with a prescription for a draught, which my master taking, went into the shop to make it up with his own hand. While he rubbed the ingredients in a glass mortar, he inquired of me, whether or no his wife went out alone; and no sooner heard that she was in company with the captain, than with one blow he split the mortar into a thousand pieces, and grinning like the head of a bass viol, exclaimed, '*Ah, traitresse!*' It would have been impossible for me to have preserved my gravity a minute longer, when I was happily relieved by a rap at the door, which I opened, and perceived my mistress coming out of the coach; she flounced immediately into the shop, and addressed her husband thus: '*I suppose you thought I was lost, my dear; Captain Odonell has been so good as to treat me with a play.*'—'*Play—play!*' replied he; '*Oho! yes by gar, I believe ver prettie play.*'—'*Bless me!*' said she; '*what's the matter?*'—'*Vat de maiter?*' cried he, forgetting all his former complaisance, '*by gar, you be one damn dog's wife—ventre bleu! me vill show you vat it is to put one horn upon mine head. Pardieu! le Capitaine Odonnell be one——*' Here the captain, who had been all the while at the door discharging the coach, entered, and said with a terrible voice, '*D—mine! what am I?*' Mr. Lavement changing his tone, immediately saluted him with; '*Oh, serviteur monsieur le capitaine; vous etes un gallant homme—ma femme est forte obligé.*' Then turning about towards me, pronounced with a low voice, '*Et diablement obligé, sans doute.*'—'*Hark'e, Mr. Lavement,*' said the captain, '*I am a man of honour, and I believe you are too much of a gentleman to be offended at the civility I shew your wife.*' This declaration had such an effect

made their addressee to her; that she had been twice on the brink of marriage, but disappointed by the stinginess of her father, who refused to part with a shilling to promote the match; for which reason the young lady did not behave to her father with all the filial veneration that might be expected: in particular, she harboured the most perfect hatred for his countrymen; in which disposition she resembled her mother, who was an English woman; and by the hints they dropped, I learned the grey mare was the better horse; that she was a matron of high spirit, which was often manifested at the expense of her dependants; that she loved diversions, and looked upon Miss as her rival in all parties, which was indeed the true cause of her disappointments; for had the mother been hearty in her interest, the father would not have ventured to refuse her demands. Over and above this intelligence, I of myself soon made more discoveries; Mr. Lavement's significant grins at his wife, while she looked another way, convinced me that he was not at all content with his lot; and his behaviour in presence of the captain, made me believe his chief torment was jealousy. As for my own part, I was considered in no other light than that of a menial servant, and had been already six days in the house without being honoured with one word from either mother or daughter; the latter, as I understood from the maids, having at table one day expressed some surprize that her papa should entertain such an awkward mean-looking journeyman. I was nettled at this piece of information, and next Sunday, it being my turn to take my diversion, dressed myself in my new clothes to the greatest advantage; and, vanity apart, made no contemptible figure. After having spent most part of the day in company with Strap and some of his acquaintance, I came home in the afternoon, and was let in by Miss; who, not knowing me, dropt a low curtsey as I advanced, which I returned with a profound bow, and shut the door. By that time I had turned about, she had perceived her mistake, and changed colour, but did not withdraw. The passage being narrow, I could not get away without jostling her; so I was forced to remain where I was, with my eyes fixed on the

ground, and my face glowing with blushes. At length her vanity coming to her assistance, she went away tittering, and I could hear her pronounce the word 'Creature.' From this day forward she came into the shop fifty times every day, upon various pretences, and put in practice so many ridiculous airs, that I could easily perceive her opinion of me was changed, and that she did not think me altogether an unworthy conquest. But my heart was so steeled against her charms by pride and resentment, which were two chief ingredients in my disposition, that I remained insensible to all her arts; and notwithstanding some advances she made, could not be prevailed upon to yield her the least attention. This neglect soon banished all the favourable impressions she felt for me, and the rage of a slighted woman took place in her heart. This she manifested not only in all the suggestions her malice could invent to my prejudice with her father, but also in procuring for me such servile employments as she hoped would sufficiently humble my spirit. One day in particular she ordered me to brush my master's coat; but I refusing, a smart dialogue ensued, which ended in her bursting into tears of rage; when her mother interposing, and examining into the merits of the cause, determined it in my favour: and this good office I owed not to any esteem or consideration she had for me, but solely to the desire of mortifying her daughter, who on this occasion observed, that let people be never so much in the right, there were some folks who would never do them justice; but to be sure they had their reasons for it, which some people were ignorant of, although they despised their little arts. This insinuation of some people, and some folks, put me upon observing the behaviour of my mistress more narrowly for the future; and it was not long before I had reason to believe that she looked upon her daughter as a rival in the affections of Captain Odonnell, who lodged in the house. In the mean time, my industry and knowledge gained me the good will of my master, who would often say in French, '*Mardy! c'est un bon garçon.*' He had a great deal of business; but as he was mostly employed among his fellow refugees, his profits were small. However, his expense for medicines was not great, for

he

he was the most expert man at a succedaneum of any apothecary in London; so that I have been sometimes amazed to see him, without the least hesitation, make up a physician's prescription, though he had not in his shop one medicine mentioned in it. Oyster-shells he could convert into crabs eyes; common oil, into oil of sweet almonds; syrup of sugar, into balsamic syrup; Thames water, into aqua cinnamoni; turpentine, into capivi; and a hundred more costly preparations were produced in an instant, from the cheapest and coarsest drugs of the *materia medica*: and when any common thing was ordered for a patient, he always took care to disguise it in colour or taste, or both, in such a manner as that it could not possibly be known. For which purpose cochineal and oil of cloves were of great service. Among many nostrums which he possessed, there was one for the venereal disease, that brought him a good deal of money; and this he concealed so artfully from me, that I could never learn it's composition: but during the eight months I stayed in his service, he was so unfortunate in the use of it, that three parts in four of those who took it, were fain to confirm the cure by a salivation under the direction of another doctor. This bad success, in all appearance, attached him the more to his specific; and before I left him, I may venture to say, he would have sooner renounced the Trinity (notwithstanding his being a good Hugonot) than his confidence in the never-failing power of this remedy. Mr. Lavement had attempted more than once, to introduce a vegetable diet into his family, by launching out into the praise of roots and greens, and decrying the use of flesh, both as a physician and philosopher; but all his rhetoric could not make one proselyte to his opinion, and even the wife of his bosom declared against the proposal. Whether it was owing to the little regard she paid to her husband's admonition in this particular, or to the natural warmth of her constitution, I know not; but this lady's passions became every day more and more violent, till at last she looked upon decency as an unnecessary restraint; and one afternoon, when her husband was abroad, and her daughter gone to visit, ordered me to call a hackney-coach, in which she and the

captain drove towards Covent Garden. Miss came home in the evening, and supping at her usual hour, went to bed. About eleven o'clock my master entered, and asked if his wife was gone to sleep: upon which I told him, my mistress went out in the afternoon, and was not yet returned. This was like a clap of thunder to the poor apothecary, who starting back, cried, '*Mort de ma vie!* vat you tell me? My wife not at home!' At that instant a patient's servant arrived with a prescription for a draught, which my master taking, went into the shop to make it up with his own hand. While he rubbed the ingredients in a glass mortar, he inquired of me, whether or no his wife went out alone; and no sooner heard that she was in company with the captain, than with one blow he split the mortar into a thousand pieces, and grinning like the head of a bass viol, exclaimed, '*Ah, traitresse!*' It would have been impossible for me to have preserved my gravity a minute longer, when I was happily relieved by a rap at the door, which I opened, and perceived my mistress coming out of the coach; she flounced immediately into the shop, and addressed her husband thus: '*I suppose you thought I was lost, my dear; Captain Odonell has been so good as to treat me with a play.*'—'*Play—play!*' replied he; '*Oho! yes by gar, I believe ver prettie play.*'—'*Bless me!*' said she, '*what's the matter?*'—'*Vat de matter?*' cried he, forgetting all his former complaisance, '*by gar, you be one damn dog's wife—ventre bleu! me vill show you vat it is to put one horn upon mine head. Pardieu! le Capitaine Odonnell be one——*' Here the captain, who had been all the while at the door discharging the coach, entered, and said with a terrible voice, '*D—mme! what am I?*' Mr. Lavement changing his tone, immediately saluted him with; '*Oh, serviteur monsieur le capitaine; vous etes un gallant homme—ma femme est forte obligé.*' Then turning about towards me, pronounced with a low voice, '*Et diablement obligé, sans doute.*'—'*Hark'e, Mr. Lavement,*' said the captain, '*I am a man of honour, and I believe you are too much of a gentleman to be offended at the civility I shew your wife.*' This declaration had such an effect

effect on the apothecary, that he resumed all the politesse of a Frenchman; and with the utmost prostration of compliment, assured the captain that he was perfectly well satisfied with the honour he had done his wife. Matters being thus composed, every body went to rest. Next day I perceived through a glass door that opened from the shop into the parlour, the captain talking earnestly to Miss, who heard him with a look that expressed anger mingled with scorn; which however he at last found means to mollify, and sealed his reconciliation with a kiss. This circumstance soon convinced me of the occasion of the quarrel; but notwithstanding all my vigilance, I could never discover any other commerce between them. In the mean while, I had reason to believe I had inspired one of the maids with tender sentiments for me; and one night when I thought every other person in the house asleep, I took the opportunity of going to reap the fruits of my conquest; her bedfellow having the day before gone to Richmond to visit her parents. Accordingly I got up, and naked as I was, explored my way in the dark, to the garret where she lay. I was ravished to find the door open, and moved softly to her bed-side, transported with the hope of compleating my wishes. But what horrors of jealousy and disappointment did I feel, when I found her asleep, fast locked in the arms of a man, whom I easily guessed to be no other than the captain's servant! I was upon the point of doing some rash thing, when the noise of a rat scratching behind the wainscot put me to flight, and I was fain to get back to my own bed in safety. Whether this alarm had disordered my mind, or that I was led astray by the power of destiny, I know not; but instead of turning to the left-hand, when I descended to the second story, I pursued the contrary course, and mistook the young lady's bed-chamber for my own. I did not perceive my mistake before I had run against the bed-posts; and then it was not in my power to retreat undiscovered, for the nymph being awake, felt my approach, and with a soft voice, bade me make less noise, lest the Scotch booby in the next room should overhear us. This hint was sufficient to inform me of the nature of the assigna-

tion; and as my passions, at any time high, were then in a state of exaltation, I resolved to profit by my good fortune. Without any more ceremony, therefore, I made bold to slip into bed to this charmer, who gave me as favourable a reception as I could desire. Our conversation was very sparing on my part, but she upbraided the person whom I represented with his jealousy of me, whom she handled so roughly, that my resentment had well nigh occasioned a discovery more than once; but I was consoled for her hatred of me by the revenge I enjoyed in understanding from her own mouth that it was now high time to save her reputation by matrimony: for she had reason to fear she could not much longer conceal the effects of their mutual intercourse. While I was meditating an answer to this proposal, I heard a noise in my room, like something heavy falling down upon the floor: upon which I started up, and creeping to the door of my chamber, observed by moon-light the shadow of a man groping his way out; so I retired to one side to let him pass, and saw him go down stairs as expeditiously as he could. It was an easy matter to divine that this was the captain, who having overslept himself, had got up at last to keep his assignation: and finding my door open, had entered my apartment instead of that of his mistress, where I supplied his place. But finding his mistake, by falling over my chair, he was afraid the noise might alarm the family, and for that reason made off, delaying the gratification of his desires till another opportunity. By this time, I was satisfied; and instead of returning to the place from whence I came, retreated to my own castle, which I fortified by bolting the door, and in the congratulation of my own happiness fell asleep. But the truth of this adventure could not be long concealed from my young mistress, who next day came to an explanation with the captain, upon his lamenting his last night's disappointment, and begging pardon for the noise he had made. Their mutual chagrin, when they came to the knowledge of what had happened, may be easily conjectured, though each had a peculiar grief unfelt by the other; for she was conscious of not only having betrayed to me the secrets of her commerce with him,

him; but also, of having incensed me by the freedoms she had taken with my name, beyond a hope of reconciliation. On the other hand, his jealousy suggested that her sorrow was all artifice; and that I had supplied his place with her own privacy and consent. That such was the situation of their thoughts, will appear in the sequel; for that very day she came into the shop, where I was alone, and fixing her eyes, swimming in tears, upon me, sighed most piteously. But I was proof against her distress, by recollecting the epithets with which she had honoured me the night before; and believing that the good reception I enjoyed was destined for another: therefore I took no notice of her affliction; and she had the mortification to find her disdain returned four-fold. However, from thence forward she thought proper to use me with more complaisance than usual, knowing that it was in my power at any time to publish her shame. By these means my life became much more agreeable, though I never could prevail upon myself to repeat my nocturnal visit; and as I every day improved in my knowledge of the town, I shook off my awkward air by degrees, and acquired the character of a polite journeyman apothecary.

CHAP. XX.

I AM ASSAULTED AND DANGEROUSLY WOUNDED—SUSPECT O'DONNELL, AND AM CONFIRMED IN MY OPINION—CONCERT A SCHEME OF REVENGE, AND PUT IT IN EXECUTION—O'DONNELL ROBS HIS OWN SERVANT, AND DISAPPEARS—I MAKE MY ADDRESSES TO A LADY—AND AM MIRACULOUSLY DELIVERED FROM HER SNARE.

ONE night, about twelve o'clock, as I returned from visiting a patient at Chelsea, I received a blow on my head from an unseen hand, that stretched me senseless on the ground; and was left for dead with three stabs of a sword in my body. The groans I uttered when I recovered the use of my reason, alarmed the people of a solitary ale-house, that stood near the spot where I lay, and they were hu-

mane enough to take me in, and send for a surgeon, who dressed my wounds, and assured me they were not mortal. One of them penetrated through the skin and muscles of one side of my belly in such a manner, that doubtless the assassin imagined he had run me through the entrails. The second slanted along one of my ribs; and the last, which was intended for the finishing stroke, having been directed to the heart, the sword snapt upon my breast-bone, and the point remained sticking in the skin. When I reflected upon this event, I could not persuade myself that I had been assaulted by a common footpad; because it is not usual for such people to murder those they rob, especially when they meet with no resistance; and I found my money and every thing else about me but my carcase, safe. I concluded therefore, that I must either have been mistaken for another, or obliged to the private resentment of some secret enemy, for what had happened; and as I could remember nobody who had the least cause of complaint against me, except Captain Odonnell and my master's daughter, my suspicion settled upon them, though I took care to conceal it, that I might the sooner arrive at confirmation. With this view, I went home in a chair about ten o'clock in the morning; and as the chairmen supported me into the house, met the captain in the passage, who no sooner saw me, than he started back, and gave evident signs of guilty confusion, which he would have accounted for from the surprize occasioned by seeing me in such a condition. My master having heard my story, consoled me with a good deal of sympathy: and, when he understood my wounds were not dangerous, ordered me to be carried up stairs to bed; though not without some opposition from his wife, who was of opinion it would be better for me to go to an hospital, where I should be more carefully attended. My meditation was employed in concerting with myself some method of revenge against Squire Odonnell and his innamorata, whom I looked upon as the authors of my misfortune; when Miss, who was not at home at my arrival, entered my chamber, and saying she was sorry for the accident that had befallen me, asked if I suspected any body to be the assas-

fin. Upon which I fixed my eyes stedfastly upon her, and answered, 'Yes.' She discovered no symptom of confusion; but replied hastily, 'If that be the case, why don't you take out a warrant to have him apprehended? it will cost but a trifle; if you have no money, I'll lend you.' This frankness not only cured me of my suspicion with respect to her; but even staggered my belief with regard to the captain; of whose guilt I resolved to have farther proof, before I should enterprize any thing in the way of revenge. I thanked her kindly for her generous offer; which however I had no occasion to accept, being determined to do nothing rashly: for though I could plainly perceive the person who attacked me, to be a soldier whose face I thought was familiar to me, I could not swear with a safe conscience to any particular man; and granting I could, my prosecution of him would not much avail. This uncertainty I pretended, lest the captain, hearing from her, that I knew the person who wounded me, might think proper to withdraw before I could be in a condition to requite him. In two days I was up, and able to do a little business, so that Mr. Lavement made shift to carry on his practice, without hiring another journeyman in my room. The first thing I attempted towards a certain discovery of my secret enemy, was to get into Odonnell's apartment, while he was abroad in an undress, and examine his sword, the point of which being broke off, I applied the fragment that was found sticking in my body, and found it answered the fractured part exactly. There was no room left for doubt; and all that remained, was to fix upon a scheme of revenge, which almost solely engrossed my thoughts during the space of eight nights and days. Sometimes I was tempted to fall upon him in the same manner as he had practised upon me, and kill him out-right. But this assault my honour opposed as a piece of barbarous cowardice, in which he was not to be imitated. At other times, I entertained thoughts of demanding satisfaction in an honourable way; but was diverted from this undertaking by considering the uncertainty of the event and the nature of the injury he had done me, which did not entitle him to

such easy terms. At last I determined to pursue a middle course; and actually put my design in execution after this manner. Having secured the assistance of Strap, and two of his acquaintance whom he could depend upon, we provided ourselves with disguises, and I caused the following letter to be delivered to him by one of our associates in livery, one Sunday evening,

'SIR,

'IF I may be allowed to judge from appearance, it will not be disagreeable to you to hear that my husband is gone to Bagshot to visit a patient, and will not return till to-morrow night; so that if you have any thing to propose to me (as your behaviour on many occasions has seemed to insinuate) you will do well to embrace the present opportunity of seeing
'Your, &c.'

This letter was signed with the name of an apothecary's wife who lived in Chelsea, of whom I had heard Odonnell was an admirer. Every thing succeeded to our wish. The amorous hero hastened towards the place of assignation; and was encountered by us in the very place where he had assaulted me. We rushed upon him all at once, secured his sword, stripped off his clothes, even to the skin, which we scourged with nettles till he was blistered from head to foot, notwithstanding all the eloquence of his tears and supplications. When I was satisfied with the stripes I had bestowed, we carried off his clothes, which we hid in a hedge near the place, and left him stark naked, to find his way home in the best manner he could, while I took care to be there before him. I afterwards understood, that in his way to the lodgings of a friend, who lived in the skirts of the town, he was picked up by the watch, who carried him to the round-house, from whence he sent for clothes to his lodgings; and next morning arrived at the door in a chair, wrapt up in a blanket he had borrowed; for his body was so sore and swelled, that he could not bear to be confined in his wearing-apparel. He was treated with the utmost tenderness
by

by my mistress and her daughter, who vied with each other in their care and attendance of him; but Lavement himself could not forbear expressing his joy, by several malicious grins, while he ordered me to prepare an unguent for his sores. As to myself, nobody can doubt my gratification, when I had every day an opportunity of seeing my revenge protracted on the body of my adversary, by the ulcers of which I had been the cause; and indeed I not only enjoyed the satisfaction of having held him alive, but another also which I had not foreseen. The story of his being attacked and stript in such a place, having been inserted in the news, gave information to those who found his clothes next day, whither to bring them; and accordingly he retrieved every thing he had lost except a few letters, among which was that which I had writ to him in the name of the apothecary's wife. This and the others, which it seems were all on the subject of love, (for this Hibernian hero was one of those people who are called fortune-hunters) fell into the hands of a certain female author, famous for the scandal she has published; who, after having embellished them with some ornaments of her own invention, gave them to the town in print. I was very much shocked on reflecting, that I might possibly be the occasion of a whole family's unhappiness, on account of the letter I had written; but was eased of that apprehension, when I understood that the Chelsea apothecary had commenced a law-suit against the printer for defamation; and looked upon the whole as a piece of forgery committed by the author, who had disappeared. But whatever might be his opinion of the matter, our two ladies seemed to entertain a different idea of it: for, as soon as the pamphlet appeared, I could perceive their care of their patient considerably diminish, until at last it ended in total neglect. It was impossible for him to be ignorant of this change, any more than of the occasion of it; but as he was conscious to himself of having deserved worse than contempt at their hands, he was glad to come off so cheaply, and contented himself with muttering curses and threats against the apothecary; who, as he imagined, having got an inkling of the appointment with his wife, had

taken revenge of him in the manner described. By that time he had got a new scarf skin, his character was become so notorious, that he thought it high time for him to decamp; and his retreat he performed in one night without beat of drum, after having robbed his own servant of every thing that belonged to him except the clothes he had on his back. A few days after he disappeared, Mr. Lavement, for his own security, took into custody a large old trunk which he had left; and as it was very heavy, made no question that the contents were sufficient to indemnify him for what Odonnel owed in lodging. But a month being elapsed without hearing any tidings of this adventurer, and my master being impatient to know what the trunk contained, he ordered me to break it open in his presence; which task I performed with the pestle of our great mortar, and discovered, to his inexpressible astonishment and mortification, a heap of stones.

About this time, my friend Strap informed me of an offer he had to go abroad with a gentleman in quality of valet de chambre, and at the same time assured me, that whatever advantage he might propose to himself from this prospect, he could not bear the thoughts of parting from me; so much was he attached to my fortune. In spite of all the obligations I owed to this poor honest fellow, ingratitude is so natural to the heart of man, that I began to be tired of his acquaintance; and now that I had contracted other friendships which appeared more creditable, was even ashamed to see a journeyman barber inquiring after me with the familiarity of a companion. I therefore, on pretence of consulting his welfare, insisted upon his accepting the proposal, which he at last determined to embrace with great reluctance, and in a few days took his leave of me, shedding a flood of tears, which I could not behold without emotion. I now began to look upon myself as a gentleman in reality; learned to dance of a Frenchman whom I had cured of a fashionable distemper; frequented plays during the holidays; became the oracle of an alehouse, where every dispute was referred to my decision; and at length contracted an acquaintance with a young lady, who found means to make

a conquest of my heart, and upon whom I prevailed, after much attendance and solicitation, to give me a promise of marriage. As this beautiful creature passed for a rich heiress, I blessed my good fortune, and was actually on the point of crowning all my wishes by matrimony; when one morning, I went to her lodgings, and her maid being abroad, took the privilege of a bridegroom to enter her chamber, where to my utter confusion I found her in bed with a man. Heaven gave me patience and presence of mind enough to withdraw immediately; and I thanked my stars a thousand times for the happy discovery, by which I resolved to profit so much, as to abandon all thoughts of marriage for the future.

C H A P. XXI.

SQUIRE GAWKY COMES TO LODGE WITH MY MASTER—IS INVOLVED IN A TROUBLESOME AFFAIR, OUT OF WHICH HE IS EXTRICATED BY ME—HE MARRIES MY MASTER'S DAUGHTER—THEY CONSPIRE AGAINST ME—I AM FOUND GUILTY OF THEFT—DISCHARGED—DESERVED BY MY FRIENDS—I HIRE A ROOM IN ST. GILES'S—WHERE, BY ACCIDENT, I FIND THE LADY TO WHOM I MADE MY ADDRESSES, IN A MISERABLE CONDITION—I RELIEVE HER.

WHILE I enjoyed myself at large in this temper of mind, Mr. Lavement let his first floor to my countryman and acquaintance, Squire Gawky, who by this time had got a lieutenancy in the army, and such a martial ferocity in his appearance, that I was afraid he would remember what had happened between us in Scotland, and atone for his breach of appointment then, by his punctuality now; but whether he had actually forgot me, or was willing to make me believe so, he betrayed not the least symptom of recognition at sight of me, and I remained quite cured of my apprehension; though I had occasion not long after to be convinced, that howsoever his externals might be altered, he was at bottom the same individual Gawky whom I have already described. For, coming home late one night from the

house of a patient, I heard a noise in the street, and as I approached, perceived two gentlemen in custody of three watchmen. The prisoners, who were miserably disfigured with dirt, complained bitterly of the loss of their hats and wigs; and one of them, whom by his tongue I knew to be a Scotchman, lamented most piteously, offering a guinea for his liberty, which the watchman refused, alledging, that one of his companions was wounded grievously, and that he must stand to the consequence. My prejudice in favour of my native country was so strong, that I could not bear to see any body belonging to it in distress; and therefore, with one blow of my faithful cudgel, knocked down the watchman who had hold of the person for whom I was chiefly concerned. He was no sooner disengaged, than he betook himself to his heels, and left me to maintain the dispute as I should think proper: and indeed I came off but scurvily; for, before I could avail myself of my speed, I received a blow on the eye, from one of the other two, that had well nigh deprived me of the use of that organ; however, I made shift to get home, where I was informed of Captain Gawky's being robbed and abused by a company of footpads; and was ordered by my master to prepare an emollient glyster and paregorick draught, in order to allay and compose the ferment of his spirits, occasioned by the barbarous treatment he had undergone, while he took twelve ounces of blood from him immediately. When I enquired into the particulars of this adventure, and understood by the servant that he came in just before me, without hat and wig, I made no scruple of believing him to be the person I had released, and was confirmed in my belief upon hearing his voice, to which before that event I had been so long a stranger. My eye being considerably swelled and inflamed, I could not reflect upon my enterprize without cursing my own folly, and even resolving to declare the truth of the whole story, in order to be revenged on the cowardly wretch for whom I had suffered. Accordingly, next day, after he had told, in presence of my master, his wife and daughter, who came to visit him, a thousand lyes concerning the prowess he had shewn in making his escape, I ventured

ventured to explain the mystery, and calling in the evidence of my confuted eye, upbraided him with cowardice and ingratitude. Gawky was so astonished at this discourse, that he could not answer one word; and the rest of the company stared at one another; till at length my mistress reprimanded me for my insolent behaviour, and threatened to turn me away for my presumption. Upon which, Gawky having recollected himself, observed, as the young man might have mistaken another person for him, he could forgive his insinuations, more especially as he seemed to have suffered for his civility; but advised me to be more certain in my conjectures for the future, before I ventured to publish them to the prejudice of any man. Miss applauded the captain's generosity in pardoning one who had so villainously aspersed him; and I began to imagine her praise was not at all disinterested. But the apothecary, who perhaps had more penetration, or less partiality than his wife and daughter, differed from them in his sentiments of the matter, and expressed himself to me in the shop in this manner: 'Ah, mon pauvre Roderique! you ave more of de veracité dan of de prudence, bot mine wife and dater be diablement sage, and Monf. le capitaine un fanfaron, par dieu!' This eulogium on his wife and daughter, though spoken ironically by him, was nevertheless literally just; by espousing the cause of Gawky, the one obliged a valuable lodger, and the other acquired a husband at a juncture when one was absolutely necessary; for the young lady finding the effects of her correspondence with Odonnel becoming plainer and plainer every day, insinuated herself so artfully into the affection of this new lodger, that in less than a fortnight, on pretence of going to a play, they drove away together to the Fleet, where they were coupled; from thence removed to a bagnio, where the marriage was consummated; and in the morning came home, where they asked her father's and mother's blessing. The prudent parents, notwithstanding the precipitation with which the match was carried on, did not think fit to refuse their approbation: for the apothecary was not ill pleased to find his daughter married to a young man of a good

prospect, who had not mentioned to him one syllable on the article of her dowry; and his wife was rejoiced at being rid of a rival in her gallants, and a spy upon her pleasures. Nor was I without self-enjoyment at this event, when I reflected upon the revenge I had unwittingly taken upon my enemy, in making him a cuckold by anticipation. But I little dreamed what a storm of mischief was brewing against me, whilst I thus indulged myself. Whatever face Gawky put on the matter, my discovery of the adventure before related, and the reproaches I vented against him, had stung him to the soul, and cherished the seeds of enmity so strongly in his breast, that he, it seems, imparted his indignation to his wife, who being as desirous as himself to compass the ruin of one that had not only slighted her caresses, but was able on any occasion to discover particulars not at all advantageous to her character, readily joined in a conspiracy against me, which, had it taken effect as they expected, would infallibly have brought me to an ignominious death.

My master having several times missed large quantities of medicines of which I could give no account, at last lost all patience, and in plain terms taxed me with having embezzled them for my own use. As I could only oppose my single asseveration to his suspicion, he told me one day, 'By gar, your vord not be give me de satisfaction; me find necessaire to chercher for my medicine: pardonnez moi; il faut chercher.' Then raising his voice, to conceal the fright he was in, lest I should make any opposition, he went on: 'Oui, foutre, I charge you rendez le clef of your coffre—inoi—si, moi qui vous parle.' I was fired with so much resentment and disdain at this accusation, that I burst into tears, which he took for a sign of guilt; and pulling out my key, told him he might satisfy himself immediately, though he would not find it so easy to satisfy me for the injury my reputation had suffered from his unjust suspicion. He took the key, and mounted up to my chamber, attended by the whole family; saying 'He bien! nous verrons, nous verrons.' But what was my horror and amazement, when opening my chest he pulled out an handful of the w y things that were missing, and pro-

pronounced, 'Ah, ha! vous etes bien venus—Mardie, Monf. Roderique, 'you be fort innocent.' I had not power to utter one word in my own vindication, but stood motionless and silent, while every body present made their respective remarks on what appeared against me. The servants said they were sorry for my misfortune, and went away, repeating, 'Who 'would have thought it!' My mistress took occasion, from this detection, to rail against the practice of employing strangers in general; and Mrs. Gawky, after having observed that she never had a good opinion of my fidelity, proposed to have me carried before the justice and committed to Newgate immediately. Her husband was actually upon the stairs in his way for a constable, when Mr. Lavement, knowing the cost and trouble of a prosecution to which he must bind himself, and at the same time dreading lest some particulars of my confession might affect his practice, called out, 'Restez, mon fils! 'restez! it be yeritablement one grand 'crime which dis pauvre diable have 'committed; bot peutetre de good 'God give him de penitence, and me 'vill not have upon mine head de 'blood of one sinner.' The captain and his lady used all the christian arguments their zeal could suggest, to prevail on the apothecary to pursue me to destruction; and represented the injustice he did to the community, of which he was a member, in letting a villain escape, who would not fail of doing more mischief in the world, when he should reflect on his coming off so easily now: but their eloquence made no impression on my master, who turning to me, said, 'Go, miserable, go 'from mine house, quick, quick—'and make reparation for your mauvaise actions.' By this time my indignation had roused me from the stupefaction in which I had hitherto remained, and I began in this manner: 'Sir, appearances, I own, condemn 'me; but you are imposed upon as 'much as I am abused. I have 'fallen a sacrifice to the rancour of 'that scoundrel,' pointing to Gawky, 'who has found means to convey 'your goods hither, that the detection 'of them might blast my reputation, 'and accomplish my destruction. His 'hatred to me is owing to conscious-

ness of his having wronged me in 'my own country; for which injury 'he in a cowardly manner refused me 'the satisfaction of a gentleman; he 'knows, moreover, that I am no 'stranger to his dastardly behaviour in 'this town, which I have recounted 'before; and he is unwilling that 'such a testimony of his ingratitude 'and pusillanimity should live upon 'the earth; for this reason he is guilty 'of the most infernal malice, to bring 'about my ruin.—And I am afraid, 'Madam,' turning to Mrs. Gawky, 'you have too easily entered into 'the sentiments of your husband. I 'have often found you my enemy; and 'am well acquainted with the occasion 'of your being so, which I don't at 'present think proper to declare; but 'I would not advise you, for your 'own sake, to drive me to extremity.' This address enraged her so much, that with a face as red as scarlet, and the eyes of a fury, she strutted up to me, and putting her hands on her sides, spit in my face; saying, I was a scandalous villain, but she defied my malice; and that unless her papa would prosecute me like a thief as I was, she would not stay another night under his roof. At the same time, Gawky assuming a big look, told me, he scorned what lyes I could invent against him; but that if I pretended to asperse his wife, he would put me to death, by G—d. To this threat I answered, 'I wish to God I could meet with 'thee in a desert, that I might have 'an opportunity of punishing thee for 'thy perfidy towards me, and rid the 'world of such a rascal. What hinders me this moment,' said I, 'seizing an old bottle that stood by, 'from 'doing myself that justice?' I had no sooner armed myself in this manner, than Gawky and his father-in-law retired in such a hurry, that the one over-turned the other, and they rolled together down stairs; while my mistress swooned away with fear; and her daughter asked if I intended to murder her. I gave her to understand, that nothing was farther from my intention; that I would leave her to the stings of her own conscience; but was firmly resolved to slit her husband's nose, whenever fortune should offer a convenient opportunity. Then going down stairs, I met Lavement coming up



Painted as the Act Fourth, by Hamilton & Co. June 24th 1780.

BRITISH
4 AP 1914
MUSEUM

up trembling with the peltle in his hand, and Gawky behind armed with his sword pushing him forward. I demanded a parley; and having assured them of my pacific disposition, Gawky exclaimed, 'Ah, villain! you have killed my dear wife.' And the apothecary cried, 'Ah, coquin! vere is my child?'—'The lady,' said I, 'is above stairs, unhurt by me, and will a few months hence, I believe, reward your concern.' Here she called to them, and desired they would let the wretch go, and trouble themselves no farther about him. To which request her father consented, observing, nevertheless, that my conversation was *fort mysterieuse*. Finding it impossible to vindicate my innocence, I left the house immediately, and went to the schoolmaster, with an intention of clearing myself to him, and asking his advice with regard to my future conduct; but, to my inexpressible vexation, was told he was gone to the country, where he would stay two or three days. I returned with a design of consulting some acquaintance I had acquired in my master's neighbourhood; but my story had taken air, through the officiousness of the servants, and not one of my friends would vouchsafe me a hearing. Thus I found myself, by the iniquity of mankind, in a much more deplorable condition than ever: for though I had been formerly as poor, my reputation was without blemish, and my health unimpaired till now; but at present my good name was lost, my money gone, my friends were alienated, my body infected by a distemper contracted in the course of an amour; and my faithful Strap, who alone could yield me pity and assistance, absent I knew not where.

The first resolution I could take in this melancholy conjuncture, was to remove my clothes to the house of the person with whom I had formerly lodged; where I remained two days, in hopes of getting another place, by the interest of Mr. Concordance, to whom I made no doubt of being able to vindicate my character; but in this supposition I reckoned without my host, for Lavement took care to be beforehand with me, and when I attempted to explain the whole affair to the schoolmaster, I found him so prepossessed against me, that he would scarce hear

me to an end; but when I had finished my justification, shook his head, and beginning with his usual exclamation, 'O C—it!' said, 'That won't go down with me. I am very sorry I should have the misfortune of being concerned in the affair, but however shall be more cautious for the future. I will trust no man from henceforward; no, not my father who begat me, nor the brother who lay with me in my mother's womb. Should Daniel rise from the dead, I would think him an impostor, and were the genius of truth to appear, would question it's veracity.' I told him, that one day, it was possible he might be convinced of the injury I had suffered, and repent of his premature determination. To which remark he answered, the proof of my innocence would make his bowels vibrate with joy: 'But till that shall happen,' continued he, 'I must beg to have no manner of connection with you; my reputation is at stake. O my good God! I shall be looked upon as your accomplice and abettor: people will say, Jonathan Wild was but a type of me; boys will hoot at me as I pass along; and the cinder wenches belch forth reproaches wafted in a gale impregnated with gin. I shall be notorious; the very but of slander, and cloaca of infamy.' I was not in an humour to relish the climax of expressions upon which this gentleman valued himself in all his discourses; but without any ceremony took my leave, cursed with every sentiment of horror, which my situation could suggest. I considered, however, in the intervals of my despondence, that I must in some shape suit my expence to my calamitous circumstances; and with that view hired an apartment in a garret near St. Giles's, at the rate of nine-pence per week. In this place I resolved to perform my own cure, having first pawned three shirts to purchase medicines and support for the occasion.

One day when I sat in this solitary retreat, musing upon the unhappiness of my fate, I was alarmed by a groan that issued from a chamber contiguous to mine, into which I immediately ran, and found a woman stretched on a miserable truckle bed, without any visible signs of life. Having applied a smelling bottle to her nose, the blood began to

revivify

revisit her cheeks, and she opened her eyes; but, good Heaven! what were the emotions of my soul, when I discovered her to be the same individual lady, who had triumphed over my heart, and to whose fate I had almost been inseparably joined! Her deplorable situation filled my breast with compassion, and every tender idea reviving in my imagination, I flew into her embrace. She knew me immediately; and straining me gently in her arms, shed a torrent of tears, which I could not help increasing: at length, casting a languishing look at me, she pronounced with a feeble voice, 'Dear Mr. Random, I do not deserve this concern at your hands. I am a vile creature, who had a base design upon your person—suffer me to expiate that and all my other crimes by a miserable death; which will not fail to overtake me in a few hours.' I encouraged her as much as I could, told her I forgave all her intentions with regard to me; and that although my circumstances were extremely low, I would share my last farthing with her. In the mean time, begged to know the immediate cause of that fit from which she had just recovered, and said I would endeavour by my skill to prevent any more such attacks. She seemed very much affected with this expression, took my hand and pressed it to her lips, saying, 'You are too generous! I wish I could live to express my gratitude—but alas! I perish for want.' Then shutting her eyes, she relapsed into another swoon. Such extremity of distress must have waked the most obdurate heart to sympathy and compassion: what effect then must it have had on mine, that was naturally prone to every tender passion! I ran down stairs, and sent my landlady to a chymist's shop for some cinnamon water, while I returning to this unfortunate creature's chamber, used all the means in my power to bring her to herself; this aim with much difficulty I accomplished, and made her drink a glass of the cordial to recruit her spirits; then I prepared a little mulled red wine and a toast, which having taken, she found herself thoroughly revived, and informed me, that she had not tasted food for eight and forty hours before. As I was impatient to know the occasion and nature of her calamity, she gave

me to understand that she was a woman of the town by profession; that in the course of her adventures, she found herself dangerously infected with a distemper to which all of her class are particularly subject; that her malady gaining ground every day, she became loathsome to herself, and offensive to others; when she resolved to retire to some obscure corner, where she might be cured with as little noise and expence as possible; that she had accordingly chosen this place of retreat, and put herself into the hands of an advertising doctor, who having fleeced her of all the money she had, or could procure, left her three days ago in a worse condition than that in which he found her; that except the clothes on her back, she had pawned or sold every thing that belonged to her, to satisfy that rapacious quack, and quiet the clamour of her landlady, who still persisted in her threats to turn her out into the street. After having moralized upon these particulars, I proposed that she should lodge in the same room with me, an expedient that would save some money; and assured her I would undertake her cure as well as my own, during which she should partake of all the conveniences that I could afford to myself. She embraced my offer with unfeigned acknowledgment, and I began to put it in practice immediately. I found, in her, not only an agreeable companion, whose conversation greatly alleviated my chagrin; but also a careful nurse, who served me with the utmost fidelity and affection. One day, while I testified my surprize that a woman of her beauty, good sense, and education, (for she had a large portion of each) could be reduced to such an infamous and miserable way of life as that of a prostitute; she answered with a sigh, 'These very advantages were the cause of my undoing.' This remarkable reply inflamed my curiosity to such a degree, that I begged she would favour me with the particulars of her story, and she complied in these words.

CHAP. XXII.

THE HISTORY OF MISS WILLIAMS.

MY father was an eminent merchant in the city, who having in the course of trade, suffered very

very considerable losses, retired in his old age with his wife to a small estate in the country, which he had purchased with the remains of his fortune. At that time I, being but eight years of age, was left in town for the convenience of education, boarded with an aunt, who was a rigid presbyterian, and who confined me so closely to what she called the duties of religion, that in time I grew weary of her doctrines, and by degrees conceived an aversion for the good books she daily recommended to my perusal. As I increased in age, and appeared with a person not disagreeable, I contracted a good deal of acquaintance among my own sex, one of whom, after having lamented the restraint I was under from the narrowness of my aunt's sentiments, told me I must now throw off the prejudices of opinion imbibed under her influence and example, and learn to think for myself; for which purpose she advised me to read Shaftesbury, Tindal, Hobbes, and all the books that are remarkable for their deviation from the old way of thinking, and by comparing one with another, I should soon be able to form a system of my own. I followed her advice: and whether it was owing to my prepossession against what I had formerly read, or the clearness of argument in these my new instructors, I know not, but I studied them with pleasure, and in a short time became a professed free-thinker. Proud of my new improvement, I argued in all companies, and that with such success, that I soon acquired the reputation of a philosopher, and few people durst undertake me in a dispute. I grew vain upon my good fortune, and at length pretended to make my aunt a proselyte to my opinion; but she no sooner perceived my drift, than taking the alarm, she wrote to my father an account of my heresy, and conjured him, as he tendered the good of my soul, to remove me immediately from the dangerous place where I had contracted such sinful principles. Accordingly my father ordered me into the country, where I arrived in the fifteenth year of my age: and by his command gave him a detail of all the articles of my faith, which he did not find so unreasonable as they had been

represented. Finding myself suddenly deprived of the company and pleasures of the town, I grew melancholy, and it was some time before I could relish my situation. But solitude became every day more and more familiar to me, and I consoled myself in my retreat with the enjoyment of a good library, at such times as were not employed in the management of the family, (for my mother had been dead three years) in visiting, or some other party of rural diversion. Having more imagination than judgment, I addicted myself too much to poetry and romance; and in short, was looked upon as a very extraordinary person by every body in the country where I resided. I had one evening strayed with a book in my hand into a wood that bordered on the high road, at a little distance from my father's house; when a certain drunken squire riding by, perceived me, and crying, "Z—ds I what a charming creature!" alighted in a moment, caught me in his arms, and treated me so rudely, that I shrieked as loud as I could, and in the mean time opposed his violence with all the strength that rage and resentment could inspire. During this struggle, another horseman came up, who seeing a lady so unworthily used, dismounted, and flew to my assistance. My ravisher, mad with disappointment, or provoked with the reproaches of the other gentleman, quitted me, and running to his horse, drew a pistol from the saddle, and fired at my protector, who happily receiving no damage, went up, and with the but-end of his whip laid him prostrate on the ground before he could use the other, which his antagonist immediately seized, and clapping to the squire's breast, threatened to put him to death for his cowardice and treachery. In this dilemma, I interposed and begged his life, which was granted to my request, after he had asked pardon, and swore his intention was only to obtain a kiss; however, my defender thought proper to unload the other pistol, and throw away the flints, before he gave him his liberty. This courteous stranger conducted me home, where my father having learned the signal service he had done me, loaded him with cares,

'ses, and insisted on his lodging that
 'night at our house. If the obliga-
 'tion he had conferred upon me justly
 'inspired me with sentiments of grati-
 'tude, his appearance and conversa-
 'tion seemed to entitle him to some-
 'what more. He was about the age
 'of two and twenty, among the tallest
 'of the middle size; had chestnut co-
 'loured hair, which he wore tied up in
 'a ribband; a high polished forehead,
 'a nose inclining to the aquiline, lively
 'blue eyes, red pouting lips, teeth as
 'white as snow, and a certain openness
 'of countenance—but what need I
 'describe any more particulars of his
 'person! I hope you will do me the
 'justice to believe I do not flatter, when
 'I say he was the exact resemblance
 'of you; and if I had not been well
 'acquainted with his family and
 'pedigree, I should have made no
 'scruple of concluding that you was
 'his brother. He spoke little, and
 'seemed to have no reserve, for what
 'he said was ingenuous, sensible, and
 'uncommon. In short,' said she, burst-
 'ing into tears, 'he was formed for the
 'ruin of our sex. His behaviour was
 'modest and respectful, but his looks
 'were so significant, that I could easily
 'observe, he secretly blessed the occa-
 'sion that introduced him to my ac-
 'quaintance. We learned from his
 'discourse that he was the eldest son
 'of a wealthy gentleman in the neigh-
 'bourhood, to whose name we were
 'no strangers; that he had been to
 'visit an acquaintance in the country,
 'from whose house he was returning
 'home, when my shrieks brought him
 'to my rescue. All night long my
 'imagination formed a thousand ridi-
 'culous expectations: there was so
 'much of knight-errantry in this gen-
 'tleman's coming to the relief of a
 'damsel in distress, with whom he im-
 'mediately became enamoured, that
 'all I had read of love and chivalry
 'recurred to my fancy, and I looked
 'upon myself as a princess in some
 'region of romance, who being deli-
 'vered from the power of a brutal giant
 'or satyr by a generous Oroondates,
 'was bound in gratitude, as well as
 'led by inclination, to yield up my
 'affections to him without reserve. In
 'vain did I endeavour to chastise these
 'foolish conceits, by reflections more
 'reasonable and severe: the amusing

'images took full possession of my
 'mind, and my dreams represented my
 'hero fighting at my feet in the lan-
 'guage of a despairing lover. Next
 'morning after breakfast he took his
 'leave, when my father begged the
 'favour of farther acquaintance with
 'him; to which request he replied by
 'a compliment to him, and a look to
 'me so full of eloquence and tender-
 'ness, that my whole soul received the
 'soft impression. In a short time he
 'repeated his visit; and as a recital of
 'the particular steps he pursued to ruin
 'me would be too tedious and imper-
 'tinent, let it suffice to say, he made
 'it his business to insinuate himself
 'into my esteem, by convincing me
 'of his own good sense, and at the
 'same time flattering my understand-
 'ing: this task he performed in the
 'most artful manner, by seeming to
 'contradict me often through misap-
 'prehension, that I might have an op-
 'portunity of clearing myself the
 'more to my own honour. Having
 'thus secured my good opinion, he
 'began to give me some tokens of a
 'particular passion founded on a veneration for the qualities of my mind,
 'and as an accidental ornament, ad-
 'mired the beauties of my person;
 'till at length, being fully persuaded
 'of his conquest, he chose a proper
 'season for the theme, and disclosed
 'his love in terms so ardent and sin-
 'cere, that it was impossible for me
 'to disguise the sentiments of my heart,
 'and he received my approbation with
 'the most lively transport. After this
 'mutual declaration, we contrived to
 'meet more frequently, in private in-
 'terviews, where we enjoyed the con-
 'versation of one another, in all the
 'elevation of fancy and impatience of
 'hope, that reciprocal adoration can
 'inspire. He professed his honour-
 'able intentions, of which I made no
 'question, lamented the avaricious
 'disposition of his father, who had
 'destined him for the arms of ano-
 'ther, and vowed eternal fidelity with
 'such an appearance of candour and
 'devotion, that I became a dupe to
 'his deceit, and in an evil hour crown-
 'ed his eager desire with full posses-
 'sion. Cursed be the day on which
 'I gave away my innocence and peace
 'for a momentary gratification, which
 'has entailed upon me such misery and
 'horror!

horror! cursed be my beauty, that first attracted the attention of the seducer! cursed be my education, that by refining my sentiments, made my heart the more susceptible! cursed be my good sense, that fixed me to one object, and taught me the preference I enjoyed was but my due! Had I been ugly, nobody would have tempted me; had I been ignorant, the charms of my person would not have atoned for the coarseness of my conversation; had I been giddy, my vanity would have divided my inclinations, and my ideas would have been so diffused, that I should never have listened to the enchantments of one alone!

But to return to my unfortunate story: we gave a loose to guilty pleasure, which for some months banished every other concern. At last, by degrees, his visits became less frequent, and his behaviour less warm: I perceived his coldness, my heart took the alarm, my tears reproached him, and I insisted upon the performance of his promise to espouse me; that, whatever should happen, my reputation might be safe. He seemed to acquiesce in my proposal, and left me on pretence of finding a proper clergyman to unite us in the bands of wedlock. But, alas! the inconstant had no intention to return. I waited a whole week with the utmost impatience; sometimes doubting his honour, at other times inventing excuses for him, and condemning myself for harbouring the least suspicion of his faith. At length, I understood from a gentleman who dined at our house, that this perfidious wretch was on the point of setting out for London with his bride, to buy clothes for their approaching nuptials. This information distracted me! the more so, as I found myself some months gone with child, and reflected, that it would be impossible to conceal my disgrace, which would not only ruin the character I had acquired in the country, but also bring the grey hairs of an indulgent parent with sorrow to the grave. Rage took possession of my soul; I denounced a thousand imprecations, and formed as many schemes of revenge against the traitor who had undone me! Then my

resentment would subside to silent sorrow: I recalled the tranquility I had lost, I wept over my infatuation, and sometimes a ray of hope would intervene, and for a moment cheer my drooping heart; I would revolve all the favourable circumstances of his character, repeat the vows he made, ascribe his absence to the vigilance of a suspicious father who compelled him to a match his soul abhorred, and comfort myself with the expectation of seeing him before the thing should be brought to any terms of agreement. But how vain was my imagination! The villain left me without remorse, and in a few days the news of his marriage were spread all over the country. My horror was then inconceivable! and had not the desire of revenge diverted the resolution, I should infallibly have put an end to my miserable life. My father observed the symptoms of my despair; and though I have good reason to believe he guessed the cause, was at a great deal of pains to seem ignorant of my affliction, while he endeavoured with paternal fondness to alleviate my distress. I saw his concern, which increased my anguish, and raised my fury against the author of my calamity to an implacable degree. Having furnished myself with a little money, I made an elopement from this unhappy parent in the night-time, and about break of day, arrived at a small town, from whence a stage-coach set out for London, in which I embarked, and next day alighted in town; the spirit of revenge having supported me all the way against every other reflection. My first care was to hire a lodging, in which I kept myself very retired, having assumed a feigned name, that my character and situation might be the better concealed. It was not long before I found out the house of my ravisher, whither I immediately repaired in a transport of rage, determined to act some desperate deed for the satisfaction of my despair, though the hurry of my spirits would not permit me to concert or resolve upon a particular plan. When I demanded admission to Lothario, (so let me call him) I was desired to send up my name and business; but this I refused, telling the porter I had business

nefs for his master's private ear: upon which I was conducted into a parlour until he should be informed of my request. There I remained about a quarter of an hour, when a servant entered, and told me his master was engaged with company, and begged to be excused at that time. My temper could hold out no longer: I pulled a poignard from my bosom where I had concealed it, and rushing out, flew up stairs like a fury, exclaiming, "Where is this perfidious villain! could I once plunge this dagger into his false heart, I should then die satisfied." The noise I made alarmed not only the servants, but the company also, who hearing my threats, came forwards to the stair-case to see what was the matter. I was seized, disarmed, and withheld by two footmen; and in this situation felt the most exquisite torture in beholding my undoer approach with his young wife. I could not endure the sight, was deprived of my senses, and fell into a severe fit, during which I know not how I was treated; but when I recovered the use of reflection, found myself on a bed in a paultry apartment, where I was attended by an old woman, who asked a thousand impertinent questions relating to my condition; and informed me that my behaviour had thrown the whole family into confusion; that Lothario affirmed I was mad, and proposed to have me sent to Bedlam; but my lady persuaded herself there was more in my conduct than he cared should be known, and had taken to her bed on bare suspicion, having first ordered that I should be narrowly looked to. I heard all she said without making any other reply, than desiring she would do me the favour to call a chair; but this (she told me) could not be done without her master's consent: which, however, was easily procured, and I was conveyed to my lodgings in a state of mind that baffles all description. The agitation of my thoughts produced a fever, which brought on a miscarriage; and I believe it is well for my conscience that Heaven thus disposed of my burden; for let me own to you with penitence and horror, if I had brought a living child into the world, my

frenzy would have prompted me to sacrifice the little innocent to my resentment of the father's infidelity. After this event my rage abated, and my hate became more deliberate and calm: when one day, my landlady informed me that there was a gentleman below who desired to see me, he having something of consequence to impart, which he was sure would contribute to my peace of mind. I was exceedingly alarmed at this declaration, which I attempted to interpret a thousand ways; and before I came to any determination, he entered my room, with an apology for intruding upon me against my knowledge or consent. I surveyed him some time, and not being able to recollect his face, demanded with a faltering accent, what his business was with me. Upon which, he desired I would give him a particular audience, and he did not doubt of communicating something that would conduce to my satisfaction and repose. As I thought myself sufficiently guarded against any violence, I granted his request, and bid the woman withdraw. The stranger then advancing, gave me to understand that he was well acquainted with the particulars of my story, having been informed of them from Lothario's own mouth; that from the time he knew my misfortunes, he had entertained a detestation for the author of them; which had of late been increased and inflamed to a desire of revenge, by a piece of dishonourable conduct towards him; that hearing of my melancholy situation, he had come with an intention of offering his assistance and comfort, and was ready to espouse my quarrel, and forthwith take vengeance on my seducer, provided I would grant him one consideration, which he hoped I should see no reason to refuse. Had all the artifice of hell been employed in composing a persuasive, it could not have had a more instantaneous or favourable effect than this discourse had upon me. I was transported with a delirium of gloomy joy; I hugged my companion in my arms, and vowed that if he would make good his promise, my soul and body should be at his disposal. The contract was made; he devoted himself

to my revenge, undertook to murder Lothario that very night, and to bring me an account of his death before morning. Accordingly, about two of the clock, he was introduced to my chamber, and assured me my perfidious lover was no more; that although he was not entitled to such an honourable proceeding, he had fairly challenged him to the field, where he upbraided him with his treachery towards me, for whom (he told me) his sword was drawn, and after a few passes lay weltering in his blood. I was so savaged by my wrongs, that I delighted in the recital of this adventure, made him repeat the particulars, feasted my eyes with the blood that remained on his clothes and sword, and yielded up my body as a recompence for the service he had done me. My imagination was so engrossed with these ideas, that in my sleep I dreamed Lothario appeared before me, pale, mangled, and bloody, blamed my rashness, protested his innocence, and pleaded his own cause so pathetically, that I was convinced of his fidelity, and waked in a fit of horror and remorse. My bed-fellow endeavoured to sooth, console, and persuade me that I had but barely done justice to myself. I dropt asleep again, and the same apparition returned to my fancy. In short, I passed the night in great misery, and looked upon my avenger with such abhorrence, that in the morning, perceiving my aversion, he insinuated there was still a possibility of Lothario's recovery; it was true, he left him wounded on the ground, but not quite dead; and perhaps his hurts might not be mortal. At these words I started up, bade him fly for intelligence, and if he could not bring me tidings of Lothario's safety, at least consult his own, and never return, for I was resolved to surrender myself to justice, and declare all that I knew of the affair, that, if possible, I might expiate my own guilt, by incurring the rigours of a sincere repentance and ignominious death. He very coolly represented the unreasonableness of my prejudice against him, who had done nothing but what his love of me inspired, and honour justified; that now he had, at the risk of his life, been subservient to my revenge,

I was about to discard him, as an infamous agent occasionally necessary; and that even if he should be so lucky as to bring news of Lothario's safety, it was probable my former resentment might revive, and I would upbraid him with having failed in his undertaking. I assured him, that on the contrary, he should be dearer to me than ever, as I then should be convinced he acted more on the principles of a man of honour, than on those of a mercenary assassin, and scorned to take away the life of an adversary (how inveterate soever) which fortune had put in his power. "Well then, Madam," said he, "whatever may have happened, I shall find it no difficult matter to acquit myself in point of honour." And took his leave in order to enquire into the consequences of his duel. I was now more sensible than ever of the degrees of guilt and misery; all the affliction I had suffered hitherto was owing to my own credulity and weakness, and my conscience could not accuse me of venial crimes; but now that I looked upon myself as a murderer, it is impossible to express the terrors of my imagination, which was incessantly haunted by the image of the deceased, and my bosom stung with the most exquisite agonies, of which I saw no end. At length Horatio (for so I shall call my keeper) returned, and telling me I had nothing to fear, delivered into my hands a billet, containing these words.

"MADAM,

"AS I understand it is of consequence to your peace, I take this liberty to inform you, that the wounds received from Horatio are not mortal. This satisfaction my humanity could not deny, even to a person who has endeavoured to disturb the repose, as well as destroy the life of

"LOTHARIO."

"Being well acquainted with this hand, I had no reason to suspect an imposition in this letter, which I read over and over with a transport of joy, and caressed Horatio so much, that he appeared the happiest man alive. Thus was I won from despair by the menaces

menaces of a greater misfortune than that which depressed me. Grievs are like usurpers, the most powerful depose all the rest. But my raptures were not lasting; that very letter which in a manner re-established my tranquillity, in a little time banished my peace. His unjust reproaches, while they waked my resentment, recalled my former happiness, and filled my soul with rage and sorrow. Horatio perceiving the situation of my mind, endeavoured to divert my chagrin, by treating me with all the amusements and entertainments of the town. I was gratified with every indulgence I could desire; introduced into the company of other kept mistresses, by whom an uncommon deference was paid to me; and I began to lose all remembrance of my former condition, when an accident brought it back to my view, with all its interesting circumstances. Diverting myself one day with some newspapers, which I had not before perused, the following advertisement attracted my attention.

“WHEREAS a young gentlewoman disappeared from her father’s house, in the county of —, about the end of September, on account (as is supposed) of some uneasiness of mind, and has not been as yet heard of: whoever will give any information about her to Mr. — of Gray’s Inn, shall be handsomely rewarded; or if she will return to the arms of her disconsolate parent, she will be received with the utmost tenderness, whatever reason she may have to think otherwise, and may be the means of prolonging the life of a father, already weighed down almost to the grave with age and sorrow.”

This pathetic remonstrance had such an effect on me, that I was fully resolved to return like the prodigal son, and implore the forgiveness of him who gave me life: but, alas! upon inquiry, I found he had paid his debt to nature a month before, lamenting my absence to his last hour; having left his fortune to a stranger, as a mark of his resentment of my unkind and undutiful behaviour. Penetrated with remorse on this oc-

casion, I sunk into the most profound melancholy, and considered myself as the immediate cause of his death. I lost all relish for company; and, indeed, most of my acquaintance no sooner perceived my change of temper, than they abandoned me. Horatio, disgusted at my insensibility, or (which is more probable) cloyed with possession, became colder and colder every day, till at last he left me altogether, without making any apology for his conduct, or securing me against the miseries of want, as a man of honour ought to have done, considering the share he had in my ruin; for I afterwards learned that the quarrel between Lottario and him, was a story trumped up to rid the one of my importunities, and give the other the enjoyment of my person; which, it seems, he lusted after, upon seeing me at the house of my seducer. Reduced to this extremity, I cursed my own simplicity, uttered horrid imprecations against the treachery of Horatio; and as I became every day more and more familiarized to the loss of innocence, resolved to be revenged on the sex in general, by practising their own arts upon themselves. Nor was an opportunity long wanting; an old gentlewoman, under pretence of sympathizing, visited me, and after having consoled me on my misfortunes, and professed a disinterested friendship, began to display the art of her occupation, in encomiums on my beauty, and invectives against the wretch who had forsaken me; insinuating withal that it would be my own fault if I did not still make my fortune by the extraordinary qualifications with which nature had endowed me. I soon understood her drift, and gave her such encouragement to explain herself, that we came to an agreement immediately to divide the profits of my prostitution, accruing from such gallants as she should introduce to my acquaintance. The first stroke of my dissimulation was practised upon a certain j—ge, to whom I was recommended by this matron, as an innocent creature just arrived from the country. He was so transported with my appearance and feigned simplicity, that he paid a hundred guineas for the possession of

‘ of me for one night only, during
‘ which I behaved in such a manner,
‘ as to make him perfectly well-pleased
‘ with his purchase.’

CHAP. XXIII.

SHE IS INTERRUPTED BY A BAILIFF, WHO ARRESTS AND CARRIES HER TO THE MARSHALSEA—I ACCOMPANY HER—BRING WITNESSES TO PROVE SHE IS NOT THE PERSON NAMED IN THE WRIT—THE BAILIFF IS FAIN TO GIVE HER A PRESENT, AND DISCHARGE HER—WE SHIFT OUR LODGING—SHE RESUMES HER STORY AND ENDS IT—MY REFLECTIONS THEREUPON—SHE MAKES ME ACQUAINTED WITH THE PROGRESS OF A COMMON WOMAN OF THE TOWN—RESOLVES TO QUIT THAT WAY OF LIFE.

HER story was here interrupted by a rap at the door; which I no sooner opened, than three or four terrible fellows rushed in, one of whom accosted my fellow lodger thus: ‘ Madam, your servant; you must do me the favour to come along with me, I have got a writ against you.’ While the bailiff, for so he was, spoke thus, his followers surrounded the prisoner, and began to handle her very roughly. This treatment incensed me so much, that I snatched up the poker, and would certainly have used it in defence of the lady, without any regard to the strength and number of her adversaries, had she not begged me with a composure of countenance for which I could not account, to use no violence in her behalf, which could be of no service to her, but might be very detrimental to myself. Then turning to the leader of this formidable troop, she desired to see the writ, and having perused it, said with a faltering voice, ‘ I am not the person whose name is here mentioned; arrest me at your peril.’—‘ Ay, ay, Madam,’ replied the catchpole, ‘ we shall prove your identity. In the mean time, whether will you be pleased to be carried to my house, or to gaol?’—‘ If I must be confined,’ said she, ‘ I would rather be in your house than in a common

gaol.’—‘ Well, well,’ answered he, ‘ if you have got money in your pocket, you shall be entertained like a princess.’ But when she acquainted him with her poverty, he swore he never gave credit, and ordered one of his myrmidons to call a coach, to carry her to the Marshalsea at once. While they waited for the convenience, she took me aside, and bade me be under no concern on her account, for she knew how to extricate herself from this difficulty very soon, and perhaps gain something by the occasion. Although her discourse was a mystery to me, I was very well pleased with her assurance, and when the coach came to the door, offered to accompany her to prison, to which proposal, after much intreaty, she consented. When we arrived at the gate of the Marshalsea, our conductor alighted, and having demanded entrance, presented the writ to the turnkey, who no sooner perceived the name of Elizabeth Carey, than he cried, ‘ Ah, hah! my old acquaintance Bet! I’m glad to see thee with all my heart.’ So saying, he opened the coach door, and helped her to dismount; but when he observed her face, he started back, saying, ‘ Z—ds! who have we got here!’ The bailiff, alarmed at this interrogation, cried with some emotion, ‘ Who the devil should it be, but the prisoner Elizabeth Carey?’ The turnkey replied, ‘ That Elizabeth Cary! I’ll be damned if that’s Elizabeth Cary, more than my grandmother. D—n my blood, I know Bet Cary as well as if I had made her.’ Here the lady thought fit to interpose, and tell the catchpole, if he had taken her word for it at first, he might have saved himself and her a great deal of trouble. ‘ It may be so,’ answered he, ‘ but by G—d, I’ll have farther evidence that you are not the person, before you and I part.’—‘ Yes, yes,’ said she, ‘ you shall have farther evidence to your cost.’ Then we adjourned into the lodge, and called for a bottle of wine, where my companion wrote a direction to two of her acquaintance, and begged the favour of me to go to their lodgings, and request them to come to her immediately: I found them together at a house in Bridges Street, Drury Lane; and as they were luckily unengaged, they set out with me in a hackney-coach, without

without hesitation, after I had related the circumstances of the affair, which flattered them with hopes of seeing a bailiff trounced; for there is an antipathy as natural between the whores and bailiffs, as that subsisting between mice and cats. Accordingly, when they entered the lodge, they embraced the prisoner very affectionately by the name of Nancy Williams, and asked how long she had been nabbed, and for what. On hearing the particulars of her adventure repeated, they offered to swear before a justice of peace, that she was not the person mentioned in the writ; whom, it seems, they all knew: but the bailiff, who was by this time convinced of his mistake, told them he would not put them to that trouble. 'Ladies,' said he, 'there's no harm done; you shall give me leave to treat you with another bottle, and then we'll part friends.' This proposal was not at all relished by the sisterhood; and Miss Williams told him, sure he did not imagine her such a fool, as to be satisfied with a paultry glass of sour wine. Here the turnkey interrupted her, by affirming with an oath, that the wine was as good as ever was tipped over tongue. 'Well,' continued she, 'that may be; but was it the best of champagne, it is no recompence for the damage I have suffered both in character and health, by being wrongfully dragged to gaol. At this rate no innocent person is safe, since an officer of justice, out of malice, private pique, or mistake, may injure and oppress the subject with impunity; but, thank Heaven, I live under the protection of laws that will not suffer such insults to pass unpunished, and I know very well how to procure redress.' Mr. Vulture, for that was the bailiff's name, finding he had to deal with one who would not be imposed upon, began to look very sullen and perplexed, and leaning his forehead on his hand, entered into a deliberation with himself, which lasted a few minutes, and then broke out in a volley of dreadful curses against the old b—ch our landlady, as he called her, for having misinformed him. After much wrangling and swearing, the matter was referred to the decision of the turnkey, who calling for the other bottle, mulcted the bailiff in all

the liquor that had been drank, coach-hire, and a couple of guineas for the use of the plaintiff. The money was immediately deposited; Miss Williams gratified the two evidences with one half, and putting the other in her pocket, drove home with me, leaving the catchpole grumbling over his loss, yet pleased in the main, for having so cheaply got clear of a business that might have cost him ten times the sum, and his place to boot. This guinea was a very seasonable relief to us, who were reduced to great necessity, six of my shirts, and almost all my clothes, except those on my back, having been either pawned or sold for our maintenance before this happened. As we resented the behaviour of our landlady, our first care was to provide ourselves with another lodging, whither we removed the next day, with an intention to keep ourselves as retired as possible, until our cure should be completed. When we were fixed in our new habitation, I intreated her to finish the story of her life, which she pursued in this manner.

'The success of our experiment on the j—ge, encouraged us to practise the same deceit on others, and my virginity was five times sold to good purpose: but this harvest lasted not long; my character taking air, and my directress deserting me for some new game. Then I took lodgings near Charing Cross, at two guineas per week, and began to entertain company in a public manner: but my income being too small to defray my expence, I was obliged to retrench, and enter into articles with the porters of certain taverns, who undertook to find employment enough for me, provided I would share my profits with them. Accordingly, I was almost every night engaged with company, among whom I was exposed to every mortification, danger, and abuse, that flow from drunkenness, brutality, and disease. How miserable is the condition of a courtesan, whose business it is to soothe, suffer, and obey the dictates of rage, insolence, and lust! As my spirit was not sufficiently humbled to the will, nor my temper calculated for the conversation of my gallants, it was impossible for me to overcome an aversion I felt for my profession, which

'mani-

manifested itself in a settled gloom on my countenance, and disgusted those sons of mirth and riot so much, that I was frequently used in a shocking manner, and kicked down stairs with disgrace. The messengers seeing me disagreeable to their benefactors and employers, seldom troubled me with a call, and I began to find myself almost totally neglected. To contribute towards my support, I was fain to sell my watch, rings, trinkets, with the best part of my clothes; and I was one evening musing by myself, on the misery before me, when I received a message from a bagnio, whither I repaired in a chair, and was introduced to a gentleman dressed like an officer, with whom I supped in a sumptuous manner, and after drinking a hearty glass of champaign, went to bed. In the morning, when I awoke, I found my gallant had got up, and drawing aside the curtain, could not perceive him in the room. This circumstance gave me some uneasiness, but as he might have retired on some necessary occasion, I waited a full hour for his return; and then in the greatest perplexity rose up, and rung the bell. When the waiter came to the door, he found it locked, and desired admittance, which I granted, after observing with great surprise, that the key remained on the inside, as when we went to bed. I no sooner enquired for the captain, than the fellow staring with a distracted look, cried, "How, Madam! is he not a-bed?" And when he was satisfied as to that particular, ran into a closet adjoining to the chamber, the window of which he found open. Through this the adventurer had got upon a wall, from whence he dropped down into a court, and escaped; leaving me to be answerable, not only for the reckoning, but also for a large silver tankard and posset bowl, which he had carried off with him. It is impossible to describe the consternation I was under, when I saw myself detained as a thief's accomplice; for I was looked upon in that light, and carried before a justice, who, mistaking my confusion for a sign of guilt, committed me, after a short examination, to Bridewell; having advised me, as the only means to save my life, to turn evidence, and impeach my confederate. I now

concluded the vengeance of Heaven had overtaken me, and that I must soon finish my career by an ignominious death. This reflection sunk so deep into my soul, that I was for some days deprived of my reason, and actually believed myself in hell, tormented by fiends: indeed, there needs not a very extravagant imagination to form that idea; for of all the scenes on earth, that of Bridewell approaches nearest the notion I had always entertained of the infernal regions. Here I saw nothing but rage, anguish, and impiety; and heard nothing but groans, curses, and blasphemy. In the midst of this hellish crew, I was subjected to the tyranny of a barbarian, who imposed upon me tasks that I could not possibly perform, and then punished my incapacity with the utmost rigour and inhumanity. I was often whipt into a swoon, and lashed out of it; during which miserable intervals, I was robbed by my fellow-prisoners of every thing about me, even to my cap, shoes, and stockings: I was not only destitute of necessaries, but even of food, so that my wretchedness was extreme. Not one of my acquaintance to whom I imparted my situation, would grant me the least succour or regard, on pretence of my being committed for theft; and my landlord refused to part with some of my own clothes, which I sent for, because I was indebted to him for a week's lodging. Overwhelmed with calamity, I grew desperate, and resolved to put an end to my grievances and life together; for this purpose I got up in the middle of the night, when I thought every body round me asleep, and fixing one end of my handkerchief to a large hook in the ceiling, that supported the scales on which the hemp is weighed, I stood upon a chair, and making a noose on the other end, put my neck into it, with an intention to hang myself; but before I could adjust the knot, I was surprized and prevented by two women who had been awake all the while, and suspected my design. In the morning my attempt was published among the prisoners, and punished with thirty stripes, the pain of which co-operating with my disappointment and disgrace, bereft me of my senses, and threw me into an extasy of madness,

M

during

during which I tore the flesh from my bones with my teeth, and dashed my head against the pavement; so that they were obliged to set a watch over me, to restrain me from doing farther mischief to myself and others. This fit of phrenzy continued three days, at the end of which I grew calm and fullen; but as the desire of making away with myself still remained, I came to a determination of starving myself to death, and with that view refused all sustenance. Whether it was owing to the want of opposition, or to the weakness of nature, I know not; but on the second day of my fast, I found my resolution considerably impaired, and the calls of hunger almost insupportable. At this critical conjuncture, a lady was brought into the prison with whom I had contracted an acquaintance while I lived with Horatio; she was then on the same footing as I was, but afterwards quarelling with her gallant, and not finding another to her mind, altered her scheme of life, and set up a coffee-house among the hundreds of Drury, where she entertained gentlemen with claret, arrack, and the choice of half a dozen of damsels who lived in her house. This serviceable matron having neglected to gratify a certain j—ce for the connivance she enjoyed, was indicted at the quarter sessions, in consequence of which her bevy was dispersed, and herself committed to Bridewell. She had not been long there, before she learned my disaster; and coming up to me, after a compliment of condolence, enquired into the particulars of my fate. While we were engaged in discourse together, the master came, and told me that the fellow on whose account I had suffered was taken; that he had confessed the theft, and cleared me of any concern in the affair; for which reason he, the master, had orders to discharge me, and that I was from that moment free. This piece of news soon banished all thoughts of death, and had such an instantaneous effect on my countenance, that Mrs. Coupler (the lady then present) hoping to find her account in me, very generously offered to furnish me with what necessaries I wanted, and take me into her own house, as soon as she could compro-

mise matters with the j—ces. The conditions of her offer were, that I should pay three guineas weekly for my board, and a reasonable consideration besides for the use of such clothes and ornaments as she should supply me with, to be deducted from the first profits of my embraces. These were hard terms; but not to be rejected by one who was turned out helpless and naked into the wide world, without a friend to pity or assist her. I therefore embraced her proposal, and she being bailed in a few hours, took me home with her in a coach. As I was by this time conscious of having formerly disgusted my admirers by my reserved and haughty behaviour, I now endeavoured to conquer that disposition; and the sudden change of my fortune giving me a flow of spirits, I appeared in the most winning and gay manner I could assume. Having the advantage of a good voice and education, I exerted my talents to the uttermost, and soon became the favourite with all company. This success alarmed the pride and jealousy of Mrs. Coupler, who could not bear the thoughts of being eclipsed: she therefore made a merit of her envy, and whispered among the customers that I was unsound. There needed no more to ruin my reputation, and blast my prosperity; every body shunned me with marks of aversion and disdain, and in a very short time I was as solitary as ever. Want of gallants was attended with want of money to satisfy my malicious landlady; who having purposely given me credit to the amount of eleven pounds, took out a writ against me, and I was arrested in her own house. Though the room was crowded with people when the bailiff entered, not one of them had compassion enough to mollify my prosecutrix, far less to pay the debt; they even laughed at my tears, and one of them bade me be of good cheer, for I should not want admirers in Newgate. At that instant a sea lieutenant came in, and seeing my plight, began to enquire into the circumstances of my misfortune, when this wit advised him to keep clear of me, for I was a fire-ship. “A fire-ship!” replied the sailor; “more like a poor galley in distress, that has been
“boarded

boarded by such a fire-ship as you ; if so be as that is the case, she stands in more need of assistance.—Hark'e, my girl, how far have you over-run the constable?" I told him that the debt amounted to eleven pounds, besides the expence of the writ. "An' that be all," said he, "you shan't go to the bilboes this bout." And taking out his purse, paid the money, discharged the bailiff, and telling me I had got into the wrong port, advised me to seek out a more convenient harbour, where I could be safely hove down; for which purpose he made me a present of five guineas more. I was so touched with this singular piece of generosity, that for some time I had not power to thank him. However, as soon as I had recollected myself, I begged the favour of him to go with me to the next tavern, where I explained the nature of my disaster, and convinced him of the fallshood of what was reported to my prejudice so effectually, that he from that moment attached himself to me, and we lived in great harmony together, until he was obliged to go to sea, where he perished in a storm.

Having lost my benefactor, and almost consumed the remains of his bounty, I saw myself in danger of relapsing into my former necessity, and began to be very uneasy at the prospect of bailiffs and gaols; when one of the sisterhood, a little stale, advised me to take lodgings in a part of the town where I was unknown, and pass for an heiress, by which artifice I might entrap somebody to be my husband, who would possibly be able to allow me an handsome maintenance, or at worst screen me from the dread and danger of a prison, by becoming liable for whatever debts I should contract. I approved of this scheme, towards the execution of which my companion clubbed her wardrobe, and undertook to live with me in quality of my maid, with the proviso that she should be reimbursed, and handsomely considered out of the profits of my success. She was immediately detached to look out for a convenient place, and that very day hired a genteel apartment in Park Street, whither I moved in a coach loaded with her baggage and my own. I made my first appearance in a blue

riding-habit trimmed with silver; and my maid acted her part so artfully, that in a day or two my fame was spread all over the neighbourhood, and I was said to be a rich heiress just arrived from the country. This report brought a swarm of gay young fellows about me; but I soon found them out to be all indigent adventurers like myself, who crowded to me like crows to a carrion, with a view of preying upon my fortune. I maintained, however, the appearance of wealth as long as possible, in hopes of gaining some admirer more for my purpose; and at length attracted the regard of one who would have satisfied my wishes; and managed matters so well, that a day was actually fixed for our nuptials. In the interim, he begged leave to introduce an intimate friend to me; which request, as I could not refuse, I had the extreme mortification and surprize, to see next night, in that friend, my old keeper Horatio; who no sooner beheld me, than he changed colour, but had presence of mind to advance and salute me, bidding me, with a low voice, be under no apprehension, for he would not expose me. In spite of this assurance, I could not recover myself so far as to entertain them, but withdrew to my chamber on pretence of a severe head-ache, to the no small concern of my adorer, who took his leave in the tenderest manner, and went off with his friend.

Having imparted my situation to my companion, she found it high time for us to decamp, and that without any noise, because we were not only indebted to our landlady, but also to several tradesmen in the neighbourhood. Our retreat, therefore, was concerted and executed in this manner: having packed up all our clothes and movables in small parcels, she (on pretence of fetching cordials for me) carried them at several times, to the house of an acquaintance, where she likewise procured a lodging; to which we retired in the middle of the night, when every other body in the house was asleep. I was now obliged to aim at lower game, and accordingly spread my nets among trades people; but found them all too phlegmatic or cautious for my art and attractions;

' tions; till at last I became acquaint-
 ' ed with you, on whom I practised all
 ' my dexterity; not that I believed
 ' you had any fortune, or expectation
 ' of one, but that I might transfer the
 ' burden of such debts as I had in-
 ' curred or should contract, from my-
 ' self to another; and at the same time
 ' avenge myself of your sex, by ren-
 ' dering miserable one who bore such
 ' resemblance to the wretch who ruin-
 ' ed me: but Heaven preserved you
 ' from my snares, by the discovery you
 ' made, which was owing to the neg-
 ' ligence of my maid in leaving the
 ' chamber-door unlocked, when she
 ' went to buy sugar for breakfast.
 ' The person in bed with me, was a
 ' gentleman whom I had allured the
 ' night before, as he walked home-
 ' ward pretty much elevated with li-
 ' quor; for by this time my condition
 ' was so low, that I was forced to turn
 ' out in the twilight to the streets, in
 ' hopes of prey. When I found my-
 ' self detected and forsaken by you, I
 ' was fain to move my lodgings, and
 ' dwell two pair of stairs higher than
 ' before. My companion being dis-
 ' appointed in her expectations, left me,
 ' to trade upon her own bottom, and I
 ' had no other resource, than to ven-
 ' ture forth, like the owls, in the dark,
 ' to pick up a precarious and uncom-
 ' fortable subsistence. I have often
 ' sauntered between Ludgate Hill and
 ' Charing Cross, a whole winter-night,
 ' exposed not only to the inclemency
 ' of the weather, but likewise to the
 ' rage of hunger and thirst, without
 ' being so happy as to meet with one
 ' cully; then creep up to my garret,
 ' in a deplorable, draggled condition,
 ' sneak to bed, and try to bury my ap-
 ' petite and sorrows in sleep. When
 ' I lighted on some rake or tradesman
 ' reeling home drunk, I frequently
 ' suffered the most brutal treatment, in
 ' spite of which I was obliged to affect
 ' gaiety and good-humour, though my
 ' soul was stung with resentment and
 ' disdain, and my heart loaded with
 ' grief and affliction. In the course
 ' of these nocturnal adventures, I was
 ' infected with the disease, that in a
 ' short time rendered me the object of
 ' my own abhorrence, and drove me
 ' to the retreat where your benevo-
 ' lence rescued me from the jaws of
 ' death.'

So much candour and good-sense ap-
 peared in this lady's narration, that I
 made no scruple of believing every syl-
 lable of what she had said; and ex-
 pressed my astonishment at the variety
 of miseries she had undergone, in so
 little time; for all her misfortunes had
 happened within the compass of two
 years. I compared her situation with
 my own, and found it a thousand times
 more wretched: I had endured hard-
 ships, 'tis true; my whole life had
 been a series of such; and when I
 looked forward, the prospect was not
 much bettered; but then they were be-
 come habitual to me, and consequently
 I could bear them with less difficulty.
 If one scheme of life should not suc-
 ceed, I could have recourse to another,
 and so to a third, veering about to a
 thousand different shifts, according to
 the emergencies of my fate, without
 forfeiting the dignity of my character,
 beyond a power of retrieving it, or
 subjecting myself wholly to the caprice
 and barbarity of the world. On the
 other hand, she had known and relish-
 ed the sweets of prosperity, she had
 been brought up under the wings of
 an indulgent parent, in all the delica-
 cies to which her sex and rank entitled
 her; and without any extravagance of
 hope, entertained herself with the view
 of uninterrupted happiness through the
 whole scene of life. How fatal, then,
 how tormenting, how intolerable, must
 her reverse of fortune be! a reverse,
 that not only robs her of these external
 comforts, and plunges her into all the
 miseries of want, but also murders her
 peace of mind, and entails upon her
 the curse of eternal infamy! Of all
 professions, I pronounced that of a cour-
 tezan the most deplorable; and her, of
 all courtezans, the most unhappy. She
 allowed my observation to be just in
 the main, but at the same time affirm-
 ed, that notwithstanding the disgraces
 which had fallen to her share, she had
 not been so unlucky in the condition
 of a prostitute as many others of the
 same community. 'I have often seen,'
 said she, 'while I strolled about the
 ' streets at midnight, a number of
 ' naked wretches, reduced to rags and
 ' filth, huddled together like swine, in
 ' the corner of a dark alley; some of
 ' whom, but eighteen months before,
 ' I had known the favourites of the
 ' town, rolling in affluence, and glit-
 ' tering

tering in all the pomp of equipage and dress.' And indeed the gradation is easily conceived: the most fashionable woman of the town is as liable to contagion, as one in a much humbler sphere; she infects her admirers, her situation is public; she is avoided, neglected, unable to support her usual appearance, which however she strives to maintain as long as possible; her credit fails, she is obliged to retrench, and become a night-walker; her malady gains ground, she tampers with her constitution, and ruins it; her complexion fades, she grows nauseous to every body, finds herself reduced to a starving condition, is tempted to pick pockets, is detected, committed to Newgate, where she remains in a miserable condition, till she is discharged because the plaintiff will not appear to prosecute her. Nobody will afford her lodging, the symptoms of her distemper are grown outrageous, she sues to be admitted into an hospital, where she is cured at the expence of her nose; she is turned out naked into the streets, depends upon the addresses of the lowest class, is fain to allay the rage of hunger and cold with gin, degenerates into a brutal insensibility, rots and dies upon a dunghill. 'Miserable wretch that I am, perhaps the same horrors are decreed for me! —No,' cried she, after some pause, 'I shall never live to such an extremity of distress! my own hand shall open a way for my deliverance, before I arrive at that forlorn period!' Her condition filled me with sympathy and compassion; I revered her qualifications, looked upon her as unfortunate, not criminal, and attended her with such care and success, that in less than two months, her health, as well as my own, was perfectly re-established. As we often conferred upon our mutual affairs, and interchanged advice, a thousand different projects were formed, which upon farther canvassing appeared impracticable. We would have gladly gone to service; but who would take us in without a recommendation? At length an expedient occurred to her, of which she intended to lay hold; and this was, to procure with the first money she could earn, the homely garb of a country wench, go to some village at a good distance from town, and come up in a waggon, as a fresh girl for

service; by which means she might be provided for in a manner much more suitable to her inclination, than her present way of life.

C H A P. XXIV.

I AM REDUCED TO GREAT MISERY—ASSAULTED ON TOWER-HILL BY A PRESS-GANG, WHO PUT ME ON BOARD A TENDER—MY USAGE THERE—MY ARRIVAL ON BOARD OF THE THUNDER MAN OF WAR, WHERE I AM PUT IN IRONS, AND AFTERWARDS RELEASED BY THE GOOD OFFICES OF MR. THOMSON, WHO RECOMMENDS ME AS ASSISTANT TO THE SURGEON—HE RELATES HIS OWN STORY, AND MAKES ME ACQUAINTED WITH THE CHARACTERS OF THE CAPTAIN, SURGEON, AND FIRST MATE.

I Applauded the resolution of Miss Williams; who, a few days after, was hired in quality of bar-keeper, by one of the ladies who had witnessed in her behalf at the Marshalsea, and who since that time had got credit with a wine-merchant, whose favourite she was, to set up a convenient house of her own. Thither my fellow-lodger repaired, after having taken leave of me with a torrent of tears, and a thousand protestations of eternal gratitude; assuring me, she would remain in this situation no longer than she should pick up money sufficient to put her other design in execution.

As for my own part, I saw no resource but the army and navy, between which I hesitated so long, that I found myself reduced to a starving condition. My spirit began to accommodate itself to my beggarly fate, and I became so mean as to go down towards Wapping, with an intention to inquire for an old school-fellow, who (I understood) had got the command of a small coasting vessel, then in the river, and implore his assistance. But my destiny prevented this abject piece of behaviour; for as I crossed Tower Wharf, a squat tawny fellow, with a hanger by his side, and a cudgel in his hand, came up to me, calling, 'Yo, ho! brother, you must come along with me.' As I did not like his appearance, instead of

of answering his salutation, I quickened my pace, in hope of ridding myself of his company; upon which he whistled aloud, and immediately another sailor appeared before me, who laid hold of me by the collar, and began to drag me along. Not being of a humour to relish such treatment, I disengaged myself of the assailant, and with one blow of my cudgel laid him motionless on the ground; and perceiving myself surrounded in a trice, by ten or a dozen more, exerted myself with such dexterity and success, that some of my opponents were fain to attack me with drawn cutlasses; and after an obstinate engagement, in which I received a large wound on my head, and another on my left cheek, I was disarmed, taken prisoner, and carried on board a pressing tender; where, after being pinioned like a malefactor, I was thrust down into the hold, among a parcel of miserable wretches, the sight of whom well nigh distracted me. As the commanding officer had not humanity enough to order my wounds to be dressed, and I could not use my own hands, I desired one of my fellow captives who was unfettered, to take a handkerchief out of my pocket, and tie it round my head to stop the bleeding. He pulled out my handkerchief, tis true, but instead of applying it to the use for which I designed it, went to the grating of the hatchway, and, with astonishing composure, sold it before my face to a bum-boat woman*, then on board, for a quart of gin, with which he treated my companions, regardless of my circumstances and entreaties.

I complained bitterly of this robbery, to the midshipman on deck, telling him at the same time, that unless my hurts were dressed, I should bleed to death. But compassion was a weakness of which no man could justly accuse this person; who, squirting a mouthful of dissolved tobacco upon me through the gratings, told me, I was a mutinous dog, and that I might die and be damned. Finding there was no other remedy, I appealed to patience, and laid up this usage in my memory, to be recalled at a fitter season. In the meantime, loss of blood, vexation, and

want of food, contributed, with the noisome stench of the place, to throw me into a swoon; out of which I was recovered by a tweak of the nose, administered by the tar who stood sentinel over us, who at the same time regaled me with a draught of flip, and comforted me with the hopes of being put on board the Thunder next day, where I should be freed of my handcuffs, and cured of my wounds by the doctor. I no sooner heard him name the Thunder, than I asked, if he had belonged to that ship long; and he giving me to understand he had belonged to her five years, I enquired if he knew Lieutenant Bowling. 'Know Lieutenant Bowling,' said he; 'odds my life! and that I do; and a good seaman he is, as ever stept upon forecastle, and a brave fellow as ever crackt bisket; none of your guinea pigs, nor your fresh water, wishy washy, fair weather fowls. Many a taught gale of wind has honest Tom Bowling and I weathered together. Here's his health with all my heart, wherever he is, a-loft or a-low, in heaven or in hell, all's one for that—he needs not be ashamed to show himself.' I was so much affected with this eulogium that I could not refrain from telling him that I was Lieutenant Bowling's kinsman; in consequence of which connection, he expressed an inclination to serve me, and when he was relieved, brought some cold boiled beef in a platter, and biscuit, on which we supped plentifully, and afterwards drank another can of flip together. While we were thus engaged, he recounted a great many exploits of my uncle, who, I found, was very much beloved by the ship's company, and pitied for the misfortune that happened to him in Hispaniola, which I was very glad to be informed was not so great as I imagined; for Captain Oakhum had recovered of his wounds, and actually at that time commanded the ship. Having, by accident, in my pocket my uncle's letter, written from Port Louis, I gave it my benefactor, whose name was Jack Rattlin, for his perusal; but honest Jack told me frankly he could not read, and desired to know the contents; which I immediately commu-

* A bum-boat woman, is one who sells bread, cheese, greens, liquor, and fresh provisions, to the sailors, in a small boat that lies alongside the ship.

nicated: when he heard that part of it, in which he says he had writ to his landlord in Deal, he cried, 'Body o' me, that was old Ben Block! he was dead before the letter came to hand. Ey, ey, had Ben been alive, Lieutenant Bowling would have had no occasion to sculk so long. Honest Ben was the first man that taught him to hand, reef, and steer. Well, well, we must all die, that's certain; we must all come to port, sooner or later, at sea or on shore; we must be fast moored one day; death's like the best bower anchor, as the saying is, it will bring us all up.' I could not but signify my approbation of the justness of Jack's reflections; and enquired into the occasion of the quarrel between Captain Oakhum and my uncle; which he explained in this manner. 'Captain Oakhum, to be sure, is a good man enough; besides, he's my commander; but what's that to me! I do my duty, and value no man's anger of a rope's end. Now the report goes, as how he's a lord's or baron knight's brother, whereby, d'ye see me, he carries a strait arm, and keeps aloof from his officers, thof, may hap, they may be as good men in the main as he. Now we lying at anchor in Tuberoon bay, Lieutenant Bowling had the middle watch, and as he always kept a good look-out, he made, d'ye see, three lights in the offing, whereby he ran down to the great cabin for orders, and found the captain asleep; whereupon he waked him, which put him in a main high passion, and he swore woundily at the lieutenant, and called him lousy Scotch son of a whore, (for I being then centinel in the steerage, heard all) and swab, and lubber, whereby the lieutenant returned the salute, and they jawed together fore and aft a good spell, till at last the captain turned out, and laying hold of a rattan, came athwart Mr. Bowling's quarter; whereby he told the captain, that if he was not his commander, he would heave him over-board, and demanded satisfaction ashore; whereby in the morning watch, the captain went ashore in the pinnace, and afterwards the lieutenant carried the cutter ashore; and so they, leaving the boats crews on their oars, went away to-

gether; and so, d'ye see, in less than a quarter of an hour we heard firing, whereby we made for the place, and found the captain lying wounded on the beach, and so brought him on board to the doctor, who cured him in less than six weeks. But the lieutenant clapt on all the sail he could bear, and had got far enough a-head before we knew any thing of the matter; so that we could never after get sight of him, for which we were not sorry, because the captain was mainly wroth, and would certainly have done him a mischief; for he afterwards caused him to be run on the ship's books, whereby he lost all his pay, and if he should be taken, would be tried as a deserter.'

This account of the captain's behaviour gave me no advantageous idea of his character, and I could not help lamenting my own fate, that had subjected me to such a commander. However, making a virtue of necessity, I put a good face on the matter, and next day was with the other pressed men put on board of the Thunder lying at the Nore. When we came along side, the mate who guarded us thither, ordered my handcuffs to be taken off, that I might get on board the easier; this circumstance being perceived by some of the company who stood upon the gang-boards to see us enter, one of them called to Jack Rattlin, who was busied in doing this friendly office for me, 'Hey, Jack, what Newgate galley have you boarded in the river as you came along? Have we not thieves enow among us already?' Another, observing my wounds, which remained exposed to the air, told me my seams were uncaulked, and that I must be new payed. A third, seeing my hair clotted together with blood, as it were into distinct cords, took notice that my bows were manned with the red ropes instead of my side. A fourth asked me if I could not keep my yards square without iron braces. And, in short, a thousand witticisms of the same nature were passed upon me, before I could get up the ship's side. After we had been all entered upon the ship's books, I enquired of one of my ship-mates where the surgeon was, that I might have my wounds dressed, and had actually got as far as the middle deck,

(for

(for our ship carried eighty guns) in my way to the cock-pit, when I was met by the same midshipman who had used me so barbarously in the tender: he seeing me free from my chains, asked, with an insolent air, who had released me. To this question I foolishly answered, with a countenance that too plainly declared the state of my thoughts, 'Whoever did it, I am persuaded, did not consult you in the affair.' I had no sooner uttered these words, than he cried, 'Damn you, you saucy-son of a bitch, I'll teach you to talk so to your officer.' So saying, he bestowed on me several severe stripes with a supple-jack he had in his hand; and going to the commanding officer, made such a report of me, that I was immediately put in irons by the master at arms, and a centinel placed over me. Honest Rattlin, as soon as he heard of my condition, came to me, and administered all the consolation he could, and then went to the surgeon in my behalf, who sent one of his mates to dress my wounds. This mate was no other than my old friend Thomson, with whom I became acquainted at the Navy Office, as before-mentioned. If I knew him at first sight, it was not easy for him to recognize me, disfigured with blood and dirt, and altered by the misery I had undergone. Unknown as I was to him, he surveyed me with looks of compassion, and handled my sores with great tenderness. When he had applied what he thought proper, and was about to leave me, I asked him if my misfortunes had disguised me so much, that he could not recollect my face. Upon this address, he observed me with great earnestness for some time, and at length protested he could not recollect one feature of my countenance. To keep him no longer in suspense, I told him my name; which when he heard, he embraced me with affection, and professed his sorrow in seeing me in such a disagreeable situation. I made him acquainted with my story, and when he heard how inhumanly I had been used in the tender, he left me abruptly, assuring me I should see him again soon. I had scarce time to wonder at his sudden departure, when the master at arms came to the place of my confinement, and bade me follow him to the quarter-deck, where I was examined by the first lieutenant, who commanded the

ship in the absence of the captain, touching the treatment I had received in the tender from my friend the midshipman, who was present to confront me. I recounted the particulars of his behaviour to me, not only in the tender, but since my being on board the ship, part of which being proved by the evidence of Jack Rattlin and others, who had no great devotion for my oppressor, I was discharged from confinement to make way for him, who was delivered to the master at arms to take his turn in the bilboes. And this was not the only satisfaction I enjoyed; for I was, at the request of the surgeon, exempted from all other duty, than that of assisting his mates in making and administering medicines to the sick. This good office I owed to the friendship of Mr. Thomson, who had represented me in such a favourable light to the surgeon, that he demanded me of the lieutenant to supply the place of his third mate, who was lately dead. When I had obtained this favour, my friend Thomson carried me down to the cock-pit, which is the place allotted for the habitation of the surgeon's mates: and when he had shewn me their birth, as he called it, I was filled with astonishment and horror. We descended by divers ladders to a space as dark as a dungeon, which I understood was immersed several feet under water, being immediately above the hold. I had no sooner approached this dismal gulph, than my nose was saluted with an intolerable stench of putrified cheese and rancid butter, that issued from an apartment at the foot of the ladder, resembling a chandler's shop; where, by the faint glimmering of a candle, I could perceive a man with a pale meagre countenance, sitting behind a kind of desk, having spectacles on his nose, and a pen in his hand. This, I learned of Mr. Thomson, was the ship's steward, who sat there to distribute provision to the several messes, and to mark what each received. He therefore presented my name to him, and desired I might be entered in his mess; then taking a light in his hand, conducted me to the place of his residence, which was a square of about six feet, surrounded with the medicine chest, that of the first mate, his own, and a board by way of table fastened to the after-powder-room; it was also inclosed with canvas nailed round to the

the beams of the ship, to screen us from the cold, as well as from the view of the midshipmen and quarter-masters, who lodged within the cable tiers on each side of us. In this gloomy mansion, he entertained me with some cold salt pork, which he brought from a sort of locker, fixed above the table; and calling for the boy of the mess, sent for a can of beer, of which he made excellent flip to crown the banquet. By this time I began to recover my spirits, which had been exceedingly depressed with the appearance of every thing about me, and could no longer refrain from asking the particulars of Mr. Thomson's fortune, since I had seen him in London. He told me, that being disappointed in his expectations of borrowing money to gratify the rapacious *f—t—ry* at the Navy Office, he found himself utterly unable to subsist any longer in town, and had actually offered his service in quality of mate, to the surgeon of a merchant's ship bound to Guinea on the slaving trade; when one morning, a young fellow, of whom he had some acquaintance, came to his lodgings, and informed him, that he had seen a warrant made out in his name at the Navy Office, for surgeon's second mate of a third rate. This unexpected piece of good news he could scarcely believe to be true; more especially, as he had been found qualified at Surgeon's Hall for third mate only; but that he might not be wanting to himself, he went thither to be assured, and actually found it so. Whereupon, demanding his warrant, it was delivered to him, and the oaths administered immediately. That very afternoon, he went to Gravesend in the tilt-boat, from whence he took a place in the tide-coach for Rochester; next morning got on board the *Thunder*, for which he was appointed, then lying in the harbour at Chatham; and the same day was mustered by the clerk of the cheque. And well it was for him, that such expedition was used; for in less than twelve hours after his arrival, another William Thomson came on board, affirming that he was the person for whom the warrant was expedited, and that the other was an impostor. My friend was grievously alarmed at this accident; the more so, as his namesake had very much the ad-

vantage over him, both in assurance and dress. However, to acquit himself of the suspicion of imposture, he produced several letters written from Scotland to him in that name, and recollecting that his indentures were in a box on board, he brought them up, and convinced all present that he had not assumed a name which did not belong to him. His competitor, enraged that they should hesitate in doing him justice, (for, to be sure, the warrant had been designed for him) behaved with so much indecent heat, that the commanding officer, (who was the same gentleman I had seen) and the surgeon, who were offended at his presumption, and making a point of it with their friends in town, in less than a week got the first confirmed in his station. 'I have been on board,' said he, 'ever since, and as this way of life is become familiar to me, have no cause to complain of my situation. The surgeon is a good-natured indolent man; the first mate, who is now on shore on duty, is indeed a little proud and choleric, as all Welchmen are, but in the main, a friendly honest fellow. The lieutenants I have no concern with; and as for the captain, he is too much of a gentleman to know a surgeon's mate even by sight.'

CHAP. XXV.

THE BEHAVIOUR OF MR. MORGAN—HIS PRIDE, DISPLEASURE, AND GENEROSITY—THE OECONOMY OF OUR MESS DESCRIBED—THOMSON'S FARTHER FRIENDSHIP—THE NATURE OF MY DUTY EXPLAINED—THE SITUATION OF THE SICK.

WHILE he was thus discoursing to me, we heard a voice on the cockpit ladder, pronounce with great vehemence, in a strange dialect, 'The devil and his dam blow me from the top of Mounchdenny, if I go to him before there is something in my pelly; let his nose be as yellow as saffron, or as plue as a pelt, look you, or green as a leek, 'tis all one.' To this declaration somebody answered, 'So it seems my poor mess-mate must part his cable for want of a li-

(for our ship carried eighty guns) in my way to the cock-pit, when I was met by the same midshipman who had used me so barbarously in the tender: he seeing me free from my chains, asked, with an insolent air, who had released me. To this question I foolishly answered, with a countenance that too plainly declared the state of my thoughts, 'Whoever did it, I am persuaded, did not consult you in the affair.' I had no sooner uttered these words, than he cried, 'Damn you, you saucy-son of a bitch, I'll teach you to talk so to your officer.' So saying, he bestowed on me several severe stripes with a supple-jack he had in his hand; and going to the commanding officer, made such a report of me, that I was immediately put in irons by the master at arms, and a centinel placed over me. Honest Rattlin, as soon as he heard of my condition, came to me, and administered all the consolation he could, and then went to the surgeon in my behalf, who sent one of his mates to dress my wounds. This mate was no other than my old friend Thomson, with whom I became acquainted at the Navy Office, as before-mentioned. If I knew him at first sight, it was not easy for him to recognize me, disfigured with blood and dirt, and altered by the misery I had undergone. Unknown as I was to him, he surveyed me with looks of compassion, and handled my sores with great tenderness. When he had applied what he thought proper, and was about to leave me, I asked him if my misfortunes had disguised me so much, that he could not recollect my face. Upon this address, he observed me with great earnestness for some time, and at length protested he could not recollect one feature of my countenance. To keep him no longer in suspense, I told him my name; which when he heard, he embraced me with affection, and professed his sorrow in seeing me in such a disagreeable situation. I made him acquainted with my story, and when he heard how inhumanly I had been used in the tender, he left me abruptly, assuring me I should see him again soon. I had scarce time to wonder at his sudden departure, when the master at arms came to the place of my confinement, and bade me follow him to the quarter-deck, where I was examined by the first lieutenant, who commanded the

ship in the absence of the captain, touching the treatment I had received in the tender from my friend the midshipman, who was present to confront me. I recounted the particulars of his behaviour to me, not only in the tender, but since my being on board the ship, part of which being proved by the evidence of Jack Rattlin and others, who had no great devotion for my oppressor, I was discharged from confinement to make way for him, who was delivered to the master at arms to take his turn in the bilboes. And this was not the only satisfaction I enjoyed; for I was, at the request of the surgeon, exempted from all other duty, than that of assisting his mates in making and administering medicines to the sick. This good office I owed to the friendship of Mr. Thomson, who had represented me in such a favourable light to the surgeon, that he demanded me of the lieutenant to supply the place of his third mate, who was lately dead. When I had obtained this favour, my friend Thomson carried me down to the cock-pit, which is the place allotted for the habitation of the surgeon's mates: and when he had shewn me their birth, as he called it, I was filled with astonishment and horror. We descended by divers ladders to a space as dark as a dungeon, which I understood was immersed several feet under water, being immediately above the hold. I had no sooner approached this dismal gulph, than my nose was saluted with an intolerable stench of putrified cheese and rancid butter, that issued from an apartment at the foot of the ladder, resembling a chandler's shop; where, by the faint glimmering of a candle, I could perceive a man with a pale meagre countenance, sitting behind a kind of desk, having spectacles on his nose, and a pen in his hand. This, I learned of Mr. Thomson, was the ship's steward, who sat there to distribute provision to the several messes, and to mark what each received. He therefore presented my name to him, and desired I might be entered in his mess; then taking a light in his hand, conducted me to the place of his residence, which was a square of about six feet, surrounded with the medicine chest, that of the first mate, his own, and a board by way of table fastened to the after-powder-room; it was also inclosed with canvas nailed round to the

the beams of the ship, to screen us from the cold, as well as from the view of the midshipmen and quarter-masters, who lodged within the cable tiers on each side of us. In this gloomy mansion, he entertained me with some cold salt pork, which he brought from a sort of locker, fixed above the table; and calling for the boy of the mess, sent for a can of beer, of which he made excellent flip to crown the banquet. By this time I began to recover my spirits, which had been exceedingly depressed with the appearance of every thing about me, and could no longer refrain from asking the particulars of Mr. Thomson's fortune, since I had seen him in London. He told me, that being disappointed in his expectations of borrowing money to gratify the rapacious *f-t-ry* at the Navy Office, he found himself utterly unable to subsist any longer in town, and had actually offered his service in quality of mate, to the surgeon of a merchant's ship bound to Guinea on the slaving trade; when one morning, a young fellow, of whom he had some acquaintance, came to his lodgings, and informed him, that he had seen a warrant made out in his name at the Navy Office, for surgeon's second mate of a third rate. This unexpected piece of good news he could scarcely believe to be true; more especially, as he had been found qualified at Surgeon's Hall for third mate only; but that he might not be wanting to himself, he went thither to be assured, and actually found it so. Whereupon, demanding his warrant, it was delivered to him, and the oaths administered immediately. That very afternoon, he went to Gravesend in the tilt-boat, from whence he took a place in the tide-coach for Rochester; next morning got on board the Thunder, for which he was appointed, then lying in the harbour at Chatham; and the same day was mustered by the clerk of the cheque. And well it was for him, that such expedition was used; for in less than twelve hours after his arrival, another William Thomson came on board, affirming that he was the person for whom the warrant was expedited, and that the other was an impostor. My friend was grievously alarmed at this accident; the more so, as his namesake had very much the ad-

vantage over him, both in assurance and dress. However, to acquit himself of the suspicion of imposture, he produced several letters written from Scotland to him in that name, and recollecting that his indentures were in a box on board, he brought them up, and convinced all present that he had not assumed a name which did not belong to him. His competitor, enraged that they should hesitate in doing him justice, (for, to be sure, the warrant had been designed for him) behaved with so much indecent heat, that the commanding officer, (who was the same gentleman I had seen) and the surgeon, who were offended at his presumption, and making a point of it with their friends in town, in less than a week got the first confirmed in his station. 'I have been on board,' said he, 'ever since, and as this way of life is become familiar to me, have no cause to complain of my situation.' The surgeon is a good-natured indolent man; the first mate, who is now on shore on duty, is indeed a little proud and choleric, as all Welchmen are, but in the main, a friendly honest fellow. The lieutenants I have no concern with; and as for the captain, he is too much of a gentleman to know a surgeon's mate even by sight.

CHAP. XXV.

THE BEHAVIOUR OF MR. MORGAN—HIS PRIDE, DISPLEASURE, AND GENEROSITY—THE OECONOMY OF OUR MESS DESCRIBED—THOMSON'S FARTHER FRIENDSHIP—THE NATURE OF MY DUTY EXPLAINED—THE SITUATION OF THE SICK.

WHILE he was thus discoursing to me, we heard a voice on the cockpit ladder, pronounce with great vehemence, in a strange dialect, 'The devil and his dam blow me from the top of Mounchdenny, if I go to him before there is something in my pelly; let his nose be as yellow as saffron, or as plue as a pell, look you, or green as a leek, 'tis all one.' To this declaration somebody answered, 'So it seems my poor mess-mate must part his cable for want of a lit-

the assistance. His fore-top-sail is loose already; and besides, the doctor ordered you to over-haul him; but I see you don't mind what your master says.—Here he was interrupted with, 'Splunter and oons! you lousy tog, who do you call my master? get you gone to the doctor, and tell him my birth, and education, and my abilities; and moreover, my behaviour is as good as his, or any shentleman's (no disparagement to him) in the whole world. Got pless my soul! does he think, or conceive, or imagine, that I am a horse, or an ass, or a goat, to trudge backwards and forwards, and upwards and downwards, and by sea and by land, at his will and pleasures? Go your ways, you rascal, and tell Doctor Atkins, that I desire and request, that he will give a look upon the tying man, and order something for him if he be dead or alive, and I will see him take it by and by, when my craving stomach is satisfied, look you.' At this the other went away, saying, that if they would serve him so when he was dying, by G—d he would be foul of them in the other world. Here Mr. Thomson let me know that the person we heard was Mr. Morgan the first mate, who was just come on board from the hospital, whither he had attended some of the sick in the morning. At the same time I saw him come into the birth. He was a short thick man, with a face garnished with pimples, a snub nose turned up at the end, an excessive wide mouth, and little fiery eyes, surrounded with skin puckered up in innumerable wrinkles. My friend immediately made him acquainted with my case; when he regarded me with a very lofty look, but without speaking, set down a bundle he had in his hand, and approached the cupboard, which when he had opened, he exclaimed in a great passion, 'Cot is my life! all the pork is gone, as I am a christian!' Thomson then gave him to understand, that as I had been brought on board half famished, he could do no less than entertain me with what was in the locker; and the rather, as he had bid the steward enter me in the mess. Whether this disappointment made Mr. Morgan more peevish than usual, or he really thought himself too little regarded by his fellow

mate, I know not, but after some pause he went on in this manner. 'Mr. Thomson, perhaps you do not use me with all the good-manners, and complaisance, and respect, look you, that becomes you, because you have not vouchsafed to advise with me in this affair. I have, in my time, look you, been a man of some weight and substance, and consideration, and have kept house and home, and paid scot and lot, and the king's taxes; ay, and maintained a family to boot. And moreover, also, I am your senior, and your elder, and your petter, Mr. Thomson.'—'My elder I'll allow you to be, but not my better,' cried Thomson, with some heat. 'Cot is my saviour, and witness too,' said Morgan with great vehemence, 'that I am more elder, and therefore more petter by many years than you.' Fearing this dispute might be attended with some bad consequence, I interposed, and told Mr. Morgan, I was very sorry for having been the occasion of any difference between him and the second mate; and that rather than cause the least breach in their good understanding, I would eat my allowance by myself, or seek admission to some other company. But Thomson, with more spirit than discretion, as I thought, insisted upon my remaining where he had appointed me: and observed, that no man possessed of generosity and compassion, would have any objection to it, considering my birth and talents, and the misfortunes I had of late so unjustly undergone. This was touching Mr. Morgan on the right key; who protested with great earnestness, that he had no objection to my being received in the mess; but only complained, that the ceremony of asking his consent was not observed. 'As for a shentleman in distress,' said he, shaking me by the hand, 'I lose him as I lose my own powers: for, Cot help me! I have had vexations enough upon my own pack.' And as I afterwards learned, in so saying, he spoke no more than what was true; for he had been once settled in a very good situation in Glamorganshire, and was ruined by being security for an acquaintance. All differences being composed, he untied his bundle, which consisted of three bunches of onions, and a great lump of Cheshire-cheese wrapt up in a hand-

handkerchief; and taking some biscuit from the cupboard, fell to with a keen appetite, inviting us to a share of the repast. When he had fed heartily on his homely fare, he filled a large cup made of a cocoa-nut shell, with brandy, and drinking it off, told us, brandy was the pest menstruum for onion and cheese. His hunger being appeased, he began to be in better humour; and being inquisitive about my birth, no sooner understood that I was descended of a good family, than he discovered a particular good will to me on that account, deducing his own pedigree in a direct line from the famous Caractacus king of the Britons, who was first the prisoner, and afterwards the friend of Claudius Cæsar. Perceiving how much I was reduced in point of linen, he made me a present of two good ruffled shirts, which with two more of check, which I received from Mr. Thomson, enabled me to appear with decency. Meanwhile the sailor, whom Mr. Morgan had sent to the doctor, brought a prescription for his mess-mate, which when the Welchman had read, he got up to prepare it, and asked if the man was dead or alive. 'Dead!' replied Jack, 'if he was dead, he would have no occasion for doctor's stuff. No, thank God, death han't as yet boarded him, but they have been yard-arm and yard-arm these three glasses.'—'Are his eyes open?' continued the mate. 'His starboard eye,' said the sailor, 'is open, but fast jamm'd in his head; and the haulyards of his under-jaw have given way.'—'Passion of my heart!' cried Morgan, 'the man is as pad as one would desire to be! did you feel his pulses?' To this the other replied with 'Anan!' Upon which this Cambro Briton, with great earnestness and humanity, ordered the tar to run to his mess-mate, and keep him alive till he should come with the medicine: 'And then,' said he, 'you shall peradventure behold what you shall see.' The poor fellow with great simplicity ran to the place where the sick man lay, but in less than a minute returned with a woeful countenance, and told us his comrade had struck. Morgan hearing this, exclaimed, 'Mercy upon my salvation! why did you not stop him till I came?'—'Stop him,' said the other, 'I hailed

him several times, but he was too far on his way, and the enemy had got possession of his close quarters; so that he did not mind me.'—'Well, well,' said he, 'we all owe Heaven a teath. Go your ways, you ragamuffin, and take an example and a warning, look you, and repent of your misdeeds.' So saying, he pushed the seaman out of the birth.

While he entertained us with reflections suitable to this event, we heard the boatswain pipe to dinner; and immediately the boy belonging to our mess, ran to the locker, from whence he carried off a large wooden platter, and in a few minutes returned with it full of boiled pease, crying, 'Scaldings,' all the way as he came. The cloth, consisting of a piece of an old sail, was instantly laid, covered with three plates, which by the colour I could with difficulty discern to be metal, and as many spoons of the same composition, two of which were curtailed in the handles, and the other abridged in the lip. Mr. Morgan himself enriched this mess with a lump of salt butter, scooped from an old gallipot, and a handful of onions thorn, with some pounded pepper. I was not very much tempted with the appearance of this dish, of which, nevertheless, my mess-mates eat heartily, advising me to follow their example, as it was banyan-day, and we could have no meat till next noon. But I had already laid in sufficient for the occasion; and therefore desired to be excused, expressing a curiosity to know the meaning of banyan-day. They told me, that on Mondays, Wednesdays, and Fridays, the ship's company had no allowance of meat, and that these meagre days were called banyan-days, the reason of which they did not know; but I have since learned, they take their denomination from a sect of devotees in some parts of the East-Indies, who never taste flesh.

After dinner, Thomson led me round the ship, shewed me the different parts, described their uses, and, as far as he could, made me acquainted with the particulars of the discipline and economy practised on board. He then demanded of the boatswain, an hammock for me, which was slung in a very neat manner by my friend Jack Rattlin; and as I had no bed-clothes, pro-

cured credit for me with the purser for a mattras and two blankets. At seven o'clock in the evening Morgan visited the sick, and having ordered what was proper for each, I assisted Thomson in making up his prescriptions: but when I followed him with the medicines into the sick birth or hospital, and observed the situation of the patients, I was much less surprized that people should die on board, than that any sick person should recover. Here I saw about fifty miserable distempered wretches, suspended in rows, so huddled one upon another, that not more than fourteen inches space was allotted for each with his bed and bedding; and deprived of the light of the day, as well as of fresh air; breathing nothing but a noisome atmosphere of the morbid steams exhaling from their own excrements and diseased bodies, devoured with vermin hatched in the filth that surrounded them, and destitute of every convenience necessary for people in that helpless condition.

C H A P. XXVI.

A DISAGREEABLE ACCIDENT HAPPENS TO ME IN THE DISCHARGE OF MY OFFICE—MORGAN'S NOSE IS OFFENDED—A DIALOGUE BETWEEN HIM AND THE SHIP'S STEWARD—UPON EXAMINATION I FIND MORE CAUSES OF COMPLAINT THAN ONE—MY HAIR IS CUT OFF—MORGAN'S COOKERY—THE MANNER OF SLEEPING ON BOARD—I AM WAKED IN THE NIGHT BY A DREADFUL NOISE.

I Could not comprehend how it was possible for the attendants to come near those who hung on the inside towards the sides of the ship, in order to assist them, as they seemed barricaded by those who lay on the outside, and entirely out of the reach of all visitation. Much less could I conceive how my friend Thomson would be able to administer clysters, that were ordered for some in that situation; when I saw him thrust his wig in his pocket, and strip himself to his waistcoat in a moment, then creep on all four, under the hammocks of the sick, and forcing up his bare pate between two, keep them asunder with one shoulder, until he had

done his duty. Eager to learn the service, I desired he would give me leave to perform the next operation of that kind; and he consenting, I undressed myself after his example, and crawling along, the ship happened to roll; this motion alarming me, I laid hold of the first thing that came within my grasp, with such violence, that I overturned it, and soon found by the smell that issued upon me, I had not unlocked a box of the most delicious perfume; it was well for me that my nose was none of the most delicate, else I know not how I might have been affected by this vapour, which diffused itself all over the ship, to the utter discomfort of every body who tarried on the same deck; neither was the consequence of this disgrace confined to my sense of smelling only; for I felt my misfortune more ways than one. That I might not however appear altogether disconcerted in this my first essay, I got up; and pushing my head with great force between two hammocks, towards the middle, where the greatest resistance was, I made an opening indeed, but not understanding the knack of dexterously turning my shoulder to maintain my advantage, had the mortification to find myself stuck up as it were in a pillory, and the weight of three or four people bearing on each side of my neck, so that I was in danger of strangulation. While I remained in this defenceless posture, one of the sick men, rendered peevish by his distemper, was so enraged at the smell I had occasioned, and the rude shock he had received from me in my elevation, that with many bitter reproaches he seized me by the nose, which he tweaked so unmercifully that I roared with anguish. Thomson perceiving my condition, ordered one of the waiters to my assistance, who with much difficulty disengaged me from this situation, and hindered me from taking vengeance on the sick man, whose indisposition would not have screened him from the effects of my indignation.

After having made an end of our ministry for that time, we descended to the cockpit, my friend comforting me for what had happened with a homely proverb, which I do not chuse to repeat. When we had descended half-way down the ladder, Mr. Morgan,

before

before he saw us, having intelligence by his nose of the approach of something extraordinary, cried, 'Cot have mercy upon my senses! I believe the enemy has poarded us in a stink-pot!' Then directing his discourse to the steward, from whom he imagined the odour proceeded, he reprimanded him severely for the freedoms he took among gentlemen of birth, and threatened to smoak him like a padger with sulphur, if he ever should presume to offend his neighbours with such smells for the future. The steward, conscious of his own innocence, replied with some warmth, 'I know of no smells but those of your own making.' This repartee introduced a smart dialogue, in which the Welchman undertook to prove, that though the stench he complained of did not flow from the steward's own body, he was nevertheless the author of it, by serving out damaged provisions to the ship's company; and in particular, putrified cheese, from the use of which only, he affirmed, such unfavourable steams could arise. Then he launched out into the praise of good cheese, of which he gave the analysis; he explained the different kinds of that commodity, with the methods practised to make and preserve it; and concluded with observing, that in yielding good cheese, the county of Glamorgan might vie with Cheshire itself, and was much superior to it in the produce of goats and putter. I gathered from this conversation, that if I entered in my present pickle, I should be no welcome guest, and therefore desired Mr. Thomson to go before, and represent my calamity; at which the first mate expressing some concern, went upon deck immediately, taking his way through the cable tire, and by the main hatchway, to avoid encountering me; desiring me to clean myself as soon as possible, for he intended to regale himself with a dish of salmagundy and a pipe. Accordingly I set about this disagreeable business, and soon found I had more causes of complaint than I at first imagined; for I perceived some guests had honoured me with their company, whose visit I did not at all think seasonable; neither did they seem inclined to leave me in a hurry, for they were in possession of my chief quarters, where they fed without reserve at the expence of my

blood. But considering it would be much easier to extirpate this ferocious colony in the infancy of their settlement, than after they should be multiplied and naturalized to the soil, I took the advice of my friend; who, to prevent such misfortunes, went always close shaved, and made the boy of our mess cut off my hair, which had been growing since I left the service of Lavement; and the second mate lent me an old bob wig to supply the loss of that covering. This affair being ended, and every thing adjusted in the best manner my circumstances would permit, the descendant of Caractacus returned, and ordering the boy to bring a piece of salt beef from the brine, cut off a slice and mixed it with an equal quantity of onions, which seasoning with a moderate proportion of pepper and salt, he brought it into a consistence with oil and vinegar. Then tasting the dish, assured us it was the best salmagundy that ever he made, and recommended it to our palate with such heartiness, that I could not help doing honour to his preparation. But I had no sooner swallowed a mouthful, than I thought my entrails were scorched, and endeavoured, with a deluge of small-beer, to allay the heat it occasioned. Supper being over, Mr. Morgan having smoaked a couple of pipes, and supplied the moisture he had expended with as many cans of flip, of which we all partook, a certain yawning began to admonish me, that it was high time to repair by sleep the injury I had suffered from want of rest the preceding night; which being perceived by my companions, whose time of repose was now arrived, they proposed we should turn in, or in other words, go to bed. Our hammocks, which hung parallel to one another, on the outside of the birth, were immediately unlashed, and I beheld my mess-mates spring with great agility into their respective nests, where they seemed to lie concealed, very much at their ease. But it was some time before I could prevail upon myself to trust my carcass at such a distance from the ground, in a narrow bag, out of which I imagined, I should be apt, on the least motion in my sleep, to tumble down at the hazard of breaking my bones. I suffered myself, however, to be persuaded, and taking a leap to get in, threw

threw myself quite over, with such violence, that had I not luckily got hold of Thomson's hammock, I should have pitched upon my head on the other side, and in all likelihood fractured my skull. After some fruitless efforts, I succeeded at last; but the apprehension of the jeopardy in which I believed myself, withstood all the attacks of sleep, till towards the morning-watch, when, in spite of my fears, I was over-powered with slumber: though I did not long enjoy this comfortable situation; being roused with a noise so loud and shrill, that I thought the drums of my ears were burst by it; this was followed by a dreadful summons pronounced by a hoarse voice, which I could not understand. While I was debating with myself whether or not I should wake my companion, and enquire into the occasion of this disturbance, I was informed by one of the quarter-masters, who passed by me with a lanthorn in his hand, that the noise which alarmed me, was occasioned by the boatswain's mates who called up the larboard watch, and that I must lay my account with such interruption every morning at the same hour. Being now more assured of my safety, I addressed myself again to rest, and slept till eight o'clock, when rising, and breakfasting with my comrades, on biscuit and brandy, the sick were visited and assisted as before; after which visitation my good friend Thomson explained and performed another piece of duty, to which I was a stranger. At a certain hour in the morning, the boy of the mess went round all the decks, ringing a small hand-bell, and in rhymes composed for the occasion, invited all those who had sores to repair before the mast, where one of the doctor's mates attended with applications to dress them.

C H A P. XXVII.

I ACQUIRE THE FRIENDSHIP OF THE SURGEON, WHO PROCURES A WARRANT FOR ME, AND MAKES ME A PRESENT OF CLOTHES—A BATTLE BETWEEN A MIDSHIPMAN AND ME—THE SURGEON LEAVES THE SHIP—THE CAPTAIN COMES ON BOARD WITH ANOTHER SURGEON—A

DIALOGUE BETWEEN THE CAPTAIN AND MORGAN—THE SICK ARE ORDERED TO BE BROUGHT UPON THE QUARTER DECK AND EXAMINED—THE CONSEQUENCES OF THAT ORDER—A MADMAN ACCUSES MORGAN, AND IS SET AT LIBERTY BY COMMAND OF THE CAPTAIN, WHOM HE INSTANTLY ATTACKS AND PUMMELS WITHOUT MERCY.

WHILE I was busied with my friend in this practice, the doctor chanced to pass by the place where we were, and stopping to observe me, appeared very well satisfied with my method of application; and afterwards sent for me to his cabin, where having examined me touching my skill in surgery, and the particulars of my fortune, he interested himself so far in my behalf, as to promise his assistance in procuring a warrant for me, seeing I had been already found qualified in Surgeon's Hall, for the station I filled on board; and in this good office he the more cordially engaged, when he understood I was nephew to Lieutenant Bowling, for whom he expressed a particular regard. In the mean time, I could learn from his discourse, that he did not intend to go to sea again with Captain Oakham, having, as he thought, been indifferently used by him during the last voyage.

While I lived tolerably easy, in expectation of preferment, I was not altogether without mortifications, which I not only suffered from the rude insults of the sailors and petty officers, among whom I was known by the name of *Loblolly Boy*; but also from the disposition of Morgan; who, though friendly in the main, was often very troublesome with his pride, which expected a good deal of submission from me, and delighted in recapitulating the favours I had received at his hands.

About six weeks after my arrival on board, the surgeon bidding me follow him into his cabin, presented a warrant to me, by which I was appointed surgeon's third mate on board the Thunder. This he had procured by his interest at the Navy Office; as also another for himself, by virtue of which he was removed into a second rate. I acknowledged his kindness in the strongest

est terms my gratitude could suggest, and professed my sorrow at the prospect of losing so valuable a friend, to whom I hoped to have recommended myself still farther, by my respectful and diligent behaviour. But his generosity rested not here; for before he left the ship he made me a present of a chest and some clothes, that enabled me to support the rank to which he had raised me. I found my spirit revive with my good fortune; and now I was an officer, resolved to maintain the dignity of my station against all opposition or affronts: nor was it long before I had occasion to exert my resolution; my old enemy the midshipman (whose name was Crampley) entertaining an implacable animosity against me, for the disgrace he had suffered on my account, had since that time taken all opportunities of reviling and ridiculing me; when I was not entitled to retort this bad usage. And even after I had been rated on the books, and mustered as surgeon's mate, did not think fit to restrain his insolence. In particular, being one day present while I dressed a wound in a sailor's leg, he began to sing a song which I thought highly injurious to the honour of my country, and therefore signified my resentment, by observing, that the Scots always laid their account with finding enemies among the ignorant, insignificant, and malicious. This unexpected piece of assurance enraged him to such a degree, that he lent me a blow on the face, which I verily thought had demolished my cheek-bone: I was not slow in returning the obligation, and the affair began to be very serious; when by accident Mr. Morgan and one of the master's mates, coming that way, interposed, and enquiring into the cause, endeavoured to promote a reconciliation; but finding us both exasperated to the uttermost, and bent against accommodation, they advised us either to leave our difference undecided till we should have an opportunity of terminating it on shore, like gentlemen, or else chuse a proper place on board, and bring it to an issue by boxing. This last expedient was greedily embraced by us both; and being forthwith conducted to the ground proposed, we stript in a moment, and began a very furious contest, in which I soon found myself inferior to my antagonist, not so much in strength and agility, as in skill,

which he had acquired in the School of Hockley in the Hole and Tottenham Court. Many cross-buttocks did I sustain, and pegs on the stomach without number, till at last my breath being quite gone, as well as my vigour wasted, I grew desperate, and collecting all my strength in one effort, threw in at once, head, hands and feet, with such violence, that I drove my antagonist three paces backward into the main hatchway, down which he fell, and pitching upon his head and right-shoulder, remained without sense and motion. Morgan looking down, and seeing him lie in that condition, cried, 'Upon my conscience, as I am a christian sinner, (look you) I believe his pattles are all offer; but I take you all to witness that there was no treachery in the case, and that he has suffered by the chance of war.' So saying, he descended to the deck below, to examine into the situation of my adversary; and left me very little pleased with my victory, as I found myself not only terribly bruised, but likewise in danger of being called to account for the death of Crampley: But this fear vanished, when my fellow mate, having by bleeding him in the jugular brought him to himself, and enquired into the state of his body, called up to me to be under no concern, for the midshipman had received no other damage, than as pretty a luxation of the *os humeri*, as one would desire to see on a summer's day. Upon this information I crawled down to the cockpit, and acquainted Thomson with the affair, who providing himself with bandages, &c. necessary for the occasion, went up to assist Mr. Morgan in the reduction of the dislocation. When this was successfully performed, they wished me joy of the event of the combat; and the Welchman, after observing, that in all likelihood the ancient Scots and Britons were the same people, bade me, praise God for putting mettle in my pelly, and strength in my limbs to support it. I acquired such reputation by this rencounter, (which lasted twenty minutes) that every body became more cautious in behaviour towards me; though Crampley, with his arm in a sling, talked very high, and threatened to seize the first opportunity of retrieving on shore the honour he had lost by an accident; from which I could justly claim no merit.

About

About this time, Captain Oakham having received sailing orders, came on board, and brought along with him a surgeon of his own country, who soon made us sensible of the loss we suffered in the departure of Doctor Atkins; for he was grossly ignorant, and intolerably assuming, false, vindictive, and unforgiving; a merciless tyrant to his inferiors, an abject sycophant to those above him. In the morning after the captain came on board, our first mate, according to custom, went to wait on him with a sick list, which when this grim commander had perused, he cried with a stern countenance, 'Blood and pions! sixty-one sick people on board of my ship! Hark'e, you Sir, I'll have no sick in my ship, by G—d.' The Welchman replied, he should be very glad to find no sick people on board; but while it was otherwise, he did no more than his duty in presenting him with a list. 'You and your list may be d—n'd,' said the captain, throwing it at him; 'I say there shall be no sick in this ship while I have the command of her.' Mr. Morgan being nettled at this treatment, told him, his indignation ought to be directed to Got Almighty, who visited his people with distempers, and not to him, who contributed all in his power towards their cure. The bashaw not being used to such behaviour in any of his officers, was enraged to fury at this satirical insinuation; and stamping with his foot, called him insolent scoundrel, threatening to have him pinioned to the deck, if he should presume to utter another syllable. But the blood of Caractacus being thoroughly heated, disdained to be restricted by such a command, and began to manifest itself in—'Captain Oagum, I am a shentleman of birth and parentage, look you, and per—adventure I am moreover——' Here his harangue was broke off by the captain's steward; who, being Morgan's countryman, hurried him out of the cabin before he had time to exasperate his master to a greater degree: and this would certainly have been the case; for the indignant Welchman could hardly be hindered, by his friend's arguments and entreaties, from re-entering the presence-chamber, and defying Captain Oakham to his teeth. He was, however, appeased at length, and

came down to the birth; where finding Thomson and me at work preparing medicines, he bade us leave off our labour and go to play, for the captain by his sole word and power, and command, had driven sickness a pegging to the tevil, and there was no more malady on board. So saying, he drank off a gill of brandy, sighed grievously three times, poured forth an ejaculation of—'Got pless my heart, liver, and lungs!' and then began to sing a Welch song with great earnestness of visage, voice, and gesture. I could not conceive the meaning of this singular phenomenon, and saw by the looks of Thomson, who at the same time shook his head, that he suspected poor Cadwallader's brains were unsettled. He perceiving our amazement, told us he would explain the mystery; but at the same bade us take notice, that he had lived boy, patchelor, married man, and widower, almost forty years; and in all that time, there was no man nor mother's son in the whole world, who durst use him so ill as Captain Oakham had done. Then he acquainted us with the dialogue that passed between them, as I have already related it; and had no sooner finished this narration, than he received a message from the surgeon, to bring the sick list to the quarter-deck, for the captain had ordered all the patients thither to be reviewed. This inhuman order shocked us extremely, as we knew it would be impossible to carry some of them on the deck, without imminent danger of their lives; but as we likewise knew it would be to no purpose for us to remonstrate against it, we repaired to the quarter-deck in a body, to see this extraordinary muster; Morgan observing by the way, that the captain was going to send to the other world a great many evidences to testify against himself. When we appeared upon deck, the captain bade the doctor, who stood bowing at his right-hand, look at these lazy lubberly sons of bitches, who were good for nothing on board but to eat the king's provision, and encourage idleness in the skulkers. The surgeon grinned approbation; and taking the list, began to examine the complaints of each as they could crawl to the place appointed. The first who came under his cognizance was a poor fellow just freed of a fever, which had weakened him

him so much, that he could hardly stand. Mr. Mackshane (for that was the doctor's name) having felt his pulse, protested he was as well as any man in the world; and the captain delivered him over to the boatswain's mate, with orders that he should receive a round dozen at the gang-way immediately for counterfeiting himself sick; but before the discipline could be executed, the man dropt down on the deck, and had well nigh perished under the hands of the executioner. The next patient to be considered, laboured under a quartan ague, and being then in his interval of health, discovered no other symptoms of distemper, than a pale meagre countenance, and emaciated body; upon which he was declared fit for duty, and turned over to the boatswain; but being resolved to disgrace the doctor, died upon the fore-castle next day, during his cold fit. The third complained of a pleuritic stitch, and spitting of blood, for which Dr. Mackshane prescribed exercise at the pump to promote expectoration; but whether this was improper for one in his situation, or that it was used to excess, I know not, but in less than half an hour he was suffocated with a deluge of blood that issued from his lungs. A fourth, with much difficulty, climbed to the quarter-deck, being loaded with a monstrous ascites or dropsy, that invaded his chest so much, he could scarce fetch his breath; but his disease being interpreted into fat, occasioned by idleness and excess of eating, he was ordered, with a view to promote perspiration and enlarge his chest, to go aloft immediately: it was in vain for this unwieldy wretch to alledge his utter incapacity, the boatswain's driver was commanded to whip him up with the cat and nine tails: the smart of this application made him exert himself so much, that he actually arrived at the puttock shrouds; but when the enormous weight of his body had nothing else to support it than his weakened arms, either out of spite or necessity, he quitted his hold, and plumped into the sea, where he must have been drowned, had not a sailor, who was in a boat along-side, saved his life, by keeping him afloat till he was hoisted on board by a tackle. It would be tedious and disagreeable to describe the fate of every miserable object that

suffered by the inhumanity and ignorance of the captain and surgeon, who so wantonly sacrificed the lives of their fellow-creatures. Many were brought up in the height of fevers, and rendered delirious by the injuries they received in the way. Some gave up the ghost in the presence of their inspectors; and others, who were ordered to their duty, languished a few days at work among their fellows, and then departed without any ceremony. On the whole, the number of the sick was reduced to less than a dozen; and the authors of this reduction were applauding themselves for the services they had done to their king and country, when the boatswain's mate informed his honour, that there was a man below lashed to his hammock by the direction of the doctor's mate, and that he begged hard to be released; affirming, he had been so maltreated only for a grudge Mr. Morgan bore him, and that he was as much in his senses as any man aboard. The captain hearing this, darted a severe look at the Welchman, and ordered the man to be brought up immediately; upon which, Morgan protested with great fervency, that the person in question was as mad as a March hare; and begged for the love of God, they would at least keep his arms pinioned during his examination, to prevent him from doing mischief. This request the commander granted for his own sake, and the patient was produced, who insisted upon his being in his right wits with such calmness and strength of argument, that every body present was inclined to believe him, except Morgan; who affirmed there was no trusting to appearances, for he himself had been so much imposed upon by his behaviour two days before, that he had actually unbound him with his own hands, and had well nigh been murdered for his pains: this was confirmed by the evidence of one of the waiters, who declared, he had pulled this patient from the doctor's mate, whom he had gotten down and almost strangled. To this the man answered, that the witness was a creature of Morgan's, and was suborned to give testimony against him by the malice of the mate, whom the defendant had affronted, by discovering to the people on board that Mr. Morgan's wife kept a gin-shop in Rag Fair. This anecdote

dote produced a laugh at the expence of the Welchman; who shaking his head with some emotion, said, 'Aye, 'aye, 'tis no matter: Got knows, it 'is an arrant falsehood.' Captain Oakham, without any farther hesitation, ordered the fellow to be unfettered; at the same time, threatening to make Morgan exchange situations with him for his spite: but the Briton no sooner heard the decision in favour of the madman, than he got up the mizen shrouds, crying to Thomson and me to get out of his reach, for we should see him play the devil with a vengeance. We did not think fit to disregard his caution, and accordingly got up on the poop, whence we beheld the maniac (as soon as he was released) fly at the captain like a fury, crying, 'I'll let 'you know, you scoundrel, that I am 'commander of this vessel,' and pummel him without mercy. The surgeon, who went to the assistance of his patron, shared the same fate; and it was with the utmost difficulty that he was mastered at last, after having done great execution among those who opposed him.

C H A P. XXVIII.

THE CAPTAIN ENRAGED, THREATENS TO PUT THE MADMAN TO DEATH WITH HIS OWN HAND—IS DIVERTED FROM THAT RESOLUTION BY THE ARGUMENTS AND PERSUASIONS OF THE FIRST LIEUTENANT AND SURGEON—WE SET SAIL FOR ST. HELEN'S, JOIN THE FLEET UNDER THE COMMAND OF SIR C——N——R O——LE, AND PROCEED FOR THE WEST-INDIES—ARE OVERTAKEN BY A TERRIBLE TEMPEST—MY FRIEND JACK RATTLIN HAS HIS LEG BROKE BY A FALL FROM THE MAINYARD—THE BEHAVIOUR OF DOCTOR MACKSHANE—JACK OPPOSES THE AMPUTATION OF HIS LIMB, IN WHICH HE IS SECONDED BY MORGAN AND ME, WHO UNDERTAKE THE CURE, AND PERFORM IT SUCCESSFULLY.

THE captain was carried into his cabin, so enraged with the treatment he had received, that he ordered the fellow to be brought before him,

that he might have the pleasure of pistolling him with his own hand; and would certainly have satisfied his revenge in this manner, had not the first lieutenant remonstrated against it, by observing that in all appearance the fellow was not mad but desperate; that he had been hired by some enemy of the captain to assassinate him, and therefore ought to be kept in irons till he could be brought to a court-martial, which, no doubt, would sift the affair to the bottom, (by which means, important discoveries might be made) and then sentence the criminal to a death adequate to his demerits. This suggestion, improbable as it was, had the desired effect upon the captain, being exactly calculated for the meridian of his intellects; more especially, as Doctor Mackshane espoused this opinion, in consequence of his previous declaration that the man was not mad. Morgan finding there was no more damage done, could not help discovering, by his countenance, the pleasure he enjoyed on this occasion; and while he bathed the doctor's face with an embrocation, ventured to ask him, whether he thought there were more fools or madmen on board. But he would have been wiser in containing this sally, which his patient carefully laid up in his memory to be taken notice off at a more fit season. Meanwhile we weighed anchor, and on our way to the Downs, the madman, who was treated as a prisoner, took an opportunity, while the centinel attended him at the head, to leap over-board and frustrate the revenge of the captain. We staid not long at the Downs, but took the benefit of the first easterly wind to go round to Spithead; where having received on board provisions for six months, we sailed from St. Helen's in the grand fleet bound for the West-Indies, on the ever-memorable expedition of Carthagea.

It was not without great mortification I saw myself on the point of being transported to such a distant and unhealthy climate, destitute of every convenience that could render such a voyage supportable; and under the dominion of an arbitrary tyrant, whose command was almost intolerable. However, as these complaints were common to a great many on board, I resolved to submit patiently to my fate, and contrive

contrive to make myself as easy as the nature of the case would allow. We got out of the channel with a prosperous breeze, which died away, leaving us becalmed about fifty leagues to the westward of the Lizard. But this state of inaction did not last long; for next night our main top-sail was split by the wind, which in the morning increased to a hurricane. I was awakened by a most horrible din, occasioned by the play of the gun carriages upon the deck above, the cracking of cabbins, the howling of the wind through the shrouds, the confused noise of the ship's crew, the pipes of the boatswain and his mates, the trumpets of the lieutenants, and the clanking of the chain-pumps. Morgan, who had never been at sea before, turned out in a great hurry, crying, 'Got 'ave mercy and compassion upon us! 'I believe we have got upon the confines of Lucifer and the damned!' while poor Thomson lay quaking in his hammock, putting up petitions to Heaven for our safety. I rose and joined the Welchman; with whom, after having fortified ourselves with brandy, I went above; but if my sense of hearing was startled before, how must my sight have been appalled in beholding the effects of the storm! The sea was swelled into billows mountain-high, on the top of which our ship sometimes hung as if it was about to be precipitated to the abyss below! Sometimes we sunk between two waves that rose on each side higher than our topmast-head, and threatened by dashing together to overwhelm us in a moment! Of all our fleet, consisting of a hundred and fifty sail, scarce twelve appeared, and these driving under their bare poles, at the mercy of the tempest. At length the mast of one of them gave way, and tumbled overboard with a hideous crash. Nor was the prospect in our own ship much more agreeable; a number of officers and sailors ran backward and forward with distraction in their looks, hollowing to one another, and undetermined what they should attend to first. Some clung to the yards, endeavouring to unbend the sails that were split into a thousand pieces flapping in the wind; others tried to furl those that were yet whole, while the masts, at every pitch bent and quivered like twigs, as if they

would have shivered into innumerable splinters. While I considered this scene with equal terror and astonishment, one of the main braces broke; by the shock whereof two sailors were flung from the yard's arm into the sea, where they perished, and poor Jack Rattlin thrown down upon the deck, at the expence of a broken leg. Morgan and I ran immediately to his assistance, and found a splinter of the thin-bone thrust by the violence of the fall through the skin: as this was a case of too great consequence to be treated without the authority of the doctor, I went down to his cabin to inform him of the accident, as well as to bring up dressings, which we always kept ready prepared. I entered his apartment without any ceremony, and by the glimmering of a lamp, perceived him on his knees, before something that very much resembled a crucifix; but this I will not insist upon, that I may not seem too much a slave to common report, which indeed assisted my conjecture on this occasion, by representing Dr. Mackshane as a member of the church of Rome. Be this as it will, he got up in a sort of confusion, occasioned, I suppose, by his being disturbed in his devotion, and in a trice snatched the subject of my suspicion from my sight. After making an apology for my intrusion, I acquainted him with the situation of Rattlin; but could by no means prevail upon him to visit him on deck where he lay; he bade me desire the boatswain to order some of the men to carry him down to the cockpit; 'and in the mean time,' said he, 'I will direct Thomson to get ready the dressings.' When I signified to the boatswain the doctor's desire, he swore a terrible oath, that he could not spare one man from the deck, because he expected the mast would go by the board every minute. This piece of information did not at all contribute to my peace of mind; however, as my friend Rattlin complained very much, with the assistance of Morgan, I supported him to the lower deck, whither Mr. Mackshane, after much intreaty, ventured to come, attended by Thomson with a box full of dressings, and his own servant, who carried a whole set of capital instruments. He examined the fracture and the wound, and concluding from a livid colour extending

itself upon the limb, that a mortification would ensue, resolved to amputate the leg immediately. This was a dreadful sentence to the patient, who recruiting himself with a quid of tobacco, pronounced with a woeful countenance, 'What! is there no remedy, doctor? must I be dock'd! can't you splice it?'—'Assuredly, Doctor Mackshane,' said the first mate, 'with submission, and deference, and veneration to your superior abilities, and opportunities, and stations, look you, I do apprehend, and conjecture, and aver, that there is no occasion nor necessity to smite off this poor man's leg.'—'God Almighty bless you, dear Welchman!' cried Rattlin; 'may you have fair wind and weather wheresoever you're bound, and come to an anchor in the road of Heaven at last.' Mackshane, very much incensed at his mate's differing in opinion from him so openly, answered, that he was not bound to give an account of his practice to him; and in a peremptory tone, ordered him to apply the tourniquet. At the sight of which, Jack starting up, cried, 'Avast, avast! d—n my heart, if you clap your nippers on me, till I know wherefore!' 'Mr. Random, won't you lend a hand towards saving my precious limb?' 'Odd's heart, if Lieutenant Bowling was here, he would not suffer Jack Rattlin's leg to be chopped off like a piece of old junk.' This pathetic address to me, joined to my inclination to serve my honest friend, and the reasons I had to believe there was no danger in delaying the amputation, induced me to declare myself of the first mate's opinion, and affirm that the preternatural colour of the skin was owing to an inflammation occasioned by a contusion, and common in all such cases, without any indication of an approaching gangrene. Morgan, who had a great opinion of my skill, manifestly exulted in my fellowship, and asked Thomson's sentiments of the matter, in hopes of strengthening our association with him too; but he, being of a meek disposition, and either dreading the enmity of the surgeon, or speaking the dictates of his own judgment, in a modest manner, espoused the opinion of Mackshane, who by this time, having consulted with himself, determined to act in such a manner, as to screen

himself from censure; and at the same time revenge himself on us, for our arrogance in contradicting him. With this view, he asked, if we would undertake to cure the leg at our peril; that is, be answerable for the consequence. To this question Morgan replied, that the lives of his creatures are in the hands of God alone; and it would be great presumption in him to undertake for an event that was in the power of his Maker, no more than the doctor could promise to cure all the sick to whom he administered his assistance; but if the patient would put himself under our direction, we would do our endeavour to bring his distemper to a favourable issue, to which, at present, we saw no obstruction. I signified my concurrence; and Rattlin was so overjoyed, that shaking us both by the hands, he swore nobody else should touch him, and if he died, his blood should be upon his own head. Mr. Mackshane, flattering himself with the prospect of our miscarriage, went away, and left us to manage it as we should think proper; accordingly, having sawed off part of the splinter that stuck through the skin, we reduced the fracture, dressed the wound, applied the eighteen-tailed bandage, and put the leg in a box *secundum artem*. Every thing succeeded according to our wish, and we had the satisfaction of not only preserving the poor fellow's leg, but likewise of rendering the doctor contemptible among the ship's company, who had all their eyes on us during the course of this cure, which was completed in six weeks.

C H A P. XXIX.

MACKSHANE'S MALICE—I AM TAKEN UP AND IMPRISONED FOR A SPY—MORGAN MEETS WITH THE SAME FATE—THOMSON IS TAMPERED WITH TO TURN EVIDENCE AGAINST US—DISDAINS THE PROPOSAL, AND IS MALTREATED FOR HIS INTEGRITY—MORGAN IS RELEASED TO ASSIST THE SURGEON DURING AN ENGAGEMENT WITH SOME FRENCH SHIPS OF WAR—I REMAIN FETTERED ON THE POOP, EXPOSED TO THE ENEMY'S SHOT, AND GROW DELIRIOUS WITH FEAR—

I AM COMFORTED AFTER THE BATTLE BY MORGAN, WHO SPEAKS FREELY OF THE CAPTAIN; IS OVERHEARD BY THE CENTINEL, WHO INFORMS AGAINST HIM, AND AGAIN IMPRISONED — THOMSON GROWS DESPERATE, AND NOTWITHSTANDING THE REMONSTRANCES OF MORGAN AND ME, GOES OVERBOARD IN THE NIGHT.

IN the mean time, the storm subsided into a brisk gale, that carried us into the warm latitudes, where the weather became intolerable, and the crew very sickly. The doctor left nothing unattempted towards the completion of his vengeance against the Welchman and me. He went among the sick, under pretence of enquiring into their grievances, with a view of picking up complaints to our prejudice; but finding himself frustrated in that expectation by the good will we had procured from the patients by our diligence and humanity, he took the resolution of listening to our conversation, by hiding himself behind the canvas that surrounded our berth; here too he was detected by the boy of our mess, who acquainted us with this piece of behaviour, and one night, while we were picking a large bone of salt beef, Morgan discerned something stir on the outside of our hangings, which immediately interpreting to be the doctor, he tipped me the wink, and pointed to the place, where I could perceive somebody standing; upon which, I snatched up the bone, and levelled it with all my force at him, saying, 'Whoever you are, take that for your curiosity.' It had the desired effect, for we heard the listener tumble down, and afterwards crawl to his own cabin. I applauded myself much for this feat, which turned out one of the most unlucky exploits of my life, Mackshane from that time marking me out for destruction. About a week after this exploit, as I was going my rounds among the sick, I was taken prisoner, and carried to the poop by the master at arms, where I was loaded with irons, and stapled to the deck, on pretence that I was a spy on board, and had conspired against the captain's life. How ridiculous soever this imputation was, I did not fail to suffer by it all

the rigour that could be shewn to the worst of criminals, being exposed in this miserable condition to the scorching heat of the sun by day, and the unwholesome damps by night, during the space of twelve days, in which I was neither brought to trial, nor examined touching the probability of my charge. I had no sooner recovered the use of my reflection, which had been quite overthrown by this accident, than I sent for Thomson; who, after condoling me on the occasion, hinted, that I owed this misfortune to the hatred of the doctor, who had given an information against me to the captain, in consequence of which I was arrested, and all my papers seized. While I was cursing my capricious fate, I saw Morgan ascend the poop, guarded by two corporals, who made him sit down by me, that he might be pinioned in the same machine. Notwithstanding my situation, I could scarce refrain from laughing at the countenance of my fellow prisoner, who, without speaking one word, allowed his feet to be inclosed in the rings provided for that purpose; but when they pretended to fasten him on his back, he grew outrageous, and drawing a large cut-throat razor from his side pocket, threatened to rip up the belly of the first man that should approach him, in order to treat him in such an unworthy manner. They were preparing to use him very roughly, when the lieutenant on the quarter-deck, called up to them to let him remain as he was. He then crept towards me, and taking me by the hand, bade me put my trust in God. And looking at Thomson, who sat by us trembling, with a pale visage, told him, there were two more rings for his feet, and he should be glad to find him in such good company. But it was not the intention of our adversary to include the second mate in our fate; him he excepted, to be his drudge in attending the sick; and, if possible, his evidence against us: with this view, he sounded him afar off, but finding his integrity incorruptible, harassed him so much out of spite, that in a short time this mild creature grew weary of his life.

While I and my fellow-prisoner comforted each other in our tribulation, the admiral discovered four sail to leeward, and made signal for our ship and four more to chase. Hereupon every thing

was

was cleared for an engagement, and Mackshane foreseeing he should have occasion for more assistants than one, obtained Morgan's liberty; while I was left in this deplorable posture to the chance of battle. It was almost dark when we came up with the sternmost chace, which we hailed, and enquired who they were; they gave us to understand they were French men of war, upon which Captain Oakhum commanded them to send their boat on board of him; but they refused, telling him, if he had any business with them, to come on board of their ship. He then threatened to pour in a broadside upon them, which they promised to return. Both sides were as good as their word, and the engagement began with great fury. The reader may guess how I passed my time, lying in this helpless situation, amidst the terrors of a sea-fight, expecting every moment to be cut asunder or dashed in pieces by the enemy's shot! I endeavoured to compose myself as much as possible, by reflecting that I was not a whit more exposed than those who were stationed about me; but when I beheld them employed without intermission in annoying the foe, and encouraged by the society and behaviour of one another, I could easily perceive a wide difference between their condition and mine: however, I concealed my agitation as well as I could, till the head of the officer of marines who stood near me, being shot off, bounced from the deck athwart my face, leaving me well nigh blinded with brains. I could contain myself no longer, but began to bellow with all the strength of my lungs: when a drummer coming towards me, asked if I was wounded, and before I could answer, received a great shot in his belly which tore out his entrails, and he fell flat on my breast. This accident entirely bereft me of all discretion: I redoubled my cries, which were drowned in the noise of the battle; and finding myself disregarded, lost all patience, and became frantic: I vented my rage in oaths and execrations, till my spirits being quite exhausted, I remained quiet, and insensible of the load that oppressed me. The engagement lasted till broad day, when Captain Oakham, finding he was like to gain neither honour nor advantage by the affair, pre-

tended to be undeceived by seeing their colours; and hailing the ship with whom he had fought all night, protested he believed them Spaniards; and the guns being silenced on each side, ordered the barge to be hoisted out, and went on board of the French commodore. Our loss amounted to ten killed, and eighteen wounded, most part of whom afterwards died. My fellow-mates had no sooner dispatched their business in the cock-pit, than, full of friendly concern, they came to visit me. Morgan ascending first, and seeing my face almost covered with brains and blood, concluded I was no longer a man for this world; and calling to Thomson with great emotion, bade him come up, and take his last farewell of his comrade and countryman, who was posting to a better place, where there were no Mackshanes nor Oakhums to asperse and torment him. 'No,' said he, taking me by the hand, 'you are going to a country where there is more respect shewn to unfortunate gentlemen, and where you will have the satisfaction of beholding your adversaries tossing upon pillows of burning primstone.' Thomson alarmed at this apostrophe, made haste to the place where I lay, and sitting down by me, with tears in his eyes, enquired into the nature of my calamity. By this time I had recollected myself so far as to be able to converse rationally with my friends, whom, to their great satisfaction, I immediately undeceived with regard to their apprehension of my being mortally wounded. After I had got myself disengaged from the carnage in which I wallowed, and partaken of a refreshment which my friends brought along with them, we entered into discourse upon the hardships we sustained, and spoke very freely of the authors of our misery: but our discourse being overheard by the centinel who guarded me, he was no sooner relieved, than he reported to the captain every syllable of our conversation, according to the orders he had received. The effect of this information soon appeared in the arrival of the master at arms, who replaced Morgan in his former station; and gave the second mate a caution to keep a strict guard over his tongue, if he did not chuse to accompany us in our confinement.

Thomson

Thomson foreseeing that the whole slavery of attending the sick and wounded, as well as the cruelty of Mackshane, must now fall on his shoulders, grew desperate at the prospect, and though I never heard him swear before, imprecated dreadful curses on the heads of his oppressors, declaring that he would rather quit life altogether, than be much longer under the power of such barbarians. I was not a little startled at his vivacity, and endeavoured to alleviate his complaints, by representing the subject of my own with as much aggravation as it would bear, by which comparison he might see the balance of misfortune lay on my side, and take an example from me of fortitude and submission, till such time as we could procure redress, which I hoped was not far off, considering that we should probably be in an harbour in less than three days, where we should have an opportunity of preferring our complaints to the admiral. The Welchman joined in my remonstrances, and was at great pains to demonstrate, that it was every man's duty as well as interest to resign himself to the Divine will, and look upon himself as a centinel upon duty, who is by no means at liberty to leave his post before he is relieved. Thomson listened attentively to what we said, and at last, shedding a flood of tears, shook his head, and left us without making any reply. About eleven at night he came to see us again, with a settled gloom on his countenance, and gave us to understand that he had undergone excessive toil since he saw us, and in recompence had been grossly abused by the doctor, who taxed him with being confederate with us, in a design of taking away his life and that of the captain. After some time spent in mutual exhortation, he got up, and squeezing me by the hand with an uncommon fervour, cried, 'God bless you both!' and left us to wonder at his singular manner of parting with us, which did not fail to make an impression on us both.

Next morning, when the hour of visitation came round, this unhappy young man was missing, and after strict search, supposed to have gone overboard in the night: and this was certainly the case.

CHAP. XXX.

WE LAMENT THE FATE OF OUR COMPANION—THE CAPTAIN OFFERS MORGAN HIS LIBERTY, WHICH HE REFUSES TO ACCEPT—WE ARE BROUGHT BEFORE HIM AND EXAMINED—MORGAN IS SENT BACK INTO CUSTODY, WHITHER ALSO I AM REMANDED, AFTER A CURIOUS TRIAL.

THE news of this event affected my fellow-prisoner and me extremely, as our unfortunate companion had justly acquired, by his amiable disposition, the love and esteem of us both; and the more we regretted his untimely fate, the greater horror we conceived for the villain who was undoubtedly the occasion of it. This abandoned miscreant did not discover the least symptom of concern for Thomson's death, although he must have been conscious to himself of having driven him by ill usage to that fatal resolution; but desired the captain to set Morgan at liberty again to look after the patients. Accordingly, one of the corporals was sent up to unfetter him; and he protested he would not be released until he should know for what he was confined; nor would he be a tennis-ball, nor a shuttle-cock, nor a trudge, nor a scullion, to any captain under the sun. Oakhum finding him obstinate, and fearing it would not be in his power to exercise his tyranny much longer with impunity, was willing to shew some appearance of justice, and therefore ordered us both to be brought before him on the quarter-deck, where he sat in state, with his clerk on one side, and his counsellor Mackshane on the other. When we approached, he honoured us with this salutation: 'So, gentlemen, damn my blood! many a captain in the navy would have ordered you both to be tuck'd up to the yard's arm, without either judge or jury, for the crimes you have been guilty of; but, damn my blood, I have too much good-nature, in allowing such dogs as you to make your defence.'—'Captain Oakhum,' said my fellow-sufferer, 'certainly it is in your power (Got help the while) to tuck us all up

' up at your will, and desire, and pleasures. And perhaps it would be better for some of us to be tucked up, than undergo the miseries to which we have been exposed. So may the farmer hang his kids for his diversion, and amusement, and mirth; but there is such a thing as justice, if not upon earth, surely in heaven, that will punish with fire and brimstone all those who take away the lives of innocent people out of wantonness and parparity, look you. In the mean time, I shall be glad to know the crimes laid to my charge, and see the person who accuses me.' — 'That you shall,' said the captain. 'Here, doctor, what have you to say?' Mackshane stepping forward, hemmed a good while, in order to clear his throat, and before he began, Morgan accosted him thus: 'Doctor Mackshane, look in my face—look in the face of an honest man, who abhors a false witness as he abhors the devil, and God be judge between you and me.' The doctor not minding this conjuration, made the following speech, as near as I can remember: 'I'll tell you what, Mr. Morgan, to be sure what you say is just, in regard to an honest man; and if so be it appears as how you are an honest man, then it is my opinion, that you deserve to be acquitted, in relation to that there affair; for I tell you what, Captain Oakhum is resolved to do every body justice. As for my own part, all that I have to alledge, is, that I have been informed you have spoken disrespectful words against your captain, who, to be sure, is the most honourable and generous commander in the king's service, without asparagement or acceptance of man, woman, or child.' Having uttered this elegant harangue, on which he seemed to plume himself, Morgan replied, 'I do partly guess, and conceive, and understand your meaning, which I wish could be more explicit: but however, I do suppose, I am not to be condemned upon bare hear-say; or if I am convicted of speaking disrespectful of Captain Oakhum, I hope there is no treason in my words.' — 'But there's mutiny, by God, and that's death by the articles of war,' cried Oakhum. 'In the mean time, let the witnesses be called.' Hereupon Mackshane's ser-

vant appeared, and the boy of our mess, whom they had seduced and tutored for the purpose. The first declared, that Morgan, as he descended the cockpit ladder one day cursed the captain and called him a savage beast, saying, he ought to be hunted down as an enemy to mankind. 'This' said the clerk, 'is a strong presumption of a design formed against the captain's life. For why? it presupposes malice aforethought, and a criminal intention *a priori*.' — 'Right,' said the captain to this miserable grub, who had been an attorney's boy, 'you shall have law enough; here's Cook and Littlejohn for it.' This evidence was confirmed by the boy, who affirmed, he heard the first mate say, that the captain had no more bowels than a bear, and the surgeon had no more brains than an ass. Then the centinel who heard our discourse on the poop was examined, and informed the court that the Welchman assured me, Captain Oakhum and Doctor Mackshane would toss upon billows of burning brimstone in hell for their barbarity. The clerk observed, that there was an evident pre-judication, which confirmed the former suspicion of a conspiracy against the life of Captain Oakhum; for, because, how could Morgan so positively pronounce that the captain and surgeon would be damned, unless he had an intention to make away with them before they could have time to repent. This sage explanation had great weight with our noble commander, who exclaimed, 'What have you to say to this, Taffy? you seem to be taken all a back, brother, ha!' Morgan was too much of a gentleman to disown the text, although he absolutely denied the truth of the comment: upon which the captain, strutting up to him, with a ferocious countenance, said, 'So, Mr. son of a bitch, you confess you honoured me with the names of bear and beast, and pronounced my damnation! Damn my heart, I have a good mind to have you brought to a court-martial and hanged, you dog!' Here Mackshane, having occasion for an assistant, interposed, and begged the captain to pardon Mr. Morgan, with his wonted goodness, upon condition that he the delinquent should make such submission as the nature of his misdemeanour demanded. Upon which the

the Cambro-Briton, who on this occasion would have made no submission to the Great Mogul surrounded with his guards, thanked the doctor for his mediation, and acknowledged himself in the wrong for calling the image of God a peasant: 'But,' said he, 'I spoke by metaphor, and parable, and comparison, and types; as we signify meekness by a lamb, lechery by a goat, and craftiness by a fox; so we liken ignorance to an ass, and brutality to a bear, and fury to a tyger; therefore I made use of these similes to express my sentiments, look you; and what I said, before God, I will not unsay before man or peasant neither.' Oakhum was so provoked at this insolence, as he termed it, that he ordered him forthwith to be carried to the place of his confinement, and his clerk to proceed on the examination of me. The first question put to me, was touching the place of my nativity, which I declared to be the north of Scotland. 'The north of Ireland more like,' cried the captain, 'but we shall bring you up presently.' He then asked what religion I professed; and when I answered, 'The protestant,' swore I was as arrant a Roman as ever went to mass. 'Come, come, clerk,' continued he, 'catechise him a little on this subject.' But before I relate the particulars of the clerk's inquiries, it will not be amiss to inform the reader that our commander himself was an Hibernian, and if not shrewdly belied, a Roman Catholic to boot. 'You say you are a Protestant,' said the clerk, 'make the sign of the cross with your fingers, so, and swear upon it to that affirmation.' When I was about to perform this ceremony, the captain cried with some emotion, 'No, no, damn me! I'll have no profanation neither.' 'But go on with your interrogations.' 'Well then,' proceeded my examiner, 'how many sacraments are there?' To which I replied, 'Two.' 'What are they?' said he. I answered, 'Baptism and the Lord's supper.' 'And so you would explode confirmation and marriage altogether!' said Oakhum; 'I thought this fellow was a rank Roman.' The clerk, though he was bred under an attorney, could not refrain from blushing at this bluntness, which he endeavoured to conceal,

by observing that these decoys would not do with me, who seemed to be an old offender. He went on with asking, if I believed in transubstantiation; but I treated the notion of a real presence with such disrespect, that his patron was scandalized at my impiety, and commanded him to proceed to the plot. Whereupon this miserable pettifogger told me, there was great reason to suspect me of being a spy on board; and that I had entered into a conspiracy with Thomson and others not yet detected, against the life of Captain Oakhum. Which accusation they pretended to support by the evidence of our boy, who declared he had often heard the deceased Thomson and me whispering together, and could distinguish the words, 'Oakhum, rascal, poison, pistol:' by which expressions it appeared, we did intend to use sinister means to accomplish his destruction. That the death of Thomson seemed to confirm this conjecture; who, either feeling the stings of remorse, for being engaged in such a horrid confederacy, or fearing a discovery, by which he must have infallibly suffered an ignominious death, had put a fatal period to his own existence. But what established the truth of the whole, was a book in cyphers found among my papers, which exactly tallied with one found in his chest, after his disappearance: this, he observed, was a presumption very near proof positive, and would determine any jury in christendom to find me guilty. In my own defence, I alledged that I had been dragged on board first very much against my inclination, as I could prove by the evidence of some people now in the ship, consequently could have no design of becoming a spy at that time; and ever since had been entirely out of the reach of any correspondence that could justly entail that suspicion upon me. As for conspiring against my captain's life, it could no be supposed that any man in his right wits would harbour the least thought of such an undertaking, which he could not possibly perform without certain infamy and ruin to himself, even if he had all the inclination in the world. That allowing the boy's evidence to be true, (which I affirmed was false and malicious) nothing conclusive could be gathered from a few incoherent words:

neither was the fate of Mr. Thomson a circumstance more favourable for the charge; for I had in my pocket a letter which too well explained that mystery, in a very different manner from that which was supposed. With these words, I produced the following letter, which Jack Rattlin brought to me the very day after Thomson disappeared; and told me it was committed to his care by the deceased, who made him promise not to deliver it sooner. The clerk taking it out of my hand, read aloud the contents, which were these.

‘DEAR FRIEND,

‘I Am so much oppressed with the fatigue I daily and nightly undergo, and the barbarous usage of Doctor Mackshane, who is bent on your destruction, as well as mine, that I am resolved to free myself from this miserable life, and before you receive this, shall be no more. I could have wished to die in your good opinion, which I am afraid I shall forfeit by the last act of my life; but if you cannot acquit me, I know you will at least preserve some regard for the memory of an unfortunate young man who loved you. I recommend it to you, to beware of Mackshane, whose revenge is implacable. I wish all prosperity to you and Mr. Morgan, to whom pray offer my last respects, and beg to be remembered as your unhappy friend and countryman,

‘WILLIAM THOMSON.’

This letter was no sooner read, than Mackshane, in a transport of rage, snatched it out of the clerk’s hands, and tore it into a thousand pieces, saying, it was a villainous forgery, contrived and executed by myself. The captain and clerk declared themselves of the same opinion, although I insisted on having the remains of it compared with other writings of Thomson, which they had in their possession; and I was ordered to answer the last article of my accusation, namely, the book of cyphers found among my papers. ‘That is easily done,’ said I. ‘What you are pleased to call cyphers, are no other than the Greek characters, in which, for my amusement, I kept a

diary of every thing remarkable that has occurred to my observation since the beginning of the voyage, till the day in which I was put in irons; and the same method was practised by Mr. Thomson, who copied mine.’— ‘A very likely story!’ cried Mackshane; ‘what occasion was there for using Greek characters, if you were not afraid of discovering what you had wrote? But what d’ye talk of Greek characters? D’ye think I am so ignorant of the Greek language, as not to distinguish it’s letters from these, which are no more Greek than Chinese? No, no, I will not give up my knowledge of the Greek for you, nor none that ever came from your country.’ So saying, with an unparalleled effrontery, he repeated some gibberish, which by the sound seemed to be Irish, and made it pass for Greek with the captain, who looking at me with a contemptuous sneer, exclaimed, ‘Ah, ha! have you caught a Tartar?’ I could not help smiling at the consummate assurance of this Hibernian, and offered to refer the dispute to any body on board who understood the Greek alphabet: upon which Morgan was brought back, and being made acquainted with the affair, took the book and read a whole page in English, without hesitation, deciding the controversy in my favour. The doctor was so far from being out of countenance at this detection, that he affirmed Morgan was in the secret, and repeated from his own invention. Oakham said, ‘Aye, aye, I see they are both in a story:’ and dismissed my fellow mate to his cock-loft, although I proposed that he and I should read and translate separately, any chapter or verse in the Greek testament in his possession, by which it would appear whether we or the surgeon spoke truth. Not being endued with eloquence enough to convince the captain that there could be no juggle nor confederacy in this expedient, I begged to be examined by some unconcerned person on board, who understood Greek: accordingly, the whole ship’s company, officers and all, were called upon deck, among whom it was proclaimed, that if any of them could speak Greek, he or they so qualified should ascend the quarter-deck immediately. After some pause, two foremast men came up, and professed their

skill in that language, which they said they acquired during several voyages to the Levant, among the Greeks of the Morea. The captain exulted much in this declaration, and put my journal-book into the hands of one of them, who candidly owned he could neither read nor write; the other acknowledged the same degree of ignorance, but pretended to speak the Greek lingo with any man on board; and addressing himself to me, pronounced some sentences of a barbarous corrupted language, which I did not understand. I asserted that the modern Greek was as different from that spoke and written by the ancients, as the English used now from the old Saxon spoke in the time of Hengist; and as I had only learned the true original tongue, in which Homer, Pindar, the Evangelists, and other great men of antiquity wrote, it could not be supposed that I should know any thing of an imperfect Gothic dialect that rose on the ruins of the former, and scarce retained any traces of the old expression. But if Doctor Mackshane, who pretended to be master of the Greek language would maintain a conversation with these seamen, I would retract what I had said, and be content to suffer any punishment he should think proper to inflict. I had no sooner uttered these words, than the surgeon, knowing one of these fellows to be his countryman, accosted him in Irish, and was answered in the same brogue; then a dialogue ensued between them, which they affirmed to be in Greek, after having secured the secrecy of the other tar, who had his cue in the language of the Morea from his companion, before they would venture to assert such an intrepid falsehood. 'I thought,' said Oakum, 'we should discover the imposture at last. Let the rascal be carried back to his confinement. I find he must dangle.' Having nothing farther to urge in my own behalf, before a court so prejudiced with spite, and fortified with ignorance against truth, I suffered myself to be reconducted peaceably to my fellow-prisoner, who hearing the particulars of my trial, lifted up his hands and eyes to heaven, and uttered a dreadful groan; and not daring to disburden his thoughts to me by speech, lest he might be overheard by the centinel, burst forth into a Welch song, which

he accompanied with a thousand contortions of face, and violent gestures of body.

CHAP. XXXI.

I DISCOVER A SUBORNATION AGAINST ME, BY MEANS OF A QUARREL BETWEEN TWO OF THE EVIDENCES; IN CONSEQUENCE OF WHICH I AM SET AT LIBERTY, AND PREVAIL UPON MORGAN TO ACCEPT OF HIS FREEDOM ON THE SAME TERMS — MACKSHANE'S MALICE — WE ARRIVE AT JAMAICA, FROM WHENCE IN A SHORT TIME WE BEAT UP TO HISPANIOLA, IN CONJUNCTION WITH THE WEST-INDIA SQUADRON — WE TAKE IN WATER, SAIL AGAIN, AND ARRIVE AT CARTHAGENA — REFLECTIONS ON OUR CONDUCT THERE.

MEANWHILE, a quarrel happening between the two modern Greeks, the one to be revenged of the other, came and discovered to us the mystery of Mackshane's dialogue, as I have explained it above. This detection coming to the ears of the doctor, who was sensible that (now we were in sight of Jamaica) we should have an opportunity of clearing ourselves by a court-martial, and at the same time of making his malice and ignorance conspicuous, he interceded for us with the captain so effectually, that in a few hours we were set at liberty, and ordered to return to our duty. This was a happy event for me, my whole body being blistered by the sun, and my limbs benumbed by want of motion: but I could scarce persuade the Welchman to accept of this indulgence, he persisting in his obstinacy to remain in irons until he should be discharged by a court-martial, which he believed would also do him justice on his enemies; at length I represented to him the precarious issue of a trial, the power and interest of his adversaries, and flattered his revenge with the hope of wreaking his resentment with his own hands upon Mackshane after our return to England. This last argument had more weight with him than all the rest, and prevailed upon him to repair with me to the cockpit, which I no

sooner entered, than the idea of my departed friend presented itself to my remembrance, and filled my eyes with tears. We discharged from our meels the boy who had acted so perfidiously, notwithstanding his tears, intreaties, and professions of penitence for what he had done; but not before he had confessed that the surgeon had bribed him to give evidence against us, with a pair of stockings, and a couple of old check shirts, of which his servant had since plundered him.

The keys of our chests and lockers being sent to us by the doctor, we detained the messenger until we had examined the contents; and my fellow-mate finding all his Cheshire cheese consumed to a crust, his brandy exhausted, and his onions gone, was seized with a fit of choler, which he discharged on Mackthane's man in oaths and execrations, threatening to prosecute him as a thief. The fellow swore in his turn, that he never had the keys in his possession till that time, when he received them from his master with orders to deliver them to us.

'As Got is my judge,' cried Morgan, 'and my salvation, and my witness, whosoever has pilfered my provisions, is a lousy, peggery, rascally knave! and by the soul of my grandfather, I will impeach, and accuse, and indict him of a roppery, if I did but know who he is.' Had this misfortune happened at sea, where we could not repair the loss, in all probability this descendant of Caractacus would have lost his wits entirely: but when I observed, how easy it would be to remedy this paultry mischance, he became more calm, and reconciled himself to the occasion. A little while after this transport the surgeon came into the birth, under pretence of taking something out of the medicine chest, and, with a smiling aspect, wished us joy of our deliverance, which he said he had been at great pains to obtain of the captain, who was very justly incensed at our behaviour; but he (the doctor) had passed his word for our future conduct, and he hoped we should give him no cause to repent of his kindness. He expected, no doubt, an acknowledgment from us for his pretended piece of service, as well as a general amnesty of what was past; but he had to do with people who were

not quite so apt to forgive injuries as he imagined, or to forget that if our deliverance was owing to his mediation, our calamity was occasioned by his malice; I therefore sat silent while my companion answered: 'Aye, aye, 'tis no matter—Got knows the heart—there is a time for all things, as the wise man saith; there is a time for throwing away stones, and a time to gather them up again.' He seemed to be disconcerted at this reply, and went away in a pet, muttering something about 'Ingratitude' and 'Fellows,' of which we did not think fit to take any notice.

Our fleet having joined another that waited for us, lay at anchor about a month in the harbour at Port-Royal in Jamaica, during which time something of consequence was certainly transacted; notwithstanding the insinuations of some who affirmed we had no business at all in that place; that in order to take the advantage of the season proper for our enterprize, the West Indian Squadron, which had previous notice of our coming, ought to have joined us at the west end of Hispaniola, with necessary stores and refreshments, from whence we could have sailed directly for Carthagena, before the enemy could put themselves in a good posture of defence; or, indeed, have an inkling of our design. Be this as it will, we sailed from Jamaica, and in ten days or a fortnight, beat up against the wind as far as the isle of Vache, with an intention, as was said, to attack the French fleet, then supposed to be lying near that place; but before we arrived they had sailed for Europe, having first dispatched an advice-boat to Carthagena, with an account of our being in those seas, as also of our strength and destination. We loitered here some days longer, taking in wood, and brackish water, in the use whereof, however, our admiral seemed to consult the health of the men, by restricting each to a quart a day. At length we set sail and arrived in a bay to the windward of Carthagena, where we came to an anchor, and lay at our ease ten days longer. Here again, certain malicious people take occasion to blame the conduct of their superiors, by saying, that in so doing, they not only unprofitably wasted time, which was very precious, considering

considering the approach of the rainy season, but also allowed the Spaniards to recollect themselves from the terror occasioned by the approach of an English fleet at least three times as numerous as ever appeared in that part of the world before. But if I might be allowed to give my opinion of the matter, I would ascribe this delay to the generosity of our chiefs, who scorned to take any advantage that fortune might give them, even over an enemy. At last, however, we weighed, and anchored again somewhat nearer the harbour's mouth, where we made shift to land our marines, who encamped on the beach, in despite of the enemy's shot, which knocked a good many of them on the head. This piece of conduct in choosing a camp under the walls of an enemy's fortification, which I believe never happened before, was practised, I presume, with a view of accustoming the soldiers to stand fire, who were not as yet much used to discipline, most of them having been taken from the plough-tail a few months before. This expedient again has furnished matters for censure against the ministry, for sending a few raw recruits on such an important enterprize, while so many veteran regiments lay inactive at home: but surely our governors had their reasons for so doing, which possibly may be disclosed with other secrets of the deep. Perhaps they were lothe to risk their best troops on such desperate service; or, the colonels and field officers of the old corps, who, generally speaking, enjoyed their commissions as sinecures or pensions, for some domestic services tendered to the court, refused to embark in such a dangerous and precarious undertaking; for which refusal, no doubt, they are to be much commended.

C H A P. XXXII.

OUR LAND FORCES BEING DISEMBARKED, ERECT A FASCINE BATTERY—OUR SHIP IS ORDERED, WITH FOUR MORE, TO BATTER THE FORT OF BOCA CHICA—MACKSHANE'S COWARDICE—THE CHAPLAIN'S PHRENZY—HONEST RATTLIN LOSES ONE HAND—HIS HEROISM AND REFLECTIONS ON THE BATTLE—CRAMP-

LEY'S BEHAVIOUR TO ME DURING THE HEAT OF THE FIGHT.

OUR forces being landed and stationed as I have already mentioned, set about erecting a fascine battery to cannonade the principal fort of the enemy, and in something more than three weeks it was ready to open. That we might do the Spaniards as much honour as possible, it was determined, in a council of war, that five of our largest ships should attack the fort on one side, while the battery, strengthened by two mortars and twenty-four cohorns, should ply it on the other.

Accordingly, the signal for our ship to engage, among others, was hoisted, we being advertised the night before, to make every thing clear for that purpose: and in so doing a difference happened between Captain Oakhum and his well-beloved cousin and counsellor Mackshane, which had well nigh terminated in an open rupture. The doctor, who had imagined there was no more danger of being hurt by the enemy's shot in the cockpit than in the centre of the earth, was lately informed that a surgeon's mate had been killed in that part of a ship, by a cannon-ball from two small redoubts that were destroyed before the disembarkation of our soldiers; and therefore insisted upon having a platform raised for the convenience of the sick and wounded in the after-hold, where he deemed himself more secure than on the deck above. The captain, offended at this extraordinary proposal, accused him of pusillanimity, and told him there was no room in the hold for such an occasion; or if there was, he could not expect to be indulged more than the rest of the surgeons of the navy, who used the cockpit for that purpose. Fear rendering Mackshane obstinate, he persisted in his demand, and shewed his instructions, by which it was authorized: the captain swore these instructions were dictated by a parcel of lazy poltroons who were never at sea; nevertheless he was obliged to comply, and sent for the carpenter to give orders about it. But before any such measure could be taken, our signal was thrown out, and the doctor compelled to trust his carcase in the cockpit, where Morgan and I were busy in putting our instruments and dressings in order.

Our

Our ship, with others destined for this service, immediately weighed, and in less than half an hour came to an anchor before the castle of Boca Chica, with a spring upon our cable; and the cannonading, which indeed was terrible, began. The surgeon, after having crossed himself, fell flat on the deck; and the chaplain and purser, who were stationed with us in quality of assistants, followed his example, while the Welchman and I sat upon a chest looking at one another with great discomposure, scarce able to refrain from the like prostration. And that the reader may know, it was not a common occasion that alarmed us thus, I must inform him of the particulars of this dreadful din that astonished us. The fire of the Spaniards proceeded from eighty-four great guns, besides a mortar and small arms, in Boca Chica, thirty-six in Fort St. Joseph, twenty in two facine batteries, and four men of war, mounting sixty-four guns each. This was answered by our land battery mounted with twenty-one cannon, two mortars, and twenty-four cohorns, and five great ships of eighty or seventy guns, that fired without intermission. We had not been many minutes engaged, when one of the sailors brought another on his back to the cockpit, where he tossed him down like a bag of oats, and pulling out his pouch, put a large chew of tobacco in his mouth, without speaking a word; Morgan immediately examined the condition of the wounded man, and cried out, 'As I shall answer now, the man is as dead as my great-grandfather.'—'Dead!' says his comrade, 'he may be dead now, for aught I know, but I'll be damned if he was not alive when I took him up.' So saying, he was about to return to his quarters, when I bade him carry the body along with him, and throw it over-board. 'D—n the body!' said he, 'I think 'tis fair enough to take care of my own. My fellow mate snatching up the amputation knife, pursued him half way up the cockpit ladder, crying, 'You lousy rascal, is this the church-yard, or the charnel-house, or the sepulchre, or the Golgotha of the ship?' but was stopt in his career by one calling, 'Yo, ho, avast there, scaldings.'—'Scaldings!' answered Morgan, 'Got knows 'tis hot enough in-

deed: who are you?'—'Here's one,' replied the voice. And I immediately knew it to be that of my honest friend Jack Rattlin, who coming towards me, told me, with great deliberation, he was come to be docked at last, and discovered the remains of one hand which had been shattered to pieces with a grape shot. I lamented with unfeigned sorrow his misfortune, which he bore with heroic courage, observing, that every shot had it's commission. It was well it did not take him in the head; or if it had, what then; he should have died bravely, fighting for his king and country. Death was a debt which every man owed, and must pay; and that now was as well as another time. I was much pleased and edified with the maxims of this sea-philosopher, who endured the amputation of his left-hand without shrinking; the operation being performed, at his request, by me, after Mackshane, who was with difficulty prevailed to lift his head from the deck, had declared there was a necessity for his losing the limb. While I was employed in dressing the stump, I asked Jack's opinion of the battle; who, shaking his head, frankly told me, he believed we should do no good: for why! because instead of dropping anchor close under shore, where we should have had to deal with one corner of Boca Chica only, we had opened the harbour, and exposed ourselves to the whole fire of the enemy from their shipping and Fort St. Joseph, as well as from the castle we intended to cannonade; that, besides, we lay at too great a distance to damage the walls, and three parts in four of our shot did not take place; for there was scarce any body on board who understood the pointing of a gun. 'Ah! God help us!' continued he, 'if your kinsman Lieutenant Bowling had been here, we should have had other guess-work.' By this time our patients had increased to such a number, that we did not know which to begin with; and the first mate plainly told the surgeon, that if he did not get up immediately, and perform his duty, he would complain of his behaviour to the admiral, and make application for his warrant. This remonstrance effectually roused Mackshane, who was never deaf to an argument in which he thought his interest was concerned;

turned; he therefore rose up, and in order to strengthen his resolution, had recourse more than once to a case-bottle of rum, which he freely communicated to the chaplain and purser, who had as much need of such extraordinary inspiration as himself. Being thus supported, he went to work, and arms and legs were hewn down without mercy. The fumes of the liquor mounting into the parson's brain, conspired with his former agitation of spirits, to make him quite delirious; he stript himself to the skin, and besmearing his body with blood, could scarce be withheld from running upon deck in that condition. Jack Rattlin, scandalized at this deportment, endeavoured to allay his transports with reason, but finding all he said ineffectual, and great confusion occasioned by his frolics, he knocked him down with his right-hand, and by threats kept him quiet in that state of humiliation. But it was not in the power of rum to elevate the purser; who sat on the floor wringing his hands, and cursing the hour in which he left his peaceable profession of a brewer in Rochester, to engage in such a life of terror and disquiet. While we diverted ourselves at the expence of this poor devil, a shot happened to take us between wind and water, and (it's course being through the purser's store-room) made a terrible havock and noise among the jars and bottles in it's way, and disconcerted Mackshane so much, that he dropt his scalpel, and falling down on his knees, pronounced his pater-noster aloud; the purser fell backward, and lay without sense or motion; and the chaplain grew so outrageous, that Rattlin with one hand could not keep him under; so that we were obliged to confine him in the surgeon's cabin, where he was no doubt guilty of a thousand extravagancies. Much about this time my old antagonist Crampley came down, with express orders, as he said, to bring me up to the quarter-deck, to dress a slight wound the captain had received by a splinter. His reason for honouring me in particular with this piece of service, being that in case I should be killed or disabled by the way, my death or mutilation would be of less consequence to the ship's company, than that of the doctor or his first mate. At another time, perhaps, I might have disputed this order, to which I was not

bound to pay the least regard; but as I thought my reputation depended upon my compliance, I was resolved to convince my rival that I was no more afraid than he of exposing myself to danger. With this view I provided myself with dressings, and followed him immediately to the quarter-deck, through a most infernal scene of slaughter, fire, smoke, and uproar! Captain Oakhum, who leaned against the mizen mast, no sooner saw me approach in my shirt, with the sleeves tucked up to my arm-pits, and my hands dyed with blood, than he signified his displeasure by a frown, and asked why the doctor himself did not come. I told him Crampley had singled me out, as if by express command; at which reply he seemed surprized, and threatened to punish the midshipman for his presumption, after the engagement: In the mean time I was sent back to my station, and ordered to tell Mackshane that the captain expected him immediately. I got safe back, and delivered my commission to the doctor, who flatly refused to quit the post assigned to him by his instructions: whereupon Morgan, who I believe was jealous of my reputation for courage, undertook the affair, and ascended with great intrepidity. The captain finding the surgeon obstinate, suffered himself to be dressed, and swore he would confine Mackshane as soon as the service should be over.

C H A P. XXXIII.

A BREACH BEING MADE IN THE WALLS, OUR SOLDIERS GIVE THE ASSAULT, AND TAKE THE PLACE WITHOUT OPPOSITION—OUR SAILORS AT THE SAME TIME BECOME MASTERS OF ALL THE OTHER STRENGTHS NEAR BOCA CHICA, AND TAKE POSSESSION OF THE HARBOUR—THE GOOD CONSEQUENCE OF THIS SUCCESS—WE MOVE NEARER THE TOWN—FIND TWO FORTS DESERTED, AND THE CHANNEL BLOCKED UP WITH SUNK VESSELS; WHICH HOWEVER WE FIND MEANS TO CLEAR—LAND OUR SOLDIERS AT LA QUINTA—REPULSE A BODY OF MILITIA—ATTACK THE CASTLE

TLE OF ST. LAZAR, AND ARE FORCED TO RETREAT WITH GREAT LOSS—THE REMAINS OF OUR ARMY ARE RE-EMBARKED—AN EFFORT OF THE ADMIRAL TO TAKE THE TOWN—THE OECONOMY OF OUR EXPEDITION DESCRIBED.

HAVING cannonaded the fort during the space of four hours, we were all ordered to slip our cables, and sheer off; but next day the engagement was renewed, and continued from the morning till the afternoon, when the enemy's fire from Boca Chica slackened, and towards evening was quite silenced. A breach being made on the other side, by our land battery, large enough to admit a middle-sized baboon, provided he could find means to climb up to it; our general proposed to give the assault that very night, and actually ordered a detachment on that duty: providence stood our friend upon this occasion, and put it into the hearts of the Spaniards to abandon the fort, which might have been maintained by resolute men to the day of judgment against all the force we could exert in the attack. And while our soldiers took possession of the enemy's ramparts, without resistance, the same good luck attended a body of sailors, who made themselves masters of fort St. Joseph, the fascine batteries, and one Spanish man of war; the other three being burnt or sunk by the foe, that they might not fall into our hands. The taking of these forts, in the strength of which the Spaniards chiefly confided, made us masters of the outward harbour, and occasioned great joy among us; as we laid our accounts with finding little or no opposition from the town: and, indeed, if a few great ships had sailed up immediately, before they had recovered from the confusion and despair that our unexpected success had produced among them, it is not impossible that we might have finished the affair to our satisfaction, without any more bloodshed; but this step our heroes disdained, as a barbarous insult over the enemy's distress; and gave them all the respite they could desire, in order to recollect themselves. In the mean time, Mackthane taking the advantage of this general exultation, waited on our

captain, and pleaded his own cause so effectually, that he was re-established in his good graces; and as for Crampley, there was no more notice taken of his behaviour towards me during the action. But of all the consequences of the victory, none was more grateful than plenty of fresh water, after we had languished five weeks on the allowance of a purser's quart per diem for each man, in the torrid zone, where the sun was vertical, and the expence of bodily fluid so great, that a gallon of liquor could scarce supply the waste of twenty-four hours; especially as our provision consisted of putrid salt-beef, to which the sailors gave the name of Irish horse; salt pork of New England, which, though neither flesh nor fish, favoured of both; bread from the same country, every biscuit whereof, like a piece of clock-work, moved by it's own internal impulse, occasioned by the myriads of insects that dwelt within it; and butter served out by the gill, that tasted like train-oil thickened with salt. Instead of small-beer, each man was allowed three half quarters of brandy or rum, which were distributed every morning, diluted with a certain quantity of his water, without either sugar or fruit to render it palatable, for which reason this composition was by the sailors not unaptly stiled *necessity*. Nor was this limitation of simple element owing to a scarcity of it on board, for there was at this time water enough in the ship for a voyage of six months, at the rate of half a gallon per day to each man. But this salt must, I suppose, have been enjoined by way of penance on the ship's company for their sins; or rather with a view to mortify them into a contempt of life, that they might thereby become more resolute and regardless of danger. How simple, then, do those people argue, who ascribe the great mortality among us, to our bad provision and want of water; and affirm that a great many valuable lives might have been saved, if the useless transports had been employed in fetching fresh stock, turtle, fruit, and other refreshments, from Jamaica and other adjacent islands, for the use of the army and fleet! seeing it is to be hoped that those who died went to a better place, and those who survived were the more easily maintained. After all, a sufficient

sufficient number remained to fall before the walls of St. Lazar, where they behaved like their own country mastiffs, which shut their eyes, run into the jaws of a bear, and have their heads crushed for their valour.

But to return to my narration: After having put garrisons into the forts we had taken, and re-embarked our soldiers and artillery, a piece of service that detained us more than a week; we ventured up to the mouth of the inner harbour, guarded by a large fortification on one side, and a small redoubt on the other, both of which were deserted before our approach, and the entrance of the harbour blocked up by several old galleons and two men of war that the enemy had sunk in the channel. We made shift, however, to open a passage for some ships, that favoured a second landing of our troops at a place called La Quinta, not far from the town, where, after a faint resistance from a body of Spaniards, who opposed their disembarkation, they encamped with a design of besieging the castle of St. Lazar, which overlooked and commanded the city. Whether our renowned general had nobody in his army who knew how to approach it in form, or that he trusted entirely to the fame of his arms, I shall not determine; but certain it is, a resolution was taken in a council of war, to attack the place with musquetry only. This was put in execution, and succeeded accordingly; the enemy giving them such a hearty reception, that the greatest part of the detachment took up their everlasting residence on the spot. Our chief not relishing this kind of complaisance in the Spaniards, was wise enough to retreat on board with the remains of his army, which, from eight thousand able men landed on the beach near Boca Chica, was now reduced to fifteen hundred fit for service. The sick and wounded were squeezed into certain vessels, which thence obtained the name of hospital ships, though methinks they scarce deserved such a creditable title, seeing few of them could boast of their surgeon, nurse, or cook; and the space between decks was so confined, that the miserable patients had not room to sit upright in their beds. Their wounds and stumps being neglected, contracted filth and putrefaction, and millions of mag-

gots were hatched amidst the corruption of their sores. This inhuman disregard was imputed to the scarcity of surgeons; though it is well known that every great ship in the fleet could have spared one at least for this duty: an expedient which would have been more than sufficient to remove this shocking inconvenience. But perhaps the general was too much of a gentleman to ask a favour of this kind from his fellow chief; who, on the other hand, would not derogate so much from his own dignity, as to offer such assistance unasked; for I may venture to affirm, that by this time the dæmon of discord with her footy wings, had breathed her influence upon our councils; and it might be said of these great men, (I hope they will pardon the comparison) as of Cæsar and Pompey, the one could not brook a superior, and the other was impatient of an equal: so that between the pride of one, and the insolence of another, the enterprize miscarried; according to the proverb, 'Between two stools the backside falls to the ground.' Not that I would be thought to liken any public concern to that opprobrious part of the human body, though I might with truth assert, if I durst use such a vulgar idiom, that the nation did hang an a—se at its disappointment on this occasion; neither would I presume to compare the capacity of our heroic leaders to any such wooden convenience as a joint-stool or a close-stool; but only to signify by this simile, the mistake the people committed in trusting to the union of two instruments that were never joined.

A day or two after the attempt on St. Lazar, the admiral ordered one of the Spanish men of war we had taken, to be mounted with sixteen guns, and manned with detachments from our great ships, in order to batter the town; accordingly she was towed into the inner harbour in the night, and moored within half a mile of the walls, against which she began to fire at day-break; and continued about six hours exposed to the opposition of at least thirty pieces of cannon, which at length obliged our men to set her on fire, and get off as well as they could, in their boats. This piece of conduct afforded matter of speculation to all the wits either in the army or navy, who were

at last fain to acknowledge it a stroke of policy above their comprehension. Some entertained such an irreverent opinion of the admiral's understanding, as to think he expected the town would surrender to his floating battery of sixteen guns; others imagined his sole intention was to try the enemy's strength, by which he should be able to compute the number of great ships that would be necessary to force the town to a capitulation: but this last conjecture soon appeared groundless, inasmuch as no ships of any kind whatever were afterwards employed on that service. A third sort swore, that no other cause could be assigned for this undertaking, than that which induced Don Quixote to attack the windmill. A fourth class (and that the most numerous, though, without doubt, composed of the most sanguine and malicious) plainly taxed this commander with want of honesty as well as sense; and alledged that he ought to have sacrificed private pique to the interest of his country; that where the lives of so many brave fellow-citizens were concerned, he ought to have concurred with the general, without being solicited, or even desired, towards their preservation and advantage; that if his arguments could not dissuade him from a desperate enterprize, it was his duty to have rendered it as practicable as possible, without running extreme hazard; that this could only be done, with a good prospect of success, by ordering five or six large ships to batter the town while the land forces stormed the castle; by these means a considerable diversion would have been made in favour of those troops, who in their march to the assault, and in the retreat, suffered much more from the town than from the castle; that the inhabitants seeing themselves vigorously attacked on all hands, would have been divided, distracted, and confused, and in all probability unable to resist the assailants. But all these suggestions surely proceeded from ignorance and malevolence, or else the admiral would not have found it such an easy matter, at his return to England, to justify his conduct to a ministry at once so upright and discerning. True it is, that those who undertook to vindicate him on the spot, asserted, there was not water enough for our great ships near the town; though this was a little unfortunately urged, because there happened to be

pilots in the fleet perfectly well acquainted with the soundings of the harbour, who affirmed there was water enough for five eighty gun ships to lie a-breast, almost up to the very walls. The disappointments we suffered, occasioned an universal dejection, which was not at all alleviated by the objects that daily and hourly entertained our eyes, nor by the prospect of what must have inevitably happened, had we remained much longer in this place. Such was the oeconomy in some ships, that rather than be at the trouble of interring the dead, their commanders ordered their men to throw their bodies overboard, many without either ballast or winding-sheet; so that numbers of human carcases floated in the harbour, until they were devoured by sharks and carrion crows; which afforded no agreeable spectacle to those who survived. At the same time the wet season began; during which, a deluge of rain falls from the rising to the setting of the sun, without intermission; and that no sooner ceases, than it begins to thunder and lighten with such continual flashing, that one can see to read a very small print by the illumination.

C H A P. XXXIV.

AN EPIDEMICK FEVER RAGES AMONG US—WE ABANDON OUR CONQUESTS—I AM SEIZED WITH THE DISTEMPER; WRITE A PETITION TO THE CAPTAIN, WHICH IS REJECTED—I AM IN DANGER OF SUFFOCATION THROUGH THE MALICE OF CRAMPLEY; AND RELIEVED BY A SERJEANT—MY FEVER INCREASES—THE CHAPLAIN WANTS TO CONFESS ME—I OBTAIN A FAVOURABLE CRISIS—MORGAN'S AFFECTION FOR ME PROVED—THE BEHAVIOUR OF MACKSHANE AND CRAMPLEY TOWARDS ME—CAPTAIN OAKHUM IS REMOVED INTO ANOTHER SHIP WITH HIS BELOVED DOCTOR—OUR NEW CAPTAIN DESCRIBED—AN ADVENTURE OF MORGAN.

THE change of the atmosphere, occasioned by this phenomenon conspired with the stench that surrounded us, the heat of the climate, our own constitutions

constitutions impoverished by bad provisions, and our despair, to introduce the bilious fever among us, which raged with such violence that three fourths of those whom it invaded, died in a deplorable manner; the colour of their skin being, by the extreme putrefaction of the juices, changed into that of soot.

Our conductors finding things in this situation, perceived it was high time to relinquish our conquests; and this we did, after having rendered their artillery useless, and blown up their walls with gun-powder. Just as we sailed from Boca Chica, on our return to Jamaica, I found myself threatened with the symptoms of this terrible distemper; and knowing very well that I stood no chance for my life, if I should be obliged to lie in the cockpit, which by this time was grown intolerable even to the people in health, by reason of the heat and unwholesome smell of decayed provision; I wrote a petition to the captain, representing my case, and humbly imploring his permission to lie among the soldiers in the middle deck, for the benefit of the air: but I might have spared myself the trouble; for this humane commander refused my request, and ordered me to continue in the place allotted for the surgeon's mates, or else be contented to lie in the hospital, which, by the bye, was three degrees more offensive, and more suffocating than our own birth below. Another in my condition, perhaps, would have submitted to his fate, and died in a pet; but I could not brook the thought of perishing so pitifully, after I had weathered so many gales of hard fortune: I therefore, without minding Oakhum's injunction, prevailed upon the soldiers (whose good will I had acquired) to admit my hammock among them; and actually congratulated myself upon my comfortable situation; which Crampley no sooner understood, than he signified to the captain, my contempt of his orders; and was invested with power to turn me down again into my proper habitation. This barbarous piece of revenge, incensed me so much against the author, that I vowed, with bitter imprecations, to call him to a severe account, if ever it should be in my power; and the agitation of my spirits increased my fever to a violent degree. While I lay gasping for breath in this infernal

abode, I was visited by a serjeant, the bones of whose nose I had reduced and set to rights, after they had been demolished by a splinter during our last engagement: he being informed of my condition, offered me the use of his birth in the middle deck, which was inclosed with canvas, and well aired by a port hole that remained open within it. I embraced this proposal with joy, and was immediately conducted to the place, where I was treated, while my illness lasted, with the utmost tenderness and care by this grateful halberdier, who had no other bed for himself than a hencoop, during the whole passage. Here I lay and enjoyed the breeze, notwithstanding which, my malady gained ground, and at length my life was despaired of, though I never lost hopes of recovery, even when I had the mortification to see, from my cabin window, six or seven thrown overboard every day, who died of the same distemper. This confidence, I am persuaded, conduced a great deal to the preservation of my life, especially, when joined to another resolution I took at the beginning, namely, to refuse all medicine; which I could not help thinking co-operated with the disease, and instead of resisting putrefaction, promoted a total degeneracy of the vital fluid. When my friend Morgan, therefore, brought his diaphoretic boluses, I put them into my mouth, 'tis true, but without any intention of swallowing them; and when he went away, spit them out, and washed my mouth with water-gruel: I seemingly complied in this manner, that I might not affront the blood of Caractacus, by a refusal which might have intimated a diffidence of his physical capacity; for he acted as my physician, Doctor Mackshane never once enquiring about me, or even knowing where I was. When my distemper was at the height, Morgan thought my case desperate, and after having applied a blister to the nape of my neck, squeezed my hand, bidding me with a woeful countenance, recommend myself to Got and my ree-teemer; then taking his leave, desired the chaplain to come and administer some spiritual consolation to me; but before he arrived, I made shift to rid myself of the troublesome application the Welchman had bestowed on my back. The parson having felt my pulse,

enquired into the nature of my complaints, hemmed a little, and began thus: 'Mr. Random, God out of his infinite mercy hath been pleased to visit you with a dreadful distemper, the issue of which no man knows. You may be permitted to recover and live many days on the face of the earth; and, which is more probable, you may be taken away and cut off in the flower of your youth: it is incumbent on you, therefore, to prepare for the great change, by repenting sincerely of your sins; of this there cannot be a greater sign, than an ingenuous confession, which I conjure you to make, without hesitation or mental reservation; and when I am convinced of your sincerity, I will then give you such comfort as the situation of your soul will admit of. Without doubt, you have been guilty of numberless transgressions to which youth is subject, as swearing, drunkenness, whoredom, and adultery; tell me therefore without reserve, the particulars of each, especially of the last, that I may be acquainted with the true state of your conscience: for no physician will prescribe for his patient until he knows the circumstances of his disease.' As I was not under any apprehensions of death, I could not help smiling at the doctor's inquisitive remonstrance, which I told him favoured more of the Roman than of the Protestant church, in recommending auricular confession; a thing, in my opinion, not at all necessary to salvation, and which, for that reason, I declined. This reply disconcerted him a little; however, he explained away his meaning, in making learned distinctions between what was absolutely necessary, and what was only convenient; then proceeded to ask what religion I professed: I answered, that I had not as yet considered the difference of religions, consequently had not fixed on any one in particular, but that I was bred a presbyterian. At this word the chaplain expressed great astonishment, and said, he could not comprehend how a presbyterian was entitled to any post under the English government. Then he asked if I had ever received the sacrament, or taken the oaths; to which questions I reply-

ing in the negative, he held up his hands, assured me he could do me no service, wished I might not be in a state of reprobation; and returned to his messmates, who were making merry in the ward-room, round a table well stored with bumbo* and wine. This insinuation, terrible as it was, had not such an effect upon me, as the fever, which, soon after he had left me, grew outrageous; I began to see strange chimeras, and concluded myself on the point of becoming delirious: in the mean time, being in great danger of suffocation, I started up in a kind of frantic fit, with an intention to plunge myself into the sea, and as my friend the serjeant was not present, would certainly have cooled myself to some purpose, had I not perceived a moisture upon my thigh, as I endeavoured to get out of my hammock: the appearance of this revived my hopes, and I had reflection and resolution enough to take the advantage of this favourable symptom, by tearing the shirt from my body, and the sheets from my bed, and wrapping myself in a thick blanket, in which inclosure, for about a quarter of an hour, I felt the pains of hell; but it was not long before I was recompensed for my suffering by a profuse sweat, that bursting from the whole surface of my skin, in less than two hours relieved me from all my complaints, except that of weakness, and left me as hungry as a kite. I enjoyed a very comfortable nap, after which I was regaling myself with the agreeable reverie of my future happiness, when I heard Morgan, on the outside of the curtain, ask the serjeant if I was alive still. 'Alive!' cried the other, 'God forbid he should be otherwise! he has lain quiet these five hours, and I do not chuse to disturb him, for sleep will do him great service.'—'Aye,' said my fellow-mate, 'he sleeps so sound, look you, that he will never waken till the great trump blows. Got be merciful to his soul! he has paid his debt like an honest man. Aye, and moreover he is at rest from all persecutions, and troubles, and afflictions, of which, Got knows, and I know, he had his own share. Ochree! Ochree! he was a promising youth

* Bumbo is a liquor composed of rum, sugar, water and nutmeg.

'indeed.'

‘indeed.’ So saying, he groaned grievously, and began to whine in such a manner, as persuaded me he had a real friendship for me. The serjeant, alarmed at his words, came into the birth, and while he looked upon me, I smiled; and tipped him the wink; he immediately guessed my meaning, and remaining silent, Morgan was confirmed in his opinion of my being dead; whereupon he approached with tears in his eyes, in order to indulge his grief with a sight of the object; and I counterfeited death so well, by fixing my eyes, and dropping my under-jaw, that he said, ‘There he lies, no petter than a lump of clay, Got help me.’ And observed by the distortion of my face, that I must have had a strong struggle. I should not have been able to contain myself much longer, when he began to perform the last duty of a friend, in closing my eyes and my mouth; upon which I suddenly snapped at his fingers, and discomposed him so much, that he started back, turned pale as ashes, and stared like the picture of horror: although I could not help laughing at his appearance, I was concerned for his situation, and stretched out my hand, telling him, I hoped to live and eat some salmagundy of his making in England. It was some time before he could recollect himself so far as to feel my pulse, and inquire into the particulars of my disease: but when he found I had enjoyed a favourable crisis, he congratulated me upon my good fortune; not failing to ascribe it, under Got, to the blister he had applied to my back, at his last visit; ‘which, by the bye,’ said he, ‘must now be removed and dressed.’ He was actually going to fetch dressings, when I feigning astonishment, said, ‘Bless me! sure you never applied a blister to me; there is nothing on my back, I assure you.’ But he could not be convinced till he had examined it, and then endeavoured to conceal his confusion, by expressing his surprize in finding the skin untouched, and the plaister missing. In order to excuse myself for paying so little regard to his prescription, I pretended to have been insensible when it was put on, and to have pulled it off afterwards in a fit of delirium. This apology satisfied my friend, who on this occasion abated a good deal of his stiffness in

regard to punctilio; and as we were now safely arrived at Jamaica, where I had the benefit of fresh provisions, and other refreshments, I recovered strength every day, and in a short time my health and vigour were perfectly re-established. When I got up at first, and was just able to crawl about the deck with a staff in my hand, I met Doctor Mackshane, who passed by me with a disdainful look, and did not vouchsafe to honour me with one word: after him came Crampley, who strutting up to me, with a fierce countenance, pronounced, ‘Here’s fine discipline on board, when such lazy skulking sons of bitches as you, are allowed, on pretence of sickness, to lollop at your ease, while your betters are kept to hard duty!’ The sight and behaviour of this malicious scoundrel enraged me so much, that I could scarce refrain from laying my cudgel across his pate; but when I considered my present feebleness, and the enemies I had in the ship, who wanted only a pretence to ruin me, I restrained my passion, and contented myself with telling him, I had not forgot his insolence and malice, and that I hoped we should meet one day on shore. At this declaration he grinned, shook his fist, and swore he longed for nothing more than such an opportunity.

Meanwhile our ship was ordered to be heaved down, victualled and watered, for her return to England; and our captain, for some reason or other, not thinking it convenient for him to revisit his native country at this time, exchanged with a gentleman who, on the other hand, wished for nothing so much, as to be safe without the tropic, all his care and tenderness of himself being insufficient to preserve his complexion from the injuries of the sun and weather.

Our tyrant having left the ship, and carried his favourite Mackshane along with him, to my inexpressible satisfaction, our new commander came on board in a ten-oar’d barge, overshadowed with a vast umbrella, and appeared in every thing the reverse of Oakham, being a tall, thin, young man, dressed in this manner: a white hat, garnished with a red feather, adorned his head, from whence his hair flowed upon his shoulders, in ringlets tied behind with a ribband. His coat, consisting of pink-coloured silk, lined with white, by the elegance

elegance of the cut retired backward, as it were, to discover a white fatten waistcoat embroidered with gold, unbuttoned at the upper part to display a broche set with garnets, that glittered in the breast of his shirt, which was of the finest cambric, edged with right Mechlin; the knees of his crimson velvet breeches scarce descended so low as to meet his silk stockings, which rose without spot or wrinkle on his meagre legs, from shoes of blue Meroquin, studded with diamond buckles that flamed forth rivals to the sun! A steel-hilted sword, inlaid with gold, and decked with a knot of ribband which fell down in a rich tassell, equipped his side; and an amber-headed cane hung dangling from his wrist: but the most remarkable parts of his furniture were, a mask on his face, and white gloves on his hands, which did not seem to be put on with an intention to be pulled off occasionally, but were fixed with a curious ring on the little finger of each hand. In this garb, Captain Whiffle, for that was his name, took possession of the ship, surrounded with a crowd of attendants, all of whom, in their different degrees, seemed to be of their patron's disposition; and the air was so impregnated with perfumes, that one may venture to affirm the clime of Arabia Fœlix was not half so sweet-scented. My fellow-mate, observing no surgeon among his train, thought he had found an occasion too favourable for himself to be neglected; and remembering the old proverb, 'Spare to speak, and spare to speed,' resolved to solicit the new captain's interest immediately, before any other surgeon could be appointed for the ship. With this view he repaired to the cabin in his ordinary dress, consisting of a check-shirt and trowsers, a brown linen waistcoat, and a night-cap of the same, (neither of them very clean) which, for his future misfortune, happened to smell strong of tobacco. Entering without any ceremony into this sacred place, he found captain Whiffle reposing upon a couch, with a wrapper of fine chintz about his body, and a muslin cap bordered with lace about his head; and after several low congees began in this manner: 'Sir, I hope you will forgive, and excuse, and pardon the presumption of one who has not the honour of being known

unto you, but who is, nevertheless, a gentleman born and bred, and moreover, has had misfortunes, Got help me, in the world.' Here he was interrupted by the captain, who on seeing him, had started up with great amazement at the novelty of the apparition; and having recollected himself, pronounced with a look and tone signifying disdain, curiosity, and surprize, 'Zauns! who art thou?'—'I am surgeon's first mate on board of this ship,' replied Morgan; 'and I most vehemently desire and beseech you, with all submission, to be pleased to condescend and vouchsafe to enquire into my character, and my behaviour, and my deserts, which, under Got, I hope, will entitle me to the vacancy of surgeon.' As he proceeded in his speech, he continued advancing towards the captain, whose nostrils were no sooner saluted with the aromatic flavour that exhaled from him, than he cried with great emotion, 'Heaven preserve me! I am suffocated! fellow, fellow, away with thee. Curse thee, fellow! get thee gone: I shall be stunk to death!' At the noise of his outcries, his servants ran into his apartment, and he accosted them thus: 'Villains! cut-throats! traitors! I am betrayed! I am sacrificed! Will you not carry that monster away, or must I be stifled with the stench of him! oh, oh!—With these interjections, he sunk down upon his settee in a fit; his valet de chambre plied him with a smelling-bottle, one footman chafed his temples with hungary water, another sprinkled the floor with spirits of lavender, a third pushed Morgan out of the cabin; who coming to the place where I was, sat down with a demure countenance; and, according to his custom, when he received any indignity which he durst not revenge, began to sing a Welch ditty. I guessed he was under some agitation of spirits, and desired to know the cause: but, instead of answering me directly, he asked with great emotion, if I thought him a monster and a stinkard. 'A monster and a stinkard,' said I, with some surprize, 'did any body call you so?'—'Got is my judge,' replied he, 'Captain Fiddle did call me both; ay, and all the water in the Tawy will not wash it out of my remembrance. I do af-

firm,

'firm, and avouch, and maintain, with my soul, and my pody, and my blood, look you, that I have no finells about me, but such as a christian ought to have, except the effluvia of tobacco, which is a cephalic, odoriferous, aromatic herb, and he is a son of a mountain-goat who says otherwise. As for my being a monster, let that be as it is: I am as Got was pleased to create me; which, peradventure, is more than I shall aver of him who gave me that title; for I will proclaim it before the world, that he is disguised and transfigured, and transmogrified with affectation and whimsies; and that he is more like a papoon than one of the human race.'

C H A P. XXXV.

CAPTAIN WHIFFLE SENDS FOR ME—HIS SITUATION DESCRIBED—HIS SURGEON ARRIVES, PRESCRIBES FOR HIM, AND PUTS HIM TO BED—A BED IS PUT UP FOR MR. SIMPER CONTIGUOUS TO THE STATE-ROOM, WHICH, WITH OTHER PARTS OF THE CAPTAIN'S BEHAVIOUR, GIVES THE SHIP'S COMPANY A VERY UNFAVOURABLE IDEA OF THEIR COMMANDER—I AM DETAINED IN THE WEST-INDIES, BY THE ADMIRAL, AND GO ON BOARD OF THE LIZARD SLOOP OF WAR IN QUALITY OF SURGEON'S MATE, WHERE I MAKE MYSELF KNOWN TO THE SURGEON, WHO TREATS ME VERY KINDLY—I GO ON SHORE, SELL MY TICKET, PURCHASE NECESSARIES, AND AT MY RETURN ON BOARD AM SURPRIZED AT THE SIGHT OF CRAMPLEY, WHO IS APPOINTED LIEUTENANT OF THE SLOOP—WE SAIL ON A CRUIZE—TAKE A PRIZE, IN WHICH I ARRIVE AT PORT MORANT, UNDER THE COMMAND OF MY MESS-MATE, WITH WHOM I LIVE IN GREAT HARMONY.

HE was going on with an eulogium upon the captain, when I received a message to clean myself and go up to the great cabbin: and with this command I instantly complied, sweet-

ening myself with rose-water from the medicine-chest. When I entered the room, I was ordered to stand by the door, until Captain Whiffle had reconnoitered me at a distance, with a spy-glass. He having consulted one sense in this manner, bade me advance gradually, that his nose might have intelligence, before it could be much offended: I therefore approached with great caution and success, and he was pleased to say, 'Aye, this creature is tolerable.' I found him lolling on his couch with a languishing air, his head supported by his valet de chambre, who from time to time applied a smelling bottle to his nose. 'Vergette,' said he, in a squeaking tone, 'dost thou think this wretch, meaning me, 'will do me no injury? 'may I venture to submit my arm to 'him?'—'Pon my vord,' replied the valet, 'I do tink dat dere be great occasion for your honour losing one small quantite of blodt; and the young man ave quelque chose of de 'bonne mien.'—'Well then,' said his master, 'I think I must venture.' Then addressing himself to me, 'Hast thou ever blooded any body but brutes? But I need not ask thee, for thou wilt tell me a most damnable lye.'—'Brutes, Sir,' answered I, pulling down his glove, in order to feel his pulse; 'I never meddle with brutes.'—'What the devil art thou about?' cried he; 'dost thou intend to twist off my hand? Gad's curse! my arm is benumbed up to the very shoulder! Heaven have mercy upon me! must I perish under the hands of savages? What an unfortunate dog was I, to come on board without my own surgeon, Mr. Simper.' I craved pardon for having handled him so roughly, and with the utmost care and tenderness tied up his arm with a fillet of silk. While I was feeling for the vein, he desired to know how much blood I intended to take from him; and when I answered, 'Not above twelve ounces,' started up with a look full of horror, and bade me be gone, swearing I had a design upon his life. Vergette appeased him with difficulty, and opening a bureau, took out a pair of scales, in one of which was placed a small cup; and putting them into my hand, told me, the captain never lost above an ounce and three drachms at one time. While I pre-

I prepared for this important evacuation, there came into the cabin a young man gayly dressed, of a very delicate complexion, with a kind of languid smile on his face, which seemed to have been rendered habitual by a long course of affectation. The captain no sooner perceived him, than rising hastily, he flew into his arms, crying, 'O, my dear Simper! I am excessively disordered! I have been betrayed, frightened, murdered, by the negligence of my servants, who suffered a beast, a mule, a bear, to surprise me, and sink me into convulsions with the fumes of tobacco.' Simper, who by this time, I found, was obliged to art for the clearness of his complexion, assumed an air of softness and sympathy, and lamented with many tender expressions of sorrow, the sad accident that had thrown him into that condition; then feeling his patient's pulse on the outside of his glove, gave it as his opinion, that his disorder was entirely nervous, and that some drops of tincture of castor and liquid laudanum would be of more service to him than bleeding, by bridling the inordinate sallies of his spirits, and composing the fermentation of his bile. I was therefore sent to prepare this prescription, which was administered in a glass of sack posset; after the captain had been put to-bed, and orders sent to the officers on the quarter-deck to let nobody walk on that side under which he lay.

While the captain enjoyed his repose, the doctor watched over him, and indeed became so necessary, that a cabin was made for him contiguous to the state-room where Whiffle slept, that he might be at hand in case of accidents in the night. Next day, our commander being happily recovered, gave orders that none of the lieutenants should appear upon deck without a wig, sword, and ruffles; nor any midshipman, or other petty officer, be seen with a check shirt, or dirty linen. He also prohibited any person whatever, except Simper, and his own servants, from coming into the great cabin, without first sending in to obtain leave. These singular regulations did not prepossess the ship's company in his favour; but, on the contrary, gave scandal an opportunity to be very busy with his character, and accuse him of

maintaining a correspondence with his surgeon not fit to be named.

In a few weeks, our ship being under sailing orders, I was in hope of revisiting my native country in a very short time, when the admiral's surgeon came on board, and sending for Morgan and me to the quarter-deck, gave us to understand there was a great scarcity of surgeons in the West Indies; that he was commanded to detain one mate out of every great ship that was bound for England; and desired us to agree between ourselves, before the next day at that hour, which of us should stay behind. We were thunderstruck at this proposal, and stared at one another some time without speaking; at length the Welchman broke silence, and offered to remain in the West Indies, provided the admiral would give him a surgeon's warrant immediately. But he was told there was no want of chief surgeons, and that he must be contented with the station of mate, till he should be farther provided for in due course: whereupon Morgan flatly refused to quit the ship for which the commissioners of the navy had appointed him; and the other told him as plainly, that if we could not determine the affair by ourselves before tomorrow morning, he must cast lots, and abide by his chance. When I recalled to my remembrance the miseries I had undergone in England, where I had not one friend to promote my interest, or favour my advancement in the navy, and at the same time reflected on the present dearth of surgeons in the West Indies, and the unhealthiness of the climate, which every day almost reduced the number, I could not help thinking my success would be much more certain and expeditious, by my staying where I was, than by returning to Europe. I therefore resolved to comply with a good grace, and next day when we were ordered to throw dice, told Morgan, he needed not trouble himself, for I would voluntarily submit to the admiral's pleasure. This frank declaration was commended by the gentleman, who assured me, it should not fare the worse with me for my resignation. Indeed he was as good as his word; and that very afternoon procured a warrant, appointing me surgeon's mate of the *Lizard* sloop of war, which put me on a footing

footing with every first mate in the service.

My ticket being made out, I put my chest and bedding on board a canoe that lay along-side, and having shook hands with my trusty friend the sergeant, and honest Jack Rattlin, who was bound for Greenwich Hospital, I took my leave of Morgan with many tears, after we had exchanged our sleeve-buttons as remembrances of each other. Having presented my new warrant to the captain of the *Lizard*, I enquired for the doctor, whom I no sooner saw, than I recollected him to be one of those young fellows with whom I had been committed to the round-house, during our frolic with Jackson, as I have related before. He received me with a good deal of courtesy; and when I put him in mind of our former acquaintance, expressed great joy at seeing me again, and recommended me to an exceeding good mess, composed of the gunner and master's mate. As there was not one sick person in the ship, I got leave to go ashore next day, with the gunner, who recommended me to a Jew that bought my ticket at the rate of 40 l. per cent. discount; and having furnished myself with what necessaries I wanted, returned on board in the evening, and to my surprise, found my old antagonist Crampley walking upon deck. Though I did not fear his enmity, I was shocked at his appearance, and communicated my sentiments on that subject to Mr. Tomlins the surgeon, who told me that Crampley, by dint of some friends about the admiral, had procured a commission, constituting him lieutenant on board the *Lizard*; and advised me, now he was my superior officer, to behave with some respect towards him, or else he would find a thousand opportunities of using me ill. This advice was a bitter potion to me, whom pride and resentment had rendered utterly incapable of the least submission to or even of a reconciliation with the wretch who had, on many occasions, treated me so inhumanly: however, I resolved to have as little connection as possible with him, and to ingratiate myself as much as I could with the rest of the officers, whose friendship might be a bulwark to defend me from the attempts of his malice.

In less than a week we sailed on a cruise, and having weathered the east-end of the island, had the good fortune to take a Spanish barcolongo, with her prize, which was an English ship bound for Bristol, that sailed from Jamaica a fortnight before, without convoy. All the prisoners who were well, we put on shore on the north-side of the island; the prizes were manned with Englishmen, and the command of the barcolongo given to my friend the master's mate, with orders to carry them into Port Morant, and there to remain until the *Lizard's* cruise should be ended, at which time she would touch at the same place in her way to Port Royal. With him I was sent to attend the wounded Spaniards as well as Englishmen, who amounted to sixteen, and to take care of them on shore, in a house that was to be hired as an hospital. This destination gave me a great deal of pleasure, as I should, for some time, be freed from the arrogance of Crampley, whose inveteracy against me had already broke out on two or three occasions since he was become a lieutenant. My mess-mate, who very much resembled my uncle, both in figure and disposition, treated me on board of the prize with the utmost civility and confidence; and, among other favours, made me a present of a silver-hilted hanger, and a pair of pistols mounted with the same metal, which fell to his share in plundering the enemy. We arrived safely at Morant, and going on shore, pitched upon an empty store-house, which we hired for the reception of the wounded, who were brought to it next day, with beds and other necessaries; and four of the ship's company appointed to attend them and obey me.

C H A P. XXXVI.

A STRANGE ADVENTURE—IN CONSEQUENCE OF WHICH I AM EXTREMELY HAPPY—CRAMPLEY DOES ME ILL OFFICES WITH THE CAPTAIN: BUT HIS MALICE IS DEFEATED BY THE GOOD-NATURE AND FRIENDSHIP OF THE SURGEON—WE RETURN TO PORT ROYAL—OUR CAPTAIN GETS THE COMMAND OF A LAR-

I prepared for this important evacuation, there came into the cabin a young man gayly dressed, of a very delicate complexion, with a kind of languid smile on his face, which seemed to have been rendered habitual by a long course of affectation. The captain no sooner perceived him, than rising hastily, he flew into his arms, crying, 'O, my dear Simper! I am excessively disordered! I have been betrayed, frightened, murdered, by the negligence of my servants, who suffered a beast, a mule, a bear, to surprise me, and stink me into convulsions with the fumes of tobacco.' Simper, who by this time, I found, was obliged to art for the clearness of his complexion, assumed an air of softness and sympathy, and lamented with many tender expressions of sorrow, the sad accident that had thrown him into that condition; then feeling his patient's pulse on the outside of his glove, gave it as his opinion, that his disorder was entirely nervous, and that some drops of tincture of castor and liquid laudanum would be of more service to him than bleeding, by bridling the inordinate sallies of his spirits, and composing the fermentation of his bile. I was therefore sent to prepare this prescription, which was administered in a glass of sack posset; after the captain had been put to-bed, and orders sent to the officers on the quarter-deck to let nobody walk on that side under which he lay.

While the captain enjoyed his repose, the doctor watched over him, and indeed became so necessary, that a cabin was made for him contiguous to the state-room where Whiffle slept, that he might be at hand in case of accidents in the night. Next day, our commander being happily recovered, gave orders that none of the lieutenants should appear upon deck without a wig, sword, and ruffles; nor any midshipman, or other petty officer, be seen with a check shirt, or dirty linen. He also prohibited any person whatever, except Simper, and his own servants, from coming into the great cabin, without first sending in to obtain leave. These singular regulations did not prepossess the ship's company in his favour; but, on the contrary, gave scandal an opportunity to be very busy with his character, and accuse him of

maintaining a correspondence with his surgeon not fit to be named.

In a few weeks, our ship being under sailing orders, I was in hope of revisiting my native country in a very short time, when the admiral's surgeon came on board, and sending for Morgan and me to the quarter-deck, gave us to understand there was a great scarcity of surgeons in the West Indies; that he was commanded to detain one mate out of every great ship that was bound for England; and desired us to agree between ourselves, before the next day at that hour, which of us should stay behind. We were thunderstruck at this proposal, and stared at one another some time without speaking; at length the Welchman broke silence, and offered to remain in the West Indies, provided the admiral would give him a surgeon's warrant immediately. But he was told there was no want of chief surgeons, and that he must be contented with the station of mate, till he should be farther provided for in due course: whereupon Morgan flatly refused to quit the ship for which the commissioners of the navy had appointed him; and the other told him as plainly, that if we could not determine the affair by ourselves before tomorrow morning, he must cast lots, and abide by his chance. When I recalled to my remembrance the miseries I had undergone in England, where I had not one friend to promote my interest, or favour my advancement in the navy, and at the same time reflected on the present dearth of surgeons in the West Indies, and the unhealthiness of the climate, which every day almost reduced the number, I could not help thinking my success would be much more certain and expeditious, by my staying where I was, than by returning to Europe. I therefore resolved to comply with a good grace, and next day when we were ordered to throw dice, told Morgan, he needed not trouble himself, for I would voluntarily submit to the admiral's pleasure. This frank declaration was commended by the gentleman, who assured me, it should not fare the worse with me for my resignation. Indeed he was as good as his word; and that very afternoon procured a warrant, appointing me surgeon's mate of the *Lizard* sloop of war, which put me on a footing

footing with every first mate in the service.

My ticket being made out, I put my chest and bedding on board a canoe that lay along-side, and having shook hands with my trusty friend the serjeant, and honest Jack Rattlin, who was bound for Greenwich Hospital, I took my leave of Morgan with many tears, after we had exchanged our sleeve-buttons as remembrances of each other. Having presented my new warrant to the captain of the Lizard, I enquired for the doctor, whom I no sooner saw, than I recollected him to be one of those young fellows with whom I had been committed to the round-house, during our frolic with Jackson, as I have related before. He received me with a good deal of courtesy; and when I put him in mind of our former acquaintance, expressed great joy at seeing me again, and recommended me to an exceeding good mess, composed of the gunner and master's mate. As there was not one sick person in the ship, I got leave to go ashore next day, with the gunner, who recommended me to a jew that bought my ticket at the rate of 40 l. per cent. discount; and having furnished myself with what necessaries I wanted, returned on board in the evening, and to my surprize, found my old antagonist Crampley walking upon deck. Though I did not fear his enmity, I was shocked at his appearance, and communicated my sentiments on that subject to Mr. Tomlins the surgeon, who told me that Crampley, by dint of some friends about the admiral, had procured a commission, constituting him lieutenant on board the Lizard: and advised me, now he was my superior officer, to behave with some respect towards him, or else he would find a thousand opportunities of using me ill. This advice was a bitter potion to me, whom pride and resentment had rendered utterly incapable of the least submission to or even of a reconciliation with the wretch who had, on many occasions, treated me so inhumanly: however, I resolved to have as little connection as possible with him, and to ingratiate myself as much as I could with the rest of the officers, whose friendship might be a bulwark to defend me from the attempts of his malice.

In less than a week we sailed on a cruize, and having weathered the east-end of the island, had the good fortune to take a Spanish barcolongo, with her prize, which was an English ship bound for Bristol, that sailed from Jamaica a fortnight before, without convoy. All the prisoners who were well, we put on shore on the north-side of the island; the prizes were manned with Englishmen, and the command of the barcolongo given to my friend the master's mate, with orders to carry them into Port Morant, and there to remain until the Lizard's cruize should be ended, at which time she would touch at the same place in her way to Port Royal. With him I was sent to attend the wounded Spaniards as well as Englishmen, who amounted to sixteen, and to take care of them on shore, in a house that was to be hired as an hospital. This destination gave me a great deal of pleasure, as I should, for some time, be freed from the arrogance of Crampley, whose inveteracy against me had already broke out on two or three occasions since he was become a lieutenant. My mess-mate, who very much resembled my uncle, both in figure and disposition, treated me on board of the prize with the utmost civility and confidence; and, among other favours, made me a present of a silver-hilted hanger, and a pair of pistols mounted with the same metal, which fell to his share in plundering the enemy. We arrived safely at Morant, and going on shore, pitched upon an empty store-house, which we hired for the reception of the wounded, who were brought to it next day, with beds and other necessaries; and four of the ship's company appointed to attend them and obey me.

C H A P. XXXVI.

A STRANGE ADVENTURE—IN CONSEQUENCE OF WHICH I AM EXTREMELY HAPPY—CRAMPLEY DOES ME ILL OFFICES WITH THE CAPTAIN: BUT HIS MALICE IS DEFEATED BY THE GOOD-NATURE AND FRIENDSHIP OF THE SURGEON—WE RETURN TO PORT ROYAL—OUR CAPTAIN GETS THE COMMAND OF A LAR-

GER SHIP, AND IS SUCCEEDED BY AN OLD MAN—BRAYL IS PROVIDED FOR—WE RECEIVE ORDERS TO SAIL FOR ENGLAND.

WHEN my patients were all in a fair way, my companion and commander, whose name was Brayl, carried me up the country to the house of a rich planter, with whom he was acquainted; where we were sumptuously entertained, and in the evening set out on our return to the ship. When we had walked about a mile by moonlight, we perceived a horseman behind us, who coming up, wished us *good even*, and asked which way we went. His voice, which was quite familiar to me, no sooner struck my ear, than in spite of all my resolution and reflection, my hair bristled up, and I was seized with a violent fit of trembling, which Brayl misinterpreting, bade me be under no concern. I told him he was mistaken in the cause of my disorder; and addressing myself to the person on horseback, said, 'I could have sworn by your voice, that you was a dear friend of mine, if I had not been certain of his death.' To this address, after some pause, he replied, 'There are many voices as well as faces that resemble one another; but pray, what was your friend's name?' I satisfied him in that particular, and gave a short detail of the melancholy fate of Thomson, not without many sighs and some tears. A silence ensued which lasted some minutes, and then the conversation turned on different subjects, till we arrived at a house on the road, where the horseman alighted, and begged with so much earnestness that we would go in and drink a bowl of punch with him, that we could not resist. But if I was alarmed at his voice, what must my amazement be, when I discovered by the light, the very person of my lamented friend! Perceiving my confusion, which was extreme, he clasped me in his arms, and bedewed my face with tears. It was some time ere I recovered the use of my reason, overpowered with this event, and longer still before I could speak. So that all I was capable of, was to return his embraces, and to mingle the overflowings of my joy with his; while honest Brayl, affected with the scene, wept as fast as either of us, and signified his

participation of our happiness, by hugging us both, and capering about the room like a madman. At length I retrieved the use of my tongue, and cried, 'Is it possible, can you be my friend Thomson? No, certainly; alas, he was drowned! and I am now under the deception of a dream!' He was at great pains to convince me of his being the individual person whom I regretted, and bidding me sit down and compose myself, promised to explain his sudden disappearance from the Thunder, and to account for his being at present in the land of the living. This task he acquitted himself of, after I had drank a glass of punch, and recollected my spirits; by informing us, that with a determination to rid himself of a miserable existence, he had gone in the night-time to the head, while the ship was on her way, from whence he slipped down, as softly as he could by the bows, into the sea, where, after he was heartily ducked, he began to repent of his precipitation; and as he could swim very well, kept himself above water, in hopes of being taken up by some of the ships astern; that in this situation, he hailed a large vessel, and begged to be taken in, but was answered that she was a heavy sailer, and therefore they did not chuse to lose time, by bringing to; however, they threw an old chest over-board for his convenience, and told him that some of the ships astern would certainly save him; that no other vessel came within sight or cry of him for the space of three hours, during which time he had the mortification to find himself in the middle of the ocean alone, without other support or resting place but what a few crazy boards afforded; till at last he discerned a small sloop steering towards him, upon which he set up his throat, and had the good fortune to be heard and rescued from the dreary waste, by their boat, which was hoisted out on purpose. 'I was no sooner brought on board,' continued he, 'than I fainted, and when I recovered my senses, found myself in bed, regaled with a most noisome smell of onions and cheese, which made me think at first, that I was in my own hammock, along-side of honest Morgan, and that all which had passed was no more than a dream. Upon enquiry, I understood that I was

on board of a schooner belonging to Rhode Island, bound for Jamaica, with a cargo of geese, pigs, onions, and cheese; and that the master's name was Robertson, by birth a North Briton, whom I knew at first sight to be an old school-fellow of mine. When I discovered myself to him, he was transported with surprise and joy, and begged to know the occasion of my misfortune, which I did not think fit to disclose, because I knew his notions with regard to religion were very severe and confined; therefore contented myself with telling him, I fell over-board by accident; but made no scruple of explaining the nature of my disagreeable station, and of acquainting him with my determined purpose never to return to the Thunder man of war. Although he was not of my opinion in that particular, knowing that I must lose my clothes, and what pay was due to me, unless I went back to my duty; yet when I described the circumstances of the hellish life I led, under the tyrannic sway of Oahkum and Mackshane; and among other grievances, hinted a dissatisfaction at the irreligious deportment of my ship-mates, and the want of the true presbyterian gospel doctrine; he changed his sentiments, and conjured me with great vehemence and zeal to lay aside all thought of rising in the navy; and that he might shew how much he had my interest at heart, undertook to provide for me in some shape or other, before he should leave Jamaica. This promise he performed to my heart's desire, by recommending me to a gentleman of fortune, with whom I have lived ever since, in quality of surgeon and overseer to his plantations. He and his lady are now at Kingston, so that I am, for the present, master of this house, to which, from my soul, I bid you welcome, and hope you will favour me with your company during the remaining part of the night. I needed not a second invitation; but Mr. Brayl, who was a diligent and excellent officer, could not be persuaded to sleep out of the ship: however, he supped with us, and after having drank a cheerful glass, set out for the vessel, which was not above three miles from the place, escorted

by a couple of stout negroes, whom Mr. Thomson ordered to conduct him. Never were two friends more happy in the conversation of each other than we, for the time it lasted: I related to him the particulars of our attempt upon Carthagena, of which he had heard but an imperfect account; and he gratified me with a narration of every little incident of his life since we parted. He assured me, it was with the utmost difficulty he could resist his inclination of coming down to Port Royal to see Morgan and me, of whom he had heard no tidings since the day of our separation; but that he was restrained by the fear of being detained as a deserter. He told me, that when he heard my voice in the dark, he was almost as much surprized as I was at seeing him afterwards; and in the confidence of friendship, disclosed a passion he entertained for the only daughter of the gentleman with whom he lived, who, by his description, was a very amiable young lady, and did not disdain his addresses; that he was very much favoured by her parents, and did not despair of obtaining their consent to the match, which would at once render him independent of the world. I congratulated him on his good fortune, which he protested should never make him forget his friends; and towards morning we betook ourselves to rest.

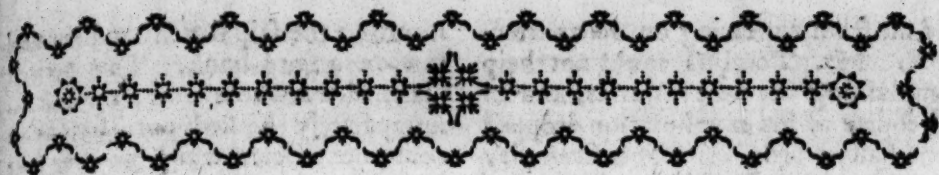
Next day he accompanied me to the ship, where Mr. Brayl entertained him at dinner, and we having spent the afternoon together, he took his leave of us in the evening, after he had forced upon me ten pistoles, as a small token of his affection. In short, while we staid here, we saw one another every day, and generally ate at the same table, which was plentifully supplied by him with all kinds of poultry, butcher's meat, oranges, limes, lemons, pine-apples, Madeira wine, and excellent rum; so that this small interval of ten days, was by far the most agreeable period of my life.

At length the Lizard arrived; and my patients being all fit for duty, they and I were ordered on board of her; where I understood from Mr. Tomlins, that there was a dryness between the lieutenant and him, on my account; that rancorous villain having taken the opportunity of my absence, to fill the

captain's ears with a thousand scandalous stories, to my prejudice; among other things affirming, that I had been once transported for theft, and that when I was in the Thunder man of war I had been whipt for the same crime. The surgeon on the other hand, having heard my whole story from my own mouth, defended me strenuously, and in the course of that good-natured office, recounted all the instances of Crampley's malice against me, while I remained on board of that ship. Which declaration, while it satisfied the captain of my innocence, made the lieutenant as much my defender's enemy as mine. This infernal behaviour of Crampley, with regard to me, added such fuel to my former resentment, that at certain times I was quite beside myself with the desire of revenge, and was even tempted to pistol him on the quarter-deck, though an infamous death must inevitably have been my reward. But the surgeon, who was my confident, argued against such a desperate action so effectually, that I stifled the flame which consumed me for the present, and resolved to wait for a more convenient opportunity. In the mean time, that Mr. Tomlins might be the more convinced of the wrongs I suffered by this fellow's slander, I begged he would go and visit Mr. Thomson, whose wonderful escape I had made him acquainted with, and enquire of him into the particulars of my conduct while he was my fellow mate. This request the surgeon complied with, more through curiosity to see a person whose fate had been so extraordinary, than to confirm his good opinion of me, which he assured me was already firmly established. He therefore set out for the dwelling-place of my friend, with the letter of introduction from me; and being received with all the civility and kindness I expected, returned to the ship, not only satisfied with my character, beyond the power of doubt or insinuation, but also charmed with the affability and conversation of Thomson, who loaded him and me with presents of fresh stocks, liquors, and fruit. As he would not venture to come and see

us on board, lest Crampley should know and detain him; when the time of our departure approached, I obtained leave to go and bid him farewell. After we had vowed an everlasting friendship, he pressed upon me a purse with four doubloons, which I refused as long as I could without giving umbrage; and having cordially embraced each other, I returned on board, where I found a small box, with a letter directed for me, to the care of Mr. Tomlins. Knowing the superscription to be of Thomson's hand-writing, I opened it with some surprise, and learned that this generous friend, not contented with loading me with the presents already mentioned, had sent for my use and acceptance, half a dozen fine shirts, and as many linen waistcoats and caps, with twelve pair of new thread stockings. Being thus provided with money, and all necessities for the comfort of life, I began to look upon myself as a gentleman of some consequence, and felt my pride dilate apace.

Next day we sailed for Port Royal, where we arrived safely with our prizes; and as there was nothing to do on board, I went ashore, and having purchased a laced waistcoat, with some other clothes at a sale, made a swaggering figure for some days, among the taverns, where I ventured to play a little at hazard, and came off with fifty pistoles in my pocket. Meanwhile our captain was promoted to a ship of twenty guns, and the command of the Lizard given to a man turned of fourscore, who had been lieutenant since the reign of King William, and notwithstanding his long service, would have probably died in that station, had he not applied some prize-money he had lately received, to make interest with his superiors. My friend Brayl was also made an officer about the same time, after he had served in quality of a midshipman and mate five and twenty years. Soon after these alterations, the admiral pitched upon our ship to carry home dispatches for the ministry; and we set sail for England, having first scrubbed her bottom, and taken in provision and water for the occasion.



T H E
A D V E N T U R E S
O F
R O D E R I C K R A N D O M,
VOLUME THE SECOND,

C H A P. I.

WE DEPART FOR EUROPE—A MIS-
UNDERSTANDING ARISES BE-
TWEEN THE CAPTAIN AND SUR-
GEON, THROUGH THE SCANDA-
LOUS ASPERSIONS OF CRAMPLEY
—THE CAPTAIN DIES—CRAMP-
LEY TYRANNIZES OVER THE
SURGEON, WHO FALLS A VICTIM
TO HIS CRUELTY—I AM ALSO
ILL USED—THE SHIP STRIKES—
THE BEHAVIOUR OF CRAMPLEY
AND THE SEAMEN ON THAT OC-
CASION—I GET ON SHORE, CHAL-
LENGE THE CAPTAIN TO SINGLE
COMBAT—AM TREACHEROUSLY
KNOCKED DOWN, WOUNDED, AND
ROBBED.

OW that I could return
to my native country in a
credible way, I felt ex-
cessive pleasure in finding
myself out of sight of that
fatal island, which has been the grave
of so many Europeans; and as I was
accommodated with every thing to ren-
der the passage agreeable, I resolved to
enjoy myself as much as the insolence
of Crampley would permit. This in-
famous slanderer had found means al-
ready to cause a misunderstanding be-

tween the surgeon and captain, who by
his age and infirmities was rendered in-
tolerably peevish, his disposition having
also been soured by a long course of
disappointments. He had a particular
aversion to all young men, especially
to surgeons, whom he considered as
unnecessary animals on board of a ship;
and in consequence of these sentiments,
never consulted the doctor, notwith-
standing his being seized with a violent
fit of the gout and gravel; but applied
to a cask of Holland gin, which was
his sovereign prescription against all
distempers. Whether he was at this
time too sparing, or took an over-dose
of his cordial, certain it is he departed in
the night, without any ceremony, which
indeed was a thing he always despised,
and was found stiff next morning, to
the no small satisfaction of Crampley,
who succeeded to the command of the
vessel. For that very reason Mr. Tom-
lins and I had no cause to rejoice at
this event, fearing that the tyranny of
our new commander would now be as
unlimited as his power. The first
day of his command justified our ap-
prehension: for on pretence that the
decks were too much crouded, he or-
dered the surgeon's hen-coops, with all
his fowls, to be thrown over-board;
and at the same time prohibited him
and

and me from appearing on the quarter-deck. Mr. Tomlins could not help complaining of these injuries, and in the course of his expostulation dropped some hasty words, of which Crampley taking hold, confined him to his cabin, where, in a few days, for want of air, he was attacked by a fever, which soon put an end to his life, after he had made his will, by which he bequeathed all his estate, personal and real, to his sister; and left to me his watch and instruments, as memorials of his friendship. I was penetrated with grief on this melancholy occasion; the more, because there was nobody on board, to whom I could communicate my sorrows, or of whom I could receive the least consolation or advice. Crampley was so far from discovering the least remorse for his barbarity, at the news of the surgeon's death, that he insulted his memory in the most abusive manner, and affirmed he had poisoned himself out of pure fear, dreading to be brought to a court-martial for mutiny; for which reason he would not suffer the service of the dead to be read over his body, before it was thrown over-board.

Nothing but a speedy deliverance could have supported me under the brutal sway of this bashaw, who to render my life the more irksome, signified to my mess-mates, a desire that I should be expelled from their society. This was no sooner hinted, than they granted his request; and I was fain to eat in a solitary manner by myself during the rest of the passage, which however soon drew to a period.

We had been seven weeks at sea, when the gunner told the captain, that by his reckoning we must be in foundings, and desired he would order the lead to be heaved. Crampley swore, he did not know how to keep the ship's way, for we were not within a hundred leagues of foundings, and therefore he would not give himself the trouble to cast the lead. Accordingly we continued our course all that afternoon and night, without shortening sail, although the gunner pretended to discover Scilly light; and next morning protested in form against the captain's conduct; for which conduct he was put in confinement. We discovered no land all that day, and Crampley was still so infatuated as to neglect sounding; but at three o'clock in the

morning the ship struck, and remained fast on a sand-bank. This accident alarmed the whole crew; the boat was immediately hoisted out, but as we could not discern which way the shore lay, we were obliged to wait for daylight. In the mean time, the wind increased, and the waves beat against the sloop with such violence, that we expected she would have gone to pieces. The gunner was released and consulted: he advised the captain to cut away the mast in order to lighten her; this expedient was performed without success. The sailors seeing things in a desperate situation, according to custom, broke up the chests belonging to the officers, dressed themselves in their clothes, drank their liquors without ceremony; and drunkenness, tumult, and confusion, ensued. In the midst of the uproar, I went below to secure my own effects; and found the carpenter's mate hewing down the purser's cabin with his hatchet, whistling all the while with great composure. When I asked his intention in so doing, he replied very calmly, 'I only want to taste the purser's rum; that's all, master.' At that instant the purser coming down, and seeing his effects going to wreck, complained bitterly of the injustice done to him, and asked the fellow what occasion he had for liquor, when in all likelihood he should be in eternity in a few minutes. 'All's one for that,' said the plunderer, 'let us live while we can.'—'Miserable wretch that thou art,' cried the purser, 'what must be thy lot in the other world, if thou diest in the commission of robbery?'—'Why, hell, I suppose,' replied the other, with great deliberation; while the purser fell on his knees, and begged of Heaven that we might not all perish for the sake of one Jonas. During this dialogue, I clothed myself in my best apparel, girded on my hanger, stuck my pistols loaded in my belt, disposed of all my valuable moveables about my person, and came upon deck with a resolution of taking the first opportunity to get on shore, which when the day broke, appeared at the distance of three miles a-head. Crampley finding his efforts to get the ship off ineffectual, determined to consult his own safety, by going into the boat, which he had no sooner done, than the ship's company followed so fast, that she would

would have sunk along-side, had not some one wiser than the rest cut the rope, and put off. But before this happened, I had made several attempts to get in, and was always baulked by the captain, who was so eager in excluding me, that he did not mind the endeavours of any other body. Enraged at this inhuman partiality, and seeing the rope cut, I pulled one of my pistols from my belt, and cocking it, swore I would shoot any man who should presume to obstruct my entrance. So saying, I leaped with my full exertion, and got on board of the boat with the loss of the skin of my shins. I chanced in my descent to overturn Crampley, who no sooner got up than he struck at me several times with a cutlass, and ordered the men to throw me overboard; but they were too anxious about their own safety to mind what he said. Though the boat was very deeply loaded, and the sea terribly high, we made shift to get upon dry land in less than an hour after we parted from the sloop. As soon as I set foot on *terra firma*, my indignation, which had boiled so long within me, broke out against Crampley, whom I immediately challenged to single combat, presenting my pistols; that he might take his choice: he took one without hesitation; and before I could cock the other, fired in my face, throwing the pistol after the shot. I felt myself stunned, and imagining the bullet had entered my brain, discharged mine as quick as possible, that I might not die unrevenged: then flying upon my antagonist, knocked out several of his fore-teeth with the butt-end of the piece, and would certainly have made an end of him with that instrument, had he not disengaged himself, and seized his cutlass, which he had given to his servant when he received the pistol. Seeing him armed in this manner, I drew my hanger, and having flung my pistol at his head, closed with him in a transport of fury, and thrust my weapon into his mouth, which it enlarged one side to his ear. Whether the smart of this wound disconcerted him, or the unevenness of the ground made him reel, I know not; but he staggered some paces back: I followed close, and with one stroke cut the tendons of the back of his hand, upon which his cutlass dropt, and he remained defenceless. I know not with

what cruelty my rage might have inspired me, if I had not at that instant been felled to the ground by a blow on the back part of my head, which deprived me of all sensation. In this deplorable situation, exposed to the rage of an incensed barbarian, and the rapine of an inhuman crew, I remained for some time; and whether any disputes arose among them during the state of my annihilation, I cannot pretend to determine; but in one particular they seem to have been unanimous, and acted with equal dexterity and dispatch; for when I recovered the use of understanding, I found myself alone in a desolate place, stript of my clothes, money, watch, buckles, and every thing but my shoes, stockings, breeches, and shirt. What a discovery must this have been to me, who but an hour before was worth sixty guineas in cash! I cursed the hour of my birth, the parents that gave me being, the sea that did not swallow me up, the poignard of the enemy, which could not find the way to my heart, the villainy of those who had left me in that miserable condition; and in the ecstasy of despair, resolved to lie still where I was and perish.

CHAP. II.

I GET UP AND CRAWL INTO A BARN, WHERE I AM IN DANGER OF PERISHING THROUGH THE FEAR OF THE COUNTRY PEOPLE—THEIR INHUMANITY—I AM SUCCOURED BY A REPUTED WITCH—HER STORY—HER ADVICE—SHE RECOMMENDS ME AS A VALET TO A SINGLE LADY, WHOSE CHARACTER SHE EXPLAINS.

BUT as I lay ruminating, my passion insensibly abated; I considered my situation in quite another light from that in which it appeared to me at first, and the result of my deliberation was to rise if I could, and crawl to the next inhabited place for assistance. With some difficulty I got upon my legs, and having examined my body, found I had received no other injury than two large contused wounds, one on the fore and another on the hinder part of my head, which seemed to

be

be occasioned by the same weapon; namely, the but-end of a pistol. I looked towards the sea, but could discern no remains of the ship; so that I concluded she was gone to pieces, and that those who remained in her had perished: but as I afterwards learned, the gunner, who had more sagacity than Crampley, observing that it was flood when he left her, and that she would probably float at high water, made no noise about getting on shore, but continued on deck, in hopes of bringing her safe into some harbour, after the commander should have deserted her; for which piece of service he expected, no doubt, to be handsomely rewarded. This scheme he accordingly executed, and was promised great things by the admiralty for saving his majesty's ship; but I never heard he reaped the fruits of his expectation. As for my own part, I directed my course towards a small cottage I perceived, and in the road picked up a seaman's old jacket, which I suppose the thief who dressed himself in my clothes had thrown away; this was a very comfortable acquisition to me, who was almost stiff with cold: I therefore put it on, and as my natural heat revived, my wounds, which had left off bleeding, burst out afresh; so that finding myself excessively exhausted, I was about to lie down in the fields, when I discovered a barn on my left-hand within a few yards of me: thither I made shift to stagger, and finding the door open, went in, but saw nobody; however, I threw myself upon a truss of straw, hoping to be soon relieved by some person or other. I had not lain here many minutes, when I saw a countryman come in with a pitch-fork in his hand, which he was upon the point of thrusting into the straw that concealed me, and in all probability would have done my business; had I not uttered a dreadful groan, after having essayed in vain to speak. This melancholy note alarmed the clown, who started back, and discovering a body all besmeared with blood, stood trembling, with the pitch-fork extended before him, his hair bristling up, his eyes staring, his nostrils dilated, and his mouth wide open. At another time I should have been much diverted by this figure, which preserved the same attitude very near ten minutes, during which time I made

many unsuccessful efforts to implore his compassion and assistance; but my tongue failed me, and my language was only a repetition of groans. At length an old man arrived, who seeing the other in such a posture, cried, 'Mercy upon 'em! the leaard's bewitched; why, 'Dick, beest thou besayd thyself!' Dick, without moving his eyes from the object that terrified him, replied, 'O vather! vather! here be either 'the devil or a dead mon: I doant 'know which o'en, but a groans 'woundily.' The father, whose eyesight was none of the best, pulled out his spectacles, and having applied them to his nose, reconnoitred me over his son's shoulder. But no sooner did he behold me, than he was seized with a fit of shaking, even more violent than Dick's, and with a broken accent addressed me thus: 'In the name of the 'Vather, Zun, and Holy Ghost, I 'charge you an you been Satan to be 'gone to the Red Zea; but an you be 'a moordered man, speak, that you 'may have a christom burial.' As I was not in a condition to satisfy him in this particular, he repeated his conjuration to no purpose; and they continued a good while in the agonies of fear. At length the father proposed that the son should draw nearer, and take a more distinct view of the apparition; but Dick was of opinion that his father should advance first, as being an old man past his labour, and if he received any mischief, the loss would be the smaller; whereas he himself might escape, and be useful in his generation. This prudential reason had no effect upon the senior, who still kept Dick between me and him. In the mean time I endeavoured to raise one hand as a signal of distress, but had only strength sufficient to produce a rustling among the straw, which discomposed the young peasant so much, that he sprung out at the door, and overthrew his father in his flight. The old gentleman would not spend time in getting up, but crawled backwards like a crab, with great speed, till he had got over the threshold, mumbling exorcisms all the way. I was exceedingly mortified to find myself in danger of perishing through the ignorance and cowardice of these clowns; and felt my spirits decay apace, when an old woman entered the barn, followed by

by the two fugitives, and with great intrepidity advanced to the place where I lay, saying, 'If it be the devil I feare not, and for a dead mon a can do us no harm.' When she saw my condition, she cried, 'Here be no de-vil, but in youren fool's head. Here be a poor miserable wretch bleeding to death, and if a dies, we must be at the charge of burying him; there-fore, Dick, go vetch the old wheel-barrow and puten in, and carry en to goodman Hodge's back-door, he is more eable than we to lay out money upon poor vagrants.' Her advice was taken, and immediately put in execution: I was rolled to the other farmer's door, where I was tumbled out like a heap of dung; and would certainly have fallen a prey to the hogs, if my groans had not disturbed the family, and brought some of them out to view my situation. But Hodge resembled the Jew more than the good Samaritan, and ordered me to be carried to the house of the parson, whose business it was to practise as well as to preach charity: observing, that it was sufficient for him to pay his quota towards the maintenance of the poor belonging to his own parish. When I was set down at the vicar's gate, he fell into a mighty passion, and threatened to excommunicate him who sent, as well as those who brought me, unless they would move me immediately to another place. About this time I fainted with the fatigue I had undergone, and afterwards understood that I was bandied from door to door through a whole village, nobody having humanity enough to administer the least relief to me, until an old woman, who was suspected of witchcraft by the neighbourhood, hearing of my distress, received me into her house, and having dressed my wounds, brought me to myself with cordials of her own preparing. I was treated with great care and tenderness by this grave matron; who, after I had recovered some strength, desired to know the particulars of my last disaster. This piece of satisfaction I could not refuse to one who had saved my life; therefore related all my adventures without exaggeration or reserve. She seemed surprized at the vicissitudes I had undergone, and drew a happy presage of my future life from my past sufferings, then launched out

into the praise of adversity with so much ardour and good-sense, that I concluded she was a person who had seen better days, and conceived a longing desire to hear her story. She perceived my drift by some words I dropped, and smiling, told me, there was nothing either entertaining or extraordinary in the course of her fortune; but, however, she would communicate it to me, in consideration of the confidence I had reposed in her. 'It is of little consequence,' said she, 'to tell the names of my parents, who are dead many years ago: let it suffice to assure you, they were wealthy, and had no other child than me; so that I was looked upon as heiress to a considerable estate, and teized with addresses on that account. Among the number of my admirers, there was a young gentleman of no fortune, whose sole dependence was on his promotion in the army, in which, at that time, he bore a lieutenant's commission. I conceived an affection for this amiable officer, which in a short time increased to a violent passion; and, without entering into minute circumstances, married him privately. We had not enjoyed one another long in stolen interviews, when he was ordered with his regiment to Flanders; but before he set out, it was agreed between us, that he should declare our marriage to my father by letter, and implore his pardon for the step we had taken without his approbation. This discovery was made while I was abroad visiting; and just as I was about to return home, I received a letter from my father, importing, that since I had acted so undutifully and meanly, as to marry a beggar, without his privity or consent, to the disgrace of his family, as well as the disappointment of his hopes, he renounced me to the miserable fate I had entailed upon myself, and charged me never to set foot within his doors again. This rigid sentence was confirmed by my mother; who, in a postscript, gave me to understand, that her sentiments were exactly conformable to those of my father, and that I might save myself the trouble of making any applications, for her resolutions were unalterable. Thunder-struck with my evil fortune, I called a coach, and drove to my hus-

band's lodgings, where I found him waiting the event of his letter. Though he could easily divine by my looks the issue of his declaration, he read with great steadiness the epistle I had received; and with a smile full of tenderness, which I shall never forget, embraced me, saying, "I believe the good lady your mother might have spared herself the trouble of the last part of her postscript. Well, my dear Betty, you must lay aside all thoughts of a coach, till I can procure the command of a regiment." This unconcerned behaviour, while it enabled me to support my reverse of fortune, at the same time endeared him to me the more, by convincing me of his disinterested views in espousing me. I was next day boarded in company with the wife of another officer, who had long been the friend and confident of my husband, at a village not far from London, where they parted with us in the most melting manner, went to Flanders, and were killed in fight of one another at the battle of the Wood. Why should I tire you with a description of our unutterable sorrow at the fatal news of this event, the remembrance of which now fills my aged eyes with tears! When our grief subsided a little, and reflection came to our aid, we found ourselves deserted by the whole world, and in danger of perishing by want: whereupon we made application for the pension, and were put upon the list. Then vowing eternal friendship, sold our jewels and superfluous clothes, retired to this place (which is in the county of Sussex) bought this little house, where we lived many years in a solitary manner, indulging our mutual sorrow, till it pleased Heaven to call away my companion two years ago, since which time I have lingered out an unhappy being, in hopes of a speedy dissolution, when I promise myself the eternal reward of all my cares. In the mean time," continued she, "I must inform you of the character I bear among my neighbours. My conversation being different from that of the inhabitants of the village; my recluse way of life; my skill in curing distempers, which I acquired from books since I settled here; and lastly, my age; have made

the common people look upon me as something preternatural, and I am actually at this hour believed to be a witch. The parson of the parish, whose acquaintance I have not been at much pains to cultivate, taking umbrage at my supposed disrespect, has contributed not a little towards the confirmation of this opinion, by dropping certain hints to my prejudice among the vulgar, who also are very much scandalized at my entertaining this poor tabby cat with the collar about her neck, which was a favourite of my deceased companion."

The whole behaviour of this venerable person was so primitive, innocent, sensible and humane, that I contracted a filial respect for her, and begged her advice with regard to my future conduct, as soon as I was in a condition to act for myself. She dissuaded me from a design I had formed of travelling to London, in hopes of retrieving my clothes and pay, by returning to my ship, which by this time, I read in the newspaper, was safely arrived in the River Thames: "Be-cause," said she, "you run the hazard of being treated not only as a deserter, in quitting the sloop, but also as a mutineer in assaulting your commanding officer, to the malice of whose revenge you will moreover be exposed." She then promised to recommend me as servant to a single lady, of her acquaintance, who lived in the neighbourhood with her nephew, who was a young fox-hunter of great fortune, where I might be very happy, provided I could bear the disposition and manners of my mistress, which were somewhat whimsical and particular. But above all things she counselled me to conceal my story, the knowledge of which would effectually poison my entertainment; for it was a maxim among most people of condition, that no gentleman in distress ought to be admitted into a family, as a domestic, lest he should become proud, lazy, and insolent. I was fain to embrace this humble proposal, because my affairs were desperate; and in a few days was hired by this lady, to serve in quality of her footman; having been represented by my hostess as a young man who was bred up to the sea by his relations against his will, and had suffered shipwreck, which had encreased

his disgust to that way of life so much, that he rather chose to go to service on shore, than enter himself on board any other ship. Before I took possession of my new place, she gave me a sketch of my mistress's character, that I might know better how to regulate my conduct. 'Your lady,' said she, 'is a maiden of forty years, not so remarkable for her beauty as her learning and taste, which is famous all over the country. Indeed she is a perfect female virtuoso, and so eager after the pursuit of knowledge, that she neglects her person even to a degree of sluttishness: this negligence, together with her contempt of the male part of the creation, gives her nephew no great concern; as by those means, he will probably keep her fortune, which is very considerable, in the family. He therefore permits her to live in her own way, which is something extraordinary, and gratifies her in all her whimsical desires. Her apartment is at some distance from the other inhabited parts of the house; and consists of a dining-room, bed-chamber, and study: she keeps a cook-maid, waiting-woman, and footman of her own, and seldom eats or converses with any of the family but her niece, who is a very lovely creature, and humours her aunt often to the prejudice of her own health, by sitting up with her whole nights together; for your mistress is too much of a philosopher to be swayed by the customs of the world, and never sleeps or eats like other people. Among other odd notions, she professes the principles of Rosicrucius, and believes the earth, air, and sea, are inhabited by invisible beings, with whom it is possible for the human species to entertain correspondence and intimacy on the easy condition of living chaste. As she hopes one day to be admitted into an acquaintance of this kind, she no sooner heard of me and my cat, than she paid me a visit, with a view, as she hath since owned, to be introduced to my familiar; and was greatly mortified to find herself disappointed in her expectation. Being, by this visionary turn of mind, abstracted as it were from the world, she cannot advert to the common occurrences of life; and therefore is

'frequently so absent as to commit very strange mistakes and extravagancies, which you will do well to rectify and repair as your prudence shall suggest.'

CHAP. III.

MY RECEPTION BY THAT LADY—
I BECAME ENAMOURED OF NARCISSA—RECOUNT THE PARTICULARS OF MY LAST MISFORTUNE—ACQUIRE THE GOOD OPINION OF MY MISTRESS—AN ACCOUNT OF THE YOUNG SQUIRE—I AM MADE ACQUAINTED WITH MORE PARTICULARS OF NARCISSA'S SITUATION—CONCEIVE A MORTAL HATRED AGAINST SIR TIMOTHY—EXAMINE MY LADY'S LIBRARY AND PERFORMANCES—HER EXTRAVAGANT BEHAVIOUR.

FRAUGHT with these useful instructions, I repaired to the place of her habitation, and was introduced by the waiting-woman to the presence of my lady, who had not before seen me. She sat in her study, with one foot on the ground, and the other upon a high stool at some distance from her seat; her sandy locks hung down in a disorder I cannot call beautiful, from her head, which was deprived of it's coif, for the benefit of scratching with one hand, while she held the stump of a pen in the other. Her forehead was high and wrinkled, her eyes were large, grey, and prominent; her nose was long, sharp, and aquiline; her mouth of vast capacity; her visage meagre and freckled, and her chin peaked like a shoemaker's paring knife; her upper lip contained a large quantity of plain Spanish, which, by continual falling, had embroidered her neck, that was not naturally very white, and the breast of her gown, that flowed loose about her with a negligence truly poetic, discovering linen that was very fine, and, to all appearance, never washed but in *Castalian streams*. Around her lay heaps of books, globes, quadrants, telescopes, and other learned apparatus; her snuff-box stood at her right-hand; at her left-hand lay her handkerchief sufficiently used; and a convenience to spit in, appeared on one

side of her chair. She being in a reverie when we entered, the maid did not think proper to disturb her; so that we waited some minutes unobserved, during which time, she bit the quill several times, altered her position, made many wry faces, and at length, with an air of triumph, repeated aloud:

‘Nor dare th’ immortal gods my rage oppose!’

Having committed her success to paper, she turned towards the door, and perceiving us, cried, ‘What’s the matter?’—‘Here’s the young man,’ replied my conductress, ‘whom Mrs. Sagely recommended as a footman to your ladyship.’ On this information she stared in my face a considerable time, and then asked my name, which I thought proper to conceal under that of John Brown. After having surveyed me with a curious eye, she broke out into, ‘O aye! thou wast shipwrecked, I remember. Whether didst thou come on shore on the back of a whale or a dolphin?’ To this I answered, I had swam ashore without any assistance. Then she demanded to know if I had ever been at the Hellespont, and swam from Sestos to Abydos. I replied in the negative. Upon which she bade the maid order a suit of new livery for me, and instruct me in the articles of my duty; so saying, she spit in her snuff-box, and wiped her nose with her cap which lay on the table, instead of a handkerchief. We returned to the kitchen, where I was regaled by the maids, who seemed to vie with each other in expressing their regard for me; and from them I understood that my business consisted in cleaning knives and forks, laying the cloth, waiting at table, carrying messages, and attending my lady when she went abroad. There was a very good suit of livery in the house, which had belonged to my predecessor deceased, and it fitted me exactly; so that there was no occasion for employing a taylor on my account. I had not long been equipped in this manner, when my lady’s bell rung; upon which I ran up stairs, and found her stalking about the room in her shift and under-petticoat only: I would have immediately retired as became me, but she bid me come in, and air a clean shift for her; which operation I having

performed with some backwardness, she put it on before me without any ceremony, and I verily believe was ignorant of my sex all that time, as being quite absorbed in contemplation. About four o’clock in the afternoon, I was ordered to lay the cloth, and place two covers, which I understood were for my mistress and her niece, whom I had not as yet seen. Though I was not very dexterous at this work, I performed it pretty well for a beginner; and when dinner was upon the table, saw my mistress approach, accompanied by the young lady, whose name for the present shall be Narcissa. So much sweetness appeared in the countenance and carriage of this amiable apparition, that my heart was captivated at first sight, and while dinner lasted, I gazed upon her without intermission. Her age seemed to be seventeen, her stature tall, her shape unexceptionable, her hair, that fell down upon her ivory neck in ringlets, black as jet; her arched eyebrows of the same colour; her eyes piercing, yet tender; her lips of the consistence and hue of cherries; her complexion clear, delicate, and healthy; her aspect noble, ingenuous, and humane; and the whole person so ravishingly delightful, that it was impossible for any creature, endued with sensibility, to see without admiring, and admire without loving her to excess! I began to curse the servile station that placed me so far beneath the regard of this idol of my adoration! and yet I blessed my fate, that enabled me to enjoy daily the sight of so much perfection! When she spoke, I listened with pleasure; but when she spoke to me, my soul was thrilled with an extasy of tumultuous joy! I was even so happy as to be the subject of their conversation: for Narcissa having observed me, said to her aunt, ‘I see your new footman is come.’ Then addressing herself to me, asked, with ineffable complacency, if I was the person who had been so cruelly used by the robbers. When I satisfied her in this, she expressed a desire of knowing the other particulars of my fortune, both before and since my being shipwrecked: hereupon (as Mrs. Sagely had counselled me) I told her that I had been bound apprentice to the master of a ship, contrary to my inclination, which ship had foundered at sea; that I and four more, who chanced to be on deck when

when she went down, made shift to swim to the shore, when my companions, after having overpowered me, stript me to the shirt, and left me, as they imagined, dead of the wounds I received in my own defence. Then I related the circumstances of my being found in a barn, with the inhuman treatment I met with from the country people and parson; the description of which, I perceived, drew tears from the charming creature's eyes. When I had finished my recital, my mistress said, '*Ma foi! le garçon est bien fait!*' To which opinion Narcissa assented, with a compliment to my understanding, in the same language, that flattered my vanity extremely.

The conversation, among other subjects, turned upon the young squire, whom my lady enquired after, under the title of the savage; and was informed by her niece, that he was still in bed, repairing the fatigue of last night's debauch, and recruiting strength and spirits to undergo a fox-chace tomorrow morning, in company with Sir Timothy Thicket, Squire Bumper, and a great many other gentlemen of the same stamp, whom he had invited on that occasion; so that by day-break, the whole house would be in an uproar. This was a very disagreeable piece of news to the virtuoso, who protested she would stuff her ears with cotton when she went to bed, and take a dose of opium to make her sleep the more sound, that she might not be disturbed and distracted by the clamour of the brutes.

When their dinner was over, I and my fellow-servants set down to ours in the kitchen, where I understood that Sir Timothy Thicket was a wealthy knight in the neighbourhood, between whom and Narcissa a match had been projected by her brother, who promised at the same time to espouse Sir Timothy's sister; by which means, as their fortunes were pretty equal, the young ladies would be provided for, and their brothers be never the poorer; but that the ladies did not concur in the scheme, each of them entertaining a hearty contempt for the person allotted to her for a husband by this agreement. This information begat in me a mortal aversion to Sir Timothy, whom I looked upon as my rival, and cursed in my heart for his presump-

tion. Next morning by day-break being awaked by the noise of the hunters and hounds, I rose to view the cavalcade, and had a sight of my competitor, whose accomplishments (the estate excluded) did not seem brilliant enough to give me much uneasiness with respect to Narcissa, who, I flattered myself, was not to be won by such qualifications as he was master of, either as to person or mind. My mistress, notwithstanding her precaution, was so much disturbed by her nephew's company, that she did not rise till five o'clock in the afternoon: so that I had an opportunity of examining her study at leisure, to which examination I was strongly prompted by my curiosity. Here I found a thousand scraps of her own poetry, consisting of three, four, ten, twelve, and twenty lines, on an infinity of subjects, which, as whim inspired, she had began, without constancy or capacity to bring to any degree of composition: but what was very extraordinary in a female poet, there was not the least mention made of love in any of her performances. I counted fragments of five tragedies, the titles of which were, The Stern Philosopher; The Double Murder; The Sacrilegious Traitor; The Fall of Lucifer; and, The Last Day. From whence I gathered that her disposition was gloomy, and her imagination delighted with objects of horror. Her library was composed of the best English historians, poets, and philosophers; of all the French criticks and poets, and of a few books in Italian, chiefly poetry, at the head of which were Tasso and Ariosto, pretty much used. Besides these, translations of the classics into French, but not one book in Greek or Latin; a circumstance that discovered her ignorance in these languages. After having taken a full view of this collection, I retired, and at the usual time was preparing to lay the cloth, when I was told by the maid that her mistress was still in bed, and had been so affected with the notes of the hounds in the morning, that she actually believed herself a hare beset by the hunters; and begged a few greens to munch for breakfast. When I expressed my surprize at this unaccountable imagination, she gave me to understand, that her lady was very much subject to whims of this nature; some-

sometimes fantying herself an animal, sometimes a piece of furniture; during which conceited transformations it was very dangerous to come near her, especially when she represented a beast; for that lately, in the character of a cat, she had flown at her and scratched her face in a terrible manner: that some months ago she prophesied the general conflagration was at hand, and nothing would be able to quench it but her water, which therefore she kept so long that her life was in danger, and she must needs have died of the retention, had they not found an expedient to make her evacuate, by kindling a bonfire under her chamber window, and persuading her that the house was in flames; upon which, with great deliberation, she bade them bring all the tubs and vessels they could find to be filled, for the preservation of the house, into one of which she immediately discharged the cause of her distemper. I was also informed, that nothing contributed so much to the recovery of her reason as music, which was always administered on those occasions by Narcissa, who played perfectly well on the harpsichord, and to whom she (the maid) was just then going to intimate her aunt's disorder. She was no sooner gone, than I was summoned by the bell to my lady's chamber, where I found her sitting squat on her hams on the floor, in the manner of pufs when she listens to the outcries of her pursuers. When I appeared, she started up with an alarmed look, and sprung to the other side of the room to avoid me, whom, without doubt, she mistook for a beagle thirsting after her life. Perceiving her extreme confusion I retired, and on the stair-case met the adorable Narcissa coming up, to whom I imparted the situation of my mistress: she said not a word, but smiling with unspeakable grace, went into her aunt's apartment, and in a little time my ears were ravished with the effects of her skill. She accompanied the instrument with a voice so sweet and melodious, that I did not wonder at the surprizing change it produced on the spirits of my mistress, which were soon composed to peace and sober reflection.

About seven o'clock the hunters arrived, with the skins of two foxes and one badger, carried before them as trophies

of their success: and when they were about to sit down to dinner (or supper) Sir Timothy Thicket desired that Narcissa would honour the table with her presence: but this request, notwithstanding her brother's threats and intreaties, she refused, on pretence of attending her aunt, who was indisposed; so I enjoyed the satisfaction of seeing my rival mortified: but this disappointment made no great impression on him, who consoled himself with the bottle, of which the whole company became so enamoured, that after a most horrid uproar of laughing, singing, sweating, dancing, and fighting, they were all carried to bed in a state of utter oblivion. My duty being altogether detached from the squire and his family, I led a pretty easy and comfortable life, drinking daily intoxicating draughts of love from the charms of Narcissa, which brightened on my contemplation every day more and more. Inglorious as my station was, I became blind to my own unworthiness, and even conceived hopes of one day enjoying this amiable creature, whose affability greatly encouraged these presumptuous thoughts.

CHAP. IV.

MY MISTRESS IS SURPRIZED AT MY LEARNING—COMMUNICATES HER PERFORMANCES TO ME—I IMPART SOME OF MINE TO HER—AM MORTIFIED AT HER FAINT PRAISE—NARCISSA APPROVES OF MY CONDUCT—I GAIN AN INVOLUNTARY CONQUEST OVER THE COOK—WENCH AND DAIRY-MAID—THEIR MUTUAL RESENTMENT AND INSINUATIONS—THE JEALOUSY OF THEIR LOVERS.

DURING this season of love and tranquility, my muse, which had lain dormant so long, awoke, and produced several small performances on the subject of my flame: but as it concerned me nearly to remain undiscovered in my real character and sentiments, I was under a necessity of mortifying my desire of praise, by confining my works to my own perusal and applause. In the mean time I strove to insinuate myself into the good opinion of both ladies; and succeeded so well, by my diligence

diligence and dutiful behaviour, that in a little time I was at least a favourite servant, and frequently enjoyed the pleasure of hearing myself mentioned in French and Italian with some degree of warmth and surprize, by the dear object of all my wishes, as a person who had so much of the gentleman in my appearance and discourse, that she could not for her soul treat me like a common lacquey. My prudence and modesty were not long proof against these bewitching compliments. One day, while I waited at dinner, the conversation turned upon a knotty passage of Tasso's *Gierusalem*, which it seems had puzzled them both. After a great many unsatisfactory conjectures, my mistress taking the book out of her pocket, turned up to the place in question, and read the sentence over and over without success; at length, despairing of finding the author's meaning, she turned to me, saying, 'Come hither Bruno, let us see what fortune will do for us; I will interpret to thee what goes before and what follows this obscure paragraph, the particular words of which I will also explain, that thou mayest, by comparing one with another, guess the sense of that which perplexes us.' I was too vain to let slip this opportunity of displaying my talents, therefore, without hesitation, read and explained the whole of that which had disconcerted them, to the utter astonishment of both. Narcissa's face and lovely neck were overspread with blushes, from which I drew a favourable omen; while her aunt, after having stared at me a good while, with a look of amazement, exclaimed, 'In the name of Heaven! who art thou?' I told her I had picked up a smattering of Italian, during a voyage up the Straits. At this explanation she shook her head, and observed that no smatterer could read as I had done. She then desired to know if I understood French. To which question I answered in the affirmative. She asked if I was acquainted with the Latin and Greek? I replied, 'A little.' 'Oho!' continued she, 'and with philosophy and mathematicks, I suppose?' I owned I knew something of each. Then she repeated her stare and interrogation. I began to repent of my vanity; and in order to repair the fault I had committed, said it was not

to be wondered at if I had a tolerable education, for learning was so cheap in my country, that every peasant was a scholar; but I hoped her ladyship would think my understanding no exception to my character. She was pleased to answer, 'No, no; God forbid!' But during the rest of the time they sat at table, they behaved with remarkable reserve.

This alteration gave me great uneasiness, and I passed the night without sleep, in melancholy reflections on the vanity of young men, which prompts them to commit so many foolish actions, contrary to their own sober judgment. Next day, however, instead of profiting by this self-condemnation, I yielded still more to the dictates of the principle I had endeavoured to chastise, and if fortune had not befriended me more than prudence could expect, I should have been treated with the contempt it deserved. After breakfast, my lady, who was a true author, bade me follow her into the study, where she expressed herself thus: 'Since you are so learned, you cannot be void of taste; therefore I am to desire your opinion of a small performance in poetry, which I lately composed. You must know I have planned a tragedy, the subject of which shall be the murder of a prince before the altar, where he is busy at his devotions. After the deed is perpetrated, the regicide will harangue the people with a bloody dagger in his hand; and I have already composed a speech, which I think will suit the character extremely. Here it is.' Then taking up a scrap of paper, she read it with violent emphasis and gesture, as follows:

'Thus have I sent the simple king to hell,
' Without or coffin, shroud, or passing bell.
' To me, what are divine and human laws!
' I court no sanction, but my own applause!
' Rapes, robb'ries, treasons, yield my soul
' delight,
' And human carnage gratifies my fight;
' I drag the parent by the hoary hair,
' And tofs the sprawling infant on my
' spear,
' While the fond mother's cries regale
' mine ear.
' I fight, I vanquish, murder friends and
' foes;
' Nor dare th' immortal gods my rage oppose.'

Though

Though I did great violence to my understanding in praising this unnatural rhapsody, I nevertheless extolled it as a production that of itself deserved immortal fame; and besought her ladyship to bless the world with the fruits of those uncommon talents Heaven had bestowed upon her. She smiled with a look of self-complacency; and, encouraged by the incense I had offered, communicated all her poetical works, which I applauded one by one, with as little candour as I had shewn at first. Satiated with my flattery, which I hope my situation justified, she could not in conscience refuse me an opportunity of shining in my turn; and therefore, after a compliment to my nice discernment and taste, observed, that doubtless I must have produced something in that way myself, which she desired to see. This was a temptation I could by no means resist. I owned, that while I was at college, I wrote some small detached pieces, at the desire of a friend who was in love; and at her request repeated the following verses, which indeed my love for Narcissa had inspired.

ON CELIA PLAYING ON THE HARP-
SICHORD AND SINGING.

I.

WHEN Sappho struck the quiv'ring
wire,
The throbbing breast was all on fire;
And when she rais'd the vocal lay,
The captive soul was charm'd away!

II.

But had the nymph possess, with these,
Thy softer, chaster pow'r to please;
Thy beauteous air of sprightly youth,
Thy native smiles of artless truth:

III.

The worm of grief had never prey'd
On the forsaken, love-sick maid;
Nor had she mourn'd an hapless flame,
Nor dash'd on rocks her tender frame.

My mistress paid me a cold compliment on my versification, which, she said, was elegant enough, but the subject beneath the pen of a true poet. I was extremely nettled at her indiffe-

rence, and looked at Narcissa, who by this time had joined us, for her approbation; but she declined giving her opinion, protesting she was no judge of these matters: so that I was forced to retire, very much baulked in my expectation, which was generally a little too sanguine. In the afternoon, however, the waiting-maid assured me, that Narcissa had expressed her approbation of my performance with great warmth, and desired her to procure a copy of it, as for herself, that she (Narcissa) might have an opportunity to peruse it at pleasure. I was elated to an extravagant pitch at this intelligence, and immediately transcribed a fair copy of my ode, which was carried to the dear charmer, together with another on the same subject, as follows.

I.

THY fatal shafts unerring move,
I bow before thine altar, Love!
I feel thy soft, resistless flame,
Glide swift through all my vital frame!

II.

For while I gaze, my bosom glows,
My blood in tides impetuous flows,
Hope, fear, and joy, alternate roll,
And floods of transports overwhelm my soul.

III.

My fault'ring tongue attempts in vain,
In soothing murmurs to complain;
My tongue some secret magic ties,
My murmurs sink in broken sighs!

IV.

Condemn'd to nurse eternal care,
And ever drop the silent tear,
Unheard I mourn, unknown I sigh,
Unfriended live, unpitied die.

Whether or not Narcissa discovered my passion, I could not learn from her behaviour, which, though always benevolent to me, was henceforth more reserved and less cheerful. While my thoughts aspired to a sphere so far above me, I had unwittingly made a conquest of the cook-wench and dairy-maid, who became so jealous of each other, that if their sentiments had been refined by education, it is probable

one or other of them would have had recourse to poison or steel, to be avenged of her rival; but as their minds were happily adapted to their humble station, their mutual enmity was confined to scolding and fifty-cuffs, in which exercises they were both well skilled. My good fortune did not long remain a secret; for it was disclosed by the frequent broils of these heroines, who kept no decorum in their encounters. The coachman and gardener, who paid their devoirs to my admirers, each to his respective choice, alarmed at my success, laid their heads together, in order to concert a plan of revenge; and the former having been educated at the academy of Tottenham Court, undertook to challenge me to single combat. He accordingly, with many opprobrious invectives, bade me defiance, and offered to box me for twenty guineas. I told him, that although I believed myself a match for him, even at that work, I would not descend so far below the dignity of a gentleman as to fight like a porter; but if he had any thing to say to me, I was his man at blunderbuss, musket, pistol, sword, hatchet, spit, cleaver, fork, or needle; nay, I swore, that should he give his tongue any more saucy liberties at my expence, I would crop his ears without any ceremony. This rhodomontade, delivered with a stern countenance, and resolute tone, had the desired effect upon my antagonist, who with some confusion sneaked off, and gave his friend an account of his reception. The story taking air among the servants, procured for me the title of Gentleman John, with which I was sometimes honoured even by my mistress and Narcissa, who had been informed of the whole affair by the chamber-maid. In the mean time, the rival queens expressed their passion by all the ways in their power: the cook entertained me with choice bits, the dairy-maid with stroakings; the first would often encourage me to discover myself, by complimenting me upon my courage and learning, and observing, that if she had a husband like me to maintain order and keep accompts, she could make a great deal of money by setting up an eating-house at London, for gentlemen's servants on board-wages. The other courted my affection, by shewing her own importance, and

telling me, that many a substantial farmer in the neighbourhood would be glad to marry her; but she was resolved to please her eye, if she should plague her heart. Then she would launch out into the praise of my proper person, and say, she was sure I would make a good husband, for I was very good-natured. I began to be uneasy at the importunities of these inamoratas, whom at another time, perhaps, I might have pleased without the disagreeable sauce of matrimony; but at present, my whole soul was engrossed by Narcissa, and I could not bear the thoughts of doing any thing derogatory of the passion I entertained for her.

C H A P. V.

NARCISSA BEING IN DANGER FROM THE BRUTALITY OF SIR TIMOTHY, IS RESCUED BY ME, WHO REVENGE MYSELF ON MY RIVAL—I DECLARE MY PASSION, AND RETREAT TO THE SEA-SIDE—AM SURROUNDED BY SMUGGLERS, AND CARRIED TO BULLOIGN—FIND MY UNCLE, LIEUTENANT BOWLING, IN GREAT DISTRESS, AND RELIEVE HIM—OUR CONVERSATION.

AT certain intervals, my ambition would revive; I would despise myself for my tame resignation to my fordid fate, and revolve an hundred schemes for assuming the character of a gentleman, to which I thought myself entitled by birth and education. In these fruitless suggestions time stole away unperceived, and I had already remained eight months in the station of a footman, when an accident happened, that put an end to my servitude, and for the present banished all hopes of succeeding in my love.

Narcissa went one day to visit Miss Thicket, who lived with her brother within less than a mile of our house, and was persuaded to walk home in the cool of the evening, accompanied by Sir Timothy; who, having a good deal of the brute in him, was instigated to use some unbecoming familiarities with her, encouraged by the solitariness of a field through which they passed. The lovely creature was incensed at his

T

rude

rude behaviour, for which she reproached him in such a manner, that he lost all regard to decency, and actually offered violence to this pattern of innocence and beauty. But Heaven would not suffer so much goodness to be violated; and sent me, who passing by accident near the place was alarmed with her cries, to her succour. What were the emotions of my soul, when I beheld Narcissa, almost sinking beneath the brutal force of this satyr! I flew like lightning to her rescue, and he perceiving me, quitted his prey, and drew his hanger to chastise my presumption. My indignation was too high to admit one thought of fear, so that rushing upon him, I struck his weapon out of his hand, and used my cudgel so successfully, that he fell to the ground, and lay, to all appearance, without sense. Then I turned to Narcissa, who had swooned, and sitting down by her, gently raised her head, and supported it on my bosom, while, with my hand around her waist, I kept her in that position. My soul was thrilled with tumultuous joy, at feeling the object of my dearest wishes within my arms; and while she lay insensible, I could not refrain from applying my cheek to her's and ravishing a kiss. In a little time, the blood began to revisit her face, she opened her enchanting eyes, and having recollected her late situation, said, with a look full of tender acknowledgment, 'Dear John, I am eternally obliged to you!' So saying, she made an effort to rise, in which I assisted her, and she proceeded to the house, leaning upon me all the way. I was a thousand times tempted by this opportunity to declare my passion, but the dread of disoblighing her, restrained my tongue. We had not moved an hundred paces from the scene of her distress, when I perceived Sir Timothy rise and walk homeward; a circumstance which, though it gave me some satisfaction, inasmuch as I thereby knew I had not killed him, filled me with just apprehension of his resentment, which I found myself in no condition to withstand; especially when I considered his intimacy with our squire, to whom I knew he could justify himself for what he had done, by imputing it to his love, and desiring his brother Bruin to take the same liberty with his sister, without any fear of of-

fence. When we arrived at the house, Narcissa assured me, she would exert all her influence in protecting me from the revenge of Thicket, and likewise engage her aunt in my favour. At the same time, pulling out her purse, offered it as a small consideration for the service I had done her. But I stood too much upon the punctilios of love to incur the least suspicion of being mercenary, and refused the present, by saying, I had merited nothing by barely doing my duty. She seemed astonished at my disinterestedness, and blushed; I felt the same suffusion, and with a down-cast eye, and broken accent, told her, I had one request to make, which, if her generosity would grant, I should think myself fully recompensed for an age of misery. She changed colour at this preamble, and, with great confusion, replied, she hoped my goodness would hinder me from asking any thing she was bound in honour to refuse, and therefore bade me signify my desire. Upon which I kneeled, and begged to kiss her hand. She immediately with an averted look, stretched it out; I imprinted on it an ardent kiss, and bathing it with my tears, cried, 'Dear Madam, I am an unfortunate gentleman, and love you to distraction, but would have died a thousand deaths rather than make this declaration under such a servile appearance, were I not determined to yield to the rigour of my fate, to fly from your bewitching presence, and bury my presumptuous passion in eternal silence.' With these words I rose and went away, before she could recover her spirits so far as to make any reply. My first care was to go and consult Mrs. Sagely, with whom I had maintained a friendly correspondence ever since I left her house. When she understood my situation, the good woman, with real concern, consoled me on my unhappy fate, and approved of my resolution to leave the country, as being perfectly well acquainted with the barbarous disposition of my rival; 'who, by this time,' said she, 'has no doubt meditated a scheme of revenge. Indeed, I cannot see how you will be able to elude his vengeance; being himself in the commission, he will immediately grant warrants for apprehending you; and as almost all the people in this country are de-

pendant

use,
all
the
en-
the
of-
the
too
in-
ree-
say-
rely
shed
; I
h a
told
ich,
ould
r an
or as
con-
good
any
o re-
y my
and
me-
ched
dent
ears,
un-
you
died
make
ervile
ed to
to fly
and
n in
words
e she
as to
as to
whom
spon-
When
good
doled
roved
ntry,
d with
rival;
e has
of re-
w you
ance;
n, he
s for
ost all
e de-
ndant



North sculp.

Printed as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. 27 June 1780.

1800
1801
1802

pendant on him or his friend, it will be impossible for you to find shelter among them: if you should be apprehended, he will commit you to gaol, where you may possibly languish in great misery till the next assizes, and then be transported for assaulting a magistrate.' While she thus warned me of my danger, we heard a knocking at the door, which threw us both into great consternation, as, in all probability, it was occasioned by my pursuers; whereupon this generous old lady putting two guineas into my hand, with tears in her eyes, bade me, for God's sake, get out at the back door, and consult my safety as Providence should direct me. There was no time for deliberation. I followed her advice, and escaped by the benefit of a dark night, to the sea-side, where, while I ruminated on my next excursion, I was all of a sudden surrounded by armed men, who having bound my hands and feet, bade me make no noise, on pain of being shot, and carried me on board of a vessel, which I soon perceived to be a smuggling cutter. This discovery gave me some satisfaction at first, because I concluded myself safe from the resentment of Sir Timothy. But when I found myself in the hands of ruffians, who threatened to execute me for a spy, I would have thought myself happily quit for a year's imprisonment, or even transportation. It was in vain for me to protest my innocence: I could not persuade them that I had taken a solitary walk to their haunt, at such an hour, merely for my own amusement; and I did not think it my interest to disclose the true cause of my retreat, because I was afraid they would have made their peace with justice by surrendering me to the penalty of the law. What confirmed their suspicion was, the appearance of a custom-house yacht, which gave them chase, and had well nigh made a prize of their vessel; when they were delivered from their fears by a thick fog, which effectually screened them, and favoured their arrival at Bulloign. But before they got out of sight of their pursuer, they held a council of war about me, and some of the most ferocious among them, would have thrown me over-board as a traitor who had betrayed them to their enemies; but others more considerate, alledged, that if they put me to death,

and should afterwards be taken, they could expect no mercy from the legislature, which would never pardon outlawry aggravated by murder. It was therefore determined by a plurality of votes, that I should be set on shore in France, and left to find my passage back to England as I should think proper, this being punishment sufficient for the bare suspicion of a crime in itself not capital. Although this favourable determination gave me great pleasure, the apprehension of being robbed would not suffer me to be perfectly at ease. To prevent this calamity, as soon as I was untied in consequence of the aforesaid decision, I tore a small hole in one of my stockings, into which I dropped six guineas, reserving half a piece and some silver in my pocket, that finding something, they might not be tempted to make any farther enquiry. This was a very necessary precaution, for when we came within sight of the French shore, one of the smugglers told me, I must pay for my passage. To this declaration I replied, that my passage was none of my own seeking; therefore they could not expect a reward from me for transporting me into a strange country by force. 'Dammel!' said the outlaw, 'none of your palaver; but let me see what money you have got.' So saying, he thrust his hand into my pocket without any ceremony, and emptied it of the contents: then casting an eye at my hat and wig, which captivated his fancy, he took them off, and clapping his own on my head, declared, that a fair exchange was no robbery. I was fain to put up with the bargain, which was by no means favourable to me: and a little while after we went all on shore together.

I resolved to take my leave of these desperadoes, without much ceremony, when one of them cautioned me against appearing to their prejudice if ever I returned into England, unless I had a mind to be murdered; for which service, he assured me, the gang never wanted agents. I promised to observe his advice, and departed for the Upper Town, where I enquired for a cabaret or public-house, into which I went, with an intention of taking some refreshment. In the kitchen, five Dutch sailors sat at breakfast, with a large loaf, a firkin of butter, and a cag of brandy, the bung of which they often

applied to their mouths with great perseverance and satisfaction. At some distance from them I perceived another person in the same garb, sitting in a pensive solitary manner, entertaining himself with a whiff of tobacco, from the stump of a pipe as black as jet. The appearance of distress never failed to attract my regard and compassion; I approached this forlorn tar with a view to offer him my assistance, and notwithstanding the alteration of dress, and disguise of a long beard, I discovered in him my long lost and lamented uncle and benefactor, Lieutenant Bowling! Good Heaven, what were the agitations of my soul, between the joy of finding again such a valuable friend, and the sorrow of seeing him in such a low condition! The tears gushed down my cheeks, I stood motionless and silent for some time; at length, recovering the use of speech, exclaimed, 'Gracious God! Mr. Bowling!' My uncle no sooner heard his name mentioned, than he started up, crying with some surprize, 'Hol-loa!' and after having looked at me stedfastly, without being able to recollect me, said, 'Did you call me, brother?' I told him I had something extraordinary to communicate, and desired him to give me the hearing for a few minutes in another room; but he would by no means consent to this proposal, saying, 'Awaft there, friend; none of your tricks upon travellers: if you have any thing to say to me, do it above-board; you need not be afraid of being overheard; here are none who understand our lingo.'—Though I was lothe to discover myself before company, I could no longer refrain from telling him, I was his own nephew Roderick Random. On this information, he considered me with great earnestness and astonishment, and recalling my features, which though enlarged, were not entirely altered since he had seen me, came up and shook me by the hand very cordially, protesting he was glad to see me well. After some pause, he went on thus: 'And yet, my lad, I am sorry to see you under such colours; the more so, as it is not in my power, at present, to change them for the better, times being very hard with me.' With these words, I could perceive a tear trickle down his furrowed cheeks,

which affected me so much, that I wept bitterly. Imagining my sorrow was the effect of my own misfortunes, he comforted me, with observing, that life was a voyage in which we must expect to meet with all weathers; sometimes it was calm, sometimes rough; that a fair gale often succeeded a storm; that the wind did not always sit one way, and that despair signified nothing; but resolution and skill were better than a stout vessel: for why? because they require no carpenter, and grow stronger the more labour they undergo. I dried up my tears, which I assured him were not shed for my own distress, but for his, and begged leave to accompany him into another room, where we could converse more at our ease. There I recounted to him the ungenerous usage I had met with from Potion; at which relation he started up, stalked across the room three or four times, in a great hurry, and grasping his cudgel, cried, 'I would I were along-side of him, that's all; I would I were along-side of him!' I then gave him a detail of all my adventures and sufferings, which affected him more than I could have imagined; and concluded with telling him that Captain Oakhum was still alive, and that he might return to England when he would to solicit his affairs, without danger or molestation. He was wonderfully pleased with this piece of information, of which, however, he said, he could not at present avail himself, for want of money to pay for his passage to London. This objection I soon removed, by putting five guineas into his hand, and telling him, I thought myself extremely happy in having an opportunity of manifesting my gratitude to him in his necessity. But it was with the utmost difficulty I could prevail upon him to accept of two, which he affirmed were more than sufficient to defray the necessary expence. After this friendly contest was over, he proposed we should have a mess of something: 'For,' said he, 'it has been banyan day with me a great while. You must know I was shipwrecked five days ago, near a place called Lisieux, in company with those Dutchmen who are now drinking below; and having but little money when I came ashore, it was soon spent, because I let them have share and share while it lasted.'

lasted. Howsoever, I should have remembered the old saying, *Every hog his own apple*: for when they found my hold unstowed, they went all hands to shoaling and begging, and because I would not take a spell at the same duty, refused to give me the least assistance; so that I have not broke bread these two days. I was shocked at the extremity of his distress, and ordered some bread, cheese, and wine, to be brought immediately, to allay his hunger, until a fricassée of chickens could be prepared. When he had recruited his spirits with this homely fare, I desired to know the particulars of his peregrination, since the accident at Cape Tiberoon; which were briefly these: The money he had about him being all spent at Port Louis, the civility and hospitality of the French cooled to such a degree, that he was obliged to lift on board of one of their king's ships as a common foremast-man, to prevent himself from starving on shore. In this situation he continued two years, during which time he had acquired some knowledge of their language, and the reputation of a good seamen: the ship he belonged to was ordered home to France, where she was laid up, as unfit for service, and he was received on board of one of Monsieur D'Antin's Squadron, in quality of a quarter-master; which office he performed in a voyage to the West Indies, where they engaged with our ship as before related; but his conscience upbraiding him for serving the enemies of his country, he quitted the ship at the same place where he first lifted, and got to Curasoa in a Dutch vessel; there he bargained with a skipper bound to Europe, to work for his passage to Holland, from whence he was in hopes of hearing from his friends in England; but he was cast away, as he mentioned before, on the French coast, and must have been reduced to the necessity of travelling on foot to Holland, and begging for his subsistence on the road, or of entering on board of another French man of war, at the hazard of being treated as a deserter, if Providence had not sent me to his succour. 'And now, my lad,' continued he, 'I think I shall steer my course directly to London, where I do not doubt of being replaced, and of having the R taken off me by the lords

of the admiralty, to whom I intend to write a petition, setting forth my case: if I succeed, I shall have wherewithal to give you some assistance, because when I left the ship, I had two years pay due to me; therefore I desire to know whither you are bound; and besides, perhaps, I may have interest enough to procure a warrant appointing you surgeon's mate of the ship to which I shall belong. For the beadle of the admiralty is my good friend; and he and one of the under-clerks are sworn brothers, and that under-clerk has a good deal to say with one of the upper-clerks, who is very well known to the under-secretary, who, upon his recommendation, I hope will recommend my affair to the first secretary; and he again will speak to one of the lords in my behalf: so that you see I do not want friends to assist me on occasion. As for the fellow Crampley, tho' I know him not, I am sure he is neither seaman nor officer, by what you have told me, or else he could never be so much mistaken in his reckoning, as to run the ship on shore on the coast of Sussex, before he believed himself in soundings: neither, when that accident happened, would he have left the ship until she had been stove to pieces, especially when the tide was making; wherefore by this time I do suppose he has been tried by a court-martial, and executed for his cowardice and misconduct.' I could not help smiling at the description of my uncle's ladder, by which he proposed to climb to the attention of the board of admiralty; and though I knew the world too well to confide in such dependance myself, I would not discourage him with doubts; but asked if he had no friend in London who would advance a small sum of money to enable him to appear as he ought, and make a small present to the under-secretary, who might possibly dispatch his business the sooner on that account. He scratched his head; and, after some recollection, replied, 'Why, yes, I believe Daniel Whipcord, the ship-chandler in Wapping, would not refuse me such a small matter. I know I can have what credit I want for lodging, liquor, and clothes; but as to money, I won't be positive: had honest Block been living, I should not have

'have been at a loss.' I was heartily sorry to find a worthy man so destitute of friends, when he had such need of them; and looked upon my own situation as less miserable than his, because I was better acquainted with the selfishness and roguery of mankind; consequently less liable to disappointment and imposition.

CHAP. VI.

HE TAKES HIS PASSAGE IN A CUTTER FOR DEAL—WE ARE ACCOSTED BY A PRIEST, WHO PROVES TO BE A SCOTCHMAN—HIS PROFESSION OF FRIENDSHIP—HE IS AFFRONTED BY THE LIEUTENANT, WHO AFTERWARDS APPEASES HIM BY SUBMISSION—MY UNCLE EMBARKS—I AM INTRODUCED BY A PRIEST TO A CAPUCHIN, IN WHOSE COMPANY I SET OUT FOR PARIS—THE CHARACTER OF MY FELLOW-TRAVELLER—AN ADVENTURE ON THE ROAD—I AM SHOCKED AT HIS BEHAVIOUR.

WHEN our repast was ended, we walked down to the harbour, where we found a cutter that was to sail for Deal in the evening, and Mr. Bowling agreed for his passage: in the mean time we sauntered about the town to satisfy our curiosity, our conversation turning on the subject of my designs, which were not as yet fixed: neither can it be supposed that my mind was at ease, when I found myself reduced to almost extreme poverty, in the midst of foreigners, among whom I had not one acquaintance to advise or befriend me. My uncle was sensible of my forlorn condition, and pressed me to accompany him to England, where he did not doubt of finding some sort of provision for me: but besides the other reasons I had for avoiding that kingdom, I looked upon it, at this time, as the worst country in the universe for a poor honest man to live in; and therefore determined to remain in France at all events. I was confirmed in this resolution by a reverend priest, who passing by at this time, and over-hearing us speak English, accosted us in the same language, telling us he was our countryman, and wishing it might be

in his power to do us any service. We thanked this grave person for his courteous offer, and invited him to drink a glass with us, which he did not think proper to refuse, and we went all together into a tavern of his recommending. After having drank to our healths in a bumper of good Burgundy, he began to enquire into our situation, particularly the place of our nativity; which we no sooner named, than he started up, and wringing our hands with great fervour, shed a flood of tears, crying, 'I come from the same part of the country! perhaps you are my own relations.' I was on my guard against his caresses, which I suspected very much, when I remembered the adventure of the money-dropper; but without any appearance of diffidence, observed, that as he was born in that part of the country, he must certainly know our families, which (howsoever mean our present appearance might be) were none of the most obscure or inconsiderable. Then I discovered our names, to which I found he was no stranger; he had known my grandfather personally; and notwithstanding an absence of fifty years from Scotland, recounted so many particulars of the families in the neighbourhood, that my scruples were entirely removed, and I thought myself happy in his acquaintance. In the course of our conversation, I disclosed my condition without reserve, and displayed my talents to such advantage, that the old father looked upon me with admiration, and assured me that if I staid in France, and listened to reason, I could not fail of making my fortune, to which he would contribute all in his power.

My uncle began to be jealous of the priest's insinuation, and very abruptly declared, that if ever I should renounce my religion, he would break off all connection and correspondence with me; for it was his opinion, that no honest man would swerve from the principles in which he was bred, whether Turkish, Protestant, or Roman. The father, affronted at this declaration, with great vehemence, began a long discourse, setting forth the danger of obstinacy, and shutting one's eyes against the light: he said that ignorance would be no plea towards justification, when we had opportunities of being better informed; and that if the minds of people had not been

been open to conviction, the Christian religion could not have been propagated in the world; and we should now be in a state of Pagan darkness and barbarity: he endeavoured to prove, by some texts of scripture, and many quotations from the fathers, that the Pope was the successor of St. Peter, and vicar of Jesus Christ; that the church of Rome was the true, holy, catholic church; and that the protestant faith was an impious heresy, and damnable schism, by which many millions of souls would suffer everlasting perdition. When he had finished his sermon, which I thought he pronounced with more zeal than discretion, he addressed himself to my uncle, and desired to know his objections to what had been said. The lieutenant, whose attention had been wholly engrossed by his own affairs, took the pipe out of his mouth, and replied, 'As for me, friend, d'y'e ' Yee, I have no objection to what you ' say, it may be either true or false for ' what I know; I meddle with nobo- ' dy's affairs but my own: the gunner ' to his linstock, and the steersman to ' the helm, as the saying is. I trust to ' no creed but the compass, and do un- ' to every man as I would be done by; ' so that I defy the pope, the devil, and ' the pretender; and hope to be saved ' as well as another.' This association of persons gave great offence to the friar, who protested in a mighty passion, that if Mr. Bowling had not been his countryman, he would have caused him to be imprisoned for his insolence. I ventured to disapprove of my uncle's rashness, and appeased the old gentleman, by assuring him there was no offence intended by my kinsman, who by this time, sensible of his error, shook the injured party by the hand, and asked pardon for the freedom he had taken. Matters being amicably compromised, he invited us to come and see him in the afternoon at the convent to which he belonged, and took his leave for the present; when my uncle recommended it strongly to me to persevere in the religion of my forefathers, whatever advantages I might propose to myself by a change, which could not fail of disgracing myself, and dishonouring my family. I assured him no consideration should induce me to forfeit his friendship and good opinion on that score; at which assurance he discovered great

satisfaction, and put me in mind of dinner, which we immediately bespoke, and when it was ready ate together.

I imagined my acquaintance with the Scottish priest, if properly managed, might turn out to my advantage, and therefore resolved to cultivate it as much as I could. With this view we visited him at his convent, according to his invitation, where he treated us with wine and sweetmeats, and shewed us every thing that was remarkable in the monastery. Having been thus entertained, we took our leave, though not before I had promised to see him next day; and the time fixed for my uncle's embarking being come, I accompanied him to the harbour, and saw him on board. We parted not without tears, after we had embraced and wished one another all manner of prosperity; and he entreated me to write to him often, directing to Lieutenant Bowling, at the sign of the Union Flag, near the Hermitage, London.

I returned to the house in which we had met, where I passed the night in a very solitary manner, reflecting on the severity of my fate, and endeavouring to project some likely scheme of life for the future; but my invention failed me; I saw nothing but unsurmountable difficulties in my way, and was ready to despair at the miserable prospect! That I might not, however, neglect any probable means, I got up in the morning, and went directly to the father, whose advice and assistance I implored. He received me very kindly, and gave me to understand that there was one way of life in which a person of my talents could not fail of making a great figure. I guessed his meaning, and told him once for all, I was fully determined against any alteration in point of religion, therefore if his proposal regarded the church, he might save himself the trouble of explaining it. He shook his head, and sighed, saying, 'Ah! son, son, ' what a glorious prospect is here spoil- ' ed by by your stubborn prejudice! ' Suffer yourself to be persuaded by rea- ' son, and consult your temporal wel- ' fare, as well as the concerns of your ' eternal soul. I can, by my interest, ' procure your admission as a novice into this convent, where I will superintend and direct you with a truly ' paternal affection.' Then he launched out into the praises of a monastic life,

life, which no noise disturbs, no cares molest, and no danger invades; where the heart is weaned from carnal attachments, the grosser appetites subdued and chastised, and the soul wafted to divine regions of philosophy and truth, on the wings of studious contemplation. But his eloquence was lost upon me, whom two considerations enabled to withstand his temptations; namely, my promise to my uncle, and my aversion to an ecclesiastical life; for as to the difference of religion, I looked upon it as a thing of too small moment to come in competition with a man's fortune. Finding me immovable on this head, he told me he was more sorry than offended at my non-compliance, and still ready to employ his good offices in my behalf. 'The same erroneous maxims,' said he, 'that obstruct your promotion in the church, will infallibly prevent your advancement in the army; but if you can brook the condition of a servant, I am acquainted with some people of rank at Versailles, to whom I can give you letters of recommendation, that you may be entertained by some one of them in quality of *maitre d' hotel*; and I do not doubt that your qualifications will soon entitle you to a better provision.' I embraced his offer with great eagerness, and he appointed me to come back in the afternoon, when he would not only give me letters, but likewise introduce me to a capuchin of his acquaintance, who intended to set out for Paris next morning, in whole company I might travel, without being at the expence of one livre during the whole journey. This piece of good news gave me infinite pleasure; I acknowledged my obligation to the benevolent father in the most grateful expressions; and he performed his promise to a tittle, in delivering the letters, and making me acquainted with the capuchin, with whom I departed next morning by break of day.

It was not long before I discovered my fellow-traveller to be a merry facetious fellow, who, notwithstanding his profession and appearance of mortification, loved good eating and drinking better than his rosary, and paid more adoration to a pretty girl than to the Virgin Mary, or St. Genevieve. He was a thick brawny young man, with

red eye-brows, a hook-nose, a face covered with freckles; and his name was Frere Balthazar. His order did not permit him to wear linen, so that having little occasion to undress himself, he was none of the cleanliest animals in the world; and his constitution was naturally so strongly scented, that I always thought it convenient to keep to the windward of him in our march. As he was perfectly well known on the road, we fared sumptuously without any cost, and the fatigue of our journey was much alleviated by the good-humour of my companion, who sung an infinite number of catches on the subjects of love and wine. We took up our lodging the first night at a peasant's house, not far from Abbeville, where we were entertained with an excellent ragout, cooked by our landlord's daughters, one of whom was very handsome: after having eaten heartily, and drank a sufficient quantity of small wine, we were conducted to a barn, where we found a couple of carpets spread upon clean straw for our reception. We had not lain in this situation above half an hour, when we heard somebody knock softly at the door, upon which Balthazar got up and let in our host's two daughters, who wanted to have some private conversation with him in the dark; when they had whispered together some time, the capuchin came to me, and asked if I was insensible to love, and so hard-hearted as to refuse a share of my bed to a pretty maid, who had a *tendre* for me. I must own, to my shame, that I suffered myself to be overcome by my passion, and with great earnestness seized the occasion, when I understood that the amiable Nanette was to be my bedfellow. In vain did my reason suggest the respect that I owed to my dear mistress, Narcissa; the idea of that lovely charmer rather increased than allayed the ferment of my spirits, and the young Paisanne had no reason to complain of my remembrance. Early in the morning, the kind creatures left us to our repose, which lasted till eight o'clock, when we got up, and were treated at breakfast with chocolate and *l'eau de vie*, by our paramours, of whom we took a tender leave, after my companion had confessed and given them absolution. While we proceeded on our journey, the

the conversation turned upon the night's adventure, being introduced by the capuchin, who asked me how I liked my lodging. I declared my satisfaction, and talked in rapture of the agreeable Nanette; at which he shook his head, and smiling said, she was a *morceau pour la bonne bouche*. 'I never valued myself,' continued he, 'upon any thing so much as the conquest of Nanette; and, vanity apart, I have been pretty fortunate in my amours.' This information shocked me not a little, as I was well convinced of his intimacy with her sister; and though I did not care to tax him with downright incest, I professed my astonishment at his last night's choice, when, I supposed, the other was at his devotion. To this hint he answered, that besides his natural complaisance to the sex, he had another reason to distribute his favours equally between them, namely, to preserve peace in the family, which could not otherwise be maintained; that moreover Nanette had conceived an affection for me, and he loved her too well to baulk her inclination; more especially, when he had an opportunity of obliging his friend at the same time. I thanked him for this instance of his friendship, though I was extremely disgusted at his want of delicacy, and cursed the occasion that threw me in his way. Libertine as I was, I could not bear to see a man behave so wide of the character he assumed: I looked upon him as a person of very little worth or honesty, and should have even kept a wary eye upon my pocket, if I had thought he could have any temptation to steal. But I could not conceive the use of money to a capuchin, who is obliged, by the rules of his order, to appear like a beggar, and enjoys all other necessaries of life gratis; besides, my fellow-traveller seemed to be of a complexion too careless and sanguine, to give me any apprehension on that score; so that I proceeded with great confidence, in expectation of being soon at my journey's end.

CHAP. VII.

WE LODGE AT A HOUSE NEAR AMIENS, WHERE I AM ROBBED BY THE CAPUCHIN, WHO ESCAPES WHILE I AM ASLEEP—I

GO TO NOYONS IN SEARCH OF HIM, BUT WITHOUT SUCCESS—MAKE MY CONDITION KNOWN TO SEVERAL PEOPLE, BUT FIND NO RELIEF—GROW DESPERATE—JOIN A COMPANY OF SOLDIERS—ENLIST IN THE REGIMENT OF PICARDY—WE ARE ORDERED INTO GERMANY—I FIND THE FATIGUES OF THE MARCH ALMOST INTOLERABLE—QUARREL WITH MY COMRADE IN A DISPUTE ABOUT POLITICS—HE CHALLENGES ME TO THE FIELD, WOUNDS AND DISARMS ME.

THE third night of our pilgrimage, we passed at a house near Amiens, where Balthazar being unknown, we supped upon indifferent fare, and four wine, and were fain to lie in a garret upon an old matras, which, I believe, had been in the possession of ten thousand myriads of fleas, time out of mind. We did not invade their territory with impunity; in less than a minute we were attacked by stings innumerable; in spite of which, however, we fell fast asleep, being excessively fatigued with our day's march, and did not wake till nine next morning; when, seeing myself alone, I started up in a terrible fright, and examining my pockets, found my presaging fear too true! My companion had made free with my cash, and left me to seek my way to Paris by myself! I ran down stairs immediately; and with a look full of grief and amazement, enquired for the mendicant; who, they gave me to understand, had set out four hours before, after having told them I was a little indisposed, and desired I might not be disturbed, but be informed when I should wake that he had taken the road for Noyons, where he would wait for my coming, at the Coq d'Or. I spoke not a word, but with a heavy heart directed my course to that place, at which I arrived in the afternoon, fainting with weariness and hunger: but learned, to my utter confusion, that no such person had been there! It was happy for me, that I had a good deal of resentment in my constitution, which animated me on such occasions against the villainy of mankind, and enabled me to bear misfortunes otherwise intolerable. Boiling with indignation,

nation, I discovered to the host my deplorable condition, and inveighed with great bitterness against the treachery of Balthazar: at which he shrugged up his shoulders; and, with a peculiar grimace in his countenance, said, he was sorry for my misfortune; but there was no remedy like patience. At that instant some guests arrived, to whom he hastened to offer his service, leaving me mortified at his indifference, and fully persuaded that an inn-keeper is the same fordid animal all the world over. While I stood in the porch, forlorn and undetermined, venting ejaculations of curses against the thief who robbed me, and the old priest who recommended him to my friendship, a young gentleman richly dressed, attended by a valet de chambre and two servants in livery, arrived at the inn. I thought I perceived a great deal of sweetness and good-nature in his countenance; therefore he had no sooner alighted than I accosted him, and in a few words explained my situation: he listened with great politeness, and when I had made an end of my story said, 'Well, monsieur, what would you have me to do?' I was effectually abashed at this interrogation, which I believed no man of common sense or generosity could make, and made no other reply than a low bow: he returned the compliment still lower, and tript into an apartment, while the landlord let me know, that my standing there to interrupt company, gave offence, and might do him infinite prejudice. He had no occasion to repeat his insinuation; I moved from the place immediately; and was so much transported with grief, anger, and disdain, that a torrent of blood gushed from my nostrils. In this extasy, I quitted Noyons, and betook myself to the fields, where I wandered about like one distracted, till my spirits were quite exhausted, and I was obliged to throw myself down at the root of a tree, to rest my wearied limbs. Here my rage forsook me; I began to feel the importunate cravings of nature, and relapsed into silent sorrow, and melancholy reflection. I revolved all the crimes I had been guilty of, and found them so few and venial, that I could not comprehend the justice of that Providence, which, after having exposed me to so much wretchedness and danger, left me a prey to

famine at last in a foreign country, where I had not one friend or acquaintance to close my eyes, and do the last offices of humanity to my miserable carcase. A thousand times I wished myself a bear, that I might retreat to woods and deserts, far from the inhospitable haunts of man, where I could live by my own talents, independent of treacherous friends, and supercilious scorn.

As I lay in this manner groaning over my hapless fate, I heard the sound of a violin; and raising my head, perceived a company of men and women dancing on the grass at some distance from me. I looked upon this to be a favourable season for distress to attract compassion, when every selfish thought is banished, and the heart dilated with mirth and social joy; wherefore I got up and approached those happy people, whom I soon discovered to be a party of soldiers, with their wives and children, unbending and diverting themselves at this rate, after the fatigue of a march. I had never before seen such a parcel of scare-crows together, neither could I reconcile their meagre gaunt looks, their squallid and ragged attire, and every other external symptom of extreme woe, with this appearance of festivity. I saluted them, however, and was received with great politeness; after which they formed a ring, and danced around me. This jollity had a wonderful effect upon my spirits! I was infected with their gaiety, and in spite of my dismal situation, forgot my cares, and joined in their extravagance. When we had recreated ourselves a good while at this diversion, the ladies spread their manteaus on the ground, upon which they emptied their knapsacks of some onions, coarse bread, and a few flasks of poor wine: being invited to a share of the banquet, I sat down with the rest, and in the whole course of my life never made a more comfortable meal. When our repast was ended, we got up again to dance; and now that I found myself refreshed, I behaved to the admiration of every body: I was loaded with a thousand compliments, and professions of friendship; the men commended my person and agility, and the women were loud in praise of my *bonne grace*; the serjeant in particular, expressed so much regard for me, and

described

described the pleasures of a soldier's life, with so much art, that I began to listen to his proposal of enlisting me in the service; and the more I considered my own condition, the more I was convinced of the necessity I was under to come to a speedy determination. Having therefore maturely weighed the circumstances *pro* and *con*, I signified my consent, and was admitted into the regiment of Picardy, said to be the oldest corps in Europe. The company to which this command belonged, was quartered at a village not far off, whither we marched next day, and I was presented to my captain, who seemed very well pleased with my appearance, gave me a crown to drink, and ordered me to be accommodated with clothes, arms, and accoutrements. Then I sold my livery suit, purchased linen, and as I was at great pains to learn the exercise, in a very short time became a compleat soldier.

It was not long before we received orders to join several more regiments, and march with all expedition into Germany, in order to reinforce Marschal Duc de Noailles, who was then encamped with his army on the side of the river Mayne, to watch the motions of the English, Hanoverians, Austrians, and Hessians, under the command of the Earl of Stair. We began our march accordingly, and then I became acquainted with that part of a soldier's life to which I had been hitherto a stranger. It is impossible to describe the hunger and thirst I sustained, and the fatigue I underwent in a march of so many hundred miles; during which, I was so much chafed with the heat and motion of my limbs, that in a very short time the inside of my thighs and legs were deprived of skin, and I proceeded in the utmost torture. This misfortune I owed to the plumpness of my constitution, which I cursed, and envied the withered condition of my comrades, whose bodies could not spare juice enough to supply a common issue, and were indeed proof against all manner of friction. The continual pain I felt made me fretful, and my peevishness was increased by the mortification of my pride in seeing those miserable wretches, whom a hard gale of wind would have scattered through the air like chaff, bear those

toils with alacrity, under which I was ready to sink.

One day while we enjoyed a halt, and the soldiers with their wives had gone out to dance, according to custom, my comrade staid at home with me on pretence of friendship, and insulted me with his pity and consolation! He told me, though I was young and tender at present, I would soon be seasoned to the service; and he did not doubt but I should have the honour to contribute in some measure to the glory of the king. 'Have courage, therefore, my child,' said he, 'and pray to the good God, that you may be as happy as I am, who have had the honour of serving Lewis the Great, and of receiving many wounds in helping to establish his glory.' When I looked upon the contemptible object that pronounced these words, I was amazed at the infatuation that possessed him; and could not help expressing my astonishment at the absurdity of a rational being, who thinks himself highly honoured in being permitted to encounter abject poverty, oppression, famine, disease, mutilation, and evident death, merely to gratify the vicious ambition of a prince, by whom his sufferings were disregarded, and his name utterly unknown. I observed, that if his situation was the consequence of compulsion, I would praise his patience and fortitude in bearing his lot; if he had taken up arms in defence of his injured country, he was to be applauded for his patriotism; or if he had fled to this way of life as a refuge from a greater evil, he was justifiable in his own conscience, (though I could have no notion of misery more extreme than that he suffered;) but to put his condition on the footing of conducting to the glory of his prince, was no more than professing himself a desperate slave, who voluntarily underwent the utmost wretchedness and peril, and committed the most flagrant crimes, to sooth the barbarous pride of a fellow-creature, his superior in nothing but the power he derived from the submission of such wretches as him. The soldier was very much affronted at the liberty I took with his king, which he said nothing but my ignorance could excuse. He affirmed, that the characters of princes were sacred, and ought

not to be profaned by the censure of their subjects, who were bound by their allegiance to obey their commands, of what nature soever, without scruple or repining: and advised me to correct the rebellious principles I had imbibed among the English; who, for their insolence to their kings, were notorious all over the world, even to a proverb.

In vindication of my countrymen, I repeated all the arguments commonly used to prove that every man has a natural right to liberty; that allegiance and protection are reciprocal; that when the mutual tie is broken by the tyranny of the king, he is accountable to the people for his breach of contract, and subject to the penalty of the law; and that those insurrections of the English, which are branded with the name of rebellion, by the slaves of arbitrary power, were no other than glorious efforts to rescue that independence which was their birthright from the ravenous claws of usurping ambition. The Frenchman, provoked at the little deference I paid to the kingly name, lost all patience, and reproached me in such a manner, that my temper forsook me, and I clenched my fist, with an intention to give him a hearty box on the ear. Perceiving my design, he started back, and demanded a parley; upon which I checked my indignation, and he gave me to understand that a Frenchman never forgave a blow; therefore, if I was not weary of my life, I would do well to spare him that mortification, and do him the honour of measuring his sword with mine like a gentleman. I took his advice, and followed him to a field hard by, where indeed I was ashamed at the pitiful figure of my antagonist, who was a poor, little, shivering creature, decrepit with age, and blind of one eye. But I soon found the folly of judging from appearances; being at the second pass wounded in the sword hand, and immediately disarmed with such a jerk, that I thought the joint was dislocated. I was no less confounded than enraged at this event, especially as my adversary did not bear his success with all the moderation that might have been expected; for he insisted upon my asking pardon for affronting his king and him. This proposal I would by no means comply with; but told him it was a mean con-

descension, which no gentleman in his circumstances ought to propose, nor any in my situation ought to perform; and that if he persisted in his ungenerous demand, I would in my turn claim satisfaction with my musket, when we should be more upon a par than with the sword, of which he seemed so much master.

CHAP. VIII.

IN ORDER TO BE REVENGED, I LEARN THE SCIENCE OF DEFENCE—WE JOIN THE MARE-SCHAL DUC DE NOAILLES—ARE ENGAGED WITH THE ALLIES AT DETTINGEN, AND PUT TO FLIGHT—THE BEHAVIOUR OF THE FRENCH SOLDIERS ON THAT OCCASION—I INDUSTRIOUSLY SEEK ANOTHER COMBAT WITH THE OLD GASCON, AND VANQUISH HIM IN MY TURN—OUR REGIMENT IS PUT INTO WINTER QUARTERS AT RHEIMS, WHERE I FIND MY FRIEND STRAP—OUR RECOGNITION—HE SUPPLIES ME WITH MONEY, AND PROCURES MY DISCHARGE—WE TAKE A TRIP TO PARIS; FROM WHENCE BY THE WAY OF FLANDERS WE SET OUT FOR LONDON, WHERE WE SAFELY ARRIVE.

HE was disconcerted at this declaration, to which he made no reply, but repaired to the dancers, among whom he recounted his victory with many exaggerations and gasconades; while I, taking up my sword, went to my quarters and examined my wound, which I found was of no consequence. The same day, an Irish drummer, having heard of my misfortune, visited me, and after having consoled me on the chance of war, gave me to understand, that he was master of his sword, and would in a very short time instruct me so thoroughly in that noble science, that I should be able to chastise the old Gascon for his insolent boasting at my expence. This friendly office he proffered on pretence of the regard he had for his countrymen; but I afterwards learned the true motive was no other than a jealousy he entertained of a correspondence between the Frenchman and his wife,

wife, which he did not think proper to resent in person. Be this as it will, I accepted his offer, and practised his lessons with such application, that I soon believed myself a match for my conqueror. In the mean time we continued our march, and arrived at the camp of Marechal Noailles, the night before the battle of Dettingen. Notwithstanding the fatigue we had undergone, our regiment was one of those that were ordered next day to cross the river, under the command of the Duc de Gramont, to take possession of a narrow defile, through which the allies must of necessity have passed at a great disadvantage, or remain where they were, and perish for want of provision, if they would not condescend to surrender at discretion. How they suffered themselves to be pent up in this manner, it is not my province to relate; I shall only observe, that when we had taken possession of our ground, I heard an old officer in conversation with another express a surprize at the conduct of Lord Stair, who had the reputation of a good general. But it seems, at this time, that nobleman was over-ruled, and only acted in an inferior character; so that no part of the blame could be imputed to him, who declared his disapprobation of the step, in consequence of which the whole army was in the utmost danger; but Providence or destiny acted miracles in their behalf, by disposing the Duc de Gramont to quit his advantageous post, pass the defile, and attack the English, who were drawn up in order of battle on the plain, and who handled us so roughly, that after having lost a great number of men, we turned our backs without ceremony, and fled with such precipitation, that many hundreds perished in the river through pure fear and confusion; for the enemy was so generous, that they did not pursue us one inch of ground; and if our consternation would have permitted, we might have retreated with great order and deliberation. But notwithstanding the royal clemency of the King of Great Britain, who headed the allies in person, and no doubt put a stop to the carnage, our loss amounted to 5000 men, among whom were many officers of distinction. Our miscarriage opened a passage for the foe to Hanau, whither they immediately marched, leaving their sick and

wounded to the care of the French, who next day took possession of the field of battle, buried the dead, and treated the living with humanity. This circumstance was a great consolation to us, who thence took occasion to claim the victory; and the genius of the French nation never appeared more conspicuous than now, in the rhodomontades they uttered on the subject of their generosity and courage: every man, by his own account, performed feats that eclipsed all the heroes of antiquity. One compared himself to a lion retiring at leisure from his cowardly pursuers, who keep at a wary distance, and gall him with their darts. Another likened himself to a bear, that retreats with his face to the enemy, who dare not assail him; and the third assumed the character of a desperate stag, that turns upon the hounds and keeps them at bay. There was not a private soldier engaged, who had not by the prowess of his single arm demolished a whole platoon, or put a squadron of horse to flight; and among others, the meagre Gascon extolled his exploits above those of Hercules or Charlemagne. As I still retained my resentment for the disgrace I suffered in my last rencontre with him, and now that I thought myself qualified, longed for an opportunity to retrieve my honour; I magnified the valour of the English with all the hyperboles I could imagine, and decried the pusillanimity of the French in the same stile, comparing them to hares flying before greyhounds, or mice pursued by cats; and passed an ironical compliment on the speed he exerted in his flight, which, considering his age and infirmities, I said, was surprizing. He was stung to the quick by this sarcasm, and with an air of threatening disdain, bade me know myself better, and remember the correction I had already received from him for my insolence; for he might not always be in the humour of sparing a wretch who abused his goodness. To this inuendo I made no reply but by a kick in the breech, which overturned him in an instant. He started up with wonderful agility, and drawing his sword, attacked me with great fury: several people interposed, but when he informed them of it's being an affair of honour, they retired and left us to decide the battle by ourselves. I sustained his onset with little damage, having

having only received a small scratch on my right shoulder, and seeing his breath and vigour almost exhausted, assaulted him in my turn, closed with him, and wrested his sword out of his hand in the struggle. Having thus acquired the victory, I desired him to beg his life; to which demand he made no answer, but shrugged up his shoulders to his ears, expanded his hands, elevated the skin on his forehead and eye-brows, and depressed the corners of his mouth in such a manner, that I could scarce refrain from laughing aloud at his grotesque appearance. That I might, however, mortify his vanity, which triumphed without bounds over my misfortune, I thrust his sword up to the hilt in something (it was not a tansy) that lay smoking on the plain, and joined the rest of the soldiers with an air of tranquillity and indifference.

There was nothing more of moment attempted by either of the armies during the remaining part of the campaign, which being ended, the English marched back to the Netherlands; part of our army was detached to French Flanders; and our regiment ordered into winter quarters in Champagne. It was the fate of the grenadier company, to which I now belonged, to lie at Rheims, where I found myself in the utmost want of every thing: my pay, which amounted to five sols a day, far from supplying me with necessaries, being scarce sufficient to procure a wretched subsistence, to keep soul and body together; so that I was by hunger and hard duty, brought down to the meagre condition of my fellow-soldiers, and my linen reduced from three tolerable shirts, to two pair of sleeves and necks, the bodies having been long ago converted into spatter-dashes; and after all I was better provided than any private man in the regiment. In this urgency of my affairs, I wrote to my uncle in England, though my hopes from that quarter were not at all sanguine, for the reasons I have already explained, and in the mean time had recourse to my old remedy, patience; consoling myself with the flattering suggestions of a lively imagination, that never abandoned me in my distress.

One day, while I stood centinel at a gate of a general officer, a certain nobleman came to the door, followed by a gentleman in mourning, to whom,

at parting, I heard him say, 'You may depend upon my good offices.' This assurance was answered by a low bow of the person in black, who turning to go away, discovered to me the individual countenance of my old friend and adherent Strap. I was so much astonished at the sight, that I lost the power of utterance; and before I could recollect myself, he was gone without taking any notice of me. Indeed, had he staid, I scarcely should have ventured to accost him; because, though I was perfectly well acquainted with the features of his face, I could not be positively certain as to the rest of his person, which was very much altered for the better, since he left me at London; neither could I conceive by what means he was enabled to appear in the sphere of a gentleman, to which, while I knew him, he had not even the ambition to aspire. But I was too much concerned in the affair, to neglect farther information; and therefore took the first opportunity of asking the porter if he knew the gentleman to whom the marquis spoke. The Swiss told me, his name was Monsieur D'Estrapes, that he had been valet de chambre to an English gentleman lately deceased, and that he was very much regarded by the marquis for his fidelity to his master, between whom and that nobleman a very intimate friendship had subsisted. Nothing could be more agreeable to me than this piece of intelligence, which banished all doubt of it's being my friend, who had found means to frenchify his name as well as his behaviour, since we parted. As soon, therefore, as I was relieved, I went to his lodging, according to a direction given me by the Swiss, and had the good fortune to find him home. That I might surprize him the more, I concealed my name and business, and only desired the servant of the house, to tell Monsieur D'Estrapes, that I begged the honour of half an hour's conversation with him. He was confounded and dismayed at the message, when he understood it was sent by a soldier: though he was conscious to himself of no crime, all that he had heard of the Bastille appeared to his imagination with aggravated horror, and it was not before I had waited a considerable time, that he had resolution enough to bid the servant shew me

me up stairs. When I entered his chamber, he returned my bow with great civility, and endeavoured, with forced complaisance, to disguise his fear, which appeared in the paleness of his face, the wildness of his looks, and the shaking of his limbs. I was diverted at his consternation, which redoubled, when I told him in French, I had business for his private ear, and demanded a particular audience. The valet being withdrawn, I asked in the same language, if his name was D'Estrapes, to which he answered with a faltering tongue, 'The same, at your service.'—'Are you a Frenchman?' said I. 'I have not the honour of being a Frenchman born,' replied he, 'but I have an infinite veneration for the country.' I then desired he would do me the honour to look at me, which he no sooner did, than, struck with my appearance, he started back, and cried in English, 'O Jesus!—sure it can't! No, 'tis impossible!' I smiled at his interjections, saying, 'I suppose you are too much of a gentleman to own your friend in adversity.' When he heard me pronounce these words in our own language, he leaped upon me in a transport of joy, hung about my neck, kissed me from ear to ear, and blubbered like a great school-boy who had been whipt. Then observing my dress, he let up his throat, crying, 'O Lord! O Lord! that ever I should live to see my dearest friend reduced to the condition of a foot soldier in the French service! Why did you consent to my leaving you? But I know the reason; you thought you had got more creditable friends, and grew ashamed of my acquaintance. Ah! Lord help us! though I was a little short-sighted, I was not altogether blind; and though I did not complain, I was not the less sensible of your unkindness, which was indeed the only thing that induced me to ramble abroad, the Lord knows whether; but I must own it has been a lucky ramble for me, and so I forgive you, and may God forgive you. O Lord! O Lord! is it come to this?' I was nettled at the charge; which, though just, I could not help thinking unseasonable, and told him with some tartness, that whether his suspicions were well or ill grounded, he might

have chosen a more convenient opportunity of introducing them: and that the question now was, whether or no he found himself disposed to lend me any assistance. 'Disposed!' replied he with great emotion, 'I thought you had known me so well, as to assure, yourself without asking, that I, and all that belongs to me, are at your command. In the meantime, you shall dine with me, and I will tell you something that, perhaps, will not be displeasing unto you.' Then wringing my hand, he said, 'It makes my heart bleed to see you in that garb!' I thanked him for his invitation, which I observed, could not be unwelcome to a person who had not eaten a comfortable meal these seven months: but I had another request to make, which I begged he would grant before dinner, and that was the loan of a shirt; for although my back had been many weeks a stranger to any comfort of that kind, my skin was not yet familiarized to the want of it. He stared in my face, with a woeful countenance, at this declaration, which he could scarce believe, until I explained it, by unbuttoning my coat, and disclosing my naked body; a circumstance that shocked the tender-hearted Strap, who, with tears in his eyes, ran to a chest of drawers, and taking out some linen, presented to me a very fine ruffled holland shirt, and cambric neckcloth, assuring me, he had three dozen of the same kind at my service. I was ravished at this piece of good news, and having accommodated myself in a moment, hugged my benefactor for his generous offer, saying, I was overjoyed to find him undebauched by prosperity, which seldom fails to corrupt the heart. He bespoke for dinner, some soup and bouillé, a couple of pullets roasted, and a dish of asparagus, and in the interim entertained me with biscuit and Burgundy; after which repast he entreated me to gratify his longing desire of knowing every circumstance of my fortune since his departure from London. This request I complied with, beginning at the adventure of Gawky, and relating every particular event in which I had been concerned from that day to the present hour. During the recital, my friend was strongly affected, according to the various situations described: he started

started with surprize, glowed with indignation, gaped with curiosity, smiled with pleasure, trembled with fear, and wept with sorrow, as the vicissitudes of my life inspired these different passions; and when my story was ended, signified his amazement on the whole, by lifting up his eyes and hands, and protesting, that though I was a young man, I had suffered more than all the blessed martyrs.

After dinner, I desired in my turn to know the particulars of his peregrination, and he satisfied me in a few words, by giving me to understand that he had lived a year at Paris with his master, who in that time having acquired the language, as well as the fashionable exercises, to perfection, made a tour of France and Holland, during which excursion, he was so unfortunate as to meet with three of his own countrymen on their travels, in whose company he committed such excesses, that his constitution failed, and he fell into a consumption; that by the advice of physicians he went to Montpellier for the benefit of good air, and recovered so well in six weeks, that he returned to Rheims, seemingly in good health, where he had not continued above a month, when he was seized with a looseness that carried him off in ten days, to the unspeakable sorrow of all who knew him, and especially of Strap; who had been very happy in his service, and given such satisfaction, that his master, on his death-bed, recommended him to several persons of distinction, for his diligence, sobriety, and affection, and left him by will, his wearing apparel, gold watch, sword, rings, ready money, and all the moveables he had in France, to the value of three hundred pounds; 'which I now,' said he, 'in the sight of God and man, surrender to your absolute disposal: here are my keys, take them, I beseech you, and God give you joy of the possession.' My brain was almost turned by the sudden change of fortune, which I could scarce believe real; however, I positively refused this extravagant proffer of my friend, and put him in mind of my being a soldier; at which hint he started, crying, 'Odso! that's true; we must procure your discharge. I have some interest with a nobleman who is able to do me

'that favour.' We consulted about this affair, and it was determined, that Monsieur D'Estrapes should wait upon the marquis in the morning, and tell him he had by accident found his brother, whom he had not seen for many years before, a private soldier in the regiment of Picardy, and implore that nobleman's interest for his discharge. In the mean time we enjoyed ourselves over a bottle of good Burgundy, and spent the evening in concerting schemes for our future conduct, in case I should be so lucky as to get rid of the army. The business was to make ourselves easy for life, by means of his legacy, a task very difficult, and in the usual methods of laying out money, altogether impracticable; so that after much canvassing, we could come to no resolution that night, but when we parted, recommended the matter to the serious attention of each other. As for my own part, I puzzled my imagination to no purpose; when I thought of turning merchant, the smallness of our stock, and the risk of seas, enemies and markets, deterred me from that scheme. If I should settle as a surgeon in my own country, I would find the business already overstocked; or if I pretended to set up in England, must labour under want of friends and powerful opposition, obstacles unsurmountable by the most shining merit; neither should I succeed in my endeavours to rise in the state, inasmuch as I could neither flatter nor pimp for courtiers, nor prostitute my pen in defence of a wicked and contemptible administration. Before I could form any feasible project, I fell asleep, and my fancy was blessed with the image of the dear Narcissa, who seemed to smile upon my passion, and offer her hand as a reward for all my toils.

Early in the morning I went to the lodgings of my friend, whom I found exulting over his happy invention; for I no sooner entered his apartment, than he addressed himself to me in these words, with a smile of self-applause: 'Well, Mr. Random, a lucky thought may come into a fool's head sometimes. I have hit it; I'll hold you a button my plan is better than yours for all your learning. But you shall have the preference in this as in all other things; therefore proceed, and let us know the effects of your meditation,

dictation, and then I will impart my own simple excogitations.' I told him, that not one thought had occurred to me which deserved the least notice, and signified my impatience to be acquainted with the fruits of his reflection. 'As we have not,' said he, 'money sufficient to maintain us during a tedious expectation, it is my opinion, that a bold push must be made; and I see none so likely to succeed, as your appearing in the character of a gentleman, (which is your due) and making your addresses to some lady of fortune who can render you independent at once. Nay, don't stare: I affirm that this scheme is both prudent and honourable; for I would not have you throw yourself away upon an old toothless, wheezing dame, whose breath would sink you into a consumption in less than three months; neither would I advise you to assume the character of a wealthy squire, as your common fortune-hunters do, by which means many a poor lady is cheated into matrimony, and instead of enjoying the pomp and grandeur that was promised, sees her dowry seized by her husband's rapacious creditors, and herself reduced to misery and despair. No, I know you have a soul that disdains such imposition; and are master of qualifications both of mind and body, which alone intitle you to a match that will set you above the world. I have clothes in my possession that a duke need not be ashamed to wear. I believe they will fit you as they are; if not, there are plenty of tailors in France. Let us take a short trip to Paris, and provide ourselves with all other necessaries, then set out for England, where I intend to do myself the honour of attending you in quality of a valet. This expedient will save you the expence of a servant, shaving and dressing; and I doubt not but, by the blessing of God, we shall bring matters to a speedy and fortunate issue.' Extravagant as this proposal was, I listened to it with pleasure, because it flattered my vanity, and indulged a ridiculous hope I began to entertain of inspiring Narcissa with a mutual flame.

After breakfast, Monsieur D'Estrapes went to pay his devoirs to the marquis,

and was so successful in his application, that I obtained a discharge in a few days; upon which we set out for Paris. Here I had time to reflect and congratulate myself upon this sudden transition of fate; which, to bear with moderation, required some degree of philosophy and self-denial. This truth will be more obvious, if I give a detail of the particulars, to the quiet possession of which I was raised in an instant, from the most abject misery and contempt. My wardrobe consisted of five fashionable coats full mounted, two of which were plain, one of cut velvet, one trimmed with gold, and another with silver lace; two frocks, one of white drab with large plate buttons, the other of blue with gold binding; one waistcoat of gold brocade; one of blue satin embroidered with silver; one of green silk trimmed with broad figured gold lace; one of black silk, with fringes; one of white satin; one of black cloth, and one of scarlet; six pair of cloth breeches; one pair of crimson, and another of black velvet; twelve pair of white silk stockings, as many of black silk, and the same number of fine cotton; one hat, laced with gold *point d'Espagne*, another with silver-lace scalloped, a third with gold binding, and a fourth plain; three dozen of fine ruffled shirts, as many neckcloths; one dozen of cambric handkerchiefs, and the like number of silk. The other moveables which I possessed by the generosity and friendship of Strap, were a gold watch with a chased case, two valuable diamond rings, two mourning swords, one with a silver handle, and a fourth cut steel inlaid with gold, a diamond stock-buckle, and a set of stone buckles for the knees and shoes; a pair of silver mounted pistols with rich housings; a gold-headed cane, and a snuff-box of tortoise-shell mounted with gold, having the picture of a lady in the top. The gentleman left many other things of value, which my friend had converted into cash before I met with him; so that over and above these particulars, our stock in ready money amounted to something more than two hundred pounds.

Thus equipt, I put on the gentleman of figure, and attended by my honest friend, who was contented with the station of my valet, visited the Louvre, examined

examined the gallery of Luxemburgh, and appeared at Versailles, where I had the honour of seeing his Most Christian Majesty eat a considerable quantity of olives. During the month I spent at Paris, I went several times to court, the Italian comedy, opera, and play-house; danced at a masquerade; and, in short, saw every thing remarkable in and about that capital. Then we set out for England by the way of Flanders, passed through Brussels, Ghent, and Bruges, and took shipping at Ostend, from whence in fourteen hours we arrived at Deal, hired a post-chaise, and in twelve hours more got safe to London; having disposed of our heavy baggage in the waggon.

CHAP. IX.

I ENQUIRE FOR MY UNCLE, AND UNDERSTAND HE IS GONE TO SEA—TAKE LODGINGS AT CHARING CROSS—GO TO THE PLAY, WHERE I MEET WITH AN ADVENTURE—DINE AT AN ORDINARY; THE GUESTS DESCRIBED—BECOME ACQUAINTED WITH MEDLAR AND DOCTOR WAGTAIL.

AS soon as we alighted at the inn, I dispatched Strap to enquire for my uncle, at the Union Flag in Wapping; and he returned in a little time, with an account of Mr. Bowling's having gone to sea, mate of a merchant-ship, after a long and unsuccessful application and attendance at the admiralty; where, it seems, the interest he depended upon was not sufficient to reinstate him, or recover the pay that was due to him when he quitted the Thunder.

Next day I hired very handsome lodgings not far from Charing Cross; and in the evening, dressed myself in a plain suit of the true Paris cut, and appeared in a front box at the play, where I saw a good deal of company, and was vain enough to believe that I was observed with an uncommon degree of attention and applause. This silly conceit intoxicated me so much, that I was guilty of a thousand ridiculous coquetries; and I dare say, how favourable soever the thoughts of the company might be at my first appearance, they were soon changed, by my absurd behaviour, into

pity or contempt. I rose and sat down, covered and uncovered my head, twenty times between the acts; pulled out my watch, clapped it to my ear, wound it up, set it, gave it the hearing again; displayed my snuff-box, affected to take snuff, that I might have an opportunity of shewing my brilliant, and wiped my nose with a perfumed handkerchief; then dangled my cane, and adjusted my sword-knot; and acted many more fooleries of the same kind, in hopes of obtaining the character of a pretty fellow; in the acquiring of which, I found two considerable obstructions in my disposition; namely, a natural reserve, and jealous sensibility. Fain would I have entered into conversation with the people around me; but I was restrained by the fear of being censured for my assurance, as well as by reflecting that I was more entitled to a compliment of this kind from them, than they to such condescension from a stranger like me. How often did I redden at the frequent whispers and loud laughter of my fellow beaux, which I imagined were excited by me! and how often did I envy the happy indifference of those choice spirits, who beheld the distress of the scene without discovering the least symptom of approbation or concern! My attention was engaged in spite of myself, and I could not help weeping with the heroine of the stage; though I practised a great many shifts to conceal this piece of unpolite weakness. When the play was ended, I sat waiting for an opportunity of handing some lady to her coach; but every one was attended by such a number of officious gallants, that for a long time I was baulked in my expectation. At length, however, I perceived a very handsome creature, genteely dressed, sitting by herself in a box, at some distance from me; upon which I went up to her, and offered my service. She seemed to be in some confusion, thanked me for my complaisance, and with a tender look declined giving me the trouble; looking at her watch, and testifying her surprize at the negligence of her footman, whom she had ordered to have a chair ready for her at that hour. I repeated my entreaty with all the eloquence and compliment I was master of; and in the event, she was prevailed upon to accept of a proposal I made,

to send my servant for a chair or coach. Accordingly, Strap was detached for that purpose, and returned without success. By this time the play-house was quite empty, and we were obliged to retire. As I led her through the passage, I observed five or six young fellows of fashion, standing in a corner, one of whom, as I thought, tipped my charmer the wink; and when we were past, I heard them set up a loud laugh. This note aroused my attention, and I was resolved to be fully satisfied of this lady's character, before I should have any nearer connexion with her. As no convenience appeared, I proposed to conduct her to a tavern, where we might stay a few minutes, till my servant could fetch a coach from the Strand. She seemed particularly shy of trusting herself in a tavern with a stranger; but at last yielded to my pathetic remonstrances, rather than endanger her health, by remaining in a cold damp thorough-fare. Having thus far succeeded, I begged to know what wine she would be pleased to drink a glass of; but she professed the greatest aversion to all sorts of strong liquors; and it was with much difficulty that I could persuade her to eat a jelly. In the mean time, I endeavoured to alleviate the uneasiness she discovered, by saying all the agreeable things I could think of; at which she would often sigh, and regard me with a languishing look, that seemed however too near a kin to the lewd leer of a courtesan. This discovery, added to my former suspicion, while it put me upon my guard against her arts, divested me of reserve, and enabled me to entertain her with gaiety and freedom. In the course of her conversation, I pressed her to allow me the honour of waiting upon her next day, at her lodgings; a request which she, with many apologies, refused, lest it should give umbrage to Sir John, who was of a disposition apt to be fretted with trifles. This information, by which I was to understand that her husband was a knight, did not check my addresses, which became more and more importunate, and I was even hardy enough to ravish a kiss. But, O heavens! instead of banqueting on the ambrosial flavour that her delicacy of complexion promised, I was almost suffocated with the steams of Geneva! An exhalation

of this kind, from a mouth which had just before declared an utter abhorrence of all spirituous liquors, not only changed my doubts into certainty, but my raptures into loathing; and it would have been impossible for me to have preserved common complaisance five minutes longer, when my servant returned with the coach. I took the advantage of this occasion, and presented my hand to the lady, who put in practice against me the whole artillery of her charms, ogling, languishing, sighing, and squeezing, with so little reserve, that Strap perceived her tenderness, and rubbed his hands with joy as he followed us to the door; but I was proof against all her endearments, and handed her into the coach with an intention to take my leave immediately. She guessed my design, and invited me to her house, whispering, that now Sir John was gone to bed, she could have the pleasure of my conversation for half an hour, without interruption. I told her there was no mortification I would not undergo, rather than endanger the repose of her ladyship; and bidding the coachman drive on, wished her a good night. She lost all temper at my indifference, and stopping the coach at the distance of about twenty yards from me, popped out her head, and bawled with the lungs of a fish-woman, 'Damn you, you dog, won't you pay the coach-hire?' As I made no answer, she held forth against me with an eloquence peculiar to herself; calling me pitiful fellow, scoundrel, and an hundred such appellations; concluding with an oath, that for all my appearance, she believed I had got no money in my pocket.

Having thus vented her indignation, she ordered the coachman to proceed, and I returned to the tavern, where I bespoke something for supper, very well pleased at the issue of this adventure. I dispensed with the attendance of the waiter at table, on pretence that my own servant was present; and when we were alone, said to Strap, 'Well, Monsieur D'Estrapes, what do you think of this lady?' My friend, who had not opened his mouth since her departure, could make no other reply than the monosyllable, 'Think!' which he pronounced with a note of fear and astonishment. Surprized at this emphasis, I surveyed my valet, and per-

ceiving a wildness in his looks, asked if he had seen his grandfather's ghost. 'Ghost!' said he; 'I am sure I have seen a devil incarnate! Who would have thought that so much devilish malice and Billingsgate could lurk under such sweetness of countenance and modesty of behaviour? Ah, God help us! *Fronti nulla fides—nimium ne crede colori*; but we ought to down on our knees and bless God for delivering us from the jaws of that painted sepulchre.' I was pretty much of Strap's opinion; and though I did not believe myself in any danger from the allurements of that sisterhood, I determined to act with great circumspection for the future, and shun all commerce of that kind, as equally prejudicial to my purse and constitution.

My next care was, to introduce myself into a set of good acquaintance; for which purpose I frequented a certain coffee-house, noted for the resort of good company, English as well as foreigners, where my appearance procured all the civilities and advances I could desire. As there was an ordinary in the same house, I went up stairs to dinner with the other guests, and found myself at a table with thirteen people, the greatest part of whom were better dressed than myself. The conversation, which was mostly carried on in the French, turned chiefly on politicks; and I soon found the whole company was in the French interest, myself excepted, and a testy old gentleman, who contradicted every thing that was advanced in favour of his Most Christian Majesty, with a surliness truly English. But this trusty patriot, who had never been out of his own country, and drew all his maxims and notions from prejudice and hearsay, was very unequal to his antagonists, who were superior to him in learning and experience, and often took the liberty of travellers, in asserting things which were not strictly true, because they thought themselves in no danger of being detected by him. The claim of the Queen of Spain to the Austrian dominions in Italy, was fully explained and vindicated by a person who sat opposite to me, and by the solemnity of his manner, and the richness of his apparel, seemed to be a foreign ambassador. This dissertation produced another on the pragmatic sanction,

handled with great warmth by a young gentleman at my right-hand, dressed in a green frock trimmed with gold, who justified the French King for his breach of that contract; and affirmed that he could not have observed it, without injuring his own glory. Although I was not at all convinced by this gentleman's arguments, I could not help admiring his vivacity, which I imagined must be the effect of his illustrious birth and noble education, and accordingly rated him in my conjecture as a young prince on his travels. The discourse was afterwards shifted by an old gentleman of a very martial appearance, to the last campaign, when the battle of Dettingen was fought over again, with so many circumstances to the honour of the French, and disadvantage of the allies, that I began to entertain some doubts of my having been there in person; and took the liberty to mention some objections to what he advanced. This freedom introduced a dispute, which lasted a good while, to the mortification of all present; and was at last referred to the determination of a grave person, whom they stiled doctor, and who, under a shew of great moderation, decided it against me, with so little regard to truth, that I taxed him with partiality in pretty severe terms, to the no small entertainment of the true English politician, who rejoiced at my defence of a cause he had so often espoused without success. My opponent, pleased with the victory he had gained, affected a great deal of candour, and told me, he should not have been so positive, if he had not been at great pains to inform himself of each particular. 'Indeed,' said he, 'I am convinced that, the previous steps considered, things could not happen otherwise; for we generals, who have seen service, though we may not be on the spot ourselves, know by the least sketch of the disposition, what must be the event.' He then censured, with great freedom, every circumstance of the conduct of those who commanded the allies; from thence made a transition to the ministry, which he honoured with many invectives, for employing people who had neither experience nor capacity, to the prejudice of old officers who had been distinguished for both; dropt many hints of his own importance;

importance; and concluded with observing, that the French and Spaniards knew better how to value generals of merit; the good effects of which are seen in the conquests they gain, and the admirable discipline of their troops, which are at the same time better clothed and paid than any soldiers in the universe. These remarks furnished the green knight with an opportunity of launching out in the praise of the French government in general, civil as well as military; on which occasion he made many odious comparisons to the disadvantage of the English. Every body almost assented to the observations he made, and the doctor gave his sanction, by saying, the people in France were undoubtedly the happiest subjects in the world. I was so much astonished and confounded at their insatiation and effrontery, that I had not power to utter one word in opposition to their assertions; but my morose associate could not put up with the indignity that was offered to Old England, and therefore with a satirical grin addressed himself to the general in these words: 'Sir, Sir, I have often heard it said, *She's a villainous bird that besouls her own nest*. As for what those people who are foreigners say, I don't mind it, they know no better; but you who were bred and born, and have got your bread under the English government, should have more regard to gratitude as well as truth, in censuring your native country. If the ministry have thought fit to lay you aside, I suppose they have their own reasons for so doing, and you ought to remember that you still live on the bounty of this nation. As for these gentlemen,' (meaning the prince and ambassador) 'who make so free with our constitution, laws, and genius of our people, I think they might shew a little more respect for their benefactors; who, I must own, are to blame, in harbouring, protecting, and encouraging, such ungrateful vagrants as they are.' At these words the chevalier in green started up in a great passion, and laying his hand on the hilt of his hanger, exclaimed, 'Ha, foutre!' The Englishman, on the other hand, grasping his cane, cried, 'Don't foutre me, firrah, or by G—d, I'll knock you down.' The com-

pany interposed, the Frenchman sat down again, and his antagonist proceeded: 'Look'e, Monsieur, you know very well, that had you dared to speak so freely of the administration of your own country in Paris, as you have done of ours in London, you would have been sent to the Bastile without ceremony, where you might have rotted in a dungeon, and never seen the light of the sun again. Now, Sir, take my word for it, although our constitution screens us from such oppression, we want not laws to chastise the authors of seditious discourse; and if I hear another syllable out of your mouth, in contempt or prejudice of this kingdom, I will give you a convincing proof of what I advance, and have you laid by the heels for your presumption.' This declaration had an effect on the company as sudden as surprizing. The young prince became supple as a spaniel, the ambassador trembled, the general sat silent and abashed, and the doctor, who, it seems, had felt the rod of power, grew pale as death, and assured us all, that he had no intention to affront any person or people. 'Your principles, doctor,' resumed the old gentleman, 'are no secret, I have nothing to say upon that head; but am very much surprized, that a man, who despises us so much, should notwithstanding live among us, when he has no visible motive for so doing. Why don't you take up your habitation in your beloved France, where you may rail at England without censure?' To this remonstrance the doctor thought proper to make no reply; and an unsocial silence ensued: which I perceiving, took notice, that it was pity such idle disputes, maintained very often through whim or diversion, should create any misunderstanding among gentlemen of good sense; and proposed to drink down all animosity in another bottle. This motion was applauded by the whole company. The wine was brought, and the English champion declaring he had no spleen against any man for differing in opinion from him, any more than for difference of complexion, drank to the good health of all present; the compliment was returned, and the conversation once more became unreserved, though more general than before.

Among

Among other topicks, the subject of war was introduced; on which the general declaimed with great eloquence, recounting many of his own exploits by way of illustration. In the course of his harangue, he happened to mention the word epaulement, upon which the testy gentleman asked the meaning of that term. 'I'll tell you what an epaulement is,' replied he; 'I never saw an epaulement but once, and that was at the siege of Namur. In a council of war, Monsieur Cohorn, the famous engineer, affirmed that the place could not be taken. "Yes," said the prince of Vaudemont, "it may be taken by an epaulement." This was immediately put in execution, and in twenty-four hours, Mareschal Boufflers was fain to capitulate.' Here he made a full stop, and the old gentleman repeated the question, 'But pray what is an epaulement?' To this interrogation the officer made no immediate reply, but rung the bell, and called for a bill; which being brought, he threw down his proportion of the reckoning, and telling the company he would shew them an epaulement when his majesty should think fit to entrust him with the command of our army abroad, strutted away with great dignity. I could not imagine why he was so shy of explaining one of the most simple terms of fortification; which I forthwith described, as a side-work composed of earth, gabions, or facines; but I was very much surprized, when I afterwards understood that his reserve proceeded from his ignorance. Having paid our bill, we adjourned to the coffee-room, where my fellow-labourer insisted on treating me with a dish, giving me to understand, at the same time, that I had acquired his good opinion, both with respect to my principles and understanding. I thanked him for his compliment, and professing myself an utter stranger in this part of the world, begged he would have the goodness to inform me of the quality and characters of the people who dined above. This request was a real favour to one of his disposition, which was no less communicative than curious: he therefore complied with great satisfaction; and told me, to my extreme astonishment, that the supposed young prince was a dancer at one of the theatres; and the ambassador, no other than a fiddler be-

longing to the opera. 'The doctor,' said he, 'is a Roman catholic priest, who sometimes appears in the character of an officer, and assumes the name of captain; but more generally takes the garb, title, and behaviour of a physician; in which capacity he weedles himself into the confidence of weak-minded people, and by arguments no less specious than false, converts them from their religion and allegiance. He has been in the hands of justice more than once for such practices; but he is a sly dog, and manages matters with so much craft, that hitherto he has escaped for a short imprisonment. As for the general, you may see he has owed his promotion more to his interest than his capacity; and now that the eyes of the ministry are opened, his friends dead, or become inconsiderable, he is struck off the list, and obliged to put up with a yearly pension; in consequence of this reduction, he is become malcontent, and inveighs against the government in all companies, with so little discretion, that I am surprized at the lenity of the administration in overlooking his insolence; but the truth of the matter is, he owes his safety to his weakness and want of importance. He has seen a little, and but a little service; and yet, if you will take his word for it, there has not been a great action performed in the field since the Revolution, in which he was not principally concerned. When a story is told of any great general, he immediately matches it with one of himself, though he is often unhappy in his invention, and commits such gross blunders in the detail, that every body is in pain for him. Cæsar, Pompey, and Alexander the Great, are continually in his mouth; and as he reads a good deal, without any judgment to digest it, his ideas are confused, and his harangues as unintelligible as infinite; for, once he begins, there is no chance of his leaving off speaking, while one person remains to yield attention; therefore, the only expedient I know for putting a stop to his loquacity, is to lay hold of some incongruity he has uttered, and demand an explanation; or ask the meaning of some difficult term that he knows by name only; this

‘this method will effectually put him to silence if not to flight, as it happened when I enquired about an epaulement. Had he been acquainted with the signification of that word, his triumph would have been intolerable, and we must have quitted the field first, or been worried with impertinence.’ Having thus gratified my curiosity, the old gentleman began to discover his own, in questions relating to myself; to which I thought proper to return ambiguous answers. ‘I presume, Sir,’ said he, ‘you have travelled.’ I answered, ‘Yes.’ I dare say, you will find it very expensive,’ said he. I replied, ‘To be sure, one cannot travel without money.’—‘That I know by experience,’ said he, ‘for I myself take a trip to Bath or Tunbridge every season; and one must pay sauce for what he has on the road, as well in other countries as in this. That’s a very pretty stone in your ring, give me leave, Sir!—the French have attained a wonderful skill in making compositions of this kind. Why, now, this looks almost as well as a diamond.’—‘Almost as well Sir!’ said I; ‘why not altogether? I’m sure, if you understand any thing of jewels, you must perceive at first sight, that this stone is a real diamond, and that of a very fine water. Take it in your hand, and examine it.’ He did so, with some confusion, and returned it, saying, ‘I ask your pardon, I see it is a true brilliant of immense value.’ I imagined his respect for me increased after this enquiry; therefore, to captivate his esteem the more, I told him, I would show him a seal of composition, engraved after a very valuable antique; upon which I pulled out my watch with a rich gold chain, adorned with three seals set in gold, and an opal ring. He viewed each of them with great eagerness, handled the chain, admired the chased case, and observed, that the whole must have cost me a vast sum of money. I affected indifference, and replied in a careless manner, ‘some trifle of sixty or seventy guineas.’ He stared in my face for some time, and then asked if I was an Englishman. I answered in the negative. ‘You are from Ireland; then, Sir, I presume,’ said he. I made the same reply. ‘O! perhaps,’ said he, ‘you was born in

‘one of our settlements abroad.’ I still answered, ‘No.’ He seemed very much surprized; and said, he was sure I was not a foreigner. I made no reply, but left him upon the tenter-hooks of impatient uncertainty. He could not contain his anxiety, but asked pardon for the liberties he had taken, and to encourage me the more to disclose my situation, displayed his own without reserve. ‘I am,’ said he, ‘a single man, have a considerable annuity, on which I live according to my own inclination; and make the ends of the year meet very comfortably. As I have no estate to leave behind me, I am not troubled with the importunate officiousness of relations, or legacy hunters, and I consider the world as made for me, not me for the world: it is my maxim, therefore, to enjoy it while I can, and let futurity shift for itself.’ While he thus indulged his own talkative vein, and at the same time, no doubt, expected a retaliation from me; a young man entered, dressed in black velvet and an enormous tye-wig, with an air in which natural levity and affected solemnity were so jumbled together, that on the whole he appeared a burlesque on all decorum. This ridiculous oddity danced up to the table at which we sat, and after a thousand grimaces, asked my friend, by the name of Mr. Medlar, if we were not engaged upon business. My companion put on a surly countenance, and replied, ‘No great business, doctor; but, however—’ ‘O! then,’ cried the physician, ‘I must beg your indulgence a little; pray pardon me, gentlemen.—Sir,’ said he, addressing himself to me, ‘your most humble servant; I hope you will forgive me, Sir. I must beg the favour to sit, Sir. Sir, I have something of consequence to impart to my friend Mr. Medlar. Sir, I hope you will excuse my freedom in whispering, Sir.’ Before I had time to give this complaisant person my permission, Mr. Medlar cried, ‘I’ll have no whispering; if you have any thing to say to me, speak with an audible voice.’ The doctor seemed a little disconcerted at this exclamation, and turning again to me, made a thousand apologies for pretending to make mystery of any thing, a piece of caution which,

which, he said, was owing to his ignorance of my connexion with Mr. Medlar; but now he understood I was a friend, he would communicate what he had to say in my hearing. He then began, after two or three hems, in this manner: 'You must know, Sir, I am just come from dinner at my Lady Flareit's—(then addressing himself to me) 'a lady of quality, Sir, at whose table I have the honour of dining sometimes.—There was Lady Stately, and my Lady Larum, and Mrs. Dainty, and Miss Biddy Gigler—upon my word, a very good-natured young lady, with a very pretty fortune, Sir. There were also my Lord Straddle, Sir John Shrug, and master Billy Chatter, who is actually a very facetious young gentleman. So, Sir, her ladyship seeing me excessively fatigued, for she was the last of fifteen patients (people of distinction, Sir) whom I had visited this forenoon, insisted upon my staying dinner, though, upon my word, I protest I had no appetite; however, in compliance with her ladyship's request, Sir, I sat down, and the conversation turning on different subjects, among other things Mr. Chatter asked very earnestly when I saw Mr. Medlar. I told him I had not had the pleasure of seeing you these nineteen hours and a half: for you may remember, Sir, it was nearly about that time; I won't be positive as to a minute. "No!" says he; "then I desire you will go to his lodgings immediately after dinner, and see what's the matter with him, for he must certainly be very bad from having last night eat such a vast quantity of raw oysters." The crusty gentleman, who, from the solemnity of his delivery, expected something extraordinary, no sooner heard his conclusion, than he started up in a testy humour, crying, 'Pshaw, pshaw! d—n your oysters;' and walked away, after a short compliment of, 'your servant, Sir,' to me. The doctor got up also, saying, 'I vow and protest, upon my word, I am actually amazed,' and followed Mr. Medlar to the bar, which was hard by, where he was paying for his coffee; there he whispered so loud, that I could overhear, 'Pray, who is this gentleman?' His friend re-

plied hastily, 'I might have known that before now, if it had not been for your impertinent intrusion!' and walked off, very much disappointed. The ceremonious physician returned immediately, and sat down by me, asking a thousand pardons for leaving me alone; and giving me to understand that what he had communicated to Mr. Medlar at the bar was an affair of the last importance, that would admit of no delay. He then called for some coffee, and launched out into the virtues of that berry; which, he said, in cold phlegmatic constitutions, like his, dried up the superfluous moisture, and braced the relaxed nerves. He told me it was utterly unknown to the ancients, and derived its name from an Arabian word, which I might easily perceive by the sound and termination. From this topick he transferred his disquisitions to the verb *drink*, which he affirmed was improperly applied to the taking of coffee, inasmuch as people did not drink, but sip or sipple that liquor; that the genuine meaning of drinking is to quench one's thirst, or commit a debauch by swallowing wine; that the Latin word, which conveyed the same idea, was *bibere* or *potare*, and that of the Greeks *pinein* or *poteein*, though he was apt to believe they were differently used on different occasions. For example: to drink a vast quantity, or, as the vulgar express it, to drink an ocean of liquor, was in Latin *potare*, and in Greek *poteein*; and on the other hand, to use it moderately, was *bibere* and *pinein*; that this was only a conjecture of his own, which, however, seemed to be supported by the word *bibulous*, which is particularly applied to the pores of the skin, that can only drink a very small quantity of the circumambient moisture, by reason of the smallness of their diameters; whereas, from the verb *poteein*, is derived the substantive *potamos*, which signifies a river, or vast quantity of liquor. I could not help smiling at this learned and important investigation; and to recommend myself the more to my new acquaintance, whose disposition I was by this time well informed of, I observed, that what he alledged did not, to the best of my remembrance, appear in the writings of the ancients; for Horace uses the words

pino and *bibo* indifferently for the same purpose, as in the twentieth ode of his first book.

*Vile potabis modicis sabinum cantbaris,
Et praelo domitam caleno tu bibes uvam.*

That I had never heard of the verb *poterein*, but that *potamos*, *potema*, and *potos*, were derived from *pino*, *poso*, *pepoka*; in consequence of which the Greek poets never use any other word for festal drinking. Homer describes Nestor at his cups in these words :

Nestora d'ouk elatben jache pinonta perempes.

And Anacreon mentions it on the same occasion almost in every page,

*Pinonti de oinon bedun
Otan pino ton oinon.
Oplix' ego ds pino.*

And in a thousand other places. The doctor, who, doubtless, intended by his criticism, to give me a high idea of his erudition, was infinitely surprized to find himself schooled by one of my appearance; and after a considerable pause, cried, 'Upon my word, you are in the right, Sir! I find I have not considered this affair with my usual accuracy.' Then accosting me in Latin, which he spoke very well, the conversation was maintained full two hours, on a variety of subjects, in that language; and indeed, he spoke so judiciously, that I was convinced, notwithstanding his whimsical appearance, and attention to trifles, that he was a man of extensive knowledge, especially in books; he looked upon me, as I afterwards understood from Mr. Medlar, as a prodigy in learning, and proposed that very night, if I was not engaged, to introduce me to several young gentlemen of fortune and fashion, with whom he had an appointment at the Bedford coffee-house.

CHAP. X.

WAGTAIL INTRODUCES ME TO A SET OF FINE GENTLEMEN, WITH WHOM I SPEND THE EVENING AT A TAVERN—OUR CONVERSATION—THE CHARACTERS OF MY

NEW COMPANIONS—THE DOCTOR IS ROASTED—THE ISSUE OF OUR DEBAUCH.

I Accepted his offer with pleasure, and we went thither in a hackney-coach, where I saw a great number of gay figures fluttering about, most of whom spoke to the doctor with great familiarity. Among the rest stood a groupe of them around the fire, whom I immediately knew to be the very persons who had the night before, by their laughing, alarmed my suspicion of the lady who had put herself under my protection. They no sooner perceived me enter with Dr. Wagtail (for that was my companion's name) than they tittered and whispered one to another; and I was not a little surprized to find that they were the gentlemen to whose acquaintance he designed to recommend me; for when he observed them together, he told me who they were, and desired to know by what name he should introduce me. I satisfied him in that particular, and he advanced with great gravity, saying, 'Gentlemen, your most obedient: give me leave to introduce my friend Mr. Random to your society.' Then turning to me, 'Mr. Random, this is Mr. Bragwell—Mr. Banter, Sir—Mr. Chatter—my friend Mr. Slyboot, and Mr. Ranter, Sir.' I saluted each of them in order, and when I came to take Mr. Slyboot by the hand, I perceived him thrust his tongue in his cheek, to the no small entertainment of the company; but I did not think proper to take any notice of it on this occasion. Mr. Ranter, too, (who I afterwards learned was a player) displayed his talents, by mimicking my air, features, and voice, while he returned my compliment: this feat I should not have been so sensible of, had I not seen him behave in the same manner to my friend Wagtail, when he made up to them at first. But for once I let him enjoy the fruits of his dexterity without question or controul, resolved, however, to chastise his insolence at a more convenient opportunity. Mr. Slyboot guessing I was a stranger, asked if I had been lately in France: and when I answered in the affirmative, enquired if I had seen the Luxembourg gallery. I told him I had considered it more than once, with great attention :

Y

upon

upon this a conversation ensued, in which I discovered him to be a painter. While we were discoursing upon the particulars of this famous performance, I overheard Banter ask Dr. Wagtail, where he had picked up this Mr. Random. To which question the physician answered, 'Upon my word, a mighty pretty sort of a gentleman; a man of fortune, Sir; he has made the grand tour, and seen the best company in Europe, Sir.'—'What, he told you so, I suppose?' said the other; 'I take him to be neither more nor less than a French valet de chambre.'—'Oh! barbarous, barbarous!' cried the doctor; 'this is actually, upon my word, altogether unaccountable, I know all his family perfectly well, Sir; he's of the Rands of the north; a very ancient house, Sir; and a distant relation of mine.' I was extremely nettled at the conjecture of Mr. Banter, and began to entertain a very indifferent opinion of my company in general; but as I might possibly by their means acquire a more extensive and agreeable acquaintance, I determined to bear these little mortifications as long as I could without injuring the dignity of my character. After having talked for some time on the weather, plays, politicks, and other coffee-house subjects, it was proposed that we should spend the evening at a noted tavern in the neighbourhood, whither we repaired in a body. Having taken possession of a room, called for French wine, and bespoke supper, the glass went about pretty freely, and the characters of my associates opened upon me more and more. It soon appeared that the doctor was entertained as a butt for the painter and player to exercise their wit upon, for the diversion of the company. Mr. Ranter began the game, by asking him what was good for a hoarseness, lowness of spirits and indigestion, for he was troubled with all these complaints to a very great degree. Wagtail immediately undertook to explain the nature of his case, and in a very prolix manner harangued upon prognosticks, diagnostics, symptomaticks, therapeuticks, inanition, and repletion; then calculated the force of the stomach and lungs in their respective operations; ascribed the player's malady to a disorder in these organs, proceeding from hard drinking and vociferation, and

prescribed a course of stomachicks, with abstinence from venery, wine, and loud speaking, laughing, singing, coughing, sneezing, or hollowing. 'Pah! pah,' cried Ranter, interrupting him, 'the remedy is worse than the disease. I wish I knew where to find some tinder-water.'—'Tinder-water!' said the doctor; 'upon my word I don't apprehend you, Mr. Ranter.'—'Water extracted from tinder,' replied the other; 'an universal specifick for all distempers incident to man. It was invented by a learned German monk, who, for a valuable consideration, imparted the secret to Paracelsus.'—'Paradon me,' cried the painter, 'it was first used by Solomon, as appears by a Greek manuscript, in his own handwriting, lately found at the foot of mount Lebanon, by a peasant who was digging for potatoes.'—'Well,' said Wagtail, 'in all my vast reading, I never met with such a preparation! neither did I know till this minute, that Solomon understood Greek, or that potatoes grew in Palestine.' Here Banter interposed, saying, he was surprized that Doctor Wagtail should make the least doubt of Solomon's understanding Greek, when he is represented to us as the wisest and best educated prince in the world; and as for potatoes, they were transplanted thither from Ireland, in the time of the Crusades, by some knights of that country. 'I profess,' said the doctor, 'there is nothing more likely; I would actually give a vast sum for a sight of that manuscript, which must be inestimable: and if I understood the process, would set about it immediately.' The player assured him, the process was very simple; that he must cram a hundred weight of dry tinder into a glass retort, and distilling it by the force of animal heat, it would yield half a scruple of insipid water, one drop of which is a full dose. 'Upon my integrity!' exclaimed the credulous doctor, 'this is very amazing and extraordinary! that a *caput mortuum* shall yield any water at all. I must own I have always been an enemy to specificks, which I thought inconsistent with the nature of the animal economy; but certainly the authority of Solomon is not to be questioned. I wonder where I shall find

a glass

'a glass retort large enough to contain such a vast quantity of tinder, the consumption of which must undoubtedly raise the price of paper; or where shall I find animal heat sufficient, even to warm such a mass.' Slyboot informed him, that he might have a retort blown for him as big as a church; and that the easiest method of raising the vapour by animal heat, would be to place it in the middle of an infirmary for feverish patients, who might lie upon mattresses around, and in contact with it. He had no sooner pronounced these words, than Wagtail exclaimed in a rapture, 'An admirable expedient, as I hope to be saved! I will positively put it in practice.' This simplicity of the physician furnished excellent diversion for the company, who, in their turns, sneered at him in ironical compliments, which his vanity swallowed as the genuine sentiments of their hearts. Mr. Chatter, impatient of so long a silence, now broke out, and entertained us with a catalogue of all the people who danced at the last Hampstead assembly, with a most circumstantial account of the dress and ornaments of each, from the lappets of the ladies to the shoe-buckles of the men; concluding with telling Bragwell, that his mistress Melinda was there, and seemed to miss him; and soliciting his company at the next occasion of that kind. 'No, no, damme,' said Bragwell, 'I have something else to mind, than dangle after a parcel of giddy-headed girls; besides, you know my temper is so unruly, that I am apt to involve myself in scrapes, when a woman is concerned. The last time I was there, I had an affair with Tom Trippet.'—'O! I remember that,' cried Banter; 'you lugged out before the ladies; and I commend you for so doing, because you had an opportunity of shewing your manhood without running any risk.'—'Risk!' said the other with a fierce countenance, 'damn my blood! I fear no risks. I an't afraid of lugging out against any man that wears a head, damme! 'tis well known I have drawn blood more than once, and lost some too; but what does that signify?' The player begged this champion to employ him as his second the next time he intended to

kill, for he wanted to see a man die of a stab, that he might know how to act such a part the more naturally on the stage. 'Die!' replied the hero: 'No, by God! I know better things than to incur the verdict of a Middlesex jury; I should look upon my fencing-master to be an ignorant son of a bitch, if he had not taught me to prick any part of my antagonist's body that I please to disable.'—'Oho!' cried Slyboot, 'if that be the case, I have a favour to ask: you must know I am employed to paint a Jesus on the cross; and my purpose is to represent him at that point of time when the spear is thrust into his side. Now I should be glad you would, in my presence, pink some impertinent fellow into convulsions, without endangering his life, that I may have an opportunity of taking a good clever agony from nature: the doctor will direct you where to enter, and how far to go; but pray let it be as near the left side as possible.' Wagtail, who took this proposal seriously, observed, that it would be a very difficult matter to penetrate into the left side of the thorax, without hurting the heart, and of consequence killing the patient; but he believed it was possible for a man of a very nice hand, and exact knowledge of anatomy, to wound the diaphragma somewhere about the skirts, which might induce a singultus, without being attended with death: that he was ready to demonstrate the insertion of the muscle to Mr. Bragwell; but desired to have no concern with the experiment, which might essentially prejudice his reputation in case of a miscarriage. Bragwell was as much imposed upon by the painter's waggery as the doctor, and declined engaging in the affair, saying, he had a very great regard for Mr. Slyboot, but had laid it down as a maxim, never to fight except when his honour was engaged. A thousand jokes of this kind were uttered; the wine circulated, supper was served in, we ate heartily, returned to the bottle, Bragwell became noisy and troublesome, Banter grew more and more severe, Banter rehearsed, Slyboot made faces at the whole company, I sung French catches, and Chatter kissed me with great affection; while the doctor, with a woeful countenance, sat silent

like a disciple of Pythagoras. At length it was proposed by Bragwell, that we should scour the hundreds, sweat the constable, maul the watch, and then reel soberly to bed.

While we deliberated on this expedition, the waiter came into the room, and asked for Doctor Wagtail; when he understood he was present, he told him there was a lady below to enquire for him; at which message the physician started from his melancholy contemplation, and with a look of extreme confusion, assured the company he could not possibly be the person wanted, for he had no connexion with any lady whatever, and bade the drawer tell her so. 'For shame!' cried Banter, 'would you be so impolite as to refuse a lady the hearing; perhaps she comes for a consultation. It must be some extraordinary affair that brings a lady to a tavern at this time o'night. Mr. Ranter, pray do the doctor's business to the lady, and squire her hither.' The player immediately staggered out, and returned, leading in with much ceremony, a tall strapping wench, whose appearance proclaimed her occupation. We received her with the utmost solemnity, and with a good deal of intreaty she was persuaded to sit, when a profound silence ensued, during which she fixed her eyes, with a disconsolate look, upon the doctor, who was utterly confounded at her behaviour, and returned her melancholy four-fold; at length, after a good many piteous sighs, she wiped her eyes, and accosted him thus: 'What! not one word of comfort? Will nothing soften that stony heart of thine? Not all my tears! not all my affliction! Not the inevitable ruin thou hast brought upon me! Where are thy vows, thou faithless, perjured man? Hast thou no honour; no conscience; no remorse for thy perfidious conduct towards me! Answer me, wilt thou at last do me justice, or must I have recourse to heaven or hell for my revenge!' If poor Wagtail was amazed before she spoke, what must his confusion be on hearing this address! His natural paleness changed into a ghastly clay colour, his eyes rolled, his lip trembled, and he answered in an accent not to be described, 'Upon my word, honour, and salvation, Madam, you are actually mistaken in my person. I have a most particular

‘veneration for your sex, and am actually incapable of injuring any lady in the smallest degree, Madam; besides, Madam, to the best of my recollection, I never had the honour of seeing you before, as I hope to be saved, Madam!’—‘How, traitor!’ cried she, ‘dost thou disown me then?’ ‘Mistaken! no, too well I know that fair bewitching face! too well I know that false enchanting tongue!—Alas, gentlemen, since the villain compels me, by his unkindness, to expose myself and him, know that this betrayer, under the specious pretence of honourable addresses, won my heart, and taking advantage of his conquest, robbed me of my virgin treasure, and afterwards abandoned me to my fate! I am now four months gone with child by him, turned out of doors by my relations, and left a prey to misery and want!’—‘Yes, thou barbarian,’ said she, turning to Wagtail, ‘thou tiger, thou succubus! too well thou knowest my situation; but I will tear out thy faithless heart, and deliver the world from such a monster.’ So saying, she sprung forward at the doctor, who, with incredible agility, jumped over the table, and ran behind Bragwell, while the rest of us endeavoured to appease the furious heroine. Although every body in the company affected the utmost surprize, I could easily perceive it was a scheme concerted among them to produce diversion at the doctor’s expence; and being under no concern about the consequence, I entered into the confederacy, and enjoyed the distress of Wagtail; who, with tears in his eyes, begged the protection of the company, declaring himself as innocent of the crime laid to his charge, as the *fœtus in utero*; and hinting at the same time, that nature had not put it in his power to be guilty of such a trespass. ‘Nature!’ cried the lady, ‘there was no nature in the case; he abused me by the help of charms and spells; else how is it possible that any woman could have listened to the addresses of such a scare-crow? Were these owlish eyes made for ogling; that carrion complexion to be admired; or that mouth like a horse-shoe to be kissed? No, no, you owe your success to your philtres, to your drugs and incantations; and not to your natural talents, which are in every respect

'respect mean and contemptible.' The doctor now thought he had got an opportunity of vindicating himself effectually; and desired the complainant to compose herself but for half an hour, in which he undertook to prove the absurdity of believing in the power of incantations, which were only idle dreams of ignorance and superstition. He accordingly pronounced a very learned discourse upon the nature of ideas, the powers and independence of the mind, the properties of stimulating medicines, the difference between a proneness to venery, which many simples would create, and a passion limited to one object, which can only be the result of sense and reflection; and concluded with a pathetic remonstrance, setting forth his unhappiness in being persecuted with the resentment of a lady whom he had never injured, nor even seen before that occasion, and whose faculties were, in all likelihood, so much impaired by her misfortunes, that an innocent person was in danger of being ruined by her disorder. He had no sooner finished his harangue, than the forlorn princess renewed her lamentations, and cautioned the company against his eloquence, which, she said, was able to bias the most impartial bench in Christendom. Banter advised him to espouse her immediately, as the only means to save his reputation, and offered to accompany him to the Fleet for that purpose; but Slyboot proposed that a father should be purchased for the child, and a comfortable alimony settled on the mother. Banter promised to adopt the infant gratis. Wagtail was ready to worship him for his generosity; and though he persisted in protesting his innocence, condescended to every thing rather than his unblemished character should be called in question. The lady rejected the proposal, and insisted on matrimony. Bragwell took up the cudgels for the doctor, and undertook to rid him of her importunity for half a guinea; upon which Wagtail, with great eagerness, pulled out his purse, and put it into the hand of his friend, who taking half a piece out of it, gave it to the plaintiff, and bade her thank God for her good fortune. When she had received this bounty, she affected to weep, and begged, since the physician had renounced her, he would at least vouchsafe her a

parting kiss; this he was prevailed upon to grant, with great reluctance, and went up with his usual solemnity, to salute her; when she laid hold of his cheek with her teeth, and held fast, while he roared with anguish, to the unspeakable diversion of all present. When she thought proper to release him, she dropped a low curtsy to the company, and quitted the room, leaving the doctor in the utmost horror, not so much on account of the pain, as the apprehension of the consequence of the bite; for by this time he was convinced of her being mad. Banter prescribed the actual cautery, and put the poker in the fire to be heated, in order to sear the place. The player was of opinion that Bragwell should scoop out the part affected with the point of his sword; but the painter prevented both these dreadful operations, by recommending a balsam he had in his pocket, which never failed to cure the bite of a mad dog; so saying, he pulled out a small bladder of black paint; with which he instantly anointed not only the sore, but the greatest part of the patient's face, and left it in a frightful condition. In short, the poor creature was so harassed with fear and vexation, that I pitied him extremely, and sent him home in a chair, contrary to the inclination of every body present.

This freedom of mine gave umbrage to Bragwell, who testified his displeasure, by swearing a few threats, without making any application, which being perceived by Slyboot, who sat by me, he, with a view of promoting a quarrel, whispered to me, that he thought Bragwell used me very ill; but every man was the best judge of his own affairs. I answered aloud, that I would neither suffer Mr. Bragwell nor him to use me ill with impunity; and that I stood in no need of his counsel in regard to the regulation of my conduct. He thought proper to ask a thousand pardons, and assure me, he meant no offence; while Bragwell feigned himself asleep, that he might not be obliged to take notice of what passed. But the player, who had more animal spirits, and less discretion than Slyboot, unwilling to let the affair rest where he had dropt it, jogged Mr. Bragwell, and told him softly, that I called him names, and threatened to cudgel him. This particular

ticular I understood by his starting up and crying, 'Blood and wounds! you lye: no man durst treat me so ignominiously.—Mr. Random, did you call me names, and threaten to drub me?' I denied the imputation, and proposed to punish the scoundrel who endeavoured to foment disturbance in the company. Bragwell signified his approbation, and drew his sword; I did the same, and accosted the actor in these words: 'Look'e, Mr. Ranter, I know you possess all the mimicry and mischievous qualities of an ape, because I have observed you put them all in practice more than once to-night, on me and others; now I want to see if you resemble one in nimbleness also, therefore I desire you to leap over this sword without hesitation.' So saying, I held it parallel to the horizon, at the distance of about three feet from the floor, and called, 'Once, twice, thrice, and away;' but instead of complying with my command, he snatched his hat and hanger, and assuming the looks, swagger, and phrase of Pistol, burst out in the following exclamation, 'Ha! must I then perform inglorious prank, of sylvan ape in mountain forest caught! Death rock me asleep, abridge my doleful days, and lay my hand in fury's lap. Have we not Hiren here?' This buffoonery did not answer his expectation, for by this time the company was bent on seeing him in a new character. Mr. Banter desired me to hold my sword a foot or two higher, that he might have the better opportunity of exerting himself. The painter told him, if he performed well, he would recommend him as a vaulter to the proprietors of Sadler's Wells; and Bragwell crying, 'Leap for the king,' applied the point of his sword to the player's posteriors with such success, that he sprung over in a trice, and finding the door unguarded, vanished in a twinkling; glad, no doubt, of having paid his share of the reckoning so easily.

It being now near two o'clock in the morning, we discharged the bill, and sallied out into the street. The painter slunk away without taking his leave. Billy Chatter, being unable to speak or stand, was sent to a bagnio; and Banter and I accompanied Bragwell to Moll King's coffee-house,

where, after he had kicked half a dozen of hungry whores, we left him asleep on a bench, and directed our course towards Charing Cross, near which place both he and I lodged.

The natural dryness of my companion being overcome by liquor, he honoured me by the way with many compliments and professions of friendship, for which I made suitable acknowledgments, and told him, I thought myself happy in having, by my behaviour, removed the unfavourable opinion he entertained of me at first sight. He was surprized at this declaration, and begged me to explain myself: upon which I mentioned what I had over-heard him say of me to Wagtail in the coffee-house. He laughed, and made an apology for his freedom, assuring me, that my appearance had very much prepossessed him in my favour; and what he said, was only intended as a joke on the doctor's solemnity. I was highly pleased at being undeceived in this particular, and not a little proud of the good opinion of this wit, who shook me by the hand at parting, and promised to meet me next day at the ordinary.

CHAP. XI.

STRAP COMMUNICATES TO ME A CONQUEST HE HAD MADE OF A CHANDLER'S WIDOW—FINDS HIMSELF MISERABLY MISTAKEN—I GO TO THE OPERA—ADMIRE MELINDA—AM CAUTIONED BY BANTER—GO TO THE ASSEMBLY AT HAMPSTEAD—DANCE WITH THAT YOUNG LADY—RECEIVE AN INSOLENT MESSAGE FROM BRAGWELL, WHOSE METAL IS SOON COOLED—AM IN FAVOUR WITH MY MISTRESS, WHOM I VISIT NEXT DAY, AND AM BUBBLED OUT OF EIGHTEEN GUINEAS AT CARDS—STRAP TRIUMPHS AT MY SUCCESS, BUT IS ASTONISHED AT MY EXPENCE—BANTER COMES TO MY LODGING, IS VERY SARCASTIC AT MY EXPENCE, AND BORROWS FIVE GUINEAS FROM ME, AS A PROOF OF HIS FRIENDSHIP.

IN the morning, before I got up, Strap came into my chamber, and finding me awake, hemmed several times,

times, scratched his head, cast his eyes upon the ground, and with a very foolish kind of simper upon his face, gave me to understand he had something to communicate. 'By your countenance,' said I, 'I expect to hear good tidings.'—'Indifferent,' replied he, tittering, 'that is, hereafter as it shall be. You must know, I have some thoughts of altering my condition.'—'What!' cried I, astonished; 'a matrimonial scheme? O rare Strap! thou hast got the heels of me at last.'—'N—no less, I assure you,' said he, bursting into a laugh of self-approbation: 'a tallow-chandler's widow, that lives hard by, has taken a liking to me. A fine jolly dame, as plump as a partridge. She has a well furnished house, a brisk trade, and a good deal of the ready. I may have her for the asking. She told a friend of mine, a brother footman, that she would take me out of a stinking clout. But I refused to give my final answer, till I knew your opinion of the matter.' I congratulated Monsieur D'Estrapes upon his conquest, and approved of the scheme, provided he could be assured of those circumstances of her fortune; but advised him to do nothing rashly, and give me an opportunity of seeing the lady before matters should be brought to a conclusion. He assured me he would do nothing without my consent and approbation, and that very morning, while I was at breakfast, introduced his innamorata to my acquaintance. She was a short thick woman, about the age of thirty-six, and had a particular prominence of belly, which I perceived at first sight, not without some suspicion of foul play. I desired her, however, to sit, and treated her with a dish of tea; the discourse turning on the good qualities of Strap, whom I represented as a prodigy of sobriety, industry, and virtue. When she took her leave, he followed her to the door, and returned licking his lips, and asking if I did not think she was a luscious creature. I made no mystery of my apprehension, but declared my sentiments of her without reserve; at which he was not surprized, telling me, he had observed the same symptom, but was informed by his friend that she was only liver-grown, and would in a few months be as small

in the waist as ever. 'Yes,' said I, 'a few weeks, I believe, will do the business. In short, Strap, it is my opinion, that you are egregiously imposed upon; and that this friend is no other than a rascal who wants to palm his trull upon you for a wife, that he may at once deliver himself from the importunities of the mother, and the expence of her bantling; for which reason I would not have you trust implicitly to the report he makes of her wealth, which is inconsistent with his behaviour; nor run your head precipitately into a noose, that you may afterwards wish exchanged for the hangman's.' He seemed very much startled at my insinuation, and promised to look twice before he leaped; saying, with some heat, 'Odds! if I find his intention is to betray me, we shall see which of us is the better man.' My prediction was verified in less than a fortnight; her great belly producing an infant, to the unspeakable amazement of Strap, who was, before this happened, inclinable to believe I had refined a little too much in my penetration. His false friend disappeared, and in a few days after an execution was issued against her goods and household-furniture, which were seized by the creditors.

Meanwhile I met my friend Banter at the ordinary, and in the evening went to the opera with him and Mr. Chatter, who pointed out Melinda in one of the boxes, and offered to introduce me to her, observing at the same time, that she was a reigning toast worth ten thousand pounds. This piece of information made my heart bound with joy, and I discovered great eagerness to accept the proposal; upon which he assured me I should dance with her at the next assembly, if he had any influence in that quarter; so saying, he went round, spoke to her some minutes, and, as I imagined, pointed at me; then returning, told me, to my inexpressible pleasure, that I might depend upon what he had promised, for she was now engaged as my partner. Banter, in a whisper, gave me to understand, that she was an incorrigible coquette, who would grant the same favour to any young fellow in England, of a tolerable appearance, merely to engage him among the herd

herd of her admirers, that she might have the pleasure of seeing them daily increase; that she was of a cold insensible disposition, dead to every passion but vanity, and so blind to merit, that he would lay any wager, the wealthiest fool should carry her at last. I attributed a good deal of this intelligence to the satirical turn of my friend, or resentment, for having himself suffered a rebuff from the lady in question; and, at any rate, trusted so much to my own accomplishments, as to believe no woman could resist the ardour of my addresses.

Full of this confidence, I repaired to Hampstead, in company with Billy Chatter, my Lord Hobble, and doctor Wagtail. There I saw a very brilliant assembly, before whom I had the honour to walk a minuet with Melinda, who charmed me with her frank manner and easiness of behaviour. Before the country dances began, I received a message by a person I did not know, from Bragwell, who was present, importing, that nobody who knew him, presumed to dance with Melinda, while he was there in person; and that I would do well to relinquish her without noise, because he had a mind to lead up a country dance with her. This extraordinary intimation, which was delivered in the lady's hearing, did not at all discompose me, who by this time was pretty well acquainted with the character of my rival. I therefore, without the least symptom of concern, bade the gentleman tell Mr. Bragwell, that since I was so happy as to obtain the lady's consent, I should not be solicitous about his; and desired the bearer himself to bring me no such impertinent messages for the future. Melinda affected a sort of confusion, and pretended to wonder that Mr. Bragwell should give himself such liberties with regard to her, who had no manner of connection with the fellow. I laid hold of this opportunity to display my valour, and offered to call him to an account for his insolence, a proposal which she absolutely refused, under pretence of consulting my safety; though I could perceive by the sparkling of her eyes, that she would not have thought herself affronted in being the subject of a duel. I was by no means pleased with this discovery of her thoughts, which not only argued

the most unjustifiable vanity, but likewise the most barbarous indifference; however, I was allured by her fortune, and resolved to gratify her pride, in making her the occasion of a public quarrel between me and Bragwell; who, I was pretty certain, would never drive matters to a dangerous extremity.

While we danced together, I observed this formidable rival at one end of the room, encircled with a cluster of beaux, to whom he talked with great vehemence, casting many big looks at me, from time to time: I guessed the subject of his discourse, and as soon as I had handed my partner to her seat, strutted up to the place where he stood, and cocking my hat in his face, demanded aloud, if he had any thing to say to me. He answered with a fullen tone, 'Nothing at present, Sir.' And turned about upon his heel. 'Well,' said I, 'you know where I am to be found at any time.' His companions stared at one another, and I returned to the lady, whose features brightened at my approach, and immediately a whisper run through the whole room; after which so many eyes were turned upon me, that I was ready to sink with confusion. When the ball broke up, I led her to her coach; and, like a true French gallant, would have got up behind it, in order to protect her from violence on the road; but she absolutely refused my offer, and expressed her concern that there was not an empty seat for me within the vehicle.

Next day in the afternoon I waited on her at her lodgings, by permission, in company with Chatter, and was very civilly received by her mother, with whom she lived; there were a good many fashionable people present, chiefly young fellows, and immediately after tea a couple of card-tables were set, at one of which I had the honour to play with Melinda, who in less than three hours made shift to plunder me of eight guineas. I was well enough content to lose a little money with a good grace, that I might have an opportunity in the mean time to say soft things, which are still most welcome, when attended with good luck; but I was by no means satisfied of her fair play, a circumstance that shocked me not a little, and greatly impaired my opinion of her disinterestedness and delicacy.

delicacy. However, I was resolved to profit by this behaviour, and treat her in my turn with less ceremony; accordingly, I laid close siege to her, and finding her not at all disgusted with the gross incense I offered, that very night made a declaration of love in plain terms. She received my addresses with great gaiety, and pretended to laugh them off, but at the same time treated me with such particular complacency, that I was persuaded I had made a conquest of her heart, and concluded myself the happiest man alive. Elevated with these flattering ideas, I sat down again to cards, after supper, and with great cheerfulness suffered myself to be cheated of ten guineas more.

It was late before I took my leave, after being favoured with a general invitation; and when I got into bed, the adventures of the day hindered me from sleeping. Sometimes I pleased myself with the hopes of possessing a fine woman with ten thousand pounds; then I would ruminate on the character I had heard of her from Banter, and compare it with the circumstances of her conduct towards me, which seemed to bear too great a resemblance to the picture he had drawn. This introduced a melancholy reflection on the expence I had undergone, and the smallness of my funds to support it, which, by the bye, were none of my own; in short, I found myself involved in doubts and perplexities, that kept me awake the greatest part of the night.

In the morning, Strap, with whom I had not conversed for two days, presented himself with the utensils for shaving me; upon which, I asked his opinion of the lady whom he had seen me conduct to her coach at Hampstead. 'Odd! she's a delicious creature,' cried he; 'and, as I am informed, a great fortune. I am sorry you did not insist on going home with her. I dare say, she would not have refused your company; for she seems to be a good-humoured soul.'—'There's a time for all things,' said I. 'You must know, Strap, I was in company with her till one o'clock this morning.' I had no sooner pronounced these words, than he began to caper about the room, and snap his fingers, crying in a transport, 'The day's our own! the day's our own!' I gave him to understand that his tri-

umph was a little premature, and that I had more difficulties to surmount than he was aware of; then I recounted to him the intelligence I had received from Banter. At which he changed colour, shook his head, and observed there was no faith in woman. I told him, I was resolved to make a bold push notwithstanding, although I foresaw it would lead me into a great expence; and bade him guess the sum I had lost last night at cards. He scratched his chin, and professed his abhorrence of cards, the very name of which being mentioned made him sweat with vexation, as it recalled the money-dropper to his remembrance; 'But however,' said he, 'you have to do with other-guess people now. Why, I suppose, if you had a bad run last night, you would scarce come off for less than ten or twelve shilling.' I was mortified at this piece of simplicity, which I imagined, at that time, was all affected, by way of reprimand for my folly; and asked with some heat, if he thought I spent the evening in a cellar with chairmen and bunters; giving him to know, at the same time, that my expence had amounted to eighteen guineas. It would require the pencil of Hogarth to express the astonishment and concern of Strap, on hearing this piece of news; the bason in which he was preparing the lather for my chin, dropped out of his hands, and he remained some time immovable in that ludicrous attitude, with his mouth open and his eyes thrust forward considerably beyond their station; but remembering my disposition, which was touchy and impatient of controul, he smothered his chagrin, and attempted to recollect himself. With this view he endeavoured to laugh; but in spite of his teeth, broke out into a whimper, took up his wash-ball and pewter-pot, scrubbed my beard with the one, and discharged the other upon my face. I took no notice of his confusion, but after he had fully recovered himself, put him in mind of his right, and assured him of my readiness to surrender his effects whenever he should think proper to demand them. He was nettled at my insinuation, which he thought proceeded from my distrust of his friendship: and begged I would never talk to him in that strain again, unless I had a mind to break his heart.

This good creature's unalterable friendship for me affected me with the most grateful sentiments, and acted as a spur to my resolution of acquiring a fortune, that I might have it in my power to manifest my generosity in my turn. For this purpose, I determined to bring matters to a speedy conclusion with Melinda; well knowing that a few such nights as the last, would effectually incapacitate me from prosecuting that or any other advantageous amour.

While my meditation was busied in planning out my future conduct, Mr. Banter favoured me with a visit; and after breakfast, asked how I had passed the preceding evening. I answered, I was very agreeably entertained at a private house.—‘Yes,’ said he, with a sarcastic smile, ‘you deserved something extraordinary for the price you paid.’ I was surprized at this remark, and pretended ignorance of his meaning. ‘Come, come, Random,’ continued he, ‘you need not make a mystery of it to me, when the whole town has it. I wish that foolish affair between you and Bragwell at Hampstead had been less public.—It has set all the busy bodies, at work to find out your real character and situation; and you cannot imagine what conjectures have already circulated at your expence. One suspects you to be a Jesuit in disguise; another thinks you are an agent from the Pretender; a third believes you to be an upstart gamester, because nobody knows any thing of your family or fortune; a fourth is of opinion, that you are an Irish fortune-hunter.’ This last hypothesis touched me so nearly, that to conceal my confusion, I was fain to interrupt his detail; and damn the world for an envious meddling community, that would not suffer a gentleman to live without molestation. He took no notice of this apostrophe, but went on: ‘For my own part, I neither know, nor desire to know, who, or what you are; this I am certain of, that few people make a mystery of their origin or situation, who can boast of any thing advantageous in either; and my own opinion of the matter is, that you have raised yourself by your industry, from nothing, to the appearance you

now maintain, and which you endeavour to support by some matrimonial scheme.’ Here he fixed his eyes stedfastly upon me, and perceiving my face covered with blushes, told me, now he was confirmed in his opinion. ‘Look ye, Random,’ said he, ‘I have divined your plan, and am confident it will never succeed. You are too honest and too ignorant of the town, to practise the necessary cheats of your profession, and detect the conspiracies that will be formed against you. Besides you are downright bashful—what the devil! set up for a fortune-hunter before you have conquered the sense of shame! Perhaps you are entitled by your merit, and I believe you are, to a richer and better wife than Melinda; but take my word for it, she is not to be won at that rate; or, if you are so lucky as to carry her, between you and me, you may say as Teague did, *By my soul I have gained a loss!* She would take care to spend her fortune in a twinkling, and soon make you sick of her extravagance.’ I was alarmed by his discourse, while I resented the freedom of it, and expressed my disgust, by telling him, he was mistaken in my intentions, and desiring he would give me leave to regulate my conduct according to the dictates of my own reason. He made an apology for the liberty he had taken, and ascribed it to the warmth of his friendship for me; as an uncommon instance of which, he borrowed five guineas, assuring me, there were very few people in the world whom he would so far favour with his confidence. I gave him the money, and professed myself so well convinced of his sincerity, that he had no occasion to put it to such extraordinary proofs for the future. ‘I thought,’ said he, ‘to have asked five pieces more, but hearing you was bubbled of eighteen last night, I presumed you might be out of cash, and resolved to model my demand accordingly.’ I could not help admiring the cavalier behaviour of this spark, of whom I desired to know his reason for saying I was bubbled. He then gave me to understand, that before he came to my lodgings, he had beat up Tom Tossle, who having been present, informed him of the particulars, rehearsed all the fine things I said to Melinda, with which

which he proposed to entertain the town; and among other circumstances, assured him, my mistress cheated with so little art, that nobody but a mere novice could have been imposed upon.

The thoughts of becoming a subject of raillery for coxcombs, and losing my money to boot, stung me to the quick; but I made a virtue of my indignation, and swore that no man should, with impunity, either asperse the character of Melinda, or turn my behaviour into ridicule. He replied in a dry manner, that I would find it an Herculean task, to chastise every body who should laugh at my expence; and as for the character of Melinda, he did not see how it could suffer by what was laid to her charge; for that cheating at cards, far from being reckoned a blemish among people of fashion, was looked upon as an honourable indication of superior genius and address. 'But let us wave this subject,' said he, 'and go to the coffee-house, in order to make a party for dinner.'

CHAP. XII.

WE REPAIR TO THE COFFEE-HOUSE, WHERE WE OVERHEAR A CURIOUS DISPUTE BETWEEN WAGTAIL AND MEDLAR, WHICH IS REFERRED TO OUR DECISION—THE DOCTOR GIVES AN ACCOUNT OF HIS EXPERIMENT—MEDLAR IS ROASTED BY BANTER, AT THE ORDINARY—THE OLD GENTLEMAN'S ADVICE TO ME.

BEING as willing to drop the theme, as he to propose it, I accompanied him thither, where we found Mr. Medlar and Doctor Wagtail, disputing upon the word Custard, which the physician affirmed should be spelt with a G, because it was derived from the Latin verb *gustare*, 'to taste.' But Medlar pleaded custom in behalf of C, observing, that by the doctor's rule we ought to change pudding into *budding*, because it is derived from the French word *boudin*; and in that case why not retain the original orthography and pronunciation of all the foreign words we have adopted; by which means our language would become a dissonant jargon, without stan-

dard or propriety. The controversy was referred to us; and Banter, notwithstanding his real opinion to the contrary, decided it in favour of Wagtail: upon which the peevish annuitant arose, and uttering the monosyllable, *pis!* with great emphasis, removed to another table.

We then enquired of the doctor, what progress he had made in the experiment of distilling tinder-water; and he told us he had been at all the glass-houses about town, but could find nobody who would undertake to blow a retort large enough to hold the third part of the quantity prescribed; but he intended to try the process on as much as would produce five drops, which would be sufficient to prove the specific, and then he would make it a parliamentary affair; that he had already purchased a considerable weight of rags, in reducing which to tinder, he had met with a misfortune, which had obliged him to change his lodgings: for he had gathered them in a heap on the floor, and set fire to them with a candle, on a supposition that the boards would sustain no damage, because it is the nature of flame to ascend; but by some very extraordinary accident, the wood was invaded, and began to blaze with great violence, which disordered him so much, that he had not presence of mind enough to call for assistance, and the whole house must have been consumed with him in the midst of it, had not the smoke that rolled out of the windows in clouds, alarmed the neighbourhood, and brought people to his succour. That he had lost a pair of black velvet breeches, and a tye-wig, in the hurry, besides the expence of the rags, which were rendered useless by the water used to quench the flame, and the damage of the floor, which he was compelled to repair. That his landlord believing him distracted, had insisted on his quitting his apartment at a minute's warning, and he was put to incredible inconvenience; but now he was settled in a very comfortable house, and had the use of a large paved yard for preparing his tinder: so that he hoped in a very short time to reap the fruits of his labour.

After having congratulated the doctor on his prospect, and read the papers, we repaired to an auction of pictures,

where we entertained ourselves an hour or two; from thence we adjourned to the Mall, and after two or three turns, went back to dinner, Banter assuring us, that he intended to roast Medlar at the ordinary; and, indeed, we were no sooner set, than this cynic began to execute his purpose by telling the old gentleman, he looked extremely well, considering the little sleep he had enjoyed last night. To this compliment Medlar made no reply, but by a stare accompanied with a significant grin; and Banter went on thus: 'I don't know whether most to admire the charity of your mind, or the vigour of your body. Upon my soul, Mr. Medlar, you do generous things with the best taste of any man I know! You extend your compassion to real objects, and exact only such returns as they are capable of making. You must know, gentlemen,' said he, turning to the company, 'I had been up most part of the night with a friend who is ill of a fever, and on my return home this morning chanced to pass by a gin-shop still open, whence issued a confused sound of mirth and jollity: upon which, I popped in my head, and perceived Mr. Medlar dancing bare-headed in the midst of ten or twenty ragged hunters, who rejoiced at his expence. But indeed, Mr. Medlar, you ought not to sacrifice your constitution to your benevolence. Consider, you grow old apace: and therefore have a reverend care of your health, which must certainly be very much impaired by these nocturnal expeditions.' The testy senior could no longer contain himself, but cried hastily, 'Tis well known that your tongue is no slander.'—'I think,' said the other, 'you might spare that observation, as you are very sensible, that my tongue has done you signal service on many occasions. You may remember, that when you made your addresses to the fat widow, who kept a public-house at Islington, there was a report spread very much to the prejudice of your manhood, which coming to the ears of your mistress, you was discarded immediately; and I brought matters to a reconciliation, by assuring her that you had three bastards at nurse in the country: how you ruined your own affair afterwards, it

is neither my business nor inclination to relate.' This anecdote, which had no other foundation than in Banter's own invention, afforded a good deal of mirth to every person present, and provoked Mr. Medlar beyond all sufferance; so that he started up in a mighty passion, and forgetting that his mouth was full, bespattered those who sat next to him, while he discharged his indignation in a volley of oaths, and called Banter insignificant puppy, impertinent jackanapes, and an hundred such appellations: telling the company, he had invented these false and malicious aspersions, because he would not lend him money to squander away upon rooks and whores. 'A very likely story,' said Banter, 'that I should attempt to borrow money of a man who is obliged to practise a thousand shifts to make his weekly allowance hold out to Saturday's night. Sometimes he sleeps four and twenty hours at a stretch, by which means he saves three meals, besides coffee-house expence. Sometimes he is fain to put up with bread and cheese and small-beer for dinner; and sometimes he regales on two penny worth of ox cheek in a cellar.'—'You are a lying miscreant!' cried Medlar, in an extasy of rage; 'I can always command money enough to pay your taylor's bill, which I am sure is no trifle: and I have a good mind to give you a convincing proof of my circumstances, by prosecuting you for defamation, sirrah.' By this time the violence of his wrath had deprived him of his appetite, and he sat silent, unable to swallow one mouthful, while his tormentor enjoyed his mortification, and increased his chagrin, by advising him to lay in plentifully for his next day's fast.

Dinner being ended, we came down stairs to the coffee-room, and Banter went away to keep an appointment, saying, he supposed he should see Wagtail and me in the evening at the Bedford coffee-house. He was no sooner gone, than the old gentleman took me aside, and said, he was sorry to see me so intimate with that fellow, who was one of the most graceless rakes about town, and had already wasted a good estate and constitution upon harlots; that he had been the ruin of many a young man, by introducing them into debauched

debauched company, and setting a lewd example of all manner of wickedness; and that-unless I was on my guard, he would strip me in a short time, both of my money and reputation. I thanked him for his information, and promised to conduct myself accordingly; wishing however, his caution had been a few hours more early, by which means I might have saved five guineas. Notwithstanding this intelligence, I was inclinable to impute some part of this charge to Medlar's revenge for the liberties taken with him at dinner; and therefore, as soon as I could disengage myself, applied to Wagtail for his opinion of the character in question; resolved to compare their accounts, allowing for the prejudice of each, and to form my judgment upon both, without adhering strictly to either. The doctor assured me that he was a very pretty gentleman of family and fortune; a scholar, a wit, a critic, and perfectly well acquainted with the town; that his honour and courage were unquestionable, though some extravagances he had been guilty of, and his talent for satire, had procured him enemies, and made some people shy of his acquaintance. From these different sketches, I concluded that Banter was a young fellow of some parts, who had spent his fortune, but retained his appetites, and fallen out with the world, because he could not enjoy it to his wish.

I went to the Bedford coffee-house in the evening, where I met my friends, from thence proceeded to the play, and afterwards carried them home to my lodgings, where we supped in great good-humour.

CHAP. XIII.

I RECEIVE A CHALLENGE—THE CONSEQUENCES OF IT—THE QUARREL BEING MADE UP, AM PUT IN ARREST, BY THE CARE AND AFFECTION OF STRAP—BUT IMMEDIATELY RELEASED UPON EXPLAINING MY AFFAIR—THE BEHAVIOUR OF MR. OREGAN AND HIS TWO FRIENDS—I VISIT MELINDA, WHOM I DIVERT WITH AN ACCOUNT OF THE DUEL—PROPOSE MARRIAGE—SHE REFERS THE MATTER TO

HER MOTHER, OF WHOM I MAKE A SOLEMN DEMAND OF HER DAUGHTER—THE OLD LADY'S BEHAVIOUR—I AM DISCARDED—RESENT THEIR DISDAIN.

WHEN I was ready to go abroad next day, Strap brought me a letter, *To Mr. Random, Esq. Thos*—Which, upon opening, I found contained a challenge conceived in these very extraordinary terms:

SIR,

WHEREAS I am informed that you make love to Miss Melinda Goosetrap, This is to let you know, that she is under promise of marriage to me; and that I am at this present waiting at the back of Montague House, with a pair of good pistols in my hand; and if you will keep your appointment, I will make your tongue confess (after the breath is out of your body) that you do not deserve her as well as

Yours, &c.

ROURK OREGAN.

I guessed from the stile and subscription of this billet, that my rival was a true Milesian, and was not a little uneasy at the contents, especially that part in which he asserted his right to my mistress by promise, a circumstance I did not know how to reconcile to her good sense and penetration. However, this was no time for me to decline the defiance, because the success of my addresses might in a great measure depend upon my behaviour in that affair. I therefore immediately loaded my pistols, and betook myself in a hackney-coach to the place appointed, where I found a tall raw-boned man, with a hard-featured countenance, and black bushy beard, walking by himself, wrapped up in a shabby great-coat, over which his own hair descended in a leathern queue from his head, that was covered with a greasy hat trimmed with a tarnished *point d'Espagne*. He no sooner perceived me advancing, than he pulled a pistol from his bosom, and presenting at me, snapt it without the least preamble. Alarmed at this rude salutation, I made a stand, and before he could adjust his other piece, fired one of

of mine at him, without doing any damage. By this time he was ready with his second, that flashed in the pan without going off: upon which he called, with a true Tipperary cadence, 'Fire away, honey;' and began to hammer his flint with great deliberation. But I was resolved to make use of the advantage fortune had given me; and therefore stepped up, without throwing away my fire, desiring him to ask his life, or prepare for another world; but this stout Hibernian refused to condescend, and complained bitterly of my having quitted my ground before he could return my shot; saying I ought to go back to my station, and let him have an equal chance with me. I endeavoured to persuade him that I had given him a double chance already; and it was my business to prevent him from enjoying a third! but now, since I had an opportunity, I demanded a parley, and desired to know his condition, and reason for calling me to the field, who, to the best of my remembrance, far from having done him any injury, had never before seen him. He told me that he was a gentleman of fortune, who had spent all he had, and hearing that Melinda had got ten thousand pounds, he intended to make himself master of that sum by espousing her, and was determined, in an honourable way, to cut the throats of all those who stood between him and his hopes. I then demanded to know the foundation of his hopes; and now that I had seen him, being more and more astonished at the circumstance of the promise, desired that he would explain that mystery: he gave me to understand, that he trusted entirely to his birth and personal merit; that he had frequently written to Melinda, setting forth his claim and pretensions, but she was never kind enough to send an answer, or even to admit him into her presence; and that the promise he mentioned in his letter, was made by his friend Mr. Gahagan, who assured him, that no woman could resist a man of his appearance. I could not forbear laughing to excess, at the simplicity of my rival, who did not seem to relish my mirth, but began to be very serious: upon which I endeavoured to appease him, by giving him my word

and honour, that far from prejudicing his addresses to the lady, I would represent him to her in the most favourable light I could chuse with any regard to truth; but he must not be surprized if he should remain blind to his deserts, for nothing was more capricious than a woman's mind, and the affection of that sex was seldom purchased with virtue alone. That my declaration might have the better effect, I took notice of his dishabille, and professing sorrow at seeing a gentleman reduced, slipped two guineas into his hand, at sight of which he threw away his pistols, and hugging me in his arms, cried, 'Arrah, by Jesus now, you are the best friend I have met with these seven long years.' When I had suffered some minutes in his embrace, he quitted me, and picking up his rusty arms, wished the devil might burn him if ever he should give me any farther trouble about womankind.

The quarrel being thus amicably composed, I begged leave to look at his pistols, which I found so crazy and so foul, that, I believe it was happy for him neither of them was discharged, for one of them would certainly have split in the going off, and he would, in all probability, have lost his hand in the explosion; but what gave me a lively idea of the man's character was, to find, upon examination, that one of them had been loaded without being primed, and the other primed without a charge.

While we walked home together, I expressed a desire of knowing my new friend's history; and he informed me of his having served in the German army as a volunteer against the Turks; that for his behaviour at the siege of Belgrade, he had been honoured with an ensign's commission, and afterwards promoted to the rank of lieutenant, in which station, it was his misfortune to affront his captain, who challenged him to the field, and was killed in the duel, upon which he was obliged to retreat! that he had been in England some years soliciting his friends for provision in the British army; but being hitherto unsuccessful, was desired by Mr. Gahagan to turn his thoughts to matrimony, and make his fortune by an advantageous match; in consequence

quence
up to
means
ly, the
called
by my
to his
vinced
he two
think
another
farther
did not
iron fr
mission
captain
ed as
was f
man's
termin
of my
mend
those
in the
with
pearla
himse
tions
A
socia
file
head
with
'th
'th
four
corp
ficer
him
war
was
my
self
con
lib
I v
his
ful
wa
co
ha
se
he
to
pu
I
q
b
a
c

quence of which advice, he had made up to Melinda, and having heard by means of an Irish footman in the family, that I was her chief favourite, had called me out in hopes of removing, by my death, the greatest obstruction to his desires; but now he was convinced of my honour and generosity, he swore by the blessed virgin, he would think of her no more, if there was not another woman in the world. As a farther proof of his veracity, which I did not at all doubt, he opened an old iron snuff-box, and pulled out his commission in the imperial army, and his captain's challenge, which he preserved as testimonials of his character. I was so well convinced of this poor man's honesty and courage, that I determined to speak in his behalf, to some of my acquaintance, who might recommend his case to the consideration of those who could provide for him: and in the mean time to accommodate him with a few clothes, by which his appearance would be much mended, and himself enabled to renew his solicitations in person.

As we walked along, conversing socially together, we were met by a file of musqueteers, and Strap at their head, who no sooner approached, than with a frantic look, he cried, 'Seize them! in the name of God, seize them!' We were accordingly surrounded, and I put in arrest by the corporal, who was commanding officer; but Captain Oregan disengaged himself, and ran with such speed towards Tottenham-Court Road, that he was out of sight in a moment. When my arms were delivered up, and myself secured, Strap became a little more composed, and asked pardon for the liberty he had taken; which he hoped I would excuse, as it proceeded from his affection. He then told me that, suspecting the letter (which by the bye was brought by the author himself) contained something extraordinary, he had peeped through the key-hole, and seen me load my pistols; upon which he ran down to Whitehall, and applied to the officer on guard for a party to put me in arrest, but before he returned I was gone in a coach; that he had enquired which way I went, and having heard that duels were commonly fought at the back of Montague House, he conducted the guard to this place,

where he thanked God for having found me safe and sound. I gave him to understand that I forgave his officious concern for once; but cautioned him in pretty severe terms for making me the subject of idle conversation for the future; then turning to the corporal, thanked him for his care, and gave him a crown to drink with his men, assuring him that the rencontre was over long before he came up, and every thing compromised, as he might have observed by our behaviour; as a farther proof of which, he would find upon examination, that one of my pistols had been discharged; but this civil person, without giving himself or me any farther trouble, received the bounty with a thousand bows and acknowledgments, and returning the pistols, released me immediately.

He was not gone a hundred yards, when my friend Oregan came up, in order to rescue me, with two tatterdemalions whom he had engaged for that purpose, about the purlieus of St. Giles: one of them was armed with a musket that wanted a lock, and another with a rusty broad sword; but their dress surpassed all description. When he understood I was already free, he made apology for his abrupt departure, and introduced me to his two companions: first, to Counsellor Fitzclabber, who, he told me, was then employed in compiling a history of the kings of Munster, from Irish manuscripts; and then to his friend Mr. Gahagan, who was a profound philosopher and politician, and had projected many excellent schemes for the good of his country. But it seems these literati had been very ill rewarded for their ingenious labours; for between them both, there was but one shirt and half a pair of breeches. I thanked them very kindly for their readiness to assist me, and having offered my service in my turn, bade them good morrow, desiring Oregan to accompany me to my lodgings, where he was fitted with decent clothes from my wardrobe, so much to his satisfaction, that he swore eternal gratitude and friendship to me, and, at my request, recounted all the adventures of his life.

In the afternoon I waited on Melinda, who received me with great kindness and familiarity, and laughed excessively

excessively at my adventure with the Irishman, to whose wishes she was no stranger, having more than a dozen letters in her possession which he had wrote to her on the subject of love, and which, for my entertainment, she submitted to my perusal. Having made ourselves merry at the expence of this poor admirer, I seized the opportunity of her mother's going out of the room, and introduced my own passion, which I recommended to her with all the ardour and eloquence I was master of. I flattered, sighed, swore, entreated, and acted a thousand extravagancies, in hopes of making some impression on her heart; but she heard every thing I said without discovering the least emotion; and other company came in, before she would vouchsafe one serious reply. After tea, the cards were brought in according to custom, and it was my good fortune to have Melinda for my partner: by which means, instead of losing, I came off with five guineas clear gain.

I soon became acquainted with a good many people of fashion, and spent my time in the modish diversions of the town, such as plays, operas, masquerades, drums, assemblies, and puppet-shows; chiefly in company with Melinda, whom I cultivated with all the eagerness and address that my prospect could inspire, and my education afford: I spared neither my person nor my purse to gratify her vanity and pride; my rivals were intimidated, and indeed outshone; and after all, I began to fear that the dear creature had not a heart to lose. At last, finding myself unable to support the expence of this amour much longer, I was determined to bring the matter to a crisis; and one evening, while we were together by ourselves, complained of her indifference, described the tortures of suspense to a love-sick mind, and pressed her to disclose her sentiments of matrimony and me, with such earnestness, that she could not, with all her art, shift the subject, but was obliged to come to an eclairecissement. She told me with a careless air, that she had no objection to my person, and if I could satisfy her mother in other particulars, I should not find her averse to the match; but she was resolved to do nothing in such a momentous concern, without the advice and consent of her parent. This was no

very agreeable declaration to me, whose aim had been to win her inclination first, and then secure my conquest by a private marriage, to which I flattered myself she would express no reluctance. That I might not, however, desert my cause before it was desperate, I waited on her mother, and with great formality demanded the daughter in marriage. The good lady, who was a very notable woman, behaved with great state and civility; thanked me for the honour I intended her family; and said, she did not doubt that I was in all respects qualified to make a woman happy; but it concerned her, as a parent anxious about the welfare of her child, to enquire into the particulars of my fortune, and know what settlement I proposed to make. To this intimation, which would have utterly disconcerted me, if I had not expected it, I replied without hesitation, that though my fortune was very small, I was a gentleman by birth and education, would maintain her daughter in the sphere of a gentlewoman, and settle her own dowry on her and her heirs for ever. This careful matron did not seem to relish my proposal, but observed with a demure countenance, that there was no necessity for settling that upon her child which was her own already: however, if I pleased, her lawyer should confer with mine upon the matter; and in the mean time, she desired I would favour her with the perusal of my rent-roll. Notwithstanding the vexation I was under, I could scarce forbear laughing in her face, at the mention of my rent-roll, which was, indeed, a severe piece of satire upon my pretensions. I frankly owned I had no landed estate; and told her, that I could not exactly specify the sum I was master of, until I had regulated my affairs, which were at present in some disorder; but that I would take an opportunity of satisfying her on that head very soon.

It was not long before I took my leave, and returned to my lodgings in a very melancholy mood, persuaded that I had nothing more to expect from that quarter. I was confirmed in this opinion next day, when I went back with a view of explaining myself more fully to the old gentlewoman; and was told by the footman, that his ladies were not at home, although I had

seen

seen Melinda through the blinds at a parlour window, as I went up to the door. Incensed at this affront, I quitted the door, without saying one word, and as I repassed the parlour, bowed to Miss, who still remained in the same situation, securely screened, as she thought, from my view.

This disappointment gave me more uneasiness on Strap's account, than my own; for I was in no danger of dying for love of Melinda; on the contrary, the remembrance of my charming Narcissa, was a continual check upon my conscience, during the whole course of my addresses; and perhaps contributed to the bad success of my scheme, by controuling my raptures and condemning my design.

There was a necessity for informing my companion of every thing that happened to me, and I performed this piece of duty in an affected passion, swearing I would be his pack-horse no longer, and desiring him to take the management of his affairs into his own hands. This finess had the desired effect, for instead of grumbling over my miscarriage, Strap was frightened at the passion I feigned, and begged me for the love of God to be appeased; observing, that although we had suffered a great loss, it was not irreparable; and if fortune frowned to-day, she might perhaps smile to-morrow. I pretended to acquiesce in his remarks, praised his equanimity, and promised to improve by misfortune. He, on the other hand, pretended to be perfectly well satisfied with my conduct, and conjured me to follow the dictates of my own reflection; but in spite of all his affectation, I could perceive his inward affliction, and his visage sensibly increased in longitude from that day.

C H A P. XIV.

I LONG TO BE REVENGED ON MELINDA—APPLY TO BANTER FOR HIS ASSISTANCE—HE CONTRIVES A SCHEME FOR THAT PURPOSE, WHICH IS PUT IN EXECUTION WITH GREAT SUCCESS—I MAKE AN ATTEMPT UPON THE HEART OF MISS GRIPWELL, BUT AM DISAPPOINTED—GROW MELANCHOLY AT MY DISAP-

POINTMENT, AND HAVE RECOURSE TO THE BOTTLE—RECEIVE A BILLET-DOUX—AM RAVISHED WITH THE CONTENTS—FIND MYSELF INVOLVED IN AN INTRIGUE, WHICH I IMAGINED WOULD MAKE MY FORTUNE—AM CONFOUNDED AT MY MISTAKE, WHICH BANISHES ALL THOUGHTS OF MATRIMONY.

IN the mean time, my attention was wholly engrossed in search of another mistress, and the desire of being revenged on Melinda, in both which schemes I was very much assisted by Billy Chatter, who was such a necessary creature among the ladies, that in all private dances he engaged the men. To him therefore I applied, desiring he would introduce me to a partner of some figure, at the next private assembly, for the sake of a frolick, the intention of which I would afterwards communicate. Billy, who had heard something of a difference between Melinda and me, immediately smoked part of my design, and thinking I only wanted to alarm her jealousy a little, promised to gratify my desire, by matching me with a partner worth thirty thousand pounds, whom the ladies of this end of the town had lately taken into their management and protection. Upon farther enquiry, I found this person's name was Miss Biddy Gripewell; that her father, who had been a pawnbroker, died intestate, by which means all his substance descended to his daughter, who was so little a favourite, that could the old man have prevailed with his own rapacious disposition, to part with as much money as would have paid the expence of a will, she would not have inherited a sixth part of his fortune; that during his life, far from being educated in a way suitable to such great expectations, she was obliged to live like a servant wench, and do the most menial offices in the family. But his funeral was no sooner performed, than she assumed the fine lady, and found so many people of both sexes, to flatter, caress, and instruct her, that for want of discretion and experience, she was grown insufferably vain and arrogant, and pretended to no less than a duke or earl at least, for her husband; that she had the misfortune to be neglected by the English

A a quality,

quality, but a certain poor Scottish lord was then making interest to be introduced to her acquaintance. In the mean time, she was fallen into the hands of a notable lady, who had already disposed of her to a lieutenant of foot, a distant relation of her ladyship's, though Miss, as yet, knew nothing of the affair; and lastly, that if I proposed to dance with her, I must give him leave to represent me as a knight or foreign count at least. I was ravished at this piece of information, and consented, for one night, to personate a French marquis, that I might the easier fulfil my revenge.

Having made the appointment with Chatter, I went to Banter's lodgings, as I had by this time conceived a great opinion of his penetration and knowledge; and after I had enjoined secrecy, told him every circumstance of my disgrace with Melinda, and imparted the plan I had projected to mortify that proud coquette, desiring his advice in improving, and assistance in executing the scheme. Nothing could be more agreeable to his misanthropical temper, than an account of her behaviour and my resentment. He applauded my resolution, and proposed that I should not only provide myself with a proper partner, but also procure such an one for Miss Goosetrap, as should infallibly entail upon her the ridicule of all her acquaintance: for this purpose he mentioned his barber; who, he said, was an exceeding coxcomb lately come from Paris, whose absurd affectation and grimace would easily pass upon her for the sprightly politesse of a gentleman improved by travel. I hugged him for this hint; and he assured me it would be no difficult matter to make him believe, that Melinda having seen him by accident, was captivated by his appearance, and longed for his acquaintance. He actually engaged him on this pretence, and painted his good fortune in such colours, that the poor shaver was quite beside himself with joy. He was immediately fitted with a tawdry suit of clothes belonging to Banter, and by him recommended to Chatter, as a very pretty fellow just returned from his travels. Master Billy, who acted as gentleman-usher to a great many of the fair-sex in and about town, undertook, at once, to bespeak Melinda in his behalf; and

every thing happened according to my wish.

At the time appointed, I appeared dressed to the best advantage; and in the character of marquis, had the honour of opening the ball with the rich heiress, who attracted the eyes of the whole company, by the prodigious number of jewels with which she was adorned. Among others, I perceived Melinda, who could no more conceal her envy than astonishment at my success: her curiosity was still more flagrant and tormenting, for she had never seen Miss Gripewell before; and Chatter, who alone could give her any satisfaction on that head, was engaged in conversation at the other end of the room. I observed her impatience, and exulted in her chagrin; and after my partner was set, took the opportunity of passing by her to make a slight bow without stopping; which completed my triumph and her indignation. She changed colour, bridled up, assumed an air of disdain, and flirited her fan with such a fury, that it went to pieces in a moment, to the no small entertainment of those who sat near and observed her.

At length the metamorphosed barber took her out, and acted his part with such ridiculous extravagance, that the mirth of the whole company was excited at his expence, and his partner so much ashamed, that before the country dances began she retired in great confusion, under pretence of being taken suddenly ill, and was followed by her gallant, who, no doubt, imagined her indisposition was nothing but love; and laid hold of the occasion of conducting her home, to comfort her, with an assurance of his entertaining a reciprocal passion. They were no sooner gone, than an inquisitive whisper of 'Who is he?' ran round the room; and Chatter could give them no other intelligence about him, than that he was a man of fortune, just returned from his travels. I, who alone was acquainted with his real quality, affected ignorance; well knowing that female curiosity would not rest satisfied with such a general account, and that the discovery would proceed with a better grace from any body than me.

Meanwhile, I was tempted by the richness of the prize, to practise upon Miss Gripewell's heart, but soon found

it

it too well fortified with pride and indifference to yield to any efforts in my own character, and I neither would nor could preserve the title I had borrowed longer than that night.

As I expected, every thing came to light next day. The barber, in pure simplicity of heart, detected himself to Melinda, and discovered the foundation of his hopes; she sickened at the affront, and was ashamed to shew her face in public for many weeks after this accident. Poor Chatter found it impossible to justify himself to her satisfaction; was in utter disgrace with Miss Gripewell, for having imposed me upon her as a nobleman; and suffered very much in his character and influence among the ladies in general.

Finding my finances diminished more than one half, and my project as little advanced as on the first day of my arrival in town, I began to despair of my success, and grew melancholy at the prospect of approaching want. To dispel the horrors of this fiend, I had recourse to the bottle, and kept more company than ever. I became particularly attached to the play-house, conversed with the actors behind the scenes, grew acquainted with a body of Templars, and in a short time commenced a professed wit and critic. Indeed I may say, without vanity, that I was much better qualified than any one of my companions; who were, generally speaking, of all the creatures I ever conversed with, the most ignorant and assuming. By means of these avocations I got the better of care, and learned to separate my ideas in such a manner, that whenever I was attacked by a gloomy reflection, I could shove it aside, and call in some agreeable reverie to my assistance. This was not the case with Strap, who practised a thousand shifts to conceal the sorrow that preyed upon his carcase, and reduced him to the resemblance of a mere skeleton.

While I thus posted, in a thoughtless manner, towards poverty, I one day received, by the penny-post, a letter written in a woman's hand, containing a great many high-flown compliments, warm protestations of love, couched in a very poetical style, an earnest desire of knowing whether or not my heart was engaged, by leaving an answer at a certain place directed

to R. B. and the whole subscribed, 'Your Incognita.' I was transported with joy on reading the contents of this billet-doux, which I admired as a master-piece of tenderness and elegance, and was already up to the ears in love with the author, whom my imagination represented as a lady of fortune in the bloom of youth and beauty. Elevated with this conjecture, I went to work, and exhausted my invention in composing an answer suitable to the sublimity of her style, and the ardour of her sentiments. I expressed my admiration of her wit in terms the most hyperbolical, and while I acknowledged myself unworthy of her regard, declared myself enamoured of her understanding; and in the most pathetic manner, implored the honour of an interview. Having finished this performance, and communicated it to Strap, who skipped about for joy, I dispatched him with it to the place appointed, which was the house of a milliner not far from Bond Street, and desired him to keep watch near the door for some time, that he might discover the person who should call for it. In less than an hour he returned with a joyful countenance, and told me, that soon after he had delivered the letter, a chairman was called, to whom it was given with directions to carry it to the house of a rich gentleman in the neighbourhood, whither he (Strap) followed him, and saw it put into the hands of a waiting-woman, who paid the messenger and shut the door. That upon enquiry at an alehouse hard by, where he called for a pint of beer, he understood, the gentleman to whom the house belonged had an only daughter, very handsome, who would inherit his whole estate; and who certainly was the author of the billet I had received. I was of the same opinion, and, hugging myself in the happy prospect, dressed immediately, and passed in great state by the house that contained my unknown admirer. Nor was my vanity disappointed; for I perceived a beautiful young creature standing at one of the windows of the dining-room, who, I imagined, observed me with more than common curiosity. That I might indulge her view, and at the same time feast my own, I affected to stop, and gave orders to Strap, in the street, just opposite

to her station, by which means I had an opportunity of seeing her more distinctly, and of congratulating myself on having made a conquest of so much perfection. In a few minutes she retired, and I betook myself to the ordinary, in a rapture of hope which deprived me of my appetite for that meal, and sent me home in the evening to indulge my contemplation.

Early next day, I was favoured with another epistle from my unknown charmer, signifying her unutterable joy at the receipt of mine, which, while it made a tender of my heart, convinced her of the value of it. Above all things, she professed extreme pleasure in finding me so much attached to her understanding, a circumstance that not only flattered her in the most sensible part, but at the same time argued my own sagacity. As for the interview I desired, she assured me, that I could not be more eager for such an occasion than she; but she must not only sacrifice a little more to decorum, but be satisfied of my honourable intentions, before she would grant that request: meanwhile, she gave me to understand, that although she might owe some deference to the opinion of certain persons, she was resolved, in an affair that so nearly concerned her happiness, to consult her own inclination, preferable to the advice of the whole world; especially as she was urged to such condescension by no consideration of fortune, what she depended upon being her own without restriction or controul. Struck with admiration at the philosophy and self-dénial of my mistress, who seemed insensible of the beauty she possessed; and in particular, ravished with that piece of intelligence, by which I learned her fortune was independent; I resumed the pen, launched out into encomiums on the dignity of her sentiments, affected to undervalue the charms of external beauty, pretended to ground my passion on the qualities of her mind; complained of her rigour in sacrificing my repose to an over-scrupulous regard to decorum, and declared the purity of my designs in the most solemn and pathetic vows. This performance being sealed and directed, was sent to the place appointed by Strap; who, that we might be still the more confirmed in our belief, renewed his watch, and in a little time

brought back the same information as before, with this addition, that Miss Sparkle (the name of my correspondent) looking out at the window, no sooner saw the messenger arrive, than she shut the casement in a sort of beautiful confusion, and disappeared; eager, no doubt, to hear from the dear object of her love.

My doubts now vanished, the long expected port appeared, and I looked upon myself as perfectly secured of that happiness I had been in quest of so long. After dinner, I sauntered in company with Doctor Wagtail to that part of the town in which my enamorata lived; and, as he was a mere register, enquired of him into the name, character and fortune, of every body who possessed a good house in the streets through which we passed; when it came to his turn to mention Sir John Sparkle, he represented him as a man of an immense estate and narrow disposition, who mewed up his only child, a fine young lady, from the conversation of mankind, under the strict watch and inspection of an old governante, who was either so honest, envious, or insatiable, that nobody had been as yet able to make her a friend, or get access to her charge, though numbers attempted it every day; not so much on account of her expectations from her father, who, being a widower, might marry again and have sons, as for a fortune of twelve thousand pounds left her by an uncle, of which she could not be deprived. This piece of news exactly tallying with the last part of the letter I had been honoured with in the morning, had such an effect on me, that any man, except Wagtail, might have observed my emotion; but his attention was too much engrossed by the contemplation of his own importance, to suffer him to be affected with the deportment of any other body, unless it happened to be so particular that he could not help taking notice of it.

When I had disengaged myself from him, whose conversation grew insipid to me, I went home, and made Strap acquainted with the fruit of my researches. This faithful squire was almost choaked with transports; and even wept with joy; but whether on account of himself or me, I shall not pretend to determine. Next day a

third

third billet-doux was brought to me, containing many expressions of tenderness, mingled with some affecting doubts about the artifice of man, the inconstancy of youth, and the jealousy often attending the most sincere passion; withal desiring I would excuse her, if she should try me a little longer, before she declared herself beyond the power of retracting. These interesting scruples added fuel to my flame, and impatience to my hope; I redoubled my complaints of her indifference, and pressed her to an assignation with such fervid entreaties, that in a few days she consented to meet me at the house of that milliner who had forwarded all my letters. During the interval between the date of her promise, and the hour of appointment, my pride soared beyond all reason and description; I lost all remembrance of the gentle Narcissa, and my thoughts were wholly employed in planning triumphs over the malice and contempt of the world.

At length the happy hour arrived, I flew to the place of rendezvous, and was conducted into an apartment, where I had not waited ten minutes, when I heard the rustling of silk and the sound of feet ascending the stairs. My heart took the alarm, and beat quick, my cheeks glowed, my nerves thrilled, and my knees shook with ecstasy! I perceived the door opening, saw a gold brocade petticoat advance, and sprung forward to embrace my charmer. Heaven and earth! how shall I paint my situation, when I found Miss Sparkle converted into a wrinkled hag turned of seventy! I was struck dumb with amazement, and petrified with horror! This ancient Urganda perceived my disorder, and approaching with a languishing air, seized my hand, asking in a squeaking tone, if I was indisposed. Her monstrous affectation completed the disgust I had conceived for her at first appearance; and it was a long time before I could command myself so much, as to behave with common civility; at length, however, I recollected myself, and pronounced an apology for my behaviour, which, I said, proceeded from a dizziness that seized me all of a sudden. My hoary dulcinea, who, no doubt, had been alarmed at my confusion, no sooner learned the cause to which I now ascribed it, than she discovered her joy in a thousand amo-

rous coquetries, and assumed the sprightly airs of a girl of sixteen. One while she ogled me with her dim eyes, quenched in rheum; then, as if she was ashamed of that freedom, she affected to look down, blush, and play with her fan, then told her head that I might not perceive a palsy that shook it, ask some childish questions with a lisping accent, giggle and grin with her mouth shut, to conceal the ravages of time upon her teeth, leer upon me again, sigh piteously, fling herself about in her chair to shew her agility, and act a great many more absurdities that youth and beauty can alone excuse. Shocked as I was at my disappointment, my disposition was incapable of affronting any person who loved me; I therefore endeavoured to put a good face on the matter for the present, resolved to drop the whole affair as soon as I should get clear of her company; with this view I uttered some civil things, and in particular desired to know the name and condition of the lady who had honoured me so much. She told me her name was Withers, that she lived with Sir John Sparkle in quality of governess to his only daughter, in which situation she had picked up a comfortable sufficiency to make her easy for life; that she had the pleasure of seeing me at church, where my appearance and deportment made such an impression upon her heart, that she could enjoy no ease until she had enquired into my character, which she found so amiable in all respects, that she yielded to the violence of her inclination, and ventured to declare her passion, with too little regard perhaps to the decorum of her sex; but she hoped I would forgive a trespass of which I myself was in some measure the cause, and impute her intrusion to the irresistible dictates of love. No decayed rake ever swallowed a bolus with more reluctance than I felt in making a reply suitable to this compliment, when, instead of the jewel, I found the crazy casket only in my power; and yet my hopes began to revive a little, when I considered, that by carrying on the appearance of an intrigue with the duenna, I might possibly obtain access to her charge. Encouraged by this suggestion, my temper grew more serene, my reserve wore off, I talked *en cavalier*, and even made love to this antiquated coquette, who seemed extremely happy

happy in her adorer, and spread all her allurements to make her imagined conquest more secure. The good woman of the house treated us with tea and sweetmeats, and afterwards withdrew, like a civil experienced matron as she was. Left thus to our mutual endearments, Miss Withers (for she was still a maiden) began to talk of matrimony, and expressed so much impatience in all her behaviour, that had she been fifty years younger, I might possibly have gratified her longing without having recourse to the church; but this step my virtue as well as interest forbade. When the inclinations of an old maid settle upon a young fellow, he is persecuted with her addresses; but should he once grant her the favour, he will never be able to disentangle himself from her importunities and reproaches. It was my business to defer the ceremony as long as possible, under the most specious pretences, with a view of becoming acquainted with Miss Sparkle in the mean time; and I did not despair of success, when I considered, that in the course of our correspondence I should, in all probability, be invited to visit my mistress in her own apartment, and by these means have an opportunity of conversing with her charming ward. Pleased with this prospect, my heart dilated with joy, I talked in raptures to the stale governess, and kissed her shrivelled hand with great devotion. She was so much transported with her good fortune, that she could not contain her ecstasy, but flew upon me like a tygres, and pressed her skinny lips to mine; when (as it was no doubt concerted by her evil genius) a dose of garlick she had swallowed that morning, to dispel wind I suppose, began to operate with such a sudden explosion, that human nature, circumstanced as I was, could not endure the shock with any degree of temper. I lost all patience and reflection, flung away from her in an instant, snatched my hat and cane, and ran down stairs as if the devil had me in pursuit, and could scarce restrain the convulsion of my bowels, which were grievously offended by the perfume that assaulted me. Strap, who waited my return with impatience, seeing me arrive in the utmost disorder, stood motionless with apprehension, and durst not enquire into the cause.

After I had washed my mouth more than once, and recruited my spirits with a glass of wine, I recounted to him every particular of what had happened; to which he made no other reply for some time, than lifting up his eyes, clasping his hands, and uttering a hollow groan. At length he observed, in a melancholy tone, that it was a thousand pities my organs were so delicate as to be offended with the smell of garlick: 'Ah! God help us,' said he, 'tis not the steams of garlick, no, nor of something else, that would give me the least uneasiness; see what it is to be a cobbler's son.' I replied hastily, 'I wish then you would go and retrieve my miscarriage.' At this suggestion he started, forced a smile, and left the room, shaking his head. Whether the old gentlewoman repented my abrupt departure so much, that her love changed into disdain, or was ashamed to see me on account of her infirmity, I know not; but I was never troubled again with her passion.

CHAP. XV.

I CULTIVATE AN ACQUAINTANCE WITH TWO NOBLEMEN—AM INTRODUCED TO EARL STRUTWELL—HIS KIND PROMISE AND INVITATION—THE BEHAVIOUR OF HIS PORTER AND LACQUEY—HE RECEIVES ME WITH AN APPEARANCE OF UNCOMMON AFFECTION—UNDERTAKES TO SPEAK IN MY BEHALF TO THE MINISTER—INFORMS ME OF HIS SUCCESS, AND WISHES ME JOY—INTRODUCES A CONVERSATION ABOUT PETRONIUS ARBITER—FALLS IN LOVE WITH MY WATCH, WHICH I PRESS UPON HIM—I MAKE A PRESENT OF A DIAMOND RING TO LORD STRADDLE—IMPART MY GOOD FORTUNE TO STRAP AND BANTER, WHO DISABUSES ME, TO MY UTTER MORTIFICATION.

BAFFLED hitherto in my matrimonial schemes, I began to question my talents for the science of fortune-hunting, and to bend my thoughts towards some employment under the government. With the view of procuring which, I cultivated the acquaintance

acquaintance of Lord Straddle and Swillpot, whose fathers were men of interest at court. I found these young noblemen as open to my advances as I could desire: I accompanied them in their midnight rambles, and often dined with them at taverns, where I had the honour of paying the reckoning.

I one day took the opportunity, while I was loaded with protestations of friendship, to disclose my desire of being settled in some sinecure; and to solicit their influence in my behalf. Swillpot squeezing my hand, said I might depend upon his service, by God. The other swore that no man would be more proud than he to run my errands. Encouraged by these declarations, I ventured to express an inclination to be introduced to their fathers, who were able to do my business at once. Swillpot frankly owned he had not spoke to his father these three years; and Straddle assured me his father having lately disoblinded the minister, by subscribing his name to a protest in the house of peers, was thereby rendered incapable of serving his friends at present; but he undertook to make me acquainted with Earl Strutwell, who was hand and glove with a certain person who ruled the roast. This offer I embraced with many acknowledgments, and plied him so closely, in spite of a thousand evasions, that he found himself under a necessity of keeping his word, and actually carried me to the levee of this great man, where he left me in a crowd of fellow-dependants, and was ushered to a particular closet audience; from whence, in a few minutes, he returned with his lordship, who took me by the hand, assured me he would do me all the service he could, and desired to see me often. I was charmed with my reception, and although I had heard that a courtier's promise is not to be depended upon, I thought I discovered so much sweetness of temper and candour in this earl's countenance, that I did not doubt of finding my account in his protection. I resolved therefore, to profit by this permission, and waited on him next audience day, when I was favoured with a particular smile, squeeze of the hand, and a whisper, signifying that he wanted half an hour's conversation with me in private, when

he should be disengaged, and for that purpose desired me to come and drink a dish of chocolate with him to-morrow morning. This invitation, which did not a little flatter my vanity and expectation, I took care to observe, and went to his lordship's house at the time appointed. Having rapped at the gate, the porter unbolted and kept it half open, placing himself in the gap, like soldiers in a breach, to dispute my passage. I asked if his lord was stirring. He answered with a furly aspect, 'No.'—'At what hour does he commonly rise?' said I. 'Sometimes sooner, sometimes later,' said he, closing the door upon me by degrees. I then told him, I was come by his lordship's own appointment; to which intimation this Cerberus replied, 'I have received no orders about the matter;' and was upon the point of shutting me out; when I recollected myself all of a sudden, and slipping a crown into his hand, begged as a favour that he would enquire, and let me know whether or not the Earl was up. The grim Janitor relented at the touch of my money, which he took with all the indifference of a tax-gatherer, and shewed me into a parlour, where, he said, I might amuse myself till such time as his lord should be awake. I had not sat ten minutes in this place, when a footman entered, and without speaking, stared at me; I interpreted this piece of his behaviour into 'Pray, Sir, what is your business?' and asked the same question I had put to the porter, when I accosted him first. The lacquey made the same reply, and disappeared before I could get any farther intelligence. In a little time he returned, on pretence of poking the fire, and looked at me again with great earnestness; upon which I began to perceive his meaning, and tipping him with half a crown, desired he would be so good as to fall upon some method of letting the earl know, that I was in the house. He made a low bow, said, 'Yes, Sir,' and vanished. This bounty was not thrown away, for in an instant he came back, and conducted me to a chamber, where I was received with great kindness and familiarity by his lordship, whom I found just risen, in his morning gown and slippers. After breakfast,

breakfast, he entered into a particular conversation with me about my travels, the remarks I had made abroad, and examined me to the full extent of my understanding. My answers seemed to please him very much, he frequently squeezed my hand, and looking at me with a singular complacency in his countenance, bade me depend upon his good offices with the ministry in my behalf. 'Young men of your qualifications,' said he, 'ought to be cherished by every administration. For my own part, I see so little merit in the world, that I have laid it down as a maxim, to encourage the least appearance of genius and virtue to the utmost of my power: you have a great deal of both; and will not fail of making a figure one day, if I am not mistaken; but you must lay your account with mounting by gradual steps to the summit of your fortune: *Rome was not built in a day*. As you understand the languages perfectly well, how would you like to cross the sea as secretary to an embassy?' I assured his lordship, with great eagerness, that nothing could be more agreeable to my inclination: upon which he bade me make myself easy, my business was done, for he had a place of that kind in his view. This piece of generosity affected me so much, that I was unable for some time to express my gratitude, which at length broke out in acknowledgments of my own unworthiness, and encomiums on his benevolence. I could not even help shedding tears, at the goodness of this noble lord, who no sooner perceived them, than he caught me in his arms, and hugged and kissed me with a seemingly paternal affection. Confounded at this uncommon instance of fondness for a stranger, I remained a few moments silent and ashamed, then rose and took my leave, after he had assured me that he would speak to the minister in my favour, that very day; and desired that I would not for the future give myself the trouble of attending at his levee, but come at the same hour every day when he should be at leisure, that is, three times a week.

Though my hopes were now very sanguine, I determined to conceal my prospect from every body, even from Strap, until I should be more certain of success; and in the mean time, give

my patron no respite from my solicitations. When I renewed my visit, I found the street-door opened to me as if by enchantment; but in my passage towards the presence-room, I was met by the valet de chambre, who cast some furious looks at me, the meaning of which I could not comprehend. The earl saluted me at entrance with a tender embrace, and wished me joy of his success with the premier; who, he said, had preferred his recommendation to that of two other noblemen very urgent in behalf of their respective friends, and absolutely promised that I should go to a certain foreign court in quality of secretary to an ambassador and plenipotentiary, who was to set out in a few weeks, on an affair of vast importance to the nation. I was thunder-struck with my good fortune, and could make no other reply, than kneel and attempt to kiss my benefactor's hand; which submission he would not permit, but raising me up, pressed me to his breast with surprizing emotion, and told me he had now taken upon himself the care of making my fortune. What enhanced the value of the benefit still the more, was his making light of the favour, and shifting the conversation to another subject: among other topics of discourse, that of the belles lettres was introduced, upon which his lordship held forth with great taste and erudition, and discovered an intimate knowledge of the authors of antiquity. 'Here's a book,' said he, taking one from his bosom, 'written with great elegance and spirit; and though the subject may give offence to some narrow-minded people, the author will always be held in esteem by every person of wit and learning.' So saying, he put into my hand Petronius Arbiter, and asked my opinion of his wit and manner. I told him, that in my opinion, he wrote with great ease and vivacity, but was withal so lewd and indecent, that he ought to find no quarter or protection among people of morals and taste. 'I own,' replied the earl, 'that his taste in love is generally decried, and indeed condemned by our laws; but perhaps that may be more owing to prejudice and misapprehension, than to true reason and deliberation. The best man among the ancients is said to have entertained that passion; one of the

the wisest of their legislators has permitted the indulgence of it in his commonwealth; the most celebrated poets have not scrupled to avow it: at this day it prevails not only over all the east, but in most parts of Europe; in our own country it gains ground apace, and in all probability will become in a short time a more fashionable vice than simple fornication. Indeed, there is something to be said in vindication of it; for notwithstanding the severity of the law against offenders in this way, it must be confessed that the practice of this passion is unattended with that curse and burden upon society, which proceeds from a race of miserable and deserted bastards, who are either murdered by their parents, deserted to the utmost want and wretchedness, or bred up to prey upon the commonwealth: and it likewise prevents the debauchery of many a young maiden, and the prostitution of honest men's wives; not to mention the consideration of health, which is much less liable to be impaired in the gratification of this appetite, than in the exercise of common venery, which by ruining the constitutions of our young men, has produced a puny progeny, that degenerates from generation to generation. Nay, I have been told, that there is another motive, perhaps more powerful than all these, that induces people to cultivate this inclination; namely, the exquisite pleasure attending it's success.

From this discourse, I began to be apprehensive that his lordship, finding I had travelled, was afraid I might have been infected with this spurious and sordid desire abroad, and took this method of sounding my sentiments on the subject. Fired at this supposed suspicion, I argued against it with great warmth, as an appetite unnatural, absurd, and of pernicious consequence; and declared my utter detestation and abhorrence of it in these lines of the satirist.

Eternal infamy the wretch confound,
Who planted first that vice on British ground!
A vice! that spite of sense and nature reigns,
And poisons genial love, and manhood stains!

The earl smiled at my indignation, told me he was glad to find my opinion of the matter so conformable to his own, and that what he advanced was only to provoke me to an answer, with which he professed himself perfectly well pleased.

After I had enjoyed a long audience, I happened to look at my watch, in order to regulate my motions by it; and his lordship observing the chased case, desired to see the device, and examine the execution, which he approved with some expressions of admiration. Considering the obligations I lay under to his lordship, I thought there could not be a fitter opportunity than the present, to manifest, in some shape, my gratitude; I therefore begged he would do me the honour to accept of the watch, as a small testimony of the sense I had of his lordship's generosity; but he refused it in a peremptory manner, and said he was sorry I should entertain such a mercenary opinion of him; observing at the same time, that it was the most beautiful piece of workmanship he had ever seen; and desiring to know where he could have such another. I begged a thousand pardons for the freedom I had taken, which I hoped he would impute to nothing else than the highest veneration for his person; told him that, as it came to my hand by accident in France, I could give him no information about the maker, for there was no name on the inside; and once more humbly entreated that he would indulge me so far as to use it for my sake. He was still positive in refusing it; but was pleased to thank me for my generous offer, saying it was a present that no nobleman need be ashamed of receiving; though he was resolved to shew his disinterestness with regard to me, for whom he had conceived a particular friendship; and insisted (if I was willing to part with the watch) upon knowing what it had cost, that he might at least indemnify me, by refunding the money. On the other hand, I assured his lordship that I should look upon it as an uncommon mark of distinction, if he would take it without farther question: and rather than disoblige me, he was at last persuaded to put it in his pocket, to my no small satisfaction; who took my leave immediately, after having received

B b a kind

a kind squeeze, and an injunction to depend upon his promise.

Buoyed up with this reception, my heart opened, I gave away a guinea among the lacqueys, who escorted me to the door, flew to the lodgings of Lord Straddle, upon whom I forced my diamond ring, as an acknowledgment for the great service he had done me, and from thence hied me home, with an intent of sharing my happiness with honest Strap. I determined, however, to heighten his pleasure, by depressing his spirits at first, and then bringing in the good news with double relish. For this purpose, I affected the appearance of disappointment and chagrin, and told him in an abrupt manner, that I had lost the watch and diamond. Poor Hugh, who had been already harassed into a consumption by intelligence of this sort, no sooner heard these words, than, unable to contain himself, he cried with distraction in his looks, 'God in heaven forbid!' I could carry on the farce no longer, but laughing in his face, told him every thing that had passed, as above recited. His features were immediately unbended, and the transition so affecting, that he wept with joy, calling my Lord Strutwell by the appellations of jewel, phoenix, *rara avis*; and praising God, that there was still some virtue left among our nobility. Our mutual congratulations being over, we gave way to our imagination, and anticipated our happiness, by prosecuting our success through the different steps of promotion, till I arrived at the rank of a prime minister, and he to that of my first secretary.

Intoxicated with these ideas, I went to the ordinary, where, meeting with Banter, I communicated the whole affair in confidence to him, concluding with an assurance that I would do him all the service in my power. He heard me to an end with great patience, then regarding me a good while with a look of disdain, pronounced, 'So, your business is done, you think?'—'As good as done, I believe,' said I. 'I'll tell you,' replied he, 'what will do it still more effectually—a halter. 'Sdeath! if I had been such a gull to two such scoundrels as Strutwell and Straddle, I would without any more ado tuck myself up.'

Shocked at this exclamation, I desired him, with some confusion, to explain himself: upon which he gave me to understand, that Straddle was a poor contemptible wretch, who lived by borrowing and pimping for his fellow peers; that in consequence of this last capacity, he had doubtless introduced me to Strutwell, who was so notorious for a passion for his own sex, that he was amazed his character had never reached my ears; and that far from being able to obtain for me the post he had promised, his interest at court was so low, that he could scarce provide for a superannuated footman once a year, in the customs or excise; that it was a common thing for him to amuse strangers, whom his jackals ran down, with such assurances and caresses as he had bestowed on me, until he had stripped them of their cash and every thing valuable about them; very often of their chastity; and then leave them a prey to want and infamy; that he allowed his servants no other wages than that part of the spoil which they could glean by their industry; and the whole of his conduct towards me was so glaring, that nobody who knew any thing of mankind could have been imposed upon by his insinuations.

I leave the reader to judge how I relished this piece of information, which precipitated me from the most exalted pinnacle of hope to the lowest abyss of despondence; and well nigh determined me to take Banter's advice, and finish my chagrin with a halter. I had no room to suspect the veracity of my friend, because, upon recollection, I found every circumstance of Strutwell's behaviour exactly tallying with the character he had described: his hugs, embraces, squeezes, and eager looks, were now no longer a mystery; no more than his defence of Petronius, and the jealous frown of his valet de chambre, who, it seems, had been the favourite pathic of his lord.

CHAP. XVI.

I ATTEMPT TO RECOVER MY WATCH AND JEWEL, BUT TO NO PURPOSE—RESOLVE TO REVENGE MYSELF ON STRUTWELL BY MY IMPORTUNITY—AM REDUCED TO MY LAST GUINEA—OBLIGED

OBLIGED TO INFORM STRAP OF MY NECESSITY, WHO IS ALMOST DISTRACTED WITH THE NEWS—BUT NEVERTHELESS OBLIGED TO PAWN MY BEST SWORD FOR PRESENT SUBSISTENCE—THAT SMALL SUPPLY BEING EXHAUSTED, I AM ALMOST STUPIFIED WITH MY MISFORTUNES—GO TO THE GAMING TABLE, BY THE ADVICE OF BANTER, AND COME OFF WITH UNEXPECTED SUCCESS—STRAP'S EXTASY—MRS. GAWKY WAITS UPON ME, PROFESSES REMORSE FOR HER PERFIDY, AND IMPORES MY ASSISTANCE—I DO MYSELF A PIECE OF JUSTICE BY HER MEANS, AND AFTERWARDS RECONCILE HER TO HER FATHER.

I Was so confounded, that I could make no reply to Banter, who reproached me with great indignation for having thrown away upon rascals, that which, had it been converted into ready money, would have supported the rank of a gentleman for some months, and enabled me, at the same time, to oblige my friends. Stupified as I was, I could easily divine the source of his concern, but sneaked away in a solitary manner, without yielding the least answer to his expostulations; and began to deliberate with myself in what manner I should attempt to retrieve the moveables I had so foolishly lost. I should have thought it no robbery to take them again by force, could I have done it without any danger of being detected; but as I could have no such opportunity, I resolved to work by finess, and go immediately to the lodgings of Straddle, where I was so fortunate as to find him. 'My lord,' said I, 'I have just now recollected, that the diamond-I had the honour of presenting to you, is loosened a little in the socket, and there is a young fellow just arrived from Paris, who is reckoned the best jeweller in Europe; I knew him in France, and if your lordship will give me leave, will carry the ring to him to be set to rights.' His lordship was not to be caught in this snare; he thanked me for my offer, and told me, that having himself observed the defect, he had already sent it to his own jeweller to be mended. And indeed, by this

time I believe it was in the jeweller's hands; though not in order to be mended, for it stood in need of no alteration.

Baulked in this piece of politicks, I cursed my simplicity; but resolved to play a surer game with the earl, which I thus devised. I did not doubt of being admitted into familiar conversation with him, as before, and hoped by some means to get the watch into my hand, and then, on pretence of winding or playing with it, drop it on the floor, when in all probability the fall would disorder the work so as to stop it's motion: this event would furnish me with an opportunity of insisting upon carrying it away in order to be repaired; and then I should have been in no hurry to bring it back. What pity it was I could not find an occasion of putting this fine scheme in execution! When I went to renew my visit to his lordship, my access to the parlour was as free as ever; but after I had waited some time, the valet de chambre came in with his lordship's compliments, and a desire to see me to-morrow at his levee, he being at present so much indisposed that he could not see company. I interpreted this message into a bad omen, and came away muttering curses against his lordship's politeness, and ready to go to logger-heads with myself for being so egregiously duped. But that I might have some satisfaction for the loss I had sustained, I besieged him closely at his levee, and persecuted him with my solicitations; not without faint hopes indeed of reaping something more from my industry, than the bare pleasure of making him uneasy; though I could never obtain another private hearing, during the whole course of my attendance; neither had I resolution enough to undeceive Strap, whose looks in a little time were so whetted with impatience, that whenever I came home, his eyes devoured me, as it were, with eagerness of attention.

At length, however, finding myself reduced to my last guinea, I was compelled to disclose my necessity, though I endeavoured to sweeten the discovery by rehearsing to him the daily assurances I received from my patron. But these promises were not of efficacy sufficient to support the spirits of my friend, who no sooner understood the

lowness of my finances, than uttering a dreadful groan, he exclaimed; 'In the name of God, what shall we do?' In order to comfort him, I said, that many of my acquaintance, who were in a worse condition than we, supported, notwithstanding, the character of gentlemen; and advising him to thank God that we had as yet incurred no debt, proposed, he should pawn my sword of steel inlaid with gold, and trust to my discretion for the rest. This expedient was wormwood and gall to poor Strap; who, in spite of his invincible affection for me, still retained notions of economy and expence suitable to the narrowness of his education; nevertheless he complied with my request, and raised seven pieces on the sword in a twinkling. This supply, inconsiderable as it was, made me as happy for the present, as if I had kept five hundred pounds in bank; for by this time I was so well skilled in procrastinating every troublesome reflection, that the prospect of want seldom affected me very much, let it be ever so near. And now indeed it was nearer than I imagined; my landlord having occasion for money, put me in mind of my being indebted to him five guineas in lodging; and telling me he had a sum to make up, begged I would excuse his importunity, and discharge the debt. Though I could ill spare so much cash, my pride took the resolution of disbursing it. This I did in a cavalier manner, after he had written a discharge, telling him with an air of scorn and resentment, I saw he was resolved that I should not be long in his books; while Strap, who stood by, and knew my circumstances, wrung his hands in secret, gnawed his nether lip, and turned yellow with despair. Whatever appearance of indifference my vanity enabled me to put on, I was thunderstruck with this demand; which I had no sooner satisfied, than I hastened into company, with a view of beguiling my cares with conversation, or of drowning them with wine.

After dinner, a party was accordingly made in the coffee-house, from whence we adjourned to the tavern, where, instead of sharing the mirth of the company, I was as much chagrined at their good-humour as a damned soul in hell would be at a glimpse of heaven. In vain did I swallow bumper after

bumper! the wine had lost it's effect upon me, and far from raising my dejected spirits, could not even lay me asleep. Banter, who was the only intimate I had, (Strap excepted) perceived my anxiety, and when we broke up, reproached me with pusillanimity, for being cast down at any disappointment that such a rascal as Strutwell could be the occasion of. I told him I did not at all see how Strutwell's being a rascal alleviated my misfortune; and gave him to understand, that my present grief did not so much proceed from that disappointment, as from the low ebb of my fortune, which was sunk to something less than two guineas. At this declaration, he cried, 'Psha! is that all?' and assured me, there was a thousand ways of living in town without a fortune, he himself having subsisted many years entirely by his wit. I expressed an eager desire of being acquainted with some of these methods; and he, without farther expostulation, bade me follow him. He conducted me to a house under the piazzas in Covent Garden, which we entered, and having delivered our swords to a grim fellow who demanded them at the foot of the stair-case, ascended to the second story, where I saw multitudes of people standing round two gaming tables, loaded in a manner with gold and silver. My conductor told me this was the house of a worthy Scotch lord, who using the privilege of his peerage, had set up public gaming tables, from the profits of which he drew a comfortable livelihood. He then explained the difference between the *fitters* and the *bettors*; characterized the first as old rooks, and the last as bubbles; and advised me to try my fortune at the silver table, by betting a crown at a time. Before I would venture any thing, I considered the company more particularly, and there appeared such a groupe of villainous faces, that I was struck with horror and astonishment at the sight! signified my surprize to Banter, who whispered in my ear, that the bulk of those present were sharpers, highwaymen, and apprentices, who having embezzled their masters cash, made a desperate push in this place to make up their deficiencies. This account did not encourage me to hazard any part of my small pittance; but at length, being teased by the importunities of my friend,

friend, who assured me there was no danger of being ill used, because people were hired by the owner to see justice done to every body, I began by risking one shilling, and in less than an hour my winning amounted to thirty. Convinced by this time of the fairness of the game, and animated with success, there was no need of farther persuasion to continue the play. I lent Banter (who seldom had any money in his pocket) a guinea, which he carried to the gold table and lost in a moment. He would have borrowed another, but finding me deaf to his arguments, went away in a pet. Meanwhile my gain advanced to six pieces, and my desire of more increased in proportion; so that I moved to the higher table, where I laid half a guinea on every throw, and fortune still favouring me, I became a sifter, in which capacity I remained till it was broad day; when I found myself, after many vicissitudes, one hundred and fifty guineas in pocket.

Thinking it now high time to retire with my booty, I asked if any body would take my place, and made a motion to rise; upon which an old Gaston, who sat opposite to me, and of whom I had won a little money, started up with fury in his looks, crying, '*Reflex, foutez, reflex; il faut donner moi mon ravancho!*' At the same time, a Jew who sat near the other, insinuated that I was more beholden to art than fortune, for what I had got; that he had observed me wipe the table very often, and that some of the divisions seemed to be greasy. This intimation produced a great deal of clamour against me, especially amongst the losers, who threatened with many oaths and imprecations to take me up by a warrant as a sharper, unless I would compromise the affair by refunding the greatest part of my winning. Though I was far from being easy under this accusation, I relied upon my innocence, threatened in my turn to prosecute the Jew for defamation, and boldly offered to submit my cause to the examination of any justice in Westminster; but they knew themselves too well to put their characters on that issue, and finding I was not to be intimidated into any concession, dropt their plea, and made way for me to withdraw. I would not, however,

stir from the table, until the Israelite had retracted what he said to my disadvantage, and asked pardon before the whole assembly.

As I marched out with my prize, I happened to tread upon the toes of a tall raw-boned fellow, with a hooked nose, fierce eyes, black thick eye-brows, a pig-tail wig of the same colour, and a formidable hat pulled over his forehead, who stood gnawing his fingers in the crowd, and no sooner felt the application of my shoe-heel, than he roared out in a tremendous voice, 'Blood and wounds! you son of a whore, what's that for?' I asked pardon with a great deal of submission, and protested I had no intention of hurting him; but the more I humbled myself the more he stormed, and insisted upon gentlemanly satisfaction, at the same time provoking me with scandalous names that I could not put up with; so that I gave a loose to my passion, returned his Billingsgate, and challenged him to follow me down to the piazzas. His indignation cooling as mine warmed, he refused my invitation, saying, he would chuse his own time, and returned towards the table, muttering threats, which I neither dreaded, nor distinctly heard; but descending with great deliberation, received my sword from the door-keeper, whom I gratified with a guinea, according to the custom of the place, and went home in a rapture of joy.

My faithful valet, who had sat up all night in the utmost uneasiness on my account, let me in with his face beslobbered with tears, and followed me to my chamber, where he stood silent like a condemned criminal, in expectation of hearing that every shilling was spent. I guessed the situation of his thoughts, and assuming a sullen look, bade him fetch me some water to wash. He replied, without lifting his eyes from the ground, 'In my simple conjecture, you have more occasion for rest, not having, I suppose, slept these four and twenty hours.'—'Bring me some water!' said I, in a peremptory tone: upon which he sneaked away, shrugging his shoulders. Before he returned, I had spread my whole stock on the table in the most ostentatious manner; so that when it first saluted his view, he stood like one intranced, and having rubbed his eyes more than once,

once, to assure himself of his being awake, he broke out into, 'Lord have mercy upon us, what a vast treasure is here!'—'Tis all our own, Strap,' said I; 'take what is necessary, and redeem the sword immediately.' He advanced towards the table, stopt short by the way, looked at the money and me by turns, and with a wildness in his countenance, produced from joy checked by distrust, cried, 'I dare say it is honestly come by.' To remove his scruples, I made him acquainted with the whole story of my success; which when he heard, he danced about the room in an extasy, crying, 'God be praised! a white stone! God be praised! a white stone!' So that I was afraid the sudden change of fortune had disordered his intellects, and that he was run mad with joy. Extremely concerned at this event, I attempted to reason him out of his frenzy, but to no purpose; for, without regarding what I said, he continued to frisk up and down, and repeat his rhapsody of, 'God be praised! a white stone!' At last I rose in the utmost consternation, and laying violent hands upon him, put a stop to his extravagance, by fixing him down to a settee that was in the room. This constraint banished his delirium; he started, as if just awoke, and terrified at my behaviour, cried, 'What is the matter?' When he learned the cause of my apprehension, he was ashamed of his transports, and told me, that in mentioning the white stone, he alluded to the *Dies fasti* of the Romans, *albo lapide notati*.

Having no inclination to sleep, I secured my cash, dressed, and was just going abroad, when the servant of the house told me, there was a gentlewoman at the door, who wanted to speak with me. Surprized at this information, I bade Strap shew her up, and in less than a minute saw a young woman of a shabby decayed appearance enter my room. After half a dozen curtsies, she began to sob, and told me her name was Gawky; upon which information I immediately recollected the features of Miss Lavement, who had been the first occasion of my misfortunes. Though I had all the reason in the world to resent her treacherous behaviour to me, I was moved at her distress, and professing my sorrow at

seeing her so reduced, desired her to sit, and enquired into the particulars of her situation. She fell upon her knees, and implored my forgiveness for the injuries she had done me, protesting before God, that she was forced, against her inclination, into that hellish conspiracy which had almost deprived me of my life, by the entreaties of her husband; who having been afterwards renounced by his father on account of his marriage with her, and unable to support a family on his pay, left his wife at her father's house, and went with the regiment to Germany, where he was broke for misbehaviour at the battle of Dettingen, since which time she had heard no tidings of him. She then gave me to understand, with many symptoms of penitence, that it was her misfortune to bear a child four months after marriage, by which event her parents were so incensed, that she was turned out of doors with the infant that died soon after; and had hitherto subsisted in a miserable indigent manner on the extorted charity of a few friends, who were now quite tired of giving; that not knowing where or how to support herself one day longer, she had fled for succour even to me, who of all mankind had the least cause to assist her, relying upon the generosity of my disposition, which, she hoped, would be pleased with this opportunity of avenging itself in the noblest manner on the wretch who had wronged me. I was very much affected with her discourse, and having no cause to suspect the sincerity of her repentance, raised her up, freely pardoned all she had done against me, and promised to befriend her as much as lay in my power.

Since my last arrival in London, I had made no advances to the apothecary, imagining it would be impossible for me to make my innocence appear, so unhappily was my accusation circumstanced. Strap indeed had laboured to justify me to the school-master; but far from succeeding in his attempt, Mr. Concordance dropt all correspondence with him, because he refused to quit his connexion with me. Things being in this situation, I thought a fairer opportunity of vindicating my character could not offer, than that which now presented itself; I therefore stipulated with Mrs. Gawky, that

before

before I would yield her the least assistance, she should do me the justice to clear my reputation, by explaining, upon oath before a magistrate, the whole of the conspiracy as it had been executed against me. When she had given me this satisfaction, I presented her with five guineas; a sum so much above her expectation, that she could scarce believe the evidence of her senses, and was ready to worship me for my benevolence. The declaration signed with her own hand, I sent to her father, who, upon recollecting and comparing the circumstances of my charge, was convinced of my integrity, and waited on me next day, in company with his friend the school-master, to whom he had communicated my vindication. After mutual salutation, Monsieur Lavement began a long apology for the unjust treatment I had received; but I saved him a good deal of breath, by interrupting his harangue, and assuring him, that far from entertaining a resentment against him, I thought myself obliged to his lenity, which allowed me to escape, after such strong presumptions of guilt appeared against me. Mr. Concordance thinking it now his turn to speak, observed, that Mr. Random had too much candour and sagacity to be disobliged at their conduct, which, all things considered, could not have been otherwise with any honesty of intention. 'Indeed,' said he, 'if the plot had been unravelled to us by any supernatural intelligence; if it had been whispered by genii, communicated by a dream, or revealed by an angel from on high, we should have been to blame in crediting ocular demonstration; but as we were left in the mist of mortality, it cannot be expected we should be incapable of imposition. I do assure you, Mr. Random, no man on earth is more pleased than I am at this triumph of your character; and as the news of your misfortune panged me to the very entrails, this manifestation of your innocence makes my midriff quiver with joy.' I thanked him for his concern, desired them to undeceive those of their acquaintance who judged harshly of me; and having treated them with a glass of wine, represented to Lavement the deplorable

condition of his daughter, and pleaded her cause so effectually, that he consented to settle a small annuity on her for life; but could not be persuaded to take her home, because her mother was so much incensed that she would never see her.

C H A P. XVII.

I PURCHASE NEW CLOTHES —
REPRIMAND STRUTWELL AND
STRADDLE—BANTER PROPOSES
ANOTHER MATRIMONIAL SCHEME
—I ACCEPT OF HIS TERMS—SET
OUT FOR BATH IN A STAGE-
COACH, WITH THE YOUNG LADY
AND HER MOTHER—THE BEHA-
VIOUR OF AN OFFICER AND LAW-
YER—OUR FELLOW TRAVELLERS
DESCRIBED—A SMART DIALOGUE
BETWEEN MY MISTRESS AND THE
CAPTAIN.

HAVING finished this affair to my satisfaction, I found myself perfectly at ease, and looking upon the gaming table as a certain resource for a gentleman in want, became more gay than ever. Although my clothes were almost as good as new, I grew ashamed of wearing them, because I thought every body by this time had got an inventory of my wardrobe. For which reason, I disposed of a good part of my apparel to a salesman in Monmouth Street for half the value, and bought two new suits with the money. I likewise purchased a plain gold watch, despairing of recovering that which I had so foolishly given to Strutwell, whom, notwithstanding, I still continued to visit at his levee, until the ambassador he had mentioned, set out with a secretary of his own chusing. I thought myself then at liberty to expostulate with his lordship, whom I treated with great freedom in a letter, for amusing me with vain hopes, when he neither had the power nor inclination to provide for me. Nor was I less reserved with Straddle, whom I in person reproached for misrepresenting to me the character of Strutwell, which I did not scruple to aver was infamous in every respect. He seemed very much enraged at my freedom, talked a great deal about his quality and honour, and began

began to make some comparisons which I thought so injurious to mine, that I demanded an explanation with great warmth; and he was mean enough to equivocate, and condescended in such a manner, that I left him with a hearty contempt of his behaviour.

About this time, Banter, who had observed a surprizing and sudden alteration in my appearance and disposition, began to enquire very minutely into the cause; and as I did not think fit to let him know the true state of the affair, lest he might make free with my purse, on the strength of having proposed the scheme that filled it, I told him that I had received a small supply from a relation in the country, who at the same time had promised to use all his interest, which was not small, in soliciting some post for me that should make me easy for life. 'If that be the case,' said Banter, 'perhaps you wont care to mortify yourself a little, in making your fortune another way. I have a relation who is to set out for Bath next week, with an only daughter, who being sickly and decrepit, intends to drink the waters for the recovery of her health. Her father, who was a rich Turkey merchant, died about a year ago, and left her with a fortune of twenty thousand pounds, under the sole management of her mother, who is my kinswoman. I would have put in for the plate myself, but there is a breach at present between the old woman and me. You must know, that some time ago, I borrowed a small sum of her, and promised, it seems, to pay it before a certain time; but being disappointed in my expectation of money from the country, the day elapsed, without my being able to take up my note, upon which she wrote a peremptory letter, threatening to arrest me, if I did not pay the debt immediately: nettled at this precise behaviour, I sent a damned severe answer, which enraged her so much, that she actually took out a writ against me. Whereupon, finding the thing grow serious, I got a friend to advance the money for me, discharged the debt, went to her house, and abused her for her unfriendly dealing. She was provoked by my reproaches, and scolded in her turn. The little deformed urchin joined her

mother with such virulence and volubility of tongue, that I was fain to make my retreat, after having been honoured with a great many scandalous epithets, which gave me plainly to understand that I had nothing to hope from the esteem of the one, or the affection of the other. As they are both utter strangers to life, it is a thousand to one that the girl will be picked up by some scoundrel or other at Bath, if I don't provide for her otherwise. You are a well-looking fellow, Random, and can behave as demurely as a quaker. Now if you will give me an obligation for five hundred pounds, to be paid six months after your marriage, I will put you in a method of carrying her in spite of all opposition.'

This proposal was too advantageous for me, to be refused: the writing was immediately drawn up and executed; and Banter giving me notice of the time when, and the stage-coach in which they were to set out, I bespoke a place in the same convenience, and having hired a horse for Strap, who was charmed with the prospect, set forward accordingly.

As we embarked before day, I had not the pleasure for some time of seeing Miss Snapper, (that was the name of my mistress) nor even of perceiving the number and sex of my fellow-travellers, although I guessed that the coach was full, by the difficulty I found in seating myself. The first five minutes passed in a general silence, when all of a sudden, the coach heeling to one side, a boisterous voice pronounced, 'To the right and left, cover your flanks, damme! whiz!' I easily discovered by the tone and matter of this exclamation, that it was uttered by a son of Mars; neither was it hard to conceive the profession of another person who sat opposite to me, and observed, that we ought to have been well satisfied of the security, before we entered upon the premises. These two sallies had not the desired effect; we continued a good while as mute as before; till at length, the gentleman of the sword, impatient of longer silence, made a second effort, by swearing he had got into a meeting of quakers. 'I believe so too,' said a shrill female voice, at my left-hand, 'for the spirit of folly begins to move.'—'Out with

‘with it then, Madam,’ replied the soldier. ‘You seem to have no occasion for a midwife,’ cried the lady. ‘D—n my blood!’ exclaimed the other, ‘a man can’t talk to a woman, but she immediately thinks of a midwife.’—‘True, Sir,’ said she, ‘I long to be delivered.’—‘What! of a mouse, Madam?’ said he. ‘No, Sir,’ said she, ‘of a fool.’—‘Are you far gone with a fool?’ said he. ‘Little more than two miles,’ said she. ‘By Gad, you’re a wit, Madam!’ cried the officer. ‘I wish I could with any justice return the compliment,’ said the lady. ‘Zounds, I have done!’ said he. ‘Your bolt is soon shot; according to the old proverb!’ said she. The warrior’s powder was quite spent; the lawyer advised him to drop the prosecution, and a grave matron, who sat on the left hand of the victorious wit, told her, she must not let her tongue run so fast among strangers. This reprimand, softened with the appellation of child, convinced me that the satirical lady was no other than Miss Snapper, and I resolved to regulate my conduct accordingly. The champion finding himself so smartly handled, changed his battery, and began to expatiate on his own exploits. ‘You talk of shot, Madam,’ said he; ‘damme! I have both given and received some shot in my time. I was wounded in the shoulder by a pistol ball at Dettingen, where—I say nothing—but, by G—d! if it had not been for me—all’s one for that—I despise boasting, d—me! whiz!’ So saying, he whistled one part, and hummed the other, of the Black Joke; then addressing himself to the lawyer, went on thus: ‘Would not you think it damned hard, after having, at the risk of your life, recovered the standard of a regiment that had been lost, to receive no preferment for your pains! I don’t chuse to name no names, sink me! but howsoever, this I will refer, by G—d; and that is this: a musqueteer of the French guards having taken a standard from a certain cornet of a certain regiment, damme! was retreating with the prize as fast as his horse’s heels could carry him, sink me! Upon which, I snatched up a firelock that belonged to a dead man, damme! whiz! and shot his horse

under him, d—n my blood! The fellow got upon his feet, and began to repose me; upon which I charged my bayonet breast high, and ran him through the body, by G—d! One of his comrades coming to his assistance, shot me in the shoulder, as I told you before; and another gave me a contusion on the head with the butt end of his carbine; but, damme, that did not signify: I killed one, put the other to flight, and taking up the standard, carried it off very deliberately. But the best joke of all was, the son of a b—ch of a cornet, who had surrendered it in a cowardly manner, seeing it in my possession, demanded it from me, in the front of the line. “D—n my blood,” says he, “where did you find my standard?” says he. “D—n my blood,” said I; “where,” said I, “did you lose it!” said I. “That’s nothing to you,” says he; “’tis my standard,” says he; “and by G—d I’ll have it,” says he, “D—n—ti—n seize me,” says I, “if you shall,” says I; “till I have first delivered it to the general,” says I. And accordingly I went to the head quarters, after the battle, and delivered it to my Lord Stair, who promised to do for me; but I am no more than a poor lieutenant still, d—n my blood.’

Having vented this repetition of expletives, the lawyer owned he had not been requited, according to his deserts; observed that the labourer is always worthy of his hire; and asked if the promise was made before witness, because in that case the law would compel the general to perform it: but understanding that the promise was made over a bottle, without being restricted to time or terms, he pronounced it not valid in law, proceeded to enquire into the particulars of the battle, and affirmed, that although the English had drawn themselves into a premunire at first, the French managed their cause so lamely in the course of the dispute, that they would have been utterly nonsuited, had they not obtained a *noli prosequi*. In spite of these enlivening touches, the conversation was like to suffer another long interruption; when the lieutenant, unwilling to conceal any of his accomplishments that could be displayed in

his present situation, offered to regale the company with a song; and interpreting our silence into a desire of hearing, began to warble a fashionable air, the first stanza of which he pronounced thus:

- ‘ Would you task the moon-ty’d hair,
- ‘ To yon flagrant beau repair;
- ‘ Where, waving with the popling vow,
- ‘ The bantling fine will shelter you.’ &c.

The sense of the rest he perverted as he went on, with such surprizing facility, that I could not help thinking he had been at some pains to burlesque the performance. Miss Snapper ascribed it to the true cause, namely, ignorance; and when he asked her how she relished his musick, answered, that in her opinion, the musick and the words were much of a piece. ‘ O, d—n my blood!’ said he, ‘ I take that as a high compliment; for every body allows the words are ‘ damnable fine.’—‘ They may be so,’ replied the lady, ‘ for aught I know, but ‘ they are above my comprehension.’—‘ I an’t obliged to find you comprehension, Madam, curse me!’ cried he. ‘ No, nor to speak sense, neither,’ said she. ‘ D—n my heart,’ said he, ‘ I’ll ‘ speak what I please.’ Here the lawyer interposed, by telling him there were some things he must not speak. And upon being desired to give an instance, mentioned treason and defamation. ‘ As for the king,’ cried the soldier, ‘ God bless him; I eat his ‘ bread, and have lost blood in his cause, ‘ therefore I have nothing to say to ‘ him; but, by G—d, I dare say any ‘ thing to any other man.’—‘ No,’ said the lawyer, ‘ you dare not call me a ‘ rogue.’—‘ Damme, for what?’ said the other. ‘ Because,’ replied the counsellor, ‘ I should have a good action ‘ against you, and recover.’—‘ Well, ‘ well,’ cried the officer, ‘ if I dare ‘ not call you rogue, I dare think you ‘ one, damme!’ This stroke of wit he accompanied with a loud laugh of self-approbation, which unluckily did not affect the audience, but effectually silenced his antagonist, who did not open his mouth for the space of an hour, except to clear his pipes with three hems, which, however, produced nothing,

C H A P. XVIII.

DAY BREAKING, I HAVE THE PLEASURE OF VIEWING THE PERSON OF MISS SNAPPER, WHOM I HAD NOT SEEN BEFORE—THE SOLDIER IS WITTY UPON ME—IS OFFENDED, TALKS MUCH OF HIS VALOUR—IS REPRIMANDED BY A GRAVE GENTLEWOMAN—WE ARE ALARMED WITH THE CRY OF HIGHWAYMEN—I GET OUT OF THE COACH, AND STAND ON MY OWN DEFENCE—THEY RIDE OFF WITHOUT HAVING ATTACKED US—I PURSUE THEM—ONE OF THEM IS THROWN FROM HIS HORSE AND TAKEN—I RETURN TO THE COACH—AM COMPLIMENTED BY MISS SNAPPER—THE CAPTAIN’S BEHAVIOUR ON THIS OCCASION—THE PRUDE REPROACHES ME IN A SOLILOQUY—I UPBRAID HER IN THE SAME MANNER—THE BEHAVIOUR OF MRS. SNAPPER AT BREAKFAST, DISOBLIGES ME—THE LAWYER IS WITTY UPON THE OFFICER, WHO THREATENS HIM.

IN the mean time, day breaking in upon us, discovered to one another the faces of their fellow-travellers; and I had the good fortune to find my mistress not quite so deformed nor disagreeable as she had been represented to me. Her head, indeed, bore some resemblance to a hatchet, the edge being represented by her face; but she had a certain delicacy in her complexion, and a great deal of vivacity in her eyes, which were very large and black; and though the protuberance of her breast, when considered alone, seemed to drag her forwards, it was easy to perceive an equivalent on her back which balanced the other, and kept her body in equilibrio. On the whole, I thought I should have great reason to congratulate myself, if it should be my fate to possess twenty thousand pounds encumbered with such a wife. I began therefore to deliberate about the most probable means of acquiring the conquest, and was so much engrossed by this

idea, that I scarce took any notice of the rest of the people in the coach, but revolved my prospect in silence; while the conversation was maintained as before, by the object of my hopes, the son of Mars, and the barrister, who by this time had recollected himself, and talked in terms as much as ever. At length a dispute happened, which ended in a wager, to be determined by me; who was so much absorbed in contemplation, that I neither heard the reference nor the question which was put to me by each in his turn: affronted at my supposed contempt, the soldier with great vociferation, swore, I was either dumb or deaf, if not both, and that I looked as if I could not say *Bob to a goose*. Arouzed at this observation, I fixed my eyes upon him, and pronounced with emphasis, the interjection *boh!* Upon which he cocked his hat in a fierce manner, and cried, 'Damme, Sir, what d'ye mean by that?' Had I intended to answer him, which by the bye was not my design, I should have been anticipated by Miss, who told him, my meaning was to shew that I could cry *boh!* to a goose; and laughed very heartily at my laconic reproof. Her explanation and mirth did not help to appease his wrath, which broke out in several martial insinuations; such as, 'I do not understand such freedoms, damme! D—n my blood! I'm a gentleman, and bear the king's commission. 'Sblood! some people deserve to have their noses pulled for their impertinence.' I thought to have checked these ejaculations by a frown; because he had talked so much of his valour, that I had long ago rated him an ass in a lion's skin; but this expedient did not answer my expectation; he took umbrage at the contraction of my brows, swore he did not value my sulky look a fig's end, and protested he feared no man breathing. Miss Snapper said, she was very glad to find herself in company with a man of so much courage; who, she did not doubt, would protect us all from the attempts of highwaymen during our journey. 'Make yourself perfectly easy on that head, Madam,' replied the officer; 'I have got a pair of pistols (here they are) which I took from a horse officer at the battle of Dettingen; they are double load-

ed, and if any highwayman in England robs you of the value of a pin while I have the honour of being in your company, d—n my heart.' When he had expressed himself in this manner, a prim gentlewoman, who had sat silent hitherto, opened her mouth, and said, she wondered how any man could be so rude as to pull out such weapons before ladies. 'Damme, Madam,' cried the champion, 'if you are so much afraid at sight of a pistol, how d'ye propose to stand fire if there should be occasion.' She then told him, that if she thought he could be so unmannerly as to use fire-arms in her presence, whatever might be the occasion, she would get out of the coach immediately, and walk to the next village, where she might procure a convenience to herself. Before he could make any answer, my dulcinea interposed, and observed, that far from being offended at a gentleman's using his arms in his own defence, she thought herself very lucky in being along with one by whose valour she stood a good chance of saving herself from being rifled. The prudent cast a disdainful look at Miss, and said, that people who have but little to lose, are sometimes the most solicitous about preserving it. The old lady was affronted at this inuendo, and took notice, that people ought to be very well informed before they speak slightly of other people's fortunes, lest they discover their own envy, and make themselves ridiculous. The daughter declared, that she did not pretend to vie with any body in point of riches; and if the lady who insisted upon non-resistance, would promise to indemnify us all for the loss we should sustain, she would be one of the first to persuade the captain to submission, in case we should be attacked. To this proposal, reasonable as it was, the reserved lady made no other reply, than a scornful glance and a toss of her head. I was very well pleased with the spirit of my mistress; and even wished for an opportunity of distinguishing my courage under her eye, which I believed could not fail of prepossessing her in my favour; when all of a sudden, Strap rode up to the coach door, and told us in a great fright, that two men on horseback were crossing the heath, (for by this time we had passed Hounslow) and

made directly towards us. This piece of information was no sooner delivered, than Mrs. Snapper began to scream, her daughter grew pale, the other lady pulled out her purse to be in readiness, the lawyer's teeth chattered; while he pronounced, ' 'Tis no matter; we'll sue the county, and recover.' The captain gave evident signs of confusion; and I, after having commanded the coachman to stop, opened the door, jumped out, and invited the warrior to follow me. But finding him backward and astonished, I took his pistols, and giving them to Strap, who had by this time alighted, and trembled very much, I mounted on horseback; and taking my own (which I could better depend upon) from the holsters, cocked them both, and faced the robbers, who were now very near us. Seeing me ready to oppose them on horseback, and another man armed afoot, they made a halt at some distance to reconnoitre us, and after having rode round us twice, myself still facing about as they rode, went off the same way they came, at a hand-gallop. A gentleman's servant coming up with a horse at the same time, I offered him a crown to assist me in pursuing them, which he no sooner accepted, than I armed him with the officer's pistols, and we galloped after the thieves, who trusting to the swiftness of their horses, stopped till we came within shot of them, and then firing at us, put their nags to the full speed. We followed them as fast as our beasts could carry us, but not being so well mounted as they, our efforts would have been to little purpose, had not the horse of one of them stumbled and thrown his rider with such violence over his head, that he lay senseless, when we came up, and was taken without the least opposition: while his comrade consulted his own safety in flight, without regarding the distress of his friend. We scarce had time to make ourselves masters of his arms, and tie his hands together, before he recovered his senses; when learning his situation, he affected surprise, demanded to know by what authority we used a gentleman in that manner, and had the impudence to threaten us with a prosecution for robbery. In the mean time we perceived Strap coming up with a crowd of people, armed with different kinds of

weapons; and among the rest a farmer, who no sooner perceived the thief, whom we had secured, than he cried with great emotion, ' There's the fellow robbed me an hour ago, of twenty pounds in a canvas bag.' He was immediately searched, and the money found exactly as it had been described: upon which, we committed him to the charge of the countryman, who carried him to the town of Hounslow, which it seems the farmer had alarmed; and I, having satisfied the footman for his trouble, according to promise, returned with Strap to the coach, where I found the captain and lawyer busy in administering smelling bottles and cordials to the grave lady, who had gone into a fit at the noise of the firing.

When I had taken my seat, Miss Snapper, who from the coach had seen every thing that happened, made me a compliment on my behaviour, and said she was glad to see me returned without having received any injury: her mother too owned herself obliged to my resolution; and the lawyer told me, that I was entitled by act of parliament to a reward of forty pounds, for having apprehended a highwayman. The soldier observed, with a countenance in which impudence and shame struggling, produced some disorder, that if I had not been in such a damned hurry to get out of the coach, he would have secured the rogues effectually, without all this bustle and loss of time, by a scheme which my heat and precipitation ruined. ' For my own part,' continued he, ' I am always extremely cool on these occasions.'—' So it appeared, by your trembling,' said the young lady. ' Death and damnation,' cried he, ' your sex protects you, Madam; if any man on earth durst tell me so much, I'd send him to hell, d—n my heart! in an instant.' So saying, he fixed his eyes upon me, and asked if I had seen him tremble. I answered without hesitation, ' Yes.'—' Damn me, Sir,' said he, ' d'ye doubt my courage?' I replied, ' Very much.' This declaration quite disconcerted him. He looked black, and pronounced with a faltering voice, ' O! 'tis very well—d—n my blood! I shall find a time.' I signified my contempt of him, by thrusting my tongue in my cheek, which humbled him so

so much, that he scarce swore another oath aloud during the whole journey.

The precise lady, having recruited her spirits by the help of some strong waters, began a soliloquy, in which she wondered that any man, who pretended to maintain the character of a gentleman, could, for the sake of a little paltry coin, throw persons of honour into such quandaries as might endanger their lives; and professed her surprize, that women were not ashamed to commend such brutality. At the same time vowing, that for the future she would never set foot in a stage-coach, if a private convenience could be had for love or money.

Nettled at her remarks, I took the same method of conveying my sentiments, and wondered in my turn, that any woman of common sense should be so unreasonable as to expect that people, who had neither acquaintance or connexion with her, would tamely allow themselves to be robbed and mal-treated, merely to indulge her capricious humour. I likewise confessed my astonishment at her insolence and ingratitude, in taxing a person with brutality, who deserved her approbation and acknowledgment; and vowed, that if ever she should be assaulted again, I would leave her to the mercy of the spoiler, that she might know the value of my protection.

This person of honour did not think fit to carry on the altercation any farther, but seemed to chew the cud of her resentment with the crest-fallen captain, while I entered into discourse with my charmer, who was the more pleased with my conversation, as she had conceived a very indifferent opinion of my intellects from my former silence. I should have had cause to be equally satisfied with the sprightliness of her genius, could she have curbed her imagination with judgment; but she laboured under such a profusion of talk that I dreaded her unruly tongue, and felt by anticipation the horrors of an eternal clack! However, when I considered, on the other hand, the joys attending the possession of twenty thousand pounds, I forgot her imperfections, seized occasion by the fore-lock, and endeavoured to insinuate myself into her affection. The careful mother kept a strict watch over her, and though she could not help behaving

civilly to me, took frequent opportunities of discouraging our communication, by reprimanding her for being so free with strangers, and telling her she must learn to speak less, and think more. Abridged of the use of speech, we conversed with our eyes, and I found the young lady very eloquent in this kind of discourse. In short, I had reason to believe that she was sick of the old gentlewoman's tuition, and that I should find it no difficult matter to supersede her authority.

When we arrived at the place where we were to breakfast, I alighted and helped my mistress out of the coach as well as her mother, who called for a private room, to which they withdrew in order to eat by themselves. As they retired together, I perceived that Miss had got more twists from nature than I had before observed, for she was bent sideways in the figure of an S, so that her progression very much resembled that of a crab. The prude also chose the captain for her messmate, and ordered breakfast for two only to be brought into another separate room; while the lawyer and I, deserted by the rest of the company, were fain to put up with each other. I was a good deal chagrined at the stately reserve of Mrs. Snapper, who I thought did not use me with all the complaisance I deserved; and my companion declared, that he had been a traveller for twenty years, and never knew the stage-coach rules so much infringed before. As for the honourable gentlewoman, I could not conceive the meaning of her attachment to the lieutenant; and asked the lawyer, if he knew for which of the soldier's virtues she admired him. The counsellor facetiously replied, 'I suppose the lady knows him to be an able conveyancer, and wants him to make a settlement in tail.' I could not help laughing at the archness of the barrister, who entertained me during breakfast with a great deal of wit of the same kind, at the expence of our fellow-travellers; and among other things said, he was sorry to find the young lady saddled with such incumbrances.

When we had made an end of our repast, and paid our reckoning, we went into the coach, took our places, and

and bribed the driver with sixpence, to revenge us on the rest of his fare, by hurrying them away in the midst of their meal. This task he performed to our satisfaction, after he had disturbed their enjoyment with his importunate clamour. The mother and daughter obeyed the summons first, and, coming to the coach door, were obliged to desire the coachman's assistance to get in, because the lawyer and I had agreed to shew our resentment by our neglect. They were no sooner seated, than the captain appeared as much heated as if he had been pursued a dozen of miles by an enemy; and immediately after him came the lady, not without some marks of disorder. Having helped her up, he entered himself, growling a few oaths against the coachman, for his impertinent interruption; and the lawyer comforted him by saying, that if he had suffered a *nisi prius* through the obstinacy of the defendant, he might have an opportunity to join issue at the next stage. This last expression gave offence to the grave gentlewoman, who told him, if she was a man she would make him repent of such obscenity, and thanked God she had never been in such company before. At this insinuation, the captain thought himself under a necessity of espousing the lady's cause; and accordingly threatened to cut off the lawyer's ears, if he should give his tongue any such liberties for the future. The poor counsellor begged pardon, and universal silence ensued.

CHAP. XIX.

I RESOLVE TO INGRATIATE MYSELF WITH THE MOTHER, AND AM FAVOURED BY ACCIDENT—THE PRECISE LADY FINDS HER HUSBAND, AND QUILTS THE COACH—THE CAPTAIN IS DISAPPOINTED OF HIS DINNER—WE ARRIVE AT BATH—I ACCOMPANY MISS SNAPPER TO THE LONG ROOM, WHERE SHE IS ATTACKED BY BEAU N—, AND TURNS THE LAUGH AGAINST HIM—I MAKE LOVE TO HER, AND RECEIVE A CHECK—SQUIRE HER TO AN ASSEMBLY, WHERE I AM BLEST WITH A SIGHT OF

MY DEAR NARCISSA, WHICH DISCOMPOSES ME SO MUCH, THAT MISS SNAPPER OBSERVING MY DISORDER IS AT PAINS TO DISCOVER THE CAUSE—IS PIQUED AT THE OCCASION; AND, IN OUR WAY HOME, PAYS ME A SARCASTIC COMPLIMENT—I AM MET BY MISS WILLIAMS, WHO IS MAID AND CONFIDANTE OF NARCISSA—SHE ACQUAINTS ME WITH HER LADY'S REGARD FOR ME WHILE UNDER THE DISGUISE OF A SERVANT, AND DESCRIBES THE TRANSPORTS OF NARCISSA ON SEEING ME AT THE ASSEMBLY IN THE CHARACTER OF A GENTLEMAN—I AM SURPRIZED WITH AN ACCOUNT OF HER AUNT'S MARRIAGE, AND MAKE AN APPOINTMENT TO MEET MISS WILLIAMS NEXT DAY.

DURING this unsocial interval, my pride and interest maintained a severe conflict on the subject of Miss Snapper, whom the one represented as unworthy of notice, and the other proposed as the object of my whole attention: the advantages and disadvantages attending such a match, were opposed to one another by my imagination, and at length my judgment gave it so much in favour of the first, that I resolved to prosecute my scheme with all the address in my power. I thought I perceived some concern in her countenance, occasioned by my silence, which she, no doubt, imputed to my disgust at her mother's behaviour; and, as I believed the old woman could not fail of ascribing my muteness to the same motive, I determined to continue that sullen conduct towards her, and fall upon some other method of manifesting my esteem for the daughter: nor was it difficult for me to make her acquainted with my sentiments by the expression of my looks, which I modelled into the characters of humility and love; and which were answered by her with all the sympathy and approbation I could desire. But when I began to consider, that without farther opportunities of improving my success, all the progress I had hitherto made would not much avail, and that such opportunities could not be enjoyed without the mother's permission; I concluded that it would be

be requisite to vanquish her coldness and suspicion by my assiduities and respectful behaviour on the road, and she would in all likelihood invite me to visit her at Bath, where I did not fear of being able to cultivate her acquaintance as much as would be necessary to the accomplishment of my purpose. And indeed accident furnished me with an opportunity of obliging her so much, that she could not with any appearance of good manners forbear to gratify my inclination.

When we arrived at our dining-place, we found all the eatables in the inn bespoke by a certain nobleman, who had got the start of us; and in all likelihood my mistress and her mother must have dined with Duke Humphrey, had I not exerted myself in their behalf, and bribed the landlord with a glass of wine, to curtail his lordship's entertainment of a couple of fowls and some bacon, which I sent with my compliments to the ladies. They accepted my treat with a great many thanks, and desired I would favour them with my company at dinner, where I amused the old gentlewoman so successfully, by maintaining a seemingly disinterested ease, in the midst of my civility, that she signified a desire of being better acquainted, and hoped I would be so kind as to see her sometimes at Bath. While I enjoyed myself in this manner, the precise lady had the good fortune to meet with her husband, who was no other than gentleman, or, in other words, valet de chambre, to the very nobleman whose coach stood at the door. Proud of the interest she had in the house, she affected to shew her power, by introducing the captain to her spouse, as a person who had treated her with great civility; upon which he was invited to a share of their dinner: while the poor lawyer, finding himself utterly abandoned, made application to me, and was, through my intercession, admitted into our company. Having satisfied our appetites, and made ourselves merry at the expence of the person of honour, the civil captain, and complaisant husband, I did myself the pleasure of discharging the bill by stealth, for which I received a great many apologies and acknowledgments from my guests, and were embarked at the first warning. The officer was obliged at last to appease his hunger with a

luncheon of bread and cheese, and a pint bottle of brandy, which he dispatched in the coach, cursing the inappetence of his lordship, who had ordered dinner to be put back a whole hour.

Nothing remarkable happened during the remaining part of our journey, which was finished next day, when I waited on the ladies to the house of a relation, in which they intended to lodge, and passing that night at the inn, took lodgings in the morning for myself.

The forenoon was spent in visiting every thing that was worth seeing in the place, in company with a gentleman to whom Banter had given me a letter of introduction; and in the afternoon I waited on the ladies, and found Miss a good deal indisposed with the fatigue of the journey. As they foresaw they should have occasion for a male acquaintance to squire them at all publick places, I was received with great cordiality, and had the mother's commission to conduct them next day to the long room, which we no sooner entered, than the eyes of every body present were turned upon us; and when we had suffered the martyrdom of their looks for some time, a whisper circulated at our expence, which was accompanied with many contemptuous smiles, and tittering observations, to my utter shame and confusion. I did not so much conduct as follow my charge to a place where she seated her mother and herself, with astonishing composure, notwithstanding the unmannerly behaviour of the whole company, which seemed to be assumed merely to put her out of countenance. The celebrated Mr. N—h, who commonly attends in this place, as master of the ceremonies, perceiving the disposition of the assembly, took upon himself the task of gratifying their ill-nature still farther, by exposing my mistress to the edge of his wit. With this view he approached us, with many bows and grimaces, and after having welcomed Miss Snapper to the place, asked her, in the hearing of all present, if she could inform him of the name of Tobit's dog. I was so much incensed at his insolence, that I should certainly have kicked him where he stood, without ceremony, had not the young lady prevented the effects of my indignation,

indignation, by replying with the utmost vivacity, 'His name was N—h, and 'an impudent dog he was.' This repartee, so unexpected and just, raised such an universal laugh at the aggressor, that all his assurance was insufficient to support him under their derision; so that after he had endeavoured to compose himself, by taking snuff, and forcing a smile, he was obliged to sneak off in a very ludicrous attitude; while my dulcinea was applauded to the skies, for the brilliancy of her wit, and her acquaintance immediately courted by the best people of both sexes in the room. This event, with which I was infinitely pleased at first, did not fail of alarming me, upon farther reflection, when I considered that the more she was caressed by persons of distinction, the more her pride would be inflamed, and consequently the obstacles to my success multiplied and enlarged. Nor were my presaging fears untrue. That very night I perceived her a little intoxicated with the incense she had received, and though she still behaved with a particular civility to me, I foresaw, that as soon as her fortune should be known, she would be surrounded with a swarm of admirers, some one of whom might possibly, by excelling me in point of wealth, or in the arts of flattery and scandal, supplant me in her esteem, and find means to make the mother of his party. I resolved therefore to lose no time, and being invited to spend the evening with them, found an opportunity, in spite of the old gentlewoman's vigilance, to explain the meaning of my glances in the coach, by paying homage to her wit, and professing myself enamoured of her person. She blushed at my declaration, and in a favourable manner disapproved of the liberty I had taken, putting me in mind of our being strangers to each other, and desiring I would not be the means of interrupting our acquaintance, by any such unseasonable strokes of gallantry for the future. My ardour was effectually checked by this reprimand, which was, however, delivered in such a gentle manner, that I had no cause to be disobliged; and the arrival of her mother relieved me from a dilemma in which I should not have known how to demean myself a minute longer. Neither could I resume the easiness of carriage with which I

came in, my mistress acted on the reserve, and the conversation beginning to flag, the old lady introduced her kinswoman of the house, and proposed a hand at whist.

While we amused ourselves at this diversion, I understood from the gentlewoman, that there was to be an assembly next night, at which I begged to have the honour of dancing with Miss. She thanked me for the favour I intended her, assured me, she never did dance, but signified a desire of seeing the company; when I offered my service, which was accepted; not a little proud of being exempted from appearing with her, in a situation that, notwithstanding my profession to the contrary, was not at all agreeable to my inclination.

Having supped, and continued the game, till such time as the successive yawns of the mother warned me to be gone, I took my leave, and went home, where I made Strap very happy with an account of my progress. Next day I put on my gayest apparel, and went to drink tea at Mrs. Snapper's, according to appointment, when I found to my inexpressible satisfaction, that she was laid up with the tooth-ach, and that Miss was to be entrusted to my care. Accordingly we set out for the ball-room, pretty early in the evening, and took possession of a commodious place, where we had not sat longer than a quarter of an hour, when a gentleman dressed in a green frock came in, leading a young lady, whom I immediately discovered to be the adorable Narcissa! Good Heaven! what were the thrillings of my soul at that instant! my reflection was overwhelmed with a torrent of agitation! my heart throbbed with surprising violence! a sudden mist overspread my eyes! my ears were invaded with a dreadful sound! I panted for want of breath! and, in short, was for some minutes intranced! This first tumult subsiding, a crowd of flattering ideas rushed upon my imagination: Every thing that was soft, sensible, and engaging, in the character of that dear creature, recurred to my remembrance, and every favourable circumstance of my own qualifications appeared in all the aggravations of self-conceit, to heighten my expectation! Neither was this transport of long duration: the dread of her being already disposed of, intervened,

intervened, and over-cast my enchanting reverie! My presaging apprehension represented her encircled in the arms of some happy rival, and of consequence for ever lost to me! I was stung with this suggestion, and believing the person who conducted her to be the husband of this amiable young lady, already devoted him to my fury, and stood up to mark him for my vengeance; when I recollected, to my unspeakable joy, her brother, the fox-hunter, in the person of her gallant. Undeceived so much to my satisfaction in this particular, I gazed in a phrenzy of delight on the irresistible charms of his sister, who no sooner distinguished me in the crowd, than her evident confusion afforded a happy omen to my flame. At sight of me she startled, the roses instantly vanished from her polished cheeks, and returned in a moment with a double glow that overspread her lovely neck, while her enchanting bosom heaved with strong emotion. I hailed these favourable symptoms, and lying in wait for her looks, did homage with my eyes. She seemed to approve my declaration, by the complacency of her aspect; and I was so transported with her discovery, that more than once I was on the point of making up to her, to disclose the throbbings of my heart in person, had not that profound veneration which her presence always inspired, restrained the unseasonable impulse. All my powers being ingrossed in this manner, it may easily be imagined how ill I entertained Miss Snapper, on whom I could not now turn my eyes, without making comparisons very little to her advantage. It was not even in my power to return distinct answers to the questions she asked me from time to time, so that she could not help observing my absence of mind; and having a turn for observation, watched my glances, and tracing them to the divine object, discovered the cause of my disorder. That she might, however, be convinced of the truth of her conjecture, she began to interrogate me with regard to Narcissa, and notwithstanding all my endeavours to disguise my sentiments, perceived my attachment by my confusion. Upon which she assumed a stateliness of behaviour, and sat silent during the remaining part of the entertainment. At any other time her suspicion would have

alarmed me; but now I was elevated by my passion above every other consideration. The mistress of my soul having retired with her brother, I discovered so much uneasiness at my situation, that Miss Snapper proposed to go home; and while I conducted her to a chair, told me she had too great a regard for me to keep me any longer in torment. I feigned ignorance of her meaning, and having seen her safely at her lodgings, took my leave, and went home in an extasy, where I disclosed every thing that had happened to my confident and humble servant Strap, who did not relish the accident so well as I expected; and observed, that a bird in hand is worth two in the bush. 'But however,' said he, 'you know best, you know best.' Next day as I went to the pump-room, in hopes of seeing or hearing some tidings of my fair enslaver, I was met by a gentlewoman, who having looked hard at me, cried, 'O Christ, Mr. Random!' Surprized at this exclamation, I examined the countenance of the person who spoke, and immediately recognized my old sweetheart and fellow-sufferer, Miss Williams.

I was mightily pleased to find this unfortunate woman under such a decent appearance, professed my joy at seeing her so well, and desired to know where I should have the pleasure of her conversation. She was as heartily rejoiced at the apparent easiness of my fortune, and gave me to know, that she, as yet, had no habitation that she could properly call her own; but would wait on me at any place I should please to appoint. Understanding that she was unengaged for the present, I shewed her the way to my own lodgings, where, after a very affectionate salutation, she informed me of her being very happy in the service of a young lady to whom she was recommended by a former mistress deceased, into whose family she had recommended herself by the honest deceit she had concerted while she lived with me in the garret at London. She then expressed a vehement desire to be acquainted with the vicissitudes of my life since we parted, and excused her curiosity on account of the concern she had for my interests. I forthwith gratified her request, and when I described my situation in Sussex, perceived her to attend to my story

with particular eagerness. She interrupted me when I had finished that period, with, 'Good God! is it possible!' and then begged I would be so good as to continue my relation; which I did as briefly as I could, burning with impatience to know the cause of her surprise, about which I had already formed a very interesting conjecture. When I had brought my adventures down to the present day, she seemed very much affected with the different circumstances of my fortune; and saying with a smile, she believed my distresses were now at a period, proceeded to inform me, that the lady whom she served was no other than the charming Narcissa, who had honoured her with her confidence for some time; in consequence of which trust, she had often repeated the story of John Brown, with great admiration and regard; that she loved to dwell upon the particulars of his character, and did not scruple to own a tender approbation of his flame. I became delirious at this piece of intelligence, strained Miss Williams in my embrace, called her the angel of my happiness, and acted such extravagances, that she might have been convinced of my sincerity, had she not been satisfied of my honour before. As soon as I was in a condition to yield attention, she described the present situation of her mistress, who had no sooner reached her lodgings the night before, than she closeted her, and in a rapture of joy, gave her to know that she had seen me at the ball, where I appeared in the character which she always thought my due, with such advantage of transformation, that unless my image had been engraven on her heart, it would have been impossible to know me for the person who had worn her aunt's livery; that by the language of my eyes, she was assured of the continuance of my passion for her, and consequently of my being unengaged to any other; and that though she did not doubt I would speedily fall upon some method of being introduced, she was so impatient to hear of me, that she (Miss Williams) had been sent abroad this very morning, on purpose to learn the name and character I at present bore. My bosom had been hitherto a stranger to such a flood of joy as now rushed upon it: my faculties were overborne

by the tide: it was some time before I could open my mouth; and much longer ere I could utter a coherent sentence. At length, I fervently requested her to lead me immediately to the object of my adoration: but she resisted my importunity, and explained the danger of such premature conduct. 'How favourable soever,' said she, 'my lady's inclination towards you may be, you may depend upon it she will not commit the smallest trespass on decorum, either in disclosing her own, or in receiving a declaration of your passion: and although the great veneration I have for you has prompted me to reveal what she communicated to me in confidence, I know so well the severity of her sentiments with respect to the punctilios of her sex, that if she should learn the least surmise of it, she would not only dismiss me as a wretch unworthy of her benevolence, but also for ever shun the efforts of your love.' I assented to the justness of her remonstrance, and desired she would assist me with her advice and direction: upon which, it was concerted between us, that for the present, I should be contented with her telling Narcissa, that in the course of her enquiries, she could only learn my name: and that if in a day or two, I could fall upon no other method of being introduced to her mistress, she would deliver a letter from me, on pretence of consulting her happiness; and say that I met her in the street; and bribed her to this piece of service. Matters being thus adjusted, I kept my old acquaintance to breakfast, and learned, from her conversation, that my rival Sir Timothy had drunk himself into an apoplexy, of which he died five months ago; that the savage was still unmarried; and that his aunt had been seized with a whim which he little expected, and chosen the schoolmaster of the parish for her lord and husband: but matrimony not agreeing with her constitution, she had been hectic and dropical a good while, and was now at Bath in order to drink the waters for the recovery of her health; that her niece had accompanied her thither at her request, and attended her with the same affection as before, notwithstanding the mistake she had committed; and that her nephew, who had been exasperated

operated at the loss of her fortune, did not give his attendance out of good will, but purely to have an eye on his sister, lest she should likewise throw herself away, without his consent or approbation. Having enjoyed ourselves in this manner, and made an assignation to meet next day at a certain place, Miss Williams took her leave; and Strap's looks being very inquisitive about the nature of the communication subsisting between us, I made him acquainted with the whole affair, to his great astonishment and satisfaction.

C H A P. XX.

IBECOME ACQUAINTED WITH NARCISSA'S BROTHER, WHO INVITES ME TO HIS HOUSE—WHERE I AM INTRODUCED TO THAT ADORABLE CREATURE—AFTER DINNER, THE SQUIRE RETIRES TO TAKE HIS NAP—FREEMAN, GUESSING THE SITUATION OF MY THOUGHTS, WITHDRAWS LIKEWISE ON PRETENCE OF BUSINESS—I DECLARE MY PASSION TO NARCISSA—AM WELL RECEIVED—CHARMED WITH HER CONVERSATION—THE SQUIRE DETAINS US TO SUPPER—I ELUDE HIS DESIGN BY A STRATAGEM, AND GET HOME SOBER.

IN the afternoon, I drank tea at the house of Mr. Freeman, to whom I had been recommended by Banter; where I had not sat five minutes, till the fox-hunter came in, and by his familiar behaviour, appeared to be intimate with my friend. I was at first under some concern, lest he should recollect my features; but when I found myself introduced to him as a gentleman from London, without being discovered, I blessed the opportunity that brought me into his company; hoping, that in the course of our acquaintance, he would invite me to his house; nor were my hopes frustrated, for as we spent the evening together, he grew extremely fond of my conversation, asked a great many childish questions about France and other foreign parts; and seemed so highly entertained with my answers, that in his cups, he shook me often by the hand, pronounced me an honest fellow, and in fine, desired our

company at dinner next day, in his own house. My imagination was so much employed in anticipating the happiness I was to enjoy next day, that I slept very little that night; but rising early in the morning, went to the place appointed, where I met my friend, and imparted to her my success with the squire. She was very much pleased at the occasion, which, she said, could not fail of being agreeable to Narcissa, who in spite of her passion for me had mentioned some scruples relating to my true situation and character, which the delicacy of her sentiments suggested, and which she believed I would find it necessary to remove, though she did not know how. I was a good deal startled at this insinuation, because I foresaw the difficulty I should find in barely doing myself justice; for although it never was my intention to impose myself upon any woman, much less on Narcissa, as a man of fortune, I laid claim to the character of a gentleman, by birth, education, and behaviour; and yet (so unlucky had the circumstances of my life fallen out) I should find it a very hard matter to make good my pretensions even to these, especially to the last, which was the most essential. Miss Williams was as sensible as I, of this my disadvantage, but comforted me with observing, that when once a woman has bestowed her affections on a man, she cannot help judging of him in all respects, with a partiality easily influenced in his favour; she remarked, that although some situations of my life had been low, yet none of them had been infamous; that my indigence had been the crime not of me, but of fortune; and that the miseries I had undergone, by improving the faculties both of mind and body, qualified me the more for any dignified station; and would of consequence recommend me to the good graces of any sensible woman; she therefore advised me to be always open and unreserved to the enquiries of my mistress, without unnecessarily betraying the meanest occurrences of my fate; and trust to the strength of her love and reflection for the rest. The sentiments of this sensible young woman on this, as well as on almost every other subject, perfectly agreed with mine; I thanked her for the care she took of my

D d 2 interests,

interests, and promising to behave myself according to her direction, we parted; after she had assured me, that I might depend upon her best offices with her mistress, and that she would from time to time communicate to me such intelligence as she should procure, relating to my flame. Having dressed myself to the best advantage, I waited for the time of dinner with the most fearful impatience: and as the hour drew nigh, my heart beat with such increased velocity, and my spirits contracted such disorder, that I began to suspect my resolution, and even to wish myself disengaged: at last Mr. Freeman called at my lodgings, in his way, and I accompanied him to the house where all my happiness was deposited. We were very kindly received by the squire, who sat smoaking his pipe in a parlour, and asked if we chose to drink any thing before dinner; though I never had more occasion for a cordial, I was ashamed to accept his offer, which was also refused by my friend. We sat down, however, and entered into conversation, which lasted half an hour, so that I had time to recollect myself; and (so capricious were my thoughts) even to hope that Narcissa would not appear; when all of a sudden, a servant coming in, gave us notice that dinner was upon the table; and my perturbation returned with such violence, that I could scarce conceal it from the company as I ascended the stair-case. When I entered the dining-room, the first object that saluted my ravished eyes, was the divine Narcissa, blushing like Aurora, adorned with all the graces that meekness, innocence and beauty can diffuse! I was seized with a giddiness, my knees tottered, and I scarce had strength enough to perform the ceremony of salutation, when her brother flapping me on the shoulder, cried, 'Master Randan, that there is my sister.' I approached her with eagerness and fear; but in the moment of our embrace, my soul was agonized with rapture! It was a lucky circumstance for us both, that my entertainer was not endued with an uncommon stock of penetration; for our mutual confusion was so manifest, that Mr. Freeman perceived it, and as we went home together, congratulated

me on my good fortune. But so far was Bruin from entertaining the least suspicion, that he encouraged me to begin a conversation with my mistress in a language unknown to him, by telling her, that he had brought a gentleman who could jabber with her in French and other foreign lingo, as fast as she pleased: then turning to me, said, 'Odds bods! I wish you would hold discourse with her in your French or Italiano; and tell me if she understands it as well as she would be thought to do—there's her aunt and she will chatter together whole days in it, and I can't have a mouthful of English for love or money.' I consulted the look of my amiable mistress, and found her averse to his proposal, which indeed she declined with a sweetness of denial peculiar to herself, as a piece of disrespect to that part of the company which did not understand the language in question. As I had the happiness of sitting opposite to her, I feasted my eyes much more than my palate, which she tempted in vain with the most delicious bits carved by her fair hand, and recommended by her persuasive tongue; but all my other appetites were swallowed up in the immensity of my love, which I fed by gazing incessantly on the delightful object. Dinner was scarce ended, when the squire became very drowsy, and after several dreadful yawns, got up, stretched himself, took two or three turns across the room, begged we would allow him to take a short nap, and having laid a strong injunction on his sister to detain us till his return, went to his repose without any farther ceremony. He had not been gone many minutes, when Freeman guessing the situation of my heart, and thinking he could not do me a greater favour, than to leave me alone with Narcissa, pretended to recollect himself all of a sudden, and starting up, begged the lady's pardon for half an hour, for he had luckily remembered an engagement of some consequence, that he must perform at that instant; so saying, he took his leave, promising to come back time enough for tea; leaving my mistress and me in great confusion. Now that I enjoyed an opportunity of disclosing the pantings of my soul, I had not power to use it. I studied many pathetic



08A

BRITISH
4 AP 1914
MUSEUM

pathetic
tempted
tongue
silent
anxious
expecta
length,
to this
It is v
the sou
stop, w
and w
Sir?
interro
molt sh
To wh
I tho
Anothe
effort,
very m
to exp
I say
that
with
of th
they
the h
you p
ny u
a pas
a pas
soul,
me to
sui
let m
able
me w
adori
dam,
tered
unim
less
a tho
While
face w
speakin
most b
though
by my
that sh
been u
gentle
self su
kind c
gone,
happin
upon h
be ve
nal p
I sho

pathetic declarations, but when I attempted to give them utterance, my tongue denied it's office; and she sat silent, with a downcast look full of anxious alarm, her bosom heaving with expectation of some great event. At length, I endeavoured to put an end to this solemn pause, and began with, 'It is very surprizing, Madam—' Here the sound dying away, I made a full stop, while Narcissa starting, blushed, and with a timid accent, answered, 'Sir?' Confounded at this note of interrogation, I pronounced with the most sheepish bashfulness, 'Madam!' To which she replied, 'I beg pardon, I thought you had spoke to me.'—Another pause ensued, I made another effort, and though my voice faltered very much at the beginning, made shift to express myself in this manner: 'I say, Madam, 'tis very surprizing that love should act so inconsistent with itself, as to deprive it's votaries of the use of their faculties when they have most need of them. Since the happy occasion of being alone with you presented itself, I have made many unsuccessful attempts to declare a passion for the loveliest of her sex, a passion which took possession of my soul, while my cruel fate compelled me to wear a servile disguise so unsuitable to my birth, sentiments, and let me add, my deserts; yet favourable in one respect, as it furnished me with opportunities of seeing and adoring your perfections. Yes, Madam, it was then your dear idea entered my bosom, where it has lived unimpaired in the midst of numberless cares, and animated me against a thousand dangers and calamities!' While I spoke thus, she concealed her face with her fan, and when I ceased speaking, recovering herself from the most beautiful confusion, told me, she thought herself very much obliged by my favourable opinion of her; and that she was very sorry to hear I had been unfortunate. Encouraged by this gentle reply, I proceeded, owned myself sufficiently recompensed by her kind compassion for what I had undergone, and declared that the future happiness of my life depended solely upon her. 'Sir,' said she, 'I should be very ungrateful, if after the signal protection you once afforded me, I should refuse to contribute towards

'your happiness, in any reasonable condescension.' Transported at this acknowledgment, I threw myself at her feet, and begged she would regard my passion with a favourable eye. She was alarmed at my behaviour; intreated me to rise, lest her brother should discover me in that posture; and to spare her, for the present, upon a subject for which she was altogether unprepared. In consequence of this remonstrance, I rose, assuring her I would rather die than disobey; but in the mean time begged her to consider how precious the minutes of this opportunity were, and what restraint I put upon my inclination, in sacrificing them to her desire. She smiled with unspeakable sweetness, and said, there would be no want of opportunities, provided I could maintain the good opinion her brother had conceived of me; and I, enchanted by her charms, seized her hand, which I well nigh devoured with kisses. But she checked my boldness with a severity of countenance; and desired I would not so far forget myself to her, as to endanger the esteem she had for me; she reminded me of our being almost strangers to each other, and of the necessity there was for her knowing me better, before she could take any resolution in my favour; and, in short, mingled so much good sense and complacency in her reproof, that I became as much enamoured of her understanding, as I had been before of her beauty, and asked pardon for my presumption with the utmost reverence of conviction. She forgave my offence with her usual affability; and sealed my pardon with a look so full of bewitching tenderness, that for some minutes, my senses were lost in extasy! I afterwards endeavoured to regulate my behaviour according to her desire, and turn the conversation upon a more indifferent subject; but her presence was an unsurmountable obstacle to my design: while I beheld so much excellence, I found it impossible to call my attention from the contemplation of it; I gazed with unutterable fondness; I grew mad with admiration. 'My condition is unsupportable!' cried I, 'I am distracted with passion! why are you so exquisitely fair? Why are you so enchantingly good? Why has nature dignified you with charms so much above the standard of

' of women ; and, wretch that I am, how dares my unworthiness aspire to the enjoyment of such perfection.'

She was startled at my ravings, reasoned down my transport, and by her irresistible eloquence, soothed my soul into a state of tranquil felicity ; but lest I might suffer a relapse, industriously promoted other subjects to entertain my imagination ; she chid me for having omitted to enquire about her aunt, who, she assured me, in the midst of all her absence of temper, and detachment from common affairs, often talked of me with uncommon warmth. I professed my veneration for the good lady, excused my omission, by imputing it to the violence of my love, which engrossed my whole soul, and desired to know the situation of her health. Upon which, the amiable Narcissa repeated what I had heard before of her marriage, with all the tenderness for her reputation that the subject would admit of ; told me she lived with her husband, hard by, and was so much afflicted with the dropsy, and wasted by a consumption, that she had small hopes of her recovery. Having expressed my sorrow for her distemper, I questioned her about my good friend Mrs. Sagely, who I learned (to my great satisfaction) was still in good health, and who had by the encomiums she bestowed upon me after I was gone, confirmed the favourable impressions my behaviour at parting had made on Narcissa's heart. The circumstance introduced an enquiry into the conduct of Sir Timothy Thicket, who she informed me had found means to incense her brother so much against me, that she found it impossible to deceive him ; but, on the contrary, suffered very much in her own character, by his scandalous insinuations. That the whole parish was alarmed, and actually in pursuit of me ; so that she had been in the utmost consternation upon my account, well knowing how little my own innocence and her testimony would have weighed with the ignorance, prejudice, injustice and brutality, of those who must have judged me, had I been apprehended. That Sir Timothy having been seized with a fit of the apoplexy, from which with great difficulty he was recovered, began to be apprehensive of death, and to

prepare himself accordingly for that great event ; as a step of which he sent for her brother, owned with great contrition the brutal design he had upon her, and of consequence acquitted me of the assault, robbery, and correspondence with her, which he had laid to my charge ; after which confession he lived about a month in a languishing condition, and was carried off by a second assault.

Every word that this dear creature spoke, rivetted the chains with which she held me enslaved ! My mischievous fancy began to work, and the tempest of my passion to wake again ; when the return of Freeman destroyed the tempting opportunity, and enabled me to quell the rising tumult. A little while after, the squire staggered into the room, rubbing his eyes, and called for his tea, which he drank out of a small bowl qualified with brandy, while we took it in the usual way. Narcissa left us in order to visit her aunt, and when Freeman and I proposed to take our leave, the fox-hunter insisted on our spending the evening at his house with such obstinacy of affection, that we were obliged to comply. For my own part, I should have been glad of the invitation, by which, in all likelihood, I should be blest with more of his sister's company, had I not been afraid of risking her esteem by entering into a debauch of drinking with him, which, from the knowledge of his character, I foresaw would happen ; but there was no remedy. I was forced to rely upon the strength of my constitution, which I hoped would resist intoxication longer than the squire's ; and to trust to the good-nature and discretion of my mistress for the rest.

Our entertainer resolving to begin betimes, ordered the table to be furnished with liquor and glasses immediately after tea, but we absolutely refused to set in for drinking so soon ; and prevailed upon him to pass away an hour or two at whist, in which we engaged as soon as Narcissa returned. The savage and I happened to be partners at first, and as my thoughts were wholly employed in a more interesting game, I played so ill that he lost all patience, swore bitterly, and threatened to call for wine if they would not grant him another associate. This

desire

desire was gratified, and Narcissa and I were of a side; he won for the same reason that made him lose before; I was satisfied, my lovely partner did not repine, and the time slipped away very agreeably, until we were told that supper was served in another room.

The squire was enraged to find the evening so unprofitably spent, and wreaked his vengeance on the cards, which he tore, and committed to the flames with many execrations; threatening to make us redeem our loss with a large glass and quick circulation; and indeed we had no sooner supped, and my charmer withdrawn, than he began to put his threats in execution. Three bottles of port (for he drank no other sort of wine) were placed before us, with as many water-glasses, which were immediately filled to the brim, after his example, by each out of his respective allowance, and emptied in a trice, 'To the best in Christendom.' Though I swallowed this, and the next as fast as the glass could be replenished, without hesitation or shew of reluctance, I perceived that my brain would not be able to bear many bumpers of this sort; and dreading the perseverance of a champion who began with such vigour, I determined to make up for the deficiency of my strength by a stratagem, which I actually put in practice when the second course of bottles was called for. The wine being strong and heady, I was already a good deal discomposed by the dispatch we had made; Freeman's eyes began to reel; and Bruin himself was elevated into a song, which he uttered with great vociferation. When I therefore saw the second round brought in, I assumed a gay air, entertained him with a French catch on the subject of drinking, which, though he did not understand it, delighted him highly, and telling him that your choice spirits at Paris never troubled themselves with glasses, asked if he had not a bowl or cup in the house that would contain a whole quart of wine. 'Odds niggers!' cried he, 'I have a silver caudle-cup that holds just the quantity, for all the world—fetch it hither, Numps.' The vessel being produced, I bade him decant his bottle into it, which he having done, I

nodded in a very deliberate manner, and said, 'Pledge you.' He stared at me for some time, and crying, 'What! all at one pull, Measter Randan!' I answered, 'At one pull! Sir, you are no milk-sop; we shall do you justice.'—'Shall you?' said he, shaking me by the hand; 'odd then, I'll see it out, an't were a mile to the bottom. Here's to our better acquaintance, Measter Randan.' So saying, he applied it to his lips, and emptied it in a breath. I knew the effect of it would be almost instantaneous; therefore taking the cup, began to discharge my bottle into it, telling him he was now qualified to drink with the Cham of Tartary. I had no sooner pronounced these words, than he took umbrage at them, and after several attempts to spit, made shift to stutter out, 'A f—t for your Chams of T— Tartary! I am a f—f—free-born Englishman, worth th—three thousand a year, and v—value no man, damme!' Then dropping his jaw, and fixing his eyes, he hickuped aloud, and fell upon the floor as mute as a flounder. Mr. Freeman, heartily glad at his defeat, assisted me in carrying him to bed, where we left him to the care of his servants, and went home to our respective habitations congratulating one another on our good fortune.

CH A P. XXI.

MISS WILLIAMS INFORMS ME OF NARCISSA'S APPROBATION OF MY FLAME—I APPEASE THE SQUIRE—WRITE TO MY MISTRESS, AM BLESSED WITH AN ANSWER—BEG LEAVE OF HER BROTHER TO DANCE WITH HER AT A BALL; OBTAIN HIS CONSENT AND HER'S—ENJOY A PRIVATE CONVERSATION WITH HER—AM PERPLEXED WITH REFLECTIONS—HAVE THE HONOUR OF APPEARING HER PARTNER AT A BALL—WE ARE COMPLIMENTED BY A CERTAIN NOBLEMAN—HE DISCOVERS SOME SYMPTOMS OF A PASSION FOR NARCISSA—I AM STUNG WITH JEALOUSY—NARCISSA ALARMED, RETIRES—I OBSERVE MELINDA IN THE COMPANY

PANY—THE SQUIRE IS CAPTIVATED BY HER BEAUTY.

I Was met next morning, at the usual place, by Miss Williams, who gave me joy of the progress I had made in the affection of her mistress, and blessed me with an account of that dear creature's conversation with her, after she had retired the night before from our company. I could scarce believe her information, when she recounted her expressions in my favour, so much more warm and passionate were they than my most sanguine hopes had prefigured; and was particularly pleased to hear that she approved of my behaviour to her brother after she withdrew. Transported at the news of my happiness, I presented my ring to the messenger, as a testimony of my gratitude and satisfaction; but she was above such mercenary considerations, and refused my compliment with some resentment, saying, she was not a little mortified to see my opinion of her so low and contemptible. I did myself a piece of justice, by explaining my behaviour on this head, and to convince her of my esteem, promised to be ruled by her directions in the prosecution of the whole affair, which I had so much at heart, that the repose of my life depended upon the consequence.

As I fervently wished for another interview, where I might pour out the effusions of my love without danger of being interrupted, and perhaps reap some endearing return from the queen of my desires; I implored her advice and assistance in promoting this event: but she gave me to understand, that Narcissa would make no precipitate compliances of this kind, and that I would do well to cultivate her brother's acquaintance; in the course of which, I should not want opportunities of removing that reserve which my mistress thought herself obliged to maintain during the infancy of our correspondence. In the mean time, she promised to tell her lady that I had endeavoured, by presents and persuasions, to prevail upon her (Miss Williams) to deliver a letter from me, which she had refused to charge herself with, until she should know Narcissa's sentiments of the matter; and said, by these means she did not doubt of being able to open a literary communication between us,

which could not fail of introducing more intimate connexions.

I approved of her counsel, and our appointment being renewed for next day, left her with an intent of falling upon some method of being reconciled to the squire, who I supposed would be offended with the trick we had put upon him. With this view, I consulted Freeman, who, from his knowledge of the fox-hunter's disposition, assured me there was no other method of pacifying him, than that of sacrificing ourselves for one night, to an equal match with him in drinking: this expedient I found myself necessitated to comply with, for the interest of my passion, and therefore determined to commit the debauch at my own lodgings, that I might run no risk of being discovered by Narcissa in a state of brutal degeneracy. Mr. Freeman, who was to be of the party, went, at my desire, to the squire, in order to engage him, while I took care to furnish myself for his reception. My invitation was accepted, my guests honoured me with their company in the evening, when Bruin gave me to understand that he had drank many tuns of wine in his life, but was never served such a trick as I had played upon him the night before. I promised to atone for my trespass, and having ordered to every man his bottle, began the contest with a bumper to the health of Narcissa. The toasts circulated with great devotion, the liquor began to operate, our mirth grew noisy, and as Freeman and I had the advantage of drinking small French claret, the savage was effectually tamed before our senses were in the least affected, and carried home in an apoplexy of drunkenness.

I was next morning, as usual, favoured with a visit from my kind and punctual confidante, who telling me she was permitted to receive my letters for her mistress; I took up the pen immediately, and following the first dictates of my passion, wrote as follows:

‘DEAR MADAM,

‘**W**ERE it possible for the powers of utterance to reveal the soft emotions of my soul, the fond anxiety, the glowing hopes, the chilling fears, that rule my

my breast by turns; I should need no other witness than this paper, to evince the purity and ardour of that flame your charms have kindled in my heart. But alas! expression wrongs my love! I am inspired with conceptions that no language can convey! Your beauty fills me with wonder! your understanding with ravishment, and your goodness with adoration! I am transported with desire, distracted with doubts, and tortured with impatience! Suffer me then, lovely arbitress of my fate, to approach you in person, to breathe in soft murmurs my passion to your ear, to offer the sacrifice of a heart overflowing with the most genuine and disinterested love; to gaze with extasy on the divine object of my wishes, to hear the music of her enchanting tongue! and to rejoice in her smiles of approbation, which will banish the most intolerable suspense from the bosom of your enraptured

‘ R—— R——.’

Having finished this effusion, I committed it to the care of my faithful friend, with an injunction to second my entreaty with her eloquence and influence; and in the mean time went to dress, with an intention of visiting Mrs. Snapper and Miss, whom I had utterly neglected and indeed almost forgot, since my dear Narcissa had resumed the empire of my soul. The old gentlewoman received me very kindly, and Miss affected a frankness and gaiety, which, however, I could easily perceive were forced and dissembled; among other things, she pretended to joke me upon my passion for Narcissa, which she averred was no secret, and asked if I intended to dance with her at the next assembly. I was a good deal concerned to find myself become the town-talk on this subject, lest the squire, having notice of my inclinations, should disapprove of them, and by breaking off all correspondence with me, deprive me of the opportunities I now enjoyed. But I resolved to use the interest I had with him, while it lasted; and that very night meeting him occasionally, asked his permission to solicit her company at the ball, which he very readily granted, to my inexpressible satisfaction.

Having been kept awake the greatest part of the night, by a thousand delightful reveries that took possession of my fancy, I got up betimes, and flying to the place of rendezvous, had in a little time the pleasure of seeing Miss Williams approach with a smile on her countenance, which I interpreted into a good omen. Neither was I mistaken in my presage: she presented me with a letter from the idol of my soul, which, after having kissed it devoutly, I opened with the utmost eagerness, and was blessed with her approbation in these terms.

‘ S I R,

‘ **T**O say I look upon you with indifference, would be a piece of dissimulation, which I think no decorum requires, and no custom can justify. As my heart never felt an impression that my tongue was ashamed to declare, I will not scruple to own myself pleased with your passion, confident of your integrity, and so well convinced of my own discretion, that I should not hesitate in granting you the interview you desire, were I not over-awed by the prying curiosity of a malicious world, the censure of which might be fatally prejudicial to the reputation of your

‘ NARCISSA.’

No anchorite in the extasy of devotion ever adored a relique with more fervour than that with which I kissed this inimitable proof of my charmer’s candour, generosity, and affection! I read it over an hundred times; was ravished with her confession in the beginning; but the subscription of your Narcissa, yielded me such delight as I had never felt before! My happiness was still increased by Miss Williams, who blessed me with a repetition of her lady’s tender expressions in my favour, when she received and read my letter. In short, I had all the reason in the world to believe that this gentle creature’s bosom was possessed by a passion for me, as warm, though perhaps not so impetuous, as mine for her.

I informed my friend of the squire’s consent to my dancing with Narcissa at the ball, and desired her to tell her mistress, that I would do myself the honour of visiting her in the afternoon,

E c

in

in consequence of his permission, when I hoped to find her as indulgent as her brother had been complaisant in that particular. Miss Williams expressed a good deal of joy, at hearing I was so much in favour with the fox-hunter, and ventured to assure me, that my visit would be very agreeable to my mistress, the rather because Bruin was engaged to dine abroad. This was a circumstance, which I scarce need say, pleased me. I went immediately to the long room, where I found him, and affecting to know nothing of his engagement, told him, I would do myself the pleasure to wait upon him in the afternoon, and to present his sister with a ticket for the ball. He shook me by the hand, according to custom, and giving me to understand that he was to dine abroad, desired me to go and drink tea with Narcissa notwithstanding, and promised to prepare her for my visit in the mean time.

Every thing succeeding thus to my wish, I waited with incredible impatience for the time, which no sooner arrived, than I hastened to the scene, which my fancy had pre-occupied long before. I was introduced accordingly, to the dear enchantress, whom I found accompanied by Miss Williams, who, on pretence of ordering tea, retired at my approach. This favourable accident, which alarmed my whole soul, disordered her also. I found myself actuated by an irresistible impulse, I advanced to her with eagerness and awe; and profiting by the confusion that prevailed over her, clasped the fair angel in my arms, and imprinted a glowing kiss upon her lips, more soft and fragrant than the dewy rose-bud just bursting from the stem! Her face was in an instant covered with blushes, her eyes sparkled with resentment; I threw myself at her feet, and implored her pardon. Her love became advocate in my cause; her look softened into forgiveness, she raised me up, and chid me with so much sweetness of displeasure, that I should have been tempted to repeat the offence, had not the coming of a servant with the tea-board, prevented my presumption. While we were subject to be interrupted or overheard, we conversed about the approaching ball, at which she promised to grace me as a

partner; but when the equipage was removed, and we were left alone, I resumed the more interesting theme, and expressed myself with such transport and agitation, that my mistress, fearing I would commit some extravagance, rung the bell for her maid, whom she detained in the room, as a check upon my vivacity: I was not sorry for this precaution, because I could unbosom myself without reserve before Miss Williams, who was the confidante of us both. I therefore gave a loose to the inspirations of my passion, which operated so successfully upon the tender affections of Narcissa, that she laid aside the constraint she had hitherto wore, and blessed me with the most melting declaration of her mutual flame! It was impossible for me to forbear taking the advantage of this endearing condescension. She now gently yielded to my embraces, while I encircling all that I held dear within my arms tasted in advance the joys of that paradise I hoped in a little time wholly to possess! We spent the afternoon in all the extasy of hope that the most fervent love exchanged by mutual vows could inspire; and Miss Williams was so much affected with our chaste caresses, which recalled the sad remembrance of what she was, that her eyes were filled with tears.

The evening being pretty far advanced, I forced myself from the dear object of my flame, who indulged me in a tender embrace at parting; and repairing to my lodgings, communicated to my friend Strap every circumstance of my happiness, which filled him with so much pleasure, that it ran over at his eyes; and he prayed heartily that no envious devil might, as formerly, dash the cup of blessing from my lip. When I reflected on what had happened, and especially on the unreserved protestations of Narcissa's love, I could not help being amazed at her omitting to enquire into the particular circumstances of life and fortune of one whom she had favoured with her affection, and I began to be a little anxious about the situation of her finances; well knowing that I should do an irreparable injury to the person my soul held most dear, if I should espouse her, without being able to support her in the rank which was certainly her due. I had heard, indeed, while I served her aunt, that

her fa-
ble sur-
she wo-
her kin-
know-
by the
joymen-
was too
late co-
have an-
I conf-
and po-
sure w-
fate w-
confid-
sequen-
The
sed my
some g-
tea wit-
ducted
in a r-
compe-
the ad-
My he-
ration
bound
togeth-
able f-
beau n-
ing of
very p-
accom-
this tr-
I perc-
with
and f-
thoug-
It was
of jea-
addre-
disco-
answe-
when
damn
sump-
at len-
the o-
suspe-
flame
as so-
made
whic-
my b-
tle.
tion,
ed v-
coul-
me
of a

her father had left her a considerable sum; and that every body believed she would inherit the greatest part of her kinswoman's dowry, but I did not know how far she might be restricted by the old gentleman's will, in the enjoyment of what he left her; and I was too well informed of the virtuoso's late conduct, to think my mistress could have any expectations from that quarter. I confided, however, in the good sense and policy of my charmer, who I was sure would not consent to unite her fate with mine, before she had fully considered and provided for the consequence.

The ball night being arrived, I dressed myself in a suit I had reserved for some grand occasion; and having drank tea with Narcissa and her brother, conducted my angel to the scene, where she in a moment eclipsed all her female competitors for beauty, and attracted the admiration of the whole assembly. My heart dilated with pride on this occasion, and my triumph rejected all bounds; when, after we had danced together, a certain nobleman, remarkable for his figure and influence in the beau monde, came up, and in the hearing of all present, honoured us with a very particular compliment, upon our accomplishments and appearance: but this transport was soon checked, when I perceived his lordship attach himself with great assiduity to my mistress; and say some warm things, which, I thought, favoured too much of passion. It was then I began to feel the pangs of jealousy; I dreaded the power and address of my rival; I sickened at his discourse; when she opened her lips to answer, my heart died within me; when she smiled, I felt the pains of the damned! I was enraged at his presumption; I cursed her complaisance! at length he quitted her, and went to the other side of the room. Narcissa suspecting nothing of the rage that inflamed me, put some questions to me, as soon as he was gone, to which I made no reply, but assumed a grim look, which too well denoted the agitation of my breast, and surprized her not a little. She no sooner observed my emotion, than she changed colour, and asked what ailed me. But before I could make answer, her brother pulling me by the sleeve, bade me take notice of a lady who sat fronting us, whom I

immediately, to my vast astonishment, distinguished to be Melinda, accompanied by her mother, and an elderly gentleman whom I did not know. 'Wounds! Mr. Randan,' cried the squire, 'is she not a delicate piece of stuff? 'Sdeath! I have a good mind, if I thought she was a single person.' Notwithstanding the perplexity I was in, I had reflection enough to foresee that my passion might suffer greatly by the presence of this lady, who in all probability would revenge herself upon me for having formerly disgraced her, by spreading reports to my prejudice. I was therefore alarmed at these symptoms of the squire's admiration; and for some time did not know what reply to make, when he asked my opinion of her beauty: at length I came to a determination, and told him that her name was Melinda, that she had a fortune of ten thousand pounds, and was said to be under promise of marriage to a certain lord, who deferred his nuptials a few months until he should be of age. I thought this piece of intelligence, which I had myself invented, would have hindered him effectually from entertaining any farther thoughts of her; but I was egregiously mistaken. The fox-hunter had too much self-sufficiency to despair of success against any competitor on earth. He therefore made light of her engagement, saying, with a smile of self-approbation, 'Mayhap she will change her mind—what signifies his being a lord! I think myself as good a man as e'er a lord in Christendom; and I'll see if a commoner worth three thousand a year won't serve her turn.' This determination startled me not a little; I knew he would soon discover the contrary of what I advanced, and as I believed he would find her ear open to his addresses, did not doubt of meeting with every obstacle in my amour, that her malice could invent, and her influence execute. This reflection increased my chagrin. My vexation was evident. Narcissa insisted on going home immediately; and as I led her to the door, her noble admirer, with a look full of languishment, directed to her a profound bow, which stung me to the soul. Before she went into the chair, she asked, with an appearance of concern, what was the matter with me:

and I could pronounce no more than,
 'By heaven! I'm distracted.'

CHAP. XXII.

TORTURED WITH JEALOUSY, I GO HOME AND ABUSE STRAP—RECEIVE A MESSAGE FROM NARCISSA, IN CONSEQUENCE OF WHICH I HASTEN TO HER APARTMENT, WHERE HER ENDEARING ASSURANCES BANISH ALL MY DOUBTS AND APPREHENSIONS—IN MY RETREAT DISCOVER SOMEBODY IN THE DARK, WHOM SUSPECTING TO BE A SPY, I RESOLVE TO KILL; BUT TO MY GREAT SURPRISE, AM CONVINCED OF HIS BEING NO OTHER THAN STRAP—MELINDA SLANDERS ME—I BECOME ACQUAINTED WITH LORD QUIVERWIT, WHO ENDEAVOURS TO SOUND ME WITH REGARD TO NARCISSA—THE SQUIRE IS INTRODUCED TO HIS LORDSHIP, AND GROWS COLD TOWARDS ME—I LEARN FROM MY CONFIDANTE, THAT THIS NOBLEMAN PROFFERS HONOURABLE LOVE TO MY MISTRESS, WHO CONTINUES FAITHFUL TO ME, NOTWITHSTANDING THE SCANDALOUS REPORTS SHE HAS HEARD TO MY PREJUDICE—I AM MORTIFIED WITH AN ASSURANCE THAT HER WHOLE FORTUNE DEPENDS UPON THE PLEASURE OF HER BROTHER—MR. FREEMAN CONDOLES ME ON THE DECLINE OF MY CHARACTER, WHICH I VINDICATE SO MUCH TO HIS SATISFACTION, THAT HE UNDERTAKES TO COMBAT FAME IN MY BEHALF.

HAVING uttered this exclamation, at which she sighed, I went home in the condition of a frantic Bedlamite; and finding the fire in my apartment almost extinguished, vented my fury upon poor Strap, whose ear I pinched with such violence, that he roared hideously with pain, and when I quitted my hold looked so foolishly aghast, that no unconcerned spectator could have seen him, without being seized with an immoderate fit of laughter. It is true, I was soon sensible of the injury I had done, and asked par-

don for the outrage I had committed; upon which my faithful valet, shaking his head, said, 'I forgive you, and may God forgive you.' But he could not help shedding some tears at my unkindness. I felt unspeakable remorse for what I had done, cursed my own ingratitude, and considered his tears as a reproach that my soul, in her present disturbance, could not bear. It set all my passions into a ferment, I swore horrible oaths without meaning or application, I foamed at the mouth, kicked the chairs about the room, and played abundance of mad pranks that frightened my friend almost out of his senses. At length my transport subsided, I became melancholy, and wept insensibly.

During this state of dejection, I was surprized with the appearance of Miss Williams, whom Strap, blubbering all the while, had conducted into the chamber, without giving me previous notice of her approach. She was extremely affected with my condition, which she had learned from him, begged me to moderate my passion, suspend my conjectures, and follow her to Narcissa, who desired to see me forthwith. That dear name operated upon me like a charm! I started up, and without opening my lips, was conducted into her apartment through the garden, which we entered by a private door. I found the adorable creature in tears! I was melted at the sight—we continued silent for some time—my heart was too full to speak—her snowy bosom heaved with fond resentment; at last, she sobbing cried, 'What have I done to disoblige you?' My heart was pierced with the tender question! I drew near with the utmost reverence of affection! I fell upon my knees before her, and kissing her hand, exclaimed, 'O! thou art all goodness and perfection! I am undone by my want of merit! I am unworthy to possess thy charms, which Heaven hath destined for the arms of some more favoured being!' She guessed the cause of my disquiet, upbraided me gently for my suspicion, and gave me such flattering assurances of her eternal fidelity, that all my doubts and fears forsook me, and peace and satisfaction reigned within my breast.

At midnight I left the fair nymph to her repose, and being let out by Miss Williams,

Williams, at the garden gate by which I entered, began to explore my way homeward in the dark, when I heard at my back a noise like that of a baboon when he mows and chatters. I turned instantly, and perceiving something black, concluded I was discovered by some spy, employed to watch for that purpose. Arouzed at this conjecture, by which the reputation of the virtuous Narcissa appeared in jeopardy, I drew my sword, and would have sacrificed him to her fame, had not the voice of Strap restrained my arm. It was with great difficulty he could pronounce, 'D—d—d—do! mum—um —um—murder me if you please.' Such an effect had the cold upon his jaws, that his teeth rattled like a pair of castanets. Pleased to be thus undeceived, I laughed at his consternation, and asked what brought him thither. Upon which he gave me to understand, that his concern for me had induced him to follow me to that place, where the same reason had detained him till now; and he frankly owned, that in spite of the esteem he had for Miss Williams, he began to be very uneasy about me, considering the disposition in which I went abroad; and if I had staid much longer, would have certainly alarmed the neighbourhood in my behalf. The knowledge of this his intention confounded me! I represented to him the mischievous consequences that would have attended such a rash action, and cautioning him severely against any such design for the future, concluded my admonition with an assurance, that in case he should ever act so madly, I would, without hesitation put him to death. 'Have a little patience,' cried he, in a lamentable tone, 'your displeasure will do the business, without your committing murder.' I was touched with this reproach; and as soon as we got home, made it my business to appease him, by explaining the cause of that transport, during which I had used him so unworthily.

Next day when I went into the long room, I observed several whispers circulate all of a sudden; and did not doubt that Melinda had been busy with my character; but I consoled myself with the love of Narcissa, upon which I rested with the most perfect confidence, and going up to the rowly-powly table, won a few pieces from

my suspected rival, who with an easy politeness, entered into conversation with me, and desiring my company at the coffee-house, treated me with tea and chocolate. I remembered Strutwell, and guarded against his insinuating behaviour; nor was my suspicion wrong placed; he artfully turned the discourse upon Narcissa, and endeavoured, by hinting at an intrigue he pretended to be engaged in elsewhere, to learn what connexion there was between her and me. But all his finess was ineffectual; I was convinced of his dissimulation, and gave such general answers to his enquiries, that he was forced to drop the subject and talk of something else.

While we conversed in this manner, the savage came in, with another gentleman, who introduced him to his lordship; and he was received with such peculiar marks of distinction, that I was persuaded the courtier intended to use him in some shape or another; and from thence I drew an unlucky omen. But I had more cause to be dismayed the following day, when I saw the squire in company with Melinda and her mother, who honoured me with several disdainful glances: and when I afterwards threw myself in his way, instead of the cordial shake of the hand, he returned my salute with a cold repetition of 'Servant, servant;' which he pronounced with such indifference, or rather contempt, that if he had not been Narcissa's brother, I should have affronted him in publick.

These occurrences disturbed me not a little. I foresaw the brooding storm, and armed myself with resolution for the occasion; but Narcissa being at stake, I was far from being resigned. I could have renounced every other comfort of life with some degree of fortitude; but the prospect of losing her, disabled all my philosophy, and tortured my soul into madness.

Miss Williams found me, next morning, full of anxious tumult, which did not abate, when she told me, that my Lord Quiverwit, having professed honourable intentions, had been introduced to my lovely mistress by her brother, who had at the same time, from the information of Melinda, spoke of me as an Irish fortune-hunter, without either birth or estate; who supported myself in the appearance

ance of a gentleman by sharpening, and other infamous practices; and who was of such an obscure origin, that I did not even know my own extraction. Though I expected all this malice, I could not hear it with temper, especially as truth was so blended with falsehood in the assertion, that it would be almost impossible to separate the one from the other in my vindication! But I said nothing on this head, being impatient to know how Narcissa had been affected with the discovery. That generous creature, far from believing these imputations, was no sooner withdrawn with her confidante, than she inveighed with great warmth against the malevolence of the world, to which only she ascribed the whole of what had been said to my disadvantage; and calling every circumstance of my behaviour to her into review before her, found every thing so polite, honourable and disinterested, that she could not harbour the least doubt of my being the gentleman I assumed. 'I have, indeed,' said she, 'purposely forbore to ask the particulars of his life, lest the recapitulation of some misfortunes which he has undergone should give him pain: and as to the article of his fortune, I own myself equally afraid of enquiring into it, and of discovering the situation of my own, lest we should find ourselves both unhappy in the explanation; for, alas! my provision is conditional, and depends entirely on my marrying with my brother's consent.'

I was thunderstruck with this intelligence; the light forsook my eyes, the colour vanished from my cheeks, and I remained in a state of universal trepidation. My female friend perceiving my disorder, encouraged me with assurances of Narcissa's constancy, and the hope of some accident favourable to our love: and, as a farther consolation gave me to understand, that she had acquainted my mistress with the out-lines of my life; and that although she was no stranger to the present low state of my finances, her love and esteem were rather increased than diminished by the knowledge of my circumstances. I was greatly comforted by this assurance, which saved me a world of confusion and anxiety: for I must have imparted my situation one day to Nar-

cissa; and this task I could not have performed without shame and disorder.

As I did not doubt that, by this time, the scandalous aspersions of Melinda were diffused all over the town, I resolved to collect my whole strength of assurance, to brow-beat the efforts of her malice, and to publish her adventure with the frenchified barber, by way of reprisal. In the mean time, having promised to be at the garden gate about midnight, Miss Williams took her leave, bidding me repose myself entirely on the affection of my dear Narcissa, which was as perfect as inviolable. Before I went abroad, I was visited by Freeman, who came on purpose to inform me of the infamous stories that were raised at my expence. I heard them with great temper, and in my turn disclosed every thing that had happened between Melinda and me; and among other circumstances, entertained him with the story of the barber, letting him know what share his friend Banter had in that affair: he was convinced of the injury my reputation had suffered, and no longer doubting the fountain from whence this deluge of slander had flowed upon me, undertook to undeceive the town in my behalf, and roll the stream back upon its source: but in the mean time cautioned me from appearing in publick while the prepossession was so strong against me, lest I should meet with some affront that might have bad consequences.

C H A P. XXIII.

I RECEIVE AN EXTRAORDINARY MESSAGE AT THE DOOR OF THE LONG ROOM, WHICH I HOWEVER ENTER, AND AFFRONT THE SQUIRE, WHO THREATENS TO TAKE THE LAW OF ME—REBUKE MELINDA FOR HER MALICE—SHE WEEPS WITH VEXATION—LORD QUIVERWIT IS SEVERE UPON ME—I RETORT HIS SARCASM—AM RECEIVED WITH THE UTMOST TENDERNESS BY NARCISSA, WHO DESIRES TO HEAR THE STORY OF MY LIFE—WE VOW ETERNAL CONSTANCY TO ONE ANOTHER—I RETIRE—AM WAKED BY A MESSENGER, WHO

BRINGS

BRINGS A CHALLENGE FROM
QUIVERWIT, WHOM I MEET,
ENGAGE, AND VANQUISH,

I Thanked him for his advice, which, however, my pride and resentment would not permit me to follow; for he no sooner left me, in order to do justice to my character among his friends and acquaintance, than I sallied out, and went directly to the long-room. I was met at the door by a servant, who presented to me a billet without a subscription, importing that my presence was disagreeable to the company, and desiring I would take the hint without farther disturbance, and bestow myself elsewhere for the future. This peremptory message filled me with indignation. I followed the fellow who delivered it, and seizing him by the collar, in presence of all the company, threatened to put him instantly to death, if he did not discover the scoundrel who had charged him with such an impudent commission, that I might punish him as he deserved. The messenger, affrighted at my menaces and furious looks, fell upon his knees, and told me, that the gentleman who ordered him to deliver the letter, was no other than Narcissa's brother, who at that time stood at the other end of the room, talking to Melinda. I went up to him immediately, and in the hearing of his innamorata, accosted him in these words: 'Look'e, Squire, was it not for one consideration that protects you from my resentment, I would cane you where you stand, for having had the presumption to send me this scurrilous intimation!' which I tore to pieces and threw in his face; at the same time darting an angry regard at his mistress, I told her, I was sorry she had put it out of my power to compliment her upon her invention, but at the expence of her good-nature and veracity. Her admirer, whose courage never rose but in proportion to the wine he had swallowed, instead of resenting my address in what is called an honourable way, threatened to prosecute me for an assault, and took witnesses accordingly; while she, piqued at his pusillanimous behaviour, and enraged at the sarcasm I had uttered against her, endeavoured to make her quarrel a public cause, and wept

aloud with spite and vexation. The tears of a lady could not fail of attracting the notice and concern of the spectators, to whom she complained of my rudeness, with great bitterness; saying, if she was a man I durst not use her so. The greatest part of the gentlemen, already prejudiced against me, were offended at the liberty I had taken, as appeared from their looks; though none of them signified their disgust any other way, except my Lord Quiverwit, who ventured to say with a sneer, that I was in the right to establish my own character, of which he had now no longer any doubt. Nettled at this severe *equivoque*, which raised a laugh at my expence, I replied with some warmth, 'I am proud of having in that particular got the start of your lordship.' He made no answer to my repartee, but with a contemptuous smile, walked off, leaving me in a very disagreeable situation. In vain did I make up to several people of my acquaintance, whose conversation, I hoped, would banish my confusion; every body shunned me like a person infected, and I should not have been able to bear my disgrace, had not the idea of the ever-faithful and fond Narcissa come to my relief. I quitted the scene of my mortification, and sauntering about the town, happened to wake from my contemplation, when I found myself just opposite to a toy-shop, which I entered, and purchased a ring set with a ruby in the form of a heart, surrounded by diamond sparks, for which I paid ten guineas, intending it for a present to the charmer of my soul.

I was introduced, at the hour appointed, to this divine creature, who, notwithstanding what she had heard to my disadvantage, received me with the utmost confidence and tenderness; and having been informed of the general sketches of my life, by Miss Williams, expressed a desire of knowing the particular circumstances; which I related with great candour, omitting however some things which I concluded altogether improper for her ear, and which the reader's reflection will easily suggest. As my story was little else than a recital of misfortunes, the tear of sympathy ceased not to trickle down her enchanting eyes, during the whole of the narration,

ration, which when I had finished, she recompensed me for my trouble with the most endearing protestations of eternal love. She bewailed her restricted condition, as it was the means of retarding my happiness; told me, that Lord Quiverwit, by her brother's permission, had been to drink tea with her that very afternoon, and actually proposed marriage; and seeing me extremely affected with this piece of information, offered to give me a convincing proof of her affection, by espousing me in private, and leaving the rest to fate. I was penetrated with this instance of her regard, but that I might not be outdone in generosity, resisted the bewitching temptation, in consideration of her honour and interest; at the same time, I presented my ring as a pledge of my inviolable attachment, and on my knees, implored Heaven to shower its curses on my head, if ever my heart should entertain one thought unworthy of the passion I then avowed. She received my token, gave me in return her picture in miniature, exquisitely drawn and set in gold; and in the same posture called Heaven to witness and to judge her flame. Our vows being thus reciprocally breathed, a confidence of hope ensued, and our mutual fondness becoming as intimate as innocence would allow, I grew insensible of the progress of time, and it was morning before I could tear myself from this darling of my soul! My good angel foresaw what would happen, and permitted me to indulge myself on this occasion, in consideration of the fatal absence I was doomed to suffer.

I went to bed immediately on my return to my lodging, and having slept about two hours, was waked by Strap, who, in great confusion, told me, there was a footman below with a letter, which he would deliver to nobody but myself. Alarmed at this piece of news, I desired my friend to shew him up to my chamber, and received the following letter, which he said required an immediate answer.

‘SIR,

‘**W**HEN any man injures my honour, let the difference of rank between us be ever so great, I am contented to wave the privilege

‘of my quality, and to seek reparation from him on equal terms. The insolence of your reply to me yesterday in the long-room, I might have overlooked, had not your presumptive emulation in a much more interesting affair, and a discovery which I made this morning, concurred in persuading me to chastise your audacity with my sword. If you therefore have spirit enough to support the character you assume, you will not fail to follow the bearer immediately to a convenient place, where you shall be met by

‘QUIVERWIT.’

Whether I was enervated by the love and favour of Narcissa, or awed by the superior station of my antagonist, I know not, but I never had less inclination to fight than at this time: however, finding there was a necessity for vindicating the reputation of my mistress, as well as for asserting my own honour, I forthwith rose, and dressing in a hurry, put on my sword, bade Strap attend me, and set out with my conductor, cursing my bad fortune all the way for having been observed in my return from my angel; for so I interpreted his lordship's discovery. When I came within sight of my rival, his lacquey told me, he had orders to stop; upon which, I commanded Strap to halt also, while I walked forward; resolving, if possible, to come to an explanation with my challenger, before we should come to battle. Nor was an opportunity wanting; for I no sooner approached, than he asked with a stern countenance, what business I had in Mr. Topehall's garden so early in the morning. ‘I don't know, my lord,’ said I, ‘how to answer a question put to me with such magisterial haughtiness. If your lordship will please to expostulate calmly, you will have no cause to repent of your condescension. Otherwise, I am not to be intimidated into any confession.’ — ‘There is no room for denial,’ answered he, ‘I saw you come out with my own eyes.’ — ‘Did any other person see me?’ said I. ‘I neither know nor care,’ said he; ‘I want no other evidence than that of my own senses.’ Pleased to hear that the suspicion was confined to him alone, I en-

I endeavoured to appease his jealousy, by owning an intrigue with the waiting-maid; but he had too much discernment to be so easily imposed upon, and told me there was only one way to convince him of the truth of what I alleged; which was no other than renouncing all claim to Narcissa, upon oath, and promising upon honour never to speak to her for the future. Exasperated at this proposal, I unsheathed my sword, saying, 'Heavens! what title have you, or any man on earth, to impose such terms on me!' He did the same, and making towards me with a contracted brow, said I was a villain, and had dishonoured Narcissa. 'He's a scandalous villain,' I replied, in a transport of fury, 'who brands me with that imputation!' 'She is a thousand times more chaste than the mother that bore you, and I will assert her honour with my heart's blood!' So saying, I rushed upon him with more eagerness than address, and endeavouring to get within his point, received a wound in my neck, which redoubled my rage. He excelled me in temper as well as in skill, by which means he parried my thrusts with great calmness, until I had almost exhausted my spirits; and when he perceived me beginning to flag, attacked me fiercely in his turn. Finding himself however better opposed than he expected, he resolved to follow his longe, and close with me; accordingly, his sword entered my waistcoat on the side of the breast-bone, and running up between my shirt and skin, appeared over my left shoulder. I imagined that his weapon had perforated my lungs, and of consequence that the wound was mortal; therefore, determined not to die unrevenged, I seized his shell, which was close to my breast, before he could disentangle his point, and keeping it fast with my left-hand, shortened my own sword with my right, intending to run him through the heart; but he received the thrust in the left arm, which penetrated up to the shoulder blade. Disappointed in this expectation, and afraid still that death would frustrate my revenge, I grappled with him, and being much the stronger, threw him upon the ground, where I wrested his sword out of his hand, and so great was my confusion, instead of turning the point upon him, struck out

three of his fore-teeth with the hilt. In the mean time, our servants seeing us fall, ran up to separate and assist us; but before their approach I was upon my feet, and had discovered that my supposed mortal wound was only a slight scratch. The knowledge of my own safety disarmed me of a good deal of my resentment, and I began to enquire with some concern into the situation of my antagonist, who remained on the ground bleeding plentifully at his mouth and arm. I helped his footman to raise him, and having bound up his wound with my handkerchief, assured him it was not dangerous; I likewise restored his sword, and offered to support him to his house. He thanked me with an air of sullen dignity; and whispering that I should hear from him soon, went away, leaning on his servant's shoulder.

I was surprized at this promise, which I construed into a threat, and resolved, if ever he should call me out again, to use whatever advantage fortune might give me over him, in another manner. In the mean time, I had leisure to take notice of Strap, who seemed quite stupified with horror: I comforted him with an assurance that I had received no damage, and explained the nature of this affair as we walked homeward. By that time I had got into my apartment, I found the wound in my neck stiff and uneasy, and a good deal of clotted blood run down upon my shirt: upon which I pulled off my coat and waistcoat, and unbuttoned my collar, that I might dress it with more ease. My friend no sooner perceived my shirt quite dyed with blood, than, imagining I had got at least twenty thousand wounds, he cried, 'O Jesus!' and fell flat on the floor. I stopt the bleeding with a little dry lint, and applying a plaister over it, cleansed myself from the gore, shifted and dressed, while he lay senseless at my feet; so that when he recovered, and saw me perfectly well, he could scarce believe his own eyes. Now that the danger was past, I was very well pleased with what had happened, hoping that it would soon become known, and consequently dignify my character not a little in this place. I was also proud of having shewn myself, in some shape, worthy the love of Narcissa; who, I was per-

suaded, would not think the worse of me for what I had done.

C H A P. XXIV.

I AM VISITED BY FREEMAN, WITH WHOM I APPEAR IN PUBLIC, AND AM CARESSED—AM SENT FOR BY LORD QUIVERWIT, WHOSE PRESENCE I QUIT IN A PASSION—NARCISSA IS CARRIED OFF BY HER BROTHER—I INTEND TO PURSUE HIM, AND AM DISUADED BY MY FRIEND—ENGAGE IN PLAY, AND LOSE ALL MY MONEY—SET OUT FOR LONDON—TRY MY FORTUNE AT THE GAMING-TABLE, WITHOUT SUCCESS—RECEIVE A LETTER FROM NARCISSA—BILK MY TAYLOR.

WHILE I entertained myself with these reflections, the news of the duel being communicated by some unknown channel, spread all over the town. I was visited by Freeman, who testified his surprize at finding me; for he was told that Lord Quiverwit being dead of his wounds, I had absconded, in order to avoid the cognizance of the law. I asked if people guessed the occasion of the quarrel; and understanding it was attributed to his lordship's resentment of my reply in the long-room, confirmed that conjecture, glad to find Narcissa unsuspected. My friend, after I had assured him that my antagonist was in no danger, wished me joy of the event; than which, he said, nothing could happen more opportunely to support the idea he had given of my character to his friends, among whom he had been very assiduous in my behalf.

On the strength of this assurance, I went with him to the coffee-house, where I was saluted by a great many of those very persons who had shunned me the preceding day; and I found every body making merry with the story of Melinda's French gallant. While I remained in this place, I received a message from Lord Quiverwit, desiring, if I was not engaged, to see me at his house.

Thither I immediately repaired, and was conducted to an apartment where I was received by his lordship in bed.

When we were left by ourselves, he thanked me in very polite terms, for having used the advantage fortune had given me over him with such moderation; and asked pardon for any offence his resentment might have prompted him to commit. 'I would willingly,' said he, 'make you my friend; but as it is impossible for me to divest myself of my passion for Narcissa, I am too well convinced of your sentiments, to think we shall ever agree on that subject. I took the liberty, therefore, of sending for you, in order to own candidly, that I cannot help opposing your success with that young lady; though, at the same time, I promise to regulate my opposition by the dictates of justice and honour: this, however, I think proper to advertize you of, that she has no independent fortune, and if you should even succeed in your addresses, you would have the mortification to see her reduced to indigence, unless you have wherewithal to support her. And I am credibly informed of your incapacity that way; nay, I will confess, that urged by this consideration, I have actually sent notice to her brother, of the progress I suspect you have made in her affection, and desired him to take his precautions accordingly.' Alarmed and provoked at this information, I told his lordship, that I did not see how he could reconcile that piece of conduct with his profession of open dealing, and flung away from him in a passion.

As I walked homeward, in hope of hearing from my mistress as usual by means of Miss Williams, I was surprized with the waving of a handkerchief, from the window of a coach and six that passed by me at full speed; and upon farther observation, I saw a servant on horseback riding after it, who I knew by his livery belonged to the squire. Thunder-struck with this discovery, the knowledge of my misfortune rushed all at once upon my reflection! I guessed immediately that the signal was made by the dear hand of Narcissa; who being hurried away in consequence of Lord Quiverwit's message to her brother, had no other method of relating her distress, and imploring my assistance. Frantick with this conjecture, I ran to my lodgings, snatched

snatched my pistols, and ordered Strap to get post-horses, with such incoherence of speech and disorder, that the poor valet, terrified with the suspicion of another duel, instead of providing what I desired, went forthwith to Freeman; who being informed of my behaviour, came straight to my apartment, and conjured me so pathetically to make him acquainted with the cause of my uneasiness, that I could not refuse telling him my happiness was fled with Narcissa, and that I must retrieve her or perish. He represented the madness of such an undertaking, and endeavoured to divert me from it with great strength of friendship and reason: but all his arguments would have been ineffectual, had he not put me in mind of the dependance I ought to have on the love of Narcissa, and the attachment of her maid, who could not fail of finding opportunities to advertise me of their situation: and at the same time demonstrated the injury my charmer's reputation must suffer from my precipitate retreat. I was convinced and composed by these considerations: I appeared in public with an air of tranquility; was well received by the best company in town; and my misfortune taking air, consoled accordingly; while I had the satisfaction of seeing Melinda so universally discountenanced, that she was fain to return to London, in order to avoid the scoffs and censure of the ladies at Bath. But though the hope of hearing from the darling of my soul supported my spirits a little while, I began to be very uneasy, when at the end of several weeks I found that expectation disappointed. In short, melancholy and despondence took possession of my soul; and repining at that providence, which, by acting the stepmother towards me, kept me from the fruition of my wishes, I determined, in a fit of despair, to risk all I had at the gaming table, with a view of acquiring a fortune sufficient to render me independant for life; or of plunging myself into such a state of misery, as would effectually crush every ambitious hope that now tortured my imagination.

Actuated by this fatal resolution, I engaged in play, and after some turns of fortune, found myself, at the end of three days, worth a thousand pounds; but it was not my intention to stop

there, for which cause I kept Strap ignorant of my success, and continued my career, until I was reduced to five guineas, which I would have hazarded also, had I not been ashamed to fall from a bet of two hundred pounds to such a petty sum.

Having thus executed my scheme, I went home, amazed to find myself so much at ease, and informed my friend Strap of my mischance, with such calmness, that he imagining I joked, affected to receive the tidings with great equanimity. But both he and I found ourselves mistaken very soon. I had misinterpreted my own stupidity into deliberate resignation, and he had reason to believe me in earnest, when he saw me next morning agitated with the most violent despair, which he endeavoured to alleviate with all the consolation in his power.

In one of my lucid intervals, however, I charged him to take a place in the stage-coach for London; and in the mean time paid my debts in Bath, which amounted to thirty shillings only. Without taking leave of my friends I embarked, Strap having the good fortune to find a return-horse, and arrived in town, without having met with any thing remarkable on the road. While we crossed Bagshot-heath, I was seized with a sort of inclination to retrieve my fortune, by laying passengers under contribution, in some such place. My thoughts were so circumstanced at this time, that I should have digested the crime of robbery, so righteously had I concerted my plan, and ventured my life in the execution, had I not been deterred by reflecting upon the infamy that attends detection.

The apartment I formerly lived in being unengaged, I took possession of it, and next day went in quest of Banter, who received me with open arms, in expectation of having his bond discharged to his liking: but when he understood what had happened, his countenance changed of a sudden, and he told me with a dryness of displeasure peculiar to himself, that if he was in my place, he would put it out of fortune's power to play him such another trick, and be avenged of his own indiscretion at once. When I desired him to explain his meaning, he pointed to his neck, raised himself on his tip-toes, and was going away without any

farther ceremony, when I put him in mind of my indigence, and demanded the five guineas I had formerly lent him. 'Five guineas!' cried he, 'zounds! had you acted with common prudence, you might have had twenty thousand in your pocket by this time. I depended upon five hundred from you, as much as if I had had notes for it in the Bank; and by all the rules of equity, you are indebted to me for that sum.' I was neither pleased nor convinced by this computation, and insisted on my right with such determined obstinacy, that he was fain to alter his tone, and appease my clamour, by assuring me, that he was not master of five shillings. Society in distress generally promotes good understanding among people; from being a dun, I descended to be a client, and asked his advice about repairing my losses. He counselled me to have recourse again to the gaming table, where I succeeded so well before, and put myself in a condition, by selling my watch. I followed his directions, and having accommodated him with a few pieces, went to the place, where I lost every shilling.

Then I returned to my lodgings full of desperate resolution, and having made Strap acquainted with my fate, ordered him to pawn my sword immediately, that I might be enabled to make another effort. This affectionate creature no sooner understood my purpose, than seized with insuppressible sorrow at the prospect of my misery, he burst into tears, and asked what I proposed to do after the small sum he could raise on the sword should be spent. 'On my own account,' said he, 'I am quite unconcerned; for while God spares me health and these ten fingers, I can earn a comfortable subsistence any where; but what must become of you, who have less humilitiy to stoop, and more appetites to gratify?' Here I interrupted him, by saying, with a gloomy aspect, I should never want a resource while I had a loaded pistol in my possession. Stupified with horror at this dreadful insinuation, he stood mute for some time, and then broke out into—'God of his infinite mercy enable you to withstand that temptation of the devil! Consider your immortal soul; there is no repentance in the grave!

O Lord! that ever we should come to this. Are we not enjoined to resign ourselves to the will of Heaven? where is your patience? *Durum patientia frango*—you are but a young man—there may be many good things in store for you—*accidit in puncto quid non speratur in anno*—remember your uncle, Mr. Bowling; perhaps he is now on his voyage homeward, pleasing himself with the hopes of seeing and relieving you; nay, peradventure he is already arrived, for the ship was expected about this time.' A ray of hope shot athwart my soul at this suggestion; I thanked my friend for his seasonable recollection, and after having promised to take no resolution till his return, dismissed him to Wapping for intelligence.

In his absence I was visited by Bantler, who being informed of my bad luck at play, told me, that fortune would probably be one day weary of persecuting me. 'In the mean time,' said he, 'here is a letter for you, which I received just now enclosed in one from Freeman.' I snatched it with eagerness, and knowing the superscription to be of Narcissa's handwriting, kissed it with transport, and having opened it, read,

IT is with great difficulty, that I have stolen from the observation of those spies who are set over me, this opportunity of telling you, that I was suddenly carried away from Bath, by my brother, who was informed of our correspondence by Lord Quiverwit, whom, I since understand, you have wounded in a duel on my account. As I am fully convinced of your honour and love, I hope I shall never hear of such desperate proofs of either for the future. I am so strictly watched, that it will be impossible for you to see me, until my brother's suspicion shall abate, or Heaven contrive some other unforeseen event in our behalf. In the mean time, you may depend on the constancy and affection of your own

NARCISSA.

P. S. Miss Williams, who is my fellow prisoner, desires to be remembered

membered to you. We are both in good health, and only in pain for you, especially, as it will be impracticable for you to convey any message or letter to the place of our confinement; for which reason, pray desist from the attempt, that, by miscarrying, might prolong our captivity.

N——.

This kind letter afforded me great consolation; I communicated it to Banter, and at the same time shewed him her picture; he approved of her beauty and good sense, and could not help owning, that my neglect of Miss Snapper was excusable, when such a fine creature engrossed my attention.

I began to be reconciled to my fate, and imagined, that if I could contrive means of subsisting until my uncle should arrive, in case he was not already at home, he would enable me to do something effectual in behalf of my love and fortune. I therefore consulted Banter about a present supply, who no sooner understood that I had credit with a taylor, than he advised me to take off two or three suits of rich clothes, and convert them into cash, by selling them at half price to a salesman in Monmouth Street. I was startled at this proposal, which I thought favoured a little of fraud; but he rendered it palatable, by observing, that in a few months I might be in a condition to do every body justice; and in the mean time, I was acquitted by the honesty of my intention. I suffered myself to be persuaded by this salvo, by which my necessity, rather than my judgment, was convinced; and when I found there were no accounts of the ship in which my uncle embarked, actually put the scheme in practice, and raised by it, five and twenty guineas, paying him for his advice with the odd five.

CHAP. XXV.

I AM ARRESTED—CARRIED TO THE MARSHALSEA—FIND MY OLD ACQUAINTANCE BEAU JACKSON IN THAT GAOL—HE INFORMS ME OF HIS ADVENTURES—STRAP ARRIVES, AND WITH DIFFICULTY IS COMFORTED—JACKSON

INTRODUCES ME TO A POET—
I ADMIRE HIS CONVERSATION
AND CAPACITY—AM DEEPLY
AFFECTED WITH MY MISFORTUNE—STRAP HIRES HIMSELF
AS A JOURNEYMAN BARBER.

BUT this expedient was in a few weeks attended with a consequence I did not foresee: a player having purchased one of the suits which were exposed to sale, appeared in it on the stage one night, while my taylor unfortunately happened to be present. He knew it immediately, and enquiring minutely into the affair, discovered my whole contrivance; upon which he came to my lodgings, and telling me that he was very much straitened for want of money, presented his bill, which amounted to 50*l*. Surprized at this unexpected address, I affected to treat him cavalierly, swore some oaths, asked if he doubted my honour, and telling him I should take care who I dealt with for the future, bade him come again in three days. He obeyed me punctually, demanded his money, and finding himself amused with bare promises, arrested me that very day in the street. I was not much shocked at this adventure, which, indeed, put an end to a state of horrible expectation; but I refused to go to a spunging-house, where I heard there was nothing but the most flagrant imposition; and a coach being called, was carried to the Marshalsea, attended by a bailiff and his follower, who were very much disappointed and chagrined at my resolution.

The turnkey guessing, from my appearance, that I had money in my pocket, received me with the repetition of the Latin word *depone*; and gave me to understand, that I must pay beforehand for the apartment I should chuse to dwell in. I desired to see his conveniencies, and hired a small paultry bed-chamber for a crown a week, which, in any other place, would not have let for half the money. Having taken possession of this dismal habitation, I sent for Strap, and my thoughts were busied in collecting matter of consolation to that faithful squire, when somebody knocked at my door, which I no sooner opened, than a young fellow entered, in very shabby clothes, and

and marvellous foul linen. After a low bow, he called me by name, and asked if I had forgot him. His voice assisted me in recollecting his person, whom I soon recognized to be my old acquaintance Jackson, of whom mention is made in the first part of my memoirs. I saluted him cordially, expressed my satisfaction at finding him alive, and consoled him on his present situation; which, however, did not seem to affect him much, for he laughed very heartily at the occasion of our meeting so unexpectedly in this place. Our mutual compliments being past, I enquired about his amour with the lady of fortune, which seemed to be so near a happy conclusion when I had the pleasure of seeing him last; and after an immoderate fit of laughter, he gave me to understand, that he had been egregiously bit in that affair. 'You must know,' said he, 'that a few days after our adventure with the bawd and her b—ches, I found means to be married to that same fine lady you speak of, and passed the night with her at her lodgings, so much to her satisfaction, that early in the morning, after a good deal of sniveling and sobbing, she owned, that far from being an heiress of great fortune, she was no other than a common woman of the town, who had decoyed me into matrimony, in order to enjoy the privilege of a *femme couverte*; and that unless I made my escape immediately, I should be arrested for a debt of her contracting, by bailiffs employed and instructed for that purpose. Startled at this intimation, I rose in a twinkling, and taking leave of my spouse with several hearty damns, got safe into the verge of the court, where I kept snug until I was appointed surgeon's mate of a man of war at Portsmouth: for which place I set out on Sunday, went on board of my ship, in which I sailed to the Straits, where I had the good fortune to be made surgeon of a sloop that came home a few months after, and was put out of commission; whereupon I came to London, imagining myself forgotten, and freed from my wife and her creditors; but had not been in town a week before I was arrested for a debt of her's, amounting to 20l. and brought to this place, where I

have been fixed by another action since that time. However, you know my disposition; I defy care and anxiety; and being on the half-pay list, make shift to live here tolerably easy.' I congratulated him on his philosophy, and remembering that I was in his debt, repaid him the money he formerly lent me, which, I believe, was far from being unreasonable. I then enquired about the economy of the place, which he explained to my satisfaction; and after we had agreed to mess together, we were just going to give orders for dinner, when Strap arrived.

I never in my life saw sorrow so extravagantly expressed in any countenance, as in that of my honest friend; which was, indeed, particularly adapted by nature for such impressions. When we were left by ourselves, I communicated to him my disaster, and endeavoured to console him with the same arguments he had formerly used to me, without representing the fair chance I had of being relieved in a short time by Mr. Bowling. But his grief was unutterable; he seemed to give attention without listening, and wrung his hands in silence; so that I was in a fair way of being infected by his behaviour, when Jackson returned, and perceiving the deference I paid to Strap, although in a footman's habit, distributed his crumbs of comfort with such mirth, jollity, and unconcern, that the features of the distressed squire relaxed by degrees, he recovered the use of speech, and began to be a little more reconciled to this lamentable event. We dined together on boiled beef and greens, brought from a cook's shop in the neighbourhood; and although this meal was served up in a manner little corresponding with the sphere of life in which I had lately lived, I made a virtue of necessity, ate with good appetite, and treated my friends with a bottle of wine, which had the desired effect, of increasing the good humour of my fellow-prisoner, and exhilarating the spirits of Strap, who now talked cavalierly of my misfortune.

After dinner, Jackson left us to our private affairs; when I desired my friend to pack up all our things, and carry them to some cheap lodging he should chuse for himself in the neighbourhood of the Marshalsea, after he

had d
purpo
wife
my m
my la
enqui
the co
same t
him to
fer, in
for m
of Fre
a dire
lodging
might
shoul
WH
orders
tually
found
situati
and so
pany
regale
condu
where
ferable
We
nates,
in a
with t
lours,
black
vered
wig, w
ed from
This a
solemn
the au
bation
'd'ye
wards
a part
my frie
duces
Mr. M
over, I
the co
round
to my
with g
gesture
discour
genius
tions w
author
When
which
again t
whom,

had discharged my lodging, for which purpose I gave him money. I likewise recommended to him the keeping my misfortune secret, and saying to my landlord, or any other who should enquire for me, that I was gone into the country for a few weeks; at the same time I laid strong injunctions upon him to call every second day upon Banter, in case he should receive any letter for me from Narcissa, by the canal of Freeman; and by all means to leave a direction for myself, at my uncle's lodgings in Wapping, by which I might be found when my kinsman should arrive.

When he departed to execute these orders, (which, by the bye, were punctually performed that very night) I found myself so little seasoned to my situation, that I dreaded reflection, and sought shelter from it in the company of the beau; who, promising to regale me with a lecture upon taste, conducted me to the common side, where I saw a number of naked miserable wretches assembled together. We had not been here many minutes, when a figure appeared, wrapt in a dirty rug, tied about his loins with two pieces of lilt, of different colours, knotted together; having a black bushy beard, and his head covered with a huge mass of brown periwig, which seemed to have been ravished from the crown of some scare-crow. This apparition, stalking in with great solemnity, made a profound bow to the audience, who signified their approbation by a general response of, "How d'ye do, doctor?" He then turned towards us, and honoured Jackson with a particular salutation: upon which my friend, in a formal manner, introduced him to me by the name of Mr. Melopoyne. This ceremony being over, he advanced into the middle of the congregation, which crowded around him, and hemming three times, to my utter astonishment, pronounced with great significance of voice and gesture, a very elegant and ingenious discourse upon the difference between genius and taste, illustrating his assertions with apt quotations from the best authors, ancient as well as modern. When he had finished his harangue, which lasted a full hour, he bowed again to the spectators; not one of whom, I was informed, understood so

much as a sentence of what he had uttered. They manifested, however, their admiration and esteem by voluntary contribution, which, Jackson told me, one week with another, amounted to eighteen pence. This moderate stipend, together with some small presents that he received for making up differences, and deciding causes amongst the prisoners, just enabled him to breathe and walk about, in the grotesque figure I have described. I understood also, that he was an excellent poet, and had composed a tragedy, which was allowed by every body who had seen it, to be a performance of great merit; that his learning was infinite, his morals unexceptionable, and his modesty invincible. Such a character could not fail of attracting my regard; I longed impatiently to be acquainted with him, and desired Jackson would engage him to spend the evening in my apartment. My request was granted, he favoured us with his company, and in the course of our conversation, perceiving that I had a strong passion for the Belles Lettres, acquitted himself so well on that subject, that I expressed a fervent desire of seeing his productions. In this point too he gratified my inclination: he promised to bring his tragedy to my room next day, and in the mean time entertained me with some detached pieces, which gave me a very advantageous idea of his poetical talent. Among other things, I was particularly pleased with some elegies, in imitation of Tibullus; one of which I beg leave to submit to the reader, as a specimen of his complexion and capacity.

I.

WHERE now are all my flatt'ring
dreams of joy?

Monimia, give my soul her wonted rest;
Since first thy beauty fix'd my roving eye,
Heart-gnawing cares corrode my pensive
breast!

II.

Let happy lovers fly where pleasures call,
With festive song beguile the fleeting hour;
Lead beauty thro' the mazes of the ball,
Or press her wanton in love's roseate bower.

III.

For me, no more I'll range th' empurpled
mead,
Where shepherds pipe, and virgins dance
around;
Nor wander thro' the woodbine's fragrant
shade,
To hear the music of the grove resound.

IV.

IV.

I'll seek some lonely church, or dreary
hall,
Where fancy paints the glimm'ring taper
blue,
Where damps hang mould'ring on the
ivy'd wall,
And sheeted ghosts drink up the midnight
dew.

V.

There leagu'd in hopeless anguish and
despair,
Awhile in silence o'er my fate repine;
Then, with a long farewell to love and
care,
To kindred dust my weary limbs consign.

VI.

Wilt thou, Monimia, shed a gracious tear,
On the cold grave where all my sorrows rest?
Strew vernal flow'rs, applaud my love
sincere,
And bid the turf lie easy on my breast!

I was wonderfully affected with this pathetic complaint, which seemed so well calculated for my own disappointment in love, that I could not help attaching the idea of Narcissa to the name of Monimia, and of forming such melancholy presages of my passion, that I could not recover my tranquillity; and was fain to have recourse to the bottle, which prepared me for a profound sleep, that I could not otherwise have enjoyed. Whether these impressions invited and introduced a train of other melancholy reflections, or my fortitude was all exhausted in the effort I had made against despondence, during the first day of my imprisonment, I cannot determine; but I awoke in the horrors, and found my imagination haunted with such dismal apparitions, that I was ready to despair: and I believe the reader will own, I had no great cause to congratulate myself, when I considered my situation. I was interrupted in the midst of these gloomy apprehensions, by the arrival of Strap, who contributed not a little to the re-establishment of my peace, by letting me know that he had hired himself as a journeyman barber; by which means he would be not only able to save me a considerable expence, but even make shift to lay up something for my subsistence after my money should be spent, in case I should not be relieved before.

C H A P. XXVI.

I READ MELOPOYN'S TRAGEDY,
AND CONCEIVE A VAST OPINION
OF HIS GENIUS—HE RECOUNTS
HIS ADVENTURES.

WHILE we ate our breakfast together, I made him acquainted with the character and condition of the poet, who came in with his play at that instant; and imagining we were engaged about business, could not be prevailed upon to sit; but leaving his performance, went away. My friend's tender heart was melted at the sight of a gentleman and christian (for he had a great veneration for both these epithets) in such misery; and assented with great cheerfulness to a proposal I made of clothing him with our superfluities; a task with which he charged himself, and departed immediately to perform it.

He was no sooner gone, than I locked my door, and sat down to the tragedy, which I read to the end with vast pleasure, not a little amazed at the conduct of the managers who had rejected it. The fable, in my opinion, was well chosen, and naturally conducted, the incidents interesting, the characters beautifully contrasted, strongly marked, and well supported; the diction poetical, spirited, and correct; the unities of the drama maintained with the most scrupulous exactness; the opening gradual and engaging, the *peripetia* surprising, and the catastrophe affecting: in short, I judged it by the laws of Aristotle and Horace, and could find nothing in it exceptionable, but a little too much embellishment in some few places, which objection he removed to my satisfaction, by a quotation from Aristotle's Poetics, importing, that the least interesting parts of a poem ought to be raised and dignified by the charm and energy of diction.

I revered his genius, and was seized with an eager curiosity to know the particular events of a fortune so unworthy of his merit. At that instant Strap returned with a bundle of clothes which I sent with my compliments to Mr. Melopoyne, as a small token of my regard, and desired the favour

his company to dinner. He accepted my present invitation, and in less than half an hour made his appearance in a decent dress, which altered his figure very much to his advantage. I perceived by his countenance, that his heart was big with gratitude, and endeavoured to prevent his acknowledgments, by asking pardon for the liberty I had taken; he made no reply, but with an aspect full of admiration and esteem, bowed to the ground, while the tears gushed from his eyes. Affected with these symptoms of an ingenuous mind, I shifted the conversation, and complimented him on his performance; which, I assured him, afforded me infinite pleasure. My approbation made him happy: dinner being served, and Jackson arrived, I begged their permission for Strap to sit at table with us, after having informed them, that he was a person to whom I was extremely obliged; they were kind enough to grant that favour, and we ate together with great harmony and satisfaction.

Our meal being ended, I expressed my wonder at the little regard Mr. Melopoyne had met with from the world; and signified a desire of hearing how he had been treated by the managers of the playhouses, to whom I understood from Jackson, he had offered his tragedy without success. 'There is so little entertaining in the incidents of my life,' said he, 'that I am sure the recital will not recompense your attention; but since you discover an inclination to know them, I understand my duty too well to disappoint your desire.'

MY father, who was a curate in the country, being by the narrowness of his circumstances, hindered from maintaining me at the university, took the charge of my education upon himself, and laboured with such industry and concern in the undertaking, that I had little cause to regret the want of public masters. Being at great pains to consult my natural bias, he discovered in me, betimes, an inclination for poetry; upon which he recommended me to an intimate acquaintance with the classics, in the cultivation of which, he assisted me with paternal zeal, and uncommon

erudition. When he thought me sufficiently acquainted with the ancients, he directed my studies to the best modern authors, French and Italian, as well as English, and laid a particular injunction upon me, to make myself master of my mother tongue.

About the age of eighteen I grew ambitious of undertaking a work of some consequence; and, with my father's approbation, actually planned the tragedy you have read; but before I had finished four acts, that indulgent parent died, and left my mother and me in very indigent circumstances. A near relation compassionating our distress, took us into his family, where I brought my fable to a conclusion; and soon after that period my mother quitted this life. When my sorrow for this melancholy event had subsided, I told my kinsman, who was a farmer, that having paid my last duty to my parent, I had now no attachment to detain me in the country, and therefore was resolved to set out for London, and offer my play to the stage, where I did not doubt of acquiring a large share of fame as well as fortune, in which case I should not be unmindful of my friends and benefactors. My cousin was ravished with the prospect of my felicity, and willingly contributed towards the expence of fitting me out for my expedition.

Accordingly I took a place in the waggon, and arrived in town, where I hired an apartment in a garret, willing to live as frugal as possible, until I should know what I had to expect from the manager, to whom I intended to offer my play. For though I looked upon myself as perfectly secure of a good reception, imagining that a patentee would be as eager to receive, as I to present my production; I did not know whether or not he might be pre-engaged in favour of another author, a circumstance that would certainly retard my success. On this consideration, too, I determined to be speedy in my application, and even to wait upon one of the managers the very next day. For this purpose I enquired of my landlord if he knew where either or both of them lived;

for I pretended to commit it to paper, that it might be the same individual play that he had perused. Encouraged by this injunction, which plainly demonstrated how much he interested himself in the affair, I tasked my remembrance and industry, and in three weeks produced the exact image of the former, which was conveyed to him by my good friend, father O'Varnish, who told me next day, that Mr. Supple would revise it superficially, in order to judge of its sameness with the other, and then give his final answer. For this examination I allotted a week; and in full confidence of seeing it acted in a little while, demanded an audience of the manager, when that term was expired. But alas! the season had slipped away insensibly; he convinced me, that if my play had been put into rehearsal at that time, it could not have been ready for performing until the end of March, when the benefit nights came on; consequently it would have interfered with the interest of the players, whom it was not my business to disoblige.

I was fain to acquiesce in these reasons, which to be sure were extremely just; and to reserve my performance for the next season, when he hoped I would not be so unlucky. Although it was a grievous disappointment to me, who by this time began to want both money and necessities; having, on the strength of my expectation from the theatre, launched out into some extravagancies, by which the sum I brought to town was already almost consumed. Indeed, I ought to be ashamed at this circumstance of my conduct: for my finances were sufficient, with good economy, to have maintained me comfortably a whole year. You will perhaps be amazed when I tell you that in six months I expended not a farthing less than ten guineas: but when one considers the temptations to which a young man is exposed in this great city, especially if he is addicted to pleasure, as I am, the wonder will vanish, or at least abate. Nor was the cause of my concern limited to my own situation entirely: I had writ an account of my good reception to my kinsman the farmer,

and desired him to depend upon me for the money he had kindly accommodated me with, about the end of February: which promise I now found myself unable to perform. However, there was no remedy but patience: I applied to my landlord, who was a very good-natured man, candidly owned my distress, and begged his advice in laying down some plan for my subsistence. He readily promised to consult his confessor on this subject, and in the mean time told me, I was welcome to lodge and board with him, until fortune should put it in my power to make restitution.

Mr. O'Varnish being informed of my necessity, offered to introduce me to the author of a weekly paper, who, he did not doubt, would employ me in that way, provided he should find me duly qualified; but upon enquiry, I understood, that this journal was calculated to foment divisions in the commonwealth, and therefore I desired to be excused from engaging in it. He then proposed that I should write something in the poetical way, which I might dispose of to a bookseller for a pretty sum of ready money, and perhaps establish my own character into the bargain; this event would infallibly procure friends; and my tragedy would appear next season to the best advantage, by being supported both by interest and reputation. I was charmed with this prospect, and having heard what friends Mr. Pope acquired by his pastorals, set about a work of that kind, and in less than six weeks composed as many eclogues, which I forthwith offered to an eminent bookseller, who desired me to leave them for his perusal, and he would give me an answer in two days. At the end of that time, I went to him, when he returned the poems, telling me, they would not answer his purpose, and sweetened his refusal, by saying there were some good clever lines in them. Not a little dejected at this rebuff, which, I learned from Mr. O'Varnish, was owing to the opinion of another author, whom this bookseller always consulted on these occasions, I applied to another person of the same profession, who

‘ told me, the town was cloyed with
 ‘ pastorals, and advised me, if I in-
 ‘ tended to profit by my talents, to
 ‘ write something satirical or luscious,
 ‘ such as the Button Hole, Shockey
 ‘ and Towzer, The Leaky Vessel, &c.
 ‘ and yet this was a man in years,
 ‘ who wore a reverend periwig, look-
 ‘ ed like a senator, and went regular-
 ‘ ly to church. Be that as it will, I
 ‘ scorned to prostitute my pen in the
 ‘ manner he proposed, and carried my
 ‘ papers to a third, who assured me,
 ‘ that poetry was entirely out of his
 ‘ way; and asked if I had got never a
 ‘ piece of secret history, thrown into
 ‘ a series of letters, or a volume of
 ‘ adventures, such as those of Ro-
 ‘ binson Crusoe, and Colonel Jack,
 ‘ or a collection of conundrums,
 ‘ wherewith to entertain the planta-
 ‘ tions. Being quite unfurnished for
 ‘ this dealer, I had recourse to ano-
 ‘ ther, with as little success; and I
 ‘ verily believe was rejected by the
 ‘ whole trade.

‘ I was afterwards persuaded to of-
 ‘ fer myself as a translator, and ac-
 ‘ cordingly repaired to a person, who
 ‘ was said to entertain numbers of that
 ‘ class in his pay; he assured me, he
 ‘ had already a great deal of that work
 ‘ on his hands, which he did not know
 ‘ what to do with; observed that tran-
 ‘ slation was a mere drug, that branch
 ‘ of literature being overstocked with
 ‘ an inundation of authors from North
 ‘ Britain; and asked what I would
 ‘ expect per sheet, for rendering the
 ‘ Latin classics into English. That I
 ‘ might not make myself too cheap, I
 ‘ determined to set a high price upon
 ‘ my qualifications, and demanded half
 ‘ a guinea for every translated sheet.
 ‘ Half a guinea!’ cried he, staring at
 ‘ me; then paused a little, and said
 ‘ he had no occasion for my service at
 ‘ present. I found my error, and re-
 ‘ solving to make amends, fell one half
 ‘ in my demand; upon which he
 ‘ stared at me again, and told me his
 ‘ hands were full. I attempted others,
 ‘ without finding employment, and
 ‘ was actually reduced to a very un-
 ‘ comfortable prospect, when I be-
 ‘ thought myself of offering my talents
 ‘ to the printers of halfpenny ballads,
 ‘ and other such occasional essays as
 ‘ are hawked about the streets. With
 ‘ this view, I applied to one of the

‘ most noted and vociferous of this
 ‘ tribe, who directed me to a person
 ‘ whom I found entertaining a whole
 ‘ crowd of them with gin, bread and
 ‘ cheese; he carried me into a little
 ‘ back-parlour, very neatly furnished,
 ‘ where I signified my desire of being
 ‘ enrolled among his writers; and was
 ‘ asked what kind of composition I
 ‘ professed. Understanding that my in-
 ‘ clination leaned towards poetry, he
 ‘ expressed his satisfaction, telling me
 ‘ one of his poets had lost his senses,
 ‘ and was confined in Bedlam, and
 ‘ the other was become dozed with
 ‘ drinking drams; so that he had not
 ‘ done any thing tolerable these many
 ‘ weeks. When I proposed that we
 ‘ should enter into terms of agreement,
 ‘ he gave me to understand, that his
 ‘ bargains were always conditional,
 ‘ and his authors paid in proportion to
 ‘ the sale of their works.

‘ Having therefore settled these con-
 ‘ ditions, which (I do assure you) were
 ‘ not very advantageous to me, he as-
 ‘ signed me a subject for a ballad,
 ‘ which was to be finished in two hours;
 ‘ and I retired to my garret in order to
 ‘ perform his injunction. As the theme
 ‘ happened to suit my fancy, I com-
 ‘ pleted a pretty sort of an ode within
 ‘ the time prescribed, and brought it
 ‘ to him, big with hope of profit and
 ‘ applause. He read it in a twinkling,
 ‘ and to my utter astonishment, told
 ‘ me it would not do; though, indeed,
 ‘ he owned I wrote a good hand, and
 ‘ spelled very well, but my language
 ‘ was too high flown, and of conse-
 ‘ quence not at all adapted to the ca-
 ‘ pacity and taste of his customers. I
 ‘ promised to rectify that mistake, and
 ‘ in half an hour humbled my style to
 ‘ the comprehension of vulgar readers;
 ‘ he approved of the alteration, and
 ‘ gave me some hopes of succeeding
 ‘ in time, though he observed, that
 ‘ my performance was very deficient
 ‘ in the quaintness of expression that
 ‘ pleases the multitude: however, to
 ‘ encourage me, he ventured the ex-
 ‘ pence of printing and paper, and if I
 ‘ remember aright, my share of the sale
 ‘ amounted to four pence halfpenny.

‘ From that day I studied the Grub
 ‘ Street manner with great diligence,
 ‘ and at length became such a profi-
 ‘ cient, that my works were in great
 ‘ request among the most polite of the
 ‘ chairmen,

chairmen, draymen, hackney coachmen, footmen, and servant maids: nay, I have enjoyed the pleasure of seeing my productions adorned with cuts, pasted upon the wall as ornaments in beer-cellars and cobblers' stalls; and have actually heard them sung in clubs of substantial tradesmen. But empty praise, you know, my dear friend, will not supply the cravings of nature. I found myself in danger of starving in the midst of all my fame; for of ten songs I composed, it was well if two had the good fortune to please. For this reason I turned my thoughts to prose, and during a tract of gloomy weather, published an apparition, on the substance of which I subsisted very comfortably a whole month: I have made many a good meal upon a monster; a rape has often afforded me great satisfaction; but a murder well-timed, was my never failing resource. What then! I was a most miserable slave to my employers, who expected to be furnished at a minute's warning with prose and verse, just as they thought the circumstances of the times required, whether the inclination was absent or present. Upon my sincerity, Mr. Random, I have been so much pestered and besieged by those children of clamour, that life became a burden to me.

CHAP. XXVII.

THE CONTINUATION AND CONCLUSION OF MR. MELOPOYN'S STORY.

I Made shift, notwithstanding, to maintain myself till the beginning of next winter, when I renewed my addresses to my friend Mr. Supple, and was most graciously received. "I have been thinking of your affair, Mr. Melopoyne," said he, "and am determined to shew how far I have your interest at heart, by introducing you to a young nobleman of my acquaintance, who is remarkable for his fine taste in dramatic writings, and is, besides, a man of such influence, that if once he should approve of your play, his patronage will support it against all the efforts of envy and ignorance; for I

do assure you, that merit alone will not bring success. I have already spoke of your performance to Lord Rattle, and if you will call at my house in a day or two, you shall have a letter of introduction to his lordship." I was sensibly touched with this mark of Mr. Supple's friendship, and looking upon my affair as already done, went home and imparted my good fortune to my landlord, who, to render my appearance more acceptable to my patron, procured a suit of new clothes for me on his own credit.

Not to trouble you with idle particulars, I carried my tragedy to his lordship's lodgings, and sent it up along with Mr. Supple's letter by one of his servants, who desired me, by his lord's order, to return in a week. I did so, and was admitted to his lordship, who received me very courteously, told me he had perused my play, which he thought, on the whole, was the best *coup d'essai* he had ever seen; but that he had marked some places in the margin, which he imagined might be altered for the better. I was transported with this reception, and promised (with many acknowledgments of his lordship's generosity) to be governed solely by his advice and direction. "Well then," said he, "write another fair copy with the alterations I have proposed, and bring it to me as soon as possible; for I am resolved to have it brought on the stage this winter." You may be sure I set about this task with alacrity, and although I found his lordship's remarks much more numerous, and of less importance than I expected, I thought it was not my interest to dispute upon trifles with my patron; therefore, I new-modelled it according to his desire in less than a month.

When I waited upon him with the manuscript, I found one of the actors at breakfast with his lordship, who immediately introduced him to my acquaintance, and desired him to read a scene of my play. This task he performed very much to my satisfaction, with regard to emphasis and pronunciation; but he signified his disgust at several words in every page, which I presuming to defend, Lord Rattle told me with a peremptory

tory look, I must not pretend to dispute with him, who had been a player these twenty years, and understood the œconomy of the stage better than any man living. I was forced to submit, and his lordship proposed the same actor should read the whole play in the evening, before some gentlemen of his acquaintance, whom he would convene at his lodgings for that purpose.

I was present at the reading; and I protest to you, my dear friend, I never underwent such a severe trial in the whole course of my life, as at that juncture; for although the player might be a very honest man and a good performer, he was excessively illiterate and assuming, and made a thousand frivolous objections, which I was not permitted to answer: however, the piece was very much applauded on the whole; the gentlemen present, who, I understood, were men of fortune, promised to countenance and support it as much as they could; and Lord Rattle assuring me that he would act the part of a careful nurse to it, desired me to carry it home, and alter it immediately according to their remarks: I was fain to acquiesce in his determination, and fulfilled his injunctions with all the expedition in my power; but before I could present the new copy, my good friend Mr. Supple had disposed of his property and patent to one Mr. Brayer; so that fresh interest was to be made with the new manager. This task Lord Rattle undertook, having some acquaintance with him, and recommended my performance so strongly, that it was received.

I looked upon myself now as upon the eve of reaping the fruits of all my labour: I waited a few days in expectation of it's being put into rehearsal, and wondering at the delay, applied to my worthy patron, who excused Mr. Brayer on account of the multiplicity of business in which he was involved, and bade me beware of teasing the patentee. I treasured up this caution, and exerted my patience three weeks longer; at the end of which his lordship gave me to understand that Mr. Brayer had read my play, and owned it had undubitable merit;

but as he had long been pre-engaged to another author, he could not possibly represent it that season; though, if I would reserve it for the next, and in the interim make such alterations as he had proposed by observations on the margin, I might depend upon his compliance.

Thunderstruck at this disappointment, I could not, for some minutes, utter one syllable: At length, however, I complained bitterly of the manager's insincerity in amusing me so long, when he knew from the beginning that he could not gratify my desire. But his lordship reprimanded me for my freedom, said Mr. Brayer was a man of honour, and imputed his behaviour with respect to me, to nothing else but forgetfulness. And indeed I have had some reason since that time, to be convinced of his bad memory: for, in spite of appearances, I will not allow myself to interpret his conduct any other way. Lord Rattle observing me very much affected with my disappointment, offered his interest to bring on my play at the other house, which I eagerly accepting, he forthwith wrote a letter of recommendation to Mr. Bellow, actor, and prime minister to Mr. Vandal, proprietor of that theatre: and desired me to deliver it with my tragedy without loss of time. Accordingly, I hastened to his house, where, after having waited a whole hour in a lobby, I was admitted to his presence, and my performance received with great state. He told me he was extremely busy at present, but he would peruse it as soon as possible; and bade me call again in a week. I took my leave, not a little astonished at the port and supercilious behaviour of this stage-player, who had not treated me with good manners; and began to think the dignity of a poet greatly impaired since the days of Euripides and Sophocles; but all this was nothing in comparison of what I have since observed.

Well, Mr. Random, I went back at the appointed time, and was told that Mr. Bellow was engaged, and could not see me. I repeated my visit a few days after, and having waited a considerable time, was favoured with an audience, during which, he

said

‘ said he had not as yet read my play. ‘ Nettled at this usage, I could contain myself no longer, but telling him, I imagined he would have paid more deference to Lord Rattle’s recommendation, demanded my manuscript with some expressions of resentment. “Aye,” said he, in a theatrical tone, “with all my heart.” Then pulling out a drawer of the bureau at which he sat, he took out a bundle, and threw it upon a table that was near him, pronouncing the word, “There,” with great disdain. I took it up, and perceiving, with some surprize, that it was a comedy, told him it did not belong to me; upon which he offered me another, which I also disclaimed. A third was produced, and rejected for the same reason. At length he pulled out a whole handful, and spread them before me, saying, “There are seven—take which you please—or take them all.” I singled out my own, and went away, struck dumb with admiration at what I had seen, not so much on account of his insolence, as of the number of new plays, which from this circumstance I concluded were yearly offered to the stage. You may be sure I did not fail to carry my complaint to my patron, who did not receive it with all the indignation I expected; but taxed me with precipitation, and told me I must lay my account with bearing the humours of the players, if I intended to write for the stage. “There is now no other remedy,” said he, “but to keep it for the next season for Mr. Brayer, and alter it at your leisure, in the summer, according to his directions.” I was now reduced to a terrible alternative, either to quit all hopes of my tragedy, from which I had all along promised myself a large share of fortune and reputation, or to encounter eight long months of adversity in preparing for and expecting it’s appearance. This last penance, painful as it was, seemed most eligible to my reflection at that time, and therefore I resolved to undergo it.

‘ Why should I tire you with particulars of no consequence! I wrestled with extreme poverty, until the time of my probation was expired; and went to my Lord Rattle, in order to

‘ remind him of my affair, when I understood, to my great concern, that his lordship was just on the point of going abroad, and, which was still more unfortunate to me, Mr. Brayer had gone into the country; so that my generous patron had it not in his power to introduce me personally, as he intended: however, he wrote a very strong letter to the manager in my favour, and put him in mind of the promise he had made in behalf of my play.

‘ As soon as I was certified of Brayer’s return, I went to his house with this letter, but was told he was gone out. I called again next day early in the morning, received the same answer, and was desired to leave my name and business; I did so, and returned the day after, when the servant still affirmed that his master was gone abroad; though I perceived him as I retired, observing me through a window. Incensed at this discovery, I went to a coffee-house hard by, and inclosing his lordship’s letter in one for myself, demanded a categorical answer. I sent it to his house by a porter, who returned in a few minutes, and told me Mr. Brayer would be glad to see me at that instant. I obeyed the summons, and was received with such profusion of compliments and apologies, that my resentment immediately subsided, and I was even in pain for the concern which this honest man shewed at the mistake of his servant, who, it seems, had been ordered to deny him to every body but me. He expressed the utmost veneration for his good and noble friend Lord Rattle, whom he should always be proud to serve; promised to peruse the play with all dispatch, and give me a meeting upon it; and as a testimony of his esteem, made me a present of a general order for the season, by which I should be admitted to any part of the theatre. This was a very agreeable compliment to me, whose greatest pleasure consisted in seeing dramatic performances, and you need not doubt that I often availed myself of my privilege. As I had an opportunity of being behind the scenes when I pleased, I frequently conversed with Mr. Brayer about my play, and asked when he intended to

‘ put

put it into rehearsal ; but he had always so much business upon his hands, that it remained with him unopened a considerable while ; and I became very uneasy about the season, that wasted apace, when I saw in the papers, another new play advertised, which had been written, offered, accepted, and rehearsed, in the compass of three months. You may easily guess how much I was confounded at this event ! I own to you, that in the first transport of my anger, I suspected Mr. Brayer of having acted towards me in the most pitiful perfidious manner ; and was actually glad at his disappointment in the success of his favourite piece, which, by the strength of art, lingered till the third night, and then died in a deplorable manner. But now that passion has no share in my reflection. I am willing to ascribe his behaviour to his want of memory or want of judgment ; which, you know, are natural defects, that are more worthy of compassion than reproach.

About this time I happened to be in company with a gentlewoman, who having heard of my tragedy, told me she was acquainted with the wife of a gentleman who was very well known to a lady who had great interest with a person who was intimate with Earl Sheerwit, and that, if I pleased, she would use her influence in my behalf. As this nobleman had the character of a *Mecænas* in the nation, and could stamp a value upon any work by his sole countenance and approbation, I accepted her offer with eagerness, in full confidence of seeing my reputation established, and my wishes fulfilled in a very short time, provided that I should have the good fortune to please his lordship's taste. I withdrew the manuscript from the hands of Mr. Brayer, and committed it to the care of this gentlewoman, who laboured so effectually in my interest, that in less than a month it was conveyed to the earl, and in a few weeks after I had the satisfaction to hear that he read and approved it very much. Transported with this piece of intelligence, I flattered myself with the hopes of his interesting himself in it's favour ; but hearing no more of the matter in three whole months, I be-

gan (God forgive me) to suspect the veracity of the person who brought me the good tidings : for I thought it impossible, that a man of his rank and character, who knew the difficulty of writing a good tragedy, and understood the dignity of the work, should read and applaud an essay of this kind, without feeling an inclination to befriend the author, whom his countenance alone could raise above dependance. But it was not long before I found my friend very much wronged by my opinion.

You must know that the civilities I had received from Lord Rattle, and the desire he manifested to promote the success of my play, encouraged me to write an account of my bad fortune to his lordship, who condescended so far as to desire, by letter, a young squire of a great estate, with whom he was intimate, to espouse my cause ; and, in particular, make me acquainted with one Mr. Marmozet, a celebrated player, who had lately appeared on the stage with astonishing eclat, and bore such sway in the house where he acted, that the managers durst not refuse any thing he recommended. The young gentleman whom Lord Rattle had employed for this purpose, being diffident of his own interest with Mr. Marmozet, had recourse to a nobleman of his acquaintance ; who, at his solicitation, was so good as to introduce me to him ; and the conversation turning upon my performance, I was not a little surprized, as well as pleased to hear, that Earl Sheerwit had spoken very much in it's praise, and even sent Mr. Marmozet the copy, with a message expressing a desire that he would act in it next season. Nor was the favourite actor backward in commending the piece, which he mentioned with some expressions of regard that I do not chuse to repeat ; assuring me that he would appear in it, provided he should be engaged to play at all during the ensuing season. In the meantime, he desired I would give him leave to peruse it in the country, whither he intended to remove next day, that he might have leisure to consider and point out such alterations as might, perhaps, be necessary for it's representation ; and took my direction,

direction, that he might communicate by letter the observations he should make. Trusting to these assurances, and the interest which had been made in my behalf, I hugged myself in the expectation of seeing it not only acted, but acted to the greatest advantage, and this I thought could not fail of recompensing me in an ample manner, for the anxiety and affliction I had undergone: but six weeks being elapsed, I did not know how to reconcile Mr. Marmozet's silence, with his promise of writing to me in ten days after he set out for the country; however, I was at last favoured with a letter, importing that he had made some remarks on my tragedy, which he would freely impart at meeting, and advising me to put it, without loss of time, into the hands of that manager who had the best company; as he himself was quite uncertain, whether or not he should be engaged that winter. I was a good deal alarmed at this last part of his letter, and advised about it with a friend, who told me, it was a plain indication of Mr. Marmozet's desire to get rid of his promise: that his pretended uncertainty about his acting next winter, was no other than a scandalous evasion; for, to his certain knowledge, he was already engaged, or at least in terms with Mr. Vandal; and that his design was to disappoint me, in favour of a new comedy, which he had purchased of the author, and intended to bring upon the stage for his own advantage. In short, my dear Sir, this person, who, I must own, is of a sanguine complexion, handled the moral character of Mr. Marmozet with such severity, that I began to suspect him of some particular prejudice, and put myself upon my guard against his insinuations. I ought to crave pardon for this tedious narration of trivial circumstances, which, however interesting they may be to me, must certainly be very dry and insipid to the ear of one unconcerned in the affair. But I understand the meaning of your looks, and will proceed. Well, Sir, Mr. Marmozet, upon his return to town, treated me with uncommon complaisance, and invited me to his lodgings,

where he proposed to communicate his remarks, which I confess were more unfavourable than I expected; but I answered his objections, and, as I thought, brought him over to my opinion; for, on the whole, he signified the highest approbation of the performance. In the course of our dispute, I was not a little surprised to find this poor gentleman's memory so treacherous as to let him forget what he had said to me before he went out of town, in regard to Earl Sheerwit's opinion of my play, which he now professed himself ignorant of; and I was extremely mortified at hearing from his own mouth, that his interest with Mr. Vandal was so very low, as to be insufficient of itself to bring a new piece upon the stage. I then begged his advice, and he counselled me to apply to Earl Sheerwit for a message in my favour to the manager, who would not presume to refuse any thing recommended by so great a man; and he was so kind as to promise to second this message with all his power. I had immediate recourse to the worthy gentlewoman my friend already mentioned, who opened the channels of her conveyance with such expedition, that in a few days I had a promise of the message, provided I could assure myself of Mr. Vandal's being unengaged to any other author; for his lordship did not chuse to condescend so far, until he should understand that there was a probability, at least, of succeeding; at the same time that blessed me with this piece of news, I was startled at another, by the same canal of communication; which was, that Mr. Marmozet, before he advised me to this application, had informed the earl, that he had read my play, and found it altogether unfit for the stage. Though I could not doubt the certainty of this intelligence, I believe there was some misapprehension in the case; and, without taking any notice of it, told Mr. Marmozet the answer I had been favoured with; and he promised to ask Mr. Vandal the question proposed. I waited upon him in a day or two, when he gave me to understand, that Mr. Vandal having professed himself free of all engagements, he

' had put my play into his hands,
 ' and represented it as a piece strongly
 ' recommended by Earl Sheerwit, who
 ' (he assured him) would honour him
 ' with a message in it's favour; and he
 ' desired me to call for an answer at
 ' Mr. Vandal's house, in three days.
 ' I followed his directions, and found
 ' the manager; who, being made ac-
 ' quainted with my business, owned
 ' that Mr. Marmozet had given him a
 ' manuscript play, but denied that he
 ' had mentioned Earl Sheerwit's name.
 ' When I informed him of the circum-
 ' stances of the affair, he said he had no
 ' engagement with any author; that he
 ' would read my tragedy forthwith;
 ' and did not believe he should ven-
 ' ture to reject it in contradiction to
 ' his lordship's opinion, for which he
 ' had the utmost veneration, but put
 ' it into rehearsal without loss of
 ' time. I was so much intoxicated
 ' with this encouragement, that I
 ' overlooked the mysterious conduct
 ' of Mr. Marmozet, and attended the
 ' manager at the time appointed, when,
 ' to my infinite confusion, he pro-
 ' nounced my play improper for the
 ' stage, and rejected it accordingly.
 ' As soon as I could recollect myself
 ' from the disorder into which this un-
 ' expected refusal had thrown me, I
 ' expressed a desire of hearing his ob-
 ' jections, which were so groundless,
 ' indistinct, and unintelligible, that I
 ' persuaded myself he had not at all
 ' perused the piece, but had been
 ' prompted by somebody, whose lessons
 ' he had not rightly retained. How-
 ' ever, I have been since informed,
 ' that the poor man's head, which was
 ' not naturally very clear, had been
 ' disordered with superstition, and that
 ' he laboured under the tyranny of a
 ' wife, and the terrors of hell fire at
 ' the same time. Precipitated in this
 ' manner, from the highest pinnacle
 ' of hope, to the abyss of despon-
 ' dence, I was ready to sink under the
 ' burden of my affliction; and in the
 ' bitterness of my anguish, could not
 ' help entertaining some doubts of
 ' Mr. Marmozet's integrity, when I
 ' recollected and compared the cir-
 ' cumstances of his conduct towards
 ' me. I was encouraged in this su-
 ' spicion, by being told, that my Lord
 ' Sheerwit had spoke of his character
 ' with great contempt; and, in par-

' ticular, resented his insolence in op-
 ' posing his own taste to that of his
 ' lordship concerning my tragedy.
 ' While I hesitated between different
 ' opinions of the matter, that friend,
 ' who (as I told you before) was a
 ' little hot-headed, favoured me with
 ' a visit; and having heard a circum-
 ' stantial account of the whole affair,
 ' could not contain his indignation,
 ' but affirmed without ceremony, that
 ' Marmozet was the sole occasion of
 ' my disappointment; that he had act-
 ' ed from first to last with the most
 ' perfidious dissimulation, cajoling me
 ' with insinuating civilities, while he
 ' under-hand employed all his art and
 ' influence to prejudice the ignorant
 ' manager against my performance;
 ' that nothing could equal his hypo-
 ' crisy but his avarice, which en-
 ' grossed the faculties of his soul so
 ' much, that he scrupled not to be
 ' guilty of the meanest practices to
 ' gratify that sordid appetite; that in
 ' consequence of this disposition, he
 ' had prostituted his honour in betray-
 ' ing my inexperience, and in under-
 ' mining the interest of another author
 ' of established reputation, who had
 ' also offered a tragedy to the stage,
 ' which he thought would interfere
 ' with the success of the comedy he had
 ' bought, and determined to bring on
 ' at all events.

' I was shocked at the description of
 ' such a monster, which I could not
 ' believe existed in the world, bad as
 ' it is, and argued against the asseve-
 ' rations of my friend; by demon-
 ' strating the bad policy of such be-
 ' haviour, which could not fail of en-
 ' tailing infamy upon the author; and
 ' the small temptation that a man of
 ' Mr. Marmozet's figure and success,
 ' could have to consult his interest in
 ' such a groveling manner, which
 ' must create contempt and abhorrence
 ' of him in his patrons, and effectually
 ' deprive him of the countenance
 ' and protection he now enjoys in such
 ' an eminent degree. He pretended
 ' to laugh at my simplicity, and
 ' asked if I knew for which of his
 ' virtues he was so much caressed by
 ' the people of fashion. "It is not,"
 ' said he, "for the qualities of his
 ' heart, that this little parasite is in-
 ' vited to the tables of dukes and
 ' lords, who hire extraordinary cooks
 ' " for

“for his entertainment: his avarice
“they see not, his ingratitude they
“feel not, his hypocrisy accommo-
“dates itself to their humours, and is
“of consequence pleasing; but he is
“chiefly courted for his buffoonery,
“and will be admitted into the choicest
“parties of quality for his talent of
“mimicking Punch and his wife Joan,
“when a poet of the most exquisite
“genius, is not able to attract the
“least regard.” God forbid, Mr.
“Random, that I should credit asser-
“tions that degrade the dignity of our
“superiors so much, and represent that
“poor man as the most abject of all
“beings! No, I looked upon them
“as the hyperboles of passion; and
“though that comedy of which he
“spoke did actually appear, I dare
“not doubt the innocence of Mr.
“Marmozet, who, I am told, is as
“much as ever in favour with the
“earl; a circumstance that, surely,
“could not be, unless he had vindi-
“cated his character to the satisfaction
“of his lordship. Pray forgive this
“long digression, and give me the
“hearing a little longer; for, thank
“Heaven! I am now near the goal.

“Baffled in all my attempts, I de-
“spaired of seeing my play acted; and
“bethought myself of chusing some
“employment, that might afford a
“sure, though mean subsistence; but
“my landlord, to whom I was by this
“time considerably indebted, and who
“had laid his account with having his
“money paid all in a heap, from the
“profits of my third night, could not
“brook his disappointment, therefore
“made another effort in my behalf,
“and by dint of interest, procured a
“message from a lady of fashion to
“Mr. Brayer, who had always pro-
“fessed a great veneration for her, de-
“siring that he would set up my play
“forthwith, and assuring him that she
“and all her friends would support it
“in the performance: to strengthen
“my interest, she engaged his best
“actors in my cause; and in short ex-
“erted herself so much, that it was
“again received, and my hopes began
“to revive. But Mr. Brayer, honest
“man, was so much engrossed by bu-
“siness of vast consequence, though to
“appearance he had nothing at all to
“do, that he could not find time to

“read it until the season was pretty far
“advanced; and read it he must, for
“notwithstanding his having perused
“it before, his memory did not retain
“one circumstance of the matter.

“At length he favoured it with his
“attention, and having proposed cer-
“tain alterations, sent his duty to the
“lady who patronized it, and pro-
“mised, on his honour, to bring it on
“next winter, provided these altera-
“tions should be made, and the copy
“delivered to him before the end of
“April. With an aching heart, I
“submitted to these conditions, and
“performed them accordingly: but
“fortune owed me another unforeseen
“mortification; Mr. Marmozet, du-
“ring the summer, became joint-pa-
“tentee with Mr. Brayer, so that
“when I claimed performance of ar-
“ticles, I was told, he could do no-
“thing without the consent of his
“partner, who was pre-engaged to
“another author.

“My condition was rendered despe-
“rate by the death of my good friend
“and landlord, whose executors ob-
“tained a judgment against my effects,
“which they seized, turned me out
“into the streets naked, friendless,
“and forlorn; there I was arrested at
“the suit of my taylor, and thrown
“into this prison, where I have made
“shift to live these five weeks on the
“bounty of my fellow-prisoners, who,
“I hope, are not the worse for the in-
“struction and good offices by which
“I manifest my gratitude; but in spite
“of all their charitable endeavours,
“my life was scarce tolerable, until
“your uncommon benovolence ena-
“bled me to enjoy it with comfort.”

C H A P. XXVIII.

I AM SEIZED WITH A DEEP ME-
LANCHOLY, AND BECOME A SLO-
VEN—AM RELIEVED BY MY
UNCLE—HE PREVAILS UPON ME
TO ENGAGE WITH HIS OWNERS,
AS SURGEON OF THE SHIP
WHICH HE COMMANDS—HE
MAKES ME A CONSIDERABLE
PRESENT—ENTERTAINS STRAP
AS HIS STEWARD—I TAKE
LEAVE OF MY FRIENDS, AND GO

H h 2

ON

ON BOARD—THE SHIP ARRIVES
AT THE DOWNS.

I shall not make any reflections on this story, in the course of which the reader must perceive how egregiously the simplicity and milky disposition of this worthy man, had been duped and abused by a set of scoundrels, who were so habituated to falsehood and equivocation, that I verily believe they would have found the utmost difficulty in uttering one syllable of truth, though their lives had depended upon their sincerity. Notwithstanding all I had suffered from the knavery and selfishness of mankind, I was amazed and incensed at the base indifference which suffered such uncommon merit as he possessed; to languish in obscurity, and struggle with all the miseries of a loathsome jail; and should have blessed the occasion that secluded me from such a perfidious world, had not the remembrance of the amiable Narcissa preserved my attachment to that society of which she constituted a part. The picture of that lovely creature was the constant companion of my solitude: how often did I contemplate the resemblance of those enchanting features that first captivated my heart! How often did I weep over those endearing scenes which her image recalled! and how often did I curse my perfidious fate for having robbed me of the fair original! In vain did my imagination flatter me with schemes of future happiness; surly reason always interposed, and in a moment overthrew the unsubstantial fabrick, by chastising the extravagance of my hope, and representing my unhappy situation in the right point of view: in vain did I fly for refuge to the amusements of the place, and engage in the parties of Jackson, at cards, billiards, ninepins, and fives; a train of melancholy thoughts took possession of my soul, which even the conversation of Melopoyne could not divert. I ordered Strap to enquire every day at Banter's lodgings, in expectation of hearing again from my charmer; and my disappointment considerably augmented my chagrin. My affectionate valet was infected with my sorrow, and often sat with me whole hours without speaking, uttering sigh for sigh, and shedding tear for

tear. This fellowship increased our distemper; he became incapable of business, and was discarded by his master; while I, seeing my money melt away, without any certainty of deliverance, and in short, all my hopes frustrated, grew negligent of life, lost all appetite, and degenerated into such a sloven, that during the space of two months, I was neither washed, shifted, nor shaved; so that my face, rendered meagre with abstinence, was obscured with dirt, and overshadowed with hair, and my whole appearance squalid and even frightful; when, one day, Strap brought me notice, that there was a man below who wanted to speak with me. Roused at this intelligence, and in full hopes of receiving a letter from the dear object of my love, I ran down stairs with the utmost precipitation, and found, to my infinite surprize, my generous uncle Mr. Bowling! Transported at the sight, I sprung forward to embrace him. Upon which he started aside with great agility, drew his hanger, and put himself upon his guard; crying, 'Avast, brother, 'avast! sheer off.—Yo ho! you turn 'key, why don't you keep a better 'look out? here's one of your crazy 'prisoners broke from his lashings, I 'do suppose.' I could not help laughing heartily at his mistake; but this I soon rectified by my voice, which he instantly recollected, and shook me by the hand with great affection, testifying his concern at seeing me in such a miserable condition.

I conducted him to my apartment, where, in presence of Strap, whom I introduced to him as one of my best friends, he gave me to understand, that he was just arrived from the coast of Guinea, after having made a pretty successful voyage, in which he had acted as mate, until the ship was attacked by a French privateer; that the captain being killed during the engagement, he had taken the command, and was so fortunate as to sink the enemy; after which exploit he fell in with a merchant ship from Martinico, laden with sugar, indigo, and some silver; and, by virtue of his letter of marque, attacked, took, and brought her safe into Kipsale in Ireland, where she was condemned as a lawful prize; by which means he had not only got a pretty large sum of money, but also

acquired

acquired the favour of his owners, who had already conferred upon him the command of a large ship, mounted with twenty nine pounders, ready to sail upon a very advantageous voyage, which he was not at liberty to discover. And he assured me, that it was with the greatest difficulty he had found me, in consequence of a direction left for him at his lodgings at Wapping.

I was rejoiced beyond measure, at this account of his good fortune; and, at his desire, recounted all the adventures that had happened to me since we parted. When he understood the particulars of Strap's attachment to me, he squeezed his hand very cordially, and promised to make a man of him; then giving me ten guineas for my present occasion, took a direction for the taylor who arrested me, and went away, in order to discharge the debt, telling me at parting, that he would soon fetch up all my leeway with a wet sail.

I was utterly confounded at this sudden transition, which affected me more than any reverse I had formerly felt; and a crowd of incoherent ideas rushed so impetuously upon my imagination, that my reason could neither separate nor connect them; when Strap, whose joy had manifested itself in a thousand fooleries, came into my room with his shaving utensils, and without any previous intimation, began to lather my beard, whistling with great emotion all the while. I started from my reverie, and being too well acquainted with Strap, to trust myself in his hands while he was under such agitation, desired to be excused, sent for another barber, and suffered myself to be trimmed. Having performed the ceremony of ablution, I shifted, and dressing in my gayest apparel, waited for the return of my uncle, who was agreeably surprized at my sudden transformation.

This beneficent kinsman had satisfied my creditor, and obtained an order for my discharge, so that I was no longer a prisoner; but as I had some reluctance to part with my friends and fellows in distress, I prevailed upon Mr. Bowling to favour us with his company, and invited Mr. Melopoyne and Jackson to spend the evening at my apartment, where I regaled them with a supper, good wine, and the

news of my release, on which they heartily congratulated me, notwithstanding the loss of my company, which they were pleased to say they should severely feel. As for Jackson, his misfortune made so little impression on himself, and he was altogether so loose, indifferent, and indiscreet, that I could scarce pity his situation: but I had conceived a veneration and friendship for the poet, who was, in all respects, an object much more worthy of compassion and regard. When our guests withdrew, and my uncle had retired, with an intention to visit me next morning, I made up a bundle of some linen, and other necessaries, and bidding Strap carry them to Mr. Melopoyne's lodging, went thither myself, and pressed it upon his acceptance, with five guineas, which with much difficulty he received, assuring me at the same time, that he should never have it in his power to make satisfaction. I then asked if I could serve him any other way; to which he answered, 'You have already done too much;' and unable to contain the emotions of his soul any longer, burst into tears, and wept aloud. Moved at the spectacle, I left him to his repose, and when my uncle returned in the morning, represented his character in such a favourable light, that the honest seaman was affected with his distress, and determined to follow my example, in presenting him with five pieces more: upon which, that I might save him some confusion, I advised Mr. Bowling to inclose it in a letter to be delivered by Strap after we should be gone.

This was accordingly done. I took a formal leave of all my acquaintance in the gaol, and just as I was about to step into a hackney-coach at the gate, Jackson calling me, I returned, and he asked me in a whisper, if I could lend him a shilling. His demand being so moderate, and in all likelihood the last he would make upon me, I slipped a guinea into his hand, which he no sooner perceived, than he cried, 'O Jesus! a guinea!' then laying hold of a button of my coat, broke out into an immoderate fit of laughter; and when his convulsion was ended, told me, I was an honest fellow, and let me go. The coachman was ordered to drive to Mr. Bowling's lodgings, where

where when we arrived, he entered into a serious discourse with me on the subject of my situation, and proposed that I should sail with him in quality of his surgeon; in which case, he would put me in a method of getting a fortune in a few years, by my own industry; and assured me, that I might expect to inherit all that he should die possessed of, provided I should survive him. Though I was penetrated with a sense of his generosity, I was startled at a proposal that offered violence to my love, and signified my sentiments on that head, which he did not seem to relish; but observed that love was the fruit of idleness; that when once I should be employed in business, and my mind engaged in making money, I should be no more troubled with these silly notions, which none but your fair-weather Jacks, who have nothing but their pleasure to mind, ought to entertain. I was piqued at this insinuation, which I looked upon as a reproach, and without giving myself time to deliberate, accepted his offer. He was overjoyed at my compliance, carried me immediately to his chief owner, with whom a bargain was struck; so that then I could not retract with honour, had I been ever so much averse to the agreement. That I might not have time to cool, he bade me draw out a list of medicines for a complement of five hundred men, adapted to the distempers of hot climates, and sufficient for a voyage of eighteen months; and carry it to a certain wholesale apothecary, who would also provide me in two well-qualified mates. While I was thus employed, Strap came in, and looked very blank when he understood my resolution: however, after a pause of some minutes, he insisted upon going along with me; and at my desire was made ship's steward by Captain Bowling, who promised to be at the expence of fitting him out, and to lend him two hundred pounds to purchase an adventure.

When I had delivered my list of medicines, chosen a couple of my own countrymen for mates, and bespoke a set of chirurgical instruments, my uncle told me, that by his last voyage he had cleared almost three thousand pounds, one third of which he would immediately make over and put into

my hands; that he would procure for me credit to the value of as much more, in such goods as would turn to best account in the country to which we were bound; and that although he looked upon my interest as his own, he would keep the remaining part of his fortune in his own disposal, with a view of preserving his independence, and the power of punishing me, in case I should not make a good use of what he had already bestowed.

Without troubling the reader with an account of the effect which this surprising generosity had upon my mind, I shall only say, that his promises were instantly performed, and an invoice of merchandise proper for the voyage presented to me, that I might purchase the goods, and ship them with all expedition. In the midst of this hurry, the remembrance of my charming Narcissa often interposed, and made me the most miserable of all mortals. I was distracted with the thought of being torn from her, perhaps for ever; and though the hope of seeing her again might have supported me under the torments of separation, I could not reflect upon the anguish she must feel at parting with me, and the incessant sorrows to which her tender bosom would be exposed during my absence, without being pierced with the deepest affliction! As my imagination was daily and nightly upon the rack to invent some method of mitigating this cruel stroke, or at least of acquitting my love and honour in the opinion of this gentle creature, I at length stumbled upon an expedient, with which the reader will be made acquainted in due time; and in consequence of my determination, became less uneasy and disturbed.

My business being finished, and the ship ready to sail, I resolved to make my last appearance among my acquaintance at the other end of the town, where I had not been seen since my imprisonment; and as I had, by the advice of my uncle, taken off some very rich clothes for sale, I put on the gayest suit in my possession, and went in a chair to the coffee-house I used to frequent, where I found my friend Banter so confounded at the magnificence of my dress, that when I made up to him, he gazed at me with a look of astonishment, without being able for

for some minutes to open his lips; then pulling me aside by the sleeve, and fixing his eyes on mine, accosted me in this manner: 'Random, where the devil have you been? eh! What is the meaning of all this finery? Oh! I understand you. You are just arrived from the country! what, the roads are good, eh! Well, Random, you are a bold fellow, and a lucky fellow! but take care, the pitcher goes often to the well, but is broke at last.' So saying, he pointed to his collar; by which gesture, and the broken hints he had ejaculated, I found he suspected me of having robbed on the highway; and I laughed very heartily at his supposition. Without explaining myself any farther, I told him he was mistaken in his conjecture; that I had been for some time past with the relation of whom he had frequently heard me speak; and that as I should set out next day upon my travels, I had come to take my leave of my friends, and to receive of him the money he had borrowed from me, which, now that I was going abroad, I should certainly have occasion for. He was a little disconcerted at this demand; but recollecting himself in a moment, swore in an affected passion, that I had used him extremely ill, and he would never forgive me, for having, by this short warning, put it out of his power to free himself of an obligation he could no longer bear. I could not help smiling at this pretended delicacy, which I commended highly, telling him, he needed not be uneasy on that score, for I would give him a direction to a merchant in the city, with whom I would leave a discharge for the sum, to be delivered upon payment. He professed much joy at this expedient, and with great eagerness asked the person's name and place of abode, which he forthwith wrote in his pocket-book, assuring me, that he should not be long in my debt. This affair, which I knew he would never after think of, being settled to his satisfaction, I sent cards to all my friends, desiring the favour of their company at a tavern in the evening, when they honoured my invitation, and I had the pleasure of treating them in a very elegant manner, at which they expressed equal admiration as applause. Having en-

joyed ourselves till midnight, I took my leave of them, and was well-nigh stifled with caresses; next day I set out with Strap in a post-chaise for Gravesend, where we went on board, and the wind serving, weighed anchor in less than twelve hours. Without meeting with any accident, we reached the Downs, where we were obliged to come to an anchor, and wait for an easterly wind to carry us out of the channel.

C H A P. XXIX.

I SET OUT FOR SUSSEX—CONSULT MR. SAGELY—ATTEMPT AN INTERVIEW WITH NARCISSE—RETURN TO THE SHIP—WE GET CLEAR OF THE CHANNEL—I LEARN OUR DESTINATION—WE ARE CHASED BY A LARGE SHIP—THE COMPANY ARE DISMAYED, AND ENCOURAGED BY THE CAPTAIN'S SPEECH—OUR PURSUER HAPPENS TO BE AN ENGLISH MAN OF WAR—WE ARRIVE AT THE COAST OF GUINEA, PURCHASE FOUR HUNDRED NEGROES, SAIL FOR PARAGUAY, GET SAFE INTO THE RIVER OF PLATE, AND SELL OUR CARGO TO GREAT ADVANTAGE.

IT was now I put in execution the scheme I had projected at London; and asking leave of the captain for Strap and me to stay on shore till the wind should become favourable, my request was granted, because he had orders to remain in the Downs until he should receive some dispatches from London, which he did not expect in less than a week. Having imparted my resolution to my trusty valet, who (though he endeavoured to dissuade me from such a rash undertaking) would not quit me in the enterprize, I hired horses, and set out immediately for that part of Sussex where my charmer was confined, which was not above thirty miles distant from Deal, where we mounted. As I was perfectly well acquainted with the extent of the squire's estate and influence, I halted within five miles of his house, where we remained till the twilight; at which time we set forward, and by the

the favour of a dark night, reached a copse about half a mile from the village where Mrs. Sagely lived. Here we left our horses tied to a tree, and went directly to the house of my old benefactress, Strap trembling all the way, and venting ejaculatory petitions to Heaven for our safety. Her habitation being quite solitary, we arrived at the door without being observed, when I ordered my companion to enter by himself, and in case there should be company with her, deliver a letter which I had writ for that purpose, and say that a friend of her's in London, understanding that he intended to travel this road, had committed it to his care. He rapped at the door, to which the good old matron coming, told him, that being a lone woman, he must excuse her, if she did not open it, until he had declared his name and business. He answered, that his name was unknown to her, and that his business was to deliver a letter, which (to free her from all manner of apprehension) he would convey to her through the space between the door and threshold. This he instantly performed; and she no sooner read the contents, which specified my being present, than she cried, 'If the person who wrote this letter be at hand, let him speak, that I may be assured by his voice whether or not I may safely admit him.' I forthwith applied my mouth to the key-hole, and pronounced, 'Dear mother, you need not be afraid, it is I, so much indebted to your goodness, who now crave admittance.' She knew my voice, and opening the door immediately, received me with a truly maternal affection, manifesting by the tears she let fall, her concern lest I should be discovered, for she had been informed of every thing that had happened between Narcissa and me, from the dear captive's own mouth. When I explained the motive of my journey, which was no other than a desire of seeing the object of my love before I should quit the kingdom, that I might in person convince her of the necessity I was under to leave her, reconcile her to that event, by describing the advantage that in all probability would attend it, repeat my vows of eternal constancy, and enjoy the melancholy pleasure of a tender em-

brace at parting. I say, when I had thus signified my intention, Mrs. Sagely told me, that Narcissa, upon her return from the Bath, had been so strictly watched, that nobody but one or two of the servants devoted to her brother, was admitted to her presence; that afterwards she had been a little enlarged, and was permitted to see company; during which indulgence, she had been several times at her cottage; but of late she had been betrayed by one of the servants, who discovered to the squire, that he had once carried a letter from her to the post-house directed to me; upon which information, she was now more confined than ever, and that I could have no chance of seeing her, unless I would run the risque of getting into the garden, where she and her maid were every day allowed to take the air, and lie hid until I should have an opportunity of speaking to them; an adventure attended with such danger, that no man in his right wits would attempt it. This enterprize, hazardous as it was, I resolved to perform, in spite of all the arguments of Mrs. Sagely, who reasoned, chid, and intreated, by turns; and the tears and prayers of Strap, who conjured me on his knees, to have more regard to myself as well as to him, than to tempt my own destruction in such a precipitate manner. I was deaf to every thing, but the suggestions of my love; and ordering him to return immediately with the horses to the inn from whence we set out, and wait for my coming in that place, he at first peremptorily refused to leave me, until I persuaded him, that if our horses should remain where they were till day-light, they would certainly be discovered, and the whole county alarmed. On this consideration, he took his leave in a sorrowful plight, kissed my hand, and weeping, cried, 'God knows if ever I shall see you again.' My kind landlady finding me obstinate, gave me her best advice how to behave in the execution of my project; and after having persuaded me to take a little refreshment, accommodated me with a bed, and left me to my repose. Early in the morning, I arose, and armed with a couple of loaded pistols and a hanger, went to the back of the squire's garden, climbed over the wall, and, according to Mrs. Sagely's direction,

rection, concealed myself in a thicket, hard by an alcove that terminated a walk at a good distance from the house, which I was told my mistress chiefly frequented. Here I absconded from five o'clock in the morning to six in the evening, without seeing a human creature; at last I perceived two women approaching, whom, by my throbbing heart, I soon recognized to be the adorable Narcissa and Miss Williams. I felt the strongest agitation of soul at the sight; and guessing that they would repose themselves in the alcove, I stepped into it unperceived, and laid upon the stone table a picture of myself in miniature, for which I had sat in London, purposing to leave it with Narcissa before I should go abroad. I exposed it in this manner, as an introduction to my own appearance, which, without some previous intimation, I was afraid might have an unlucky effect upon the delicate nerves of my fair enslaver; and then withdrew into the thicket, where I could hear their discourse, and suit myself to the circumstances of the occasion. As they advanced, I observed an air of melancholy in the countenance of Narcissa, blended with such unspeakable sweetness, that I could scarce refrain from flying into her arms, and kissing away the pearly drop that stood collected in each bewitching eye. According to my expectation, she entered the alcove, and perceiving something on the table, took it up. No sooner did she cast her eye upon the features, than startled at the resemblance, she cried, 'Good God!' and the roses instantly vanished from her cheeks. Her confidante, alarmed at this exclamation, looked at the picture; and, struck with the likeness, exclaimed, 'O Jesus! the very features of Mr. Random!' Narcissa having recollected herself a little, said, 'Whatever angel brought it hither as a comfort to me in my affliction, I am thankful for the benefit, and will preserve it as the dearest object of my care.' So saying, she kissed it with surprizing ardour, shed a flood of tears, and then deposited the lifeless image in her lovely bosom. Transported at these symptoms of her unaltered affection, I was about to throw myself at her feet, when Miss Williams, whose reflection was less engaged than that of her mistress, observed

that the picture could not transport itself hither, and that she could not help thinking I was not far off. The gentle Narcissa starting at this conjecture, answered, 'Heaven forbid! for although nothing in the universe could yield me satisfaction equal to that of his presence for one poor moment, in a proper place, I would rather forfeit his company, almost for ever, than see him here, where his life would be exposed to so much danger.' I could no longer restrain the impulse of my passion, but breaking from my concealment, stood before her, when she uttered a fearful shriek, and fainted in the arms of her companion. I flew towards the treasure of my soul, clasped her in my embrace, and with the warmth of my kisses brought her again to life. O! that I were endowed with the expression of a Raphael, the graces of a Guido, the magic touches of a Titian, that I might represent the fond concern, the chastened rapture, and ingenuous blush, that mingled on her beauteous face, when she opened her eyes upon me, and pronounced, 'O heavens! is it you?'

I am afraid I have already encroached upon the reader's patience, with the particulars of this amour, on which (I own) I cannot help being impertinently circumstantial. I shall therefore omit the less material passages of this interview, during which I convinced her reason, though I could not appease the sad presages of her love, with regard to the long voyage, and dangers I must undergo. When we had spent an hour (which was all she could spare from the barbarity of her brother's vigilance) in lamenting over our hard fate, and in repeating our reciprocal vows, Miss Williams reminded us of the necessity there was for our immediate parting; and sure lovers never parted with such sorrow and reluctance as we. But because my words are incapable of doing justice to this affecting circumstance, I am obliged to draw a veil over it, and observe, that I returned in the dark to the house of Mrs. Sagely, who was overjoyed to hear of my success, and opposed the tumults of my grief with such strength of reason, that my mind regained in some measure its tranquillity; and that very night, after having forced upon the good gentlewoman a

purse of twenty guineas, as a token of my gratitude and esteem, I took my leave of her, and set out on foot for the inn, where my arrival freed honest Strap from the horrors of unutterable dread.

We took horse immediately, and alighted early next morning at Deal, where I found my uncle in great concern on account of my absence, because he had received his dispatches, and must have weighed with the first fair wind, whether I had been on board or not. Next day, a brisk easterly gale springing up, we set sail, and in eight and forty hours got clear of the channel.

When we were about 200 leagues to westward of the Land's End, the captain taking me apart into the cabin, told me, that now he was permitted by his instructions, he would disclose the intent and destination of our voyage: 'The ship,' said he, 'which has been fitted out at a great expence, is bound for the coast of Guinea, where we shall exchange part of our cargo for slaves and gold dust; from thence we will transport our negroes to Buenos Ayres in New Spain, where (by virtue of passports obtained from our own court, and that of Madrid) we will dispose of them and the goods that remain on board for silver, by means of our supercargo, who is perfectly well acquainted with the coast, the lingo, and inhabitants.' Being thus let into the secret of our expedition, I borrowed of the supercargo, a Spanish grammar, dictionary, and some other books of the same language, which I studied with such application, that before we arrived in New Spain, I could maintain a conversation with him in that tongue. Being arrived in the warm latitudes, I ordered (with the captain's consent) the whole ship's company to be blooded and purged, myself undergoing the same evacuation, in order to prevent those dangerous fevers to which northern constitutions are subject in hot climates; and I have reason to believe that this precaution was not unserviceable, for we lost but one sailor during our whole passage to the coast.

One day, when we had been about five weeks at sea, we descried to windward a large ship bearing down upon us with all the sail she could carry.

Upon which my uncle ordered the studding-sails to be hoisted, and the ship to be cleared for engaging; but finding that (to use the seaman's phrase) we were very much wronged by the ship which had us in chase, and which by this time had hoisted French colours, he commanded the studding-sails to be taken in, the courses to be clewed up, the main-top sail to be backed, the tompions to be taken out of the guns, and every man to repair to his quarters. While every body was busied in the performance of these orders, Strap came upon the quarter-deck, trembling and looking aghast, and with a voice half suppressed by fear, asked if I thought we were a match for the vessel in pursuit of us. Observing his consternation, I said, 'What! are you afraid, Strap?'—'Afraid!' he replied, 'n-n-no; what should I be afraid of? I thank God I have a clear conscience; but I believe it will be a very bloody battle, and I wish you may not have occasion for another hand to assist you in the cock-pit.' I immediately perceived his drift; and making the captain acquainted with his situation, desired he might be stationed below with me and my mates. My uncle, incensed at his pusillanimity, bade me send him down instantly, that his fear might not infect the ship's company; whereupon I told the poor steward, that I had begged him for my assistant, and desired him to go down and help my mates to get ready the instruments and dressings. Notwithstanding the satisfaction he must have felt at these tidings, he affected a shyness of quitting the upper deck; and said, he hoped I did not imagine he was afraid to do his duty above board; for he believed himself as well prepared for death as any man in the ship, no disparagement to me or the captain. I was disgusted at this affectation, and in order to punish his hypocrisy, assured him he might take his choice, either of going down to the cock-pit with me, or of staying upon deck during the engagement. Alarmed at this indifference, he replied, 'Well, to oblige you, I'll go down; but remember it is more for your sake than my own.' So saying, he disappeared in a twinkling, without waiting for an answer. By this time we could observe two tier

of guns in the ship which pursued us, and which was now but two short miles astern. This discovery had an evident effect upon the sailors, who did not scruple to say, that we should be tore to pieces, and blown out of the water, and that if in case any of them should lose their precious limbs, they must go a begging for life, for there was no provision made by the merchants for those poor souls who are maimed in their service. The captain understanding this backwardness, ordered the crew abast, and spoke to them thus: 'My lads, I am told you hang an a-se. I have gone to sea thirty years, man and boy, and never saw English sailors afraid before. Mayhap you think I want to expose you for the lucre of gain. Whosoever thinks so, thinks a damned lye, for my whole cargo is insured; so that in case I should be taken, my loss would not be great. The enemy is stronger than we to be sure; what then! have we not a chance for carrying away one of her masts, and so get clear of her? If we find her too hard for us, 'tis but striking at last. If any man is hurt in the engagement, I promise, on the word of an honest seaman, to make him a recompence according to his loss. So now, you that are lazy, lubberly, cowardly dogs, get away, and sculk in the hold, and bread-room; and you that are jolly boys, stand by me, and let us give one broadside for the honour of Old England.' This eloquent harangue was so well adapted to the disposition of his hearers, that one and all of them, pulling off their hats, waved them over their heads, and saluted him with three cheers; upon which he sent his boy for two large case bottles of brandy, and having treated every man with a dram, they repaired to their quarters, and waited impatiently for the word of command. I must do my uncle the justice to say, that in the whole of his disposition, he behaved with the utmost intrepidity, conduct, and deliberation. The enemy being very near, he ordered me to my station, and was just going to give the word for hoisting the colours, and firing, when the supposed Frenchman, hauled down his white pennant, jack and ensign, hoisted English ones, and fired a gun a-head of us. This was

a joyful event to Captain Bowling, who immediately shewed his colours, and fired a gun to leeward: upon which the other ship ran along-side of us, hailed him, and giving him to know that she was an English man of war of forty guns, ordered him to hoist out his boat and come on board. This command he obeyed with the more alacrity, because, upon enquiry, he found that she was commanded by an old messmate of his, who was overjoyed to see him, detained him to dinner, and sent his barge for the supercargo and me, who were very much caressed on his account. As this commander was destined to cruize upon the French, in the latitude of Martinico, his stem and quarters were adorned with white flowers de lis, and the whole shell of the ship so much disguised for a decoy to the enemy, that it was no wonder my uncle did not know her, although he had sailed on board of her many years. We kept company with her four days, during which time the captains were never asunder, and then parted, our course lying different from her's.

In less than a fortnight after our separation we made the land of Guinea, near the mouth of the river Gambia, and trading along the coast as far to the southward of the line as Angola and Bengula, in less than six months disposed of the greatest part of our cargo, and purchased four hundred negroes, my adventure having been laid out in gold dust.

Our complement being made up, we took our departure from Cape Negroe, and arrived in the Rio de la Plata in six weeks, having met with nothing remarkable in our voyage, except an epidemic fever, not unlike the gaol distemper, which broke out among our slaves, and carried off a good many of the ship's company; among whom I lost one of my mates, and poor Strap had well nigh given up the ghost. Having produced our passport to the Spanish governor, we were received with great courtesy, sold our slaves in a very few days, and could have put off five times the number at our own price; though we were obliged to smuggle the rest of our merchandize, consisting of European bale goods, which however we made shift to dispose of at a great advantage.

CHAP. XXX.

I AM INVITED TO THE VILLA OF A SPANISH DON, WHERE WE MEET WITH AN ENGLISH GENTLEMAN, AND MAKE A VERY INTERESTING DISCOVERY—WE LEAVE BUENOS AYRES, AND ARRIVE AT JAMAICA.

OUR ship being freed from the disagreeable lading of negroes, to whom indeed I had been a miserable slave, since our leaving the coast of Guinea, I began to enjoy myself, and breathe with pleasure the pure air of Paraguay, this part of which is reckoned the Montpellier of South America, and has obtained, on account of its climate, the name of Buenos Ayres. It was in this delicious place, that I gave myself entirely up to the thoughts of my dear Narcissa, whose image still kept possession of my breast, and whose charms, enhanced by absence, appeared to my imagination, if possible, more engaging than ever! I calculated the profits of my voyage, which even exceeded my expectations; resolved to purchase a handsome sinecure upon my arrival in England, and if I should find the squire as averse to me as ever, marry his sister by stealth; and in case our family should increase, rely upon the generosity of my uncle, who was by this time worth a considerable sum.

While I amused myself with these agreeable projects, and the transporting hopes of enjoying Narcissa, we were very much caressed by the Spanish gentlemen, who frequently formed parties of pleasure for our entertainment, in which we made excursions a good way into the country. Among those who signalized themselves by their civility to us, there was one Don Antonio de Ribera, a very polite young gentleman, with whom I had contracted an intimate friendship, who invited us one day to his country-house, and as a farther inducement to our compliance, promised to procure for us the company of an English signior, who had been settled in those parts many years, and acquired the love and esteem of the whole province, by his affability, good sense, and honourable behaviour.

We accepted his invitation, and set

out for his villa, where we had not been longer than an hour, when the person arrived in whose favour I had been so much prepossessed. He was a tall man, remarkably well shaped, of a fine mien and appearance, commanding respect, and seemed to be turned of forty; the features of his face were saddened with a reserve and gravity, which in other countries would have been thought the effect of melancholy; but here appeared to have been contracted by his commerce with the Spaniards, who are remarkable for that severity of countenance. Understanding from Don Antonio that we were his countrymen, he saluted us all round very complaisantly, and fixing his eyes very attentively on me, uttered a deep sigh. I had been struck with a profound veneration for him at his first coming into the room; and no sooner observed this expression of his sorrow, directed, as it were, in a particular manner to me, than my heart took part in his grief. I sympathized involuntarily, and sighed in my turn. Having asked leave of our entertainer, he accosted us in English, professed his satisfaction at seeing so many of his countrymen in such a remote place, and asked the captain, who went by the name of Signior Thoma, from what part of Britain he had sailed, and whether he was bound. My uncle told him that we had sailed from the river Thames, and were bound for the same place, by the way of Jamaica, where we intended to take in a lading of sugar.

Having satisfied himself in these and other particulars about the state of the war, he gave us to understand that he had a longing desire to revisit his native country, in consequence of which, he had already transmitted to Europe the greatest part of his fortune in neutral bottoms, and would willingly embark the rest of it with himself, in our ship, provided the captain had no objection to such a passenger. My uncle very prudently replied, that for his part he should be glad of his company, if he could procure the consent of the governor, without which he durst not admit him on board, whatever inclination he had to oblige him. The gentleman approved of his discretion; and telling him, that there would be no difficulty in obtaining the con-

nivance





Plate IV.

Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. June 26th 1780.

niva
goo
to a
I
tion
mu
dila
unh
tain
atta
tion
life
the
with
the
of
acce
H
day
ing
hear
no
fanc
Ant
fatis
Don
or
repu
been
beca
pen
of
but
qui
con
mig
mis
I
fire
fate
pose
of
me
reso
mon
thre
with
fin
An
tuat
the
invi
we
prov
hou
sple
stra
part
din
set

nivance of the governor, who was his good friend, shifted the conversation to another subject.

I was overjoyed to hear his intention, and already interested myself so much in his favour, that had he been disappointed, I should have been very unhappy: in the course of our entertainment, he eyed me with uncommon attachment; I felt a surprizing attraction towards him! when he spoke, I listened with attention and reverence: the dignity of his deportment filled me with affection and awe; and in short, the emotions of my soul, in presence of this stranger, were strong and unaccountable.

Having spent the best part of the day with us, he took his leave, telling Captain Thoma, that he should hear from him in a short time: he was no sooner gone, than I asked a thousand questions about him, of Don Antonio, who could give me no other satisfaction, than that his name was Don Rodrigo, that he had lived fifteen or sixteen years in these parts, was reputed rich, and supposed to have been unfortunate in his younger years, because he was observed to nourish a pensive melancholy, even from the time of his first settlement among them; but that nobody had ventured to enquire into the cause of his sorrow, in consideration of his peace, which might suffer in the recapitulation of his misfortunes.

I was seized with an irresistible desire of knowing the particulars of his fate, and enjoyed not one hour of repose during the whole night, by reason of the eager conceptions that inspired me with regard to his story; which I resolved, if possible, to learn. Next morning, while we were at breakfast, three mules richly caparisoned arrived with a message from Don Rodrigo, desiring our company, and that of Don Antonio, at his house, which was situated about ten miles farther up in the country. I was pleased with this invitation, in consequence of which we mounted the mules which he had provided for us, and alighted at his house before noon. Here we were splendidly entertained by the generous stranger, who still seemed to shew a particular regard for me, and after dinner made me a present of a ring set with a beautiful amethyst, the pro-

duction of that country; saying at the same time, that he was once blessed with a son, who, had he lived, would have been nearly of my age. This observation, delivered with a profound sigh, made my heart throb with violence; a crowd of confused ideas rushed upon my imagination, which, while I endeavoured to unravel, my uncle perceived my absence of thought, and tapping me on the shoulder, said, 'Oons! are you asleep, Rory!' Before I had time to reply, Don Rodrigo, with uncommon eagerness of voice and look, pronounced, 'Pray, captain, what is the young gentleman's name?'—'His name,' said my uncle, 'is Roderick Random.'—'Gracious powers!' cried the stranger, starting up; 'and his mother's?'—'His mother,' answered the captain, amazed, 'was called Charlotte Bowling.'—'O, bounteous Heaven!' exclaimed Don Rodrigo, springing across the table, and clasping me in his arms, 'my son! my son! have I found thee again? do I hold thee in my embrace, after having lost and despaired of seeing thee so long?' So saying, he fell upon my neck and wept aloud with joy; while the power of nature operating strongly in my breast, I was lost in rapture, and while he pressed me to his heart, let fall a shower of tears into his bosom. His utterance was choaked up a good while, by the agitation of his soul: at length he broke out into—'Mysterious Providence! O my dear Charlotte; there yet remains a pledge of our love! and such a pledge! so found!—O Infinite Goodness; let me adore thy all-wise decrees!' Having thus expressed himself, he kneeled upon the floor, lifted up his eyes and hands to heaven, and remained some minutes in a silent extasy of devotion: I put myself in the same posture, adored the all-good Disposer in a prayer of mental thanksgiving; and when his ejaculation was ended, did homage to my father, and craved his parental blessing. He hugged me again with unutterable fondness, and having implored the protection of Heaven upon my head, raised me from the ground, and presented me as his son to the company, who wept in concert over this affecting scene. Among the rest, my uncle did not fail to discover the goodness

ness and joy of his heart: *albeit unused to the melting mood*, he blubbered with great tenderness, and wringing my father's hand, cried, 'Brother Random, I'm rejoiced to see you. God be praised for this happy meeting.' Don Rodrigo, understanding that he was his brother-in-law, embraced him affectionately, saying, 'Are you my Charlotte's brother? Alas, unhappy Charlotte! But why should I repine? we shall meet again, never more to part! Brother, you are truly welcome.—Dear son, I am transported with unspeakable joy! This day is a jubilee; my friends and servants shall share my satisfaction.'

While he dispatched messengers to the gentlemen in the neighbourhood to announce this event, and gave orders for a grand entertainment, I was so much affected with the tumults of passion, which assailed me on this great, sudden, and unexpected occasion, that I fell sick, fevered, and in less than three hours, became quite delirious; so that the preparations were countermanded, and the joy of the family converted into grief and despair. Physicians were instantly called, I was plentifully bled in the foot, my lower extremities were bathed in a decoction of salutiferous herbs; in ten hours after I was taken ill, I enjoyed a critical sweat, and next day felt no remains of the distemper, but an agreeable lassitude, which did not hinder me from getting up. During the progress of this fever, which, from the term of it's duration is called *Ephemera*, my father never once quitted my bed-side, but administered the prescriptions of the physicians with the most pious care; while Captain Bowling manifested his concern by the like attendance. I no sooner found myself delivered from the disease, than I bethought myself of my honest friend Strap; and resolving to make him happy forthwith in the knowledge of my good fortune, told my father in general, that I had been infinitely obliged to this faithful adherent; and begged he would indulge me so far as to send for him without letting him know my happiness, until he could receive an account of it from my own mouth.

My request was instantly complied with, and a messenger with a spare

mule detached to the ship, carrying orders from the captain to the mate to send the steward by the bearer. My health being in the mean time re-established, and my mind composed, I began to relish this important turn of my fortune, in reflecting upon the advantages with which it must be attended; and as the idea of my lovely Narcissa always joined itself to every scene of happiness I could imagine, I entertained myself now with the prospect of possessing her in that distinguished sphere to which she was entitled by her birth and qualifications. Having often mentioned her name while I was deprived of my senses, my father guessed that there was an intimate connexion between us, and discovering the picture which hung in my bosom by a ribband, did not doubt that it was the resemblance of my amiable mistress: in this belief he was confirmed by my uncle, who told him that it was the picture of a young woman to whom I was under promise of marriage. Alarmed at this piece of information, Don Rodrigo took the first opportunity of questioning me about the particulars of this affair; which when I had recounted, he approved of my passion, and promised to contribute all in his power towards it's success. Though I never doubted his generosity, I was transported on this occasion, and throwing myself at his feet, told him, he had now completed my happiness; for without the possession of Narcissa, I should be miserable among all the pleasures of life. He raised me with a smile of paternal fondness; said he knew what it was to be in love; and observed, that if he had been as tenderly beloved by his father as I was by mine, he should not now perhaps have cause—Here he was interrupted by a sigh, the tear rushed into his eye, he suppressed the dictates of his grief, and the time being opportune, desired me to relate the passages of my life, which my uncle had told him were manifold and surprizing. I recounted the most material circumstances of my fortune, to which he listened with wonder and attention, manifesting from time to time those different emotions which my different situations may be supposed to have raised in a parent's breast; and when my detail was ended, blessed God for the adversity I had undergone;

dergone; which, he said, enlarged the understanding, improved the heart, steeled the constitution, and qualified a young man for all the duties and enjoyments of life, much better than any education which affluence could bestow.

When I had thus satisfied his curiosity, I discovered an inclination to hear the particulars of his story; which he gratified, by beginning with his marriage, and proceeded to the day of his disappearing, as I have related in the first part of my memoirs. 'Careless of life,' continued he, 'and unable to live in a place where every object recalled the memory of my dear Charlotte, whom I had lost through the barbarity of an unnatural parent, I took my leave of you, my child, then an infant, with a heart full of unutterable woe, but little suspecting that my father's unkindness would have descended to my innocent orphan; and setting out alone at midnight for the nearest sea-port, early next morning got on board a ship, bound, as I had heard, for France, and bargaining with the master for my passage, bade a long adieu to my native country, and put to sea with the first fair wind. The place of our destination was Granville, but we had the misfortune to run upon a ridge of rocks near the island of Alderney, called the Caskets, where the sea running high, the ship went to pieces, the boat sunk along-side, and every soul on board perished, except myself, who, by the assistance of a grating, got ashore on the coast of Normandy. I went directly to Caen, where I was so lucky as to meet with a count whom I had formerly known in my travels: with this gentleman I set out for Paris, where I was recommended by him and other friends, as a tutor to a young nobleman, whom I accompanied to the court of Spain. There we remained a whole year, at the end of which my pupil being recalled by his father, I quitted my office and staid behind, by the advice of a certain Spanish grandee who took me into his protection, and introduced me to another nobleman, who was afterwards created viceroy of Peru. He insisted on my attending him to his government in the Indies; where,

however, by reason of my religion, it was not in his power to make my fortune any other way than by encouraging me to trade, which I had not long prosecuted when my patron died, and I found myself in the midst of strangers, without one friend to support and protect me. Urged by this consideration, I sold my effects and removed to this country, the governor of which having been appointed by the viceroy, was my intimate acquaintance. Here has Heaven prospered my endeavours, during a residence of sixteen years, in which my tranquility was never invaded, but by the remembrance of your mother, whose death I have in secret mourned without ceasing; and the reflection of you, whose fate I could never learn, notwithstanding all my enquiries, by means of my friends in France; who, after the most strict examination, could give me no other account, than that you went abroad six years ago, and was never after heard of. I could not rest satisfied with this imperfect information, and though my hope of finding you was but languid, resolved to go in quest of you in person: for which purpose, I have remitted to Holland the value of twenty thousand pounds, and am in possession of fifteen thousand more, with which I intended to embark myself on board of Captain Bowling, before I discovered this amazing stroke of Providence, which you may be sure has not altered my intention.'

My father having entertained us with this agreeable sketch of his life, withdrew in order to relieve Don Antonio, who in his absence had done the honours of his house; and I was just dressed for my appearance among the guests, when Strap arrived from the ship.

He no sooner entered the grand apartment in which I was, and saw the magnificence of my apparel, than his speech was lost in amazement, and he gaped in silence at the objects that surrounded him. I took him by the hand, observed that I had sent for him to be a witness and sharer of my happiness, and told him I had found a father. At these words he started, and after having continued some minutes with his mouth and eyes wide open, cried,

'Aha!

'Aha!—odd, I know what! Go thy ways, poor Narcissa, and go thy ways somebody else—well—Lord, what a thing is love!—God help us! are all our mad pranks and protestations come to this! and have you fixed your habitation in this distant land! God prosper you, I find we must part at last; for I would not leave my poor carcase so far from my native home, for all the wealth of the universe!' With these ejaculations, he began to sob and make wry faces; upon which I assured him of his mistake, both in regard to Narcissa, and my staying in Paraguay, and informed him as briefly as I could, of the great event which had happened. Never was rapture more ludicrously expressed, than in the behaviour of this worthy creature, who cried, laughed, whistled, sung, and danced, all in a breath; his transport was scarce over, when my father entered, who no sooner understood that this was Strap, than he took him by the hand, saying, 'Is this the honest man, who befriended you so much in your distress?—You are welcome to my house, and I will soon put it in the power of my son to reward you for your good offices in his behalf; in the mean time, go with us, and partake of the repast that is provided.' Strap, wild as he was with joy, would by no means accept of the proffered honour, crying, 'God forbid! I know my distance; your worship shall excuse me.' And Don Rodrigo finding his modesty invincible, recommended him to his major-domo, to be treated with the utmost respect; while he carried me into a large saloon, where I was presented to a numerous company, who loaded me with compliments and caresses, and congratulated my father in terms not proper for me to repeat.

Without specifying the particulars of our entertainment, let it suffice to say, it was at the same time elegant and sumptuous, and the rejoicings lasted two days: after which, Don Rodrigo settled his affairs, converted his effects into silver and gold, visited and took leave of all his friends, who were grieved at his departure, and honoured me with considerable presents; and coming on board of my uncle's ship, with the first favourable wind we sailed from the Rio de la Plata, and in two months

came safe to an anchor in the harbour of Kingston in the island of Jamaica.

CHAP. XXXI.

I VISIT MY OLD FRIEND THOMSON—WE SET SAIL FOR EUROPE—MEET WITH AN ODD ADVENTURE—ARRIVE IN ENGLAND—I RIDE ACROSS THE COUNTRY FROM PORTSMOUTH TO SUSSEX—CONVERSE WITH MRS. BAGELY, WHO INFORMS ME OF NARCISSA'S BEING IN LONDON—IN CONSEQUENCE OF THIS INTELLIGENCE, I PROCEED TO CANTERBURY—MEET WITH MY OLD FRIEND MORGAN—ARRIVE AT LONDON—VISIT NARCISSA—INTRODUCE MY FATHER TO HER—HE IS CHARMED WITH HER GOOD SENSE AND BEAUTY—WE COME TO A DETERMINATION OF DEMANDING HER BROTHER'S CONSENT TO OUR MARRIAGE.

I Enquired, as soon as I got ashore, about my generous companion Mr. Thomson; and hearing that he lived in a flourishing condition, upon the estate left him by his wife's father, who had been dead some years, I took horse immediately, with the consent of Don Rodrigo, who had heard me mention him with great regard, and in a few hours reached the place of his habitation.

I should much wrong the delicacy of Mr. Thomson's sentiments, to say barely he was glad to see me: he felt all that the most sensible and disinterested friendship could feel on this occasion; introduced me to his wife, a very amiable young lady, who had already blessed him with two fine children; and being as yet ignorant of my circumstances, frankly offered me the assistance of his purse and interest. I thanked him for his generous intention, and made him acquainted with my situation, on which he congratulated me with great joy, and after I had staid with him a whole day and night, accompanied me back to Kingston, to wait upon my father, whom he invited to his house. Don Rodrigo complied with his request, and having been handsomely entertained during the

the space of a week, returned extremely well satisfied with the behaviour of my friend and his lady, to whom at parting he presented a very valuable diamond ring, as a token of his esteem. During the course of my conversation with Mr. Thomson, he gave me to understand, that his and my old commander Captain Oakham was dead some months, and that immediately after his death, a discovery had been made of some valuable effects that he had feloniously secreted out of a prize, by the assistance of Dr. Mackshane, who was now actually in prison on that account, and being destitute of friends, subsisted solely on the charity of my friend, whose bounty he had implored in the most abject manner, after having been the barbarous occasion of driving him to that terrible extremity on board of the *Thunder*, which we have formerly related. Whatsoever this wretch might have been guilty of, I applauded Mr. Thomson's generosity towards him in his distress, which wrought so much upon me also, that I sent him ten pistoles, in such a private manner that he could never know his benefactor.

While my father and I were caressed among the gentlemen on shore, Captain Bowling had writ to his owners, by the packet, which sailed a few days after our arrival, signifying his prosperous voyage hitherto, and desiring them to ensure his ship and cargo homeward-bound; after which precaution he applied himself so heartily to the task of loading his ship, that with the assistance of Mr. Thomson, she was full in less than six weeks. This kind gentleman likewise procured for Don Rodrigo bills upon London for the greatest part of his gold and silver, by which means it was secured against the risk of the seas and the enemy; and before we sailed, supplied us with such large quantities of all kinds of stock, that not only we, but the ship's company, fared sumptuously during the voyage.

Every thing being ready, we took our leave of our kind entertainers, and going on board at Port Royal, set sail for England on the first day of June. We beat up to windward, with fine easy weather; and one night, believing ourselves near Cape Tiberoon, lay to, with an intention to wood and

water next morning in the bay. While we remained in this situation, a sailor having drank more new rum than he could carry, staggered over-board, and notwithstanding all the means that could be used to preserve him, went to the bottom and disappeared. About two hours after this melancholy accident happened, as I enjoyed the cool air on the quarter deck, I heard a voice rising, as it were out of the sea, and calling, 'Ho, the ship; ahoy!' Upon which one of the men upon the fore-castle cried, 'I'll be d—n'd, if that 'an't Jack Marlinspike, who went 'overboard!' Not a little surprized at this event, I jumped into the boat that lay along-side, with the second mate and four men, and rowing towards the place from whence the voice (which repeated the hail) seemed to proceed, we perceived something floating upon the water; when we had rowed a little farther, we discerned it to be a man riding upon a hen-coop, who, seeing us approach, pronounced with a hoarse voice, 'D—n your 'bloods! why did you not answer 'when I hailed?' Our mate, who was a veritable seaman, hearing this salute, said, 'By G—, my lads, this is none of 'our man: this is the devil; pull away 'for the ship.' The fellows obeyed his command, without question, and were already some fathoms on our return, when I insisted on their taking up the poor creature, and prevailed upon them to go back to the wreck, which when we came near the second time, and signified our intention, we received an answer of, 'Avast, avast! 'what ship, brother?' Being satisfied in this particular, he cried, 'D—n the 'ship, I was in hopes it had been my 'own; where are you bound?' We satisfied his curiosity in this particular too; upon which he suffered himself to be taken on board, and after having been comforted with a dram, told us he belonged to the *Vesuvio* man of war, upon a cruize off the island of Hispaniola; that he had fallen over-board about four and twenty hours ago, and the ship being under sail, they did not chuse to bring to, but tossed a hen-coop over-board for his convenience, upon which he was in good hopes of reaching the Cape next morning; howsomever, he was as well content

to be aboard of us, because he did not doubt that we should meet his ship; and if he had gone ashore in the bay, he might have been taken prisoner by the French. My uncle and father were very much diverted with the account of this fellow's unconcerned behaviour; and in two days, meeting with the *Vesuvio*, as he expected, sent him on board of her, according to his desire.

Having beat up successfully the windward passage, we stretched to the northward, and falling in with a westerly wind, in eight weeks arrived in soundings, and in two days after made the Lizzard. It is impossible to express the joy I felt at the sight of English ground! Don Rodrigo was not unmoved, and Strap shed tears of gladness. The sailors profited by our satisfaction; the shoe that was nailed to the mast being quite filled with our liberality. My uncle resolved to run up into the Downs at once, but the wind shifting when we were abreast of the isle of Wight, he was obliged to turn into St. Helen's, and come to Spithead, to the great mortification of the crew, thirty of whom were immediately pressed on board of a man of war.

My father and I went ashore immediately at Portsmouth, leaving Strap with the captain to go round with the ship and take care of our effects; and I discovered so much impatience to see my charming Narcissa, that my father permitted me to ride across the country to her brother's house; while he should hire a post-chaise for London, where he would wait for me at a place to which I directed him.

Fired with all the eagerness of passion, I took post that very night, and in the morning reached an inn about three miles from the squire's habitation: here I remained till next evening, allaying the torture of my impatience with the rapturous hope of seeing that divine creature after an absence of eighteen months, which far from impairing, had raised my love to the most exalted pitch! Neither were my reflections free from apprehensions, that sometimes intervened in spite of all my hope, and represented her as having yielded to the importunity of her brother, and blessed the arms of an happy rival. My thoughts were even maddened with the fear of her death; and when I arrived in the dark at the

house of Mrs. Sagely, I had not for some time courage to desire admittance, lest my soul should be shocked with dismal tidings. At length, however, I knocked, and no sooner certified the good gentlewoman of my voice, than she opened the door, and received me with a most affectionate embrace, that brought tears into her aged eyes. 'For Heaven's sake! dear mother,' cried I, 'tell me how is Narcissa? is she the same that I left her?' She blessed my ears with saying, 'She is as beautiful, in as good health, and as much yours as ever.' Transported at this assurance, I begged to know if I could not see her that very night; when this sage matron gave me to understand that my mistress was in London, and that things were strangely altered in the squire's house since my departure; that he had been married a whole year to Melinda, who at first found means to wean his attention so much from Narcissa, that he became quite careless of that lovely sister, comforting himself with the clause in his father's will, by which she should forfeit her fortune, by marrying without his consent; that my mistress being but indifferently treated by her sister-in-law, had made use of her freedom some months ago, and gone to town, where she was lodged with Miss Williams, in expectation of my arrival; and had been pestered with the addresses of Lord Quiverwit, who finding her heart engaged, had fallen upon a great many shifts to persuade her that I was dead; but finding all his artifices unsuccessful, and despairing of gaining her affection, he had consoled himself for her indifference, by marrying another lady some weeks ago, who had already left him on account of some family uneasiness. Besides this interesting information, she told me, that there was not a great deal of harmony between Melinda and the squire, who was so much disgusted at the number of gallants who continued to hover about her even after marriage, that he had hurried her down into the country much against her own inclination, where their mutual animosities had risen to such a height, that they preserved no decency before company or servants, but abused one another in the grossest terms.

This good old gentlewoman, to give me a convincing proof of my dear Narcissa's

Narcissa's unalterable love, gratified me with a sight of the last letter she had favoured her with, in which I was mentioned with so much honour, tenderness, and concern, that my soul was fired with impatience, and I determined to ride all night, that I might have it the sooner in my power to make her happy. Mrs. Sagely perceiving my eagerness, and her maternal affection being equally divided between Narcissa and me, begged leave to remind me of the sentiments with which I went abroad, that would not permit me for any selfish gratification to prejudice the fortune of that amiable young lady, who must entirely depend upon me, after having bestowed herself in marriage. I thanked her for her kind concern, and as briefly as possible described my flourishing situation, which afforded this humane person infinite wonder and satisfaction. I told her, that now I had an opportunity to manifest my gratitude for the obligations I owed, I would endeavour to make her old age comfortable and easy; as a step to which, I proposed she should come and live with Narcissa and me. This venerable gentlewoman was so much affected with my words, that the tears ran down her ancient cheeks; she thanked Heaven that I had not belied the presages she had made on her first acquaintance with me; acknowledging my generosity, as she called it, in the most elegant and pathetic expressions; but declined my proposal, on account of her attachment to the dear melancholy-cottage where she had so peacefully consumed her solitary widowhood. Finding her immovable on this subject, I insisted on her accepting a present of thirty guineas, and took my leave, resolving to accommodate her with the same sum annually, for the more comfortable support of the infirmities of old age.

Having rode all night, I found myself at Canterbury in the morning, where I alighted to procure fresh horses; and as I walked into the inn, perceived an apothecary's shop on the other side of the street, with the name of Morgan over the door. Alarmed at this discovery, I could not help thinking that my old messmate had settled in this place; and upon enquiry, found my conjecture true, and that he was married lately to a widow in that

country, by whom he had got three thousand pounds. Rejoiced at this intelligence, I went to his shop as soon as it was open, and found my friend behind the counter, busy in preparing a glyster. I saluted him at entrance, with 'Your servant, Mr. Morgan.' Upon which he looked at me, and replying, 'Your most humble servant, goot Sir;' rubbed his ingredients in the mortar, without any emotion. 'What!' said I, 'Morgan, have you forgot your old messmate?' At these words, he looked up again, and starting, cried, 'As Got is my—sure it cannot—yes by my salvation, I perceive it is my dear friend Mr. Rantom.' He was no sooner convinced of my identity, than he threw down the pestle, overset the mortar, and jumping over the board, swept up the contents with his clothes, flew about my neck, hugged me affectionately, and daubed me all over with turpentine and the yolks of eggs, which he had been mixing when I came in. Our mutual congratulations being over, he told me, that he found himself a widower upon his return from the West Indies; that he had got interest to be appointed surgeon of a man of war, in which capacity he served some years, until he married an apothecary's widow, with whom he now enjoyed a pretty good sum of money, peace and quiet, and an indifferent good trade. He was very desirous of hearing my adventures, which I assured him I had not time to relate, but told him in general, my circumstances were very good, and that I hoped to see him when I should not be in such a hurry as at present. He insisted, however, on my staying breakfast, and introduced me to his wife, who seemed to be a decent sensible woman, pretty well stricken in years. In the course of our conversation, he shewed the sleeve-buttons I had exchanged with him at our parting in the West Indies, and was not a little proud to see that I had preserved his with the same care. When I informed him of Mackshane's condition, he seemed at first to exult over his distress; but after a little recollection, said, 'Well, he has paid for his malice, I forgive him, and may Got forgive him likewise.' He expressed great concern for the soul of Captain Oakum, which he believed was now

gnashing it's teeth. But it was some time before I could convince him of Thomson's being alive, at whose good fortune, nevertheless, he was extremely glad.

Having renewed our protestations of friendship, I bade the honest Welchman and his spouse farewell, and taking post-horses, arrived at London that same night, where I found my father in good health, to whom I imparted what I had learned of Narcissa. This indulgent parent approved of my intention of marrying her, even without a fortune, provided her brother's consent could not be obtained; promised to make over to me in a few days a sufficiency to maintain her in a fashionable manner, and expressed a desire of seeing this amiable creature, who had captivated me so much. As I had not slept the night before, and was besides fatigued with my journey, I found myself under a necessity of taking some repose, and went to bed accordingly: next morning about ten o'clock, took a chair, and according to Mrs. Sageley's directions, went to my charmer's lodgings, and enquired for Miss Williams. I had not waited in the parlour longer than a minute, when this young woman entered, and no sooner perceived me, than she shrieked and ran backward; but I got between her and the door, and clasping her in my arms, brought her to herself with an embrace. 'Good Heaven!' cried she, 'Mr. Random, is it you indeed! my mistress will run distracted with joy.' I told her, it was from an apprehension that my sudden appearance might have some bad effect on my dear Narcissa, that I had desired to see her first, in order to concert some method of acquainting her mistress gradually with my arrival. She approved of my conduct, and after having yielded to the suggestions of her own friendship, in asking if my voyage had been successful, charged herself with that office, and left me glowing with desire of seeing and embracing the object of my love. In a very little time I heard somebody coming down stairs in haste, and the voice of my angel pronounce, with an eager tone, 'O Heaven! is it possible! where is he?' How were my faculties aroused at this well known sound! and how was my soul transported, when she broke in upon

my view, in all the bloom of ripened beauty!

'Grace was in all her steps, heaven in her eye,

'In every gesture dignity and love!

You whose souls are susceptible of the most delicate impressions, whose tender bosoms have felt the affecting vicissitudes of love, who have suffered an absence of eighteen long months from the dear object of your hope, and found at your return the melting fair as kind and as constant as your heart could wish, do me justice on this occasion, and conceive what unutterable rapture possessed us both, while we flew into each other's arms! This was no time for speech; locked in a mutual embrace, we continued some minutes in a silent trance of joy! When I thus encircled all that my soul held dear; while I hung over her beauties, beheld her eyes sparkle, and every feature flush with virtuous fondness; when I saw her enchanting bosom heave with undissembled rapture, and knew myself the happy cause; heavens, what was my situation! I am tempted to commit my paper to the flames, and to renounce my pen for ever, because it's most ardent and lucky expression so poorly describes the emotions of my soul. 'O adorable Narcissa!' cried I; 'O miracle of beauty, love, and truth! I at last fold thee in my arms! I at last can call thee mine! No jealous brother shall thwart our happiness again; fortune hath at length recompensed me for all my sufferings, and enabled me to do justice to my love.' The dear creature smiled ineffably charming, and with a look of bewitching tenderness, said, 'And shall we never part again?' — 'Never!' I replied, 'thou wonderful pattern of all earthly perfection! never, until death shall divide us! by this ambrosial kiss, a thousand times more fragrant than the breeze that sweeps the orange grove, I never more will leave thee!'

As my first transport abated, my passion grew turbulent and unruly. I was giddy with standing on the brink of bliss, and all my virtue and philosophy were scarce sufficient to restrain the inordinate sallies of desire. Narcissa perceived the conflict within me, and with her usual dignity of prudence, called

called off my imagination from the object in view, and with eager expressions of interested curiosity, desired to know the particulars of my voyage. In this I gratified her inclination, bringing my story down to the present hour: she was infinitely surprized at the circumstance of my finding my father, which brought tears into her lovely eyes. She was transported at hearing that he approved my flame, discovered a longing desire of being introduced to him, congratulated herself and me upon my good fortune, and observed that this great and unexpected stroke of fate seemed to have been brought about by the immediate direction of Providence. Having entertained ourselves some hours with the genuine effusions of our souls, I obtained her consent to compleat my happiness as soon as my father should judge it proper, and applying with my own hands a valuable necklace, composed of diamonds and amethysts set alternately, which an old Spanish lady of Paraguay had presented me with, I took my leave, promising to return in the afternoon with Don Rodrigo. When I went home, this generous parent inquired very affectionately about the health of my dear Narcissa, to whom that I might be the more agreeable, he put into my hand a deed, by which I found myself in possession of fifteen thousand pounds, exclusive of the profits of my own merchandize, which amounted to three thousand more. After dinner I accompanied him to the lodging of my mistress, who being dressed for the occasion made a most dazzling appearance. I could perceive him struck with her figure, which I really think was the most beautiful that ever was created under the sun. He embraced her tenderly, and told her, he was proud of having a son who had spirit to attempt, and qualifications to engage, the affections of such a fine lady. She blushed at this compliment, and with eyes full of the softest languishment turned upon me, said, she should have been unworthy of Mr. Random's attention, had she been blind to his extraordinary merit. I made no other answer than a low bow. My father, sighing, pronounced, 'Such once was my Charlotte!' while the tear rushed into his eye, and the tender heart of Narcissa manifested itself in two pre-

cious drops of sympathy, which, but for his presence, I would have kissed away. Without repeating the particulars of our conversation, I shall only observe, that Don Rodrigo was as much charmed with her good sense, as with her appearance; and she was no less pleased with his understanding and polite address. It was determined that he should write to the squire, signifying his approbation of my passion for his sister, and offering a settlement which he should have no reason to reject; and that, if he should refuse the proposal, we would crown our mutual wishes without any farther regard to his will.

C H A P. XXXII.

MY FATHER MAKES A PRESENT TO NARCISSA—THE LETTER IS DISPATCHED TO HER BROTHER—I APPEAR AMONG MY ACQUAINTANCE—BANTER'S BEHAVIOUR—THE SQUIRE REFUSES HIS CONSENT—MY UNCLE COMES TO TOWN—APPROVES OF MY CHOICE—I AM MARRIED—WE MEET THE SQUIRE AND HIS LADY AT THE PLAY—OUR ACQUAINTANCE IS COURTED.

AFTER having spent the evening to the satisfaction of all present, my father addressed himself thus to Narcissa: 'Madam, give me leave to consider you hereafter as my daughter, in which capacity I insist upon your accepting this first instance of my paternal duty and affection.' With these words he put into her hand a bank-note of 500l. which she no sooner examined, than with a low curtsy she replied, 'Dear Sir, though I have not the least occasion for this supply, I have too great a veneration for you, to refuse this proof of your generosity and esteem, which I the more freely receive, because I already look upon Mr. Random's interest as inseparably connected with mine.' He was extremely well pleased with her frank and ingenuous reply; upon which we saluted, and wished her good night. The letter at my request was dispatched to Sussex by an express, and in the mean time Don Rodrigo, to grace my nuptials, hired

hired a ready-furnished house, and set up a very handsome equipage.

Though I passed the greatest part of the day with the darling of my soul, I found leisure sometimes to be among my former acquaintance, who were astonished at the magnificence of my appearance: Banter in particular was confounded at the strange vicissitudes of my fortune; the causes of which he endeavoured in vain to discover, until I thought fit to disclose the whole secret of my last voyage, partly in consideration of our former intimacy, and partly to prevent unfavourable conjectures which he and others in all probability would have made in regard to my circumstances. He professed great satisfaction at this piece of news, and I had no cause to believe him insincere, when I considered that he would now look upon himself as acquitted of the debt he owed me, and at the same time flatter himself with hopes of borrowing more, I carried him home to dinner with me, and my father liked his conversation so much, that upon hearing his difficulties, he desired me to accommodate him for the present, and enquire if he would accept of a commission in the army, towards the purchase of which he would willingly lend him money. Accordingly, I gave my friend an opportunity of being alone with me, when, as I expected, he told me he was just on the point of being reconciled to an old rich uncle, whose heir he was, but wanted a few pieces for immediate expence, which he desired I would lend him, and take his bond for the whole. His demand was limited to ten guineas; and when I put twenty into his hand, he stared at me for some moments, then putting it into his purse, said, 'Ay, 'tis all one, you shall have the whole in a very short time.' When I had taken his note, to save the expence of a bond, I expressed some surprize that a fellow of his spirit should loiter away his time in idleness, and asked why he did not chuse to make his fortune in the army. 'What!' said he, 'throw away my money upon a subaltern's commission, to be under the command of a parcel of scoundrels who have raised themselves above me by the most infamous practices! no, I love independency too well to sacrifice my life,

health, and pleasure, for such a pitiful consideration.' Finding him adverse to this way of life, I changed the subject, and returned to Don Rodrigo, who had just received the following epistle from the squire.

'SIR,

'CONCERNING a letter which I received, subscribed R. Ransom, this is the answer. As for you, I know nothing of you. Your son, or pretended son, I have seen; if he marries my sister, at his peril be it; I do declare, that he shall not have one farthing of her fortune, which becomes my property, if she takes a husband without my consent. Your settlement, I do believe, is all a sham, and yourself no better than you should be; but if you had all the wealth of the Indies, your son shall never match in our family, with the consent of

'ORSON TOPEHALL.'

My father was not much surprized at this polite letter, after having heard the character of the author; and as for me, I was even pleased at his refusal, because I now had an opportunity of shewing my disinterested love. By his permission I waited on my charmer; and having imparted the contents of her brother's letter, at which she wept bitterly, in spite of all my consolation and caresses, the time of our marriage was fixed at the distance of two days. During this interval, in which my soul was wound up to the last stretch of rapturous expectation, Narcissa endeavoured to reconcile some of her relations in town to her marriage with me; but finding them all deaf to her remonstrances, either out of envy or prejudice; she told me with the most enchanting sweetness, while the tears bedewed her lovely cheeks, 'Sure the world will no longer question your generosity, when you take a poor forlorn beggar to your arms.' Affected with her sorrow, I pressed the fair mourner to my breast, and swore that she was more dear and welcome on that account, because she had sacrificed her friends and fortune to her love for me. My uncle, for whose character she had a great veneration, being by this time come to town, I introduced

roduced him to my bride; and although he was not very much subject to refined sensations, he was struck dumb with admiration at her beauty. After having kissed and gazed at her for some time, he turned to me, saying, 'Odds bobs, Rory! here's a notable prize indeed; finely built, and gloriously rigged, i'faith! if she an't well manned when you have the command of her, sirrah, you deserve to go to sea in a cockle-shell.—No offence, I hope, niece; you must not mind what I say, being (as the saying is) a plain sea-faring man, thof mayhap I have as much regard for you as another.' She received him with great civility, told him she had longed a great while to see a person to whom she was so much indebted for his generosity to Mr. Random; that she looked upon him as her uncle, by which name she begged leave to call him for the future; and that she was very sure he could say nothing that would give her the least offence. The honest captain was transported at her courteous behaviour, and insisted upon giving her away at the ceremony, swearing that he loved her as well as if she was his own child, and that he would give two thousand guineas to the first fruit of our love, as soon as it could squeak. Every thing being prepared for the solemnization of our nuptials, which were to be performed privately at my father's house, the auspicious hour arrived, when Don Rodrigo and my uncle went in the coach to fetch the bride and Miss Williams; leaving me with a parson, Banter, and Strap, neither of whom had as yet seen my charming mistress. My faithful valet, who was on the rack of impatience to behold a lady of whom he had heard so much, no sooner understood that the coach was returned, than he placed himself at a window to have a peep at her as she alighted; and when he saw her, clapped his hands together, turned up the white of his eyes, and with his mouth wide open, remained in a sort of extasy, which broke out into, '*O Dea certe! qualis in Europa rotas ripis, aut per juga Cyntbi exeret Diana chorus!*' The doctor and Banter were surprized to hear my man speak Latin, but when my father led Narcissa into the room, the object of

their admiration was soon changed, as appeared in the countenances of both. Indeed they must have been the most insensible of all beings, could they have beheld without emotion the divine creature that approached! She was dressed in a sack of white sattin, embroidered on the breast with gold; the crown of her head was covered with a small French cap, from whence descended her beautiful hair in ringlets that waved upon her snowy neck, which dignified the necklace I had given her; her looks glowed with modesty and love; and her bosom, through the veil of gauze that shaded it, afforded a prospect of Elysium! I received this inestimable gift of Providence as became me; and in a little time the clergyman did his office; my uncle, at his own earnest request, acting the part of a father to my dear Narcissa, who trembled very much, and had scarce spirits sufficient to support her under this great change of situation. Soon as she was mine by the laws of heaven and earth, I printed a burning kiss upon her lips, my father embraced her tenderly, my uncle hugged her with great affection, and I presented her to my friend Banter, who saluted her in a very polite manner; Miss Williams hung round her neck, and wept plentifully; while Strap fell upon his knees, and begged to kiss his lady's hand, which she presented with great affability. I shall not pretend to describe my own feelings at this juncture; let it suffice to say, that after having supped and entertained ourselves till ten o'clock, I cautioned my Narcissa against exposing her health by sitting up too late, and she was prevailed upon to withdraw with her maid to an apartment destined for us. When she left the room, her face was overspread with a blush that set all my blood in a state of fermentation, and made every pulse beat with tenfold vigour! She was so cruel as to let me remain in this condition a full half hour; when, no longer able to restrain my impatience, I broke from the company, burst into her chamber, pushed out her confidante, locked the door, and found her—O heav'n and earth! a feast, a thousand times more delicious than my most sanguine hope prefaged! But let me not profane the chaste mys-

teries of Hymen: I was the happiest of men!

In the morning I was waked by three or four drums, which Banter had placed under the window; upon which I withdrew the curtain, and enjoyed the unspeakable satisfaction of contemplating those angelic charms, which were now in my possession! *'Beauty! which, whether sleeping or awake, shot forth peculiar graces!'* The light darting upon my Narcissa's eyes, she awoke also, and recollecting her situation, hid her blushes in my bosom. I was distracted with joy! I could not believe the evidence of my senses, and looked upon all that had happened, as the fictions of a dream! In the mean time my uncle knocked at the door, and bade me turn out, for I had had a long spell. I rose accordingly, and sent Miss Williams to her mistress, myself receiving the congratulations of Captain Bowling, who rallied me in his sea phrase with great success. In less than an hour, Don Rodrigo led my wife in to breakfast, where she received the compliments of the company on her looks; which, they said, if possible, were improved by matrimony. As her delicate ears were offended with none of those indecent ambiguities, which are too often spoke on such occasions, she behaved with dignity, unaffected modesty, and ease; and as a testimony of my affection and esteem, I presented her, in presence of them all, with a deed, by which I settled the whole fortune I was possessed of, on her and her heirs for ever. She accepted it with a glance of most tender acknowledgment, observed, that she could not be surprized at any thing of this kind I should do, and desired my father to take the trouble of keeping it; saying, 'Next to my own Mr. Random, you are the person in whom I ought to have the greatest confidence.' Charmed with her prudent and ingenuous manner of proceeding, he took the paper, and assured her that it should not lose its value while in his custody.

As we had not many visits to give and receive, the little time we stayed in town was spent in going to public diversions, where I have the vanity to think Narcissa seldom was eclipsed. One night in particular, we had sent

our footman to keep one of the stage-boxes, which we no sooner entered, than we perceived in the opposite box the squire and his lady, who seemed not a little surprized at seeing us. I was pleased at this opportunity of confronting them; the more, because Melinda was robbed of all her admirers by my wife, who happened that night to outshine her sister both in beauty and dress. She was piqued at Narcissa's victory, tossed her head a thousand different ways, flirted her fan, looked at us with disdain, then whispered to her husband, and broke out into an affected giggle; but all her arts proved ineffectual, either to discompose Mrs. Random, or to conceal her own mortification, which at length forced her away long before the play was done. The news of our marriage being spread, with many circumstances to our disadvantage by the industry of this malignant creature, a certain set of persons, fond of scandal, began to inquire into the particulars of my fortune, which they no sooner understood to be independant, than the tables were turned, and our acquaintance was courted as much as it had been despised before. But Narcissa had too much dignity of pride to encourage this change of conduct, especially in her relations, whom she could never be prevailed upon to see, after the malicious reports they had raised to her prejudice.

C H A P. XXXIII.

MY FATHER INTENDS TO REVISIT THE PLACE OF HIS NATIVITY—WE PROPOSE TO ACCOMPANY HIM—MY UNCLE RENEWS HIS WILL IN MY FAVOUR, DETERMINING TO GO SEA AGAIN—WE SET OUT FOR SCOTLAND—ARRIVE AT EDINBURGH—PURCHASE OUR PATERNAL ESTATE—PROCEED TO IT—HALT AT THE TOWN WHERE I WAS EDUCATED—TAKE UP MY BOND TO CRAB—THE BEHAVIOUR OF POTION AND HIS WIFE, AND ONE OF MY FEMALE COUSINS—OUR RECEPTION AT THE ESTATE—STRAPE MARRIES MISS WILLIAMS, AND IS SETTLED BY MY FATHER TO

We proceeded to our estate, which lay about twenty miles from this place; and when we came within half a league of the house, were met by a prodigious number of poor tenants, men, women, and children, who testified their joy by loud acclamations, and accompanied our coach to the gate. As there is no part of the world in which the peasants are more attached to their lords than in Scotland, we were almost devoured by their affection. My father had always been their favourite, and now that he appeared their master, after having been thought dead so long, their joy broke out into a thousand extravagances. When we entered the court-yard, we were surrounded by a vast number, who were crowded together so closely to see us, that several were in danger of being squeezed to death,

those who were near Don Rodrigo fell upon their knees, and kissed his hand, or the hem of his garment, praying aloud for long life and prosperity to him; others approached Narcissa and me in the same manner; while the rest clapped their hands at a distance, and invoked Heaven to shower its choicest blessings on our heads. In short, the whole scene, though rude, was so affecting, that the gentle partner of my heart wept over it, and my father himself could not refrain from dropping a tear.

Having welcomed his daughter and me to his house, he ordered some bullocks to be killed, and some hogheads of ale to be brought from the neighbouring village, to regale those honest people, who had not enjoyed such a holiday for many years before.

Next day we were visited by the gentlemen in the neighbourhood, most of them our relations, one of whom brought along with him my cousin, the fox-hunter, who had staid at his house, since he was obliged to leave his own. My father was generous enough to receive him kindly, and even promise to purchase for him a commission in the army, for which he expressed great thankfulness and joy.

My charming Narcissa was universally admired and loved for her beauty, affability, and good sense; and so well pleased with the situation of the place, and the company round, that she has not, as yet, discovered the least desire of changing her habitation.

We had not been many days settled, when I prevailed upon my father to pay a visit to the village where I had been at school. Here we were received by the principal inhabitants, who entertained us in the church, where Mr. Syntax, the school-master, (my tyrant being dead) pronounced a Latin oration in honour of our family. And none exerted themselves more than Strap's father and relations, who looked upon the honest valet as the first gentleman of their race, and honoured his benefactors accordingly. Having received the homage of this place, we retired, leaving forty pounds for the benefit of the poor of the parish; and that very night, Strap being a little elevated with the regard that had been

shewn to him, and to me on his account, ventured to tell me, that he had a sneaking kindness for Miss Williams; and that if his lady and I would use our interest in his behalf, he did not doubt that she would listen to his addresses. Surprized at this proposal, I asked if he knew the story of that unfortunate young gentlewoman. Upon which, he replied, 'Yes, yes, I know what you mean; she has been unhappy, I grant you, but what of that? I am convinced of her reformation; or else you and my good lady would not treat her with such respect. As for the censure of the world, I value it not a fig's end; besides, the world knows nothing of the matter.' I commended his philosophy, and interested Narcissa in his cause; who interceded so effectually, that in a little time Miss Williams yielded her consent, and they were married with the consent of Don Rodrigo, who gave him five hundred pounds to stock a farm, and made him overseer of his estate. My generous bed-fellow gave her maid the same sum; so that they live in great peace and plenty within half a mile of us, and daily put up prayers for our preservation.

If there be such a thing as true happiness on earth, I enjoy it. The impetuous transports of my passion are now settled and mellowed into endearing fondness and tranquility of love, rooted by that intimate connexion and interchange of hearts, which nought but virtuous wedlock can produce. Fortune seems determined to make ample amends for her former cruelty; for my proctor writes, that notwithstanding the clause in my father-in-law's will, on which the squire founds his claim, I shall certainly recover my wife's fortune, in consequence of a codicil annexed, which explains that clause, and limits her restriction to the age of nineteen, after which she was at her own disposal. I would have set out for London immediately after receiving this piece of intelligence, but my dear angel has been qualmish of late, and begins to grow remarkably round in the waist; so that I cannot leave her in such an interesting situation, which I hope will produce something to crown my felicity.

Z A D I G;

OR, THE

B O O K O F F A T E.

A N

O R I E N T A L H I S T O R Y.

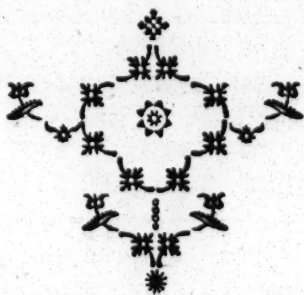
T R A N S L A T E D F R O M

T H E F R E N C H O F M. D E V O L T A I R E,

B Y F R A N C I S A S H M O R E, E S Q.

—QUO FATA TRAHUNT, RETRAHUNTQUE SEQUAMUR.
PER VARIOS CASUS, PER TOT DISCRIMINÆRUM,
TENDIMUS IN LATIUM.

VIRG.



L O N D O N:

Printed for HARRISON and Co. No. 18, Paternoster-Row.

M D C C L X X X.



I
an
fr
w
to
Z
m
fo
it
co
ac
th
qu
ha
tic
me
po
an
yo
sp
yo
wh
as
of
th
qu



EPISTLE DEDICATORY

TO THE

SULTANA SHERAA.

The 18th of the Month SCHEVAL, in the Year of the
HEGIRA 837.

DELIGHT of every eye, torment of every heart, divine light of the mind! I kiss not the dust of thy feet, because thou seldom walkest, and when thou dost, it is only on the carpets of Iran, or with thy way strewn with roses. You are here presented with the translation of a book wrote by an ancient sage, who enjoying the happiness of having nothing to do, thought proper to amuse himself with writing the history of Zadig; a performance which, I may venture to assure you, expresses much more than it seems to express. And I beg you will indulge me so far, as to read it over, and then pass your impartial judgment upon it: for although you are in the bloom of life; though every pleasure courts you; though you are the darling of nature, and possess internal accomplishments adequate to your beauty; though you are praised throughout the world from the night till the morning, and consequently have a right to divest yourself of common sense; yet you have, notwithstanding, a mind filled with wisdom, and an imagination uncommonly delicate. I have frequently heard you discourse more learnedly than the wisest dervise, with his venerable beard and pointed bonnet. You are discreet without being distrustful; mild and gentle without weakness; and beneficent with discernment; you love your friends, and do not make yourself any enemies. The sprightly sallies of your wit never borrow any lustre from detraction; you never speak or do ill, notwithstanding the prodigious ease with which you could do both. In short, your soul has constantly appeared as pure and faultless as your person. You have, moreover, a small fund of philosophy; which induces me to believe that you will better relish this performance, the work of a sage, than any other lady of your quality.

It was originally written in the ancient Chaldee, which neither you nor I understand; from whence it was translated into Arabic, to amuse the celebrated Sultan Ouloug-beg. This was at the time when the Arabians and Persians began to write the thousand and one nights, and the thousand and one days. Ouloug found most pleasure in reading Zadig; but the sultanas preferred the thousand and one. ‘How can ye,’ said the wife Ouloug, ‘admire stories void of sense, and without meaning?’—‘Oh,’ replied the sultanas, ‘the less sense there is in them, the more they are in taste; and the less their merit, the greater their commendation.’

I flatter myself, great patroness of wisdom, that you will not resemble those thoughtless sultanas, but will deign to adopt the sentiments of Ouloug. I even hope that, when you are weary of general conversations, which have a great resemblance to the thousand and ones, I shall be happy enough to find a minute in which I may have the honour of speaking to you in the voice of reason. Had you been Thalestris, in the days of Scander; had you been the queen of Sheba, in the time of Solomon; those kings would have been proud to visit you.

May the celestial virtues grant, that your pleasures find no interruption, your charms know no decay, and your happiness be everlasting!

S A D I.



A P P R O B A T I O N.

I The underwritten, who have obtained the reputation of learning, and even that of being a man of wit, have read this manuscript, which I find, to my great mortification, is curious, amusing, moral, philosophical, and well worth reading, even by those who dislike romances: I have therefore thought proper to depreciate it, and have accordingly assured the CADI-LESQUIER, that it is a most detestable performance.

* * * *

S

Z

S

more
per
it w
rich
der
in
ten
to
cre
fin
of
ler
di
ig
an
in
lit
th
lo
fr
er
n
th
in
b
t
l
s
A



Z A D I G ;

OR, THE

B O O K O F F A T E.

C H A P. I.

THE BLIND OF ONE EYE.



HERE lived at Babylon, in the reign of King Moabdar, a man named Zadig. He was endowed by nature with an uncommon genius, and his parents, who were persons of rank, took care to cultivate it with an excellent education. Though rich and young, he knew how to moderate his passions; he had nothing in him affected; he disdained the ostentation of wisdom, and knew how to pity the weaknesses of his fellow creatures. Every one was surprized to find, that though he had such a fund of wit, he never exposed, by his railery, those impertinent and seditious discourses, those rash slanders, those ignorant decisions, those rude jests, and that vain sound of words, which, in Babylon, went by the name of polite conversation. He had learned, in the first book of Zoroaster, that self-love is a bladder swelled with wind, from whence tempests proceed whenever it is pierced. In particular, he never boasted of his conquests among the fair sex, and of his bringing them into subjection. He was too generous to be afraid of conferring obligations on the ungrateful, following this great precept of Zoroaster: *When thou eatest, give to the dogs, though they should growl at thee.* He was as wise as

it was possible; for he sought not the company of any but such as were famous for their wisdom. He was acquainted with the sciences of the ancient Chaldeans; was not ignorant of such physical principles of nature as were then discovered; and knew as much of metaphysics as has ever yet been known; that is to say, little or nothing of the matter. He was firmly persuaded, in spite of the philosophy of his time, that the year consisted of three hundred and sixty-five days and an half, and that the sun was situated in the centre of the earth: but when the chief magi told him, with an insulting haughtiness, that he entertained heretical sentiments, and was an enemy to the state, for believing that the sun turned about it's own axis, and that the year consisted of twelve months, he was wise enough to avoid the appearance of anger or contempt.

As Zadig possessed great riches, and had consequently many friends; and as he had also an excellent constitution, an amiable figure, a mind just and moderate, and a heart sincere and noble; he imagined that he might be happy. He therefore determined to marry a gay young lady, named Semira, whose beauty, birth and fortune, rendered her the most desirable person in Babylon. He had a solid and virtuous affection for this lady, and she loved him with the most passionate tenderness. A short time before their intended union, as they were walking together near one

B of

of the gates of Babylon, under a row of palm trees on the banks of the Euphrates, they saw a band of men armed with sabres, bows and arrows, approaching towards them. These were the attendants of young Orcan, nephew to a minister of state, whom the concubines of his uncle had persuaded might commit with impunity whatever crimes he pleased. Although he had none of the internal accomplishments of Zadig, yet he imagined himself to be greatly his superior, and was therefore enraged at not being preferred before him. This jealousy, which arose merely from his vanity, induced him to believe that he loved Semira to distraction; fired with which notion, he determined to carry her away by force. The ruffians rudely seized her; and, in the heat of the encounter, drew the blood of a beauty, the sight of whose charms would have moved to pity even the tygers of Mount Emaus. The injured lady pierced the heavens with her cries; exclaiming, 'O my husband! my dear husband! they force me from the arms of him whom alone I adore.' She regarded not her own danger; her thoughts were wholly engrossed by her fears for the dearly beloved Zadig. In the mean time, he defended himself with all the strength and resolution which love and valour usually inspire. Assisted only by two slaves, he put the villains to flight, and carried home Semira, senseless and bloody as she was. The moment she came to herself, she fixed her lovely eyes on her deliverer. 'O Zadig!' said she, 'I not only love thee as my husband, but as him to whom I owe my life, and what to me is far dearer, the preservation of my honour.' Never was a heart more inflamed than Semira's; never did such ravishing lips express sentiments so kind and tender: her words were of fire; they were inspired by gratitude for the greatest of all benefits, and the warmest transports of a lawful affection. Her wounds were slight, and were quickly healed. Zadig was wounded in a more dangerous manner; he was struck by an arrow near his left eye. Semira incessantly addressed the gods, for the cure of her lover; her cheeks were night and day bathed in tears; and she waited with impatience for the happy moment when the eyes of Zadig should

behold her anxiety! But, alas! the wounded eye became so swelled and inflamed, that his friends were in the greatest concern for his sight. They sent even to Memphis, for the great physician Hermes, who immediately attended his patient with a numerous retinue. On his first visit, he declared that Zadig would lose his eye, and predicted the day and hour when this fatal event would happen. 'If it had been the right eye,' said he, 'I could have healed it; but the wounds of the left are incurable.' All Babylon, while they lamented the destiny of Zadig, admired the wisdom of Hermes. Two days after, the abscess burst of itself; and Zadig, in a short time, was perfectly recovered. Hermes then wrote a very elaborate treatise, to prove that he ought not to have been cured: which Zadig, however, did not think worth his perusal; but, as soon as he could go abroad, prepared to visit her on whom he founded his hopes of happiness, and for whose sake alone he had wished the restoration of his sight. Semira, he found, had been three days in the country; and he was at the same time informed, that as this beautiful creature had publicly declared, an insuperable aversion to one-eyed men, she was that very night to be wedded to Orcan. At this unexpected ill news, poor Zadig fell senseless on the earth; and was so greatly affected with his disappointment, that it threw him into a violent illness, which lasted some months. At length reason prevailed over his affliction, and the reflection of the guilt he had experienced in her, served to give him consolation.

'Since I have suffered,' said he, 'the effects of such cruel caprice, from a woman educated at court, I will now wed the daughter of some substantial citizen.' Accordingly, he made choice of Azora, a young lady of genteel education, an excellent economist, and descended from parents the most respectable. Shortly after, they were married, and lived for a whole month in all the delights of the most tender union. But he soon began to perceive that Azora possessed some small degree of levity, and had a strong propensity to believe that those young men who had the most agreeable persons, were always the most virtuous and witty.

CHAP. II.

THE NOSE.

AZORA had been one day walking, when she returned filled with rage, and uttering loud exclamations. 'Why, O my dear wife, are you afflicted?' said he. 'Who has been able thus to disturb you?'—'Alas,' said she, 'you would have been equally enraged, had you seen what I have just beheld. I have been to comfort the young widow Cosrou, who has been these two days erecting a monument to the memory of her deceased husband, near the rivulet which runs by the side of this meadow. In the height of her grief, she made a solemn vow to stay at this tomb as long as the rivulet kept its course.'—'Well,' said Zadig, 'this woman is worthy of esteem; she loved her husband with perfect sincerity.'—'Ah,' replied Azora, 'did you know how she was employed, when I went to visit her, you would not say so.'—'How was it, lovely Azora?' said he; 'was she turning the stream of the rivulet?' Azora answered by long invectives; and uttered such bitter reproaches against the young widow, that Zadig was disgusted at her ostentation of virtue.

Zadig had an intimate friend, named Cador, whose wife was perfectly virtuous, and actually preferred her husband to all the world besides: this friend Zadig made his confident, and secured his fidelity by a considerable present.

Azora had been two days in the country, visiting one of her friends: at her return home, on the third, she was informed by her domesticks, who were all in tears, that Zadig died suddenly the night before; that they had not dared to carry her this fatal news; and that they had just buried him in the tomb of his fathers, at the end of the garden. She burst into a flood of tears, tore her hair, and vowed that she would immediately follow him. In the evening Cador came, and begged to be permitted to condole with her;

and they both joined their lamentations. The next day they wept less, and dined together; when Cador informed her, that Zadig had left him the greatest part of his wealth, and gave her to understand, that his happiness depended on her sharing his fortune. The lady again burst into tears, grew angry, and became reconciled. They sat longer at supper than they had done at dinner, and talked together with greater confidence. Azora was lavish in her encomiums on the deceased; but at the same time observed, that he had faults from which Cador was exempt. In the midst of their entertainment, Cador suddenly complained of a violent pain in his side. The lady afflicted, and eager to serve him, ordered the essences of flowers and drugs to be brought; and with these she anointed him, to try if any of them would assuage his anguish: she was much concerned, that the great Hermes was not still in Babylon, and condescended to lay her warm hand on the part affected. 'Are you subject to this tormenting malady?' said she, in a soft compassionate tone. 'Sometimes,' said Cador, 'I am so violently affected with it, that it brings me to the very brink of the grave: nor is there but a single remedy which can give me ease; and that is, to apply to my side the nose of a man lately dead.'—'This is a strange remedy!' said Azora. 'Not more strange,' replied he, 'than the fatchels of the great Arnou* against the apoplexy.'

This reason, added to the person and merit of the young man, at last determined her in his favour. 'After all,' said she, 'when my husband passes the bridge Tchimarav, the angel Afrail will not stop his passage, though his nose be somewhat shorter in the next life than it was in this.' She then took a razor, went to the tomb of her husband, bedewed it with her tears, and approached to cut off his nose, as he lay extended in his coffin. Zadig mounted in a moment, holding his nose with one hand, and putting back the instrument with the other. 'Azora,' said he, 'do not so loudly exclaim against the widow

* There was at this time in Babylon a famous doctor, named Arnou, who (in the Gazettes) cured apoplestic fits, and prevented them from affecting his patients, by hanging a little bag about their necks.

‘Cosrou; the project of cutting off my nose, is equal to that of turning a rivulet.’

CH A P. III.

THE DOG AND THE HORSE.

ZADIG found by experience, that the first month of marriage, as it is written in the book of Zind, is the moon of honey; but that the second is the moon of wormwood. In short, he was some time after obliged to repudiate Azora, who became too hard to be pleased, and seek for happiness in the study of nature. ‘None,’ said he, ‘can enjoy greater felicity than the philosopher, who judiciously peruses that spacious book which God has placed before his eyes. The truths he discovers become useful to himself; he nourishes and exalts his soul; lives in tranquillity; fears nothing from men; and has no tender spouse to cut off his nose.’

Filled with these ideas, he retired to a house in the country, that stood on the banks of the Euphrates. He did not there employ himself in calculating how many drops of water flow in a second of time under the arches of a bridge; or if there fell a cube-line of rain in the month of the Mouse, more than in the month of the Sheep. He formed no projects for making silk gloves and stockings with the webs of spiders, nor china ware out of broken glass bottles; but he chiefly studied the properties of animals and plants; and was very soon, by his strict and repeated enquiries, enabled to discover a thousand variations in visible objects, that others, less curious, imagined all alike.

As he was one day walking by the side of a thicket, he saw one of the queen’s eunuchs approaching towards him, followed by many officers, who appeared under the greatest perplexity, running here and there like persons almost distracted, and seeking with impatience something extremely precious. ‘Young man,’ said the first eunuch, ‘have you seen the queen’s dog?’ Zadig coolly replied, ‘You mean, I presume, her bitch?’—‘You are in the right, Sir!’ returned the eunuch; ‘it is a spaniel bitch, indeed!’—‘And

very small;’ said Zadig. ‘She has lately whelped, she limps on the left foot before, and has very long ears.’—‘You have then seen her?’ said the eunuch, quite out of breath. ‘No,’ answered Zadig, ‘I have never seen her; nor did I know, but by you, that the queen had such a bitch.’

Just at this time, by one of the ordinary caprices of fortune, the finest horse in the king’s stables had escaped from the groom, and got upon the plains of Babylon. The principal huntsman, and all the inferior officers, ran after him with as much concern as the first eunuch after the bitch. The principal huntsman addressed himself to Zadig, and asked, if he had not seen the king’s horse run by. ‘No horse,’ replied Zadig, ‘is a better runner; he is five feet high; his hoofs are very small; his tail is about three feet and a half long; the studs of his bit are of pure gold, about twenty-three carats; and his shoes are silver.’—‘Which way did he run? Where is he?’ demanded the huntsman. ‘I have never seen him,’ replied Zadig; ‘nor did I till now ever hear that the king had such a horse.’

The principal huntsman, and the first eunuch, not doubting but that Zadig had stole the king’s horse and the queen’s bitch, immediately caused him to be conducted before the grand desherham, who condemned him to the knout, and to be confined for life in some lonely and remote part of Siberia. Scarce was the sentence passed, when the horse and bitch were found. The judges were then under the disagreeable necessity of reversing their decision; but they condemned him to pay four hundred ounces of gold, for having said that he had not seen what he had seen. This fine he was obliged to deposit in court: after which he was allowed to plead his cause before the council of the grand desherham; when he spoke in these terms.

‘Ye bright stars of justice, profound abyss of sciences, mirrors of truth! who have in you the weight of lead, the inflexibility of steel, the lustre of the diamond, and the resemblance of the purest gold! since I am permitted to speak before this august assembly, I swear by Orosimades, that I have never seen the queen’s illustrious

trious dog, nor the sacred horse of the king of kings. I will, however, be ingenuous enough to declare the truth, and nothing but the truth. As I was walking by the side of the thicket, where I afterwards met the venerable eunuch, and the most illustrious huntsman, I saw on the sand the traces of an animal, and easily judged they were those of a little dog. The light and long furrows impressed on small eminences of sand, between the marks of the paws, made me know that it was a bitch, whose dugs were hanging down, and that she had therefore lately whelped. As I observed, likewise other traces of a different kind, which seemed to have grazed the surface of the sand, on the sides of the marks of the fore feet, I easily judged that she had very long ears. And as I remarked, that there was always a fainter impression, made on the sand by one foot, than by the three others, I concluded that the bitch of our august queen was, if I may be permitted so to say, a little lame.

With respect to the horse of the king of kings, give me leave to inform you, that as I was walking down the lane by the thicket side, I took particular notice of the prints made upon the sand by a horse's shoes, and found they were all at equal distances; from which observation, I concluded the horse galloped well. The dust on the trees, in a straight road, seven feet wide, was brushed off a little both on the right and the left, at three feet and a half from the middle of the road: this horse have I said has a tail three feet and a half long, which by it's being whisked to the right and the left, swept away the dust. Again, I perceived under the trees, which formed a kind of arbour five feet high, that the leaves were newly fallen, and was sensible the horse must have shook them off; I therefore judged him to be somewhat more than five feet high. As to the bits of his bridle, I knew they must be gold of twenty-three carats, for he had rubbed the studs against a certain stone which I knew to be a touch-stone, and which I have tried. To conclude, I have judged, by the marks which his shoes

left on flints of a different kind, that he was shod with silver.

All the judges were astonished at the profound and subtle discernment of Zadig. The news reached even the king and queen. Nothing was spoke of but Zadig, in the antichambers, in the chambers, and in the cabinet: and though many of the magi were of opinion he ought to be burnt as a forcerer, the king ordered that the four hundred ounces of gold he had been obliged to pay, should be restored to him again. The register and other officers, then went to his house with great formality, to carry him his four hundred ounces: they kept back only three hundred, fourscore, and eighteen, for the expences of justice; and their servants demanded their fees.

Zadig saw how dangerous it sometimes is to appear too wise; and he firmly resolved, in future, to set a watch before the door of his lips.

An opportunity soon offered, for the trial of his resolution. A prisoner of state having made his escape, passed under his window. Zadig was examined, but made no answer; however, as it was proved that he had looked at him from his window, he was condemned to pay five hundred ounces of gold for this crime; and, according to the custom of Babylon, thank the judges for their indulgence. 'Good God!' said he to himself, 'what a misfortune is it to walk near a wood through which the queen's dog and the king's horse have passed! how dangerous is it to look out of a window! and, in a word, how difficult for a man to be truly happy in this life!'

CHAP. IV.

THE ENVIOUS MAN.

AS Zadig had met with such a series of misfortunes, he resolved to comfort himself by the study of philosophy, and the conversation of select friends. He had in the suburbs of Babylon a house adorned with much taste, where he assembled all the arts and all the pleasures worthy the attention of a good man. In the morning, his library was open to the learned; in the evening, his table was surrounded by good company;

pany: but he soon found the danger there is in conversing with the sons of science. There arose a great dispute on one of the laws of Zoroaster, which forbids the eating of griffins. 'How should he prohibit our eating a griffin,' said some of the company, 'if this animal has no existence?'—'It must necessarily exist,' said the others, 'since Zoroaster will not allow it to be eaten.' Zadig strove to make them agree, by saying, 'If, gentlemen, there are griffins, let us not eat them; if there are no such things, we cannot eat them; and thus we shall all obey Zoroaster.'

A learned man, who had composed thirteen volumes on the properties of the griffin, hasted to accuse Zadig before one of the principal magi, named Yebor, the most foolish, and the greatest bigot of all the Chaldeans. This man would have impaled Zadig to do honour to the sun, and when he had done it, would have recited the breviary of Zoroaster with greater satisfaction. His friend Cador (a friend of more value than a hundred magi) went to old Yebor, and said to him, 'Long live the sun and the griffins! take care of punishing Zadig, for he is a saint; he has griffins in his inner court, and does not eat them; and his accuser is an heretick, who dares to maintain that rabbits have cloven feet, and are not unclean.'—'Well,' said Yebor, shaking his bald pate, 'we must impale Zadig for having spoken disrespectfully of griffins, and the other for having spoken contemptuously of rabbits.' Cador, however, put a stop to the affair, by means of a maid of honour, by whom he had had a child, and who had great credit in the college of the magi; so that nobody was punished: whereupon many of the doctors murmured, and presaged the ruin of Babylon. Zadig said to himself, 'On what does happiness depend? I am persecuted by every thing in this world, even on account of beings that have no existence.' He cursed the sons of learning, and for the future resolved to keep none but good company. He now assembled at his house the most worthy men in Babylon, and ladies of the greatest beauty; he gave them delicate suppers, frequently preceded by concerts of music, and always animated

by the most engaging conversation, in which he carefully avoided the desire of appearing witty; well knowing that to be a sure method of defeating its own end, as well as of spoiling the most agreeable company. Neither the choice of his friends, nor that of his provisions, were the result of pride or ostentation. He delighted in appearing what he was, and not in seeming what he was not; by which means he obtained a far more respectable character than that which he actually aimed at.

Opposite to his house dwelt Arimazes, a person puffed up with pride; who having never been able to obtain so much success in life as he wished for, sought to revenge himself by railing against all mankind. Although he was rich, he found it difficult to procure flatterers. He was greatly provoked at the rattling of the chariots which approached the door of Zadig; but was still more aggravated by the sound of his praises. He sometimes intruded himself so far as to sit down at Zadig's table without any invitation: and when there, he constantly interrupted the mirth of the company; as harpies are said to corrupt all the provisions they touch.

Arimazes one day intended to give an entertainment to a young lady; but, instead of accepting it, she went to sup at Zadig's. Another time, as Zadig and he were conversing together in the palace, a minister of state came up, and invited Zadig to supper, but took no notice of Arimazes. The most implacable hatred has seldom a more solid foundation. This person, who in Babylon was called the Envious Man, resolved to ruin Zadig, because he was usually distinguished by the appellation of the Happy Man. An opportunity of doing mischief is found an hundred times in a day, but that of doing a good office, only once in a year; as says the wise Zoroaster.

Arimazes went one day to see Zadig, who was walking in his garden with two friends and a lady, to whom he said abundance of fine things, without any other intention than the innocent pleasure of saying them. The conversation turned on a war the king had just happily concluded against the prince of Hircania his vassal. Zadig, who had signalized his courage in this short struggle, bestowed great praises on

the king, but was still more lavish in his compliments to the lady; and taking out his pocket-book, instantly wrote four lines, which he gave her to look at. His friends then begged to see them; but modesty, or rather a just degree of self-love, prevented him; for he knew that extempore verses are seldom good, except in the opinion of those in honour of whom they are written. He therefore broke in two the tablet on which he had been writing, and threw both pieces into a thicket of roses, where his friends sought for them in vain. A small rain falling presently after, all the company, except Arimazes, returned to the house. He, however, continued in the garden, and sought till he found a piece of the tablet. It had been unfortunately torn in such a manner, that each half of a line formed a complete sense, and even a verse in a very short measure; and, by a chance still more strange, the lines were found to contain the most injurious reproaches against the king. They ran thus:

By crimes of blackest dye,
He's of the throne posselt,
To peace and liberty,
The enemy profest.

Arimazes was now happy, for the first time in his life; since he had in his hands the means of destroying one who was worthy and virtuous. Filled with a cruel joy, he produced the broken tablet which contained this virulent satire, before the king; who ordered Zadig to be imprisoned, together with the lady and his two friends. His trial was soon over, without his being suffered to speak for himself. When he came to receive his sentence, the envious man threw himself in his way, and told him aloud, that his verses were of no value. Zadig was but little displeased at being thought a bad poet, but he could not bear the reflection of being condemned for high treason, and considering that a beautiful lady, and two of his friends, were detained in prison for a crime of which they were entirely innocent. He was not permitted to speak, because his writing spoke; such were the laws of Babylon! They obliged him therefore to go to punishment through a crowd of spectators, brought together

by their curiosity, none of whom durst appear to pity him: they threw themselves before him to examine his countenance, and to see if he acted with a becoming fortitude. His relations were, indeed, the only real mourners; for they could not inherit his estate. Three parts of his substance were confiscated to the king's use, and the other was given to Arimazes.

Just as Zadig was preparing himself for death, the king's parrot flew from her cage, and alighted on a rose-bush in the garden of Zadig. A peach had been driven thither by the wind from a neighbouring tree, and was fallen on a piece of the tablet, to which it stuck; when the bird carried it away, and alighted on the monarch's knee. The king, seized with curiosity, read the words on the broken tablet, which formed not any meaning, but appeared to be the endings of a verse. He was a great admirer of poetry; and there is always some relief to be expected, when a prince is a friend to the muses: the adventure of his parrot made him thoughtful. The queen, who perfectly well remembered what had been written on the piece of Zadig's pocket-book, ordered that part to be brought. They examined the two pieces together, which perfectly fitted each other; and then read the verse as Zadig had wrote it.

By crimes of blackest dye, I've seen the
earth made hell;
He's of the throne posselt, who all their
power can quell.
To peace and liberty, love now's the only foe,
The enemy profest of mortals here below.

Upon this the king ordered Zadig to be instantly brought before him, and his two friends and the lady to be immediately released from their confinement. Zadig prostrated himself with his face to the earth before the king and queen, and most humbly begged pardon for having made an ill verse. He spoke, indeed, with such a becoming grace, and with so much modesty and good sense, that the king and queen desired to see him again; when they gave him all the wealth of Arimazes, by whom he had been so unjustly accused: but Zadig generously restored him back the whole of his fortune. Arimazes, however, felt

no

no other sensation, than the pleasure which arose from his not having lost his substance. The king's esteem for Zadig increased from day to day; he made him share in all his pleasures, and consulted him in all his affairs. The queen from that time shewed him so much respect, and spoke to him in such soft and endearing terms, that it seemed to threaten much danger to herself, her royal consort, to Zadig, and to the kingdom. Zadig now began to believe, that the attainment of happiness was not so difficult as he had formerly imagined.

CHAP. V.

THE FORCE OF GENEROSITY.

THE time now arrived for celebrating a great feast, held once in five years. It was a custom in Babylon, solemnly to declare, at the end of this period, which of the citizens had done the most generous action. The grandees and magi always sat as judges on this occasion; and the first satrape, who had the care of the city, made known the most noble actions that had passed under his government. They proceeded by votes, and the king himself pronounced the judgment. Persons of all ranks and degrees came to this solemnity from the most remote parts of the kingdom. The successful person received from the hands of the monarch a gold cup, adorned with precious stones; and the king said these words: 'Receive this reward of your generosity, and may the gods grant me many thousands of such valuable subjects.'

On this memorable day, when the king appeared on his throne, surrounded by his grandees, the magi, and the deputies of all the surrounding nations who came to these games, where glory was acquired, not by the swiftness of horses, nor by strength and activity of body, but by virtue; the principal satrape reported, with a loud voice, such noble acts as might seem to entitle their authors to this inestimable reward: but never mentioned the greatness of soul with which Zadig had restored to the envious man the possession of his fortune; this was not an action that deserved to dispute the prize.

He first presented a judge, who having made a citizen lose a considerable cause, by a mistake for which he was no way responsible, had made restitution out of his own private fortune.

He next produced a young man, who being desperately in love with a damsel he was going to marry, yielded her up to his friend, whose passion for her had almost brought him to his grave, and on parting with the damsel gave also a portion with her.

He afterwards produced a soldier, who in the wars of Hircania had furnished a still greater example of generosity. The enemy had taken from him his mistress; but while he was fighting in her defence, he was informed that other Hircanians, at some paces distant, were carrying away his mother: he then quitted his mistress with tears, and ran to deliver his parent. At length he returned to her he loved, and found her just expiring: upon which he resolved to die with her, and was about to plunge a dagger in his own breast; but his mother remonstrating, that she had no other support nor protection but him, he had the courage to resolve to live.

The judges seemed disposed to declare in favour of the soldier, when the king spoke thus: 'This action, and those of the others, are truly great; but they do not fill me with surprize. Zadig yesterday performed one that has raised my astonishment. I had for some days disgraced Coreb, my prime-minister and favourite. I complained of his conduct in violent and bitter terms; when all my courtiers assured me that I was too mild, and loaded him with the most reproachful invectives. I asked Zadig his opinion of Coreb, and he dared to give him the noblest of characters. I must own, that I have seen in our histories, examples of persons who have paid their own fortunes, to atone for an error; of those who resigned a mistress; and who have preferred a mother to a woman tenderly beloved; but never have I read of a courtier who has spoken favourably of a fallen minister, the object of his sovereign's anger. I give to each of those, whose generous actions have been just recited, twenty thousand pieces of gold, but the cup I give to Zadig.'

'O king!'

'O king!' said Zadig, 'it is your majesty alone who deserves the cup; you alone have acted in the most noble and uncommon manner; since you, who are so great a king, was not offended at your slave, when he opposed your passion.' The whole assembly gazed with admiration both on the king and Zadig. The judge who had generously atoned his error, the lover who had resigned his mistress to his friend, the soldier who had preferred the safety of his mother to that of his mistress, received the monarch's presents, and saw their names written in the book of generous actions: Zadig had the cup; and the king acquired the reputation of a good prince, which he did not long enjoy. This day was celebrated by feasts which continued longer than the law prescribed; tragedies were represented, that made the audience burst into tears; and comedies that excited laughter; both of which were very unusual in Babylon; and the memory thereof is still preserved in Asia. 'Now,' said Zadig, 'I am at length compleatly happy.' He was, however, most egregiously mistaken.

CHAP. VI.

THE JUST JUDGE.

NOTwithstanding Zadig's youth, he was established supreme judge of all the tribunals throughout the empire. He discharged this office, as a man whom God had endued with the strictest justice, and the most solid wisdom. It was from him the surrounding nations received this grand principle: that it is much better to run the hazard of sparing the guilty, than be liable to condemn the innocent. And it was his firm opinion, that the laws were intended to honour those who did well, as much as to be a terror to the wicked. His principal talent consisted in discovering truth, which most men seek to obscure. On the first day of his administration, he exerted this peculiar talent. A rich merchant of Babylon died in the Indies, who had made his two sons joint heirs, as soon as they should dispose of their sister in marriage; and moreover, left a legacy

of thirty thousand pieces of gold, to that son who should be proved to have loved him best. The eldest erected a superb monument to his memory; the second increased his sister's portion, by giving her a part of his inheritance. Upon which every body said that the eldest best loved his father, and the youngest his sister; and that therefore the thirty thousand pieces ought to be given the eldest.

The cause came before Zadig, who examined them apart. To the eldest he said, 'Your father is not yet dead, he is cured of his illness, and is on his return to Babylon.'—'God be praised!' replied the young man; 'but his tomb cost me a considerable sum.' Zadig afterwards said the same to the youngest; who immediately replied, 'God be praised! I will go and restore to my father all I have; but I hope he will not insist upon what I have given my sister.'—'You shall restore nothing,' said Zadig, 'and shall have the thirty thousand pieces: you are the man who best loves his father.'

A young lady who was very rich, had promised herself in marriage to two magi; and after having for some months received instructions from both, discovered herself to be with child. Each of them was desirous of marrying her. 'I will take him for my husband,' said she, 'who has put me in a condition to give a citizen to my country.'—'It is I, Madam, who have answered that valuable end,' said the one; 'It is I who have had this advantage,' said the other. 'Well,' replied she, 'I will acknowledge for the infant's father, him who can give it the best education.' In a short time after, she was delivered of a son. Each of them insisted on being its tutor, and the cause was brought before Zadig. When the magi came before him, he said to the first, 'What will you teach your pupil?'—'I will teach him,' replied the doctor, 'the eight parts of speech, logic, astrology, and magick; what is meant by substance and accident, the abstract and the concrete, &c. &c.' When the second was asked the same question, 'I will do my utmost,' said he, 'to make him an honest man, and to render him worthy of having many friends.' Upon this, Zadig cried,

C

'Whether

'Whether you are the father or not,
'you shall marry the mother.'

Complaints every day reached court against the itimadoulet of Media, whose name was Irax. He was a person of great rank and fortune, and naturally possessed of a good disposition; but had corrupted his mind, and squandered away great part of his estate, in the constant pursuit of vain and expensive pleasures. He seldom permitted an inferior to speak to him, and no person whatever dared to oppose his will. He was as vain as the peacock, as voluptuous as the pigeon, and as sluggish and inactive as the tortoise. In short, he made false glory, and false pleasures, his only pursuits.

Zadig undertook his cure: he accordingly sent him, in the king's name, a master of music, with twelve singers and twenty-four musicians; and a steward of the house, with six cooks and four chamberlains, who were never to quit his presence. The king's order was, that the following particulars should be inviolably observed, and thus the business proceeded.

The first morning, as soon as the voluptuous Irax awaked, the music-master entered, followed by the vocal and instrumental musicians, who performed a cantata that lasted two hours and three minutes; in which the following lines were every three minutes repeated:

In vain our feeble pow'rs we raise,
To sing your valour, wisdom, worth;
Far, far beyond all human praise,
Thy virtues soar, most blest on earth.

When the cantata was ended, a chamberlain made an oration three quarters of an hour long, in which he particularly praised him for all the good qualities he wanted. The speech being ended, they conducted him to table by the sound of instruments. The dinner lasted three hours, before he condescended to speak: as soon as he opened his mouth for that purpose, the first chamberlain said he was in the right; scarce had he pronounced four words, when the second chamberlain cried, 'Sir, you are perfectly right.' The other two chamberlains employed themselves in laughing heartily at every smart thing Irax had said, or seemed willing to say, and were lavish in their

praises of his wit. After dinner, the adulating chorus was repeated.

The first day Irax was in raptures, and he thought the king of kings paid a proper attention to his merit; the second seemed less agreeable; the third was somewhat troublesome; the fourth insupportable; and the fifth tormenting. In short, disturbed at hearing them always singing, 'In vain our feeble pow'rs we raise,' with hearing them continually say he was in the right, and at being harangued every day at the same hour, he wrote to court to beseech the king to recal his chamberlains, his musicians, his stewards of the household, and his cooks; and promised in the most submissive manner, to be less vain, and apply himself more closely to business. From this time he grew less fond of adulation, and had fewer feasts, though he was yet more happy; for, as it is said by Sadder, 'Always pleasure, is no pleasure.'

Scarce a day passed wherein Zadig did not exhibit some fresh proof of his amazing penetration, and extreme goodness of heart; he was adored by the people, and beloved by the king: even the first misfortunes of his life served to augment his present felicity. Every night, however, he had a dream which filled him with uneasiness. He imagined that he laid himself down on a heap of dry herbs, among which there were prickly ones that greatly incommoded him; and that afterwards he reposed himself in the softest manner on a bed of roses, from whence there proceeded a serpent, which wounded him to the heart with its sharp and envenomed tooth. 'Alas!' said he, 'I have long laid on these dry and prickly herbs; I am now on the bed of roses; but what shall be the serpent?'

CHAP. VII.

THE FORCE OF JEALOUSY.

THE misfortunes of Zadig proceeded in a great measure from his preferment, but more particularly from his merit. He every day conversed with the king and his august consort; and the charms of his conversation were redoubled, by that desire of pleasing,

ing, which is to the mind what dress is to beauty. The youth and graceful deportment of Zadig had a much greater influence on Astarte than she readily perceived: and her bosom continually nourished an affection of which she was by no means conscious. She freely, and without scruple, indulged the pleasure of seeing and conversing with a man who was not only dear to her husband, but to the whole empire. She was continually speaking in his praise to the king; and he was the whole subject of her conversation among her women, whose eulogiums of him even exceeded her own. In short, every thing served to sink into the heart of Astarte, the arrow which to her was imperceptible. She made presents to Zadig, in which there was more of gallantry than she imagined; she thought only of speaking to him like a queen pleased with his services, but her expressions did not unfrequently resemble those of a woman in love.

Astarte was far more beautiful than Semira, who had such a hatred for one-eyed men; or his late affectionate spouse, who had been willing to cut off his nose. The pleasing familiarity of Astarte; her tender expressions, which sometimes crimsoned her cheeks; and the delicate glances of her eyes, which in spite of herself were continually fixed upon his; all conspired to light up a fire in the heart of Zadig; at which he was himself amazed. He endeavoured to extinguish it, by calling to his assistance that philosophy which had hitherto been his support; but drew nothing from this source, but empty knowledge, without any real consolation.

Duty, gratitude, and violated majesty, presented themselves to his mind as avenging deities; he struggled bravely with his passions, and at length gained the victory: this conquest, however, which he was obliged every moment to re-obtain, cost him many sighs and tears. He now durst not speak to the queen with that delightful freedom which had before proved but too agreeable to them both; his eyes were veiled with a mist; his discourse was unconnected, and had the appearance of constraint; he endeavoured to look another way, that he might not behold the queen; and when, contrary to his wishes, his eyes met

those of Astarte, he found that her eyes, though bathed in tears, were capable of darting forth arrows of flame: they seemed, in short, silently to intimate, that they were afraid of being in love with each other; and that both burned with a fire which both condemned.

Zadig left her presence with a mind unsettled and dismayed, and his heart was oppressed with a burden too great for him to bear. Amidst the violence of his agitations, he disclosed to Cadon the secrets of his heart, just as a man, who having long supported the fits of a violent disease, makes his anguish known by a cry which it's redoubled sharpness forces from him, and by the cold sweats which hang on his brow.

'I have already discovered,' said Cadon, 'the sensations you would fain have concealed from yourself; the passions shew themselves by signs which will not suffer us to be mistaken. Judge, my dear Zadig, since I have read your heart, whether the king will not discover a sensation so offensive to him. He has no other fault, than that of being the most jealous of mankind. You will resist your passion with greater strength than the queen will combat her's; not only because you are a philosopher, but because you are Zadig. Astarte is a woman; and suffers her looks to speak with the more imprudence, as she does not believe herself to be yet guilty. Conscious of the innocence of her heart, she is by much too unguarded. I tremble for her, because she hath nothing with which to reproach herself. Were you both agreed, you might deceive the whole world: a rising passion, which is smothered, breaks out into a flame; but love, when once gratified, knows how to conceal itself with art.' Zadig shuddered at the proposal of violating the bed of his royal benefactor; nor was there ever a more faithful subject, though guilty of this involuntary crime. The queen, however, so often pronounced the name of Zadig, with her face covered with blushes; she was sometimes so animated, at others so much dejected, when she spoke of him in the presence of her husband, and was seized with so deep a thoughtfulness when he was absent, that the king became extremely uneasy. He believed all that he saw, and

imagined all that he did not see. He more particularly remarked that the queen's sandals were blue, and that those of Zadig were of the same colour; that her ribbands were yellow, and that Zadig's turban was also yellow. These were terrible prognosticks for a prince of his delicacy to reflect on. In a mind so distempered as his, suspicions became as facts.

The slaves of kings and queens are so many spies over their hearts. It was soon discovered by them, that Astarte was tender, and Moabdar jealous. Arimazius had not corrected his envious disposition; for flints never soften, and venomous animals always preserve their poison. This wretch sent an anonymous letter to Moabdar; the infamous recourse of a sordid mind, and which is always the object of contempt, but at this time had the intended effect, because it seconded the fatal sentiments that possessed the prince's heart. In short, he no longer thought of any thing besides the manner of his revenge. He one night resolved to poison the queen, and to make Zadig die by the bow-string; his revenge was to be executed at break of day, and the order was given to a merciless eunuch, the ready executioner of his vengeance. There was, at this time, a little dwarf in the king's chamber, who was dumb, but not deaf. He was suffered to go where he pleased; and was a witness of whatever passed in secret, without being more suspected than any domestic animal. This little dwarf had an extraordinary affection both for the queen and Zadig. He heard with equal horror and surprise, the orders given for their death; but how to prevent those orders from being put in execution, as the time was so short, was his principal concern. It is true he could not write, but then he had learned to draw, and knew how to form a resemblance. Accordingly he spent part of the night in delineating on a piece of paper what he wished to inform the queen. His design represented the king agitated with fury, who stood in a corner of the picture, giving orders to his eunuch; a bow-string and a cup were placed on a table; and in the midst of the picture was the queen expiring in the arms of her women, and Zadig strangled at her feet. In the horizon he represented a

rising sun, to shew that this horrible execution was to be performed by break of day. As soon as he had finished this piece, he ran to one of Astarte's women, awaked her, and made her understand that she was that very instant to carry it to the queen.

In the middle of the night there was a knocking at Zadig's door; he was awaked, and a note presented him from the queen; he doubted whether he was not in a dream, and opened the letter with a trembling hand: but what was his surprize, and who can express his consternation and despair, when he read these words! 'Fly, dear Zadig, at this very instant, in which they are going to take away your life. Fly, I conjure you, in the name of that fatal passion with which I have long struggled, and which I at last confess, when on the point of expiating it by my death. Although I am not conscious of having committed any crime, I find that I am doomed to suffer as a traitor.'

Zadig had scarce power to speak. He ordered his friend Cador to be called, and gave him the paper without uttering a word. Cador pressed him to obey the contents, and immediately take the road to Memphis. 'If you should dare go in search of the queen,' said he, 'you will hasten her death; if you should speak to the king, you will infallibly ruin her. I will myself endeavour to avert the stroke which threatens her, it will be sufficient for you to provide for your own safety. It shall be instantly spread abroad, that you are gone to the Indies; and as soon as the pursuit of you shall be given up, I will follow after, and inform you of every occurrence.'

Cador immediately ordered two of the swiftest dromedaries to be ready at one of the private doors of the palace, and made Zadig mount that which was to carry him, though he was scarce able to sit up. He had but one trusty servant to attend him; and Cador, overwhelmed with grief, in a few moments lost sight of his friend.

This illustrious fugitive having reached the summit of a hill, from whence he might take a view of Babylon, turned his eyes towards the queen's palace, and immediately fainted away: when he recovered his senses, his cheeks were

were bathed with tears; and he eagerly wished for death. At length, having employed his thoughts in contemplating the deplorable fate of the most amiable woman and greatest queen upon earth, he for a moment turned his views on himself, and exclaimed, 'What, then, is human life! O virtue, virtue! what hast thou availed me! I have been basely betrayed by two females; yet a third, who is innocent, and ten thousand times more lovely, is on the point of being murdered for her partiality to me. Whatever good I have done, has been to me a constant source of disappointment and misery: I have been only raised to the height of grandeur, that my fall might be the greater down the horrible precipice of misfortune. Had I been as wicked and abandoned as others, I should, like them, have been happy!' With a mind agitated by these fatal reflections, his eyes covered with the veil of grief, the paleness of death on his countenance, and his soul plunged in the blackest despair, he continued his journey towards Egypt.

CHAP. VIII.

THE WIFE BEATEN.

ZADIG directed his course by the stars. The constellation Orion, and the shining dog-star, guided him towards the pole of Canopæa. He reflected with admiration on those vast globes of light which appear to our eyes no more than faint sparks, while the earth, which in reality is but an imperceptible point in nature, seems to our fond imaginations far more great and noble. He then reflected on the whole race of mankind, and considered them, truly, as insects that devour each other, on an atom of earth. This idea seemed greatly to alleviate his misfortunes, by making him retrace the nothingness of his own being, and even that of Babylon. His capacious soul now soared into infinity, and contemplated, while detached from her earthly partner, the immutable order of the universe. But the moment he returned to himself, and again searched into his own heart, he began to consider that Astarte might possibly have died for him; the universe vanish-

ed from his sight; and he beheld nothing throughout all nature, but Astarte dying, and Zadig unfortunate. As he gave himself up to this flux and reflux of sublime philosophy and distressing sorrow, he insensibly arrived on the frontiers of Egypt; and his faithful attendant was already in the first hamlet, seeking a lodging. Zadig, in the mean time, approached the surrounding gardens; when he saw, at a small distance from the highway, a woman in tears, calling heaven and earth to her assistance, and a man in a violent rage pursuing after her. He now came up with her, and she fell prostrate before him, imploring his forgiveness, but he gave her only blows and reproaches. By the violence of the Egyptian, and the reiterated entreaties for pardon uttered by the lady, Zadig judged that the one was jealous, and the other unfaithful. But when he beheld the exquisite beauty of the woman, and considered that she bore some little resemblance to the unhappy Astarte, he felt himself filled with compassion for her, and horror for the Egyptian: 'For Heaven's sake, Sir, assist me!' cried she to Zadig, with the deepest sighs; 'deliver me from the hands of the most barbarous man living: save me; save my life!' At these cries, Zadig ran to throw himself between the lady and this barbarian; and, as he had some knowledge of the Egyptian language, said to him in that tongue, 'Dear Sir, if you have any humanity, let me beg you to pay some regard to her beauty and weakness; how can you be so enraged at the master-piece of nature, who lies at your feet, and has no defence but her tears.'—'Ah, ha!' cried the jealous man, 'you are, I suppose, one of her admirers, and I will be revenged on you this moment.' So saying, he left the lady, whom he had before held by her hair, and taking his lance, attempted to wound the stranger. Zadig, however, who was in cool blood, easily avoided the blow aimed by the enraged Egyptian, and seized the lance near the point. One strove to draw it back, the other to wrest it from him; and, in the scuffle, it broke in their hands. The Egyptian then drew his sabre, and Zadig arming himself with his, they attacked each other. This gave a hundred precipitate blows; that

warded

warded them off with address. Meanwhile the lady sat on the ground, adjusting her head-dress, and looking at the combatants. The Egyptian was more robust than his adversary, but Zadig was the most expert. This acted like a person whose arm was conducted by his judgment, that like a man whose passion made him fight at random. In short, Zadig soon closed, and disarmed him; and while the Egyptian became more furious, and attempted to throw himself upon him, he laid fast hold of him, pressed him close, threw him down, and holding his sword to his breast, offered him his life. The Egyptian, fired with rage, drew his poignard, and wounded the conqueror at the very instant he granted him his pardon; upon which, Zadig instantly plunged his sabre into his bosom, and the Egyptian, with an horrible cry, gave up the ghost. Zadig then advanced towards the lady, and said, with a submissive voice, 'He has forced me to kill him; I have revenged your cause; and you are now delivered from the most furious man I have ever seen: what more would you have me do for you?'—'Die, villain!' she replied; 'I would have you die: you have killed my lover, and I wish I was able to tear out your cruel heart.'—'You had, indeed, a strange kind of lover,' replied Zadig: 'he beat you with all his strength; and would have taken away my life, because you intreated me to assist you.'—'I wish he had beat me still,' replied the lady, weeping bitterly; 'I well deserved it, for I had made him jealous. Would to Heaven he was now beating me, and that you was in his situation!' Zadig, more surprized and angry than he had ever been in his life, said, 'Madam, notwithstanding your beauty, you deserve that I should beat you in my turn; but I disdain to concern myself farther about you.' Upon this he remounted his dromedary, and advanced towards the town. Scarce had he begun to set forward, when he turned back at the noise made by four couriers of Babylon, who came riding full speed. One of them seeing the woman, cried, 'It is she herself; she answers the description given us.' They took no notice of the dead man, but immediately seized the lady; who

incessantly cried out to Zadig, 'Help me once more, generous stranger; deliver me from these ruffians: I humbly beg pardon for my late ungrateful behaviour; help me, and I will be yours for ever.' Zadig, however, had now no inclination to fight in her defence. 'Apply to some other for assistance,' replied he, 'you shall not again make me the dupe of your artifice.' Indeed, Zadig's wound bled so fast, that he had himself need of assistance; and the sight of four Babylonians, probably from King Moabdar, gave him much concern. He therefore hastened towards the town, at a loss to conceive why four couriers from Babylon should take this Egyptian woman, but still more puzzled to account for her very strange behaviour.

CHAP. IX.

SLAVERY.

THE moment Zadig entered the place, he was surrounded by the people. Every one said, 'This is the man who carried away the beautiful Missouf, and assassinated Cletofis.'—'God preserve me,' said he, 'from ever carrying away your beautiful Missouf; she is too capricious for me: and as to Cletofis, I have not assassinated him; I have only killed him in my own defence. He endeavoured to take away my life, because I begged him to shew some mercy to the lovely Missouf, whom he was cruelly beating. I am a stranger, fled hither for shelter, and there is but little likelihood, that on coming to entreat your protection, I should begin with carrying away a lady, and assassinating her lover.'

The Egyptians, at that time, were just and humane. The people conducted Zadig to a house in the town; and having dressed his wound, he and his domestic were examined apart, in order to discover the truth. They acquitted Zadig of the crime of wilful murder; but as he had been guilty of taking away the life of a man, though in his own defence, the law condemned him to be a slave. His two dromedaries were immediately sold for the benefit of the town; they di-

vided

vided amongst the inhabitants the gold he had brought; and his person was exposed to sale in the market-place, together with that of his servant. They were bought by an Arabian merchant, named Setoc; and the servant being best adapted for fatigue, was sold at a much higher price than his master: indeed, there was no comparison between them. Zadig was therefore a slave subordinate to his servant; they were linked together by a chain fastened to their feet, and in this condition they followed the Arabian merchant. Zadig, in the mean time, comforted his companion; exhorted him to patience; and, according to his usual custom, made reflections on human life. 'I see,' said he, 'that the unhappiness of my destiny has an effect on yours. Every thing in which I have had any concern, has hitherto been strangely conducted. I have been condemned to pay a fine for having seen the traces left by the feet of a dog; I have suffered the fear of being impaled on account of a griffin; I have been sent to execution for making verses in praise of the king; I have been on the point of being strangled, because the queen hath spoke to me with mildness, and here am I a slave with you, because a brutish fellow has beat his mistress. Let us, however, be chearful, and not lose our courage; all this perhaps will have an end. If it be necessary for the Arabian merchants to have slaves, why should not I be one, as well as another, since I am also a man? Probably, this merchant will not be void of pity; it is requisite for him to treat his slaves well, if he would reap much advantage from them.' This was the form of his words, but his thoughts were wholly employed about the fate of the queen of Babylon.

Two days after, the merchant set out for Arabia Deserta, with his slaves and camels. His tribe dwelt near the desert of Oreb, and the way was long and painful. Setoc, while on the road, set more value on the servant than the master, because the first was more expert in loading his camels; and all the little marks of distinction were in his favour. A camel happening to die within two days journey of Oreb, his burden was divided, and placed on the

backs of his slaves. Setoc smiled at seeing them walk stooping forward; and Zadig took the liberty of explaining the cause, by informing him of the laws of the balance. The merchant astonished at his philosophical discourse, began now to look upon him with a very different eye; and Zadig, finding that he had excited his curiosity, redoubled it, by informing him of many things not foreign to commerce; the specific gravity of metals, and other commodities of various kinds under an equal bulk; the properties of several useful animals, and the means of rendering those that were not so fit for service. In short, he appeared to Setoc as a sage, and was esteemed by him far more valuable than his companion; he accordingly treated him with utmost kindness, and never had the least cause to repent his indulgence.

Setoc being arrived among his own tribe, demanded payment of five hundred ounces of silver, which he had lent to a Jew in the presence of two witnesses; but the witnesses being dead, and the Jew satisfied of the impossibility of proving the debt, he looked on the money to be his own, and thanked God for having enabled him safely to defraud an Arabian. Setoc told his uneasiness to Zadig, who was now his chief confident. 'Where,' said Zadig, 'did you lend the money to this infidel?'—'On a large stone near Mount Oreb,' replied the merchant. 'What is the character of your debtor?' said Zadig. 'That of a notorious villain,' replied Setoc. 'But I ask,' said Zadig, 'whether he be lively or phlegmatick, cautious or imprudent.'—'He is the worst paymaster in the world,' said Setoc, 'but the most lively and merriest fellow I ever knew.'—'Well,' said Zadig, 'permit me to plead your cause.' Accordingly, Setoc consented; and Zadig having cited the Jew to appear, spoke thus before the judge: 'Pillar of the throne of equity, I come to demand of this man, in the name of my master, five hundred ounces of silver which he refuses to pay him.'—'Have you any witnesses to prove the debt?' said the judge. 'No,' repeated Zadig, 'they are both dead; but there yet remains a large stone on which the money was counted, and if

‘ if it pleases your excellence to order the stone to be sought for, I doubt not but it will prove a sufficient evidence. The Jew and I will wait here till it arrives, and the expence of bringing it shall be defrayed by my master.’—‘ Your request is but reasonable,’ replied the judge; ‘ do as you proposed.’ He then proceeded to other business.

When the court was about to break up, the judge addressed Zadig, ‘ Well,’ said he, ‘ is your stone yet come?’ The Jew, sneering, replied, ‘ Should your excellence wait here till to-morrow, you would not even then see the stone; for it is above six miles distant from hence, and would require fifteen men to remove it.’—‘ I have well said,’ cried Zadig aloud, ‘ that the stone would bear witness! Since this man knows where the stone lies, he confesses that the money was counted on it.’ The Jew thus confounded, was soon constrained to confess the truth; and the judge ordered that he should be fastened to the stone without meat or drink, till he had restored the money, which was then speedily paid. From that time, the slave Zadig, as well as the stone, were held in great esteem throughout all Arabia.

CHAP. X.

THE FUNERAL PILE.

SETOC, transported with his good success, made Zadig his favourite companion. He valued him as much as the king of Babylon had formerly done; and luckily for Zadig, the merchant had no wife. He discovered in his master a natural propensity to goodness, and found him to be a worthy and a sensible man; but he was concerned to see a person he so greatly esteemed, paying divine adoration to a host of created, though celestial beings, according to the custom in Arabia of worshipping the sun, moon, and stars. He sometimes cautiously introduced this important topick; and at length ventured to assert, that they were equally created with things of less lustre, and no more entitled to our adoration, than a tree or a rock. ‘ But,’ said Setoc, ‘ these are eternal beings, from whom we derive every blessing

we enjoy; they animate nature; they regulate the seasons; and are, in short, situate at such an infinite distance from us, that we cannot but revere them.’—‘ You receive more advantages,’ replied Zadig, ‘ from the waters of the Red Sea, which carry your merchandize to the Indies; and may not that be as ancient as the stars? or if you will worship what is at a distance, you should rather pay your adoration to the land of the Gangarides, which is situate at the extremities of the earth.’—‘ No,’ said Setoc, ‘ the stars are so surpassingly brilliant, that it is impossible for me not to prefer them.’

In the evening Zadig lighted a great number of candles in the tent in which they were to sup, and as soon as Setoc appeared, threw himself on his knees before the flaming tapers, and thus addressed them; ‘ Eternal and ever-shining brightness, be always propitious to your votary.’ Having uttered these words, he sat down to table, without regarding Setoc. ‘ What are you doing?’ said Setoc, filled with astonishment. ‘ I act, Sir, like you,’ replied Zadig; ‘ I adore these candles, and neglect their master and mine.’

Setoc comprehended the profound sense of this apologue. The wisdom of his slave entered into his soul; and he no longer burned incense to created beings, but adored the Eternal who made them.

The Arabians had at that time a horrid custom, originally brought from Scythia, and which being established in the Indies by the credit of the Brachmans, threatened to spread its infection over all the East. When a married man died, and his dearly beloved wife wished to be esteemed a saint, she burned herself publicly on her husband’s funeral pile. This was a solemn festival, called the widow’s sacrifice, and the tribe in which most women had been thus burnt, was held in the greatest respect. An Arabian of the same tribe as Setoc being dead, his widow, named Almona, who was very devout, made known the day and hour in which she would throw herself into the pile, amidst the sound of drums and trumpets. Zadig remonstrated to his master, how contrary this horrible custom was to the welfare of the human race, that young widows should be

be every day permitted to burn themselves, who were capable of giving children to the state, or of educating those they had already; and he obliged him to acknowledge, that so barbarous a custom ought, if possible, to be totally abolished. 'It is now,' said Setoc, 'more than a thousand years since widows were in possession of the right of burning themselves; and who can change a law consecrated by time? Is there any thing more respectable than even an ancient error?'—'But reason is still more ancient and respectable,' replied Zadig. 'Do you, Sir, communicate these sentiments to the chiefs of the tribes, and I will attend on the widow.'

Accordingly, he waited upon her; and having insinuated himself into her favour, by compliments to her beauty, he urged what a pity it was, that charms like her's should be consumed by fire, only to mingle ashes with a dead husband; and was lavish in his praises of her constancy and heroick fortitude. 'You must surely have loved your husband extremely?' said he; 'No,' replied the lady, 'I loved him not at all. He was a brute; he was jealous; and so great a tyrant, that he was quite insupportable; but I have, notwithstanding, firmly resolved to throw myself on his funeral pile.'—'There is then, surely,' said Zadig, 'a very delicious pleasure in being burnt alive.'—'Alas!' said the lady, 'the thought makes nature shudder; but that is not to be considered. I am a professed devotee, and should I shew the least reluctance, my reputation would be for ever lost. In short, the whole world would despise me, if I did not burn myself.' Zadig having made her confess that she burnt herself merely to please others, and satisfy her vanity, conversed with her a long time, in such a manner, as not only to make her a little in love with life, but even proceeded so far as to inspire her with some degree of partiality for the speaker. 'What would you do,' said he, 'if the vanity of burning yourself should not prevail?'—'Alas!' replied she, 'I believe I should wish you to be my husband.'

Zadig was too much filled with the idea of Astarte, not to elude this warm declaration. He took his leave, and

went instantly to the chiefs, whom he told what had passed, and advised them to make a law, that no widow should be permitted to burn herself, till she had conversed with a young man one hour in private. The law was accordingly passed, and since that time no lady has burnt herself in Arabia. To Zadig they were indebted for destroying in one day, a cruel custom that had lasted so many ages; and he was therefore very justly regarded, by all the ladies in Arabia, as their principal benefactor.

CHAP. XI.

THE SUPPER.

SETOC, who could not long separate himself from Zadig, in whom he discovered so much wisdom, took him to the fair of Balzora, whither the richest merchants in the earth usually repaired. Zadig was delighted to see so many men of different countries assembled in the same place. It seemed to him as if the universe was one large family met together at Balzora. On the second day after his arrival, he sat at table with an Egyptian, an Indian, an inhabitant of Cathay, a Greek, a Celtic, and several other foreigners, who in their frequent voyages to the Arabian Gulph, had learned sufficient Arabic to make themselves understood. The Egyptian appeared greatly exasperated; 'What an abominable place is Balzora!' said he; 'they here refuse me a thousand ounces of gold on the best security in the world!—How is that?' said Setoc; 'on what security have they refused you this sum?'—'On the body of my aunt,' replied the Egyptian. 'She was one of the finest women in all Egypt; she constantly accompanied me in my journeys, but unhappily died on the road; I made her one of the choicest mummies we have amongst us, and might, in my own country, have whatever I pleased, by giving her as a pledge. It is exceeding strange that they will not here lend me a thousand ounces of gold on so solid a security.' He was now going to vent his rage on an excellent boiled fowl; when the Indian, taking him by the hand, cried in a sorrowful manner,

ner, 'Ah! what are you going to do?'—'To eat a wing of this fowl,' said the Egyptian, 'as part of my supper!'—'Consider what you are doing,' said the Indian: 'it is possible that the soul of the deceased may have passed into the body of that fowl; and you would not surely expose yourself to the danger of eating your aunt. The dressing of fowls is a manifest outrage on nature.'—'What do you mean by your nature and your fowls?' replied the choleric Egyptian; 'we worship oxen, and yet eat heartily of beef.'—'Worship oxen! is it possible?' cried the Indian. 'There is nothing so possible,' returned the other; 'it is an hundred and thirty-five thousand years since we first did so, and nobody amongst us has ever yet found fault with it.'—'A hundred and thirty-five thousand years!' said the Indian; 'this account must certainly be exaggerated: it is but fourscore thousand since India was first inhabited, and we are certainly more ancient than you. Brama prohibited our eating cows before you put them on your altars or your spits.'—'Your Brama is a pleasant sort of an animal, to be compared to our Apis,' said the Egyptian. 'What mighty matter has your Brama ever done?'—'Why,' replied the Bramin, 'it was he who first taught mankind to read and write, and to him the whole earth is indebted for the noble game of chess.'—'You deceive yourself, Sir,' said a Chaldean who stood near him; 'we owe these great benefits to the fish Oannes; and it is just that we should pay our homage only to him. All the world will tell you that he is a divine being, that he had a golden tail, with the head of a most beautiful man, and that three hours every day he left the water to preach upon land. Every body knows that he had many children, who were all powerful kings. I have his picture at home, to which, as in duty bound, I pray every evening before I retire to rest, and every morning when I arise. No doubt, people may eat as much beef as they please; but it is surely a very great impiety to have

fish served up at table. Besides, you are both of an origin too ignoble, and too recent, to dispute with me about any thing: the nation of the Egyptians reckon only one hundred and thirty-five thousand years, and the Indians boast but of fourscore thousand, while we have almanacks of four thousand centuries. Believe what I tell you, renounce your follies, and I will give to each of you a beautiful picture of our Oannes.'

The Chinese, or man of Cathay, joining in the discourse, said, 'I greatly respect the Egyptians, the Chaldeans, the Greeks, the Celticks, Brama, Apis, and the beautiful Oannes; but it is possible that Li, or Tien*, as he is commonly called, is superior to all the bulls and fishes in the universe. I will say nothing of my country; though it is as large as the land of Egypt, Chaldea, and the Indies together. I shall not dispute about antiquity, because it is sufficient we are happy; but if it were necessary to speak of almanacks, I should say, that all Asia prefers ours, and that we had very correct ones before arithmetic was known in Chaldea.'

'Ignorant mortals!' cried the Greek, 'have ye not yet been informed, that Chaos is the father of all, and that form and matter have put the world in it's present state?' He spoke thus for a long time; but was at length interrupted by the Celtic, who having drank pretty freely during the whole time of this debate, imagined himself more learned than all the others; and cried out, with a great oath, that there were none but Teutath, and the mistletoe of the oak, that were worth the trouble they were giving themselves; that for his part, he had always mistletoe in his pocket; that the Scythians, his ancestors, were the only men of worth that had ever appeared in the world; and although they had, it was true, sometimes eat their countrymen, yet that was no reason why they ought not to have a great respect for his nation; in short, he declared, that if any one spoke evil of Teutath, he would soon teach him how to behave himself. The quarrel then grew warm, and Setoc

* The Chinese term *Li*, signifies *natural light*, or *reason*; and *Tien*, signifies the *beginning*, or the *Supreme Being*.

began to fear the table would be presently stained with blood. Zadig, who had kept silence during the whole dispute, at last arose. He first addressed himself to the Celtic, as being the most furious, and telling him he had reason on his side, begged to have some of his misletoe; he expatiated on the eloquence of the Grecian, and softened in the most artful manner all the contending parties. He said, indeed, but little to the man of Cathay, because he had been by far the most reasonable. At length he addressed them, in general terms, to this effect. 'My dear friends, you have been all this while contesting about an important topick, in which it is evident you are all unanimously agreed!' At this word, they all cried out together. 'Is it not true,' said he to the Celtic, 'that you do not adore this misletoe, but him that made the misletoe and the oak?'—'Certainly,' replied the Celtic. 'And you, the Egyptian, probably revere, in a certain ox, him who has given us all horned cattle?'—'Yes,' said the Egyptian. 'The fish Oannes,' continued he, 'ought to yield to him who made both the sea and the fishes.'—'Agreed,' said the Chaldean. 'The Indian and Cathaian,' added he, 'acknowledge, like all the rest, a first principle. I have not, it is true, perfectly understood the admirable things which have been delivered by the Greek; but I am fully persuaded he also will acknowledge a Superior Being, on whom form and matter entirely depend.' The Greek, whose wisdom they all admired, confessed that Zadig had exactly penetrated his thoughts. 'You are then all of one mind,' replied Zadig; 'and there is no room for dispute.' They then all embraced him; and Setoc, after having sold his commodities at a very high price, returned home with Zadig. On their arrival at Oreb, they presently found that a prosecution had been carried on against Zadig in his absence, and that he was condemned to be burnt before a slow fire.

CHAP. XII.

THE RENDEZVOUS.

WHILE Zadig attended his friend Setoc to Balzora, the priests of the stars determined to pu-

nish him. As all the costly jewels, and other valtrable ornaments, of every young widow whom they sent to the funeral pile, became their property, it is not greatly to be wondered at, that they should be inclined to burn so great an enemy to their interests. They accordingly accused him of having erroneous sentiments with respect to the heavenly host: they made oath he had been heard to say the stars did not set in the sea. This frightful blasphemy made the judges tremble; they were ready to tear their vestments when they heard these impious words; and would doubtless have done it, if Zadig had had sufficient to pay them for new ones; but, in the excess of their grief, they were willing to content themselves with condemning him to be roasted alive before a slow fire. Setoc, reduced to despair, employed all his interest to save his friend; he was, however, soon obliged to be silent. The young widow Almona, who had conceived a great fondness for life, for which she was indebted to Zadig, resolved, if possible, to draw him from the funeral pile, which he had convinced her was greatly abused. She revolved her design in secret, without speaking to any one. Zadig was to be executed the next day, and she had only the night in which she could save him: let us now behold the method taken by this discreet and benevolent widow.

She made use of the most costly perfumes, and heightened the power of her charms by the richest and gayest apparel; she then went to demand a secret audience of the chief priest of the stars. On being admitted into his august and venerable presence, she addressed herself to him in these terms: 'Eldest son of the Great Bear, brother to the Bull, cousin to the Great Dog,' [these were the titles of the pontiff,] 'I come to acquaint you with my scruples. My conscience tells me I have committed an enormous crime, in not burning myself on the funeral pile of my dear husband. What, in fact, had I worth sparing? perishable flesh only, already wrinkled and dried up.' She then drew off, with a negligent but artful air, her long silk gloves, and displayed her naked arms, which were of an admirable form, and rivalled the snow in whiteness. 'You see,' said she, 'that these are little worth.' The pontiff found

that his heart told him they were worth a great deal; his eyes said so, and his mouth confirmed it, by the most solemn protestations that he had never before seen such lovely arms. 'Alas!' said the widow, 'my arms may not be quite so bad as the rest; but you will confess that my neck was not worthy of the least regard.' She then discovered the most charming bosom that nature had ever formed. A rose-bud on an apple of ivory, when compared to her breast, would have appeared like madder on the wood of the box-tree, and the whiteness of new-washed lambs would have seemed but a dusky yellow. Her delicate neck, her full black eyes, which languished with the soft lustre of a tender fire; her cheeks, which were animated with the most lovely purple, blended with the whiteness of the purest milk; her nose, which somewhat resembled the tower on Mount Lebanon; her lips that were as two borders of coral enclosing the most beautiful pearls in the Arabian sea; in short, the pleasing combination of charms which appeared before him, made the old priest fancy himself not more than twenty; and, with a trembling voice, he began to utter a tender declaration of his passion. Almona seeing him enflamed, begged he would pardon Zadig. 'Alas, lovely fair one!' said he, 'though I should grant you my pardon, my indulgence would be of little avail. It is necessary that it should be signed by three others, my brethren.'—'Sign it first, however,' replied Almona. 'I will do it freely,' said the priest; 'on condition that your favours be the price of my readiness to serve you.'—'You load me with honour,' said Almona; 'but if you will be pleased to come to my chamber after sunset, and as soon as the bright star Sheat twinkles in the horizon, you will find me on a rose-coloured sofa embroidered with silver, and may there use your pleasure with your servant.' She then departed with Zadig's general pardon, which the pontiff had signed, and left him full of love, though not without distrust of his abilities. The remainder of the day he spent in bathing; he drank enlivening draughts of a liquor composed of the cinnamon of Ceylon, and the

precious spices of Tidor and Ternate; and waited with great impatience the rising of the brilliant Sheat.

The lovely Almona, in the mean time, went to the second. He assured her, that the sun, the moon, and all the fires in the firmament, were but as insignificant meteors in comparison of her charms. She demanded the same favour of him, and he proposed to grant it at the same price. Almona suffered herself to be overcome, and appointed the second pontiff to meet her at the rising of the star Algenib. From thence she passed to the third, and to the fourth priest; still obtaining a signature from each, and making the assignments from star to star.

She then sent for the judges to come to her house on an affair of the greatest importance. They waited on her accordingly, and she laid before them the pardon of Zadig, signed with the names of the four priests, informing them of the conditions upon which it had been obtained. The priests, in the mean time, punctually kept their appointment, and each was greatly surprized at finding his brethren, but still more, at seeing there the judges, before whom his shame was manifest. By this stratagem, Zadig was saved; and Setoc was so charmed at the dexterity of Almona, that he shortly after made her his wife.

Zadig now departed, having thrown himself at the feet of his fair deliverer: and Setoc and he separated from each other with tears, vowing a mutual and eternal friendship, and promising that the first of the two who should raise a splendid fortune, should share it with the other.

Zadig travelled by the side of Assyria, constantly thinking on the unhappy Astarte, and reflecting on the fate which seemed obstinately bent on sporting with him, and making him the subject of new persecutions. 'What,' said he, 'four hundred ounces of gold for not having seen a dog; condemned to lose my life for four lines of bad poetry in praise of the king; ready to be strangled because the queen looked kindly upon me; reduced to slavery for having relieved a woman who was beat; and on the point of being consumed to ashes, for having saved the

the lives of all the young widows in
'Arabia!'

C H A P. XIII.

THE ROBBER.

WHEN Zadig arrived on the frontiers which separate Arabia Petrea from Assyria, as he passed near a pretty strong castle, a party of armed Arabians sallied out; and immediately surrounding him, cried, 'Whatever property you have belongs to us, and your persons are at the disposal of our master.' Zadig answered by drawing his sword; and his servant, who was a man of great courage, did the same. They presently overthrew those who had first attacked them; and though the numbers of their opponents redoubled, they seemed not at all dismayed, but resolved to die fighting. Two men fought against a multitude; and such a combat could not be of long continuance. The master of the castle, whose name was Arbogad, having beheld from a window the intrepid behaviour of Zadig, felt his mind filled with esteem: he descended in haste, and came himself to call off his men, and to deliver the two travellers. 'Whatever passes over my territories,' said he, 'becomes my property, as well as what I find in the possessions of others; but your bravery, Sir, shall exempt you from this consequence.' He then made him enter into his castle; ordered his domesticks to treat him with the greatest respect; and in the evening they supped together.

Although Arbogad was an Arabian robber; yet amidst a multitude of bad actions, he sometimes performed such as were worthy of the highest praise. He plundered mankind, it is true, with a furious rapacity, but he also behaved with great liberality. He was intrepid in action; easy in his dealings; a debauchee at his table, but gay even in his debauchery; and had, above all, a free and open frankness. He was much pleased with Zadig, the gaiety of whose conversation prolonged their repast. At length Arbogad said to him: 'I advise you to enrol yourself under me; it is impossible for

you to do better; my occupation is not a bad one, and you may one day become what I am at present.'—'I could wish to know,' replied Zadig, 'how long you have exercised this noble profession?'—'From my most tender youth,' returned this great man; 'I was at first only servant to an Arabian; who, indeed, treated me kindly enough, but any state of servitude was to me insupportable; I was unhappy in considering that fate had given me no portion in a world to which all mankind have an equal claim. I imparted my uneasiness to an old sage Arabian, and he thus endeavoured to comfort me: "My son," said he, "do not despair; there was formerly a grain of sand which lamented its being an atom unknown in the deserts; but at the end of some years it became a diamond, and is at present the richest and most admired ornament of the Indian crown." This discourse made a very strong impression upon me: I considered myself as the grain of sand, and determined, if possible, to become the diamond. Accordingly, I began by stealing two horses; associated to myself companions; and put myself in a condition to rob small caravans; and thus, by degrees, I soon lessened the disproportion there at first appeared between me and other people. I not only enjoyed my share of the good things of this life, but was even recompensed with usury for my former sufferings. I now grew much respected, and became the captain of a band of robbers. This castle was gained by violence: the satrape of Assyria, however, resolved to dispossess me, but I was too rich to have any thing to fear; for by giving him money, I not only preserved this castle, but increased my possessions. He even made me treasurer of the tributes which Arabia Petrea pays to the king of kings; and I punctually execute my office of collector, but shall not very speedily discharge that of paymaster.

'The great desterham of Babylon sent hither, in the name of King Moabdar, an insignificant satrape, with a commission to strangle me. This person arrived with his
'royal

royal master's warrant. I was apprized of the whole affair, and ordered his entire retinue, consisting of four inferior officers, to be strangled before his face, after the same manner as was intended for me. I then desired to know what he was to have obtained by my death. He replied, that his fees would have amounted to about three hundred pieces of gold. I laid before him the advantage he would gain by staying with me; constituted him an inferior robber; and he is now one of my best and richest officers. Believe me, your success will be as great as his. There never was a better season for robbery than at present, for Moabdar is lately killed, and all Babylon is in the greatest confusion. — Moabdar killed!" exclaimed Zadig; then what is become of Queen Astarte?" — "I cannot inform you," replied Arbogad: "all I can tell is, that Moabdar lost his senses, and was murdered; that the people of Babylon are destroying one another; and that the whole empire is laid waste. There are some fine strokes yet to be taken; and, for my part, I have been already pretty successful." — "But the queen, Sir!" said Zadig; "are you unacquainted with the fate of the queen?" — "I have heard something of a prince of Hircania," replied he; "if she was not slain in the tumult, she is probably one of his concubines; but I am more anxious for booty than for news. I have taken many ladies in my excursions, but I never keep them; when they are beautiful, I sell them for the best price I can, without minding who they are: nothing is given on account of rank; and a queen who is ugly, will never find any one inclined to buy her. Perhaps I may have sold the queen, or perhaps she may be dead; but that is of little importance to me, and I suppose you have no more reason to trouble yourself about it than I have." After this he drank so plentifully, that all his ideas were too much confused for Zadig to gain any farther information: he was struck dumb, confounded, and remained motionless as a statue. Arbogad continued drinking, told a number of merry stories, incessantly repeated that he was the happiest man

alive, and invited Zadig to become as chearful as himself. At length, being overcome by the fumes of his liquor, he sunk into a sound sleep; while Zadig passed the night in the most violent agitations. "What," said he, "the king then has lost his senses! he is slain! I cannot but lament his fate. The empire is torn in pieces, and yet this robber is happy. O fortune! O destiny! A man who lives by rapine is happy, and the most amiable creature that nature ever framed, has perhaps either suffered an ignominious death, or lives in a state worse even than death itself. O Astarte! Astarte! what is become of thee!"

As soon as day-light appeared, he enquired about Astarte of every one he saw; but all were busy, and nobody made him any answer. During the night fresh plunder had been brought in, and they were employed in dividing the spoil. All he could obtain in this tumultuous confusion, was the permission to depart; of which he took advantage without delay, and left the castle of Arbogad more overwhelmed with grief and deep reflection than he had ever yet been.

Zadig proceeded on his way, greatly agitated and disturbed: his thoughts were wholly employed on the unhappy Astarte; on the King of Babylon; on his faithful friend Cadore; on Arbogad, the happy robber; on the capricious female, whom the Babylonians had seized on the confines of Egypt; and, in short, on all the disappointments, and all the misfortunes, he had ever experienced.

CHAP. XIV.

THE FISHERMAN.

WHEN Zadig had travelled some few leagues from the castle of Arbogad, he approached the banks of a small river, still lamenting his unhappy fate, and considering himself as the most unfortunate man existing. He there beheld a fisherman lying by the water-side, who was scarce able to hold, with his weak and trembling hand, a net which he seemed little to regard; and raising up his eyes towards heaven, "I am certainly the most miserable

‘ferable wretch alive!’ said the fisherman; ‘I have been, in the opinion of every one, the most famous dealer in cream cheese in all Babylon, and yet I am ruined. I had the most beautiful wife that a man in my station could wish, and by her I have been cruelly forsaken. There still remained my poor house; but even that I have seen pillaged and destroyed. I have taken shelter in a cabin; I have no other resource besides fishing, and yet I cannot catch a single fish. O my net! I will no more throw thee into the water; it is myself I will throw into it.’ On uttering these words, he arose, and advanced forward, in the posture of a man going to throw himself into the stream, in order to put an end to his life. ‘What,’ said Zadig to himself, ‘is there a man living more wretched than I?’ His eagerness to save the fisherman was as sudden as this reflection. He ran to him; stopped him; and questioned him, with an air of pity and compassion. We seem to be less unhappy, when we have companions in our misfortunes: according to Zoroaster, this is not owing to a malignant disposition, but is the effect of a fatal necessity; for we then find ourselves attached to an unfortunate person, as to our own likeness. The transports of the happy would be insults; but two men in distress, are like two weak and slender trees, which leaning together, mutually support and fortify each other against the storms that blow around them. ‘Why,’ said Zadig to the fisherman, ‘do you sink under your misfortunes?’—‘Because I find no means of relief,’ replied he. ‘I have been the most considerable person in the whole village of Deriback, near Babylon, and I made, by my wife’s assistance, the best cream cheese in the empire of Persia. Queen Astarte, and the famous minister Zadig, admired them extremely. I sent to their houses six hundred cheeses, and one day went to the city to be paid; when I was informed, on my arrival in Babylon, that both the queen and Zadig had disappeared. I ran to the house of Lord Zadig, whom I had never seen, and found there the officers of the grand defferham, who being provided with a royal licence,

plundered it with great loyalty and order. I then flew to the queen’s kitchen; where some of the lords of the mouth told me she was dead, others that she was in prison, and others pretended that she was fled; but all of them assured me that my cheeses would never be paid for. I then went with my wife to Lord Orcan’s, for he was one of my customers, and we begged his protection in our distress. He readily granted it to my wife, but refused it to me. She was whiter, Sir, than the cream cheeses that began my misfortunes, and the bloom of her lovely cheeks was ten times more beautiful than the finest Tyrian purple: it was for this reason Orcan detained her, and refused his protection to me. I wrote to my dear wife a letter of desperation. She said to the messenger, “It is very well; I have some little knowledge of the writer; I have heard speak of him: they say he makes excellent cream cheese; let him bring me some, and he shall be paid.”

‘In the height of my misfortunes, I determined to seek redress in a court of equity: I had but six ounces of gold, and it was necessary for me to give two ounces to my counsellor, two to the solicitor who undertook my affair, and the other two to the judge’s clerk. When all this was done, my business was not yet begun, although I had expended more money than my cheese and my wife were worth. Notwithstanding this, I returned to the village, with an intention to sell my house, in order to regain my wife.

‘My house was well worth sixty ounces of gold; but as my neighbours saw me poor, and obliged to sell it, the first to whom I addressed myself, offered me thirty; the second twenty, and the third ten. At length, when I was ready to come to an agreement with one of them, the prince of Hircania came to Babylon; and laying waste all before him, my poor house, among the rest, was first plundered of every thing valuable, and afterwards reduced to ashes.

‘Having thus lost my money, my wife, and my house, I retired to the place where you now see me. I have endeavoured to procure my subsistence

'tence by fishing; but the fish, as well
'as all mankind, desert me; I scarce
'catch one in a day; I am ready to
'die with hunger; and had it not been
'for your kind interposition, I should
'ere now have perished in the river.'

The fisherman did not make this long recital all at once; for Zadig, moved and transported, every moment repeated, 'What! do you not know what is become of the queen?'—'No, my lord,' replied the fisherman; 'but this I know, to my grief, that neither the queen nor Zadig have paid me for my cream cheeses; that my wife is taken from me; and that I am driven to the very brink of despair.'—'I flatter myself,' said Zadig, 'that you will not lose all your money. I have heard much talk of this Zadig; they say he is an honest man, and if he returns to Babylon, as it is to be hoped he will, no doubt but he will give you even more than he owes. But as for your wife, who does not appear to me over honest, I advise you not to seek after her. Take my advice, and make the best of your way to Babylon; I shall be there before you, because I shall ride, and you will go on foot. Address yourself to the illustrious Cador, tell him you have seen his friend, and wait for me at his house. Go, follow my directions, and perhaps you may not always be unhappy.'

'O puissant Orosinades!' continued Zadig, 'thou makest use of me to bestow comfort on this man, whom thou hast ordained to give me comfort.' In speaking thus, he gave to the fisherman half the money he had brought from Arabia; and the fisherman, transported with joy, and filled with amazement, kissed the feet of the friend of Cador, and cried out, 'You are certainly an angel sent to save me.'

Zadig, however, still continued to make fresh enquiries; not without tears. 'What, my lord,' cried the fisherman, 'are you then so unhappy, who have loaded me with benefits?'—'I am an hundred times more unhappy than you,' replied Zadig. 'But how is it possible,' said he, 'that the person who gives, should have more cause for complaint, than he who receives?'—'It is because your greatest misfortunes,' returned Za-

dig, 'arose from your necessity, and mine from the heart.'—'Has Orcan, then, taken your wife?' said the fisherman. This last interrogation recalled to Zadig the remembrance of all his adventures: he repeated the train of his misfortunes, beginning with the queen's dog, and ending with his arrival at the castle of the robber Arbogad. 'Ah!' said he to the fisherman, 'Orcan deserves to be severely punished; but it is commonly such men as him who are the favourites of fortune. However, go to my friend Cador's immediately, and there wait for me.' They then separated; the fisherman walked thanking destiny, and Zadig rode constantly accusing the decrees of fate.

CHAP. XV.

THE BASILISK.

ZADIG being arrived in a very beautiful meadow, perceived several young Syrian females looking in the grass with great application. He took the liberty to approach one of them, and asked if he might have the honour to assist them in their search. 'Take care what you do,' replied the fair Assyrian; 'what we are searching for, can only be touched by a female.'—'That is somewhat strange,' said Zadig; 'may I beg to be informed what this curiosity is that the ladies only are allowed to touch?'—'It is a basilisk,' replied she. 'A basilisk, fair-one! for what reason, pray, do you seek for a basilisk?'—'It is,' said she, 'for our lord and master Ogul, whose castle you see on the bank of that river at the end of the meadow; we are all his most humble slaves; the Lord Ogul is sick, and his physician has ordered him to eat a basilisk stewed in rose water. As this is a very scarce animal, and will suffer nothing to approach it but one of our sex, the Lord Ogul has promised to chuse for his well beloved wife she who first brings him a basilisk. Do not, therefore, longer detain me from the search, since you see what I shall lose if I am circumvented by my companions.'

Zadig then withdrew, and left the Syrian



Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. July 15, 1780.

Syr
nary
tend
to th
part
ther
not c
Her
face
lean
foun
She
with
fine
the
draw
this
ed l
A;
a D
equ
lett
tim
len
e n
e st
e p
e a
e Z
At
lad
pu
cal
an
em
ag
ar
the
wi
pr
fl
an
su
fo
hi
th
re
th
c
c
c
c
c
k
a
c
f
f

Syrian ladies in search of their imaginary booty, in order to pursue his intended journey. But when he came to the banks of a rivulet at the remotest part of the meadow, he perceived another female lying on the grass, who was not employed in seeking for any thing. Her stature seemed majestic, but her face was covered with a veil. She was leaning towards the brook, and profound sighs issued from her mouth. She held in her hand a small wand, with which she traced characters on a fine sand that lay between the turf and the brook. Zadig had the curiosity to draw near, in order to discover what this lady was writing. He approached her; he saw the letter Z; then an A; he was astonished: then appeared a D; he started. Never was surprise equal to his, when he saw the two last letters of his name. He stood for some time immovable: at last breaking silence with a faltering voice, 'O, generous lady!' cried he, forgive a stranger, an unfortunate man, who presumes to ask, by what astonishing adventure, he finds here the name of Zadig traced out by so lovely a hand?' At this voice, and at these words, the lady arose; and with a trembling hand pulled up her veil, looked at Zadig, cast forth a cry of tenderness, surprise and joy, and sinking under the various emotions which at the same instant agitated her soul, fell senseless into his arms. It was Astarte herself; it was the Queen of Babylon; it was she whom Zadig adored, and had reproached himself for adoring; it was she whom he had so deeply lamented, and for whose fate he had been under such dreadful apprehensions! He was for a moment deprived of the use of his senses; while his eyes were fixed on the lovely Astarte, who now began to revive, and gazed on him with looks of the sweetest confusion and tenderness. 'O ye immortal powers,' cried he, 'who preside over the destiny of feeble mortals; have ye indeed restored Astarte to me! How strange the time, the place, the state in which I see her!' He then threw himself on his knees before her, and laid his forehead amidst the dust of her feet; but the queen raised him up, and made him sit near her on the bank of the rivulet. She often wiped away the tears from her eyes, which as often were renew-

ed by her grief; and more than twenty times resumed her discourse, which was so frequently interrupted by her sighs. She enquired by what accident they were brought together, and suddenly prevented his answer by new questions. She put a stop to the recital of her own misfortunes, and would know those of Zadig. In short, both having a little appeased the tumult of their souls, Zadig related in a few words the motives that had brought him thither. 'But tell me, O unhappy but ever worthy queen!' cried he, 'by what means it is, that I find you in this solitary place, clothed in this servile manner, and accompanied by other female slaves, who are in search of a basilisk; which I find is, by the order of a physician, to be stewed in rose-water, as a specific for his dying patients?'

'While they are busied in the fruitless search,' said the lovely Astarte, 'I will acquaint you with what I have suffered since last I saw you; for which Heaven has indeed sufficiently recompensed me, by permitting me to see you again.'

'You know the king my husband was displeased at your being the most amiable of all mankind, and that for this reason, he one night took the resolution to have you strangled, and to poison me. You know, likewise, how Heaven permitted my little mute to inform me of the order given by his sublime majesty.'

'Scarce had the faithful Cadore obliged you to comply with my request, and depart, than he ventured to enter my apartment at midnight, by a secret passage, and conveyed me to the temple of Orosnades; where the magi his brother shut me up in that huge statue, whose base reaches to the foundation of the temple, and whose head rises to the top of the dome. There I lay concealed, or rather buried, for some time; but was carefully attended, and furnished with every necessary, by that venerable and loyal priest. In the mean time, the king's apothecary entered my chamber, by break of day, with a potion in his hand, composed of henbane, opium, hemlock, black henbane, and aconite; and another officer went to yours, with a silk bowstring. Our flight had, however,

E

happily

‘ happily frustrated their designs. Then
 ‘ Cador, the better to deceive the king,
 ‘ affected to accuse us both, and in-
 ‘ formed him that you had taken the
 ‘ road to the Indies, and that I was
 ‘ fled to Memphis: on which the
 ‘ guards were immediately dispatched
 ‘ after both of us.

‘ The couriers who went in search
 ‘ of me, knew nothing of my features;
 ‘ for by the king’s express order I had
 ‘ hardly ever shewn my face to any
 ‘ besides yourself. They followed the
 ‘ pursuit, on the description that had
 ‘ been given them of my person; till
 ‘ a woman of the same stature as my-
 ‘ self, but who perhaps had more
 ‘ charms, appeared before them on the
 ‘ frontiers of Egypt. She was found
 ‘ alone, and in a very disconsolate con-
 ‘ dition; they therefore made no doubt
 ‘ but that this woman was the queen
 ‘ of Babylon, and accordingly took
 ‘ her to Moabdar. Their mistake at
 ‘ first threw the king into a violent rage;
 ‘ but having soon considered her more
 ‘ attentively, he found her extremely
 ‘ beautiful, and became reconciled.
 ‘ This lady was called Missouf; and
 ‘ I have since been informed that her
 ‘ name, in the Egyptian tongue, sig-
 ‘ nifies *the capricious fair one*, a title
 ‘ to which she certainly was well intit-
 ‘ tled. She had, however, as much
 ‘ art as caprice. She pleased Moabdar,
 ‘ and had sufficient influence over him
 ‘ to make him chuse her for his wife.
 ‘ She then began to unfold her real
 ‘ character, and gave herself up to all
 ‘ the fantastical whims of her vain ima-
 ‘ gination: she endeavoured to oblige
 ‘ the chief of the magi, who was old,
 ‘ and troubled with the gout, to dance
 ‘ before her; and on his refusal, she
 ‘ made him suffer the effects of her re-
 ‘ sentment. She ordered her master of
 ‘ the horse to make her a pye of sweet-
 ‘ meats: the master of the horse wisely
 ‘ represented that he was not a pastry-
 ‘ cook; but his making the pye was
 ‘ an affair of great importance, and she
 ‘ degraded him from his office, for be-
 ‘ ing too obstinate. She gave the post
 ‘ of master of the horse to her dwarf,
 ‘ and the place of chancellor to a page.
 ‘ In this manner did she govern Baby-
 ‘ lon. Every body regretted the loss
 ‘ of me. The king who had behaved
 ‘ with great uprightness, till the moment
 ‘ he resolved to poison me, and cause

‘ you to be strangled, seemed to have
 ‘ drowned his virtues in the prodigious
 ‘ fondness he had discovered for the
 ‘ capricious fair. He came to the
 ‘ temple on the solemn festival of the
 ‘ sacred fire, and I saw him implore
 ‘ the gods in behalf of Missouf, at the
 ‘ feet of the statue in which I was in-
 ‘ closed. I then raised my voice and
 ‘ cried out, “The gods refuse to listen
 ‘ to the vows of a king who is become
 ‘ a tyrant; who has sought the life of
 ‘ his innocent consort; and has suf-
 ‘ fered one to supply her place who
 ‘ is distinguished only by her folly.”
 ‘ At these words Moabdar was con-
 ‘ founded, and his head became dis-
 ‘ ordered. The oracle I had pronoun-
 ‘ ced, and the behaviour of Missouf,
 ‘ disturbed his judgment, and in a few
 ‘ days his reason entirely forsook him.
 ‘ His madness, which seemed a chas-
 ‘ tisement from Heaven, was as the
 ‘ signal of a revolt. The people arose;
 ‘ they ran to arms; and Babylon, that
 ‘ had so long indulged herself in indo-
 ‘ lence and ease, became the seat of a
 ‘ dreadful civil war. I was now ta-
 ‘ ken from the hollow of the statue,
 ‘ and placed at the head of a party; and
 ‘ Cador hastened to Memphis, that he
 ‘ might bring you back to Babylon.
 ‘ The prince of Hircania, hearing of
 ‘ these fatal contests, came with his
 ‘ army, and made a third party in Chal-
 ‘ dea. He attacked the king, who fled
 ‘ before him with his capricious Eryp-
 ‘ tian. Moabdar was so closely pur-
 ‘ sued, that he died of the wounds he
 ‘ received in his retreat, and Missouf
 ‘ fell into the hands of the conqueror.
 ‘ I myself had the misfortune to be
 ‘ taken by a party of Hircanians, and
 ‘ was led to the prince, at the very in-
 ‘ stant when Missouf was brought be-
 ‘ fore him. Your vanity will perhaps
 ‘ be flattered, by learning that the
 ‘ prince esteemed me more beautiful
 ‘ than the Egyptian; but you will no
 ‘ doubt be afflicted at hearing that he
 ‘ destined me for his seraglio. He told
 ‘ me, with great resolution, that as
 ‘ soon as he had compleated a military
 ‘ expedition, which he was going to
 ‘ perform, he would honour me with
 ‘ a visit. Figure to yourself what was
 ‘ then my grief! the bonds which had
 ‘ bound me to Moabdar were broken;
 ‘ I had the opportunity of being the
 ‘ bride of Zadig, and was fallen into
 ‘ the

the power of a barbarian! I answered him with all the pride that sprung from my rank and lofty sentiments; having always been told that Heaven bestowed on persons like me, such peculiar marks of grandeur, as with a word or glance reduced to the lowliness of the most profound humility those rash persons who dared to swerve from their duty. I spoke like a queen; but was treated like the most servile domestick. The Hircanian, without even condescending to address himself to me, turned to his black eunuch, and told him that I was impertinent, but he thought me handsome. He ordered him to take care of me, and to put me under the regimen of his favourites, to the end that my colour being heightened, I might be rendered more worthy of his favours, on the day in which he should be pleased to honour me. I told him that I would first put a period to my existence: he replied laughing, that life was a blessing too valuable to be thrown away; and that he was prepared for such speeches. He then left me, with the negligence of a person who had just put up a parrot in it's gilded cage. What a state was this for the first queen of the universe! and, what is more, for a heart devoted to Zadig!

At these endearing expressions Zadig prostrated himself before the queen, and bathed her feet with his tears: when Astarte tenderly raised him up, and proceeded thus. 'I found myself in the power of a barbarian, and the rival of a silly coquet with whom I was confined. She related to me her adventure in Egypt; and I judged by the lineaments she painted, by the time, by the dromedary on which you was mounted, and by every circumstance, that Zadig had fought for her. I did not doubt of your being at Memphis, and therefore took the resolution to retire thither. "Beautiful Missouf," said I, "you are much more agreeable than me; much better will you divert the Prince of Hircania: facilitate as much as possible the means of my escape, you will then reign alone, and while you render me happy, will at the same time free yourself from the fear of a rival."

Missouf listened to my request; she joined with me in concerting the means of my flight; and I secretly departed with an Egyptian slave.

No sooner had we reached the borders of Arabia, than a famous robber, named Arbogad, seized upon me, and sold me to some merchants, who brought me to this castle, the abode of the Lord Ogul, where I was purchased without being known. He is a man who delights in voluptuousness; seeks for nothing but to gratify his appetites; and believes the Almighty has sent him into the world merely to sit at table. He is excessively corpulent, and in continual danger of suffocation. His physician, whom he but little regards when he has a good digestion, governs him when he has eat too much, with the most despotic sway. He has persuaded him at present that his life is in danger, and nothing can cure him but a basilisk stewed in rose-water: the Lord Ogul has therefore promised his hand to the female slave who first brings him a basilisk. You see I have left them to obtain this honour; and I never had less desire to find the basilisk, than since Heaven has permitted me to see you again.

After this declaration, they gave utterance to those tender sensations that had been so long smothered, and said all that love and misfortunes can inspire in hearts the most noble and passionate: while the genii who preside over love, waisted their mutual vows of eternal constancy and truth even to the sphere of Venus.

The whole train of slaves, after a long and fruitless search, returned to Ogul; when Zadig presented himself before him, and spoke to this effect: 'May immortal health descend from heaven to preserve a life so precious as yours! I am a physician, and have hasted hither at the report of your sickness, with a basilisk stewed in rose-water. As I can have no benefit of the high reward you have offered; in case my application succeeds, I only desire the liberty of a young Babylonian slave you have for some days had in your possession; and I consent to remain in slavery in her place, if I am not so happy as to restore the magnificent and illustrious

E 2

' Lord

Lord Ogul to his former health and vigour.

The proposal was accepted immediately; and Astarte set out for Babylon; promising speedily to send a courier to inform Zadig of all that should have passed. Their parting was as their meeting had been. The moment in which we meet, and in which we separate, are (as it is written in the sacred book of Zend) the two most remarkable epochas of life. Zadig's love for the queen equalled his protestations, and the queen's love for Zadig was much greater than her words expressed.

In the mean time Zadig spoke thus to Ogul: 'My lord, my basilisk is not to be eaten; all its virtues must penetrate through the pores. I have put it in a little ball, blown up and covered with a fine skin; you must strike it with all your strength, and I must strike it back for some time. When you have for a few days practised this regimen, the effects of my art will be perceived.' On the first day Ogul was quite fatigued, and imagined that he could not survive; on the second he was less tired, and slept better; in eight days he recovered all the strength, health, activity and vigour, of his most agreeable years. 'You have played at ball, and have been moderate,' said Zadig. 'Know, then, that there is no such creature on earth as a basilisk; that exercise and temperance are friends to health; and that the art of making health and intemperance subsist together, is as chimerical as judicial astrology, or the philosopher's stone.'

Ogul's former physician now perceiving how dangerous this man was to the cause of physic, raised a party amongst his dependants in order to destroy him; but while they were concerting the destruction of Zadig, he received a courier from Queen Astarte.

CHAP. XVI.

THE TOURNAMENTS.

THE queen was received at Babylon with all those transports which are usually felt in favour of injured beauty. Babylon was at this time perfectly quiet and serene. The Prince of Hircania had been slain in battle, and the Babylonians, being conquerors, declared that Astarte should marry

him whom they should chuse for their sovereign. They would not have the first office in the world, that of husband to Astarte, and King of Babylon, depend on intrigues and cabals; they therefore swore to acknowledge for their king, him only who was most valiant, and possessed of the greatest wisdom. The lists were marked out at some leagues from the city, and surrounded by a magnificent amphitheatre. The combatants were to repair thither compleatly armed, and each had behind the amphitheatre a separate apartment, where he was neither to be seen nor known by any one. He was successively to encounter four knights, and those who were so happy as to conquer that number, were afterwards to engage against each other, in such a manner, as that he who remained the last master of the field should be proclaimed conqueror at the games.

Four days after, he was to return with the same arms, and to explain such ænigmas as the magi should propose; and if he did not explain them, he was not to be king. The running at the lances was then to begin again, till a man should be found who was conqueror at both these combats; for they were resolutely bent on having a king possessed of the greatest valour and the most consummate wisdom. During all this time the queen was to be closely guarded, and only permitted to be a distant spectator of the games, covered with a veil; but they would not allow her to speak to any of the competitors, that they might have neither favour nor injustice.

Astarte made known to her lover the preliminary articles above mentioned, not doubting but he would shew himself, in such a cause, superior to every other person both in valour and wisdom. Zadig accordingly set out for Babylon, and besought Venus to fortify his courage, and illuminate his understanding, on this very important occasion.

He arrived on the banks of the Euphrates, on the eve of this great day, and caused his device to be inscribed among those of the combatants, concealing his face and name, as the law required, and then went to repose himself in the apartment allotted him.

His friend Cador, who was returned to Babylon, after having in vain sought

for

for him in Egypt, sent to his lodge a compleat suit of armour, presented him by the queen, and also from himself the finest horse in Persia. Zadig attributed these presents to Astarte; and from this consideration his courage and his love derived fresh strength, and his mind was inspired with new hopes.

The next morning the queen having placed herself under a canopy sparkling with jewels, and the amphitheatre being filled with all the ladies, and with people of every station in Babylon, the combatants appeared in the circus. Each of them came and laid his device at the feet of the grand magi; with these devices they drew lots, and that of Zadig was the last. The first who advanced, was a lord of great wealth, named Itobad; he was filled with vanity, had little courage, was extremely awkward, and almost void of understanding. His parasites had persuaded him that such a man as he ought to be a king; he had answered them, 'Such a man as me ought to reign.' They had therefore armed him from head to foot. His armour was pure gold covered with green enamel; he had a plume of green feathers, and a lance adorned with green ribbands. It was quickly perceived, by the manner in which Itobad governed his horse, that it was not for such a man as him that Heaven had destined the sceptre of Babylon. The first knight who tilted with him, drove him out of his saddle; the second threw him backwards over the horse's crupper, with his legs in the air, and his arms extended. He soon recovered himself, however, but with so ill a grace, that all the amphitheatre laughed heartily. A third disdained to use his lance against him, but making a feigned pass, took him by the right leg, and turning him half round, threw him upon the sand. The squires who attended ran laughing to his assistance, and replaced him in his saddle. The fourth knight then caught him by the left leg, and threw him off on the other side. After this, he was conveyed with scornful shouts from the multitude to his lodge, where according to the rule prescribed he was obliged to pass the night; and, as he hobbled with great difficulty along, 'What an adventure,' sighed he, 'is this, for such a man as me!'

The other knights performed their

duty much better. There were those who conquered two combatants one after another; some proceeded even to three: none, however, but Prince Otamus, vanquished four. Zadig, at last, entered the lists, and successively threw four knights out of their saddles with the most graceful ease imaginable. It now remained to be tried whether Otamus or Zadig should be conqueror. The armour of the first was blue and gold, with a plume of the same colours; Zadig's were white. The wishes of the multitude were divided between the blue knight and the white. The queen, whose heart suffered the most violent palpitations, fervently petitioned Heaven in behalf of the white.

The two champions made their passes and volts with such agility, they mutually gave and received such shocks from each other's lances, and sat so firmly in their saddles, that every one but the queen, wished to have two kings in Babylon. At last, their horses being weary, and their lances broken, Zadig made use of this stratagem; he passed artfully behind his antagonist, sprung nimbly upon his horse, seized the knight in his arms, threw him to the earth, and placing himself on the saddle, wheeled about Otamus, who lay extended in the dust. All the spectators cried out with loud acclamations, 'Victory to the white knight!' Otamus, highly enraged, arose and drew his sword, and Zadig leaped from his horse with his sabre in his hand. They were now both on the ground, engaged in a new combat, where strength and agility triumphed by turns. The plumes of their helmets, the studs of their brassarts, and the rings of which their armour was composed, flew afar off, by the force of a thousand precipitate blows. They sometimes struck at each other with their swords, at other times they thrust, as occasion best served; now on the right, then on the left; now on the head, then at the breast: they retreated, they advanced; they kept at a distance, they closed again; they grappled with each other, twining themselves like serpents; in short, they struggled and engaged as fiercely as two Lybian lions fighting for their prey, and their swords struck fire almost at every blow. At last Zadig for a moment stood still, and having in an in-

stant

stant recovered his breath, made a false pass at the prince, threw him on the ground, and disarmed him. Otamus then cried out, 'O thou knight in white armour! it is you alone who are destined to reign over Babylon.' The queen was transported with joy. The knight in blue armour, and the knight in white, were each conducted to their lodges, in conformity to the rules prescribed, and they were waited on by mutes, who carried them proper refreshments. It is easy to imagine that the queen's dwarf was appointed to wait on Zadig. After supper, the mutes withdrew, and left the combatants to rest their wearied limbs till the next morning, when the conqueror was to produce his device before the grand magi, to compare it, and to make himself known.

Zadig slept pretty sound, notwithstanding his affection for the queen, so much was he fatigued: but Itobad, who lay near him, could not once close his eyes; he arose therefore during the night, entered Zadig's lodge, took his white armour and device, put his green armour in their place, and at day-break went boldly to the grand magi, to declare himself the mighty hero, the thrice happy conqueror. It is true, no one expected to see him the victor; he was, however, proclaimed, while Zadig still slept. Astarte, astonished, and with her heart filled with despair, returned to Babylon. When Zadig awoke, the amphitheatre was almost empty; he sought for his arms, but finding none but the green, he was obliged to cover himself with them, because he had nothing else near him: confounded and enraged, he put them on, and went forth in this equipage.

Those whose still remained in the circus, now received him with hootings; they surrounded him, and insulted him to his face: never man suffered such humbling mortifications. At length his patience forsook him; he dispersed, by striking with his sabre, the populace who dared to affront him; but he knew not what measures to pursue, or how to rectify the mistake. He could not see the queen, nor could he reclaim the white armour she had sent him, without exposing her: thus, while plunged in grief, he was filled with rage and inquietude.

He walked on the banks of the Euphrates, fully persuaded, that fate had destined him to be irremediably wretched, and revolving in his mind all his misfortunes, from the adventure of the damsel who had an aversion to one-eyed men, to that by which he had lost his armour. 'This has happened,' said he, 'from my having awaked too late. Had I slept less, I should not only have been King of Babylon, but should also have been completely happy in the embraces of my dearest Astarte. The vast knowledge of the sciences, the sincere love of virtue, and the personal strength and courage I can boast, have answered no other purpose than that of involving me in misfortunes.' He at last presumed to murmur at the unequal dispensation of Divine Providence, and was tempted to believe that all occurrences were governed by a cruel destiny, which oppressed the good, and gave prosperity to knights in green armour. One cause of his vexation was, his wearing the very green armour which had drawn on him such disgrace; and a merchant happening to pass by, he exchanged it for a robe and bonnet. In this dress he walked along the banks of the Euphrates, filled with the deepest despair, and secretly accusing Providence for involving him in so many afflictions.

C H A P. XVII.

THE HERMIT.

WHILE Zadig was thus rambling, he met a hermit, whose white and venerable beard descended even to his girdle, and who held in his hand a book which he seemed to read with much attention. Zadig approached him with a most profound obeisance; and the hermit returned his salute with an air so noble and beneficent, that he had the curiosity to converse with him. He asked of the venerable stranger the subject of the book he was reading; who informed him, it was the Book of Fate; and demanding if he wished to peruse it, put the book into his hands. Zadig, notwithstanding he was versed in many

many languages, could not explain a single character; this still more increased his curiosity. 'You appear to me much disturbed,' said the good father. 'Alas! I have but too much reason to be so,' said Zadig. 'If you permit me to accompany you,' replied the hermit, 'perhaps I may be of service to you; for I have sometimes poured the balm of consolation into the souls of the unhappy.' The air, the beard, and the book of the hermit, filled Zadig with the greatest respect for this venerable stranger, whose conversation diffused a superior and sublime knowledge into his soul. He discoursed of destiny, of justice, of morals, of the sovereign good, of human frailty, and of virtues and vices, with such a lively and persuasive eloquence, that Zadig felt himself attached to his person by an irresistible charm, and earnestly entreated the venerable stranger not to leave him till they returned to Babylon. 'I myself desire this favour,' said the old man: 'swear by Orosimades, that whatever I do, you will not leave me for some days at least.' Zadig signified his assent, and they set out together.

The two travellers arrived that evening at a superb castle, when the hermit begged an hospitable reception for himself and the young man who accompanied him. The porter, who might have been taken for a great lord, introduced them with a kind of disdainful goodness; and they were conducted to a principal domestic, who shewed them the magnificent apartments of his master. They were admitted to the lower end of his table, without being honoured by the lord of the castle with the least notice; but were served with the same delicacy and profusion as the rest of his guests. After supper, water was brought them to wash, in a gold basin adorned with rubies and emeralds; and they were then conducted to an apartment richly furnished, in which they took their rest. When they arose in the morning, a servant presented to each a piece of gold, and they proceeded on their way.

'The lord of this castle,' said Zadig, as they passed along, 'appears to me a very hospitable man, though somewhat too haughty.' While he uttered these words, he took notice

that the hermit's pocket, though very large, was considerably extended, and soon perceived that this appearance was occasioned by the golden basin which his fellow-traveller had stolen. He was afraid to mention what he saw, but the thoughts of it gave him much concern. About noon, the hermit stood before the door of a little cottage, the residence of a rich miser, and desired they might refresh themselves for a few hours; when an old servant ill clothed, let them in with a visible reluctance, and conducted the hermit and Zadig into a stable, where he gave them some rotten olives, bad bread, and four beer. The hermit eat and drank with as contented an air as he had done the preceding evening; then addressing himself to the old servant, who carefully watched them both, to see that they stole nothing, and often reminded them that the day was declining apace, he gave him the two pieces of gold he had received in the morning, and thanked him for his respectful behaviour. 'Pray,' added he, 'permit me to speak to your master.' The servant, filled with astonishment, introduced the two travellers. 'Munificent lord!' said the hermit; 'I cannot but render you my most humble thanks for the friendly manner in which you have received us. Be pleased to accept this golden basin, as a small testimony of my gratitude.' The miser started, and was ready to fall to the earth; the hermit, however, did not give him time to recover from his surprise, but instantly departed with his young traveller. 'Father,' said Zadig; 'what is the meaning of all I have seen? In nothing do you appear to resemble other men: you have stole a gold basin set with precious stones from a lord who entertained us magnificently, and have given it to a sordid wretch who treated you with the greatest indignity.'—'My son,' replied the hermit; 'that magnificent personage, who entertains strangers with no other view than to gratify his pride, and raise their astonishment at the richness of his furniture, will become more wise for the future; and the miser will henceforth learn better to exercise the duties of hospitality. Be astonished at nothing; but follow me.' Zadig

was

was not yet certain whether his companion was the foolishest person in the world, or one who surpassed all mankind in wisdom and discernment: but the hermit spoke with such authority, that Zadig, not to mention his oath, could not help following him.

At night they arrived at a house very commodiously built, though with great simplicity, and without the least appearance either of prodigality or avarice. The master was a philosopher, who had retired from the world, that he might cultivate in peace his improvement in wisdom and virtue. In this retreat he received strangers with great cordiality, but without any ostentation. He went himself to introduce the two travellers, and led them to a commodious apartment, where he desired they would rest themselves. Some time after, he came himself to invite them to a frugal but genteel repast; during which he talked very intelligently about the late revolutions in Babylon. He appeared sincerely attached to the queen, and wished that Zadig had appeared in the lists to dispute the crown: 'But the people,' added he, 'do not deserve to have a king like Zadig.' A modest blush diffused itself over the cheeks of Zadig at this unexpected compliment, which not only renewed, but redoubled the keen sense of his misfortunes. It was agreed that the affairs of this world, are not always conducted so as to please the wise: but the hermit steadily maintained, that the ways of Providence were unknown; and that men were to blame to judge of the whole, when they perceived only the smallest part.

The next topick of their discourse, was that of the passions: 'Alas!' said Zadig, 'how fatal are their effects!' — 'They are the winds which swell the sails of the vessel,' returned the hermit. 'Sometimes, it is true, they sink it; but there is no failing without them. The bile renders us sick and choleric, but is yet necessary for the support of life: thus every thing below is dangerous, yet still every thing is necessary.'

They then discoursed of pleasures, and the hermit demonstrated that they were the gifts of Heaven. 'Man,' said he, 'can give himself neither sensations nor ideas, he receives them all; his pain and pleasure are there-

fore derived from the same source as his being.'

Zadig was astonished, that a man who had committed such base actions, should be able to reason so well. At length, after a conversation, as instructive as it was agreeable, their host led the two strangers back to their apartment, blessing Heaven for having sent him two men so wise and so virtuous. He offered them money in so free a manner, that it was impossible they could be displeased. The hermit refused it, and said that he must take his leave, as he intended to set out for Babylon before it was light. Their separation was polite and tender: Zadig, especially, felt himself filled with esteem and affection for a man of so amiable a disposition. When the hermit and he were retired to their apartment, they spent a long time in bestowing praises on their host. At break of day the old hermit awaked his companion: 'We must now,' said he, 'depart for Babylon; but while every body is yet asleep, I will leave our entertainer a testimony of my esteem and affection.' On saying these words, he lighted a candle, and immediately set fire to the house. Zadig, in the utmost confusion, shrieked out, and would have prevented his committing so horrid an action; but the old man drew him away by a superior force, and the house was soon in flames. When they had reached a convenient distance, the hermit, with amazing serenity, turned to survey the destructive flames. 'Thanks be to God,' said he; 'the house of my dear host will be totally destroyed! happy, happy man!' Zadig was now tempted, at one and the same instant, to laugh at, to reproach the reverend father, to beat, and to leave him: he did not, however, think proper to do either; for, subdued by the consequence the hermit had assumed, he followed him, in spite of himself, to the place where they were to take their rest. This was at a charitable and virtuous widow's, who had a nephew of about fourteen years of age; he was a very promising youth, and constituted her chief happiness. She performed, as well as she was able, the honours of her house; and the next day ordered her nephew to accompany the travellers to an adjacent bridge, which

which being lately broken down, was dangerous to be passed by strangers.

The youth being attentive to wait on them, walked cheerfully forward. When they were on the bridge, 'Come,' said the hermit, 'I must shew my gratitude to your aunt.' He then took him gently by the hair, and with great calmness plunged him into the river. The youth immediately sunk; but soon appeared again on the surface of the water, and was swallowed up by the torrent. 'O monster! O most wicked of men!' cried Zadig. 'You have promised to behave with greater patience,' said the hermit, interrupting him: 'Learn, then, that under the ruins of that house which Providence has consumed by fire, the master has found an immense treasure, which will enable him the better to exert his beneficence, and render his virtues still more conspicuous. Learn, also, that this youth, whose life Providence has taken away by an untimely death, would have slain his aunt within the space of a year, and thee in that of two.'—'Who told you so, barbarian?' cried Zadig. 'And even though you had read such an event in your detested Book of Fate, are you permitted to drown a youth who never injured you?'—

While Zadig thus spoke, he perceived that the old man had no longer a beard, and that his face discovered the soft traces of blooming youth; the hermit's habit disappeared, and four lovely wings covered a majestic form resplendant with light. 'O messenger of Heaven! O divine angel!' cried Zadig, falling prostrate on the earth; 'you are then descended from the Empyrean to teach a frail mortal submission to the orders of the Eternal.'—'Man,' said the angel Jesrad, 'judges of all, without knowing any thing. You alone, of all the human race, are the man who best deserved to be enlightened.' Zadig begged that he would permit him to speak. 'I distrust myself,' said he; 'but suffer me to entreat you to remove one scruple from my mind. Would it not have been better to have corrected the child, and have rendered him virtuous, than to have drowned him in the river?' Jesrad

replied, 'If he had been virtuous, and had lived, he would himself have been assassinated, together with the wife he would have married, and the little infant, which in that case was destined to have been the pledge of their mutual affection.'—'But why,' said Zadig, 'is it necessary, that there should be crimes and misfortunes, and that misfortunes should fall on the guiltless.'—'The wicked,' replied Jesrad, 'are always unhappy. Misfortunes serve only as a touchstone, to prove a small number of the just thinly scattered throughout the earth; nor is there any evil from which some good doth not proceed.'—'What,' said Zadig, 'if there was only good, and no evil?'—'Then,' replied Jesrad, 'this earth would be another earth; the chain of events would be another arrangement conducted by wisdom; but this other arrangement, which would be absolutely perfect, can exist only in the eternal abode of the Supreme Being, where no evil is permitted to approach. He has created millions of worlds, among which there are not two that resemble each other. This immense variety proceeds from his omnipotence. There are no two leaves among the trees of the earth, nor two globes in the infinite fields of light, that perfectly resemble one another; and all that you see on the little atom whereon you are born, must of necessity exist in its own place, and at its appointed time, according to the immutable decrees of him who comprehends the whole. Mankind imagine that the child who has just perished, is fallen into the water by chance; and that it was also by chance that the house of our generous benefactor was consumed: but there is no such thing as chance or accident; it is all either a trial, a punishment, a reward, or a foresight. Remember the poor fisherman, who thought himself the most unhappy of men: Orosmales sent you to change his destiny. Cease, then, frail mortal, to dispute against what it is your duty to adore.'—'But——' said Zadig. As he pronounced the word 'but,' the angel took his flight towards the tenth heaven. Zadig sunk on his knees, and adored the wonders of Providence,

F

with

with every mark of the most profound submission: when the angel cried from on high, 'Proceed towards Babylon.'

CHAP. XVIII.

THE ÆNIGMAS.

ZADIG, like a person deprived of his senses by loud claps of thunder, walked on without knowing whither. He, however, reached Babylon, on the day in which those who had fought at the tournaments were assembled in the vestibule of the palace, to explain the ænigmas, and to answer the questions of the grand magi; and all the knights were arrived, except him who wore the green armour. As soon as Zadig appeared in the city, the people assembled about him; their eyes were not satisfied with seeing him, their lips poured forth blessings upon him, and their hearts wished him the empire. The envious man saw him pass: he frowned, and turned aside. The people, with loud acclamations, attended him even to the palace gate. The queen, who had heard of his arrival, was in the utmost agony between fear and hope. Inquietude took possession of her mind; she could neither comprehend why Zadig was without arms, nor how Itobad became possessed of the white armour. A confused murmur ran through the whole assembly, at the sight of Zadig; they were surprized and charmed at seeing him; but none besides the knights who had fought were permitted to appear in the court. Zadig, however, cried out, 'I have taken my share in the combats, though another bears my arms; and while I wait till I have the honour to prove my assertion, I demand permission to be admitted, that I may endeavour to explain the ænigmas.' The magi put Zadig's request to the vote; and his reputation for probity was still so strongly imprinted in their minds, that they unanimously agreed to admit him.

The first question proposed by the grand magi was this: 'What is the longest, and yet the shortest thing in the world; the swiftest and most slow; the most divisible, and the most extended; the least valued, and the most regretted; without which no-

thing can be done; which devours all that is small, and yet gives life and spirit to every thing that is great.'

Itobad had the honour to speak first. He replied, that so great a man as he had no knowledge of ænigmas, and that it was enough for him to have conquered by his valour, and the strength of his arm. Some said that the meaning of the ænigma was *fortune*; others, the *earth*; others, the *light*: but Zadig said, that it was *TIME*. 'Nothing is longer,' added he, 'since it is the measure of eternity; nothing is more short, since it is insufficient to complete our projects; nothing is more slow to him that waits, nothing more rapid to him who enjoys; it extends in greatness even to infinitude; it is divisible into infiniteness; all men neglect it; all lament it's loss; nothing can be done without it; it consigns to oblivion what is unworthy of being known by posterity, and it immortalizes great and noble actions.' The assembly agreed unanimously that Zadig was in the right.

The next question was: 'What is the thing that we receive without thanks, which we enjoy without knowing how, which we give to others without knowing where it is to be found, and which we lose without being conscious of it's loss.'

Every one gave his own explication; but Zadig alone said, that it was *LIFE*: and he solved all the other ænigmas proposed with equal facility. Itobad constantly said that nothing was more plain, and that he could have answered them with the same ease, if he had been inclined to have given himself the trouble. Questions were then proposed respecting justice, the sovereign good, and the art of government, Zadig's answers were still judged to be the most solid. 'What a pity it is,' said the magi, 'that a person of such consummate wisdom should be so bad a knight!'

'Most illustrious lords,' cried Zadig, 'I have had the honour to be conqueror in the tournaments, and it is to me that the white armour belongs. Lord Itobad took possession of it while I slept; judging, perhaps, that it would fit him better than the green. I am, however, ready to en-

counter

‘counter before this august assembly, with my gown and sword, the usurper of the white armour, that you may be enabled to judge who it is that has had the honour of conquering the brave Otamus.’

Itobad with the greatest confidence accepted this challenge. His head being guarded by a helmet, his breast and back by his cuirass, and his arms by his brassards, he entertained no doubt but that he should easily obtain the advantage over a champion in a cap and gown. Zadig drew his sabre, and with it saluted the queen, who viewed him with a mixture of joy and fear. Itobad drew his, and without any salutation, rushed on Zadig like one who had nothing to fear, and was determined to bear down all before him. Zadig, however, knew how to prevent the blow, by opposing the strongest part of his sword to the weakest of his adversary's, by which means Itobad's sabre was quickly broken. Zadig then seized him round the body, threw him to the earth, and placing the point of his sword to the opening of his cuirass; ‘Suffer yourself to be disarmed,’ said he, ‘or I will this moment take your life.’ Itobad, always surprized that any disgrace should happen to a person of his consequence, suffered Zadig to do as he pleased. He therefore very peacefully took away his magnificent helmet, his superb cuirass, his rich brassards, and his brilliant cuisses; and clothing himself with them, ran in this dress to throw himself at Astarte's feet. Cadore easily proved that the white armour belonged to Zadig; and he was thereupon acknowledged king of Babylon by the unanimous consent of the whole assembly; and more particularly with the approbation of Astarte, who, after such a series of misfortunes, had the happiness of seeing her beloved Zadig thought worthy to possess her in the eyes of all the world. Itobad withdrew, and was obliged to content himself with being called plain *lord* in his

own house; while Zadig was elected king, and possessed happiness equal to his wishes. He now began to reflect on what the angel Jezrad had said to him; he remembered the story of the grain of sand which became a diamond; and both himself and Astarte admired the wonders of Providence. He permitted Missouf, the capricious beauty, to roam where she pleased; and sent in search of Arbogad the robber, to whom he gave an honourable post in his army, with a promise of advancing him to the highest dignities, if he behaved like a soldier of honour, but assured him he should be punished without mercy if he continued to follow the profession of a robber.

Setoc was called from the farthest confines of Arabia, together with the fair Almona, to preside over the commercial affairs of Babylon; and Cadore was promoted to one of the highest offices in the state, as the reward of his distinguished services, and was the king's chief favourite. Indeed, he was strictly the friend of the king, and Zadig was then the only monarch on earth who had so true a friend. The little mute was not forgotten; and a very genteel house was given to the fisherman, to whom Orcan was condemned to pay a large sum of money, as well as to restore his wife: the fisherman had, however, obtained wisdom; he took only the money.

Zadig did not leave the beautiful Semira disconsolate, who had deserted him when she feared he would be blind with one eye; nor Azora comfortless, who had been willing to cut off his nose; but endeavoured to alleviate their sorrows by the most munificent presents. The envious Arimazes, indeed, died with shame and vexation. The empire now enjoyed peace, glory, and all the blessings of plenty. This was the most illustrious age of the earth. Babylon was wholly governed by justice and love. The people blessed Zadig, and Zadig blessed Heaven.

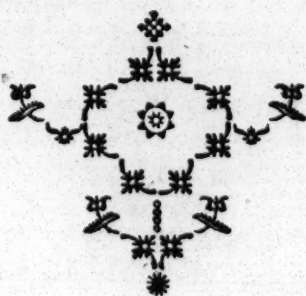
F I N I S.

4-1-10

THE
D E V I L
UPON
T W O S T I C K S.

TRANSLATED FROM THE
DIABLE BOITEAUX OF MONSIEUR LE SAGE.

TO WHICH ARE PREFIXED,
ASMODEUS'S CRUTCHES,
A CRITICAL LETTER UPON THE WORK;
AND
DIALOGUES BETWEEN TWO CHIMNEYS OF MADRID.
IN TWO VOLUMES.



L O N D O N :

Printed for HARRISON and Co. No. 18, Paternoster-Row.

M DCC LXXX.

D E V I L

T W O S T I C K S

MADE IN AUSTRIA

TO THE

ARMED

FOR THE

MADE



A

I T n
antip
of A
deus.
it is,
cious
under
guise
uglin
instan
there
mistr
all,
in al
when
genie
and
In
sense
than
relig
porta
whic
poin
brot
from
proc
doc.
' br
' fir
pres
in t
C
ridi
Wh
not
whi
so n
defe



ASMODEUS' CRUTCHES.

S I R,

I Take this opportunity of acquainting you, that there is published a new edition of the Devil upon Two Sticks. Notwithstanding the antipathy that all mankind have conceived, ever since the original sin of Adam, against the race of fallen angels, every body loves Asmodeus. He is read, he is caressed; never was devil so fondled. True it is, he might have appeared to Cleofas under a somewhat more gracious figure; such as the poets represent him, when he is introduced under the specious appellation of Cupid. But he scorned to use any disguise to his deliverer, and shewed himself, therefore, in all his original ugliness, as a proof he had a mind to deal sincerely with him: and an instance of sincerity it was, not very common; for how many lovers are there, who never had once an opportunity of beholding the faces of their mistresses, only in their native and without borrowed charms! And after all, such as we see him, he appears more like the god of pleasure, than in all those beauties and graces the ancients have bestowed upon him, when they equip him as the god of love: and his mantle, with it's ingenious emblems, becomes him better than the fillet, the gilded wings, and the sounding quiver.

In other respects, the fine moral character he sustains, and the vast sense and discernment he shews in the course of his observations, do more than compensate for the deformity of his person. He acquits himself religiously of the promise he made Don Cleofas, does him most important service, and discovers nothing of that falshood and deceit, for which the inhabitants of his country are rendered so justly infamous. In point of sense and discernment, he supports nobly the reputation of his brother dæmons: he shews as much discretion as one could well expect from the whole society together; of which there needs be no other proof than what he says on the subject of his own quarrel with Pillardoc. 'After which,' says he, 'our friends reconciled us, we embraced, and have cherished a mortal hatred against each other ever since.' This hint leaves more to the imagination than can be expressed by words; and you will find an hundred such other instances in the remarks he makes on the follies and vices of mankind.

Can the foibles of men be exposed with more sense or more force of ridicule than he has expressed? No; his paintings are all finished. When I represent to myself this dæmon halting on his crutches, I cannot help considering those sensible and satirical strokes of ridicule, with which he every now and then lashes the follies and vices of mankind, as so many parts of the crutches, which he bestows on such as he thinks deserve them; and, notwithstanding the careless air he puts on, as if

seemingly he intended only amusement, he never misses, or strikes in the wrong place: his arrows are sure, and always hit the mark.

Doubtless the young gentleman improved more in one night from the instructions of Asmodeus, than he had done all his life before from the lectures of the doctors of Alcala. These people, by their eternal jargon, instil into the minds of youth a distaste of morality and virtue. Instead of which Zambullo found in Asmodeus an artful and able master, who could find the way to his pupil's heart, and whilst he entertained him with agreeable scenes of pleasurable amusement, conveyed instruction at the same time, exposing the foibles of human nature, and teaching the young student how to correct them, without disgusting him by tedious and insipid prelections.

I am not therefore at all surprized, that this dæmon should be well received upon his coming among us. For how can any man in France refuse his approbation to a work, that, under the appearance of a trifling amusement, contains such a happy assemblage of wit, delicacy, sense, and politeness? The minds of men are naturally prejudiced against the dryness of dogmatic precepts; they want to be entertained with something agreeable and pleasant; but, along with that, they expect reason and sense. In a word, we are a rational people, and Signior Asmodeus has exactly suited himself to the genius of Frenchmen. He certainly must have conceived a previous affection to our nation; though I cannot but wonder at his generosity in having taken so long a journey to make us wiser, against his own interest, and against the interest of the society in general, who, I dare say, give him no thanks for his pains.

Is there any man, Sir, who does not envy the situation of Zambullo, on those towers of speculation where Asmodeus pitched him? As for me, I fly along with him on the wings of fancy, to the top of St. Salvador; and behold, in his company, with infinite pleasure, the objects that are represented to his consideration. A superannuated coquette, who leaves upon her toilette her hair, her eyebrows, and her teeth, before she goes to bed; a beau of threescore, who takes off, with his own hands, one eye, and a pair of whiskers, waiting for his valet to help him off with his wooden arm and wooden leg, that he may go to bed with the rest; and the sister of this lovely Adonis, who by means of artificial lips and breasts, passes for a lady of twenty-five: I cannot, I say, forbear laughing, with Zambullo, at the thoughts of three such lodgers all in the same house.

Shifting the scene, I see, with pleasure, my good old Zanubio pierced to the heart with the cries of his wife in labour, and the undisturbed repose of the footman, who is the cause of all the pains she endures; and I greatly commend the diligence of that physician, who is dressing in such a hurry to visit the bishop, who has coughed above three times since he went to bed.

Exalted in that airy garret, methinks I see the ingenious author, who compiles a system of all social and civil virtues, and copies all the praises and commendations that have ever been bestowed on any man for his personal merit or the fame of his ancestors, which he puts into a dedication; and though he has not as yet any patron particularly in view, keeps them ready for market to any one that will bid for them. There are many authors, to be sure, who eat the bread of flattery; but I am surprized at the court-lady, who thinking the dedication made to her not sufficient, drew up one herself, and sent it to the author to have it printed.

ASMODEUS'S CRUTCHES.

Was I to pass the streets with my companions, I should certainly bewail the hard fate of the faithful Castilian, shivering under a window, and pouring forth his love-complaints; while his mistress bewails, to the soft airs of her guitar, the absence of his rival. And in the other large house I perceive, greatly to my edification, a banker, stung with remorse of conscience, resolving to found a monastery out of the unjust gains he has made. He is certainly in the high road to salvation; for having once performed this vow, he thinks all his sins are forgiven. Nor am I less pleased with the scruples of that lady in her grand climacteric, who marries a boy of seventeen, that she may have what she wants without remorse of conscience; and I think her nuptials, upon that account, ought to have been celebrated with a more decent concert of music than basons, kettles, and frying-pans.

The dæmon having shewed Don Cleofas several other entertaining objects, that he might not clog him with too much variety, stops short to make him observe the appearances of joy and satisfaction in a great hotel, and relates to him particularly, from beginning to end, the affair of Leonora de Cespides. We must allow, Sir, that Asmodeus tells a story well. The incidents of this romance are entertaining, the winding up natural and interesting, and a moral runs through the whole. The innocence and credulity of Leonora, the love and ambition of Belflor, the artifices of Marcella, the rage and indignation of Don Lewis, and every other character there introduced, are represented according to the truth of nature; for Asmodeus was certainly well acquainted with the various passions and emotions of the human mind.

After the recital of this history, I return with fresh pleasure to partake of the new variety of scenes Asmodeus opens to his pupil, and which he comments upon with great judgment and penetration. In that hotel lives a booby of a lord, who, forsooth, would pass for a Mæneas: in order to acquire the character of a patron of men of learning, he gives the use of one of his garrets to a dictionary-maker. Some doors beyond him lives an experienced dealer in her way, a woman who is agent for a society of rich widows, and keeps a kind of register-office, containing an account of all the strangers who successively come to Madrid; their parentage, their country, their age, their shape and complexion: of these she gives in a list to her customers, who peruse this roll, and pitch upon whom they like; and then this lady sets about procuring an interview.

In another house you see the devotees, who are in such a hurry and alarm about the sick inquisitor, a scene extremely diverting; one is preparing sops, and another sits at his pillow, taking care to keep warm his head and breast; these two are no doubt favourites of the holy father. The anti-chamber is crowded with other penitents, who bring him different sorts of remedies; every one praising his own in particular, and slipping a ducat into the hand of his servant, begs of him, 'Laurence, my dear Laurence, recommend my bottle to your master above the others.' To make Cleofas sensible of the happy condition of an inquisitor, Asmodeus adds, 'Was I not a dæmon, I would be an inquisitor.'

Let us, Sir, accompany Zambullo to the prisons to which he desired the dæmon to convey him; and what think you, pray, of that gallant, who being caught as he was mounting by a ladder into a balcony, runs the risk of being hanged for a house-breaker, rather than save his life at the expence of his mistress's honour, by owning the intrigue? He will

be, perhaps, the first and last martyr of this kind, and I am satisfied wont find a man in France to imitate his example. I heartily pity that other innocent person, the unhappy groom of the chambers, who lies there accused unjustly of having stolen a diamond, and could have wished, as Don Cleofas, that Asmodeus had set him at liberty; but I am mightily pleased with the reason he gives why it is not in his power, when he tells him, that was he himself in prison, he could not escape the hands of justice without paying his ransom. Mentioning another robbery, for which the man who committed it lies likewise in prison, he seems to strike the judges pretty hard. Zambullo asked him, if the man who lost the pistoles had had them returned to him? 'Not at all,' says Asmodeus; 'they are so many proofs of the fact, and such witnesses they never part with.' Nor, indeed, does he shew more regard to the holy inquisition, only that he speaks of that reverend tribunal in a very low voice.

The dismal prospects of the prisons are succeeded by scenes more pleasant. What do you think of the distinguished piety of Sangui-suela, that rancorous vulture, who took six hundred ducats premium for the loan of three hundred and forty; but would not tell the money, till he had first been at mass and heard a sermon? The sleeping lady, who mistook her lover for her footman, must have been in great confusion at the discovery; and that coolness of behaviour her gallant shewed upon the occasion, is admirable. He met the happy valet upon the head of the stairs; 'Ambrose,' said he to him, 'do not go in, your mistress desires you will let her rest a little longer.'

We shift the scene once more, and come to an hospital for the reception of people who are lunatic, or mad. How many different kinds of madness do we there find proceeding from as various causes! That Castilian newsmonger had his brain disturbed by a paragraph in the newspapers, giving an account that twenty-five Spaniards were beaten by fifty Portuguese. Don Blas is gone mad for being obliged to give back the dowry of his deceased wife; and that poor schoolmaster has cracked his brain in researches after the *paulo post futurum* of a Greek verb. You see women too confined here; the wife of a country justice, who ran mad at being called a cit, by a woman of quality; and the wife of the treasurer of the council of the Indies, who has undergone the same fate, at being obliged, in a narrow passage, to make her coach go back, to give way to a duchess.

Asmodeus then shews the student a number of people who deserve to have a place in Bedlam, as much as those who are confined: as that rich widow of a master-builder, who bequeaths all she has to grandees, merely on account of their titles, and will leave nothing to a man who she acknowledges has done her very great services, for fear his name should be a disgrace to her last will and testament; and I am hugely pleased with that gallant cavalier of threescore, who recounts the adventures of his youth to a young lady he is in love with, and expects she will regard him for what he has been. I moreover like that good dean, who buys up jewels, trinkets, and all sorts of rich furniture, that after his death they may embellish the catalogue of his inventory. You may judge of the other fools from these instances.

Asmodeus extends his observations even to the dead. He carries Zambullo to a church full of sepulchral monuments, and gives him an account of the persons for whom they are erected. Sometimes he gives
a very

a very short character of the deceased, or only mentions the manner of their death. This is the tomb of a general officer, who, at his return home, like Agamemnon, found an *Ægisthus* in his house. In another lies a courtier, who never troubled himself about any thing but attending the levee. And a little farther lies an old director of the Indies, and his young wife, strangely mingled together: an apoplexy seized him just as he was going to disinherit two children he had by a former marriage; and his wife died the next day, out of vexation that her husband did not live three days longer.

The dæmon, by the power he possessed, makes *Zambullo* see the departed spirits of the dead, and among the rest, three famous actresses, whose exit was pretty extraordinary. One died of a surfeit after a debauch; the second of envy at the applauses given another actress at her first appearance upon the stage; and the third of a miscarriage, after she had been acting in the character of a vestal. I question much if the physicians greatly like those pieces of representation that *Asmodeus* shews the student upon the wings of death; and a man must have a diabolical imagination, to suppose young graduates in physic making their appearance there in the presence of death, who confers upon them their degrees. I would not advise a man of a sickly constitution to speak of doctors so disrespectfully,

Observe, Sir, how artfully *Asmodeus* changes the subject; and, to efface from the mind of his friend the melancholy impressions occasioned by the sight of death and the ghosts of the dead, introduces a history founded on the effects of the strength of friendship. It is equally well told as the story of *Count Belflor*; though, on account of the tragical catastrophe, I am not ill pleased to find it immediately followed by the chapter of dreams, which the dæmon unfolds very often in a manner that approaches to reality. The dreams, for example, of the attorney and his wife, do not much deviate from truth: the man dreams he is going to see a client in the infirmary, and to supply him with some of his own money; and the woman is possessed with the imagination that her husband is driving out of his house a strong stout fellow of a clerk, of whom he is become jealous. And the dream of that lady, who fancies that *Jupiter* is fallen in love with her, and endeavours to win her under the appearance of a handsome page, is not perhaps altogether chimerical.

I will not say any thing, Sir, upon the observations you will find on the several people who pass in the day-time through the streets of *Madrid*, nor on the subject of the redeemed captives. It is still the same *Asmodeus* who speaks, and continues his remarks with the same sense and penetration. The work is finished in the manner in which it was began, and the judicious reader will find, to the last, strokes of the crutches, which he may improve to his advantage and edification.

I am, Sir, &c.



D

4. I
same
B
per f
to co
A
lar :
B
A
prof
B
A
depe
whic
B
A
rectr
flyin
B
a ha
best
are
A
both
clan
now
dift
The



DIALOGUES,

SERIOUS AND COMIC,

BETWEEN

TWO CHIMNEYS OF MADRID.

DIALOGUE I.

THE CHIMNEY A. AND THE CHIMNEY B.

A. IT is all over with me, my dear neighbour, I am quite ruined; the Lares, my protecting gods, now freeze my hearth, and the same chilness seizes myself from head to foot.

B. I am startled at what you tell me. How has this terrible distemper seized you? and how comes it you are so suddenly changed from hot to cold? for I have constantly seen you all in a fire.

A. Alas! I must of necessity follow the destiny of my friend the scholar and the poor man.

B. What has happened to him?

A. O! the greatest of misfortunes. His income, that is to say, the profits of his pen, are quite put a stop to.

B. I cannot say, neighbour, that I yet understand you.

A. Why then I will explain myself. I talk of an author. His finances depended upon the sale of small pamphlets calculated for amusement, which he composed, and they have forbid all writings of this kind.

B. What, did these pamphlets support him?

A. Yes, and at his ease too; for he did not take up his time in correcting and publishing a volume; he entertained the public with these flying numbers, at least seven or eight in the year.

B. What a pity it is to deprive the world of the industry of so good a hand; and how comes it they forbid writings of amusement, the very best things in the world? The public loves to be entertained, and why are they not at their liberty to buy what diverts them?

A. You are certainly in the right; and this prevailing taste makes both for authors and booksellers. But then this is the ground of the clamour against that kind of writings; they say that nothing is wrote now a days, but low nonsense and mere bagatelle; and that posterity will distinguish this age for the 'Age of romances, and all sorts of futility.' They say, moreover, that there is a general depravity of taste; that these

these broken numbers are a real tax upon the public; that by this means a romance is swelled to an intolerable size; and that an author is now actually proposing a scheme, to divide one of them into three hundred and sixty-five parcels; that he may be able to supply his customers every day in the year.

B. Why, after the thousand and one nights, the thousand and one days, the thousand and one quarters of an hour, and so many other thousand and one things, I think they may very well put up with a romance split into no more than three hundred and sixty-five divisions.

A. Judge then if they ought to find fault with my author, who in no work has ever divided beyond number eight.

B. Indeed, my dear friend, I pity you, as I do the chimneys of all authors and booksellers, which will soon become as cold as yours.

A. It is but cold comfort for the afflicted, to have others as miserable as themselves.

B. You are to be pitied, and I do pity you; what else is in my power to do? Besides, I must tell you freely, that a long time since, I have heard many people say, it was high time to check that prevailing taste for low trifling amusements, and to put a stop to romance writing.

A. What is this you say?

B. Yes, it is true. And men of discernment, who are unprejudiced, say now, that this inhibition is of great service to polite writing. That people ought to have some useful end in view, or not write at all. This is their judgment upon the affair, and all the world come into their sentiments.

A. But is not that which pleases, at the same time useful?

B. Yes, what gives pleasure is so far useful. But besides the utility arising only from pleasure, readers of taste want something solid and instructive, something that has its foundation laid in the real truth of manners: for example, the Devil upon Two Sticks is so far a romance, but at the same time more instructive than a treatise of morality. There the fable is both pleasant and useful; that is, useful by joining pleasure with instruction. Let your author write such another, and I'll answer for his having permission to print it; provided, though, he don't publish it in eight numbers; for that, you know, is robbing the public to enrich the bookseller.

A. Come, let us put an end to this conversation. One may easily perceive that you are a chimney belonging to a Change broker. You are a tasteless, insipid creature, and ignorant, in the superlative degree, of every thing concerning literature; your narrow genius does not reach beyond a sum in addition; and I am ready to hang myself for having been so free with you as I have been.

B. What, do you insult me, in return for my shewing such concern for your misfortunes?

A. Is that shewing concern for one's misfortunes, to commend those who are the cause of them? Go, once more I tell you, you are as great a dunce as him you belong to.

B. For one that complains of being almost froze to death, methinks you shew a good deal of warmth. But, in the mean time, I desire you will let my brother alone; one dash of his pen is worth all the volumes of Parnassus. Every thing he writes is sensible, agreeable, and universally approved: and so long as his writings are but legible. I fear not the cold; my hearth will be kept as warm as if it had been the eternal fire of the vestals, and your poor chilled author will bless himself

DIALOGUES.

xi

himself to be allowed to sit down by it: As for you, notwithstanding your ill usage of me, all the harm I wish you, is such another brother as mine, to put you into heat again.

DIALOGUE II.

THE CHIMNEY C. AND THE CHIMNEY D.

C. **W**HAT a prodigy! what a miracle is this! Do you know, my friend, what has happened to me?

D. Is it long since?

C. About an hour ago.

D. No, my dear neighbour, I know not; for I was obliged to assist at a marriage which was celebrated in the apartment I belong to.

C. A marriage!

D. Yes, and a couple the best matched that can be. Lysander and Celimene have taken me witness to their vows. The penates, my household gods, are the only guarantees of their mutual engagements, and the faith they have plighted to one another. No mortal was present at this ceremony, excepting Lizetta, the faithful servant of Celimene. They are now enjoying the pleasures of this mysterious union.

C. This marriage, to be sure, is very solemnly ratified!

D. Why yes, I know as well as you, there are some little formalities wanting, but what then? Love will supply the place of all. They love one another; and I am convinced, let their parents do what they please, will continue so to do; and pray do you find that common in marriages solemnized according to the rites of the church?

C. No, really. Marriages, for the most part, are only so many civil contracts, that bind two persons eternally together, who are so far from loving, that they generally hate one another during the whole course of their lives.

D. Well, I can answer for it, the bonds which unite Lysander and Celimene, are most sacred and solemn, for they are the bonds of love.

C. I wish you joy, my dear neighbour; and I like you all the better for interesting yourself so much in the happiness of lovers. It is what we owe them as confidants of their secrets; and I myself would do all in my power to serve them, which you will easily believe, when I tell you what has happened to me, which is pretty much such another affair as yours. You know the apartment I belong to is a real cell.

D. Ay, and the cell of the charming little Julia.

C. Julia was beloved by a very pretty fellow of an officer, named Trafon, and Trafon did not bestow his love on one that was ungrateful.

D. Now, I did not know that.

C. There was nothing wanting to compleat their mutual happiness, but a favourable opportunity; and Julia's mother had more eyes than Argus. The cell where this unhappy young creature lay, was more inaccessible than the tower of Danae.

D. Bless me, how learned you are! You understand the ancient fables. I fancy, before you had Julia, some poet had studied by your fire-side. But since you mention the tower of Danae, you remember it could not keep out a shower of gold.

C. True; and you remember, likewise, that Danae was courted by Jupiter; and you know a god can change water and stones into gold; but

but Trason's pockets had been pretty well drained by three campaigns, so that it did not at all suit him to have recourse to that expedient.

D. What other expedient then did he fall upon?

C. The most simple and obvious one that could be. He lives but just by; and without the help of any other magic than pure love, up he gets through his chimney to the ridge of the houses, comes to the head of my chimney, which he easily removed, for I had no mind to hinder him; and then slides down through the funnel into the chamber of Julia, supporting himself by his hands and his knees.

D. Did she expect his coming?

C. No, she only wished it: and far from running with open arms to receive her lover, was in a most mortal fright at seeing him come down.

D. She swooned away, I warrant you.

C. If she did not at first, she would have done so very soon. Come, none of your joking. This gallant of a chimney-sweeper cast himself at the feet of Julia, and she soon knew him to be her dear Trason. You never saw any thing more moving than the situation they were both in at that time. This is the advantage we chimneys enjoy: we are witnesses to a thousand fights that men would pay any price for seeing. At present Julia's fears are over: she feels emotions of quite a different kind.

D. There, now, my good neighbour, in one night two marriages pretty much alike.

C. Why, very nearly so, indeed. Though my couple not only exchange the solemn vow; but the consequences will, very probably, oblige the mother of Julia to acknowledge Trason for her son-in-law; and I rejoice before-hand in the thoughts of what perplexity this good woman will be reduced to.

D. And I in the pleasures her dear child this moment enjoys.

D I A L O G U E III.

THE CHIMNEY E. AND THE CHIMNEY F.

E. **P**RAY tell me, if you please, good neighbour F. how you can, without being tired, put up with having nobody besides your two old maids? For from morning till night no one comes near your fire-side; you have always the same people, and always the same subject of conversation. Indeed, I should imagine that by this time your patience was wore out.

F. I must indeed own to you, that I often wish they would change their quarters; though, perhaps, in that case, I should be hard put to it how to breathe, as in all probability I should not have so good a fire; for they are extremely devout, so of consequence take no less care of their bodies than they do of their souls, especially when a certain abbot, whom I could name, comes to visit them; then they spare no cost, their kitchen then may vie with that of a lord, and the smoke I breathe upon is a perfect perfume.

E. As far as I perceive, you love nothing but smoke. Well, every one to their own taste, I love variety. New faces, and new adventures, are my delight. I am, as I suppose you know, the chimney of a furnished lodging.

F. And

F. And as such, it is very happy for you that you have a turn for variety.

E. I have so great a turn that way, that I should be extremely sorry to see the same lodgers six months together; and have reason to be thankful that it is a thing never happened to me since the first moment of my existence.

F. Belike, then, you are not the oldest of your neighbourhood.

E. No, not by a great deal; but for all that, I believe I have the most experience.

F. Impart to me then some of your adventures; I beg you to do it, as you would oblige a neighbour.

E. With all my heart, if I don't tire you; and will begin from the time I first commenced chimney. He who first sat down by my fire was the youngest son of a good family, but of a country where the portion of younger sons consists only in their sword, joined to a happy impudence of bullying every one with their being born gentlemen. This talent my gentleman possessed in an eminent degree: but had another at the same time much more profitable; for he played with constant good luck, and his good luck was the effect of his most assiduous study; every day he was busy in calculating the various chances upon the cards, and at night put his theory in practice.

F. He must at that rate have been always flush of money.

E. No, you are mistaken: for he squandered it away as fast as he got it; so that he was always needy. Indeed, sometimes he cut a great flash, that is a disease peculiar to his nation, but then it never lasted long. His good fortune exasperated the students, who frequented the same nurseries of education, against him, and they brought him into several scrapes, so that at the end of four months I lost him. He was, however, a mighty good lodger, and I regret the loss of him to this day.

F. Who came in his room?

E. A man the most singular, perhaps, that ever yet lived. A husband faithful and affectionate even beyond the grave; that could not be comforted for the loss of his dear rib: in short, a phoenix of a husband. The moment he came, he ordered his room to be hung with black, shut up his windows against the rays of the sun; and had no light in his chamber, but the dim glimmerings of a lamp. Inclosed in this frightful gloom, his constant employment was to sob and shed tears without ceasing. Very often, as if he had been possessed, he would speak aloud to an urn that stood upon a table covered with black cloth, and which he seemed to adore. He would converse with that precious relick, and speak to it as if it answered his passionate expostulations.

F. It is a chance but some spirit was inclosed in that same urn.

E. A spirit! What a simpleton you are! No, it was the heart of his wife; that was the object of his vows and adoration.

F. This was tenderness of grief to excess. I can scarce believe what you tell me.

E. Nor should I, if I had not seen it. I remember, some time or other, to have heard one of my lodgers reading a book which mentioned a story of the same sort of fidelity, or madness, in an English philosopher, which I do not believe to this day, notwithstanding what I have told you; for an example of this kind ought to stand alone.

F. But how long did your lodger continue in this fit?

E. Full three months. True it is, his eyes, the fountains of his tears, began to dry up, and refused to furnish him with fresh supplies

of continued grief; and, by degrees, his devotions to the urn seemed to relish of form and ceremony. Happily for him, his friends found him out, and of consequence relieved him. I believe, he yielded to the violence they made use of with only a seeming reluctance. However, away they took him, and I was freed of this mournful guest.

F. And, I suppose, did not much lament the loss of him?

E. Not in the least, I assure you. The room was afterwards let to a woman; at which I rejoiced mightily, as I had hitherto been acquainted only with men. A kind of quaker's dress, and a certificate of forty years marked upon her forehead, gave her a matron air, which struck me at first sight; and by what I had heard of devotees, I immediately judged her to be one.

F. Now, perhaps you might be mistaken.

E. I was very soon convinced of my error; for the woman was a woman of sense and conduct; she loved pleasure, yet regarded her reputation, and came from the country, a great way off, to Madrid, that she might be sheltered from the malice of slander; and a very short time after, the gentleman, on whose account she had undertaken the journey, followed her. Bless me! how surprized I was at the first visit she received from her lover; she flew with transport into his arms; here demureness was changed into a wanton sprightliness, and the glow upon her cheeks effaced the traits of her age.

F. A pretty lady for a devotee, truly!

E. As she loved her man with all the violence of passion, she made use of every method to preserve her conquest. She was very well apprized, that at her age it is allowed for women to embellish the charms of nature by art, and accordingly she used every thing she could for that purpose.

F. And what arts, pray, must she use for that purpose?

E. I will tell you. Besides black and white, which painted her complexion to what height of colour she pleased, she called in every other thing to her assistance; dress, baths, and perfumes. She was at her toilet always till her gallant came, and repaired to it again immediately when he was gone away. She was perpetually at her glass, practising the different airs, either sprightly or languishing, which she imagined might do execution. As for the artillery of endearments and caresses, that she was perfect mistress of.

F. With all that, methinks, it was hardly possible she could miss of making herself beloved.

E. But then she had other charms infinitely more powerful over the heart of a young lover. She was liberal, and rich; and one must have a heart of flint, not to love a generous mistress. But the appointed days of man are numbered: when these two lovers were now at the height of mutual felicity, the gallant fell sick, and died a few days afterwards, in spite of all the assistance that could be administered by the most able physicians.

F. The lady, no doubt, took on mightily.

E. Yes, she wept, resumed her former demure air, and went back into her own country, to edify her neighbours by her example. My chamber was not long empty; it was taken by another woman, who was by profession a go-between, a match-maker.

F. A rare kind of occupation, truly!

E. It is an occupation that is very common. Negotiators of this sort require a deal of address, and this good lady did not want for that. She

She carried the proposals, procured interviews, and very often brought the matter to a final conclusion. How many of these contracts have been ratified in my apartment! She would make a younger brother, not worth a shilling, pass for a gentleman of fortune, and set off a demi-rep for a pattern of illustrious virtue.

F. What an admirable woman this was!

E. All this she could do with the greatest ease, and could take in the most cautious and wary; so that by her dexterity she had got a pretty fortune; but at last she began to have scruples, and her remorses carried her so far, that she retired into a convent, there to repent of her former scandalous life. Thus a fit of devotion deprived me of this experienced brokereichs.

F. Well, but happily for you, the natural indifference of your temper prevented your regretting the loss of her.

E. That is true; however, after her I had a great many people of common characters in life; men and women, for example, that were concerned in law-suits, a very troublesome sort of lodgers; or people who came from the country to see what o'clock it was at Madrid, and returned home, for the most part, as wise as they were before. But it now begins to grow late; so, neighbour, I wish you a good night; another time when we meet, I will give you an account of some more original characters whom I have at my fire-side.

F. Adieu, good neighbour; I will not fail to put you in mind of your promise.

r
l
v
t
n
f
c
h
n
P
A
g
t
d
t
i
l
k
v
h



THE
DEVIL
UPON
TWO STICKS.

VOLUME THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

WHAT SORT OF A DEVIL THE DEVIL UPON TWO STICKS WAS; AND WHERE AND HOW DON CLEOFAS PEREZ ZAMBULLO BECAME ACQUAINTED WITH HIM.



ONE night in October, when thick darkness had overspread the famous city of Madrid, and the weary inhabitants, being retired to their respective homes, had left the streets free to those restless lovers, whose nightly care it is to sing their pains or pleasures under the balconies of their mistresses; and now the busy instruments had already roused the careful fathers, and alarmed the jealous husbands: in short, it was almost midnight, when Don Cleofas Leandro Perez Zambullo, a young student of Alcala, very nimbly bolted out of the garret-window of a house into which the indiscreet son of the Cytherian goddess had enticed him. He endeavoured to preserve his life and honour, by flying from three or four bullies who followed close at his heels, threatening to kill or force him to marry a lady with whom they had just before surprized him.

Though alone, he yet bravely de-

fended himself for some time against so much odds, and had still maintained his ground, if they had not wrested his sword from him in the fight: they followed him for some time along the gutters; but, favoured by the night, he at length got clear of them, and stealing along from one house-top * to another, he made towards a light which he perceived a great distance off, and which, feeble as it was, yet served him for a lantern in that dangerous conjuncture. After more than once running the risk of breaking his neck, he reached the garret where it's rays proceeded, and entered it by a window, as much transported with joy as a pilot is when he finds himself and his ship safe in the harbour, after a narrow escape at sea, and the terrors of a tempest.

He immediately looked around him, and much wondered he should meet with nobody in an apartment which seemed so very odd and surprizing. He examined it with great attention, and saw a copper lamp hanging from the cieling, books and papers in confusion on the table, spheres and compasses on the one side, phials and quadrants on the other; all which made him conclude, that under this roof lived an astrologer, who usually retired hither to make his observations. He

* The tops of the houses in Spain are flat.

reflected

reflected on the dangers he had by good fortune escaped, and was considering what course was the most proper for him to take, when he was interrupted by a deep sigh that broke forth very near him. He at first took it for a nocturnal illusion, or imaginary phantom, proceeding from the disturbance he was in, and without interruption continued his reflections.

But being interrupted a second time in the same manner, he then took it for something real; and, though he saw no soul in the room, could not help crying out, 'What devil is it that sighs here?'—'It is me, Signior Student,' answered a voice, which had somewhat very extraordinary in it; 'I have been six months inclosed in one of these glass phials. In this house lives a skilful astrologer and magician, who by the power of his art has confined me to this close prison.'—'You then are a spirit?' said Cleofas, somewhat confused at this uncommon adventure. 'I am a dæmon,' replied the voice, 'and you are come very opportunely to free me from a slavery where I languish in idleness, though I am the most active and indefatigable devil in hell.'

Cleofas was somewhat affrighted at these words; but being naturally courageous, he recollected himself, and in a resolute tone thus addressed himself to the spirit: 'Signior Dæmon, pray inform me by what character you are distinguished amongst your brethren? Are you a devil of quality, or an ordinary one?'—'I am,' replied the voice, 'a very considerable devil, and am more esteemed in this and in the other world than any other.'—'Perhaps,' replied Cleofas, 'you may be the dæmon which we call Lucifer?'—'No,' replied the spirit, 'he is the mountebank's devil.'—'Are you then Uriel?' returned the student. 'Fie!' (hastily interrupted the voice) 'he is the patron of traders, taylor, butchers, bakers, and other third-rate thieves.'

'It may be you are Beelzebub?' said Leandro. 'You deceive yourself,' answered the spirit; 'he is the dæmon of governantes, and gentlemen-ushers, or waiting men.'—'This surprises me,' said the student; 'I took Beelzebub for one of the greatest of

your number.'—'He is one of the least,' replied the dæmon; 'you have no true notion of our hell.'

'You must, then,' replied Don Cleofas, 'be either Leviathan, Belphegor, or Ashtaroth.'—'Oh! as for those three,' said the voice, 'they are devils of the first rank; they are the court spirits: they enter into the councils of princes, animate their ministers, form leagues, stir up insurrections in states, and light the torches of war. These are not such boobies as the first you mentioned to me.'—'Ah! tell me, I intreat you,' said the student, 'what post has Flagel?'—'He is the soul of the law, and the life of the bar,' replied the devil. 'It is he who makes out the attorneys and bailiffs writs; he inspires the pleaders, possesseth the council, and attends the judges.'

'But my business lies another way: I make ridiculous matches, and marry old grey-beards to raw girls under age, masters to their maids, virgins of low fortunes to lovers that have none. It is I that have introduced into the world, luxury, debauchery, games of chance, and chymistry. I am the inventor of carousals, dancing, musick, plays; and all the new French fashions. In a word, I am the celebrated Asmodeus, surnamed the *Devil upon Two Sticks*.

'Ah,' cried Don Cleofas, 'are you then the famous Asmodeus, so gloriously celebrated by Agrippa and the Clavicula Salomonis? really you have not told me all your amusements; you have forgotten the best of them. I know that you sometimes divert yourself with assuaging the pains of unfortunate lovers; by the same token, it was by your assistance that a young gentleman, a friend of mine, crept into the good graces of a doctor of the university of Alcalá's lady.'—'It is true,' said the spirit; 'I reserved that till the last: I am the dæmon of luxury; or, to express it genteeler, the god Cupid; for the poets have bestowed that fine name on me, and indeed painted me in very advantageous colours; they describe me with gilded wings, a fillet bound over my eyes, a bow in my hand, a quiver of arrows on my shoulders, and a charming beautiful face.'

‘face. What sort of a face it is you shall immediately see, if you please to set me at liberty.’

‘Signior Asmodeus,’ replied Don Cleofas, ‘you know that I have long been your sincere devotee; of the truth of which the dangers I just now run are sufficient evidences. I should be very ambitious of an opportunity of serving you; but the vessel in which you are hidden is undoubtedly enchanted, and all my endeavours to unstop or break it will be vain; wherefore I cannot very well tell which way to deliver you out of prison. I am not much used to these sort of deliverances; and, betwixt you and I, if such a subtle devil as you are cannot make your way out, how can a wretched mortal like me effect it?’—‘It is in your power to do it,’ answered the dæmon; ‘the phial in which I am inclosed is barely a plain glass bottle, which is very easy to break; you need only to throw it on the ground, and I shall immediately appear in human shape.’—‘If so,’ said the student, ‘it is easier than I imagined; tell me then in which phial you are, for I see so many like one another, that I cannot distinguish them.’—‘It is the fourth from the window,’ replied the spirit; ‘though the cork be sealed with a magical seal, yet the bottle will easily break.’

‘It is enough, Signior Asmodeus,’ returned Don Cleofas; ‘there is now only one small difficulty which deters me: when I have done you this service, will you not make me pay for the broken pots?’—‘No accident shall befall you,’ answered the dæmon; ‘but, on the contrary, you will be pleased with my acquaintance. I will learn you whatever you are desirous to know, inform you of all things which happen in the world, and discover to you all the faults of mankind; I will be your titular dæmon; you shall find me much more intelligent than that of Socrates, and I will make you far surpass that philosopher in wisdom: in a word, I will bestow myself on you, with my good and ill qualities; the latter of which shall not be less advantageous to you than the former.’

‘These are fine promises,’ replied the student, ‘but you gentlemen devils

are accused of not being very religious observers of what you promise to men.’

—‘It is a groundless charge,’ replied Asmodeus; ‘some of my brethren, indeed, make no scruple of breaking their word, but I (not to mention the service you are going to do me, which I can never sufficiently repay) am a slave to mine; and I swear by all that renders our oaths inviolable, that I will not deceive you. Depend upon my assurances. I promise you withal, that you shall revenge yourself on Donna Thomasa, that perfidious lady, who hid four ruffians to surprize and force you to marry her; a circumstance that should please you.’

Young Zambullo, charmed above all with this last promise, to hasten it’s accomplishment, immediately took the phial, and without concerning himself what might be the event of it, he threw it hard against the ground. It broke into a thousand pieces, and overflowed the floor with a blackish liquor, which by little and little evaporated, and converted itself into a thick smoke; which dissipating all at once, the amazed student beheld the figure of a man in a cloak, about two feet and a half high, resting on two crutches. This diminutive lame monster had goat’s legs, a long visage, sharp chin, a yellow and black complexion, and a very flat nose; his eyes, which seemed very little, resembled two lighted coals; his mouth was extremely wide, above which were two wretched red whiskers, edged with a pair of unparalleled lips.

This charming Cupid’s head was wrapt up in a sort of turban of red crape, set off with a plume of cocks and peacocks feathers. About his neck he wore a yellow linen collar, on which were drawn several models of necklaces and ear-rings. He was dressed in a short white fatten coat, and girt about with a girdle of virgin parchment, marked with talismanical characters. On this coat were painted several pair of women’s stays very advantageously fitted for the discovery of their breasts; scarfs, party-coloured aprons, new-fashioned head-dresses of various sorts, each more extravagant than the other.

But all these were nothing compared with his cloak, the ground of which was also of white fatten: on it, with Indian

Indian ink, were drawn an infinite number of figures, with so much freedom, and such masterly strokes, that it was natural enough to think the devil had a hand in it: on one side appeared a Spanish lady covered with her veil, teizing a stranger as they were walking; and on the other, a French one practising new airs in her glass; in order to try them at a young patched and painted abbot, who appeared at her chamber-door. Here a parcel of Italian cavaliers were singing and playing on the guitar under their mistresses balconies; and there a company of Germans, all in confusion and unbuttoned, more intoxicated with wine, and begrimed with snuff, than your conceited French fops, surrounding a table overflowed with the filthy remains of their debauch. In one place was a great Mahometan lord coming out of the bath, and encompassed by all the women of his seraglio, officiously crouding to tender him their service; in another, an English gentleman very gallantly presenting a pipe and a pot of beer to his mistress.

There the gamblers were also wonderfully well represented; some of them animated by a sprightly joy, heaping up pieces of gold and silver in their hats; and others, broken and reduced to play upon honour, casting up their sacrilegious eyes to heaven, and gnawing their cards with despair. To conclude, there were as many curious things to be seen on it, as on the admirable buckler of the son of Peleus, which exhausted all Vulcan's art; with this difference betwixt the performance of the two cripples, that the figures on the buckler had no relation to the exploits of Achilles, but on the contrary, those on the cloak were so many lively images of whatever was done in the world by the suggestion of Asmodeus.

CHAP. II.

IN WHICH THE STORY OF ASMODEUS'S DELIVERANCE IS CONTINUED.

THE dæmon observing that the sight of him did not very agreeably prepossess the student in his favour, smiling said, 'Well, Signior Don Cleofas Leandro Perez Zam-

' bullo, you see the charming god of love, the sovereign ruler of hearts. What do you think of my beauty and air? do you not take the poets for excellent painters?'—'Why, really,' answered Cleofas, 'they do flatter a little. You did not, I suppose, appear in this shape to Pysche?'—'Doubtless no,' replied Asmodeus; 'I borrowed the appearance of a little French marquis, to make her doat on me: vice must always be covered with a fair appearance, without which it will never please. I assume whatever shape I will, and could have shewed myself to you in a finer imaginary body; but designing, without any disguise, to lay myself open to you, I was willing that you should see me in a shape best suited to the opinion which the world entertains of me and my functions.'

'I am not surprized,' said the student, 'that you are somewhat ugly; pardon, if you please, the harshness of the term! the conversation which we have had together may admit of some freedom. Your features are very well proportioned to the idea I have of you; but pray tell me how you came to be a cripple?'

'My lameness,' answered the devil, 'is owing to a quarrel I formerly had in France with Pillardoc, the devil of interest, about one Manceau, a man of business, and one of the farmers of the revenues: he being very rich, we as warmly contested who should have the possession of him, and fought it out in the middle region of the air, from whence Pillardoc (being the stronger of the two) threw me down to the earth, as the poets tell ye Jupiter did Vulcan; and so, from the resemblance of our adventures, my comrades called me *the lame devil*, or *the devil upon two sticks*; and that nick-name, which they gave me in raillery, has stuck by me ever since: but though a cripple, I can yet go pretty nimbly; you shall be a witness of my agility.'

'But,' adds he, 'let us end this discourse, and make haste out of the garret. It will not be long before the magician comes up to labour at the immortality of a beautiful Sylph which nightly visits him; and if he should surprize us, he would not fail to commit me to the bottle from whence



RECEIVED
JAN 10 1914
NEW YORK

‘ whence I came, and confine you to the same. Let us therefore, in the first place, throw away all the pieces of the broken phial, that the inchanter may not discover my enlargement.’

‘ If he should find it out after our departure,’ said Cleofas, ‘ what would then be the event?’—‘ What would be the event!’ answered the dæmon: ‘ I find you have not read the treatise concerning compulsions. Alas! were I concealed at the farthest part of the earth, or hidden in the region where the fiery salamanders dwell; should I descend to the shades below, or the bottom of the deepest sea, I should not be secured from his resentment. His conjurations are so powerful, that all hell trembles at them. In short, I cannot resist his arbitrary commands, but shall be forced, much against my will, to appear before him, and submit to whatever pains he pleases to inflict on me.’

‘ If so,’ replied the student, ‘ I very much fear that our friendship will be of no long duration; this dreadful necromancer will soon discover your flight.’—‘ I do not know that,’ replied the spirit, ‘ for we cannot tell what may happen.’—‘ What,’ said Leandro Perez, ‘ are you not acquainted with futurity?’—‘ No, indeed,’ replied the devil, ‘ we know nothing of that matter; but those who depend upon our assistance are fine bubbles; and, indeed, to this opinion are to be ascribed all the fooleries which are imposed on women of quality by fortune-tellers of both sexes, when they consult them on future events. We only know the past and the present. I do not know, therefore, whether the magician will soon discover my absence, but hope not; for here being several phials very like that in which I was inclosed, he may perhaps not miss a single one. I am much in the same condition in his laboratory, as a law-book is in the library of a man of business; he never thinks of me, and when he doth, he never doth me the honour of conversing with me. He is the most insolent inchanter that I know; for, during the whole time that I was his prisoner, he did not once vouchsafe to speak to me.’

‘ What sort of fellow is this,’ re-

plied Don Cleofas; ‘ or what have you done to draw down his hatred upon you?’—‘ I crossed one of his designs,’ replied Asmodeus: ‘ there was a place in an academy void, which he proposed to obtain for a friend of his, but I was resolved it should be given to another. The magician prepared a talisman, composed of the most powerful characters of the Cabala; but I placed my man in the service of a great minister, and his name accordingly carried it from the talisman.’

At these words the dæmon gathered up all the pieces of the broken phial, and after having thrown them out of the window, ‘ Come then,’ said he to the student, ‘ let us make the best of our way; take hold of the end of my cloak, and fear nothing.’ However dangerous the offer appeared to Don Cleofas, he yet chose rather to accept it, than expose himself to the resentment of the magician; wherefore he took as good hold as he could of the devil, who carried him out of the window.

CHAP. III.

WHITHER THE DEVIL CARRIED DON CLEOFAS, AND WHAT HE FIRST SHEWED HIM.

ASMODEUS was not in the wrong when he boasted his agility; he cleft the air with as much rapidity as an arrow from a bow, and perched on St. Saviour’s steeple. When gotten on his feet, he said to Don Cleofas, ‘ Well, Signior Leandro, when men are in a very uneasy hobbling coach, and cry out, “ This is a coach for the devil!” do you now think they do us justice?’—‘ I think nothing can be more unreasonable,’ answered Don Cleofas politely, ‘ and am ready to affirm upon experience, that the devil’s is not only easier than a chair, but also so expeditious, that nobody can be tired on the road.’

‘ Very well,’ replied the dæmon; ‘ but you do not know why I brought you hither. I intend from this high place to shew you whatever is at present doing in Madrid. By my diabolical power I will heave up the roofs of the houses; and, notwith-

D

standing

standing the darkness of the night, clearly expose to your view whatever is now under them.' At these words he only extended his right-hand, and in an instant all the roofs of the houses seemed removed: and the student saw the insides of them as plainly as if it had been noon day; 'as plainly,' says Louis Velez de Guevara*, 'as you see into a pye, whose top is taken off.'

This view was too surprizing not to employ all his attention; his eyes ran through all parts of the city, and the variety which surrounded him was sufficient to engage his curiosity for a long time. 'Signior student,' said the demon, 'this confusion of objects, which you survey with so much pleasure, affords really a very charming prospect; but, in order to furnish you with a perfect knowledge of human life, it is necessary to explain to you, what all those people which you see are doing. I will disclose to you the springs of their actions, and their most secret thoughts.'

'Where shall we begin? Let us observe, first of all, in the house on the right-hand, that old wretch telling his gold and silver. He is a rich covetous citizen. His coach, which he had for almost nothing at an auction of an alcade of the court, is drawn by two poor lean mules that are in the stable, and which he feeds according to the laws of the twelve tables, that is, each with a pound of barley a day. He uses them as the Romans did their slaves. It is about two years since he returned from the Indies, loaded with a vast quantity of bars of gold, which he turned into ready money. Do but admire with what an eye of pleasure this fool surveys his riches. He is never satisfied with looking at them. But at the same time see what is going forward in the chamber adjoining. Do you not see two young fellows with an old woman?'—'Yes,' answered Don Cleofas, 'I suppose they are his children.'—'No,' replied the devil, 'they are his nephews and heirs; who, being impatient to divide his spoils, are consulting a witch to know when he will die.'

'In the next house there is a couple of pleasant pictures enough. One is

a superannuated coquette going to bed, after leaving her hair, eyes, brows, and teeth, on her toilet: the other is an amorous dotard of sixty, just come from making love; he has already laid down his eye, false whiskers, and peruke which hid his bald pate, and waits for his man to take off his wooden arm and leg, to go to bed with the rest.'

'If I may trust my eyes,' said Zambullo, 'In yonder house, I see a beautiful tall young girl, that would make a fine picture: what a charming air she has!—'Very well,' replied the cripple; 'that beautiful young creature you are so charmed with, is eldest sister to the gallant that is going to bed. One may say, she is the counter-part of that old coquette who lodges with her. Her shape, which you admire, is a machine, in the adjusting of which all the art of the ablest mechanicks has been exhausted: her breasts and her hips are artificial, and not long since she dropped her rump at church, in the midst of the sermon. Yet, as she gives herself a girlish air, she has two young fellows that strive to be in her good graces: nay, they have even proceeded to blows for her. The fools! methinks I see two dogs fighting for a bone.'

'Pr'ythee laugh with me at the concert began after a family supper in a citizen's house hard by there. They are singing cantatas; an old courtellor composed the music, and the words are a bailiff's, who sets up for making love; a coxcomb that makes verses for his own diversion, and the punishment of others. The symphony consists of a bagpipe and a spinnet: an old ungainly chorister with a squeaking pipe sings the treble, and a young girl with a very deep voice the bass.'—'Very pleasant indeed!' cried Don Cleofas laughing. 'Had they intended to have made a jest of all music, they could not have succeeded better.'

'Cast your eyes on that magnificent palace,' pursued the devil; 'you will there see a great lord laid in a splendid apartment, with a casket full of *billets-doux*, which he is reading to lull

him asleep more voluptuously. They

* The Author of the Devil upon Two Sticks in Spanish.

‘ come from a lady whom he adores, and who puts him to such an expence, that he will soon be reduced to solicit for a vice-royalty to support himself.’

‘ If every body is at rest in that palace, and every thing hushed and still there; to make amends, every thing seems to be in motion in the next house on the left-hand. Do you not distinguish a lady in a red damask bed? It is a woman of quality, Donna Fabula, who has just sent for a midwife, and is going to present her old husband Don Torribio, whom you see by her, with an heir. Are you not charmed with that gentleman’s good nature? The cries of his dear moiety pierce his soul: he is penetrated with grief, and suffers as much as she. With what care and earnestness does he strive to help her!’—‘ Really,’ said Leandro, ‘ the man is in a great flutter; but I discern another who seems to sleep very sound in the same house, without being concerned at the success of the affair.’—‘ And yet he should have some concern,’ replied the cripple, ‘ since that domestic is the first cause of all the pains his lady suffers.’

‘ Carry your eye a little farther,’ continued he, ‘ and observe that hypocrite in a low room rubbing himself with coach-wheel grease; in order to go to a meeting of forcerers, this night, between St. Sebastian’s and Fontarabia. I would carry you thither this minute, to oblige you with so pleasant a diversion, if I was not afraid of being known by the devil, who personates the goat there.’

‘ That devil and you, then,’ said the student, ‘ are not very good friends?’

—‘ No, I think not indeed,’ answered Asmodeus: ‘ why, it is the very same Pillardoc I was mentioning just now.’

‘ The rascal would most certainly betray me, and inform our magician of my flight.’—‘ You have besides, perhaps, had some squabble with this same Pillardoc.’—‘ I have so,’ replied the dæmon: ‘ about two years ago we had a fresh dispute about a gentleman’s son at Paris, who had some thoughts of settling in the world. We both pretended to the disposal of him. He would have made him a factor, and I would

‘ fain have had him a smart fellow, and made his fortune among the women; but our comrades, to end the dispute, made a rascally monk of him. They then reconciled us, and we embraced—and from that time became mortal foes.’

‘ Let us have done with this *belle assemblée*,’ said Don Cleofas, ‘ for I have no manner of curiosity to be at it; but let us rather pursue our examination of what offers before us. Pray tell me what mean those sparks of fire issuing out of that cellar?’—‘ It is,’ replied the devil, ‘ one of the most foolish amongst all the works of men. The grave personage you see in that cellar, at the flaming furnace, is an alchymist, whose rich patrimony the fire will consume by degrees, and he will never find what he spends it in search of. For, between you and I, the philosopher’s stone is no better than a fine chimera, that I myself forged, to divert myself with human understanding, which would pass the bounds prescribed to it.’

‘ This alchymist’s neighbour is an honest apothecary, who is not yet gone to bed. You see him at work in his shop with his decrepit wife and apprentice. Do you know what they are doing? The master is preparing a prolific pill for an old advocate that is to be married to-morrow; the man is making a laxative decoction, and the woman beating astringent drugs in a mortar.’

‘ In the house over against the apothecary’s,’ said Zambullo, ‘ I see a man getting out of bed, and dressing in all haste.’—‘ Adso!’ answered the spirit, ‘ it is a physician rising upon a very pressing occasion. He is sent for to a prelate, who coughed twice or thrice after he was gone to bed.’

‘ Turn your eyes a little farther to the right, and try, whether, by the dull lamp in that garret, you can distinguish a man stalking in his shirt.’—‘ Yes, yes, I am right,’ cried the student, ‘ by the same token that I would venture to draw you up an inventory of the furniture in it. There is nothing but a wretched sorry bed, a stool, a table, and the dirty walls all over as black as soot.’—‘ That lofty-minded person,’ replied

plied Asmodeus, 'is a poet; and what seems black to you, are tragic verses of his own composition, with which he has hung his chamber; for the want of paper forces him to write poems on the walls.'

'By the hurry and busy air of his gait,' said Don Cleofas, 'I should conclude that he was composing some piece of very great importance.'—'You are not in the wrong to think so,' said the cripple; 'he yesterday gave the finishing stroke to a tragedy, entitled the *Universal Deluge*. He cannot be reproached with neglecting the unity of place, since all the scenes are laid in Noah's ark.'

'I assure you it is an excellent piece, for all the beasts are there introduced talking as learnedly as so many doctors. He intends to dedicate it, and has already spent six hours in working up the epistle dedicatory, and is at this moment gotten to the last line. It may justly be called a master-piece; for not one of the moral or political virtues, not one of the topicks of praise that can possibly be bestowed on a man whose ancestors or his own merit has rendered illustrious, are spared; never was author so prodigally lavish of his flatteries.'—'To whom does he design to address so magnificent an eulogy?' replied the student. 'He knows nothing of that yet,' answered the devil, 'he has left a blank for the name, and he is in quest of some rich lord, more generous than the patrons to whom he has dedicated the former pieces. But people that pay for dedications are very scarce now-a-days. Men of quality have mended that fault, and thereby done an acceptable service to the public, which before was continually pestered with wretched performances; the greatest part of the books being formerly written for the lucre of their dedications.'

'Now you are upon the subject of dedications,' added the dæmon, 'I must give you a very extraordinary circumstance. A lady at court, having allowed an author to dedicate his works to her, resolved to see the dedication before it was printed; and not thinking it came up to her perfections, took the pains to compose one of her own, and send it to

the author to place it before his works.'

'I fancy,' cried Leandro, 'I see thieves breaking into a house over a balcony.'—'You are not mistaken,' said Asmodeus, 'they are house-breakers getting into a banker's. Let us watch them, and see what they will do. They are examining the counting-house, and rummaging every where. But the banker has been before-hand with them; he yesterday made the best of his way to Holland, with all the riches in his coffers.'

'Sure,' said Zambullo, 'that is another thief on a silk ladder getting into a balcony.'—'No; he is not what you take him to be,' answered the cripple. 'It is a marquis scaling the chamber of a virgin, who is very willing to be rid of that name. He made her some superficial promises of marriage, and she, not in the least distrusting his oaths, has yielded: and no wonder; for, on love's exchange, your marquisses are merchants of very great reputation.'

'I should be glad to know,' said the student, 'what that man in the night-gown and cap is doing. He is writing very hard, and all the while his hand is guided by a little black figure that stands at his elbow.'—'The man who is writing,' answered the devil, 'is a clerk or register of a court; who, to oblige a guardian who will return the favour, is altering a decree pronounced in favour of his pupil; and the little black figure that guides his hand, is Griffael, the clerk's devil.'—'But this Griffael,' replied Don Cleofas, 'I suppose, supplies this place only as a deputy; for as Flagel is the spirit of the bar, the registers seem directly subject to his direction.'—'No,' replied Asmodeus; 'the registers were thought a body considerable enough to have a devil of their own; and I assure you he has more upon his hands than he can compass.'

'In a citizen's house next door to the register, observe a young lady on the first floor; she is a widow, and the man you see with her is her uncle, who lives on the second. The bashfulness of that young widow deserves your admiration: she scruples

receiving her shift before her uncle; but retires into her closet to have it put on by her gallant, whom she has hidden there.

With the register lives a relation of his, a great, greasy, lame graduate, who for joking has not his fellow in the world. Volumnius, so cried up by Cicero, for his smart, witty repartees, did not rally so agreeably. This batchelor, called at Madrid the graduate Donoso*, by way of excellence, is courted by all the court and city that make entertainments. Every one strives who shall have him; he has a particular knack of making the guests merry, and is the very soul and delight of an entertainment; so that he every day dines at some considerable man's table, and never returns till two in the morning. He is now at the Marquis of Alcaniza's, which happened purely by chance.

—“How by chance?” interrupted Leandro. “I will explain myself,” answered the devil. “About noon to-day there were five or six coaches at the graduate's door from different noblemen that all sent for him. He ordered their pages to be sent up to him, and taking a pack of cards, told them, that since he could not oblige all their masters, and was resolved not to give any preference, those cards should decide the matter, and that he would dine with the king of clubs.”

“What can be the design of that cavalier,” said Don Cleofas, “who is sitting at the door on the other side the way? Does he wait for the chambermaid's letting him in?”—“No, no,” answered Asmodeus; “he is a young Castilian that is practising your sublime love in form. He has a mind, out of a pure spirit of gallantry, in imitation of lovers of former days, to pass the night at his mistress's door. Every now and then he thrums upon a miserable guitar, accompanying it with ditties of his own composing; but his Dulcinea, who lies on the second floor, whilst she is listening to his music, is all the while bewailing the absence of his rival.

“Let us give a look into that new building divided into two separate

wings. In the first lives the owner of it, that old gentleman who sometimes walks about the room, and sometimes sinks into his easy chair.”

—“Sure,” said Zambullo, “his head must be taken up with some project of importance. Who can this man be? To judge by the splendour and riches of his apartments, he must be some grandee of the highest rank.”—“However,” answered the devil, “he is no more than a contador, but is grown old in places of great profit. His estate is worth about four millions; but his conscience suggesting some uneasy reflections upon the manner of his acquiring it, and finding he must shortly make up his accounts in the other world, he is grown scrupulous, and is thinking of building a monastery, and flatters himself, that, after so good a work, his mind will be at rest. He has already obtained leave to found a convent; but being firmly resolved not to place any monks in it, in whom the virtues of chastity, sobriety, and humility, do not eminently shine, he is very much puzzled in the choice.

In the second wing lives a fair lady, who, after bathing in milk, is just slept into bed. This voluptuous creature is widow to a knight of the order of St. Jaques, whose empty title was all the riches he left her. But, by good fortune, two counsellors of the council of Castile are her gallants, who equally contribute to the expences of her house.”

“Alas!” cried the student, “the air resounds with shrieks and lamentations. Some sad accident must have happened!”—“It is this,” said the spirit: “two young gentlemen were playing at cards in that gaming-house, where you see so many lamps and candles lighted up; they grew warm upon their game, drew their swords, and wounded each other mortally. The eldest of them is married, the youngest an only son, and they are both expiring. The wife of the one, and the father of the other, informed of the said disaster, are just come to them, and they fill the neighbourhood with their complaints. “Unfortunate child,” said the father, addressing

* Donoso is facetious in the Spanish tongue.

himself

himself to his son, who was past hearing him, "how often have I advised thee to leave off play? how often have I foretold thee, that it would cost thee thy life? if thou diest thus unfortunately, I here call Heaven to witness, it is not my fault." As for the poor wife, she is running mad; though her husband hath, by his gaming, lost all the fortune she brought him; though he hath sold all her jewels, and even her very clothes, she is inconsolable for the loss of him. She is cursing cards, which have been the cause of it; she is cursing him that invented them; she is cursing the gaming-house, and all that live in it.

"I extremely pity people that are raving mad for play," said Don Cleofas; "their minds are often in such a horrid situation. Thank Heaven, I have nothing to answer for upon account of that vice!"—"But you have another full as bad," replied the devil. "Think you it is at all more excusable to give yourself up to common prostitutes; and was not you this very night in danger of being killed by bullies? Really, I admire at the folly of mankind; their own faults seem trifles to them, whereas they look at those of others through a microscope."

"Let me present you with some more melancholy images," continued Asmodeus. "Observe that corpulent man stretched out upon a bed in the house just by the gaming-house. It is an unfortunate canon, who just now fell into an apoplexy: his nephew and niece, far from affording him any assistance, suffer him to die for want of it, and are seizing his best effects, and conveying them to a receiver of stolen goods; after which, they will be wholly at leisure to mourn and to lament."

"A little farther you see two men, whom they are now burying: they are two brothers, that were both sick of the same disease, but took different measures; one of them relied with an entire confidence on his physician; the other let nature take her course: yet they are both dead; the former from taking all the physick the doctor ordered, and the latter because he would take nothing."

"This is very perplexing," said Le-

andro; "alas! what must then a poor sick man do?"—"That is more than I can tell you," replied the devil; "I know very well there are such things as good remedies, but cannot say whether there are any good physicians."

"Let us change the scene," continued he; "I will shew you something more diverting. Do not you hear a frightful din in the street? A widow of sixty has this morning married a young fellow of seventeen; upon which, all the merry fellows in that quarter are met together to celebrate the wedding, with the jangling concert of pots, frying-pans, and kettles."—"You told me," interrupted the student, "that the making ridiculous matches was your province; yet you had no hand in this."—"No truly," replied the cripple; "I was far from having any hand in it, for I was confined; but had I been at liberty, I would not have meddled in it. This widow had a scrupulous conscience, and only married to enjoy her darling pleasures without remorse. I never make such marriages: I have a much greater pleasure in troubling consciences, than in setting them at rest."

"Notwithstanding the din of this burlesque serenade," said Zambullo, "I fancy I hear another noise."—"Yes," answered the cripple, "it comes from a tavern, where a great greasy Dutch captain, a French chorister, and a German officer of the guards, are singing a three-part song; they have been at it ever since eight this morning, and each of them fancies it is for the honour of his country to make the two others drunk."

"Throw your eyes a moment across the way to that house that stands by itself over against the canon's; you will see three famous courtezans making a debauch with three great lords of the court."—"Ah, how pretty are they!" said Don Cleofas. "I do not wonder that men of quality are so mad after them! how they embrace them! they must certainly be deeply in love with them. How young and unexperienced are you!" said the spirit. "You do not know this sort of ladies; their hearts are more painted than their faces. What ever marks of tenderness they express, yet they have not the least grain

‘grain of it for those lords. They care for the one for a protection, and the two others for settlements. It is so with all coquettes; and though men very fairly ruin themselves for them, they are not the more loved by them; but on the contrary, whoever pays for love, is treated like a husband. This is a law in amorous intrigues, which I myself have established. But let us leave those lords to taste the pleasures they so dearly purchase, whilst their footmen, who wait for them in the street, comfort themselves in the pleasing expectations of enjoying them gratis.’

‘Pray do me the favour,’ interrupted Leandro Perez, ‘to explain another picture that presents itself before me. Every body is still up in that great house on the left. What is the meaning that some are laughing ready to burst, and others dancing? It must be some great festival sure.’

‘It is a wedding,’ said the cripple, ‘and all the servants are making merry; but within less than three days, that very palace, which you see at present the scene of so much joy, was the house of utmost mourning. It is a story I must let you into; indeed it is somewhat long, but I hope you will not think it tiresome.’ At the same time he thus began.

CHAP. IV.

THE HISTORY OF THE AMOURS
OF THE COUNT DE BELFLOR,
AND OF LEONORA DE CESPIDES.

THE Count de Belflor, one of the most considerable lords of the court, loved young Leonora de Cespides to distraction, but never intended to marry her; the daughter of a private gentleman did not seem a match considerable enough for him, for which reason he only proposed to make a mistress of her.

‘It was with this design that he pursued her wherever she went, and lost no opportunity of discovering his love, by the extraordinary respects he paid her: but he could neither speak nor write to her, she being perpetually guarded by a severe and vigilant duenna, whose name was Madam Marcella. This drove him to

despair, and feeling his desires irritated by the difficulty of attaining them, he was continually projecting ways to deceive the Argus which guarded his Io. On the other side, Leonora, perceiving the count’s regard for her, could not help being touched with the same tenderness for him, which insensibly formed itself into such a passion in her heart, as at last grew to be extremely violent. I did not indeed augment it by my common temptations, because the magician who kept me prisoner, denied me the use of all my functions; but nature, no less dangerous than myself, engaged in it, and that was enough. And indeed all the difference that there is betwixt her and me is, that nature corrupts hearts by slow degrees, whilst I seduce them expeditiously.

‘Affairs were in this posture, when Leonora and her perpetual governante, going one morning to church, met an old woman with one of the largest strings of beads that ever hypocrisy yet made. Accosting them with a pleasant smiling air, she thus addressed herself to the duenna: “The good God preserve you!” said she; “the holy peace be with you! Give me leave to ask whether you are not Madam Marcella, the chaste widow of the late Signior Martin Rosetta?” The governante having answered, “Yes;”—“You are luckily met then,” replied the old woman; “and I am to acquaint you, that I have at home an old relation of mine, who is very desirous to speak with you. He is lately arrived from Flanders, was your husband’s most intimate friend, and has some particulars of the utmost importance to communicate to you. He had waited on you, if he had not been prevented by a fit of sickness, that has reduced him to the point of death. I live not half a stone’s throw from hence; I beseech you to take the trouble of following me.”

‘The governante, who wanted not prudence and good sense, being afraid of a false step, knew not what to resolve on: but the old woman, guessing the reason of her uneasiness, said to her, “Dear Madam Marcella, you may securely rely upon me, my

" my name is La Chicon; the licen-
 " tiate Marcos de Figueroa, and the
 " curate Mira de Mesqua will answer
 " for me as soon as for their grand-
 " mothers. I do not desire you to come
 " to my house for any thing but your
 " own good. My relation is willing
 " to restore you a sum of money which
 " he borrowed of your husband."
 " The very thoughts of restitution en-
 " gaged Marcella on her side. "Come,
 " girl," said she to Leonora, "let
 " us go see this good lady's relation;
 " to visit the sick is an act of charity."
 " They soon reached La Chicon's
 " house; and were led into a lower
 " room, where they found a man in bed
 " with a grey beard, and if he was not
 " really very sick, he at least feigned
 " himself so. "Cousin," said the old
 " woman, presenting to him the go-
 " vernante, "here is the lady you de-
 " sired to speak with, Madam Mar-
 " cella, the widow of your friend
 " Signior Martin Rosetta." At these
 " words, the old man, lifting up his
 " head a little, saluted the duenna, and
 " making signs for her to come nearer
 " the bed-side, said in a feeble tone,
 " I thank Heaven, dear Madam Mar-
 " cella, for prolonging my life to this
 " moment, which was the only thing
 " I desired; I feared I should have
 " died without the satisfaction of see-
 " ing you, and putting into your own
 " hands an hundred ducats which my
 " intimate friend, your late husband,
 " lent me, to help me out of an ho-
 " nourable quarrel I was formerly en-
 " gaged in at Bruges. Did he never
 " acquaint you with that adventure?"
 " Alas, no!" answered Madam
 " Marcella, "he never mentioned it.
 " God rest his soul! he was generous
 " enough to forget the services he did
 " his friends; and, very unlike those
 " boasters who brag of what they ne-
 " ver did, he never told when he oblig-
 " ed any person."—"He certainly had
 " a very great soul," replied the old
 " man; "a truth which I am more
 " firmly engaged to believe than any
 " man else; and to prove it to you,
 " you must give me leave to relate the
 " affair out of which I was so happily
 " extricated by his assistance; but hav-
 " ing something to disclose of the last
 " importance with regard to the me-
 " mory of the deceased, I should be

" very glad of an opportunity of re-
 " vealing it to his discreet widow
 " alone."

" Very well," said La Chicon, "that
 " you may have the better opportunity
 " of discoursing with her in private,
 " this young lady and I will retire to
 " my closet." At these words she left
 " the duenna with the sick man, and
 " conducted Leonora into another
 " chamber; where, without any cir-
 " cumlocution, she said, "Fair Leo-
 " nora, the moments are too precious
 " to be mispent. You know the Count
 " de Belflor by sight; he has long
 " loved you, and languishing dies for
 " an opportunity to tell you so; but
 " the vigilance and severity of your
 " governante have always hindered
 " him from enjoying that satisfaction.
 " In this despair he had recourse to
 " my industry, which I have made use
 " of for him. The old man, whom
 " you have just now seen, is the count's
 " young valet de chambre; and all
 " that hath been done, is only a trick
 " to deceive your governante, and
 " draw you hither."

" These words were no sooner ended,
 " than the count, who was concealed
 " behind the hangings, appeared, and
 " throwing himself at Leonora's feet:
 " Madam," said he, "pardon the stra-
 " tagem of a lover who could no longer
 " live without speaking to you; if this
 " obliging matron had not procured
 " me this opportunity, I should have
 " abandoned myself to despair." These
 " words, expressed with a moving air,
 " by a person not at all disagreeable to
 " her, highly perplexed Leonora: she
 " continued some time doubtful what
 " answer she ought to make; but at last
 " recovering herself, and looking dis-
 " pleased at the count, said, "Perhaps
 " you believe yourself very much ob-
 " liged to this officious lady, who has
 " so well served your purpose; but her
 " designs to serve you shall prove inef-
 " fectual."

" At these words she made several
 " steps to get out of the room; but the
 " count stopped her: "Stay," said he,
 "adorable Leonora, hear me one mo-
 " ment; my passion is so pure that it
 " ought not to alarm you. I own you
 " have some grounds to oppose the ar-
 " tifice which I have made use of to
 " converse with you; but have I not
 " till

"till this day in vain endeavoured to speak to you? I have followed you these six months to the churches, walks, and all public places. I have long in vain watched an opportunity of telling you how you have charmed me; your cruel, your merciless go-vernness, has continually frustrated my designs. Alas! then, instead of turning the stratagem which I have been forced to employ into a crime, commiserate, fair Leonora, my suffering all the tortures of such a tedious expectation, and judge, by your charms, the mortal pangs they have occasioned."

Belflor did not forget to reinforce his words with all the airs of persuasion which gallant men are used to practise with success, accompanying his words with some tears; with which Leonora began to be touched, and in despite of her resolution, some tender compassionate emotions began to arise in her heart; but far from yielding to them, the more she perceived them to grow, the more she pressed to be gone. "Count," said she, "all your talk is in vain, I will not hear you; do not detain me any longer, but let me go out of a house in which my virtue is so rudely attacked, or by my cries I will call in all the neighbourhood, and expose your audaciousness to the public." This she uttered in such a resolute tone, that La Chicon, who was obliged to stand in awe of the magistracy, begged of the count not to push things any farther. Upon which he forbore opposing Leonora's intention, who got out of his hands, and (what had never before happened to any virgin) quitted the closet as good a maid as she entered it.

She immediately flew to her go-vernante: "Come, good matron," said she, "leave off your foolish dialogue; we are cheated, let us quit this dangerous house."—"What is the matter, child!" with amazement answered Madam Marcella; "What is the reason of your so hasty departure?"—"I will inform you," replied Leonora; "but let us fly, for every minute I stay here gives me fresh uneasiness." However earnest the duenna was to know the cause of this hasty departure, she could not then be satisfied, but was

obliged to yield to the instances of Leonora. They both went away in a hurry, leaving La Chicon, the count, and his valet de chambre, in as great confusion as a parcel of players obliged to act a piece that has already been damned by the critics.

When Leonora was got into the street, with a great deal of inward disturbance she began to tell her go-vernante what passed in La Chicon's closet. Madam Marcella was very attentive; and when they had reached their own house, "I protest, my daughter," said she, "I am extremely mortified at the thoughts of what you have just informed me of. How was it possible for me to be deluded by that old woman? At first I made a difficulty of following her! O that I had continued in the same opinion! I ought to have mistrusted her flattering wheedles. I have committed a folly not to be forgiven in a person of my experience. Ah, why did not you discover this plot whilst I was at La Chicon's house! I would have scratched out her eyes, called the Count de Belflor by all the names I could have thought on, and tore off the beard of the counterfeited old man, who told me so many lies. But I will this minute return with the money which I received as a real restitution of what I supposed my husband had lent; and if I find them together, they shall not lose by staying for me." These words ended, she put on her veil which she had laid by, flew out, and made the best of her way to La Chicon's house.

The count was yet there; and, by the ill success of his stratagem, reduced almost to despair. Another would have quitted the pursuit; but he was not discouraged; for, with a thousand good qualities, he had one very bad one, which was the suffering himself to be too much hurried on by his amorous inclinations. Whenever he loved a lady, he was too warm in the pursuit of her favours; and, though naturally an honest man, he made no scruple of violating the most sacred laws to accomplish his desires. Considering, then, that it was impossible for him to gain his end without the assistance of Madam Marcella, he resolved to leave no

E

' means

means unattempted to engage her in his interest. He concluded that this duenna, how severe soever she appeared, was not proof against a considerable present: and indeed his opinion was not unjust, for if there are any such things as trusty governantes, the only reason is, that the gallants are not rich enough to make sufficient presents.

Madam Marcella was no sooner arrived, but finding those she wished for there, she opened in a very outrageous manner, loading the count and La Chicona with a million of hard names, and made the restitution-sum fly at the head of the valet de chambre. The count attempted to appease this storm with patience, and throwing himself at the duenna's feet, to render the scene more moving, he pressed her to take the purse again, and offered her a thousand pistoles besides, conjuring her to have pity on him. As her compassion had never been so powerfully solicited, so she did not prove inexorable. She soon quitted her invectives, and comparing the offered sum with the mean recompence she expected from Don Lewis, she easily found it was more for her interest to draw Leonora from her duty, than preserve her in it; which engaged her, after a few complimentary refusals, to take up the purse again, accept the offer of the thousand pistoles, promise to be subservient to the count's passion, and immediately prepare for a performance of her promise.

Knowing Leonora to be a virtuous young lady, she very carefully avoided giving her the least suspicion of her correspondence with the count, for fear she should discover it to Don Lewis her father; and being resolved on more subtle measures to ruin her, she thus addressed herself at her return: "Leonora, I have just now satisfied my enraged mind, I found the three villainous deceivers confounded at your courageous retreat. I threatened La Chicona with your father's resentment, and the most rigorous severity of the law; I called the Count de Belflor all the ill names which rage could suggest, and hope that lord will no more be guilty of any such attempts, and that his intrigues will no more exercise my

vigilance. I thank Heaven that, by your resolution, you have escaped the net which was spread for you. I weep for joy; I am ravished to think he has not been able to gain any advantage over you by this stratagem; for great lords make it their diversion to seduce young ladies. Most of those who value themselves on preserving the strictest degree of probity, are not scrupulous on this head, as though the dishonouring of families were no ill act. I do not absolutely say that the count is a man of this character, nor that he aims at deceiving you; we must not always judge ill of our neighbours, perhaps his designs are honourable: though his quality entitles him to the best match at court, your beauty may yet have made him resolved to marry you; I remember also, in the answers he made to the hard words I gave him, he hinted it to me."

"What do you say, good governante?" interrupted Leonora; "if he had any such intention, he would before now have asked me of my father, who would never have denied a man of his quality."—"What you say is very just," replied the duenna; "I am of your mind; the course which the count took is suspicious, or rather his intentions were ill, I am almost in the mind to return to him, and scold at him afresh."—"No, good Madam," replied Leonora; "it is better to forget what is past, and revenge it by contempt."—"It is true," said Marcella, "I think that is the best way; you are wiser than I. But, on the other side, let us not judge amiss of the count's sentiments. How do we know but he took that course, as the most refined way of discovering his passion? Before obtaining your father's consent, perhaps he was fond of obtaining your favour, and securing your heart by long services, that your union might thereby be rendered more charming. If so, my daughter, would it be a great crime to hearken to him? Unbosom yourself, you know my tender affection for you. Are you sensible of any alteration in favour of the count? or would you, if it was put to you, refuse to marry him?"

At

At this malicious question the too sincere Leonora cast down her eyes, and blushing owned, that she had no aversion for him; but modesty preventing her farther discovering herself, the duenna pressed her afresh to hide nothing from her. She, overpowered by the governante's tender professions, went on. "Good Marcella," said she, "since you would have me talk to you as my confidante, know that I think Belflor deserves to be loved: I liked his mien so well, and withal have heard such an advantageous character of him, that I could not help being touched with his addresses. The indefatigable care which you always took to oppose them, hath frequently given me great uneasiness; and I own that I have silently deplored, and in some measure repaid with my tears, the pains your vigilance has forced him to bear. I will farther own to you at this very moment, that instead of hating him after this rash attempt, my heart against my will excuses him, and throws the fault on your severity."

"Daughter," replied the governante; "since you give me leave to believe his addresses will be agreeable to you, I will manage this lover for you."—"I am very sensible," answered Leonora, in a more moving tone, "of the service you are willing to render me. If the count was not one of the grandees of the first rank at court, was he only a bare gentleman, I should prefer him to all men; but let us not flatter ourselves. Belflor is a great lord, and doubtless is designed for one of the richest heiresses in the kingdom. Do not let us expect that he will ever descend to Don Lewis's daughter, who has but a mean fortune to offer him. No, no," adds she, "he has no such favourable thought of me; he does not think me worth bearing his name, and pursues me only to dishonour me."

"Ah! wherefore," said the duenna, "will you think he does not love you well enough to marry you? Love daily works greater miracles than that. You seem to imagine that Heaven hath set an infinite distance betwixt the count and you; do

yourself more justice, Leonora: it would not be below him to join his fortune to yours; you are of an ancient noble family, and your alliance could never put him to the blush. Since you have some inclinations towards him," continued she, "I must talk with him: I will examine his intentions, and if I find them such as they ought to be, I will encourage them with some hopes."—"Oh! take care how you do that," replied Leonora; "I am of opinion you ought not to go in search of him: if he should suspect my having any hand in it, he would cease to value me."—"Oh, I am a woman of more address than you imagine," replied Marcella. "I will begin with accusing him of a design to seduce you; upon which he will not fail to justify himself: I will hear him, and shall see the event. In short, my daughter, leave it to me; I'll manage your honour as cautiously as if it were my own."

The duenna went out at the beginning of the night. She found Belflor near Don Lewis's house, and gave him an account of her discourse with her mistress, not forgetting to value herself on her conduct in the discovery of the lady's passion for him. Nothing could oblige the count more than this news; wherefore, he expressed his thanks to Marcella in the most sensible manner; that is, he promised to give her the thousand pistoles on the next day, assuring himself of the success of his enterprise; very well knowing, that a woman prepossessed is half seduced. They then parted very well satisfied with each other, the duenna returning home.

Leonora, who impatiently expected her, asked what news she had brought. "The best that you could ever hear," answered the governante; "all things succeed the best in the world. I have seen the count; I can tell you that his intentions are not ill, he has no other design but that of marrying you. This he swore to me by all that is sacred among men. You may perhaps imagine that I yielded to him upon this, but I assure you I did not. If you are thus resolved," said I; "why don't you make the usual ap-

"plication to Don Lewis?"—"Ah! dear Marcella," answered he, without appearing disturbed at this question, "could you think it proper for me to obtain her father's good will, before I was assured how she stood inclined towards me; and, considering nothing but the transports of a blind passion, endeavour tyrannically to obtain her of her father? No; her case is dearer to me than my own desires, and I am too much a man of honour to build my happiness on her misfortunes."

"During these expressions of his," continued the duenna, "I observed him with the utmost attention, and employed all my experience in discovering by his eyes whether his love was so sincere as he represented it. What shall I say! He seemed touched with a real passion, and I with a joy which without much difficulty I could not conceal. Being then satisfied with his sincerity, I thought it not improper to glance at your sentiments with regard to him, in order to secure you such a considerable lover. "My lord," said I to him, "Leonora hath no aversion to you; and, as far as I can judge, your addresses are not insupportable to her."—"Great God," exclaimed he then, all in a rapture, "what do I hear! Is it possible that the charming Leonora should entertain any favourable thoughts of me? How much am I indebted to you, most obliging Marcella, for having rid me of such a tedious uncertainty; you, who by a continual opposition have loaded me with so many torments! But, dear Marcella, complete my bliss, by obliging me with an opportunity of speaking with the divine Leonora; I will solemnly promise and swear before you, that I will never be any other's but her's."

"To this," pursued the governor, "he added yet more moving asseverations: in short, daughter, he intreated me in such a pressing manner to procure him a private opportunity of speaking to you, that I could not avoid promising to accomplish it!"—"Ah, why did you promise him that?" replied Leonora, somewhat disturbed. "With

how much care have you inculcated this doctrine into me, that a prudent virgin ought industriously to shun all dangerous conversations!"—"I agree to what you say," replied the duenna, "and it is a very good maxim; but you may lawfully dispense with it on this occasion, since you may look on the count as your husband."—"He is not so yet," replied Leonora, "and I ought not to see him before my father allows of his suit."

"Madam Marcella now began to repent the good education she had bestowed on the young lady, since she found it so difficult to subdue her virtue. But yet resolved to compass her end, cost what it would: "My dear Leonora," said she, "I applaud myself when I see you so reserved. O happy fruit of my cares! You have profited by all the rules I have given you. I am charmed with my own work! But, my daughter, you exaggerate what I have taught; you strain my morals too severely, and your virtue is indeed a little too rude. Though I am fond of a strict severity, yet I cannot approve of a brutish ill-mannered caution, indistinguishably and indifferently levelled against guilt and innocence. A virgin doth not abandon her virtue, by affording her ear to a lover of the purity of whose desires she is satisfied; in which case it is no more criminal to answer his passion, than it is to be sensible of it. Depend upon me, Leonora, I have too much experience, and am too deeply engaged in your interests, to draw you into any measures prejudicial to you."

"Alas! where would you have me speak with the count?" said Leonora. "In your own apartment," replied the duenna, "for that is the safest place; I will introduce him to-morrow night."—"Good Marcella," replied Leonora, "shall I then admit a man?"—"Yes, you shall admit him," interrupted the duenna; "it is no such extraordinary thing as you imagine, it is done every day; and I send up my wishes to Heaven, that the maidens who receive such visits, may be fortified with as good intentions as yours?"

"yours? Besides, what have you to fear; shall not I be with you?"—"If my father should surprize us?" replied Leonora. "Never disturb yourself in the least about that," returned Marcella; "your father is perfectly satisfied in your conduct, knows my fidelity, and reposes an entire confidence in me." Upon this Leonora, being so violently pushed on by the duenna, and inwardly pressed by her love, was no longer able to hold out, but yielded to Marcella's proposal.

The count was immediately informed of it, and so joyfully received the news, that he instantly presented his female agent with five hundred pistoles, and a ring of the like value; and she accordingly, finding him such a strict observer of his word, resolved not to fail in the performance of her promise. So that next night, as soon as she imagined the family asleep, she fastened to the balcony a silken ladder which the count had given her, and by that means introduced the impatient lover into his mistress's apartment.

In the mean while, the young lady was wholly taken up with a series of melancholy reflections, which very much disturbed her. Notwithstanding her inclination for the count, and whatever her governante could say, she blamed her easy consent to a visit that would violate her duty. The purity of his intentions did not make her easy. To receive a man into her chamber by night, whose real sentiments she was ignorant of, and withal without her father's knowledge, seemed to her not only criminal, but also what might render her contemptible in her lover's eyes. It was this last reflection which most tormented her, and she was extremely full of it when the count entered.

He immediately fell on his knees, to thank her for the favour she did him. He appeared thoroughly touched with love and acknowledgment, and assured her of his intentions to marry her; but not expressing himself so satisfactorily on that head as she desired, "Count," said she, "I am willing to believe you have no other design than what you have told me; but whatever assurances you can give me, I shall always

suspect them till they are authorized by my father's consent."—"Madam," answered Belflor, "I had long since asked that, if I had not feared the obtaining it at the expence of your repose."—"I do not blame you for not having yet done it," replied Leonora, "but even approve these more refined punctilios of your love; but nothing at present hinders you, and you must speak to my father as soon as possible, or resolve never to see me more."

"Ah! why never see you more, charming Leonora!" replied the count. "How little sensible are you of the pleasures of love! If you knew what it was to love as well as I, you would be pleased with my disclosing my pains in secret, and at least conceal them for some time from your father's knowledge. O how great are the charms of such a private correspondence betwixt two hearts firmly united!"—"They may prove so to you," said Leonora, "but they can be no other than torments to me. Such subtle distinctions of tenderness very ill become a virtuous maiden: boast therefore no more of the delights of a guilty commerce, which, if you valued me, you would not have offered; and if your intentions are really such as you would persuade me they are, you ought from the bottom of your soul to blame my hearing such offers so patiently. But, alas!" adds she, letting fall some tears, "it is to my weakness alone that this crime ought to be imputed; I have indeed deserved it, by doing what I have done for you."

"Adorable Leonora," cried the count, "you wrong me extremely; your too scrupulous virtue takes false alarms. Why should you fear, because I have been so happy as to prevail on you to favour my love, that I should cease to value you? How unjust is this! No, Madam, I am sensible of the full value of your favours; they can never deprive you of my esteem; I am therefore ready to do what you expect of me, and will speak to Signior Don Lewis to-morrow. I will use my utmost endeavour to obtain his consent to my happiness; but I must not omit telling you that I see but
"small

"small hopes of it."—"How!" replied Leonora, extremely surprized, "can my father possibly refuse his consent to a man of your character and quality at court?"—"It is that very quality and character which makes me fear a denial. You are in a surprize at what I say: but I will rid you of it."

"Some days past the king declared he was resolved to marry me. He hath not yet named the lady he designs me for; but has only given me to understand that she is one of the best matches at court, and that he is firmly bent upon it. Not knowing at that time what sentiments you might have with regard to me, (for you very well know that your rigorous severity never before allowed me an opportunity of discovering myself) I did not shew any averfeness to obey his will. After this, judge, Madam, whether Don Lewis would run the risk of the king's displeasure, by accepting me for his son-in-law."

"No, doubtless," said Leonora; "I know my father, how great soever the advantages of your alliance might prove, would chuse rather to renounce it, than expose himself to the king's displeasure. But if my father should not oppose our union, we should not yet be the happier; for, in short, count, how can you give me a hand which the king has engaged elsewhere?"—"Madam," answered Belflor, "I own sincerely, that I at present labour under a very great difficulty on that side; but yet hope, that by an even and very prudent conduct with regard to his Majesty, I shall so well manage his favours and friendship for me, as to invent a way to avoid a misfortune with which I am so unexpectedly threatened. You yourself, beautiful Leonora, may assist me herein, if you think me worth joining to you."—"Ah! in what manner," said she, "can I contribute to the breaking off the match which the king has proposed to you?"—"Ah, Madam," replied he, with a passionate air, "if you please to receive my troth, which I offer to plight to you, I can preserve myself for you, without incurring the king's displeasure."

"Permit, adorable Leonora," adds

he, kneeling, "that I espouse you in the presence of Madam Marcella, and let her be the witness of the sanctity of our engagement; by this means I shall easily escape that miserable knot that is preparing for me: for after that, whenever the king presses me to accept the lady he designs me, I have nothing to do but prostrate myself at the feet of my prince, and inform him that I have long loved and secretly married you. However desirous he may be to marry me to another, he is yet too gracious to snatch me from her whom I adore, and too just to offer this affront to your family."

"What do you think, discreet Marcella," adds he, turning to the governante, "what is your opinion of this project, with which love has this minute inspired me?"—"I am charmed with it," said the duenna; "it must indeed be owned that love is very ingenious!"—"And you, charming Leonora," replied the count, "what do you say to it? Can your heart, though armed with distrust, refuse it's approbation?"—"No," returned Leonora, "provided you will let my father into the secret; who, I doubt not, will subscribe to what you will have him."

"We ought to be very careful how we intrust this affair with him," interrupted the wicked duenna. "You do not know Don Lewis; he is too nice in punctilios of honour to be assisting to secret amours: the very proposal of a private marriage will offend him. Besides, his prudence will not fail to make him afraid of the consequences of an union which seems to thwart the king's designs. By this indiscreet step you will fill him with suspicions, his eyes will be continually upon you in all your actions, and he will deprive you of all opportunities."

"Ah! I shall then die with grief," cried our courtier. "But, Madam Marcella," pursued he, affecting a melancholy tone, "do you really believe that Don Lewis would reject the offer of a private marriage?"—"I do not doubt it in the least," answered the governante: "but grant that he should accept it, he is so scrupulously religious, that he would never yield to the omission
" of

"of any of the ceremonies of the church, and if they are all performed in your marriage, it will soon be published."

"Ah, my dear Leonora," then said the count, tenderly locking his mistress's hand betwixt his own, "must we, to satisfy a vain notion of decorum, expose ourselves to the terrible danger of being separated for ever, since there is no occasion for any body but you to dispose of yourself to me? The consent of a father would perhaps spare you some uneasy thoughts; but since Madam Marcella has shewed us the impossibility of obtaining it, yield yourself to my innocent desires; receive my heart and hand, and when it shall be a proper time to inform Don Lewis of our engagement, we will acquaint him also why we concealed it."—"Well, count," said Leonora, "I consent, then, that you do not so soon speak to my father; but first sound the king's mind. Before I receive your hand in private, speak to your prince, tell him you have privately married me; let us endeavour by this false confidence—" "O no, Madam," replied Belflor, "I am too great a hater of a lye, to dare to maintain this feint; I cannot thus dissemble. Besides, I know, the king, if he should once discover I had deceived him, would never pardon me so long as he lived."

"I should never have done, Signior Cleofas," continued the devil, "if I should repeat verbatim all the expressions which Belflor made use of to seduce this young lady. Wherefore I shall only tell you, that he employed all the passionate language which I suggest to men on the like occasions, but it was in vain; he swore he would as soon as possible publicly confirm the promise which he had made in secret, it was in vain; he called Heaven to witness his oaths; he could not triumph over Leonora's virtue; and day being ready to appear, forced him against his will to depart."

"The next day, the duenna, believing her honour, or rather her interest, engaged not to abandon her enterprize, said to Don Lewis's daughter: "Leonora, I do not

know what to say farther to you; I find you oppose the count's passion, as though it had no other aim than that of a bare gallantry. Have you not observed something in his person that disgusts you?"—"No, good Marcella," answered Leonora; "on the contrary, he never appeared so amiable, and his discourse discovered new charms to me."—"If so," replied the governante, "I do not comprehend you: you are possessed with a violent inclination for him, and yet refuse to yield to a thing, the necessity of which has already been represented to you."

"My good Madam," replied Don Lewis's daughter, "you have more prudence and experience than I; but have you considered thoroughly the consequences which may result from a marriage contracted without my father's knowledge?"—"Yes, yes," answered the duenna, "I have made all necessary reflection on that, and am very sorry to see you so obstinately resist the glorious settlement which fortune presents you. Have a care your obduracy does not weary and disgust your lover, and be afraid lest he should cast his eyes on the interest of his fortune, which the violence of his passion has made him neglect. Since he offers to give you his faith, accept it without farther deliberation. His word binds him; than which nothing is more sacred to a man of honour. Besides, I am witness that he acknowledges you for his wife. Do not you know that such important evidence as mine, is sufficient to condemn, in a court of justice, that lover who should dare to perjure himself?"

"It was by such language as this, that the perfidious Marcella shocked Leonora; who, suffering all reflections of the danger that threatened her to wear off, in all simplicity, a few days after, abandoned herself to the count's wicked intentions. The duenna introduced him every night by the balcony into his mistress's apartment, and let him out before day."

"One night, having warned him to depart somewhat later than ordinary, and Aurora beginning to break through the darkness, he hastily endeavoured to slide into the street, but

but by mischance succeeded so ill, that he got a very severe fall.

Don Lewis de Cespides, whose bed-chamber was under that of his daughter, happening that morning to rise very early for the dispatch of some pressing affairs, heard the count's fall, and opening his window to see what was the occasion of the noise, perceived a man just risen from the ground with great difficulty, and Marcella in his daughter's balcony busy in drawing up the silken ladder, which the count had not made so good use of in his descending as in his ascent. Don Lewis rubbed his eyes, and at first took this spectacle for an illusion; but, after having considered it, concluded that nothing was more real, and that the day-light, imperfect as it yet was, did but too much discover his disgrace.

Confused at the fatal sight, and transported by a just rage, he flew in his night-gown to Leonora's apartment, with a sword in one hand, and a taper in the other. He went in quest of her and her governante, in order to sacrifice them both to his resentment. He knocked at their chamber door, and commanded them to open it; they knew his voice, and trembling obeyed. He entered with a furious air, and discovering his naked sword to their amazed eyes, "I come," said he, "to wash away with her blood the infamous affront that wretch has thrown upon her father, and at the same time punish the villainous governante that has betrayed the trust I reposed in her."

They both fell upon their knees, and the duenna began: "Signior," said she, "before we receive the chastisement which you have prepared, vouchsafe to hear us one moment."—"Well, wretch," replied the old gentleman, "I consent to suspend my vengeance for a minute. Speak, inform me of all the circumstances of my misfortunes. But what do I talk of all the circumstances? I know them all but one, and that is the name of that rash man who has dishonoured my family."—"Signior," replied Madam Marcella, "the Count de Belflor is the gentleman that hath done

it."—"The Count de Belflor!" said Don Lewis; "where has he seen my daughter? by what means has he seduced her? conceal nothing from me."—"Signior," replied the governante, "I will repeat the whole story to you with all the sincerity I am capable of."

She then, with an infinite deal of art, recited all the expressions which she had made Leonora believe the count had uttered with regard to her. She painted him in the most lively colours of a tender, scrupulous, and sincere lover. But not being able to elude the discovery of the whole truth, she was obliged to tell it; but enlarged on the reasons that prevailed with them to conceal from him the secret marriage, and gave them such an acceptable turn as appeased Don Lewis's rage. Which she perfectly discerning, in order to completely soften the old man, "Signior," said she "this is what you desired to know: punish us this minute; plunge your sword in Leonora's breast. But what do I say! Leonora is innocent; she has only followed the counsel of a woman whom you intrusted with her conduct, wherefore it is me alone against whom your sword should point. It is I that have introduced the count into your daughter's apartment, and I alone have tied the knot where with she is bound. It is I who have winked at all irregularities in a contract that was not backed by your authority, in order to secure you a son-in-law, whose interest you know is the channel through which all court-favours at present pass. I had no other aim than Leonora's happiness, and the advantage your family may reap by such an important alliance; and indeed nothing less than an excess of zeal to serve your house could draw me into measures that carry with them such an appearance of treachery."

While the subtle Marcella was thus cajoling the old gentleman, her mistress shed no tears, but discovered such a sensible grief as he could not resist. He grew tender, his rage turned into compassion, he dropt his sword, and quitting the air of an angry father, "Ah, my daughter!" said

“ said he, with tears in his eyes, “ what a fatal passion is love ! Alas, “ you are not sensible of all the rea- “ sons you have to afflict yourself. “ The shame alone that results from “ the presence of a father, who has “ surprized you, must unavoidably “ draw tears from you ! besides which, “ you do not yet foresee all the anxi- “ eties your lover may perhaps prepare “ for you. And you, imprudent Mar- “ cella, to what a precipice has your “ indiscreet zeal for my family brought “ you ? I acknowledge that such a “ considerable alliance as that of the “ count might dazzle your eyes, and “ it is that alone which excuses you “ to me : but, wretch that you are, “ ought you not to have distrusted a “ lover of his high quality ? The more “ interest and favour he can pretend “ to, the more you ought to have “ guarded yourself against him. “ Should he make no scruple of break- “ ing his faith with Leonora, what “ course can I take ? If I implore the “ assistance of the laws, a person of his “ character would easily be able to “ shelter himself from their severity : “ and I wish that, continuing just to “ his oaths, he may prove willing to “ keep his word with my daughter ; “ for if the king, as you say, designs “ to oblige him to marry another lady, “ it is much to be feared his majesty “ will force him to it by virtue of his “ authority.”

“ O, Sir,” interrupted Leonora, “ that ought not to alarm you ; the “ count has very well assured us, that “ the king will not commit such a vio- “ lence on his passion.” — “ I am per- “ suaded,” said Marcella, “ his ma- “ jesty is too fond of his favourite, to “ exercise such a tyranny over him ; “ and also that he is too generous to “ plunge into a fatal grief Don Lewis “ de Cespides, who has spent all his “ best days in the service of the pub- “ lic.”

“ Pray Heaven it prove so,” replied “ the old gentleman sighing, “ and that “ my fears prove vain ! I will go to “ the count, and desire him to explain “ this affair. A father’s eyes are “ piercing, and I shall discover the “ deepest recesses of his soul. If I find “ him in the disposition which I wish, “ I will pardon what is past : but,” “ adds he, in a more resolute tone, “ if

“ by his discourse I discover a perf- “ dious heart, you shall both with “ tears bewail your imprudence in a “ melancholy retirement the remain- “ der of your days.” At these words “ he put up his sword, and leaving “ them to the frightful thoughts he had “ raised in them, returned to his apart- “ ment to dress.”

In this part of the story Asmodeus was thus interrupted by the student : “ However affecting the story you are “ telling me may be, something I have “ my eyes upon prevents me from “ hearing you so attentively as I could “ wish. I see a very genteel woman “ between a young and an old man ; “ they are all three, I suppose, drink- “ ing exquisite liquors, and whilst the “ fond dotard is embracing her, the “ baggage slips her hand behind him, “ into that of a young cavalier, who “ to be sure is the spark.” — “ Quite “ the contrary,” answered the cripple, “ it is her husband, and the other her “ lover. The old man is a person of “ consequence, a commander of the “ military order of Calatrava, and is “ ruining himself for that lady, whose “ husband has a small post at court ; “ she caresses her old lover for interest, “ and is false to him, in favour of her “ husband, by inclination.”

“ It is a fine picture,” replied Zam- bullo : “ but is not the husband a “ Frenchman ?” — “ No,” answered the devil, “ he is a Spaniard.” — “ Oh, then, “ the good city of Madrid has within “ its walls good-natured husbands “ too ? But they do not swarm here “ as they do at Paris, which, without “ dispute, is the most fruitful city in “ the world in such inhabitants.” — “ Pardon me, Signior Asmodeus,” said Don Cleofas, “ for breaking in upon “ the thread of Leonora’s story. Go “ on with it, I beg you, for it pleases “ me infinitely : there is such an art- “ ful variety in the seducing this “ young lady that I am transported “ with it.”

CHAP. V.

THE CONTINUATION AND CON- CLUSION OF THE HISTORY OF THE COUNT AND LEONORA.

“ DON Lewis went out early to “ the count ; who, not suspect- “ ing he was discovered, was surprized

F

with

“with his visit. He stepped forward to meet him at his entrance, and after having stifled him with embraces, “How great is my joy,” said he “to see Don Lewis here? Doth he come to offer me an opportunity of serving him?” — “My lord,” answered Don Lewis, “order, if you please, that we be alone.”

“Belflor accordingly did so, and they both sat down; when the old man, thus began: “My lord,” said he, “my honour and repose require an explanation, which I come to ask of you; I saw you this morning go out of Leonora’s apartment; she has confessed all, she has told me——” “She has told you that I love her,” interrupted the count, “to avoid a discourse which he was not fond of hearing: but she has but feebly expressed all that I feel for her. I am enchanted! she is a lady all over adorable, she has wit, beauty, virtue, no perfection is wanting. I have been told likewise, that you have a son at the university of Alcala; is he like his sister! If he hath her beauty, and resembles you in other excellencies, he must be a compleat gentleman. I die with desire to see him, and offer you all my interest to serve him.”

“I am indebted to you for that offer,” said Don Lewis, gravely; “but to come to——” “He ought to be entered in the service immediately,” interrupted the count again: “I charge myself with the care of his fortune; I assure you he shall not wait amongst the crowd of subaltern officers.” — “Answer me, count,” replied the old gentleman hastily, “and leave off your interruption. Do you design to keep your promise?” — “Yes, without doubt,” interrupted Belflor the third time; “I will keep my word which I have given you, to stand by your son with all my interest; depend upon me, I am a sincere man.” — “It is too much,” cried Cespides, rising up, “after having seduced my daughter, that you dare insult me; but know I am a gentleman, and the injury you have done me shall not remain unpunished.” At these words he returned home with a heart full of resentment, contriving a hundred projects to compass his revenge. As

soon as he came home, he told Leonora and Marcella, very angrily, “It was not without ground that I suspected the count; he is a traitor, on whom I will be revenged: and as for you two, you shall to-morrow be entered in a convent; you have nothing to do but prepare yourselves, and thank Heaven my rage contents itself with that chastisement.” He then went and locked himself up in his closet, to deliberate what course to take in such a nice conjuncture.

“How great was Leonora’s grief when she heard Belflor was perfidious! She remained some time without motion; a mortal paleness covered her face, her spirits fled, and she fell motionless into the arms of her governante; who, fearing she was dying, used all her endeavours to get her out of this fit. She succeeded; and Leonora re-assuming the use of her senses, and seeing her governante very officiously helping her, “How barbarous are you!” said she with a deep sigh; “why did you force me out of the happy state in which I was? I was not then sensible of the horror of my fate. Why did you not let me die? You, who well know all the tormenting griefs which must disturb the repose of my life, wherefore did you keep me alive?”

“Marcella endeavoured to comfort her; but that only increased her torment. “All your talk is superfluous,” cried Don Lewis’s daughter: “I will hear nothing. Do not lose your time in attempting to abate my despair, you ought rather to raise it. You, who have plunged me into the abyss of misery in which I now am: it is you who vouched for the count’s sincerity; without you I had never yielded myself to my inclinations for him, which I should insensibly have conquered; or, however, at least, he would never have been able to have gained the least advantage over me. But I will not,” continued she, “charge my misery on you, I accuse nobody but myself. I ought not to have followed your advice in the acceptance of a man’s faith, without consulting my father. How dazling soever the count’s address might appear to me, I ought to have despised

“despised rather than have com-
 “mented it at the expence of my ho-
 “nour. In short, I ought to have
 “distrusted him, you, and myself.
 “Since I have been so weak as to yield
 “to his perfidious oaths, after the
 “affliction which I have brought upon
 “Don Lewis, and the dishonour I
 “have done my family, I hate myself;
 “and am so far from fearing the re-
 “tirement with which I am threaten-
 “ed, that I am fond of hiding my
 “shame in the most dismal retreat in
 “the world.”

“These passionate words were not
 “only accompanied with abundance of
 “tears, but she tore her clothes in
 “pieces, and revenged the injustice of
 “her lover on her beautiful hair. The
 “duenna, to suit herself to her mistress’s
 “grief, did not spare for grimaces and
 “distorted faces. She dropped some
 “of those tears she had always at com-
 “mand: she imprecated a thousand
 “curses on mankind in general, and
 “the count in particular. “Is it
 “possible,” exclaimed she, “that
 “Belflor, who seemed so full of justice
 “and probity, should prove such a
 “villain as to deceive us both! I can-
 “not extricate myself out of this sur-
 “prise; or, rather, I cannot persuade
 “myself that it is so.”

“Really,” said Leonora, “when
 “I fancy him at my knees, what
 “maiden would not have trusted his
 “tender engaging air, and depended
 “on oaths which he so audaciously
 “invoked Heaven to witness, and
 “those transports which he incessantly
 “repeated! Besides, his eyes discover-
 “ed more love than his mouth ex-
 “pressed, and the very sight of me
 “seemed to charm him. No, he did not
 “deceive me; I cannot think it. My
 “father must not have talked with him
 “so discreetly as he ought; they both
 “grew warm, and the count answer-
 “ed less like a lover than a great lord.”

“But alas! perhaps I flatter myself.
 “What shall I do to extricate myself
 “out of this uncertainty? I will write
 “to Belflor, and tell him that I expect
 “him here this night. I am resolved
 “he shall either secure my alarmed
 “heart, or confirm his treachery.”

“Marcella applauded the design, and
 “was not herself without hope that
 “the count, ambitious as he was, yet
 “touched by Leonora’s tears, might

“fall from his resolution in this inter-
 “view, and determine to marry her.”

“In the mean while, Belflor, hav-
 “ing rid himself of honest Don Lewis,
 “continued in his apartment, reflect-
 “ing on the consequences which might
 “result from the reception he had just
 “given him. He firmly concluded
 “that the whole family of the Cespides,
 “enraged at the injury done to their
 “house, would study revenge; but that
 “did not much disturb him: the in-
 “terest of his love much more em-
 “ployed his thoughts. He imagined
 “that Leonora would be put into a
 “convent, or at least that she would be
 “kept so strictly watched, that in all
 “probability he should never see her
 “more. This thought afflicted him,
 “and he was contriving how to escape
 “this misfortune, when his valet de
 “chambre brought him a letter which
 “Marcella had just put into his hands.
 “It was a billet from Leonora, the
 “contents whereof run thus:

“I Am to-morrow to quit the world,
 “and in a solitary retirement
 “have the horror of seeing myself
 “dishonoured, odious to my family
 “and myself; this is the deplorable
 “condition to which I am reduced by
 “believing you. I expect you once
 “more this night. In my despair I
 “hunt after new torments. Come
 “and own to me that your heart had
 “no part in any of the oaths which
 “your lips swore to me, or justify
 “their sincerity by a conduct which
 “alone can soften the rigour of my
 “fate. Perhaps this meeting may be
 “attended with some danger, after
 “what has passed betwixt you and
 “my father; take care therefore that
 “you be accompanied by a friend.
 “Though you have occasioned all the
 “miseries of my life, I yet feel my-
 “self concerned for yours.

“LEONORA.”

“The count read this letter twice or
 “thrice over, and representing Leo-
 “nora in the condition which she de-
 “scribed, he melted into compassion.
 “He now seriously reflected on what he
 “had done; justice, probity and ho-
 “nour, all the laws of which his passion
 “had turned him to the violation of, be-

gan to resume their empire over him. He suddenly found his blindness dissipated, and, like a man just got out of a violent fever, blushed at the extravagant words and actions which had escaped him; he was ashamed of all the base artifices he had used to satisfy his desires.

"Wretch that I am," cried he, "what have I done? What devil possessed me? I promised to marry Leonora; I called Heaven to witness it; I feigned that the king proposed a match to me; I have made use of lies, perfidiousness, and sacrilege, to corrupt her innocence; what madness has seized me? how much better had it become me to have suppressed my passion, instead of satisfying it in so criminal a manner! I have seduced an innocent lady, and now abandoned her to the resentments of her relations, whom I have equally dishonoured, and so return the happiness she has conferred on me with a load of miseries. Ah, how barbarous is such ingratitude! Ought I not rather to repair the disgrace and infamy I have done her? Yes, I ought; and I will, by marrying her, discharge the promise I made her. Who is there can oppose so just an intention? Ought her tenderness to me to prejudice me against her virtue? No: I know how much her resistance cost me to conquer it; and she rather yielded to my sworn faith, than my amorous transports. But, on the other side, if I confine myself to this choice, I shall be a considerable sufferer. I, who may pretend to the noblest and richest heiresses in the kingdom, shall I content myself with a private gentleman's daughter of a moderate fortune? What will the court think of me? They will say I have married very ridiculously."

Belflor, thus divided betwixt love and ambition, did not know to which to incline: but though he was not yet resolved whether he should marry Leonora or not, he yet determined to go to her that evening.

Don Lewis, on the other side, passed the day in contriving the restoration of his honour. The conjuncture was very nice; to have recourse to the law, would be to publish his dishonour; besides, he very much feared that justice might be on

one side, and the judges declare on the other. He durst not throw himself at the king's feet; for, believing that prince designed another lady for the count, he was afraid it would be in vain. No satisfaction was then left besides that of arms, and it was this he concluded on.

In the heat of his resentment he was tempted to send a challenge; but beginning to consider that he was too old and feeble to rely on his own arm, he chose rather to put it into the hands of his son, whose pushes might prove more fortunate and successful. He then sent a footman to Alcala, with a letter for his son; by which he commanded him to come immediately to Madrid, to revenge an injury done to the family of Celsides.

Don Pedro, his son, is eighteen years of age, perfectly handsome, and so brave, that he passes at Alcala for the most valiant of all the students in the university; but you know him, adds the devil, and therefore it is needless in me to enlarge farther on his character. — "It is true," said Cleofas, "he has all the valour and merit, which is possible to centre in a young man."

He was not then at Alcala, as his father supposed, replied Asmodeus; but the desire of seeing a lady whom he loved had brought him to Madrid. The last time he had been there to see his relations, he made this conquest at the Prado. He did not yet know her name; for she had obliged him not to use any means to inform himself; to which cruel necessity he submitted, though with great difficulty. It was a woman of quality who had conceived a passion for him; and believing she ought to distrust the discretion and constancy of a student, she thought fit to try him before she discovered herself.

This unknown fair took up more of his thoughts than Aristotle's philosophy; and Alcala being situate so near this city, he, as you have done, often played truant: with this only difference, that it was for the sake of an object which deserved much better than your Donna Thomasa. To conceal the knowledge of his amorous journeys from Don Lewis, his father, he used to lodge at an inn in the suburbs, where he carefully

carefully sheltered himself under a borrowed name. He never went out but at a certain hour in the morning; when he was obliged to go to a certain house, where the lady which occasioned this neglect of his studies, was so kind as to come, accompanied by a chamber-maid. He then lived locked up in his inn the rest of the day; but, in requital, at night he walked all over the city.

It happened one night as he crossed a bye street, he heard the sound of several voices and instruments, which seemed worth his attention; whereupon he stopped, and found it to be a serenade given by a gentleman that was drunk, and naturally very brutishly rude. He had no sooner discerned our student, but he immediately ran to him, and without any other compliment; "Friend," said he, in a hasty tone, "go about your business, I do not love inquisitive people."—"I might have withdrawn," answered Don Pedro, shocked at these words, "if you had desired me in a civil manner; but I will now stay to teach you better language."—"We will see then," said the master of the concert, drawing his sword, "which of us two shall yield the place to the other."

Don Pedro also drew his sword, and they began to engage. Though the master of the serenade acquitted himself with great dexterity, he could not yet parry a mortal thrust, upon the receipt of which he fell dead on the spot. All the actors of the concert, who had by this time quitted their music, and were drawing their swords to assist him, now came on to revenge his death. They all at once fell upon Don Pedro, who on this occasion shewed his utmost skill; for, besides parrying with surprising dexterity all the passes made at him, he himself made very vigorous ones, and at once kept all his enemies employed.

But they so obstinately persisting, and their number being too great, as able a fencer as he was, he could not have escaped alive, if the Count de Belflor, who then passed by, had not taken his part. The count, wanting neither courage nor a large share of generosity, could not see so many swords drawn upon one man, with-

out engaging himself on his side. He drew, and joining with Don Pedro, they pushed so briskly at the serenaders, that they all fled, some wounded, and others for fear of being so.

After their retreat, the student began to thank the count for his assistance; but Belflor interrupted him: "No more of that," said he. "You are not wounded?"—"No," replied Don Pedro. "Let us get from this place," replied the count, "I see you have killed a man; it is dangerous to stay longer in this street; you may perhaps be seized." Upon which they immediately making the best of their way, got into another street; and when they were advanced a good distance from the place where they fought, they stopped.

Don Pedro, very sensibly influenced by just and grateful sentiments, intreated the count not to conceal from him the name of a gentleman to whom he was so much obliged. Belflor made no scruple of telling it, and also desired to know his. But the student, unwilling to discover himself, said his name was Don Juan de Matos, and assured the count that he would never forget what he had done for him.

"I would willingly," said the count, "present you with an opportunity of discharging your obligation to me this very night. I am engaged to a meeting not wholly free from danger, and was going in search of a friend to accompany me. I am sensible of your valour, and therefore, Don Juan, I desire your friendship."—"Your seeming to doubt it renders me somewhat uneasy," replied the student. "I do not know how to employ the life which you have saved, better than exposing it for you. Let us make haste; I am ready to follow you." Belflor then conducted Don Pedro to Don Lewis's house, and by the balcony they both entered Leonora's apartment.

Don Cleofas interrupted the devil here. "Signior Asmodeus," said he, "how was it possible Don Pedro should not know his father's house?"—"That was impossible," replied the daemon; "for Don Lewis had not removed to this house above eight

eight days; which I designed to have told you, had not you interrupted me. You are too hasty, and have got an ill custom of breaking the thread of other people's discourse. Pray correct that fault for the future.

Don Pedro, continued the devil, did not so much as suspect that he was at his father's house, nor thought she who introduced him was Madam Marcella; by reason she received him in the dark in an anti-chamber, where Belflor intreated his companion to stay as long as he should remain with the lady: to which the student consented, and sat down with his naked sword in his hand for fear of a surprise. His thoughts were taken up with the favours which he concluded love was showering on Belflor, and wished himself as happy as he; for though he was not ill treated by his unknown mistress, she had not yet all the tenderness for him which Leonora had for the count.

Whilst he was making all the reflections on this adventure that could possibly occur to the mind of a passionate lover, he heard a person softly endeavouring to open another door besides that of the lovers, and discerned a glimmering light through the key-hole. He hastily arose, made towards the door that opened, and presented the point of his naked sword to the breast of his father; for it was he who was going to Leonora's apartment, to see whether the count was not there. The good old gentleman did not believe, after what had passed, that his daughter and Marcella would again venture to admit him, which alone prevented his lodging them in another apartment. But yet he was apt to think, that before their entrance into the convent on the morrow, they might be willing to take their last leave.

"Whoever thou art," said the student, "do not enter this room, on peril of thy life." At these words Don Lewis looked at Don Pedro, whose eyes were fixed on him with equal attention; so that they soon knew each other. "Ah! my son," said the old gentleman, "with what impatience have I expected you! why did you not advertize me of

your arrival? were you afraid of breaking my rest? Alas! I am incapable of any repose in the miserable condition in which I at present am."—"Oh, my father," said Don Pedro, all in confusion, "is it you that I see? are not my eyes deceived by a false likeness?"—"Whence proceeds this surprize?" replied Don Lewis: "are you not at your father's house? did I not acquaint you by my letter, that eight days since I removed hither?"—"Just Heaven!" replied the student, "what do I hear? I am then at present in my sister's apartment?"

At these words the count, who had heard the noise, and supposed that his guard was attacked, came out of Leonora's chamber with his sword in his hand. The old gentleman, distracted at this sight, and shewing him to his son, cried out, "This is the audacious villain who has robbed me of my rest, and cast a fatal stain upon the honour of our house; let us then revenge ourselves, let us instantly punish the traitor." These words were no sooner out of his mouth, than he drew his sword; he had under his night gown, and began to attack the count; but Don Pedro restrained him. "Stay, father," said he, "I beg you to moderate the transports of your rage."—"What do you mean, my son?" answered the old man: "why do you hold my arm? You doubtless think it is too weak to revenge us. Well then, take satisfaction yourself for the affront given to our family, which is the only reason why I sent for you to Madrid. If you fall, I will second you: the count must perish by our hands, or take away both our lives, after having robbed us of our honour."

"Father," replied Don Pedro, "I cannot yield to what your impatience expects of me. I am so very far from attempting the count's life, that I came hither to defend it; my word is passed for it, and my honour demands it.—Let us then retire, my lord," continued he, addressing himself to Belflor. "Hah! base wretch," interrupted Don Lewis, looking on Don Pedro with a very angry air, "dost thou thyself oppose the execution of a
"vengeance

"vengeance wherein all thy force ought to have been employed? My son, my own son, corresponds with the perfidious wretch that has seduced my daughter: but do not think to escape my resentment; I will call up all my domesticks, who shall revenge me of his treachery and your cowardice."

"Sir," replied Don Pedro, "be juster to your son, and do not call him a coward, for he never deserved that hateful name. The count has saved my life this night. He proposed my going with him, whither I did not know, but on a certain appointment. I offered to share the dangers he might encounter, without ever suspecting, that my gratitude would imprudently engage my arm against the honour of my family. My word then obliges me to defend his life here; and in so doing I shall discharge it: not that I am less sensibly touched with the injury he has done our family; and to-morrow you shall see me as eager to shed his blood, as you now see me zealous in the preservation of his life."

"The count, who had hitherto remained silent, being thoroughly struck with the amazing circumstances of this adventure, now spoke: "Perhaps," said he, addressing himself to Don Pedro, "you may meet with but indifferent success, in revenging this injury by force of arms: I will offer you a surer way of re-establishing your honour. I freely own to you, that till this day I never designed to marry Leonora; but I this morning received a letter from her, wherewith I was sensibly touched; her tears have just completed the work, and the happiness of being her husband is at present the utmost of my desires."—"If the king designs you another wife," said Don Lewis, "how will you dispense with—" "The king never proposed any match to me," interrupted Belflor, blushing. "Pray, pardon that fiction in a man whose reason was over-powered by love. It is a crime which the violence of my passion hurried me on to commit, and which I expiate by confessing it."

"My lord," replied the old gentleman, "after an acknowledgment so suitable to a great mind, I no longer doubt your sincerity: I see you are resolved effectually to repair the injury we have received, and my anger yields to the assurances you have given me: permit me then to forget my resentment in your arms." At these words, he ran to the count, who flew to prevent him. They mutually embraced several times; and Belflor, turning himself to Don Pedro, "And you, the counterfeit Don Juan," said he, "you have gained my esteem by an unparalleled valour and a noble mind, allow me to vow a sincere fraternal friendship to you." At these words he embraced Don Pedro, who receiving his caresses with a submissive and respectful air, thus answered him: "My lord, in promising me such a valuable friendship you engage mine, and I intreat that you would always conclude me one who will continue devoted to the end of my life."

In the mean while, Leonora, who was listening all the time at the chamber-door, did not lose one word of all they said. She was at first tempted to throw herself in the middle of the swords, without knowing why; but Marcella prevented her: and when that dextrous duenna perceived all things likely to end so amicably, she concluded that her presence and that of her mistress would not prejudice the accommodation: whereupon they both appeared with their handkerchiefs in their hands, and weeping, ran to prostrate themselves at Don Lewis's feet. They feared, and not without reason, after their being surprized last night, that the old gentleman's anger might return: but raising Leonora, he said, "Daughter, dry up your tears, I will not blame you any more; since your lover has resolved to keep the faith which he has sworn to you. I consent to forget what is past."

"Yes, Don Lewis," said the count, "I will marry Leonora; and yet more effectually to repair the injury I have done you, to give you an entire satisfaction, and your son a pledge
" of

"of my friendship for him, I offer him my sister Eugenia."—"Ah! my lord," cried Don Lewis in a rapture; "how sensible am I of the honour you do my son: what father was ever happier! You now shower as much joy on me, as before you loaded me with sorrow."

"Though the old man was charmed with the count's offer, yet Don Pedro was not: being wholly taken up with the thought of his unknown lady, he was so disturbed and confused that he could not say one word. But Belflor, without regarding his trouble, departed; telling them he would order all the necessary preparations to be made for this double union, and assuring them that he was impatient till he was fixed to them by those strict bonds."

"After his departure, Don Lewis left Leonora in her apartment, and went into his own with Don Pedro, who with all the frankness of a young student, said, "Sir, I beg you would dispense with my marrying the count's sister: it is enough that he marry Leonora; that will be sufficient to retrieve the honour of our family."—"What, son!" replied the old man; "can you refuse the count's sister?"—"Yes, father," replied Don Pedro; "that union, I own, would prove a cruel torment to me, the cause of which I will not conceal. It is now six months since I love, or rather adore, a charming lady; she admits me, and she alone can render my life happy."

"How miserable is the state of a father!" said Don Lewis; "he scarce ever finds his children disposed to what he desires. But who then is this lady that has made such violent impressions on you?"—"I do not yet know," answered Don Pedro; "she has promised to inform me, when she shall be fully satisfied of my discretion and constancy; nor do I doubt but she is of one of the most considerable families in Spain."

"And do you fancy," replied the old man, changing his tone, "that I will be so complaisant as to approve your romantic love? that I shall suffer you to quit the most glorious establishment that fortune can ever offer you, to keep you con-

stant to a person of whom you do not know so much as the name? Stifle rather these sentiments for an object which perhaps may be unworthy of them, and think of nothing but deserving the honour which the count is doing you."—"All these discourses are in vain, father," replied the student; "I feel it impossible for me ever to forget my unknown fair; nothing can disengage me from her: should the Infanta be offered me—" "Hold," cried the father hastily; "it is too insolent to boast a constancy which raises my anger. Be gone; and never let me see you again, until you are resolved to obey me."

"Don Pedro durst not reply to these words, for fear of drawing on something more severe. He retired to his chamber, where he passed the rest of the night in reflections equally melancholy and agreeable. He considered with grief that he was going to break with all his family, by refusing to marry the count's sister: but he was perfectly comforted, when he represented to himself how his unknown lady must value him for such a sacrifice. He flattered himself, that after such a shining proof of his fidelity, she would not fail to discover her quality, which he imagined little inferior to that of Eugenia's."

"With these hopes, as soon as it was day, he went to take a walk in the Prado, expecting the appointed hour to go to the apartment of Donna Juana; for that was the name of the lady in whose lodgings he used to meet his mistress every morning. He waited for the happy moment with great impatience, and when it was come, flew to the place of rendezvous."

"He found his unknown charmer already come thither sooner than ordinary; but touched with such a sensible grief as expressed itself to Donna Juana in showers of tears. A dismal spectacle for her lover! all in confusion he approached her, and flinging himself at her knees; "Madam," said he, "what must I think of the condition in which I see you?"—"Doubtless," answered she, "you do not expect the fatal blow which

"I bring

"I bring you. Cruel fortune is separating us for ever, and we are never to see each other more."

She accompanied these words with so many sighs, that I do not know whether Don Pedro was more touched with what she said, or the grief she discovered in the utterance of it. "Just Heaven!" cried he, with an excess of rage which he could not restrain, "is it possible for you to suffer the breaking of an union, the innocence of which you know! But, Madam," adds he, "perhaps you have taken a false alarm. Is it certainly true, that you will be torn from the most faithful lover that ever was? Must I really be the most miserable of all men?"—"Our ill fate is but too sure," answered the unknown fair. "My brother, on whom I depend, will marry me this day, as he has just this minute declared to me."—"Ah! who is that happy bridegroom?" very hastily replied Don Pedro; "name him to me, Madam: I will in my despair—" "I do not know his name," interrupted the lady; "my brother would not acquaint me with it. He told me that he desired I should first see the gentleman."

"But, Madam," said Don Pedro, "will you submit to a brother's will without resistance? Will you suffer yourself to be dragged to the altar, without complaining of the cruelty of the sacrifice? Will you make no attempts in my favour? Alas, I was not afraid of exposing myself to my father's rage, to reserve myself entirely yours! His threats could not shock my fidelity; and with what rigour soever he may treat me, I will not marry the lady he proposes, though the match is very advantageous."—"And who is this lady?" said the unknown beauty. "It is the Count de Belflor's sister," replied the student. "Ah! Don Pedro," replied she, discovering an extreme surprize, "you doubtless mistake; you are not sure of what you say! Is it really Eugenia de Belflor who is proposed to you?"

"Yes, Madam," replied Don Pedro, "the count himself made me the offer."—"How!" cried she, "is it

possible that you should be the cavalier for whom my brother designs me?"—"What do I hear!" cried Don Pedro, in his turn: "is my unknown angel, then, Eugenia de Belflor?"—"Yes, Don Pedro," replied she; "but I scarce believe myself this moment to be any longer so, so hard is it for me to persuade myself of the reality of the happiness of which you assure me."

At these words Don Pedro embraced her knees, and seized one of her hands with all the raptures that a lover suddenly removed from the extremities of pain to the excess of joy could possibly feel. Whilst he thus abandoned himself to the emotions of his love, Eugenia, on her part, gave him a thousand proofs of her affection, which she accompanied with tender engaging expressions. "What racking pains," said she, "would my brother have spared me, had he but named the husband he designed me? what an aversion had I already conceived for my spouse? Ah, my dear Don Pedro, how much did I hate you?"—"Bright Eugenia," answered he, "how charming is that hatred to me! I will deserve it by adoring you all my life."

After these two lovers had given each other all the most moving signs of their mutual tenderness, Eugenia desired to know how the student could gain her brother's friendship. Don Pedro did not conceal from her the amours of the count and his sister, but related to her all that passed the last night. She was infinitely pleased to hear that her brother was to marry her lover's sister: and Donna Juana had too great a share in her friend's fate, not to be touched with this happy event. She testified her joy to her, as well as to Don Pedro, who at last left Eugenia, after their having mutually resolved not to seem to know one another when they appeared before the count.

Don Pedro returned to his father, who finding him perfectly disposed to obedience, was the better pleased, because he ascribed it to his absolute manner of deporting himself towards his son the last night. They were expecting news from the count the very minute they received a letter from him, which advised them that

‘ he had just obtained the king’s consent to his marriage, and that of his sister, with the addition of a considerable post for Don Pedro; that on the morrow both nuptials might be celebrated; his orders having been so diligently executed, that all the preparations were already far advanced. He came in the afternoon to confirm what he had written, and to present Eugenia to them.

‘ Don Lewis shewed that lady all imaginable civilities, and Leonora did not neglect tenderly embracing her. As for Don Pedro, by whatsoever motions of love and joy he was agitated, he yet sufficiently restrained himself, to avoid the count’s having any suspicion of their former correspondence.

‘ Belflor, particularly applying himself to observe his sister, thought he discovered, notwithstanding the constraint she imposed on herself, that she did not dislike Don Pedro. But the better to assure himself of the truth of his conjecture, he took her aside for a moment, and made her own that she was extremely well pleased with her cavalier. He then told her his name and family, which he before concealed, lest the inequality of their conditions should have prejudiced her against him; all this she pretended to hear as though utterly ignorant of it before.

‘ At last, after the exchange of a multitude of civilities on both sides, it was resolved that the wedding should be kept at Don Lewis’s house; and the nuptial festivities are this night acting, but not finished; and that is the reason of so great rejoicing in that house, in which all the company unanimously join, except Marcella, who has no share in it. She cries, whilst the rest laugh; for the Count de Belflor, after his marriage, confessed the whole story to Don Lewis, who has ordered her to be sent to the *monasterio de los arrepentidas* *, where the thousand pistoles which she received to seduce Leonora will serve her to do penance the remainder of her life.

CHAP. VI.

OTHER PARTICULARS WHICH THE STUDENT SAW, AND THE MANNER OF HIS BEING REVENGED ON DONNA THOMASA.

‘ LET us turn to the other side,’ continued Asmodeus, ‘ and run over some new objects. ‘ Cast your eyes on the first house directly under us, where you will see something extraordinary. It is a man considerably in debt, in a profound sleep.— ‘ He must then be a man of quality,’ said Leandro. ‘ You have guessed right,’ answered the daemon: ‘ it is a marquis who has a hundred thousand ducats a year, and yet his expences exceed his income. His table and his mistresses oblige him to run considerably in debt, and yet it does not break his rest. On the contrary, when he has a mind to run in a tradesman’s debt, he fancies that he is obliging him extremely. “ It is with you,” said he the other day to a draper, “ it is with you for the future I intend to deal upon credit, and I give you the preference.”

‘ Whilst the marquis is enjoying the sweets of repose, which he is robbing his creditors of, observe that man who——’ ‘ Stay, Signior Asmodeus!’ interrupted Don Cleofas, hastily, ‘ I see a coach in the street, which I cannot let pass without asking you who is in it.’— ‘ Hush!’ said the cripple, lowering his voice as if he was afraid of being overheard; ‘ you are to know there is in that coach one of the gravest persons of the realm in disguise. He is a president going to make merry with an old Austrian lady, who is subservient to his pleasures. That he may not be known, he has taken Caligula’s precaution; who, on such another occasion, put on a peruke to disguise himself.

‘ Let us return to the scene I was going to lay before you, when you interrupted me. Observe in the uppermost part of the marquis’s palace

* A monastery in which lewd women are shut up.

‘ a man very busy in his closet, which is full of books and manuscripts.’— ‘ Perhaps,’ said Zambullo, ‘ it is the marquis’s steward, who is contriving means to pay his master’s debts.’— ‘ Good!’ replied the devil; that must needs be what stewards of such families amuse themselves with. Their business is rather to make an advantage of the disorder of their masters’ affairs, than extricate them out of it. So that it is not a steward you see there, but an author. The marquis has lodged him in his palace, to give himself an air of encouraging men of letters.’— ‘ This author, then,’ replied Don Cleofas, ‘ is a man of some note?’— ‘ You are to judge of that yourself,’ answered the daemon; ‘ he is surrounded by a thousand volumes, and is compiling one in which there will not be a line of his own. He pilfers from all those books and manuscripts; and, though he only methodizes and connects his thefts, yet he has a larger share of vanity than a real author.’

‘ You do not know,’ continued the spirit, ‘ who lives within three doors of this palace. It is La Chiconia, whom I have already made such honourable mention of in the story of Count de Belflor.’— ‘ Ah, how I am ravished at the sight of her!’ said the student. ‘ The good woman, so very serviceable to young people, is doubtless one of those two old women which I see in that room. The one is leaning with her elbows on the table, earnestly looking on the other, who is telling money. Which of the two is La Chiconia?’— ‘ She,’ said the daemon, ‘ leaning on her elbows. The other is called La Pebrada, an honourable lady of the same occupation: they are partners; and at this moment dividing the profits of an adventure which they have just now brought to bear.

‘ La Pebrada has the best trade, and deals with several rich widows, to whom she carries her list to read every day.’— ‘ What do you mean by her list?’ interrupted the student. ‘ It is,’ replied Asmodeus, ‘ a catalogue of all the handsome foreigners who come to Madrid, especially French. As soon as ever La Pebrada hears any fresh ones are arrived, she runs to their inns, and sily

‘ informs herself of their birth, shape, air, and age. She then makes her report to the widows, who consider of it; and, if they are so inclined, La Pebrada brings them to the speech of the said strangers.’

‘ This is not only very convenient,’ replied Zambullo, ‘ but in a sort lawful; for without these good ladies and their agents, young strangers, who have no acquaintance here, would be obliged to the expence of an infinite deal of time to create some. But pray tell me, are there any of this sort of widows and necessary ladies in other countries?’— ‘ A pretty question indeed, whether there are!’ answered the cripple. ‘ Do you doubt it? I should very ill acquit myself in my office, if I neglected to stock all great cities with them.

‘ Give your attention a little to a neighbour of La Chiconia, that printer at work alone in his printing-house. He has sent his servants to bed these three hours, and is going to spend the night in printing a book privately.’— ‘ How! what can it be then?’ said Leandro.— ‘ It is a libel,’ answered the daemon; ‘ it proves that religion is preferable to points of honour; and that it is better to forgive than revenge an affront.’— ‘ What a rascal,’ cried the student! ‘ he does well to print his infamous book in private; nor would I advise the author to own it, for I should be one of the first to cane him. What! does religion forbid the preservation of our honour?’— ‘ Do not let us enter upon that dispute,’ interrupted Asmodeus, with an ill-natured smile, ‘ It seems you have improved well by the lectures of morality you have received at Alcalá. I give you joy of your improvement!’— ‘ You may say what you please,’ interrupted Don Cleofas in his turn, ‘ but let the author’s arguments be the most beautiful and clear that can be invented, I shall laugh at them; I am a Spaniard, and nothing in the world is so sweet to me as revenge. And since you have promised to do me justice on my perfidious mistress, I demand that you keep your word.’

‘ I yield with pleasure to the transport that fires you,’ said the devil. ‘ Oh, how I love those bold spirits who pursue all their inclinations

'without scruple! I will this moment satisfy you, the time of your vengeance is near at hand. But I would first shew you something that will divert you extremely. Carry your eye beyond the printing-house, and take notice of what is doing in an apartment hung with crimson cloth.' — 'I see five or six women,' answered Leandro, 'crouding and pressing one another to thrust glass bottles into the hands of a sort of a servant, and they appear to me in a violent agitation.'

'These are,' replied the cripple, 'devout ladies, who have great reason for their uneasiness, for in that apartment is an inquisitor who lies sick. This venerable person, who is about five and thirty, is lodged in a chamber near where you see those women. Two of his favourite penitents are watching with him. One is employed in making him broths, and the other at his bolster is keeping his head warm, and covering his stomach with a stomacher made of fifty lambs skins.' — 'What is his distemper then?' said Zambullo. 'A little cold in his head,' replied the devil; 'and it is to be feared the rheum may fall on his lungs.'

'The other women you see in his anti-chamber are also devout ladies, who, on the news of his indisposition, ran thither in all haste with medicines. One of them has brought him for his cough, syrups of jujubes, marsh mallows, coral, and colts foot; another, to preserve his reverence's lungs, is laden with syrups of long life, veronica, immortality, and elixirproprietas; another, to fortify his brain and stomach, has brought balm, cinnamon, and treacle-water; besides the divine water, and essences of nutmegs and ambergris. This comes to offer him anacardine, and bezoardic confections; and that, tincture of clove, gilliflowers, coral, mille-florum, the sun, and emeralds. All these women are boasting the efficacy of their medicines to the inquisitor's footman: they take him aside one after another, and each of them, clapping a ducat in his hand, thus whispers him in the ear: "Lawrence, dear Lawrence, I intreat you not to fail preferring my medicines to all the rest."

'Bless me!' cried Don Cleofas, 'what happy mortals are these inquisitors!' — 'Indeed are they,' replied Asmodeus; 'I myself almost envy their happiness; and, as Alexander once said, that were he not Alexander, he could wish to be Diogenes; so I might well say, that were I not a devil, I would be an inquisitor.'

'Come, Signior student,' added he, 'now let us go and punish that base woman who so ill returned your tenderness.' Upon which Zambullo took hold of the end of Asmodeus's cloak, who cleft the air a second time with him, and set him down on Donna Thomasa's house.

The baggage was at table with the four bullies who had pursued the student over the tiles; he trembled with outrageous resentment to see them eat a brace of partridges and a rabbit, and empty several bottles of wine, for which he had paid, and sent thither. To crown his vexation, he saw there was nothing but mirth going forward, and found by the demonstrations Donna Thomasa gave, that the company of these wretches was more agreeable to that abandoned creature than his own. 'Ah, rascals!' cried he, inflamed with rage, 'how deliciously they fare at my expence, and a fine mortification this to me!'

'I confess,' said the devil, 'it is no very pleasant sight; but they who will frequent such loose ladies, must expect adventures of this kind; they happen every day in France to abbés, men of the long robe, and rich farmers of the revenue.' — 'If I had a sword,' replied Don Cleofas, 'I would break in upon those villains, and spoil their entertainment.' — 'You would be over-matched,' replied the cripple. 'Leave your revenge to me, I will compass it better than you: I will this moment set them together by the ears, by inspiring them with a lascivious flame, and they shall draw their swords upon each other; you will see a fine uproar presently.'

At these words he blew, and out of his mouth issued a violet-coloured vapour, that descended waving like a squib, and spread itself over Donna Thomasa's table. One of the guests, immediately feeling the effect of this blast,

blast, drew near the lady, and passionately embraced her; but the others, pushed on by the force of the same vapour, endeavoured to tear her from him. Each pretended to the preference, which they now began to dispute, and a jealous rage possessed all their minds; they came to blows, drew their swords, and began to engage very warmly. In the meanwhile Donna Thomasa shrieked in a horrible manner, and the neighbourhood was immediately alarmed: they cried out for the officers of justice to come; which they immediately did, broke open the courtesan's doors, found two of the ruffians dead on the spot, seized the rest, and carried them to prison with Donna Thomasa; who, crying and tearing her hair, lost all patience, whilst her guards were not a jot more moved than Zambullo, who laughed very heartily with Asmodeus.

'Well,' said the dæmon to the student, 'are you satisfied?'—'No,' replied Don Cleofas; 'if you would satisfy me intirely, you must shew me the prison. What exquisite pleasure it will be to me, to see that wretch who made a jest of my passion shut up there! I find that I now hate her more than before I loved her.'—'With all my heart,' replied the devil; 'you shall always find me ready to oblige you, though it were even against my inclination and interest, so that it be for your good.'

In a moment they reached the prison, where, soon after, the two bullies were brought, and clapped into a dark dungeon. As for Thomasa, she was lodged on straw, with three or four loose women who had been taken up that day, and who on the morrow were to be carried to the place appointed for such creatures.

'Now I am satisfied,' said Zambullo; 'I have had the pleasure of a full revenge. My friend Thomasa will not pass the night so agreeably as she expected. Let us go and pursue our observations where you please.'—'This is a place very proper for them,' answered the spirit; 'there are here a great number of guilty and innocent people; and it is a retirement which begins the punishments of the one, and purifies the virtue of the others. I will shew you

'some prisoners of each kind, and tell you why they are kept in chains.'

CHAP. VII.

OF THE PRISONERS.

'BEFORE I enter into particulars, pray take notice of the gaolers at the entrance into these horrid places. The ancient poets placed but one Cerberus at hell-gates, but here is a far greater number, as you see. These gaolers are villains who have lost all sentiments of humanity: the wickedest of my brethren could hardly supply the place of one. But I find,' added he, 'you look with horror on these rooms, where all the furniture is a wretched bed; and those frightful dungeons appear to you like so many graves. It is with great reason that you are astonished at the misery of these places, and pity the fate of those wretches whom the law detains in them. Yet they do not all deserve the same compassion; their merits therefore shall be the subject of our examination.'

'First of all, in that large chamber on the right, are four men lying on those two wretched beds you see. One is a vintner, accused of poisoning a stranger who the other day dropped down dead in his house. It is pretended that the quality of the wine killed the deceased; but the vintner alledges it was the quantity, and will be believed at his trial, for the stranger was a German.'—'And which of them are in the right,' said Don Cleofas, 'the vintner or his prosecutors?'—'The affair is extremely delicate,' answered the devil. 'It is true the wine was adulterated; but, on my conscience, the German had drank so largely that the judges may safely set the vintner at liberty.'

'The second prisoner is by profession an assassinator, one of those cut-throats called *valientes**; who, for four or five pistoles, are very ready to oblige those with the use of their arm, that will be at the expence to be privately rid of an enemy. The third is a fop of a dancing-master, who

* *Valientes*, in the Spanish, signifies braves or ruffians.

'taught

‘taught one of his female scholars a false step. The fourth is a lover, caught by the watch as he was scaling the balcony of a woman of his acquaintance, whose husband was absent. It is his own fault he does not get out, by declaring his design was purely amorous; but he chuses rather to pais for a thief, and run the risk of his life, than expose his mistress’s honour.’

‘A very discreet lover indeed,’ said the student; ‘it must be owned, that our nation out-does all others in point of gallantry. I dare venture a wager, that there is not a Frenchman in the world, for example, that would suffer himself to be hanged for his discretion.’—‘No, I assure you,’ said the devil; ‘a Frenchman would sooner clamber over a balcony to disgrace the woman that should show him any favour.’

‘In the closet next to those four men,’ continued he, ‘is a famous witch, who has the reputation of being able to do impossibilities. By her art, it is reported, old widow ladies find gallants that love them on the square; husbands become just to their wives, and coquettes really in love with the rich gallants that keep them. But nothing is more false: she is not mistress of any other secret, than that of persuading the world she is so, and of living handsomely on that opinion. This poor creature the inquisition claims, and very probably she will be burnt at the first *auto de fe*.’

‘Under the closet there is a dungeon, that serves for a lodging to a young vintner.’—‘What, my host again!’ cried Leandro; ‘sure these people have a mind to poison all the world.’—‘This man’s case is not the same,’ replied Asmodeus; ‘he was seized yesterday, and is likewise claimed by the inquisition. I will in a few words relate to you the subject of his commitment.’

‘An old soldier by his courage, or rather patience, having mounted to the post of a serjeant in his company, came to raise recruits in this city. He inquired for a lodging at an inn, where he was answered, that they had indeed empty rooms, but that they could not recommend any of them to him, because the house was haunted

every night by a spirit, which treated all strangers very ill that were rash enough to lodge there. This did not at all baulk our serjeant. “Put me in what chamber you please,” said he, “do but give me a candle, wine, pipes, and tobacco; and as for the spirit, never trouble yourself about it; ghosts have a respect for men of war who are grown old in the service.”

As he seemed so resolute, he was shewn into a chamber, where all that he desired was brought to him. He fell to drinking and smoking till midnight, and no spirit had yet disturbed the profound silence that reigned in the house; one would have imagined he feared this new guest; but betwixt one and two, the serjeant, all of a sudden, heard a terrible noise, like the rattling of old iron, and immediately saw entering his chamber an apparition, clothed in black, and laden all around with iron chains. Our smoker, not in the least affrighted at this sight, drew his sword, advanced towards the spirit, and with the flat side of it gave him a very severe blow on the head.

The apparition, not much used to meet with such bold guests, cried out; and perceiving the soldier going to begin again with him, he most humbly prostrated himself at his feet: “Mr. Serjeant,” said he, “for God’s sake do not give me any more; but have mercy upon a poor devil that casts himself at your feet. I conjure you by St. James; who, as you are, was a great soldier.”—“If you are willing to save your life,” answered the soldier, “you must tell me who you are; and speak without the least prevarication, or else this moment I cut you down the middle, as your knights of old were used to serve the giants they encountered.” At these words the ghost, finding what sort of a man he had to do with, resolved to own all.

“I am the principal servant of this inn,” replied the spirit; “my name is Guillermo; I am in love with my master’s only daughter, and she does not dislike me; but the father and mother, having a better match in view, in order to compel them to make me their son-in-law, the girl

“and

"and I have agreed, that I shall, every night, act the part which I now do. I wrap myself up in a long black cloak, and hang the jack chain about my neck; thus equipped I run up and down the house, from the cellar to the garret, and make all the noise which you have heard. When I am at my master and mistress's chamber-door, I stop and cry out: *Do not hope that I will ever let you rest, till you marry Juanna to Guillermo your upper drawer.*

"After having pronounced these words with a hoarse broken voice, I continue my noise, and at a window enter the closet where Juanna lies alone, to give her an account of what I have done. Mr. Serjeant," continued Guillermo, "you see I have told you the whole truth; I know that after this confession you may ruin me by discovering it to my master; but if you please to serve, instead of undoing me, I swear that my acknowledgments—" "Alas, what service can I do thee?" interrupted the soldier. "You need no more," returned Guillermo, "than to say to-morrow that you have seen the spirit, that it so terribly affrighted you—" "How! terribly affrighted?" interrupted the soldier; "would you have Serjeant Annibal Antonio Quebrantador, own such a thing as fear? I had rather ten thousand devils should—" "That is not absolutely necessary," interrupted Guillermo; "and after all, it is not much matter what you say, provided you second my design. And when I have married Juanna, and am settled, I promise to treat you and all your friends nobly for nothing every day."—"You are a very tempting person, Mr. Guillermo," said the soldier. "You propose to me to support a trick: it is a serious affair, which requires mature deliberation; but the consequences hurry me on. Go, continue your noise, give your account to Juanna, and I will take care of the rest."

"Accordingly, next morning he said to his landlord and landlady: "I have seen the spirit, and have talked with it. It is a very honest fellow. I am," said he, "the great-grandfather of the master of this house:

"I had a daughter whom I promised to the father of the grandfather of this drawer. However, neglecting the word I had given him, I married her to another, and died soon after, and ever since am tormented as the punishment of my perjury, and shall never be at rest, till one of my family shall marry one of Guillermo's; and it for this reason I walk here every night. Yet it is to no purpose that I bid them marry Juanna to their head drawer. The son of my grandson and his wife turn the deaf ear to all that I can say. But tell them, if you please, Mr. Serjeant, that if they do not immediately comply with my desires, I shall proceed to action, and will torment them both in an extraordinary manner."

"The host being silly enough, was terrified at this discourse; but the hostess, yet more silly than her husband, fancying that the spirit was always at her heels, consented to the match, and Guillermo married Juanna the next day, and set up in another part of the town. Serjeant Quebrantador did not fail to visit him often; and he, in acknowledgment of the service he had done him, gave him as much wine as he cared for. This so pleased the soldier, that he brought thither not only all his friends, but listed his men there, and made all his recruits drunk.

"But at last Guillermo, grown weary of satiating such a crew of drunkards, told the soldier his mind; who, without ever thinking that he had exceeded the agreement, was so unjust as to call Guillermo little ungrateful rascal. The host answered; the serjeant replied; and the dialogue ended with several strokes with the flat side of the sword, which Guillermo received. Several persons passing by took the vintner's part; the serjeant wounded three or four, but was suddenly fallen on by a crowd of Alguazils, who seized him as a disturber of the public peace, and carried him to prison. He there declared all that I told you, and upon his deposition the officers have also seized Guillermo; the father-in-law requires the annulling of the marriage; and the holy office, being informed that Guillermo is rich, have

‘ have thought fit to take cognizance of it.’

‘ As I hope to be saved,’ said Don Cleofas, ‘ this same holy inquisition is very alert. The moment they see the least glimpse of profit—’ ‘ Softly,’ interrupted the cripple; ‘ have a care what freedom you take with this tribunal, for it has it’s spies every where, even of things that were never spoken. I myself dare not speak of it without trembling.’

‘ Over the unfortunate Guillermo, in the first room on the left, are two men that deserve your pity. One of them is a young valet de chambre, admitted by his master’s wife as a lover. One day the husband caught them in the fact; the woman immediately cried out for help, and accused the valet de chambre of a rape. The unfortunate fellow was seized, and will in all likelihood be sacrificed to his mistress’s reputation.’

‘ The valet de chambre’s companion, still less guilty, is very near his end. He is a duchess’s gentleman, who being robbed of a large diamond, he is accused of the theft. He will to-morrow be put to the torture till he confess the fact, which was in truth committed by an old waiting-woman whom nobody dares suspect.’

‘ Ah! Signior Asmodeus,’ said Leandro, ‘ let me intreat you to help this young gentleman; I am concerned for his innocence; keep off by your power, the cruel tortures that threaten him: his innocence deserves—’ ‘ You do not consider what you ask, Sir Student,’ interrupted the devil. ‘ Can you desire me to oppose an unjust action, and hinder the destruction of an innocent man? You had as good beg of an attorney not to ruin a widow or orphan.’

‘ Pray, if you please, do not ask any thing of me contrary to my interest, unless it may be of considerable advantage to yourself. Besides, if I would deliver that honest man out of prison, do you think it is in my power?’—‘ How!’ replied Zambullo, ‘ have you not power to fetch a man out of prison?’—‘ No,’ really,’ replied the cripple; ‘ if you had read *Enchiridion*, or *Albertus Magnus*, you would know that I

cannot, any more than my brethren, set a prisoner at liberty. Should I myself have the misfortune to fall into the clutches of a justice, I could not extricate myself any other way than by money.’

‘ In the next room is a surgeon, convicted of having sent his wife out of the world the same way that Seneca went. He was this day tortured, and after confessing the crime he was charged with, owned besides, that he had for ten years made use of a new way to create practice; he wounded the passengers in the street with a bayonet, and nimbly made his escape, by running into his own house at a back door. The wounded person, in the mean while, having by his groans drawn the neighbours to his assistance; the surgeon ran in also with the crowd, and finding a wounded man wallowing in his blood, he caused him to be carried into his shop, where he dressed him with the same hand which had given him the wound.’

‘ Though the barbarous surgeon hath made this confession, and deserves a thousand deaths, yet he flatters himself with a pardon; and possibly he may get one, for he is related to one of the prince’s dressers; and besides I must tell you that he makes a wonderful water, for which he only has the receipt. This incomparable water has the power of whitening the skin, and making an old wrinkled face as smooth and soft as that of an infant; so that three court ladies, who make use of it as their fountain of youth, have entered into a confederacy to save him. And he reckons so much upon their interest, or rather, if you please, upon his water, that he is gone quietly to sleep, expecting to receive the agreeable news of his liberty when he wakes.’

‘ In the same chamber,’ said the student, ‘ I think I see another man very fast asleep too upon an old bed. Sure his business cannot be a very bad one.’—‘ It is a very nice one,’ answered the daemon. ‘ He is a Biscayan gentleman, grown rich by the discharge of a gun; and it was thus. As he was shooting with his elder brother about a fortnight ago, who possessed a very considerable estate, he unfortunately

‘unfortunately killed him by a shot aimed at some young partridges.’ — ‘A lucky mistake that for a younger brother!’ cried Don Cleofas, smiling. ‘True,’ said Asmodeus; ‘but those that are next in succession, being greedy of the deceased’s estate, are prosecuting the young gentleman, whom they accuse of committing this fact in order to be sole heir of the family. But he has voluntarily surrendered himself, and seems so afflicted at his brother’s death, that it is impossible to imagine he killed him designedly.’ — ‘And has he really nothing to reproach himself with but his awkwardness at shooting?’ replied Leandro. ‘No,’ answered the cripple, ‘he had no ill design: but whenever an elder brother is master of all the estate of a family, I would not advise him to go a shooting with his younger brother.’

‘Pray take particular notice of those two youths in the next room to the Biscayan, who are entertaining themselves as merrily as if they were at liberty. They are two staunch villains; one of them especially may some time or other present the public with an account of his rogueries, for he may pass for a second Gusman de Alfarache. I mean him in the brown velvet waistcoat, with a plume of feathers in his hat.’

‘It is hardly three months ago since he was one of the Count D’Oniatega’s pages here at Madrid; and would still have been with his master but for a piece of roguery that has brought him hither, which I shall tell you.’

‘This youth, whose name is Domingo, happened one day to receive a good sound whipping from the squire, or governor of the count’s pages, for some unlucky prank he had committed that deserved it; which he stomached a long while, and resolved to revenge. He had observed more than once that Signior Don Cosmo (for that was the squire’s name) washed his hands in orange-flower-water, and afterwards rubbed them with a paste made of pinks and jessamin; that he took more care of his person than an old coquette; in short, that he was one of those fools, who imagine that a woman

cannot look upon them without falling in love with them. This observation gave him a hint for revenging himself, which he communicated to a young girl that was a chambermaid in the neighbourhood, whose assistance he wanted to put his designs in execution, and with whom he had such an intimacy, that he could not possibly have a greater.’

‘This wench, named Florella, in order to converse with him with the greater freedom, made him pass for her cousin at her mistress Donna Luziana’s, whose father was then absent. The malicious Domingo, having instructed his pretended cousin in what she was to do, went one morning into Don Cosmo’s chamber, whilst he was trying on a new suit of cloaths; all which time he was admiring himself in the glass, and appeared charmed with the figure he saw there. The page pretending to admire this Narcissus, and falling into a feigned transport, “Really, Signior Don Cosmo,” said he, “you have the air of a prince. Though I every day see grandees dressed in the greatest magnificence, yet notwithstanding all the richness of their dress, they want your mien. I know not, whether being your humble servant so much as I am, I look on you with eyes too much prejudiced in your favour; but in my opinion, there is not a gentleman at court can expect to be taken notice of when you are there.”’

‘The squire smiled at this discourse which so agreeably flattered his vanity; and, putting on a soft air, “You flatter me, friend,” answered he, “or you must really love me, and your friendship lends me those graces which nature has denied me.”’

— “I do not think so,” replied the page, cajoling him all the while; “for there is nobody but who speaks of you as advantageously as myself. I wish you had heard what a cousin of mine, who is maid to a woman of quality, said of you yesterday.”

‘Don Cosmo did not fail of asking what that cousin of his said: “Said?” replied the page; “she enlarged upon the beauty of your shape, and the charms that are to be seen all over your person; and what is still better, she told me in confidence,

H “that

"that Luziana her mistress took a pleasure in looking at you every time you passed by their house."

"Who can that be," said the squire, "or where does she live?"

"What!" answered Domingo, "do not you know it is the only daughter of General Don Ferdinand our neighbour?"—"Ah, now I have it!" replied Don Cosmo. "I remember I have heard the wealth and beauty of this Luziana much talked of. She is a fine fortune. Is it possible I can be so happy as to have made her take notice of me?"

"Most certainly," said the page; "my cousin told me so: though a lady's woman, she is no liar, and I would answer for her as soon as for myself."—"If it be so," said the squire, "I would have a little private discourse with thy cousin, and bring her over to my interest by a present or two, according to custom; and if she advise me to make my court to her mistress, I will try my fortune. And, indeed, why not? I agree there is some distance between me and Don Ferdinand; but still I am a gentleman, and have five hundred good ducats a year. Matches more extraordinary than this happen every day."

The page backed his governor in his resolution, and procured him a meeting with his cousin; who, finding the squire ready to swallow any thing, assured him that her mistress had an inclination for him. "She has often asked me about you," said she, "and my answers have not been to your disadvantage. In short, Sir, you may reasonably presume, that Donna Luziana secretly loves you: boldly declare your honourable designs; shew her you are the gallantest cavalier in Madrid, as you are one of the handsomest and best made gentlemen; but above all things give her a serenade, which is what she is passionately fond of. As for me, I will take care to extol your gallantry, and I hope my good offices will not be in vain." Don Cosmo, transported with joy to see the maid take his part with so much warmth, stifled her with embraces, and putting a trifling ring upon her finger, which he had purposely bought to present her with; "Dear Florella," said he, "I give

"you this diamond only for the sake of your acquaintance; I design to acknowledge the services you intend me, by something more solid and considerable."

It was impossible to be more pleased than he was with this conversation with the chambermaid. Wherefore he not only thanked Domingo for procuring it him, but rewarded him with a pair of silk stockings, and some laced shirts, promising him he would let slip no opportunity of serving him. And then consulting him upon the measures he should take, "My friend," said he, "dost thou advise me to break the ice by a sublime passionate letter to Donna Luziana?"—"Indeed do I," answered the page: "send her a declaration of love in the lofty style; for something tells me it will not be ill received."—"I fancy so too," replied the squire; "however, at all events, that shall be my beginning." Immediately he put pen to paper; so having torn about twenty foul copies of billets-doux, which he had made, at last he hit upon one he resolved should go; this he read over to Domingo; who, having heard it with signs of admiration, undertook to carry it immediately to his cousin. These were the florid and far-fetched terms it was couched in.

IT is now long since, charming Luziana, that drawn by fame, which every where publishes your many perfections, I cannot help being inflamed with an ardent love for you. However, notwithstanding the fires that consume me, I have not dared to venture upon any piece of gallantry; but as I am informed that you vouchsafe to cast an eye upon me when I pass by your window; your window, that deprives the eyes of mankind of your celestial beauty; and that, by the influence of your stars, (an influence very fortunate to me) you are inclined to wish me well, I take the liberty of begging to be allowed to consecrate myself to your service. If I am so fortunate to obtain it, I bid adieu to all ladies, past, present, and to come.

"DON COSMO de la HIGUERA."

"The

‘ The page and his sham cousin did not fail making themselves very merry at Don Cosmo’s expence, and diverting themselves with his letter. But that was not all; they drew up between them a kind letter, which the chambermaid transcribed, and Domingo carried the next day to the squire, as Donna Luziana’s answer. This was it.

“ I know not who it is that can so well have informed you of my secret sentiments: somebody must have betrayed me; but I pardon it, since it has been the occasion of letting me know that you love me. Of all men that pass through the street, you are the person I take the most pleasure in looking at; and I would fain have you become my lover. Perhaps I ought not to wish it, and much less say it. But if it be a crime, it is a crime your merit must find an excuse for.

“ DONNA LUZIANA.”

‘ Though this answer was a little too tender for a general’s daughter, (for the writers had not taken their measures nicely as to that) the vain Don Cosmo did not at all mistrust it upon that account. He thought well enough of himself to imagine a lady might lay aside decency a little for his sake. “ Ah! Domingo,” cried he with an air of triumph, “ after reading the pretended letter aloud; thou seest, my friend, whether our neighbour be not caught. I shall be Don Ferdinand’s son-in-law, as sure as I am Don Cosmo de la Higuera.”

“ There is no doubt of it,” said the rascal of a confident; “ you have made a terrible impression upon his daughter. But it is just come into my head,” said he; “ I remember, my cousin charged me to tell you, that to-morrow at farthest it was absolutely necessary for you to give your mistress a serenade, in order to make her run quite mad for you.” — “ With all my heart,” said the squire; “ and thou mayest assure thy cousin that I will follow thy advice; and, to-morrow about midnight, she shall, without fail, hear one of

“ the finest concerts in her street, that ever was heard at Madrid.” And indeed he really went to an excellent music-master, and having let him into his design, employed him in the execution of it.

‘ Whilst he was busied about his serenade, Florella, whom the page had instructed, seeing her mistress in a good humour, said to her, “ Madam, I am preparing you a very agreeable diversion;” upon which, Luziana asked her what it was. “ O really,” replied the maid, laughing like mad all the while, “ I have a budget full of news for you. An original, whose name is Don Cosmo, governor to the Count D’Oniates’s pages, has taken it into his head to chuse you for the sovereign lady of his affections; and that you may not be ignorant of it, is to-morrow night to regale you with a fine concert of vocal and instrumental music.” Donna Luziana, who was naturally gay, and thought the squire’s gallantries would draw no ill consequences after them in regard to herself, far from assuming a serious air, pleased herself before-hand with the thought of hearing the concert; so that, without knowing it, she helped to confirm Don Cosmo in an error, which had she known, she would have been very angry at.

‘ In short, the night of the following day, there appeared before Luziana’s balcony two coaches, out of which alighted the gallant squire and his confident, accompanied by six men, some of which sung, and others played, who began the concert. It lasted a considerable time, and they played a great number of new airs, and sung several songs; all which turned upon the power of love in the uniting hearts of unequal condition; and at the end of every song, which the general’s daughter applied to herself, she laughed ready to burst.

‘ When the serenade was over, Don Cosmo sent back the music in the same coaches they came in, and staid in the street with Domingo, till such curious people as his music had brought about them, were gone. He then drew near the balcony, from whence the maid, by her mistress’s permission, said to him through a lit-

the window, "Is it you, Signior Don Cosmo?"—"Who is it asks me that question?" answered he in a languishing tone. "It is Donna Luziana," replied the maid, "who would be informed whether this concert be the effect of your gallantry?"—"It is no more than a slight shadow of the entertainments my love is preparing for this wonder of our age, if she will vouchsafe to receive them from a lover consuming upon the altar of her beauty."

At this metaphor the lady had a strong inclination to laugh: however, she smothered it, and placing herself at a little window, "Signior Don Cosmo," said she, as gravely as she possibly could, to the squire, "it is very plain you are no novice in gallantry. Lovers who would oblige their mistresses must learn of you; I am very well pleased with your serenade, and thank you for it. But I would have you retire," added she, "for we may be heard; and another time we will have a longer conversation." At these words she shut the window, leaving the squire prodigiously pleased with the favour she had just done him, and the page as much astonished to see her act a part in the comedy.

This little entertainment, reckoning the charge of the coaches, and of the vast quantity of wine drank by the performers, cost Don Cosmo an hundred ducats: yet two days after his confidant engaged him in a fresh expence, which was thus. Having learned that Florella was, on the eve of St. John, (an eve so celebrated in this city) to go with some other wenches of the same stamp to the *fiesta del fotillo**, he undertook to give them a magnificent breakfast at the squire's cost.

"Signior Don Cosmo," said he, "do you know that to-morrow is the festival of St. John? I tell you beforehand that Donna Luziana proposes to be by day-break on the banks of the Manzanarez, to see the fotillo. I suppose I need say no more to the flower of all gallant cavaliers, nor are you a man that will slight so fair an opportunity. I am persuaded that your mistress and her company

will be handsomely treated to-morrow."—"Yes, you may depend upon it," said his governor, "and you shall see I know how to lay hold on the occasion." In reality, very early the next morning, four of his master's footmen, conducted by Domingo, and loaded with all sorts of cold meats dressed different ways, and a vast number of small loaves, and bottles of the best wine, arrived on the banks of the Manzanarez, where Florella and her companions were dancing like so many nymphs at the rising of the morning.

They were not a little pleased at the page's coming to interrupt their light dances, by the offer of a solid breakfast from Signior Don Cosmo. They sat down on the grass, and began to do honour to the feast, by laughing immoderately at the fool who gave it; for the charitable cousin of Domingo had taken care to let them into the secret.

As they were all disposed for mirth, they saw the squire appear richly dressed, and mounted on a pad out of the count's stables. He came up to his confidant, and saluted his company, who got up to receive him with the greater politeness, and thank him for his generosity. He looked with all the eyes he had among these wenches for Donna Luziana, designing to make his addresses to her in a fine compliment which he had studied by the way; but Florella, taking him aside, told him that an indisposition had prevented her lady's appearing at the entertainment. Don Cosmo shewed a very great concern at this news, and asked what his dear Luziana's illness was. "She has got a sad cold," said the maid, "by passing all the night you gave the serenade, in the balcony without her veil, and talking of you." The squire, comforted by an accident proceeding from so charming a cause, begged her to continue him her good offices with her mistress, and returned home, applauding himself more and more in his good fortune.

About this time, Don Cosmo had a bill of exchange sent him, and received a thousand crowns in gold sent him from Andalusia, as his

* A sort of dance peculiar to the Spaniards.

‘share of an estate of an uncle of his at Seville. He told over the sum, and put it into a chest before Domingo, who eyed it wishfully, and being tempted to get those pretty things into his possession, he resolved to run away with them to Portugal. He informed Florella of it, and went so far as to propose to her to go along with him. Though the proposal deserved mature consideration, the wench, as wicked as the page, accepted it without boggling. In short, one night whilst the squire was shut up in his closet, and busied in inditing a passionate letter to his mistress, Domingo found means to open the chest where the money lay, and carried it off. Immediately he made the best of his way into the street with his booty, and being got under Luziana’s balcony fell a caterwauling. The chambermaid, at this signal, which they had agreed upon, did not make him wait long, but being ready to follow him all over the world, departed out of Madrid with him.

‘They built upon having time enough to reach Portugal, before they should be overtaken; but unluckily for them, Don Cosmo, that very night perceiving he was robbed, and his confident run away, had immediate recourse to a justice, who dispatched his blood-hounds all about in pursuit of the thief, and took him and his nymph near Zebreros; who were both brought back, and the maid sent to *las arrepentidas*, and Domingo hither.’

‘Doubtless then,’ said the student, ‘the squire will not lose his money, but it will be returned him.’—‘Not so, neither,’ answered the devil; ‘those pieces are proofs of the robbery, and the officers of justice will not part with them: and Don Cosmo, whose story is spread all over the city, remains plundered, and is laughed at by every body.

‘Domingo and that other prisoner at play with him,’ continued the cripple, ‘have a young Castilian for their neighbour, who has been brought in here, for having given his father a blow in the presence of credible witnesses.’—‘O heavens!’ cried Leandro, ‘what do you tell me? however wicked a son be, yet still can he lift up his hand against

his father?’—‘O yes,’ said the daemon, ‘this is not without an instance, and I will give you a very remarkable one. In the reign of Peter the First, surnamed the Just and the Cruel, eighth King of Portugal, a young fellow of about twenty was put into the hands of justice for the same fact. Don Pedro, like you, surprized at the novelty of the case, resolved to examine the criminal’s mother, and did it with so much art, as to make her own she had that child by a right reverend prelate. In the same manner, were the judges of this Castilian to examine his mother as artfully, they might probably force a like confession from her.

‘Carry your eyes to that large dungeon under the three prisoners I have just shewed you, and let us consider what is passing there. Those are highwaymen. See, they are breaking out by the help of a smooth file brought them in a loaf, and have already filed through a large bar of a window, through which they may slip into a court that goes into the street. They have been here more than ten months, and should have received the public reward due to such exploits above eight months ago: but, thanks to the tedious proceedings of the law, they are going again to their vocation of murdering travellers.

‘Follow me into that low hall, where you will see twenty or thirty prisoners lying upon straw; they are pick-pockets, shop-lifters, and all the very worst sort of felons. Do you observe five or six of them worrying a kind of handicraft tradesman brought in to day for wounding an Alguazil with a stone?’—‘But why do they beat the poor fellow?’ said Zambullo. ‘It is,’ answered Asmodeus, ‘because he has not paid his garnish. But,’ added he, ‘let us leave those rogues, and get as far as we can from this wretched place, that we may employ our time upon objects that are more agreeable.’

C H A P. VIII.

ASMODEUS SHEWS DON CLEOFAS SEVERAL PERSONS, AND DISCOVERS

VERS TO HIM WHAT THEY HAVE BEEN DOING THAT DAY.

LEAVING the prisoners, they flew towards another quarter, and lighted upon a great house, where the daemon said thus to the student: 'I have a great mind to tell you what all the people living round this great house have this day been doing, and possibly it may divert you.'—'I make no doubt of it,' answered Leandro, 'and I wish you would begin with that captain who is drawing on his boots.'—'He is going out of Madrid,' said Asmodeus; 'his horses wait for him at the gate, and he is commanded to Portugal, in order to join his regiment.'

'Having no money to make the campaign, he yesterday applied himself to an usurer: "Signior Sanguisuela," said he, "cannot you lend me a thousand pieces of eight?"—"Captain," answered the usurer, in very obliging terms, "I have not so much by me, but I will do my best to find you a man that shall lend you the sum; that is, shall give you four hundred down, provided you give your note for a thousand; and out of that four hundred, please to take notice that I expect sixty for procuration. Money is so very scarce at this time—" "What a hellish extortion is this," interrupted the officer hastily, "to ask six hundred and sixty patacoons for the use of three hundred and forty! What a horrid cheat is this! such unconfessionable rascals deserve hanging."

"Do not be in a passion, captain," replied the usurer with great coolness, "try at another place. What do you complain of? do I force you to take the three hundred and forty patacoons? You are at your liberty to take them or let them alone." The captain went away without returning any answer: but, after considering that he must go to his regiment, that his time was short, and that he could do nothing without money, he returns the next morning to the usurer, whom he met at his door in a black cloak, collar-band, and short hair, with beads in his hands. "Signior Sanguisuela," says he, "I am content to accept your three hundred and forty pata-

coons; my extreme want of money has forced me to it."—"I am going to mass," answered the usurer very gravely, "and at my return come again, and you shall have that sum."—"No, no," replied the captain, "go in again; this affair will not take you up two minutes: pray dispatch me immediately, for I am in the utmost haste."—"I cannot really," replied the usurer; "I every day hear mass before I do any manner of business; it is my constant rule, which I am resolved to observe most religiously for the remainder of my life."

However impatient the captain was to receive his money, he was forced to submit to pious Sanguisuela's strict rules; and, as if he had been afraid he should miss the patacoons, he followed the usurer to the church, and staid the mass out with him; after which he prepared to go out of the church, when Sanguisuela whispered in his ear, that one of the ablest preachers in Madrid was going to mount the pulpit; "and I will not, on any account," said he, "lose the sermon."

The officer, who thought the mass insupportably tedious, was almost distracted at this fresh delay; but yet waited the sermon out. The preacher appeared, and preached against usury, at which the captain was infinitely pleased; and observing Sanguisuela's looks, he said to himself, "If this Jew should be touched with this discourse! Should he now give me six hundred patacoons, how happy it would be!" After the sermon, the usurer went out of the church: "Well, Signior Sanguisuela," said the captain, joining him, "what do you think of this preacher? was not the sermon very pathetic? For my part, I own it sensibly moved me."—"I am entirely of your opinion," answered the extortioner: "he has handled his subject perfectly well; he is a learned man, and has perfectly well discharged the duty of his calling; let us go do the same in ours."

Pray who are these two ladies in bed together, who laugh so loud? cried Don Cleofas; 'they seem to me to be very merry.'—'They are,' answered the devil, 'a couple of young ladies'

‘ ladies that have this day buried their father, who was a whimsical humourist, that had such an aversion for matrimony, or rather such a reluctance to give portions to his daughters, that he would never marry them, how advantageous matches soever were offered. The character of their deceased father was the perpetual subject of their discourse. “ He is dead at last,” said the eldest, “ our unnatural father, who took a barbarous pleasure in preventing our marriage; he will now no more cross our desires !” — “ For my part,” said the youngest, “ I am for a rich husband, though a fool, and the fat Don Blanco shall be my man.” — “ Hold, sister,” replied the eldest, “ do not let us be so very hasty in the choice of husbands; let us marry those the powers above have destined for us; for our marriages are registered in heaven’s book.” — “ So much the worse,” dear sister,” returned the youngest, “ for I am afraid my father will tear out the leaf.” At this the eldest could not hold from an extravagant fit of laughter; in which the youngest, equally tickled, as heartily joins.

‘ In the house next to the two sisters, lives, in a ready furnished chamber, a young Arragonian lady who is upon the catch for some rich bubble. I see she is looking in the glass instead of going to bed, and complimenting her charms, on the important conquest they have made this day. She is likewise contriving new airs, and has already hit on two which will to-morrow give a good stroke towards the gaining of a new lover, who is such a very promising spark, that she cannot be too sedulous in the conquest of him; and one of her creditors coming not long since to dun her, “ Honest friend,” said she, “ come within a few days and you shall be paid, I am just upon terms of agreement with one of the chief officers of the treasury.”

‘ I need not,” said Don Cleofas, ask you what that gentleman, whom I see, has been doing for this whole day; he must of necessity have spent it in writing letters. What a prodigious quantity do I see on his table! — “ What is most comical,” answered the devil, “ is, that all these letters

‘ are verbatim the same. This cavalier has written to all his absent friends the relation of an adventure which happened to him this day after dinner, and is as follows. He loves a beautiful discreet widow of thirty: he makes his addressee to her, she does not slight him; he proposes to marry her, and she accepts the offer. While the nuptial preparations are making, he has free leave to visit her at her own house, which he accordingly doth daily. He has been there to-day, and happening to meet with none of the family to ask where she was, he entered the lady’s apartment, where he surprized her asleep on a couch in an amorous undress; or, to speak more properly, almost naked. He approached her softly, and stole a kiss; at which she awaked, and sighing said, “ Ah, pray Ambrosio, let me sleep!” The cavalier, like a well bred man, very civilly took his leave at that instant, and quitted her apartment; he met Ambrosio at the door. “ Ambrosio,” said he, “ your mistress begs that you would not wake her.”

‘ Two doors beyond this cavalier, I discover a small house where lives an original of an husband, who snores while his wife is reproaching him for having staid out the whole day; and she would be much more exasperated, if she knew how he had been employing himself. — “ In some intrigue, I warrant you,” said Zambullo. “ You are right,” replied Asmodeus; “ and I will tell you it.

‘ This man is a citizen, whose name is Patricio, one of those loose husbands that live without thinking, as if they had neither wives nor children. Yet he has a beautiful modest wife, two daughters, and a son, all very young. He went out this morning without asking whether there was bread for the family, who sometimes want it. He passed by the great square, drawn thither by the preparations for the bull feasts which are to be to-day. There were scaffolds already built all round, and such as were the most eager to satisfy their curiosity had already begun to take their places.

‘ Whilst he was gazing at them, he

' he happened to cast an eye upon a
 ' lady very well made and neatly
 ' dressed, who in coming down from
 ' one of the scaffolds, shewed a fine
 ' well-turned leg, with a pink-coloured
 ' silk stocking and silver garter. There
 ' needed no more to set our weak citi-
 ' zen all in a flame, who advancing
 ' up to the lady, who had another with
 ' her that plainly enough discovered
 ' by her air, that they were both upon
 ' the catch. "Ladies," said he to
 ' them, "if I can be serviceable to
 ' you any way, pray command me;
 ' for I am very much at your service."
 '—"Sir," answered the nymph with the
 ' pink-coloured stockings, "your of-
 ' fer is too obliging to be rejected; we
 ' had already taken our places, but
 ' have just left them to go to breakfast,
 ' for we have been so silly as to come
 ' out this morning without drinking
 ' our chocolate; and since you are
 ' so gallant as to offer us your service,
 ' go along with us if you please, to
 ' some place where we may eat a
 ' mouthful. But let it be some where
 ' that we may not be seen; for you
 ' know young maidens cannot be too
 ' careful of their reputation."

' At these words, Patricio, grow-
 ' ing still more polite and well bred
 ' than there was any occasion for,
 ' carries his princesses to a tavern in
 ' the suburbs, where he calls for a
 ' breakfast. "Sir," says the man
 ' of the house, "what would you
 ' please to have? I have the remains
 ' of a great entertainment, made at
 ' my house yesterday, still by me;
 ' crammed chickens, partridges of
 ' Leon, pigeons of Old Castile, and
 ' more than half a ham of Estrema-
 ' dura."—"That is more than we
 ' shall want," said the gentleman-
 ' usher of these vestals. "Ladies,
 ' you need only chuse; which are you
 ' for?"—"Whatever you please,"
 ' answered they; "your taste shall be
 ' ours." Whereupon our citizen or-
 ' dered a brace of young partridges,
 ' and two cold chickens, and a private
 ' room, seeing he was with ladies who
 ' stood so much upon their modesty.

' They shewed him and his com-
 ' pany into a little bye closet, whither
 ' in a moment was brought what he
 ' had bespoke, with bread and wine.
 ' Our Lucretias, like ladies very sharp

' set, fell greedily upon the meat,
 ' while the cully who was to pay the
 ' reckoning amused himself with con-
 ' templating the beauty of his Luifita,
 ' for so was this lady of his affections
 ' called. He admires the whiteness
 ' of her hands, on which sparkled a
 ' large ring which she had gained by
 ' her practice; he calls her a star, a
 ' sun, and a thousand such fine names,
 ' and is not able to eat for thinking
 ' on his good luck in meeting with
 ' her. He asked his goddess if she
 ' were married; to which she an-
 ' swered, no, but was under a bro-
 ' ther's care: if she had added, on A-
 ' dam's side, she had spoke the truth.
 ' In the mean while, the two harpies
 ' not only devoured each her chicken,
 ' but drank proportionably too. The
 ' wine was soon out, and our spark
 ' himself ran to fetch more, that they
 ' might have it the sooner; but he
 ' was hardly out of the room, when
 ' Jacintha, Luifita's companion, lays
 ' her claws upon the partridges that
 ' remained in the dish, and crams them
 ' into a linen pocket she had under her
 ' petticoat. Presently our Adonis re-
 ' turned with more wine; and obser-
 ' ving the victuals were gone, asked his
 ' Venus whether she would not eat
 ' something else. "Let us have,"
 ' said she, "some of those pigeons
 ' our landlord was mentioning, pro-
 ' vided they be exceeding fine; if not,
 ' a piece of the ham will do." She
 ' had scarce spoke, when Patricio went
 ' back to the larder, and ordered three
 ' pigeons and a large slice of the ham.
 ' Our birds of prey began to peck
 ' again: and whilst their spark was
 ' obliged a third time to disappear for
 ' bread, they sent a brace of the pi-
 ' geons to keep company with the pri-
 ' soners in their pocket.

' After the repast, which concluded
 ' with fruits proper to the season, the
 ' amorous Patricio pressed Luifita to
 ' make him those returns he expected
 ' from her gratitude, which the lady
 ' refused to comply with; but gave
 ' him some hopes, at the same time
 ' telling him there was a season for
 ' every thing, and that she thought a
 ' tavern a very unfit place to testify her
 ' acknowledgments in for the obliga-
 ' tion she had to him. Upon which,
 ' hearing it strike one, she put on an
 ' air

“ air of uneasiness, saying to her companion, “ Dear Jacintha, we are very unfortunate, we shall meet with never a place to see the bull-fight.”

“ Pardon me,” answered Jacintha, “ this gentleman has no more to do than to carry us back where he first accosted us with so much politeness, and do not be uneasy about the rest.”

“ Before they went out of the tavern, there was a necessity for paying the vintner, who mounted the bill to fifty reals: the citizen put his hand into his pocket, where finding but thirty reals, he was forced to pawn his beads garnished with silver medals for the rest. He then waited on his adventurers to the place where he met with them, and placed them in a very convenient seat on one of the scaffolds, for which the prior, a friend of his, gave him credit.

“ They were hardly seated, ere they asked for something to drink. “ I am fainting with thirst,” cried one, “ the ham has made me so terribly dry.”—“ And I too,” cried the other, “ could drink a glass of lemonade with pleasure.” Immediately Patricio, who understood but too well what all this meant, left them in order to go for refreshments: but, stopping short, says he to himself; “ Where art thou going, madman? Methinks thou shouldst have a hundred pistoles, either in thy pocket or at home, and yet thou hast not a cross. What shall I do?” continued he. “ Shall I return to the lady without what she desires? No, that will never do. On the other hand, shall I stop short in an affair that is so far advanced? I can never think of that.”

“ In this perplexity, he perceives one of his friends in the crowd, who had often made him offers of friendship, which out of pride he had always refused: immediately laying aside all shame, he makes up to him in great haste, and borrows a double pistole of him; and, taking heart at this fortunate accident, flies to a chocolate-house, and there buys so many liquors cooled in ice, so many biscuits and dried sweetmeats, that the doubloon would scarce serve for that expence.

“ In short, the feast concluded with

the day, and our gallant waits on his ladies home, hoping thereby to gain his ends. But, when they were before a house where she said she lived, a sort of a maid came out to Luísa, and speaking with some concern, “ Lord,” said she, “ where have you been so late! Your brother, Signior Don Jasper Heridor, has been at home these two hours, storming and swearing like a madman:” upon which the sister, pretending to be in a fright, turned to our spark, and, squeezing his hand, said in a low voice, “ My brother is terribly passionate, but it is soon over; stay a little in the street, and do not be impatient, so we will go in and quiet him; but, as he every night sups in the city, the moment he goes out, Jacintha shall come and inform you of it, and let you in.”

“ The gallant, comforted by this promise, kissed Luísa’s hand with transport, who bestowed on him a few caresses to keep him in hopes; and then went in with Jacintha and the maid. Patricio very contentedly sat himself down on a stone that was near the door, and waited a good while, without thinking they could possibly have any design to trick him. Nothing surprized him but that he did not see Don Jasper come out, which made him fear that this cursed brother would not sup in the city.

“ In the mean time he hears it strike ten, eleven, twelve. Then he began to abate of his confidence, and to suspect his lady’s sincerity. He goes up to the door, goes in, and gropes his way through a dark alley; in the midst of which he finds a pair of stairs. However, he dares not venture to go up, but listens attentively, and his ear is saluted with the disagreeable concert of a dog barking, a cat mewling, and a child crying. At last he begins to find he is imposed upon; and what fully convinces him is, that endeavouring to get at the end of the alley, he finds himself in a different street to that where he had so long waited.

“ Then he regretted the loss of his money, and returns home cursing the pink-coloured stockings; he knocks, and his wife opens the door with her beads in her hand, and tears in her eyes, saying, with a moving air,

" Ah, Patricio! can you thus abandon your house, and take so little care of your wife and children? What have you been doing ever since six o'clock this morning, that you went out?" The husband not knowing what answer to make, and ashamed besides of being fooled by a couple of jilting baggages, undressed, and went to-bed without speaking one word. The wife, in a humour for moralizing, is now giving him a lecture that this moment has laid him to sleep.

" Cast your eyes," pursued Asmodeus, " on that great house, beyond that of the gentleman who is writing his friends an account of breaking off his marriage with his mistress. Did you see that young lady in the rose-coloured sattin bed embroidered with gold?"—" Yes," answered Don Cleofas, " I discern a fine woman in a profound sleep, and I think also a book on her bolster."—" You are right," replied Asmodeus; " that lady is a very gay, witty, young countess, who being indisposed, and not able to sleep for a week, she this day resolved to send for one of the gravest physicians of this city. He came, she consulted him, and he ordered her a remedy mentioned in Hippocrates. The lady began to rally his prescription; but the physician, being a peevish animal, was disgusted at her jest, and replied with his doctorial gravity, " Hippocrates," Madam, " is not a proper man to be ridiculed."—" God forbid, doctor," answered the countess, with the most serious air that it was possible for her to put on; " God forbid that I should laugh at such a famous and learned author! I have such a high value for him, that I am fully persuaded the reading of some of his tracts, only, would cure my waking distemper. I have his works translated by the learned Azero, which is the best translation extant." She accordingly tried the experiment, and at the third page fell asleep.

" In the countess's stables there is a poor one-armed soldier, whom the grooms, out of charity, allow to lie every night on the straw. He begs in the day time, and has just now had a pleasant conversation with another beggar, that lives near Buen-

retiro, in a passage leading to the court. This last has made a good hand of it, is a warm old fellow, and has a daughter marriageable, who passes amongst these people for a rich heiress. The soldier, accosting the old gentleman, said to him, " Signior Mendigo, you see I have lost my right-arm, I can no longer serve his majesty, and am reduced, as you are, to the civility of passengers for a subsistence. But of all trades, I know very well this is one that best subsists those that follow it, and that all it wants is to be a little more honourable."—" If it were honourable," answered the other, " it would be worth nothing, for every body would take it up."

" You say right," replied the soldier; " well, then, I am one of your brethren, and would fain be related to you. You shall give me your daughter."—" You do not consider," answered the old rich fellow, " that she must have a better match. You are not half lame enough for my son-in-law. I would have a man in a condition to draw compassion from an usurer."—" Good God!" said the soldier, " is not my condition deplorable enough?"—" Fie," answered the other hastily, " you have only lost an arm, and yet you pretend to my daughter. Do you know, Sir, that I have already refused her to a fellow so lame, that he goes with his breech in a bowl!"

" But we must not pass by the house next to the countess's, where lives a drunken painter and a poet. The painter went out at seven this morning, with intent to fetch a confessor to his wife, who is at the point of death; but meeting with a friend that dragged him to the tavern, he never returned till ten at night. The poet, who, if he be not belied, has sometimes met with a melancholy reward for his satires, said just now in a coffee-house, with a swaggering air, speaking of a man who was absent, " that is a rascal to whom I must give a good drubbing;" upon which an arch fellow replied, " That you may very easily, for you have a good stock by you."

" I must not forget a scene worth your hearing, that hath this day passed at a banker's in this street, who

is lately set up in this city. It is not two months since he returned from Peru laden with riches: his father is an honest cobbler in a small village about twelve leagues from hence, where he lived thoroughly contented with his condition, and his wife, who is much about the same age with himself, that is, sixty.

It is a long time since this banker left his parents, to go to the Indies in quest of a better fortune than what they could propose to leave him; for within the compass of twenty rolling years they had not seen him. They frequently talked of him, and continually prayed that Heaven would please not to forsake him; and the parson being their friend, they never failed to obtain the public prayers of the congregation for him. As for the banker, he had not forgotten them; but as soon as he was settled, resolved to inform himself of their condition. To this purpose, after having ordered his domesticks not to expect him, he mounted on horseback, and went alone to the village.

It was ten at night before he got thither, and the honest cobbler was abed with his wife, in a sound sleep, when he knocked at the door: they then awaked, and asked who was there. "Open the door," says the banker, "it is your son Francillo."—"Make others believe that if you can," cried the old man; "you thieving rogues, go about your business, for here is nothing for you; Francillo, if not dead, is now in the Indies."—"He is no longer there, he is returned home from Peru," replied the banker, "and it is he that now speaks to you; open your door and receive him."—"Jacobo, let us rise then," said the woman, "for I really believe it is Francillo, I think I know his voice."

They both rose immediately; the father lighted a candle, and the mother, after getting her clothes on with the utmost haste, opened the door. She earnestly looked on Francillo, and could no longer doubt his being her son; she flung her arms about his neck, and clasped him close to her. Jacobo, also touched by the same sentiments as his wife, did not fail to embrace his son in his turn: and all three of them, trans-

ported with the sight of one another after such a long absence, could not satisfy themselves with expressing the marks of the utmost tenderness.

After these pleasing transports, the banker unfaddled and unbridled his horse, and put him into the stable, where he found an old milk cow, the nurse to the whole family; he then gave the old folks an account of his voyage, and all the riches he had brought from Peru. The particular was long, and would tire any disinterested auditors; but a son, that unboresomed himself, in the relation of his adventures, could not tire the attention of a father and mother. They greedily heard him, and the very least particulars which he related made in them a sensible impression of grief or joy.

As soon as he had ended the story of his fortunes, he told them he came to offer them part of his wealth, and begged of his father not to work any longer. "No, my son," said Mr. Jacobo, "I love my trade, and will not quit it."—"Why," replied the banker, "is it not now high time for you to give it over, and take your ease? I do not propose your coming to live with me at Madrid; I know very well that a city life would not please you. I would not disturb your quiet way of living; but at least give over your hard labour, and pass your days as easily as you can."

The mother seconded her son, and Mr. Jacobo yielded. "Very well, Francillo," said he; "to please you, I will not work any more for the public; but will only mend my own shoes, and those of my good friend, the vicar of the parish." After this agreement, the banker, fatigued with his day's journey, eat a couple of poached eggs, and lay down to sleep by his father, with a pleasure which only the most dutiful and best-natured children to their parents can imagine.

The next morning, the banker, leaving them a purse of three hundred ducats, returned to Madrid; but yesterday was very much surprized to see Mr. Jacobo unexpectedly at his house. "My father," said he, "what brought you hither?"—"Francillo," answered

I 2 the

‘ the honest man, “ I have brought
 ‘ your purse, take your money again,
 ‘ I desire to live by my trade, I have
 ‘ been ready to die with uneasiness
 ‘ ever since I left off working.”—
 ‘ Well then, my father,” replied the
 ‘ banker, “ return to your village,
 ‘ work at your trade enough to di-
 ‘ vert yourself, but no more; carry
 ‘ back your purse with you, and do
 ‘ not spare mine.”—“ Alas! what
 ‘ would you have me to do with so
 ‘ much money?” replied Mr. Jacobo.
 ‘ Comfort the poor with it,” return-
 ‘ ed Francillo; “ bestow it as your
 ‘ vicar shall advise you.” The cob-
 ‘ ler, satisfied with this answer, re-
 ‘ turned that morning to his village.

Don Cleofas could not hear Fran-
 cillo’s story without a particular plea-
 sure, and was going to break out into
 praises of the honest-hearted banker, if
 just at that moment a very shrill cry had
 not called off his attention. ‘ Signior
 ‘ Asmodeus,’ cried he, ‘ what is that
 ‘ I hear? what confused noise strikes
 ‘ the air?’—‘ Those are madmen,’
 answered the devil, ‘ who are tearing
 ‘ their throats with singing and roar-
 ‘ ing; we are not far from the place
 ‘ where they are shut up.’—‘ Ah,’
 said Don Cleofas, ‘ pray do me the
 ‘ favour to shew me them, and give
 ‘ me an account wherefore they ran
 ‘ mad?’—‘ I will immediately give you
 ‘ that diversion,’ answered the devil.
 These words were scarce ended, be-
 fore the student was transported to the
 top of the *casa de los locos**.

CH A P. IX.

OF THE CONFINED MAD PEOPLE.

ZAMBULLO cast an attentive
 eye into all the rooms, and hav-
 ing observed the mad men and women
 that were in them, said the devil to
 him, ‘ You see here are mad folks of
 ‘ both sexes, merry and melancholy,
 ‘ young and old; but I must now tell
 ‘ you what has turned their brains.
 ‘ We will take them in order one after
 ‘ another, and begin with the men.

‘ He that is raving in the first room
 ‘ is a newsmonger of Castile, born in

‘ the heart of Madrid, a haughty ci-
 ‘ tizen, and more touched with the
 ‘ honour of his country than an old
 ‘ Roman citizen. This man is me-
 ‘ lancholy mad, by reading in the ga-
 ‘ zette that twenty Spaniards suffered
 ‘ themselves to be beaten by a party
 ‘ of fifty Portuguese.

‘ His neighbour is a licentiado,
 ‘ who has played the hypocrite at
 ‘ court for these ten years only to ob-
 ‘ tain a benefice; and seeing himself
 ‘ continually forgotten in the promo-
 ‘ tions, despair has at last turned his
 ‘ head. But a very lucky circumstance
 ‘ for him is, that he fancies himself
 ‘ archbishop of Toledo, and if he
 ‘ really be not so, he has the pleasure
 ‘ of believing he is; and I think him
 ‘ still the more happy, as I look upon
 ‘ his madness as a golden dream in
 ‘ which he will continue all his life;
 ‘ and as he will have no account to
 ‘ give in the next world, how he has
 ‘ employed the revenues of his bishop-
 ‘ rick in this.

‘ The next is an orphan, whom his
 ‘ guardian made to pass for distracted,
 ‘ that he might seize his estate; and
 ‘ the poor youth is really become so at
 ‘ last, out of pure grief to see him-
 ‘ self shut up here. Next to him is a
 ‘ schoolmaster, who lost his wits in
 ‘ search of the *paulo post futurum* of a
 ‘ Greek verb: and the other a mer-
 ‘ chant, whose reason could not sup-
 ‘ port the news of a shipwreck, after
 ‘ having had the courage to bear up
 ‘ against the misfortune of two bank-
 ‘ ruptcies.

‘ He whom you see beyond him, is
 ‘ old Captain Zanubio, a Neapolitan
 ‘ gentleman, who came to settle at
 ‘ Madrid, and ran mad with jealousy.
 ‘ His story runs thus:

‘ He had a young wife, whose name
 ‘ was Aurora; he kept her out of
 ‘ sight; his house was inaccessible to
 ‘ all men. Aurora never went out
 ‘ but to mass, and then was always
 ‘ accompanied by her old Tithon,
 ‘ who sometimes carried her to an
 ‘ estate which he had near Alcantara.
 ‘ Notwithstanding all his vigilant care,
 ‘ a certain gentleman, whose name was
 ‘ Don Garcia Pucheco, having seen her
 ‘ at church, had conceived a violent

* The mad-house, or bedlam.

‘ passion

passion for her. He was a bold young spark, and worth the regard of a handsome woman ill married.

The difficulty of introducing himself to Zanubio did not remove his hopes; but his beard being not yet grown, and being a very beautiful youth, he dressed himself in girl's clothes, took a purse of a hundred pistoles, and went to Zanubio's estate, whither he had been informed by good hands that the captain and his wife would very soon come. He addressed himself to the gardener's wife, and in a romantick heroick strain, said to her, "I come to throw myself into your arms, take pity upon me! I am of Toledo, born of a good family, and to a good fortune; my parents resolve to marry me to a man I hate, and I have this night escaped their tyranny, and at present want a shelter from their rage. They will never come to look for me here; permit me to stay here, till my relations come to more tender sentiments for me. Here is my purse," adds he, giving it to her, "take it; it is all I can at present offer you. But I hope I shall one day be able to acknowledge any service you shall do me."

The gardener's wife, touched with this discourse, more especially with the conclusion: "My daughter," said she, "I will serve you; I know several young women who are sacrificed to old men, and withal know that they are not very well contented with them; alas! I feel part of their griefs. You could not have addressed yourself to a more proper person than myself; I will place you in a little private chamber, where you shall be secure."

Don Garcia passed several days here very impatiently, expecting the arrival of Aurora, who at last came, accompanied by her husband; who, according to his custom, searched all the apartments, closets, cellars, and garrets, to see if he could not discover any man hidden there. The gardener's wife, knowing him thoroughly, prevented his searching Don Garcia's chamber, by telling in what manner the pretended lady had desired a refuge there.

Zanubio, though extremely distrustful, had not the least suspicion

of the deceit. He was willing to see the unknown lady, who desired to be excused from the discovery of her name, pretending she owed that concealment to her family, whom she disgraced by this sort of flight. She then told her romantic tale so advantageously, that the captain was charmed with it, and began to find a growing inclination for the fair unknown. He offered her his services, and flattering himself that this might prove a lucky adventure, placed her with his wife.

As soon as Aurora saw Don Garcia, she blushed, and grew disturbed, without knowing why; he perceived it, and believed she had observed him in the church where he had seen her. Wherefore, to satisfy himself, as soon as he could speak to her alone, he said, "Madam, I have a brother has often mentioned you to me: he saw you for a moment in a church; ever since that time he has called upon your name a thousand times a day, and is in a condition which indeed deserves your pity."

At these words Aurora looked on Don Garcia more intently than she had yet done, and answered, "You too much resemble that brother for me to be any longer deluded by your artifice; I see clearly enough that you are a cavalier in petticoats: I remember that one day, when I was hearing mass, my veil suddenly flew open, and you saw me. I observed you out of curiosity, and found your eyes always fixed upon me. When I went away, I believe you did not fail to follow me, to discover in what street I lived, and who I was. I believe, I say; because I durst not turn my head to observe you, because my husband, who was with me, would have been alarmed, and made a great crime of it. The next and the following days I went to the same church, where I saw you again, and took so much notice of your face, that I know it again notwithstanding your disguise."

"Madam, then," replied Don Garcia, "I must unmask. Yes; I am a man ensnared by your charms: it is Don Garcia Pucheco, whom love has introduced here in this dress."

"And

"And you hope, without doubt," said she, "that approving your passion, I should favour this stratagem, and contribute my part to keep my husband in the error he now lies under; but there you are deceived. I will immediately discover the whole to him; I am glad of such a handsome opportunity of convincing him that his vigilance is less secure than my virtue, and that as jealous and distrustful as he is, it is more difficult to surprize me than him."

She had scarce ended these words before the captain appeared. "What are you talking of, ladies?" said he. To which Aurora immediately answered, "We are speaking of those young cavaliers that attempt to get into the affections of young women who have old husbands; and I was saying, that if any of those sparks should be so rash as to presume to introduce themselves to you, under any disguise, I would very severely punish their impudence."

"And you, Madam," said Zanubio, turning towards Don Garcia, "how would you treat a young cavalier on the same occasion?" Don Garcia was so disturbed and confused, that he was utterly at a loss what answer to return to the captain; who would have perceived the perplexity he was in, if a footman had not come to tell him that a person was come from Madrid to speak with him.

He went to see what his business was, when Don Garcia threw himself at Aurora's feet. "Ah, Madam!" said he, "what pleasure do you take in tormenting me! Will you really be so barbarous as to deliver me over to the resentment of an enraged husband?"—"No, Pucheco," answered she smiling; "young women, who have old, jealous husbands, are not so cruel. Re-assume your courage; I was willing to divert myself by putting you into a little fright, but that shall be all; it is not making you pay too dear for my complaisance in suffering you to stay here." At these comforting words Don Garcia found all his fears vanish, and conceived hopes which Aurora was kind enough to make good.

One day, when they were mutually exchanging some marks of their good understanding in Zanubio's apartment, the captain surprized them. Had he not been the most jealous man in the world, he saw enough to engage him to believe with good reason, that his fair unknown was a cavalier disguised: enraged to the highest degree at this sight, he runs to his closet to fetch his pistols; but in the mean while the lovers escaped, double locking all the doors after them, and carrying off the keys. They got to a neighbouring village, where Don Garcia had left his valet de chambre and two horses. There he quitted his petticoats, took Aurora behind him, and conducted her to a convent, where he desired her to enter, and assured her of a refuge there, the abbess being his aunt. This done, he returned to Madrid to wait the issue of this adventure.

In the interim, Zanubio, finding himself locked in, loudly called all his family. A footman, hearing his voice, ran towards him, but the doors being locked, he could not open them. The captain endeavoured to break them open, but not being able to get out that way quick enough, yielding to his rage, he hastily flung himself out of a window with the pistols in his hand; he fell upon his back, hurt his head, and remained senseless on the ground. His domesticks came and carried him into the hall on a couch; they threw water in his face, and on tormenting him fetched him out of his fainting fit; but with his senses his rage returned. He asked for his wife. The servants answered him, that they saw her and the strange lady go out at the little garden door. He commanded them to give him his pistols immediately, and they were forced to obey him. He caused a horse to be saddled, mounting it without thinking of his wounds; but happened to take a different road than that which the lovers went. He passed the whole day in a vain chase, and at night stopping at an inn in a village to repose himself, his fatigue, and the blood which he had lost, threw him into a fever and delirium, which almost carried him off.

To tell you the rest in two words; he lay fifteen days sick in that village,

‘lage, after which he returned to his estate; where, continually possessed by his misfortune, he by degrees lost his wits. Aurora’s friends were no sooner informed of this, than they brought him to Madrid, and shut him up in the mad-house; and his wife is yet in a nunnery, where they resolve she shall stay some years, as a punishment for her indiscretion, or rather a fault for which they only are to blame.

‘The very next to Zanubio is Signior Don Blaz Desdichado, a gentleman of great merit. His wife’s death is the occasion of his being in the sad condition wherein you see him.’—‘That is surprizing,’ said Don Cleofas. ‘What! a husband run mad for the death of a wife! really I did not think conjugal love could be carried so high.’—‘Not so fast,’ interrupted Asmodeus; ‘Don Blaz did not run mad with grief for the loss of his wife, but for being forced to restore fifty thousand ducats to his wife’s relations, according to the marriage articles, in case they had no children, which is this gentleman’s misfortune.’

‘Oh! that alters the affair,’ said Leandro; ‘now I am no longer surprized at it. But pray tell me who that young man is in the next room, that is capering about like a goat; and, stopping now and then, bursts out into a laugh, and holds his sides all the while.’—‘That is a merry madman,’ replied the cripple, ‘and his madness was caused by an excess of joy. He was a porter to a person of quality; but hearing one day of the death of a rich contador, whose only heir he was, he was not proof against so joyful a piece of news, and so his head turned.

‘We are got to that tall youth who plays upon the guitar, and sings to himself.

‘He is a melancholy madman, a lover whom the severities of his mistress have reduced to this condition.’—‘Ah, how I pity him!’ cried the student; ‘allow me to deplore his misfortune; it may be every honest gentleman’s case. If I should be smitten by a cruel beauty, I do not myself know whether I should not lose my wits.’—‘By this sentiment you

‘shew yourself to be a true Castilian; one must be born in the very middle of Castile to be capable of ever running melancholy mad for being unable to please. The French are not so tender; and if you will know the difference betwixt a Frenchman and a Spaniard on this head, I heed only repeat that song which the madman sings, and has just this minute composed.

A SPANISH SONG.

‘Ardo y lloro sin sosiego:
‘Llorando y ardiendo tanto,
‘Que ni el llanto apaga el fuego;
‘Ni el fuego consumo el llanto.

IN PROSE THUS:

‘I burn and weep incessantly, without my tears ever quenching my flames, or my flames drying up my tears.

‘Thus sings the Spanish cavalier, when his mistress has used him ill; and, on the same occasion, a Frenchman, a few days since, expressed himself thus:

A FRENCH SONG.

‘Th’ ungrateful object of my love
‘Is deaf to all my pray’rs:
‘Her cruel heart no sighs can move,
‘Nor is she soften’d by my tears.
‘Was ever mortal curs’d like me!
‘The light and ever-glorious sun,
‘Henceforth abandon’d will I shun,
‘And in the grave with Payen lie.’

‘Payen is probably a vintner,’ said Don Cleofas. ‘You have guessed right,’ said the devil. ‘Let us go on, and examine the rest.’—‘No,’ said Leandro, ‘let us rather go to the women, for I am impatient to see them.’—‘I will comply with your impatience presently,’ replied the spirit: ‘but there are two or three unfortunate people that I should be glad to shew you first; perhaps you may improve by their misfortunes.

‘In the next room to the man playing on the guitar, don’t you see a pale meagre face, grinding his teeth, and looking as if he intended to swallow the iron bars at his window? That is an honest fellow, born under so unlucky a planet, that with all the merit

‘merit in the world, and twenty years
endeavours, he has not been able to
secure himself bread. He ran mad
at seeing a little inconsiderable fellow
of his acquaintance mount, in one
day, to the top of fortune’s wheel,
by nothing but his knowledge of
arithmetic.

‘His neighbour is an old secretary,
whose noddle is cracked by the in-
gratitude of a courtier whom he had
served for sixty years. He is a ser-
vant whose zeal and fidelity can ne-
ver be sufficiently commended; for
he never asked any thing, but was sa-
tisfied with letting his care and ser-
vices speak for him. Yet his master,
very different from Archelaus, king
of Macedon, who denied favours
when asked, and bestowed them un-
asked, is dead without making him
any recompence; and left him but
just enough to pass his days here in
misery, and among madmen.

‘One more, and I have done. It
is he leaning with his elbows on the
window, buried in profound medi-
tation. In him you see a Signior
Hidalgo of Tafalla, a small town in
Navarre; he removed to Madrid,
and employed his money to a fine
purpose; for he was mad enough to
make an acquaintance with all the
beaux-esprits, and treat them every
day of his life. Every day was a
day of entertainment at his house;
and though the authors, an ungrate-
ful and churlish tribe, laughed at
him whilst they were eating him up;
yet he never would rest till he had
spent all his little fortune upon them.’

—‘No doubt,’ said Zambullo, ‘he is
run mad with vexation at having ru-
ined himself so foolishly.’—‘Quite
the contrary,’ replied Asmodeus; ‘it
is to see himself not in a condition
to continue the same life.’

‘Let us now come to the women.’
—‘How comes it,’ said the student,
‘that I see but seven or eight! there
are fewer women mad than I thought.’
‘All of them are not here,’ replied the
dæmon smiling; ‘but, in another part
of the city, there is a great house
quite full of them. I will carry you
thither this minute, if you please.’
‘That is needless,’ answered Don
Cleofas, ‘I will content myself with
what I see here.’—‘You are in the

right,’ replied the cripple, ‘for they
are almost all young ladies, and of dis-
tinction; and you may judge by the
neatness of their rooms, that they
cannot be ordinary women. But let
me inform you of the causes of their
distracted.

‘The first is a corregidor’s lady,
whose head was turned by the out-
rageous passion she fell into at being
called a citizen’s wife by a court-
lady. The second is wife to the
treasurer-general of the council of
the Indies; and she is run mad with
vexation at being obliged to turn
her coach in a narrow street, to make
way for that of the Duchess of Me-
dina Celi’s. The third is a mer-
chant’s widow, out of her wits with
spite for losing a great lord, whom
she hoped to marry. And the fourth
is a girl of quality, named Donna
Beatrix, whose misfortune I must
tell you.

‘This lady had a friend called Don-
na Mencia, whom she saw every day.
A knight of the order of St. Jago,
a well-made gallant young fellow,
became acquainted with them, and
soon made them rivals; for they both
vigorously disputed his heart: but
he declined to Donna Mencia’s side,
so she was in a short time married to
him.

‘Donna Beatrix, jealous of the pow-
er of her charms, conceived a mortal
spite at having the preference given a-
gainst her; and, like a right Spaniard,
entertained a violent desire of revenge,
when she received a letter from Don
Jacintho de Romarate, another lover
of Donna Mencia’s, wherein he tells
her, that being as much mortified at
his mistress’s wedding as she herself
was, he had resolved to fight the
cavalier who had robbed him of her.

‘This was a very agreeable letter
to Donna Beatrix; who, desiring only
the death of the offender, wished for
nothing more than that Don Jacintho
would take away his rival’s life;
but whilst she was impatiently wait-
ing for so christian-like a satisfaction,
it happened that her brother having
accidentally quarrelled with Don Ja-
cintho, they drew, and he received
two wounds of which he died. It
was Donna Beatrix’s duty to bring
the murderer to justice; which, how-
ever,

ever, she neglected, in order to give him time to attack the knight of St. Jagó: and this proves that a woman holds no consideration so dear as that of her beauty. And it was thus Pallas behaved to Ajax, after he had ravished Cassandra; for the goddess did not immediately punish the sacrilegious Greek, who had just been profaning her temple, but resolved he should contribute toward revenging her for the judgment of Paris. But, alas! Donna Beatrix, less fortunate than Minerva, did not taste the pleasure of being revenged; for Romarate perished in his rencounter with the knight, and the lady's chagrin, to see an affront which had been offered her go unpunished, has turned her brain,

The two following mad women, are an attorney's grandmother, and an old marchioness. The former having sufficiently plagued her grandson by her ill-nature, he has very fairly shut her up here, to rid his hands of her. The other is a lady who has all her life-time been worshipping her beauty. Instead of growing old with a good grace, she was perpetually bemoaning the ruin of her charms; and, at last, one day, happening to look into a glass that did not flatter, fell mad.

As for the old marchioness, said Leandro, 'I think it is a lucky accident; as her mind is disordered, perhaps she no longer finds that time has made any alteration in her person.'—'No, certainly,' replied the devil: 'far from seeing any thing like age in her face, her complexion seems to her a mixture of lilies and roses; the loves and graces appear at her side; and, in short, she thinks herself the goddess Venus.'—'Well then,' replied the student, 'is not she happier in her madness, than if she could see herself just as she really is?'—'Doubtless she is,' said Asmodeus; 'but hold! we have but one lady more; she is in the farthest room, who is just fallen into a deep sleep after three days and nights of raving. It is Donna Emerenciana. Examine her well; what say you to her?'—'I think her perfectly handsome,' answered Zambullo; 'what pity it is so charming a creature should be mad! By what acci-

dent has she been reduced to so deplorable a condition?'—'Listen attentively,' replied the cripple, 'and you shall hear the story of her misfortune.'

THE HISTORY OF DONNA EMERENCIANA.

DONNA Emerenciana was the only daughter of Don Guillem Stephani, and lived at ease at her father's house in Sigüenza, till Don Ximenes de Lizana broke in upon her quiet, by the gallantries he put in practice to please her. She was not only sensible of the cavalier's assiduities, but was so weak to help forward the stratagems he employed to get at the speech of her, and soon gave him her faith, and received his. These two lovers were of equal birth; but the lady might pass for one of the best fortunes in Spain, whereas Don Ximenes was no more than a younger brother. There was still another obstacle to their union: Don Guillem hated the family of Lizana; which he shewed but too plainly by his discourse, whenever that family was the subject of conversation. He seemed even to have a greater aversion for Don Ximenes than for the rest of his race. Emerenciana, extremely afflicted to see her father in such a disposition, took it as an ill omen to her love. However, she did not scruple to give a loose to her inclinations, and to converse privately with Lizana, who was introduced to her from time to time, at night, by the means of her woman. One of those nights it happened, that Don Guillem, who by chance waked just as the lover was coming in, thought he heard something in his daughter's apartment, which was not far from his own. There needed no more to make so distrustful a parent uneasy. However, as suspicious as he was, Emerenciana's conduct had been so artful, that he never suspected her correspondence with Don Ximenes. But not being one of that sort of men who carry their confidence too far, he got up very softly, went and opened a window that looked into the street, and had the patience to stay there, till he saw

K

Lizana

‘ Lizana go down by a rope-ladder into the street, and knew him by the light of the moon.

‘ What a sight was this for Stephani, the most revengeful and barbarous man that Sicily, the place of his birth, ever produced! He did not immediately yield to the dictates of his passion, but carefully avoided making a noise, which might have deprived him of the principal victim of his resentments. He put a constraint upon himself, and waited till his daughter was up the next day before he went into her apartment. There, finding himself alone with her, and looking at her with eyes sparkling with rage; “Wretch,” said he, “who, notwithstanding thy noble blood, art not ashamed to be guilty of the most infamous actions, prepare thyself to suffer the punishment thou hast deserved. This steel,” added he, drawing a poignard out of his bosom, “this steel shall rob thee of life, if thou dost not confess the truth. Tell me the name of that audacious villain who came hither last night to dishonour my house.”

‘ Emerenciana remained quite speechless, and so confounded at her father’s threats, that she could not bring out a word. “Ah, wretch!” continued her father, “thy silence and confusion shew me thy guilt but too plain. And dost thou imagine, daughter unworthy of me, that I am to learn what has passed? Last night I saw the audacious villain, it is Don Ximenes. It was not enough to admit a cavalier into thy apartment at night, but he must be my mortal enemy too. But come, let us know how far I am injured. Speak without disguise; for it is thy sincerity alone can preserve thy life.”

‘ The lady, at these words, entertaining hopes of escaping the dismal fate that threatened her, recovered in some measure from her fright, and answered Don Guillem thus: “My lord,” said she, “I could not help hearing Lizana, but Heaven is witness of the purity of his sentiments. As he knows you hate his family, he has not yet dared to ask your consent; and it was only to confer together about the means of obtain-

ing it, that I sometimes granted him admission.”—“And whom did you both make use of,” replied Stephani, “to convey your letters to each other?”—“One of your pages,” answered the lady, “did us that service.”—“That is all I would know,” replied the father: “now for my design.” Whereupon, with the dagger still in his hand, he made her take pen and ink, and write her lover this letter, which he dictated himself.

‘ **D**EAREST husband, only joy of my life, I am to tell you that my father is just gone into the country, from whence he returns to-morrow. Make use of the opportunity. I flatter myself that you will wait for night with as much impatience as myself.”

‘ When Emerenciana had written and sealed this perfidious billet, Don Guillem bid her call the page who had so well acquitted himself of the commission he had been charged with, and order him to carry that letter to Don Ximenes. “But do not hope to deceive me,” added he, “for I will lie concealed somewhere here, and observe thee narrowly when thou givest it to him; and if thou sayest a word to him, or givest him the least sign that may make him suspect the message. I will immediately plunge the dagger in thy heart.” Emerenciana knew her father’s temper too well to dare to disobey him. She gave the billet into the page’s hands, as usual.

‘ Stephani then put up the poignard, but did not leave his daughter one moment all the day; he would not let her speak to any body out of his sight, and managed so well, that Lizana could receive no information of the snare that was laid for him. The young gentleman was exact to the appointment. Scarce was he got within the doors, when he found himself immediately laid hold on by three lusty fellows, who disarmed him without giving him an opportunity of defending himself, gagged him for fear of his crying out, and tied his hands behind him. At the same instant, they put him in this condition into a coach that had been prepared

prepared for the purpose, and all three went into it, to make sure of the cavalier, whom they carried to Stephani's country-seat, situated at the village of Miédes, about four short leagues from Sigüenza. The moment after, Don Guillem set out in another coach with his daughter, two maids, and an old ill-natured duenna, whom he had hired that afternoon. He took with him the rest of his family, except an old domestic, who knew nothing of the carrying away of Lizana.

Before day-break they all arrived at Miédes. Stephani's first care was to see Don Ximenes secured in a dungeon, which let in a small glimmering by a hole too strait for a man to get through. He then ordered Julio, a servant privy to his designs, to give him no other nourishment than bread and water, nor any other bed than straw, and to say to him every time he carried him his allowance, "Here, base seducer, it is thus Don Guillem treats those that dare injure him." The cruel Sicilian used his daughter with no less severity; he shut her up in a room that had no window towards the fields, removed her woman, and gave her the duenna he had chosen for her gaoler; a duenna that could not be paralleled in the world for tormenting young ladies committed to her charge.

In this manner he disposed of the two lovers; but his intention was not to stop there. He had resolved to rid himself of Don Ximenes; but still he fain would have committed that crime with impunity, which however seemed pretty difficult to effect. As he made use of his own servants to carry off the cavalier, he could not hope that a fact, known to so many, could perpetually remain a secret. What then was to be done, to escape the pursuits of justice? He determined upon an expedient, which shewed him to be a compleat villain. He called together his accomplices into a small house separate from the castle. He told them how pleased he was with their zeal; and, in acknowledgment, promised them a large reward, after he had entertained them. He made them sit down

to table, and in the midst of the entertainment, Julio poisoned them by his order. Then the master and the man set fire to the house; and before the flames could bring in the inhabitants of the village about him, they assassinated Emerenciana's two maids, and the little page I mentioned before, and then threw their bodies to the rest. In a short time the house was all in flames and burnt to the ground, notwithstanding all the neighbouring peasants could do to extinguish it. All this while the Sicilian was to be seen shewing all the signs of a most immoderate grief. He appeared inconsolable at the loss of his servants.

Having in this manner made sure of the discretion of those in whose power it was to have betrayed him, he thus addressed himself to his confidant: "Dear Julio, now I am at rest; and may take away Don Ximenes's life whenever I please. But before I sacrifice him to my honour, I will enjoy the charming pleasure of seeing him suffer. The misery and horror of a long imprisonment will be more cruel to him than death." And, indeed, Lizana was continually bewailing his ill fortune, and being persuaded he should never get out of the dungeon, wished to be freed from his sufferings by a sudden death.

But it was in vain that Stephani hoped his mind would be at rest after such an exploit: in three days a fresh uneasiness came upon him. He was apprehensive that Julio, when he carried the prisoner his food, might be gained over by promises; and that fear made him determine to hasten the death of the one, and then to shoot the other. Julio, too, on his side, was not without his fears; and judging that his master, after ridding himself of Don Ximenes, might very probably sacrifice him to his own safety, formed the design of making his escape the first opportunity, with every thing in the house that could be carried off with the greatest ease.

These were the contrivances of those two good men, each unknown to the other, when they were one day both surprized about a hundred paces from the castle, by fifteen or

' twenty archers of the holy brother-
 ' hood, who surrounded them imme-
 ' diately, crying out, "By order of
 ' the king, and of justice." At this
 ' fight, Don Guillem turned pale, and
 ' was confounded. However, setting
 ' a good face upon the matter, he asked
 ' the commandant whom his business
 ' was with. "With yourself," an-
 ' swered the officer. "You are charged
 ' with carrying away Don Ximenes
 ' de Lizana. I am ordered to make
 ' a strict search for that gentleman
 ' all over your castle, and to secure
 ' your person." Stephani being con-
 ' vinced by this answer that he was
 ' undone, fell into a violent rage. He
 ' drew out a pair of pistols, insisted he
 ' would not suffer his house to be
 ' searched, and threatened to shoot the
 ' commandant, if he did not presently
 ' draw off with his men. The captain,
 ' despising his threats, advanced upon
 ' the Sicilian, who let off a pistol at
 ' him, and wounded him in the face.
 ' But that wound cost the rash man
 ' that gave it his life; for two or three
 ' archers fired upon him that instant,
 ' and, to revenge their officer, laid him
 ' dead upon the spot. As for Julio,
 ' he surrendered himself without any
 ' resistance, and did not give them the
 ' trouble of asking whether Don Xi-
 ' menes was in the castle, but con-
 ' fessed every thing: however, seeing
 ' his master lifeless, he threw all the
 ' villainy upon him.

' In short, he took the commandant
 ' and his archers to the dungeon, where
 ' they found Lizana fast bound, lying
 ' upon straw. The poor gentleman,
 ' who lived in continual expectation of
 ' death, thought that so many men in
 ' arms were not come thither upon any
 ' other design than to kill him: but
 ' was agreeably surprized to find that
 ' they whom he took for his execu-
 ' tioners, were his deliverers. When
 ' they had unbound and brought him
 ' out of the dungeon, he thanked them
 ' for his deliverance, and asked them
 ' how they came to know he was a pri-
 ' soner there. "That is," said the
 ' commandant, "what I am going to
 ' tell you in few words.

"The night you was carried off,"
 ' pursued he, "one of those concerned
 ' in it, who had a mistress that lived
 ' a few doors from Stephani, going
 ' to take his leave of her before he

"set out, was so indiscreet as to dis-
 "cover Stephani's project to her. The
 "woman kept it secret for two or
 "three days; but as the report of the
 "fire at Miédes began to spread all
 "over Sigüenza, and as it seemed
 "strange to every body, that the Si-
 "cilian's servants should all perish in
 "it, she bethought herself that it
 "might be the handy work of Don
 "Guillem. So, to revenge her lo-
 "ver, she went to Don Felix, your fa-
 "ther, and told him all she knew.
 "Don Felix, frightened to see you at
 "the mercy of a man capable of any
 "thing, carried the woman before the
 "corregidor; who, having examined
 "her, did not doubt but Stephani in-
 "tended you should suffer the longest
 "and most cruel torments, and that
 "he was the horrid contriver of the
 "fire; and, resolving to go to the
 "bottom of the affair, sent me an or-
 "der to Retortillo, where I live, to
 "mount and hasten hither with my
 "brigade, in order to search for you,
 "and bring Don Guillem alive or
 "dead. I performed my commission,
 "in what relates to you, with suc-
 "cess; but am very sorry it is out of
 "my power to carry the criminal to
 "Sigüenza alive. He put us under
 "a necessity of killing him by the re-
 "sistance he made."

' The officer, having ended his story
 ' thus, said to Don Ximenes, "Sig-
 ' nior Cavalier, I am going to draw
 ' up informations of all that has hap-
 ' pened here; after which we will set
 ' out in order to comply with the im-
 ' patience you must be in of ridding
 ' your family of the uneasiness they
 ' feel upon your account."—"Sir,"
 ' cried Julio, "I will furnish you
 ' with fresh matter, to enlarge your
 ' information. You have still an-
 ' other prisoner to set at liberty.
 "Donna Emerenciana is shut up in a
 "dark room, where a merciless duenna
 "is continually mortifying her, and
 "never allows her a moment's rest."
 —"O Heaven," cried Lizana, "the
 "cruel Stephani then was not satis-
 "fied with exercising his barbarity
 "upon me only! let us go this mo-
 "ment, and deliver that unhappy lady
 "from the tyranny of her govern-
 "ante."

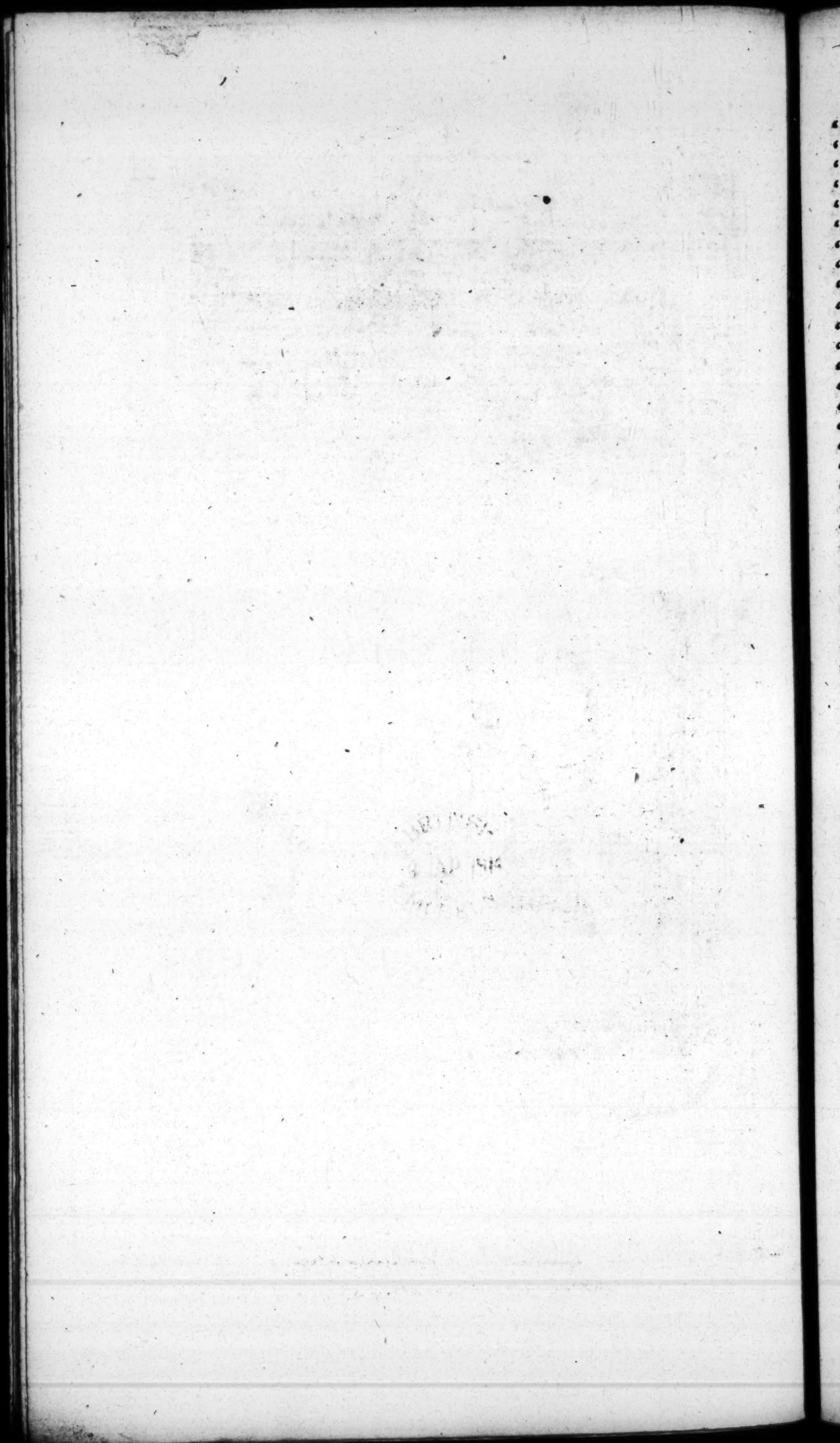
' Thereupon Julio carried the com-
 ' mandant and Don Ximenes, with five

or



Plate IV.

Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. Aug; 12th 1780.



or six archers, to the chamber which served Don Guillem's daughter for a prison. They knocked at the door, and the duenna came and opened it. You may easily guess the pleasure that Lizana felt at the sight of his mistress, after he had despaired of ever possessing her. He perceived his hope return, or rather he could not doubt of his happiness, since the only person that could pretend to oppose it was dead. As soon as he saw Emerenciana, he ran and threw himself at her feet; but who can express his concern, when, instead of meeting with a mistress ready to receive his transports, he found nobody but a lady bereft of her understanding! In effect, she had been so tormented by the duenna, that she was run mad. She continued some time in deep thought, then on a sudden, imagining she was the fair Angelica, besieged by the Tartars in the fortress of Albraca, she considered all the men that were in her room as so many Paladins come to her assistance. She took the captain of the holy brotherhood for Orlando, Lizana for Brandismart, Julio for Hubert of the Lion, and the archers for Antifort, Clarion, Adrian, and the two sons of the Marquis Oliver. She received them with great politeness, saying, "Brave knights, I no longer fear the Emperor Agrican, nor Queen Marphisa: your valour is able to defend me against all the force of the universe."

At this extravagant discourse, the officer and archers could not help laughing. But it was far otherwise with Don Ximenes; who, sensibly afflicted to see his mistress in so sad a condition for his sake, was, in his turn, near losing his senses. However, he still flattered himself she might be brought to herself; and in this hope, "My dear Emerenciana," said he, with a tender air, "see here your Lizana. Recollect your wandering thoughts. Know, that our misfortunes are at an end. Heaven would not suffer two hearts it had joined, to be separated: and the inhuman parent who has used us so ill, can now no longer cross our designs."

The daughter of King Galafron's answer to this, was a discourse ad-

dressed to the valiant defenders of Albraca, who for once forbore laughter. The commandant himself, though naturally very far from being tender-hearted, felt some touches of compassion, and said to Don Ximenes, whom he saw borne down by his grief, "Signior Cavalier, do not despair of your mistress's recovery. You have physicians at Siguenca, who, by their skill, may accomplish it. But let us not stay here any longer. — You, Lord Hubert of the Lion," added he, speaking to Julio, "you know where the stables of the castle are, take with you Antifort, and the two sons of the Marquis Oliver. Choose the best steeds there, and put them into the princess's chariot. In the mean time, I will draw up my informations."

Upon this, he took out of his pocket an ink-horn and paper, and having written what he thought proper, presented his hand to Angelica to help her to go down into the courtyard; where, by the care of the Paladins, they found a coach with four mules ready to set out. He put the lady and Don Ximenes into it, and then went in himself; he took the duenna with him too, whose deposition he thought the corregidor would be glad of. That was not all; by the captain of the brigade's order, Julio was loaded with irons, and put into another coach with Don Guillem's corse. The archers then remounted their horses, and they all set out for Siguenca.

During their journey, Stephani's daughter said a thousand extravagant things, which were so many daggers to her lover. He could not look on the duenna without falling into a passion. "It is you, cruel old hag," said he, "it is you that have harassed Emerenciana by your cruel treatment, and turned her brain." The governante excused herself with an hypocritical air, and threw all the blame on the deceased. "It is to Don Guillem only," answered she, "that this misfortune is owing. That too severe parent came every day, and terrified his daughter with his menaces, which at last made her run mad."

As soon as the commandant arrived at Siguenca, he went and gave
an

an account of his commission to the corregidor, who upon the spot interrogated Julio and the duenna, and sent them to prisons in the city, where they still remain. He also examined Lizana, who then took his leave, and went home to his father's, where he turned their sorrow and uneasiness into joy. As for Donna Emerenciana, the corregidor took care to send her to Madrid, where she had an uncle by her mother's side. This good relation, who only wanted to have the administration of his niece's estate, could not handsomely avoid appearing to desire her recovery, and applied to the most celebrated physicians: nor had he any occasion to repent it; for, after all their pains had been thrown away, they pronounced her incurable. Upon this decision, the guardian immediately shut up his charge here; where, according to all probability, she will spend the rest of her days.

'Cruel destiny!' cried Don Cleofas; 'I am heartily concerned for her; Donna Emerenciana deserved a better fate. And what is become of Don Ximenes?' continued he; 'I should be glad to know what resolution he has taken.'—'A very reasonable one,' replied Asmodeus. 'When he saw the evil was without remedy, he set out for New Spain: he hopes his travels will by degrees wear out of his mind the remembrance of a lady whom his reason and repose require he should forget. But,' pursued the devil, 'having shewn you the confined mad folks, I must let you see those who deserve to be so.'

CHAP. X.

THE MATTER OF WHICH IS INEXHAUSTIBLE.

LET us turn our eyes towards the city, and as I discover any subjects which deserve to be placed amongst those that are here, I will give you their respective characters. I see one already which I will not suffer to escape. It is a new-married man, who eight days since was told of the coquetting tricks of

a jilt that he loved; enraged he goes to her, breaks one part of her furniture, throws another out at the window, and the next day marries her.—'Such a man as this,' said Don Cleofas, 'certainly deserves the first vacancy in this house.'—'He has a neighbour not much wiser than himself,' replied Asmodeus; 'it is a batchelor of forty-five, who has sufficient to live on, and yet would enter himself in a nobleman's service. I see a lawyer's widow, a good woman who is above sixty; her husband is just dead, and she is going to retire into a nunnery to secure her reputation, as she says, from scandal.'

'I discern a couple of virgins of above fifty, each making vows to Heaven to take their father, who keeps them as close locked up as though they were under age. They hope, after the old gentleman's death, they shall find handsome men that will marry them for love.'—'And why not?' said the student: 'there are men in the world of as whimsical a taste as that.'—'I grant it,' replied the devil, 'it is not impossible they should find husbands, but they ought not to flatter themselves with such hopes; it is therein consists their folly.'

'There is no country in the world where the women tell their age truly. About a month since, a maid of forty-eight, and a wife of sixty-nine, went before a commissary to testify for a widow of their acquaintance, whose virtue was questioned. The commissary first interrogated the married woman on her age; and though it was as plainly expressed in her forehead as in the church-register, she yet boldly ventured to say she was but forty. He next interrogated the maiden. "And you, Madam," said he, "how old are you?"—"Let us pass on to the other questions, Sir," answered she, "for this is an improper one to put to us."—"You do not consider what you say, Madam," replied the commissary; "do you not know that in judicial cases the truth ought always to be told?"—"No law obliges us to it," answered the maiden hastily. "But then I cannot take your deposition," said he,

“he, “if your age be not to it, for
“it is a material circumstance.”—“If
“it is absolutely necessary,” replied
“she, “look upon me intently, and
“put my age down according to your
“conscience.”

“The commissary looked in her face;
“and was polite enough to set her
“down twenty-eight. He then asked
“whether she had long known the
“widow. “I knew her before her
“marriage,” said she. “Then I have
“mistaken your age,” replied he, “in
“setting you down but twenty-eight,
“for it is twenty-nine years since the
“widow was married.”—“Well;
“Sir,” returned the maiden, “write
“me down thirty then; I might at a
“year old know the widow.”—“That
“will not be regular,” replied he,
“let us add a dozen.”—“No, in-
“deed,” interrupted she; “all that I
“can possibly afford to add is one year,
“and I would not put a month more
“if it were to save my reputation.”

“When these two ladies were gone
“from the commissary’s, the married
“woman said to the other, “I won-
“der that impertinent fellow should
“take us for such fools as to tell our
“ages truly! It is not enough, indeed,
“that they are registered in the parish-
“books, but the rude fellow would
“have them upon his papers, that all
“the world may know them! Would
“it not be fine to hear it bawled out
“in court, “Mrs. Richards aged so
“many years, and Mrs. Perinelle aged
“forty-five years, depose so and so?”
“Well, I bantered him sufficiently, I
“sunk a good round twenty years
“upon him, and you have done very
“well in suppressing so many.”—
“What do you call so many?” an-
“swered the maiden, very smartly:
“you rally me; I am at most but five
“and thirty.”—“Hah!” replied the
“other, with an angry air, “whom
“do you tell so? I saw you born. It
“is a long time since, indeed. I re-
“member to have seen your father;
“when he died he was not young,
“and it is now above forty years.”
—“Oh, my father, my father!” ha-
“stily interrupted the virgin, enraged
“at the other’s freedom; “betwixt
“you and I, when my father married
“my mother, he was so old, he was
“not able to get children.”

“I observe in the same house,” con-

tinued the spirit, “two men who are
“not over wise: one is the only son of
“the family, who can neither keep
“any money, nor be without it.
“When he is flush of money, he buys
“books; and when it begins to be
“low with him, he sells them for half
“what they cost him. The other is a
“foreign painter, who draws women’s
“pictures; he is a great artist, he paints
“well, draws correctly, and hits a
“likeness extraordinary well, but does
“not flatter; and yet is so vain as to
“think he should be crowded with bu-
“siness. *Inter fultos referatur.*”

“How!” said the student, “you speak
“Latin to a miracle!”—“Ought you
“to wonder at that?” said the devil;
“I speak all languages in perfection;
“even not excepting that of Athens,
“which I speak a hundred times bet-
“ter than a certain set of men who at
“present value themselves on speaking
“well, and yet I am neither the greater
“fool, nor the vainer for it.

“Cast your eye into that great house
“on the left-hand, on a sick lady,
“surrounded by several women who
“watch with her. It is the widow of
“a famous rich architect, who is over-
“run with an affectation of nobility;
“she has this day made her will, by
“which she bequeaths her immense
“riches wholly to persons of the first
“quality; not that she so much as
“knows any one of them, but only for
“the sake of their great titles. She
“was asked whether she would not
“leave something to a certain person
“who had done her considerable ser-
“vices: “Alas, no,” answered she,
“and I am concerned at it: I am not
“so ungrateful as not to own that I
“have obligations to him; but he is
“but a yeoman, and his name would
“disgrace my will.”

“Signior Asmodeus,” interrupted
Don Cleofas, “I beg you would in-
“form me whether that old man, whom
“I see reading so hard in a closet, may
“not perhaps deserve to be placed here?”
—“He deserves it beyond dispute,” an-
“swered the dæmon. “He is an old li-
“centiado in divinity, and is reading
“a proof of a book he has at the press.”
—“The subject must certainly be mo-
“ral or divine,” said the student. “No,”
replied the devil, “it is a miscellany
“of lewd poems which he has written;
“instead of burning them, or at least
“suffering

‘suffering them to die with their author, he prints them in his life-time, for fear his heirs should not be inclined to publish them after his death, or out of regard to his character should deprive them of all their salt and spirit.’

‘I should do wrong to pass by a little woman who lives with the licentiate. She is so much possessed with her very small merit, that she is drawing up a list of her lovers, in which she inserts all men in general who ever spoke to her.’

‘But let us come to a rich canon that I discern about two paces farther, tainted with a very particular folly. He lives frugally, though it is neither for mortification, nor sobriety; but to amass riches. For what! To distribute in alms? No. He buys pictures, rich furniture, jewels, china, and baubles: not to enjoy the use of them during his life, but only to make a figure in his inventory.’

‘What you tell me is unnatural and forced,’ interrupted Don Cleofas. ‘Is there really a man in the world of this character?’—‘Yes, I tell you,’ replied the devil, ‘he is one of that sort of madmen. Does he, for instance, buy a very fine cabinet; he causes it to be packed up neatly, and locked up in his garret, that it may appear perfectly new to the brokers who are to buy it after his death. In short, he pleases himself with the thoughts that the inventory of his goods will be admired.’

‘Let us proceed to one of his neighbours, whom you will think full as mad; he is a bachelor, and lately arrived at Madrid from the Philippine islands with a vast estate, left him by his father, who was auditor of the court of Manilla. His conduct is very extraordinary; for he is to be seen passing the whole day in the anti-chamber of the king, and of the chief minister. Not that he has the ambition to solicit any great post; no, he neither desires nor asks any. How then! say you, does he go thither purely to make his court? You are farther off still: he never speaks to the minister, neither is he known to him, nor desires to be so.’—‘What then can his motive be?’—

‘Why this: he would persuade the world he has an interest there.’

‘A very diverting original,’ cried the student, bursting into a laugh! ‘but this is giving one’s self a great deal of trouble to very little purpose; and I think you are in the right to rank him amongst such mad people as ought to be confined.’—‘Oh!’ as to that,’ replied Asmodeus, ‘I shall shew you a great many more whom it would be wrong to think a whit more in their senses. For example, do but look into that great house where you see so many wax tapers lighted up, and three men and two ladies round the table. Now these people have just supped, and are at present sat down to cards in order to spend the rest of the night, after which they will part: and this is the life these gentlemen and ladies lead. They meet regularly every night, and part at day-break to go to sleep, till darkness has banished the light of the sun, and of the beauties of nature. Would you not say, to see them in the midst of so many candles, that they are so many dead people waiting for the last office being done them?’—‘Well then,’ said Don Cleofas, ‘there is no occasion for shutting up these fools, they are shut up already.’

‘I see in the arms of sleep,’ replied the cripple, ‘a man whom I love, and who has a particular affection for me; a man moulded according to my heart’s desire. He is an old graduate, who idolizes the fair-sex. You cannot mention a pretty girl to him, but you find he listens to you with an extraordinary pleasure. If you tell him she has a small mouth, red lips, ivory teeth, or a complexion of alabaster: in a word, if you are the least particular in your description, he sighs at every feature, turns up his eyes, and dissolves in raptures. It is but two days since, passing by a shoe-maker’s shop in Alcala Street, he stopped short to admire a very small woman’s slipper he saw there; and having surveyed it with much more attention than it deserved,’ he said, with a dying air, to a gentleman that was with him, ‘Ab, my dear friend, there is a slipper that enchants me! What a charming

“ charming pretty foot that must be,
 “ that it was made for ! But let us be
 “ gone, for I am too much pleased
 “ with it, and it is dangerous to go
 “ through this street.”

“ We must mark this graduate with
 “ black,” said Leandro Perez. “ Right,”
 replied the devil, “ we must so ; nor
 “ must his next neighbour be marked
 “ with white : an original of an au-
 “ ditor ; who, because he has an equi-
 “ page, blushes with shame whenever
 “ he is obliged to make use of a hack-
 “ ney-coach. And I think we may
 “ place in the same rank one of his
 “ relations, a licenciado ; who, though
 “ he has a dignity of a vast revenue
 “ in a church at Madrid, yet almost
 “ perpetually goes in a hackney-coach
 “ to save two very neat ones, and four
 “ fine mules of his own that he has in
 “ the stable.

“ In the neighbourhood of the wor-
 “ thy graduate and auditor, I perceive
 “ a man who must not be denied the
 “ justice of being placed amongst the
 “ mad folks ; a cavalier of sixty mak-
 “ ing love to a young creature. He
 “ sees her every day, and thinks to be
 “ agreeable to her, by entertaining her
 “ with the conquests he made in his
 “ younger days, and would have her
 “ esteem him for his having been for-
 “ merly handsome.

“ In the same number with this ge-
 “ tleman, let us place another. Who
 “ is asleep about ten paces from us,
 “ a French count, who is come to Ma-
 “ drid to see the Spanish court. This
 “ old nobleman is upwards of seventy,
 “ and in his youth made a figure at
 “ the court of his own king. All the
 “ world at that time admired his shape
 “ and gallant air, but his taste and
 “ manner of dress charmed every body.
 “ Now this gentleman has preserved all
 “ his cloaths, and worn them these fifty
 “ years in spite of the mode, which in
 “ his country changes every day. But
 “ the most diverting circumstance is,
 “ that he imagines he has the same
 “ graces at this day which were admir-
 “ ed in him in his youth.”

“ We need not consider upon this
 “ matter,” said Don Cleofas ; “ let this
 “ French lord go into the number of
 “ those that ought to be boarders at
 “ the *casa de los locos*.—“ I keep a
 “ room there,” replied the dæmon,
 “ for a lady that lives in a garret on

“ one side the count’s palace. She is
 “ an elderly widow, who out of excess
 “ of tenderness to her children, has
 “ made over all her estate to them, ex-
 “ cepting a very small allowance to
 “ subsist on, which her children are
 “ obliged to make her, and which out
 “ of gratitude they take great care
 “ not to pay.

“ I must likewise send thither an old
 “ batchelor of a good family, who no
 “ sooner has a ducat in his pocket than
 “ it is gone ; and yet, not being able
 “ to support the want of money, will
 “ do any thing to come at it. About
 “ a fortnight ago his laundress, to
 “ whom he owed thirty pistoles, came
 “ and desired he would pay her, telling
 “ him she wanted it in order to be
 “ married to a valet de-chambre, who
 “ courted her. “ Thou must have
 “ more money then,” said he ; “ for
 “ what devil of a valet de chambre
 “ would have thee for fifty pistoles ?”
 —“ O dear ! yes, Sir !” said she, “ I
 “ have two hundred ducats besides.”—
 “ Two hundred ducats !” said he,
 “ eagerly. “ Gadso ! thou hast no-
 “ thing to do, but to give them to me,
 “ and I will marry thee, and so we
 “ are even.” His laundress took him
 “ at his word, and is now his wife.

“ Let us keep three places for those
 “ three men just come from supper in
 “ the city, who are now stepping into
 “ that house on the right, where they
 “ live. One of them is a count, who
 “ sets up for a lover of polite learning.
 “ The other is his brother, a licenci-
 “ ado ; and the third is a wit that hangs
 “ on them. They are always insepa-
 “ rable, and never visit asunder. The
 “ count’s sole business is to praise him-
 “ self ; that of the licenciado, to praise
 “ his elder brother and himself : but
 “ the wit’s business is of a larger ex-
 “ tent, he praises both of them, inter-
 “ mixing his own commendations with
 “ theirs.

“ Two more places must be kept ; one
 “ for an old citizen, a great florist, who
 “ having scarce enough to subsist on,
 “ is for keeping a gardener and his
 “ wife to look after a dozen of flowers
 “ in his garden. The other is an ac-
 “ tor, who complaining of the disad-
 “ vantages incident to that way of life,
 “ said the other day to some of his
 “ companions, “ Indeed, gentlemen, I
 “ am very much tired with this pro-

"fession; nay, I would even rather be an inconsiderable country-gentleman of a thousand ducats a year."

'Let me turn on which side I will,' continued the spirit, 'I meet with nothing but people disordered in their senses. There is a knight of Calatrava, so proud and vain of private conversations with the daughter of a grandee, that he thinks himself upon a footing with the most considerable persons at court. He is like Villius, who fancied himself Sylla's son in-law, because he was well with the dictator's daughter. The comparison is the more pat, as this knight, like the Roman, has a Longareus, a good for nothing fellow of a rival, that is more in her good graces than himself.'

'One would be apt to say that the same men from time to time spring up again, only with different features. For in that minister's secretary one may discover Bolanus, who kept no measures with any body, and affronted every man whose countenance did not please him. In that old president one sees Fusidius over again, who used to lend his money at five per cent. per month. And Marsæus, who gave his family-seat to the comedian Origo, lives again in that heir of the family, who is wasting in debauchery the money he received for a country-house he has near the Escorial, with an actress.'

Asmodeus was going on; when on a sudden he heard the tuning of instruments: upon which he broke off, and said to Don Cleofas, 'At the corner of this street there are some musicians going to serenade the daughter of an Alcalde of the court; and if you have a mind to be nearer the diversion, you need only speak.'—'I love these concerts mightily,' answered Zambullo; 'let us go nearer the music, perhaps there may be voices amongst them.' He had scarce spoken, when he found himself upon the house adjoining to that of the Alcalde.

The instruments began the concert with several Italian airs, after which two voices sung the following couplets alternately.

FIRST COUPLET.

*Si de tu ber mofura quieres
Una copia con mil gracias:
Escucha, porque pretendo
El pintar la.*

SECOND COUPLET.

*Es tu frente toda nieve
Y el albañtro; batallas
Ofrecid al amor, baxiéndolo
En ella vaya.*

THIRD COUPLET.

*Amor labró de tus cejas
Dos arcos para su Aljava
Y debaxo ha descubierto
Quien le mata.*

FOURTH COUPLET.

*Eres duena de el lugar,
Vandolera de las almas,
Iman de los alvedrios,
Linda albaja.*

FIFTH COUPLET.

*Un rasgo de tu hermosura
Quisiera yo retratar la,
Que es estrella, es cielo; es sol;
No es fino el alva.*

FIRST COUPLET.

Would you see a copy of those charms, and that beauty of yours; listen, for I am going to paint them.

SECOND COUPLET.

Your face is all of snow and alabaster; it has defied love, who laughed at it.

THIRD COUPLET.

Love has made of your eye-brows two bows for his quiver; but he has discovered below them, who it is that wounds him.

FOURTH COUPLET.

You are the sovereign of this place, the stealer of hearts, the diamond of desires, a fine jewel.

FIFTH COUPLET.

I would fain, with one stroke, describe your beauty. It is a star, a heaven, a sun: no, it is nothing but the morning.

'These couplets are gallant and delicate,' said the student. 'That is because you are a Spaniard,' said the dæmon; 'were they translated into French,

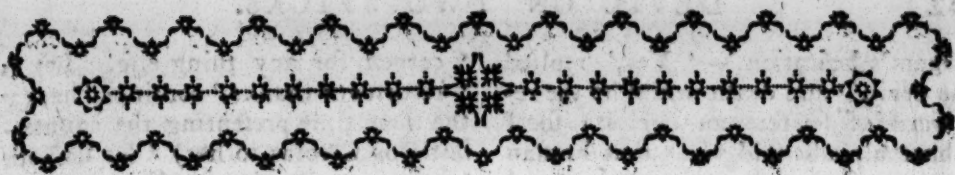
‘ French, they would not be much admired. Readers of that nation would not like the figurative expressions, but would discover in them a whimsical imagination that would set them a laughing. Every nation is prepossessed in favour of its own taste and genius. But let us have done with those couplets,’ continued he, ‘ for you are going to hear another kind of music.’

‘ Follow with your eye those four men that on a sudden appear in the street; see, they fall upon the serenaders, who make use of their instruments to defend themselves; but they, not being able to withstand the force of the blows, fly into a thousand shivers. And now two gentlemen come to their assistance, one of which gave the serenade. See with what fury they charge the aggressors, who being of equal courage and address, receive them with a good grace. What a fire flashes from their swords! See, one of the defenders of the concert falls; and it is he that gave it. He is mortally wounded. His companion, who perceives it, takes to his heels; the aggressors too make off, and the music disappears. Only the poor unfortunate cavalier, whose serenade cost him his life, remains there on the spot. Observe at the same time the Alcalde’s daughter, who from her window is observing every thing that has passed; and is so proud and vain of her beauty, though a very

ordinary creature, that instead of being sorry for the sad effects of it, the cruel wretch applauds herself for it, and thinks herself more handsome upon that account.

‘ But that is not all,’ added he; ‘ you see another gentleman, who coming up to him that lies wallowing in his own blood, endeavours if possible to help him; but while he is employed in so charitable an office, you see he is seized by the watch that come in upon him, and is dragged to prison, where he will remain a long time, nor will it cost him less than if he had been really the murderer.’

‘ Good God!’ exclaimed Zambullo, ‘ how many misfortunes have happened to-night!’—‘ Yes,’ replied the devil, ‘ and yet that will not be the last. At this moment, if you were at the gate of the sun, you would be startled at a sight that will soon present itself. By the carelessness of a servant, the fire has taken hold of a great house, and already reduced a great many valuable things to ashes. But whatever valuable effects it may consume, Don Pedro de Escolano, whose unfortunate house it is, will not regret the loss of them, if he can save his only daughter Seraphina, who is in danger of being burnt.’ Don Cleofas desiring to be an eye witness of the fire, the cripple that instant flew with him to a large house directly over-against that where the fire was.



THE
DEVIL
UPON
TWO STICKS.
VOLUME THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

OF THE FIRE; AND WHAT ASMODEUS DID ON THAT OCCASION, OUT OF FRIENDSHIP TO DON CLEOFAS.



Immediately they heard a confused noise of people crying out fire, and calling for water. Presently they saw the great stair-case, leading to the best apartment of Don Pedro's house, all on fire; and, in a minute, clouds of flames and smoke issuing out at the windows.

'The fire rages,' said the dæmon; 'it is already mounted to the roof, and begins to make it's way out by it, and fill the air with sparks; and is got to such a height, that though the people flock from all parts to extinguish it, they can do no more than stand by as spectators. You may distinguish from amongst the crowd an old gentleman in a night-gown, he is the Signior de Escolano. How he cries and takes on! he is addressing himself to the people that are about him, and conjuring them to go fetch out his daughter; but the great reward he promises them is to no purpose, for nobody will expose his own life for that lady, who is a perfect beauty, and but sixteen years of age.

'He tears his hair and mustachios, seeing his prayers and intreaties for assistance are in vain; he beats his breast, and out of excess of grief behaves like a madman. On the other side, Seraphina, in her apartment, deserted by her women, is swooned away with the fright, and will, in a little time, be stifled by the thick smoke, for no mortal man has it in his power to help her.'

'Ah, Signior Asmodeus,' cried Leandro Perez, moved by a generous compassion, 'yield, I beg you, to the emotions of pity which I feel, and do not reject the intreaties I make you to rescue this lady from impending death. It is the only recompence I ask for the service I have done you. Do not oppose my desires as you did just now, for I shall die with grief if you refuse me.'

The devil smiled to hear the student talk thus: 'Signior Zambullo,' said he, 'you have all the qualifications of a true knight-errant; you have bravery, a compassion for the sufferings of others, and a great readiness to serve the ladies; have not you a mind to throw yourself into the midst of those flames, like an Amadis, in order to deliver Seraphina, and restore her safe and sound to her father?'—'Would to Heaven the thing were possible!' answered Don Cleofas, 'I would undertake it without a moment's

'ment's hesitation.'—'Yes,' replied the devil, 'and death would be the reward of so fine an exploit: for I have already told you, that human valour can be of no service here, and it must be myself that undertakes the affair to oblige you; pray see how I go about it, and observe all my operations.'

These words were hardly out of his mouth, when putting on the likeness of Leandro Perez, to the student's great amazement, he slipped among the crowd, pressed through, and darted into the midst of the flames as into his proper element, in the sight of the spectators, who were terrified at the action, and shewed their dislike of it by a great shriek. 'What madman is this?' said one; 'how can interest have blinded him so far! Were he not entirely bereft of his senses, the promised reward would have been no temptation for him.'—'This rash young fellow,' said another, 'must certainly be a lover of Don Pedro's daughter; who, pushed on by excessive grief, must have resolved to rescue his mistress, or die in the attempt.'

In short, they gave him up to Empedocles's fate*; when, in a moment, they saw him break through the flames with Seraphina in his arms. The air rang with acclamations of the people, who could not sufficiently praise the brave cavalier, that had performed so fine an action: for when rashness is crowned with success, it finds none to blame it; and though it was a prodigy, it appeared as the bare consequence of Spanish courage.

As the lady was still in her swoon, her father did not dare to give himself up to joy; but was afraid that, after being so happily rescued from the flames, she might die in his sight, by the terrible impressions which the danger she had run must have made on her brain. But he was soon put out of his fears; for she came to herself by the care that was taken of her; and casting her eyes on the old gentleman with an air of tenderness, 'Sir,' said she, 'I should be more afflicted than rejoiced to find my life preserved, if yours was not so too.'—'Ah! my dear child,' answered he, embracing her, 'since you are safe, I am not con-

cerned for any thing else. Let us return our thanks,' continued he, (at the same time presenting the counterfeit Don Cleofas to her) 'let us both return our thanks to this young gentleman our deliverer; it is to him you owe your life. We cannot be grateful enough to him; nor is the promised reward sufficient to bring us out of his debt.'

Here the devil took up the discourse, and very gallantly said to Don Pedro, 'My lord, the reward you proposed had no share in the service which I have had the happiness to do you. I am a gentleman, and a Castilian; the pleasure of drying up your tears, and of preserving from the flames the charming object they were going to consume, is more than a sufficient recompence for me.'

The disinterestedness and generosity of their deliverer, inspired the Signior de Escolano with a vast esteem for him: he invited him to come and see him, and desired his friendship in return for his own, which he offered him; and then, after a great many compliments on both sides, the old gentleman and his daughter retired to a little apartment they had at the end of the garden. After this, the devil went back to the student; who, seeing him return in his first form, said, 'Sir Dæmon, either my eyes deceive me, or you were just now in my likeness.'—'Yes,' 'Sir,' said the cripple, 'I was; and hope you will pardon me for it, when I acquaint you with the reasons for that metamorphosis. I have formed a great design: for I intend you shall marry Seraphina; and under your features, have inspired her with a violent passion for your lordship. Don Pedro, too, is very well pleased with you, because I told him very gallantly, that my only view in rescuing his daughter, was the pleasure of obliging them both; and that the honour of happily putting an end to so dangerous an affair, was recompence enough for a gentleman and Spaniard. The good man, who has a great soul, will not be out-done in generosity; and, I must tell you, is this moment considering whether he shall not make you his son-in-law, that his gratitude may keep pace with

* A poet and philosopher of Sicily, who threw himself into the flames of Mount *Ætna*.
the

‘ the obligation he thinks he has to
‘ you.

‘ Whilst he is determining, I will
‘ carry you to another place, and di-
‘ vert you with different objects.

CHAP. II.

THE LOVERS.

‘ I Must confess,’ says Cleofas, ‘ the
‘ observations you have made are
‘ very instructive, but tend to things
‘ for which a man of my age and com-
‘ plexion has but little relish. You
‘ are to remember it was a love-ad-
‘ venture brought me into the honour
‘ of your conversation; and, dear
‘ Cupid, since you preside over that
‘ passion, confine your discourse to
‘ what you are master of. Shew me
‘ then the joys and anxieties, the poli-
‘ ticks and follies of lovers, if you
‘ would improve me in a real useful
‘ knowledge.’—‘ I should be shy,’ said
‘ the dæmon, ‘ of giving you that infor-
‘ mation for fear of losing a votary,
‘ did not I know it is an inseparable
‘ quality in lovers, to see and yet in-
‘ dulse their misery and weakness;
‘ for which reason I am under no ap-
‘ prehension of your growing wiser
‘ from the folly of others.’—‘ But
‘ pr’ythee,’ quoth the student, ‘ before
‘ you go any farther, let me know what
‘ that gentleman is, who is striking fire
‘ at his tinder-box: do you observe
‘ yonder, how he appears and vanishes
‘ as the sparks fly about him?’—‘ That
‘ vigilant person,’ replied Asmodeus,
‘ is a lover, who has been this even-
‘ ing in his mistress’s company. She,
‘ in her discourse on different things,
‘ began two or three censures with an
‘ accustomed phrase of her’s, *There*
‘ *are some people in the world.* This
‘ he took no notice of at the time she
‘ spoke it; but upon second thoughts,
‘ in his own lodgings, very wisely
‘ discovered that she meant him by
‘ that ambiguous expression. After
‘ taking several turns in his chamber,
‘ he called for pen, ink, and paper,
‘ kicked his footman down stairs, and
‘ resolved to tell his mistress plainly,
‘ he knew whom she aimed at in her
‘ late reflections. He had not gone
‘ through the first line of his letter,
‘ before he was interrupted by a sud-

‘ den thought which set all things
‘ right again; convinced him that his
‘ suspicions were groundless, and that
‘ he was still in her good graces. He
‘ immediately grew the most satisfied
‘ man in the world, went to bed in
‘ the height of good humour, gave his
‘ man a crown, and bid him good night.’

—‘ What disaster,’ said Cleofas, ‘ can
‘ have befallen him since? he seems
‘ to blow his tinder in an unusual
‘ hurry; how his cheeks swell, and
‘ his eyes glare! it is the most dread-
‘ ful night-piece I ever saw.’—‘ You
‘ must know,’ says the dæmon, ‘ he
‘ had composed himself with great
‘ tranquillity for half an hour, and
‘ was just falling asleep, when he start-
‘ led on a sudden, and bethought him-
‘ self, *if she did not mean him, who could*
‘ *she mean.* This threw him into so
‘ great a ferment, that he jumped out
‘ of his bed, with a resolution to do
‘ something which yet neither he nor I
‘ know any thing of.’—‘ I heartily
‘ pity the poor fellow,’ said Cleofas,
‘ for I find he loves in earnest.’—
‘ Had he not,’ replied the dæmon,
‘ she had been his own before now;
‘ but it is the frailty of that weak sex
‘ to prefer an affected passion to a real
‘ one.’—‘ That is a frailty,’ says the
‘ student, ‘ into which they may natu-
‘ rally fall. A personated lover can
‘ assume all the graces, and avoid all
‘ the imperfections of the passion.
‘ Disquietudes, jealousies, and expostu-
‘ lations, always accompany, but
‘ very ill recommend, a heart tho-
‘ roughly enamoured. But look, the
‘ man has lighted his candle, and
‘ blown it out again.’—‘ Aye,’ says
‘ the dæmon, ‘ he was quieted the very
‘ moment he had lighted it, by call-
‘ ing to mind that he had one day
‘ heard his mistress say, nothing was
‘ so graceful in a man as an high
‘ forehead, which you may observe he
‘ has, to the apparent detriment of his
‘ chin, cheeks, and eyes.’—‘ On how
‘ slight a foundation is raised the good
‘ and evil of lovers!’ cried Cleofas.
‘ Perhaps she who creates all this dis-
‘ order is in perfect tranquillity.’—
‘ That you shall see immediately,’ said
‘ Asmodeus. ‘ Cast your eyes on the
‘ great house in the corner of the same
‘ street; does not a watch-light dis-
‘ cover to you a lady lying half out
‘ of her bed, and talking to a servant
‘ who

‘ who sits by her side? You are to understand, by the way, that the woman of a lady in love never goes to bed till four in the morning. As soon as she has undressed her, and laid her on her pillow, her business of putting her to rest is but begun; for she is then to sit down by her, hear her sentiments of the humble servant, and confute all her suspicions of his infidelity or want of love; and, by that time the good lady is ten times thoroughly convinced, and her maid as often perjured, in hopes to be dismissed, the story is to begin again. The present anguish of our wakeful vestal is occasioned by a merry tale that the gentleman in his shirt told her in their last conversation, which diverted her so much, that she is afraid he hath not grief at heart, who could talk with so much humour. This gives her a thousand fears that he has broke his fetters; but she now receives comfort, the wench having almost persuaded her, that the person for whom her ladyship has so much tenderness, went away in very great disorder, and in all probability is at this moment upon the rack.’

‘ I know by experience,’ says the student, ‘ there is nothing so disagreeable to one in her ladyship’s condition as a state of indifference; your true lover must be always giving either pleasure or pain. But who is that pretty creature sighing before her glass at this time of night? Why does she bite her lips, glance her eyes, and examine her face in so many different views?’—‘ You know,’ said Asmodeus, ‘ the custom among young fellows, of publishing a list every winter of the beauties who are to be the tyrants of the year, and have their healths drank by crowds of second-hand lovers that never saw them, but are to be enamoured by hear-say, and die for them, because it is the fashion. The lady before us, after a reign of three years, was left out in yesterday’s nomination, which is the subject of her present contemplation; wherein she appeals to her glass, from the injustice of the electors. To be revenged on the town, sometimes she is resolved to marry a faithful lover she has long laughed at, and

‘ spend the remainder of her life in devotion; but upon surveying herself more narrowly, she finds things are not come to that extremity, and now intends to dress, and try the fortune of her features in all public places for one year more, in order to revive her pretensions against the next election. But we must not dwell so long on particulars; if you would have an idea of the extent of my command, you see my followers in every quarter of the city.’

‘ Yonder is a young lady getting out at a window to run away with her father’s footman; and at that corner is a lord attending with a coach and six, to steal a mantuamaker’s journey-woman. The gentleman you see in the porch, has made an assignation to meet his mistress in that place to-morrow morning at seven; and, in order to it, took his station there at ten last night.’—‘ Excuse interruption,’ said the student; ‘ pray tell me the circumstances of the person yonder that lies on his back with his hands lifted up, and his head erected like a figure on a tomb; he seems falling asleep in an act of devotion; it is the only person I have seen well employed; he is taken up much better than in these vanities.’—‘ Nothing leis,’ answered the dæmon; ‘ he lies motionless, as you see, that a plate of black lead on his forehead may have it’s due effect in preserving it smooth. His hands are tied up, that they may be white in the morning; and his waist braced in with an iron boddice, to preserve his shape. In this extraordinary posture he is calling upon cruel Belinda; and, amidst a thousand cutting reflections on the ill success of his passion, it is no small mortification to him, that, by the itching of the left side of his nose, he finds he shall have a pimple there before morning.’

‘ But pray tell me,’ says Cleofas, ‘ the history of that studious gentleman that stands in his night-gown looking upon his candle. He rubs his head as if it teemed with some extraordinary project.’—‘ Ah! my old friend Leandro,’ says the dæmon, ‘ are you there!’—‘ This gentleman,’ says he, turning to Cleofas, ‘ about fifteen

fifteen years ago, fell in love with a young widow, who did not discourage his addresses. He is a good-natured sensible fellow, and fond to death of his fair idol; but at the same time so over-run with modesty, that he cannot find courage enough to reveal his passion, and ask her consent. She has given him a thousand opportunities of breaking it to her, and he has made as many resolutions of doing it the next time he sees her; but they are no sooner left together, than he falls into confusions and palpitations, looks like an ass, and wishes somebody would come into the room to disembarraas him, and spoil an opportunity that perhaps he has longed for several months before. She took him yesterday into the fields: the lover, who would have given half his estate for so favourable an occasion, fell to praising the prospect; and, after a great many efforts to enter on the grand affair, resolved to put it off to another time. His passion began in the year 1692, and in 1695 was in a fair way, had he pressed it; ever since that time he has been endeavouring to communicate his heart; but it fails him, and it is very probable he may be passed the functions of love before he has courage enough to make it.—‘This would have been a rare fellow to have made love before the deluge,’ says Cleofas; ‘a man might have languished an hundred years for a girl, and afterwards, upon her disdain, have had two or three centuries of youth to taste in; but at present, courtship, marriage, and consummation, are drawn into a span. We must huddle up our amours as soon as possible, if we intend to take the sweets of them.’—‘But,’ said Asmodeus, ‘commend me to that busy gentleman, whom you see writing in a pensive posture. He is a passionate lover, that is, an angry one; an honest soul, that shews his sincerity to his mistress, by never disguising his resentments. This morning he took the innocent freedom of shaking her by the shoulder and calling her a dirty baggage; upon which, after having deliberated whether he ought to hang himself, or beg her pardon, he has just now finished a penitential letter to

her, wherein he subscribes himself the vilest of men, and most miserable of lovers.’

‘Unhappy wretch! let him go sleep if he can,’ said the student; ‘but I grow sick with looking upon fools so like myself. You would oblige me more, if you would shew me the weakness of the enemy, and let me see that, with all these disadvantages, we are equal to the sex we have to deal with.’—‘There is hardly one of them,’ said the devil, ‘who does not destroy, by her insolence, the passion she raises by her beauty.’

‘If you had as good ears as I, you would hear that lady, who frisks to and fro in her apartment with so much uneasiness, cry “Coxcomb, fop, clown, novice,” at every little stop she makes in her walk. Her misery is, that, according to form, she told a plain fellow with a good estate, who proposed himself to her, she wondered he could make her such an offer, and solemnly protested she could never like him. The swain believed her, and is gone to his country-seat; upon which she is now casting about, by what means to explain to the rustic the nature of gallantry, and make him understand, that a man’s profession of love, and a woman’s refusal, in this refined age, are equally mere words.’

‘But I observe a lady, who, of all that I have seen,’ said Cleofas, ‘touches me with the greatest compassion; her streaming eyes, and dishevelled hair, speak a perfect Magdalen! What can be her distress? who could be so barbarous to a creature made up of so much softness?’—‘That disconsolate dame,’ quoth Asmodeus, ‘was three hours ago one of the greatest coquettes in Madrid, and is breaking her heart too late for want of knowing it time enough. She had long loved a gentleman of merit, but played with his passion and her own by so many repeated flights, that he grew tired of the chace, and yesterday disposed of himself to another. It is for this reason that she abandons herself this night to prayer and hartshorn, and intends to-morrow to shut herself up in a nunnery for ever. It would be endless to shew you the vanities of the

sex; their thoughts, words, and actions, tend only to shew an ostentation, for which they sacrifice their liberty, and all the pleasures of life. Look at the sumptuous apartment in that palace, and the wrought bed that reaches up to the roof of it. Do not you see in it an old man just fallen asleep, and by his side a beautiful young lady looking at a picture in miniature. The avarice of her mother tore her from the young gallant whose figure she is contemplating, to bury her in the embraces of one she loaths. And now all the hopes she has left are, to lay her old man in a winding-sheet, and one day or other come into the arms of her first lover. At the next house is a more diverting sight. The brute who staggers into that chamber is reeling to the bed of that delicate creature, whom her prudent parent prostituted to his embraces. The beastly sot was rival to one of a very agreeable character; their fortunes were equal, but I dare say you will laugh at the merit which preferred this worthy to the choice of the provident mother. You must know he had a pigeon-house upon his estate, which the other wanted. This turned the balance in his favour, and determined the fate of that unfortunate lady.

‘If you can shew us only unhappy effects of this passion,’ said Cleofas, ‘I must desire you would entertain me with another set of objects.’—‘Do not be discouraged,’ answered the dæmon, ‘at the prospects I have laid before you. There are in nature pleasing amours and happy marriages, but these are not to be looked for in Madrid. To give you a sight of happy pairs, I should transport you to solitudes and retirements, where love is a stranger to art and gallantry, and lives amidst its own natural sweets, complacency, mutual esteem, and eternal constancy; without being diverted by the false appearances, which, under the colour of advancing its enjoyments, vitiate the true relish of them. It is when we spirits behold mortals in this condition, that we suffer our greatest pangs of envy, and wish for flesh and blood to taste the gratification bestowed upon them.’

C H A P. III.

OF THE TOMBS, THE GHOSTS,
AND DEATH.

‘BEFORE we pursue our reflections on the living,’ said the dæmon, ‘let us for a few moments disturb the repose of the dead, buried in this church. Let us run through these sepulchres, lay open what they conceal, and see wherefore they were erected.’

‘The first of those which you see on the right hand, contains the sad remains of a general officer, who, like another Agamemnon, at his return from the army, found an Ægisthus in his house. In the second is a young cavalier of a noble family, who, designing to shew to his mistress his address and vigour at a bull-feast, was cruelly torn to pieces by one of those creatures. And in the third lies an old prelate, too soon hurried out of the world, by making his will in perfect health, and reading it to his domesticks, to whom, like a good master, he had bequeathed legacies. But his cook was too much in haste for his.’

‘In the fourth mausoleum rests the body of a courtier, who never gave himself any trouble but to make his court. For sixty years he was every day seen at the levee dinner and supper of the king, who loaded him with favours as the reward of his assiduity.’—‘But really,’ said Don Cleofas, ‘was this man good for any thing else?’—‘For no kind of thing,’ answered the devil: ‘He was lavish of his offers of service, but never in his life-time kept his word.’—‘The wretch!’ replied Leandro. ‘Were all superfluous members to be retrenched from civil society, this sort of courtiers ought to be the first.’

‘The fifth tomb,’ pursued Asmodeus, ‘contains the mortal remains of a nobleman, whose zeal for his country’s good, and his sovereign’s glory, was ever uppermost at his heart. His whole life was spent in embassies to Rome, France, England, and Portugal; and he so fairly ruined himself by them, that, when he died, he had not enough to bury him; but the king, to reward his services, was at that expence.’

‘Let

Let us go on to those on the other side. The first is the sepulchre of a considerable trader, who left his children an immense fortune; but for fear their wealth might make them forget their rise, he had his name and profession engraved upon his tomb; which his present descendants are not very well pleased with.

The following mausoleum, which exceeds all the rest in magnificence, is a piece looked upon with admiration by all travellers.—“Why, really,” said Zambullo, “I think it deserves to be so looked on. But I am, above all, charmed with those two figures kneeling, they seem so admirably well finished. Whoever made them must have been a curious workman. But pray tell me what the persons they represent might have been in their life-time?”

“You see,” replied the cripple, “a duke and his wife; he was groom of the stole, and filled his post with great reputation, and his wife lived in a strict devotion, I must let you into a circumstance of this good duchess’s life, which I fancy you will think merry enough, in one who professed so much devotion. And it was this.

The lady had long had for her confessor a monk of the order De la Merci, named Don Jerom D’Aguilar, a good man, and very famous for his preaching; with whom she was very well pleased, till a Dominican appeared at Madrid, who by his sermons charmed all the people. This new orator’s name was Father Placidio. The people flocked to hear him, as much as to Cardinal Ximenes. And the court having been pleased to go to one of his sermons, upon his great reputation, was better pleased with him than the city.

Our duchess at first made it a point of honour to hold out against common fame, and to resist the curiosity that inclined her to go and be herself the judge of Father Placidio’s eloquence; and she behaved in this manner, to shew her director, that, like a penitent who was delicate and concerned for her confessor, she had a share in those sentiments of anger and jealousy which this new comer might have given him. Yet there

was no possibility for her always to hold out against him. The Dominican made so much noise in the city, that at last she yielded to the temptation of seeing him: and did see him, heard him preach, liked him, followed him; and at last the little inconstant creature formed the following design, in order to make him her confessor.

But her first step was to get rid of her former, and this was not very easy; for a spiritual guide is not to be left like a lover. A devotee would not willingly pass for fickle, nor lose the esteem of the director she is abandoning. What then does our duchess, think you? She goes to Don Jerom, and tells him with as melancholy an air as if she had been really concerned: “Father,” says she, “I am distracted, I am inexpressibly amazed, afflicted, and perplexed in my mind.”—“What is the matter then, Madam?” answered D’Aguilar. “Ah, would you believe it!” replied she; “my husband, who always reposed an entire confidence in my virtue, after seeing me so long under your direction, without shewing the least uneasiness at my conduct, is all of a sudden grown suspicious and jealous, and will not suffer you to be any longer my confessor. Did you ever hear of such a whim? I told him he not only affronted me, but likewise a man of strict piety, and one who was free from the tyranny of the passions; but all in vain; I only increased his mistrust, by taking your part.”

Don Jerom, notwithstanding all his good sense, gave into this story. Indeed, she had told it with an air that would have deceived the whole world. Though he was sorry and vexed to lose a penitent of such importance, he however exhorted her to obey her husband’s will: but his reverence’s eyes were opened, and he discovered the trick; upon hearing the lady had chosen Father Placidio for her confessor.

Next to this duke and his cunning spouse, continued the devil, a plainer tomb conceals the ridiculous conjunction of an old dean of the council of the Indies, and his young wife. This old fellow, in his grand

‘climacteric, married a girl of twenty; he had two children by a former wife, and was just ready to have signed their ruin, when an apoplexy carried him off; and their mother-in-law, four and twenty hours after, died with vexation that he did not die three days later.

‘We are now at the most sacred monument in this church. The Spaniards have as much veneration for it, as the Romans had for that of Romulus.’—‘What great man is it whose ashes lie there?’ said Leandro Perez. ‘A first minister of the court of Spain,’ answered Asmodeus. ‘Never will the kingdom perhaps enjoy his equal. The king threw all the care of the government upon this great man, who so well discharged his trust, that both the king and his subjects were very well pleased with him. The state, under his administration, was always in a flourishing condition, and the people happy. To conclude, this able minister was a man of great religion and humanity: yet, for all he had no crime to charge himself with on his death-bed, he could not help trembling to think of the ticklish post he had been in.

‘A little beyond this minister, whose loss deserves to be for ever regretted, you may distinguish up in a corner a black marble stone fixed to one of the pillars. Shall I open you the grave under it, and shew you the remains of a citizen’s daughter, that died in the flower of her age, and whose beauty charmed all eyes that beheld her? Yet she is now nothing but dust; though, whilst living, she was so lovely, that her father was under continual uneasiness lest some lover should run away with her; and had she lived a little longer, such a thing might have happened. Three cavaliers, who idolized her, were not so comforted at the loss of her, and all killed themselves to shew their despair. Their tragical story is written in letters of gold on that marble stone, with three small figures representing the three despairing lovers, who are going to make an end of themselves. One of them is swallowing a glass of poison, the second falls upon his sword, and the third is putting a cord about his neck, in order to hang himself.’

The daemon seeing the student laugh here very heartily, and please himself mightily with the sight of the girl’s epitaph being adorned with those three figures, said to him, ‘Since this fancy so delights you, I can hardly forbear carrying you this instant to the banks of the Tagus, in order to shew you a dramatic writer’s monument, which he had built in a church at a village near Almarez, whither he retired after leading a long and merry life at Madrid. This author had furnished the play-house with several comedies full of bold smutty images; but repenting before he died, and resolving to atone for the scandal they had given, he ordered a sort of funeral pile to be engraved upon his tomb, made of books representing some of the pieces he had written, and modesty appears setting fire to them with a lighted torch.

‘Beside the dead interred in those tombs I have shewed you, there are a vast number of others buried in a very plain manner. I see all their ghosts wandering about, continually walking to and fro by each other, without disturbing the profound silence that reigns in that holy place. They do not indeed discourse together; but, notwithstanding they are silent, I read all their thoughts.’—‘What a mortification is this to me,’ cried Don Cleofas, ‘not to be able to enjoy the pleasure of seeing them as you do!’—‘I can give you that satisfaction,’ said Asmodeus, ‘with the greatest ease.’ At the same time the daemon laid his hand on his eyes, and, by a delusion, made him see a great number of phantoms clothed in white.

At the apparition of so many spectres, Zambullo shuddered. ‘How!’ said the devil, ‘do you shake? are you afraid of these ghosts? Do not let their dress scare you; accustom yourself to it betimes, for it is what you must wear in your turn, and is the *livery of the departed*. Take heart, then, and fear nothing. Can you want courage now, who could bear the sight of me! These people are not half so mischievous as myself.’

The student, at these words, recalling all his courage, looked pretty boldly upon those phantoms. ‘Observe these ghosts attentively,’ said the devil; those

those who have superb mausoleums are, without distinction, confounded with those whose monuments are no more than a pitiful coffin. That subordination which distinguished them one from the other, is now at an end. The groom of the stole, and the first minister, are now no more valued than the meanest citizen that is buried here. Their grandeur is over with their life, like that of an hero of the stage upon the conclusion of the play.

'I observe one thing,' said Leandro; 'a melancholy ghost walking by himself, seeming to shun the company of his brethren.'—'Say rather, that the rest shun his,' answered the dæmon, 'and you will be right. Do you know what that ghost is? Why, that of an old notary, who had the vanity to be buried in a leaden coffin; which has so shocked all the plebeian ghosts, whose bodies were more modestly laid in the ground, that, to mortify him, they would not suffer his ghost to mix amongst them.'

'I have just made another remark,' replied Don Cleofas; 'two of the phantoms, as they passed, stopt a moment to look at each other, and they went on.'—'They are,' answered the devil, 'the ghosts of two intimate friends, one of which was a painter, and the other a music-master, a little given to drinking, but else very honest fellows. They died in the same year; and when they met just now, struck with the remembrance of their pleasures, they said by that melancholy silence, "Ah! friend, our drinking days are over."'

'Bless me!' cried the student, 'what is it I see? At the end of the church there are two ghosts walking together, but how ill they are matched! Their shape and gait are very different. One is unreasonably tall, and walks with all the gravity in the world; and the other is very short, and seems to be flying into the air.'—'The tall one,' replied the cripple, 'is a German, who got his death by drinking three healths with tobacco in his glass; and the short one a Frenchman, who (according to the civility of his nation) taking it into his head to present a lady with holy water at her entrance into the church; as he was going out of it, the same

day was laid flat with a blunderbuss, as the reward of his politeness.

'I am, in my turn,' said Asmodeus, 'observing three remarkable ghosts that I distinguish from amongst the crowd, and I must tell you in what manner they were separated from their dust. They once informed the pretty bodies of three actresses; who, in their time, made as much noise at Madrid, as Origo, Cytheris, and Arbuscula, made at Rome in theirs; and who, as well as they, possessed, in the greatest perfection, the art of diverting men in public, and ruining them in private. But mark the end of these three famous Spanish actresses. One died suddenly of envy, at the pit's clapping a young actress at her first coming on the stage; the other found in excess of good eating and drinking, the infallible death that is its consequence; and the third, over-heating herself in playing the part of a vestal virgin, miscarried, and died of it behind the scenes.

'But let us leave all these ghosts at peace,' continued the devil, 'for we have seen enough of them. Besides, I intend to present to your view an object that ought to make a stronger impression upon you, and will, by the help of the same power by which I shewed you the ghosts, make death visible to you. This cruel enemy of mankind shall be the subject of your contemplation, who is incessantly hovering over man, though he does not perceive him, and who in the twinkling of an eye pervades all the parts of the earth, and, in the same moment, makes all the nations that inhabit it sensible of the vast extent of his power.

'Look towards the east, see there he is! A vast troop of birds of ill omen fly before him with terror at their head, and proclaim his coming by mournful and deadly cries. His indefatigable hand is armed with a cruel scythe, under which successively fall all generations. On one of his wings are painted war, pestilence, famine, shipwreck, conflagrations, with the rest of those sad accidents which every instant deliver him up a fresh prey. On his other wing are to be seen young physicians taking their doctor's degree, in the presence of Death, who gives them the cap.

after

‘after swearing them never to practise physic otherwise than it is practised at this time of day.’

Though Don Cleofas was pretty sure there was nothing real in what he saw, and that the devil shewed him Death under this form, only to oblige him, yet he could not look on it without shuddering. However, he summoned up his courage, and said to the dæmon: ‘Will this frightful figure only pass over Madrid, without leaving some signs of his passage.’—‘No, certainly,’ replied the cripple: ‘he does not come hither for nothing. And it is in your choice whether you will be witness of his operations.’—‘I take you at your word,’ replied the student; ‘let us follow him, and see upon what unhappy families his fury will fall. Alas! how many tears are going to be shed!’—‘Doubtless,’ answered Asmodeus, ‘and a great many counterfeit ones too; for Death, notwithstanding the horror that goes along with him, causes as much joy as sorrow.’

Our two spectators took their flight, in order to follow Death, and observe him. The first place he entered was a citizen’s house, where the master was in the last extremity. He touched him with his scythe, and the good man expired in the midst of his family, which immediately formed a concert of sighs and groans. ‘Here,’ said the dæmon, ‘is no counterfeiting: the wife and children of this citizen loved him tenderly, and besides they wanted him, for he was their support; there can be no dissimulation in their tears.’

‘But it is quite otherwise as to what passes in that other house, where you see Death is striking an old man in bed. He is a counsellor who has lived miserably and a bachelor, to amass vast riches for three nephews, who flew to his house the moment they heard he was drawing near his end. They have played their parts extremely well, by the shew of a prodigious sorrow. But see, they are throwing off the mask, preparing to behave as heirs, after playing the grimace of relations, and going to rifle every where. What heaps of gold and silver will they find!’ ‘Oh, the pleasure,’ said one of his heirs ‘just now to the others; “oh, the plea-

sure for nephews to have old stingy uncles, that renounce all the pleasures of life purely that they may enjoy them!”—A fine funeral oration really!’ said Leandro Perez. ‘Oh, upon my word,’ replied the devil, ‘there are few long-lived rich fathers that ought to expect any other even from their own children.’

‘Whilst these young heirs, swimming in joy, are in search of the deceased’s treasures, Death is making towards a fine palace, where lies a young lord sick of the small pox. This lord, one of the most amiable persons of the court, is going to be cut off in his prime, notwithstanding the celebrated physician who has him under his care; or, perhaps, rather, because he has him under his care.’

‘Observe with what a rapidity Death performs his operations. He has already determined the fate of that young lord’s life, and is ready for another expedition. He stops over a convent, goes down into one of the cells, falls upon an honest friar, and cuts the thread of a penitent and mortified life which he has led for forty years. Death, all terror as he is, has not alarmed him; but in return, he is entering a palace which he will fill with terror: for he is making his approaches to a licentiate of quality, lately nominated to the bishoprick of Albarazin. That prelate thinks of nothing but his preparations for going down to his diocese with all the pomp and splendour which now a days are inseparable from princes of the church; and Death is, of all things, the farthest from his thoughts. Yet he is just this moment beginning his journey to the other world, where he will arrive with as shin a train as the poor friar; and I question whether he will be so favourably received.’

‘Oh, Heaven!’ cried Zambullo, ‘Death is going to pass over the king’s palace, and I am afraid the barbarian will with one stroke of his scythe put all Spain in a consternation. You have reason to tremble,’ said the cripple, ‘for he has no more respect for kings than their footmen:’ ‘but take courage,’ added he, a moment after, ‘he has nothing to say at present to the monarch, but he is falling upon one of his courtiers,’

‘one

‘one of that sort of creatures, whose
‘only employment is to follow and
‘make their court to him. They are
‘easily spared, their places are so soon
‘filled up.’

‘But methinks,’ replied the student, ‘Death is not content with taking off that courtier, he makes another pause on the queen’s apartment.’—‘He does so,’ answered the devil, ‘and to do a very good work too; he is going to slit the windpipe of a wicked old woman, whose pleasure lies in sowing divisions in the queen’s court, and who fell sick with vexation to see two ladies, whom she had set together by the ears, sincerely reconciled.’

‘You are going to hear some very piercing cries,’ continued the demon. ‘Death has just entered that fine house on the left hand, where is going to be acted one of the most melancholy scenes that ever was represented on the theatre of the world. Fix your eyes on that deplorable spectacle.’—‘Really,’ said Don Cleofas, ‘I do see a lady that tears her hair, and struggles in her woman’s arms. Why does she appear so afflicted?’—‘Look into the opposite apartment,’ answered the devil, ‘and you will see the cause. Observe the man laid on that stately bed; it is her husband who is expiring, and she is inconsolable. Their story is very moving, and deserves to be written. I have a great mind to tell it you.’

‘You will oblige me,’ replied Leandro: ‘I am not less sensible of objects of compassion, than diverted by those of ridicule. It is somewhat long,’ answered Asmodeus, ‘but too moving to be tiresome. Besides, to tell you the truth, as much a devil as I am, I am tired with running after Death; so let us leave him in search of fresh victims.’—‘With all my heart,’ said Zambullo, ‘I should be better pleased to hear this history, which you have promised to entertain me with, than thus to see the whole race of man perishing one after another. Upon which the devil having set the student down upon one of the highest houses in Alcala Street, began the relation in these terms.

CHAP. IV.

THE POWER OF FRIENDSHIP.

A STORY.

A Young gentleman of Toledo, accompanied by his valet de chambre, travelled by long journeys from his native country, to avoid the consequences of a tragical adventure. He was two little leagues from Valencia, when, at the entry of a wood, he met a lady descending hastily out of her coach. No veil covered her face, in which beauty shone in perfection. This charming lady seemed so disturbed and distracted, that the cavalier concluding she wanted assistance, did not fail to tender her that of his courage.

“Generous unknown,” said the lady, “I embrace your offer. Heaven seems to have sent you hither to my assistance, and to avert the misfortune which I dread. Two gentlemen are met upon an appointment in this wood: I this minute saw them enter; I can tell you no more; but, if you please, follow me, and you shall know the whole.” At the end of these words she flew into the wood; and the Toledan, leaving the care of his horse to his man, made after her as fast as he could.

‘They had scarce advanced an hundred paces, before they heard the clashing of swords, and soon discovered two men furiously engaged. The Toledan ran to part them; which having done, partly by force, and partly by intreaty, he asked them the cause of their quarrel. “Brave unknown,” said one of the cavaliers, “my name is Don Fadrique de Mendoza, and my adversary is Don Alvaro Ponce. We both love Donna Theodora, the lady which you accompany. She has always slighted our addresses; and notwithstanding all the tendernesses that love could suggest to please her, the obdurate fair would never treat us better. As for me, I designed to continue her slave in spite of her indifference; but my rival, instead of taking the same resolution, lent me a challenge.”

“It

"It is true," interrupted Don Alvaro, "I concluded that, if I had no rival, Donna Theodora might look upon me; wherefore I endeavoured to take away the life of Don Fadrique, to rid myself of a man that opposed my felicity."

"Gentlemen," said the Toledan, "I do not approve your duelling; it is an affront to Donna Theodora. It will soon be published in Valencia that you have fought for her; and your mistress's honour ought to be dearer to you than your own repose and lives. Besides, what advantage could the vanquisher reap by his victory? After having exposed his mistress's reputation, could he expect she would look on him with a favourable eye? Take my advice; make a more noble effort on yourselves, more worthy the names that you bear: conquer these furious transports; and, by an inviolable oath, engage yourselves to subscribe the articles of accommodation which I shall propose to you. Your quarrel shall end without bloodshed."

"Hah! how?" said Don Alvaro. "This lady must declare," replied the Toledan, "whether she will chuse Don Fadrique or you; and the unhappy lover, far from arming against his rival, must leave him in the field."—"I consent," said Don Alvaro; "and swear, by all that is most sacred, to acquiesce in her choice, whether she determine in favour of me or my rival; for even that preference will be more supportable than the miserable uncertainty under which I now labour."—"And as for me," said Don Fadrique in his turn, "I call Heaven to witness, that if the divine object which I adore does not pronounce in my favour, I will remove myself far from her charms; and, if I cannot forget her, at least I will never see her more."

The Toledan then turning towards Theodora, "Madam," said he, "it is in your power with one word to disarm these two rivals; you need only declare whose constancy of the two you please to reward."—"Sir," answered the lady, "search for another expedient to reconcile them. Why should I be the sacrifice of their agreement? I really va-

lue Don Fadrique and Don Alvaro, but I do not love either of them; and it is unjust that, to prevent the stain which their duelling might cast upon my honour, I should be obliged to give those hopes which my heart will never own."

"It is too late to dissemble, Madam," replied the Toledan; "you must declare yourself. Both these cavaliers are equally handsome, and I am certain you have more inclination for one than the other: I refer myself to the mortal agony in which I saw you."

"You misinterpret that fright," replied Donna Theodora; "the loss of either of these gentlemen would very sensibly touch me, and I should never give over blaming myself on that account, though I am only the innocent cause; but if you saw me alarmed, it was for my own reputation, which I knew would unavoidably suffer in the dispute."

Don Alvaro Ponce, who was naturally very fierce, at these words lost all patience: "It is enough," said he, very warmly; "since the lady refuses to end this dispute amicably, the sword shall immediately decide it." Upon which he aimed a pass at Don Fadrique, who was prepared to receive it.

The lady, rather affrighted by this action, than determined by her inclination, amazed, cried out, "Hold, gentlemen, I will satisfy you! if there be no other way to end an engagement in which my honour is concerned, I declare that I give the preference to Don Fadrique de Mendoza."

She had no sooner ended these words, than the discarded Ponce, without uttering one syllable, immediately loosened his horse which was fastened to a tree, and retired, casting very angry looks at his rival and mistress. The happy Mendoza, on the contrary, was overwhelmed with joy; sometimes he fell on his knees before Donna Theodora, at others he embraced the Toledan, and was utterly at a loss for expressions strong enough to represent the sentiments of gratitude with which he was thoroughly touched.

In the mean time the lady returning to her natural temper, after the departure of Alvaro, began to reflect how

“ how anxious it would prove to her
 “ to suffer the addresses of a lover,
 “ whose merit though she really valued,
 “ yet withal for whom her heart had
 “ never been prepossessed with any the
 “ least tenderness.

“ Don Fadrique,” said she, “ I
 “ hope you will not abuse the pre-
 “ ference which I have given you ;
 “ you owe it to the necessity to which
 “ I was reduced, to declare betwixt
 “ you and Don Alvaro ; not but
 “ that I value you much more than
 “ him, and I know very well he has
 “ not all the good qualities which you
 “ have ; and I shall but do you jus-
 “ tice by saying, that you are the
 “ most compleat gentleman in Valen-
 “ cia. I will farther own to you, that
 “ the addresses of such a man as you
 “ might very well flatter a woman’s
 “ vanity ; but how honourable soever
 “ it may be to me, I must tell you,
 “ I look upon them with so little re-
 “ lish, that you are really to be pitied
 “ for loving me so tenderly as you
 “ appear to do. I will not yet deprive
 “ you of all the hopes of touching my
 “ heart. My indifference, perhaps,
 “ may be only the effect of the yet re-
 “ maining grief which seized me a
 “ year since, for the loss of Don An-
 “ drea de Cifuentes, my husband.
 “ Though we did not live long toge-
 “ ther, and he was of an advanced
 “ age, when my parents, dazzled with
 “ his riches, obliged me to marry him,
 “ yet was I very much afflicted at his
 “ death ; I shall bemoan it all my
 “ life.

“ And, indeed, did he not deserve my
 “ sorrow ? He was not like those sour
 “ jealous old men, who, never being
 “ able to persuade themselves that a
 “ woman may be discreet enough to
 “ excuse their weakness, continually
 “ watch all her motions, or intrust
 “ that charge to a duenna devoted to
 “ their tyranny. Alas, he had such
 “ an entire confidence in my virtue,
 “ as even a young husband, though
 “ adored, is scarce capable of. Be-
 “ sides, his compliance was endless ;
 “ I dare venture to say, that his sole
 “ care was to prevent me in all things
 “ which I seemed to desire. Such
 “ was Don Andrea de Cifuentes ; you
 “ may then, Mendoça, easily judge,
 “ that it is not easy to forget a man
 “ of such an agreeable character. He

“ is always present in my thoughts,
 “ which does not a little contribute,
 “ doubtless, to turn them from fixing
 “ on whatever is done to please me.”

“ Don Fadrique could not help in-
 “ terrupting Donna Theodora here.
 “ Ah, Madam !” cried he, “ how
 “ happy am I to learn from your own
 “ mouth, that your former despising
 “ my addresses did not result from any
 “ aversion to my person ! I hope you
 “ will one day yield to my constancy.”

—“ It will not be my fault, if your
 “ passion does not succeed,” replied
 “ the lady, “ since I allow you to vi-
 “ sit me, and sometimes mention your
 “ love. Endeavour to make me relish
 “ your endearments ; use all your arts
 “ to make me love you. I will never
 “ conceal from you any favourable
 “ sentiments which I may have for
 “ you ; but if, after all your efforts,
 “ you cannot compass your end, re-
 “ member, Mendoça, that you will
 “ have no reason to blame me.”

“ Don Fadrique would have replied,
 “ but had not time, by reason the lady
 “ took the Toledan by the hand, and
 “ nimbly turned towards her equipage.
 “ He loosened his horse, which was
 “ tied to a tree, and leading him by
 “ the bridle, followed Donna Theodo-
 “ ra, who mounted her chariot with as
 “ much precipitation as she had before
 “ descended from it ; though the reason
 “ was utterly different. The Toledan
 “ and he accompanied her on horse-
 “ back to the gates of Valencia, where
 “ they parted. She went to her own
 “ house, and Don Fadrique carried the
 “ Toledan to his.

“ He made him sit down, and after
 “ having well entertained him, he ask-
 “ ed him what particularly brought
 “ him to Valencia, and whether he
 “ thought of making a long stay there.
 “ I shall continue here as little while
 “ as possible,” answered the Toledan ;
 “ I came this way only to go towards
 “ the sea-side, to embark in the very
 “ first vessel which sails from the coast
 “ of Spain ; for I care not much in
 “ what part of the world I finish the
 “ course of an unfortunate life, pro-
 “ vided it be far distant from these fa-
 “ tal climates.”

“ What is it can set you against
 “ your country,” replied Don Fadri-
 “ que, surprized at the Toledan’s dis-
 “ course, “ and make you hate what

N “ all

"all men naturally love?"—"After what has happened," returned the Toledan, "my country is odious to me, and I aim at nothing in the world but to quit it for ever."—"Ah, Sir!" said Mendoça, touched with a compassionate concern, "how impatient I am to know your misfortunes! If I cannot relieve your pains, I will share them with you. The air of your face has prepossessed me in your favour; your deportment charms me, and I find myself strenuously interested in your fortune."

"It is the greatest consolation which I am capable of receiving, Don Fadrique," answered the Toledan: "and in some measure to acknowledge the affection which you have discovered for me, I must also tell you, that when I saw you with Don Alvaro Ponce, my inclinations declared on your side. An internal motion, which I was never before sensible of at the first sight of any person, made me fear least Donna Theodora should prefer your rival; and I was touched with joy when she determined in your favour. You have since so much strengthened that first impression, that instead of hiding my uneasinesses, I earnestly desire to lay them before you, and find a secret pleasure in the unboasting myself to you. Attend then to the relation of my misfortunes."

"Toledo is my native place, and Don Juan de Zarate my name. Almost from my infancy I lost those who gave me life, so that I began betimes to enjoy an annual estate of four thousand ducats, which they left me. My heart being at my own disposal, and believing myself rich enough not to consult any thing but my own inclination in the choice of a wife, I married a virgin perfectly beautiful, without reflecting on the meanness of her fortune, or the inequality of our conditions. I was charmed with my felicity; and to give the greater relish to the pleasure of possessing the person loved, a few days after my marriage, I carried her to an estate which I have some leagues from Toledo."

"We lived there in a most agreeable union, when the Duke of Naxera, whose seat is near my estate, came

one day, when he was hunting, to refresh himself at my house. He saw my wife, and fell in love with her. I suspected it at least; but what fully convinced me of it was, that he immediately made the most pressing instances in the world to obtain my friendship, which he never before set any value on. He introduced me to his hunting acquaintance, forced me to accept of several presents, and made me many offers of his service."

"Being immediately alarmed by his passion, I intended to return to Toledo with my wife; and doubtless that thought was inspired by Heaven. For had I wholly deprived her, I should have avoided those misfortunes which have fallen on me; but my confident reliance on her virtue secured me. I thought it impossible for a woman I had married without a fortune, and raised from a low condition, to be so ungrateful as to forget my favours. Alas! what a wrong judgment did I make! Ambition and vanity, those two vices natural to the sex, were her greatest faults."

"As soon as the duke had got an opportunity to discover his sentiments, she was secretly pleased at such an important conquest. The passion of a man, adorned with the title of his excellence, tickled her pride, and filled her mind with extravagant chimeras; whence she began to value him more, and me less: and all that I had done for her, instead of exciting her gratitude, served only to render me contemptible in her eyes. She looked on me as a husband unworthy of her beauty, and fancied that if this grandee, who was now conquered by her charms, had seen her before her being a wife, he had certainly married her. Intoxicated by these foolish imaginations, and seduced by several engaging presents, she yielded to the duke's private and pressing importunities."

"They frequently wrote to each other, without my ever suspecting their correspondence; but at last, I was unhappy enough to be cured of that blindness. One day returning from hunting sooner than usual, I

"went

“ went into my wife’s apartment, who
 “ did not expect me so soon. She had
 “ just received a billet from the duke,
 “ which she was preparing to answer.
 “ She could not hide her uneasiness
 “ from me. I trembled, and finding
 “ pen, ink and paper, ready on a ta-
 “ ble, I concluded she had betrayed
 “ me. I pressed herto shew me what she
 “ was writing, which she so absolute-
 “ ly denied, that I was obliged to use
 “ some violence to satisfy my jealous
 “ curiosity; and, notwithstanding all
 “ her resistance, I tore from her
 “ bosom a letter containing these
 “ words.

“ **S** HALL I for ever languish in
 “ expectation of a second inter-
 “ view? How cruel are you, to give
 “ me the most charming hopes, and
 “ thus long delay the fulfilling them!
 “ Don Juan goes every day a hunt-
 “ ing, or to Toledo; should we not
 “ make use of these opportunities?
 “ Have more regard to the violent
 “ flames which consume me. Pity
 “ me, Madam; consider, that if it be
 “ a pleasure to obtain our desires, it
 “ is a torment to wait long for the en-
 “ joyment of them.”

“ I could not read out this letter
 “ without the utmost transports of
 “ rage. I clapped my hand on my
 “ dagger, and at first was tempted to
 “ take the life of that faithless wife
 “ who had deprived me of my ho-
 “ nour; but considering that would
 “ be only to revenge myself by
 “ halves, and that my resentment re-
 “ quired yet another victim, I con-
 “ quered my rage, dissembled, and said
 “ to my wife, with the least disturb-
 “ ance possible: “ Madam, you were
 “ to blame to hearken to the duke;
 “ the lustre of his high quality ought
 “ not to have dazzled your eyes; but
 “ young women are fond of pompous
 “ titles; I am willing to believe that
 “ this is all you have yet proceeded
 “ to, and that you have not yet done
 “ me the last injury; wherefore I ex-
 “ cuse your indiscretion, provided
 “ you will return to your duty, and
 “ becoming truly sensible of my ten-
 “ derness, you will think of nothing
 “ more than to deserve it.”

“ After these words, I retired to my

“ apartment, as well to leave her to
 “ recover herself, as because I wanted
 “ some retirement to cool my rage,
 “ which had sufficiently inflamed me.
 “ If I could not recover my temper,
 “ I at least put on a very easy air for
 “ two days; and on the third, pre-
 “ tending business of the last conse-
 “ quence to Toledo, I told my wife
 “ that I was obliged to leave her for
 “ some time, and intreated her to take
 “ care of her honour during my ab-
 “ sence.

“ I left her; but, instead of going
 “ to Toledo, I privately returned
 “ home at the beginning of the night,
 “ and concealed myself in the chamber
 “ of a faithful domestick, where I
 “ could see whoever entered my house.
 “ I did not doubt of the duke’s being
 “ informed of my departure, and con-
 “ cluded he would not miss the op-
 “ portunity. I hoped to surprize them
 “ together, and promised myself an
 “ entire vengeance.

“ But I was deceived in my expec-
 “ tation. For, instead of finding
 “ my house preparing for the recep-
 “ tion of a lover, I saw, on the con-
 “ trary, the doors very close shut at
 “ their time; and three days passing
 “ without the appearance of the duke,
 “ or even any of his servants, I per-
 “ suaded myself that my spouse re-
 “ pentened her fault, and had broke off
 “ all manner of communication with
 “ the duke.

“ Prepossessed with this opinion, I
 “ lost all desire of revenge, and yield-
 “ ing to the motion of a love which
 “ angry resentment had suspended, I
 “ flew to my wife’s apartment, em-
 “ braced her with transporting rap-
 “ tures, and said, “ Madam, I restore
 “ you all my esteem and tenderness.
 “ I have not been at Toledo: I pre-
 “ tended that journey only to try you.
 “ You ought to pardon a snare laid
 “ by a husband, whose jealousy was
 “ not groundless. I feared that your
 “ mind, seduced by splendid illusions,
 “ was not capable of undeceiving it-
 “ self: but, thanks to Heaven, you
 “ are sensible of your error; and, I
 “ hope, nothing for the future will
 “ ever disturb our good agreement.”

“ My wife seemed touched at these
 “ words; and letting fall some tears;
 “ How unhappy am I,” said she, “ to
 “ have given you reason to suspect my

"virtue! Though I have to the last degree abhorred that fault which so justly irritated you against me, my eyes have in vain kept from closing these two days to make way for my tears; yet for all my grief, and all my remorse, I shall never regain your entire confidence in me."—"I restore it to you, Madam," said I, perfectly softened by the sorrow which she expressed; "I will no more remember what is past, since you so sincerely repent."

"Accordingly, from that very moment I had the same regard for her as before, and began again to taste those pleasures which had been so cruelly interrupted. The relish of them was heightened; for my wife, as though she resolved to efface out of my mind all the marks of the injury she had done me, was much more solicitous to please me than ever. I found her caresses more tender, and almost rejoiced at the discontent which had occasioned this happy change.

"I then fell ill; and though my disease was not dangerous, it is not to be imagined what fears my wife discovered. She staid all day with me; and in the night, I being in a separate apartment, she constantly came two or three times to satisfy herself how I was. She seemed extremely solicitous to prevent all the assistance I wanted, and her life seemed to be inseparable from mine. On my side, I was so sensible of all the marks of tenderness which she gave me, that I could never sufficiently testify my acknowledgment of them to her: and yet, Mendoça, they were not so sincere as I imagined.

"One night, when I began to recover, my valet de chambre waked me: "My lord," said he, very much confused, "I am obliged to disturb your repose; but am too faithful to conceal what is now acting in your house. The Duke of Naxera is with my lady."

"I was so stupified at this news, that for some time I looked on the fellow, without being able to speak. The more I thought of what he told me, the less I believed it. "No, Fabio," cried I, "it is impossible that my wife should be guilty of

such a horrid, perfidious crime! "You are not sure of what you say."—"My lord," cried Fabio, "would to God it were possible for me to doubt of it! but I am not deceived by false appearances. Ever since your indisposition, I have suspected the duke's being every night introduced into my lady's apartment. I hid myself to remove my suspicions, and am but too well convinced that they are just."

"At these words I rose distracted with rage; took my night-gown and sword, and made directly to my wife's apartment, accompanied by Fabio who lighted me. At the noise of our entrance, the duke, who sat on the bed, rose, and catching a pistol from his girdle, fired at me; but with such great confusion and precipitation, that he missed me. I then violently rushed upon him, and ran him into the heart; after which I addressed myself to my wife, who was rather dead than alive: "And thou," said I, "infamous wretch, receive the reward of all thy falsehoods." At these words I plunged my sword, yet reeking in her lover's blood, into her breast.

"I condemn my passion, Don Fadrique, and own I might have sufficiently punished a perfidious wife without taking away her life: but what man could keep his reason entire in such a conjuncture? Paint to yourself all the demonstrations of concern this false woman shewed at my illness; represent all the circumstances, the enormity of the treason, and judge whether a husband, fired with a just rage, ought not to be pardoned her death,

"To conclude so tragical a story in two words; after having fully satisfied my vengeance, I dressed myself with the utmost haste, concluding I had no time to lose, that the duke's relations would hunt for me all over Spain, and that the interest of my family not being sufficient to balance that of theirs, I should never be safe till gotten into a foreign country. Wherefore I selected two of my best horses, and with all the money and jewels I had, left my house before day, followed by the servant who had so well approved his fidelity. I chose the road to Valencia, designing to
"put

“ put myself on board the first vessel
 “ bound for Italy; and this day pass-
 “ ing near the wood where you were,
 “ I met Donna Theodora, who in-
 “ treated me to follow her, and endea-
 “ vour to part you.”

“ After the Toledan had done, Don
 “ Fadrique said: “ Don Juan, your
 “ revenge on the Duke of Naxera was
 “ just, do not therefore disturb your-
 “ self at the pursuit his relations may
 “ make. You shall, if you please, stay
 “ with me, until an occasion offers to
 “ embark for Italy. My uncle is go-
 “ vernor of Valencia, and you will be
 “ safer here than any where else, and
 “ will besides be with a man who de-
 “ sires for the future to be engaged
 “ to you by the strictest ties of friend-
 “ ship.”

“ Zarate answered Mendoza in terms
 “ full of acknowledgment, and ac-
 “ cepted the offered refuge. The power
 “ of sympathy is very surprizing, Don
 “ Cleofas, pursued Asmodeus; “ these
 “ two young cavaliers were touched
 “ with such a mutual affection for one
 “ another, that in a few days it cre-
 “ ated a friendship betwixt them, as
 “ entire as that of Orestes and Pylades.
 “ Besides the equality of their merit,
 “ there was such a harmony in their
 “ humours, that whatever pleased Don
 “ Fadrique, the other could not dislike.
 “ They both made up but one charac-
 “ ter, and they were made to love one
 “ another. Don Fadrique, who above
 “ all was enchanted with the deport-
 “ ment of his friend, could not forbear
 “ boasting of it every moment to The-
 “ odora. They both frequently visit-
 “ ed that lady, who continually looked
 “ on Mendoza’s addresses with indif-
 “ ference; at which he was extremely
 “ mortified, and complained of it to
 “ his friend; who told him, to com-
 “ fort him, that the most insensible wo-
 “ men suffer themselves to be touched
 “ at last; that nothing was wanting
 “ to lovers, but patience enough to
 “ wait the favourable time; that he
 “ should not be discouraged; that his
 “ lady, soon or late, would regard his ser-
 “ vices. This advice, though founded
 “ on experience, did not encourage the
 “ faint-hearted Mendoza, who very
 “ much feared he should never be able
 “ to please the widow Cifuentes; and
 “ this fear threw him into such a lan-
 “ guishing condition as excited pity in

“ Don Juan, who was soon after in a
 “ more deplorable state himself.

“ What reason soever the Toledan
 “ had to be disgusted against the sex,
 “ after the horrible falsity of his wife,
 “ yet he could not help loving Donna
 “ Theodora; though he was so far
 “ from abandoning himself to a passion
 “ which injured his friend, that he
 “ thought of nothing but struggling
 “ against it; and, fully persuaded that
 “ he could not better conquer it, than
 “ by keeping at a distance from those
 “ eyes which occasioned it, he resolved
 “ never to see the widow Cifuentes
 “ again. Accordingly, whensoever
 “ Mendoza would have carried him
 “ with him, he always found some
 “ pretext to excuse it.

“ But Don Fadrique never made one
 “ visit to the lady, that she did not ask
 “ why Don Juan had left off coming
 “ thither. One day, when she put that
 “ question, he answered smiling, that
 “ his friend had his reasons. “ Hah!
 “ what reasons can he have to avoid
 “ me?” said Donna Theodora. “ Ma-
 “ dam,” returned Mendoza, “ when
 “ I desired him to come along with
 “ me this day, and expressed some
 “ surprize at his refusal, he told me
 “ in confidence, what I am obliged
 “ to reveal to you to excuse him; it
 “ was, that he had engaged a mistress,
 “ and that not having long to stay in
 “ this city, his moments were pre-
 “ cious.”

“ I cannot be satisfied with this ex-
 “ cuse,” replied the widow Cifuen-
 “ tes, blushing; “ lovers are not al-
 “ lowed to abandon their friends.”
 “ Don Fadrique observing Donna The-
 “ odora changing colour, thought it
 “ only owing to her vanity; and believed
 “ that spite, to see herself neglected,
 “ was the cause of her blushing. But
 “ his conjecture was wrong: a more
 “ violent impulse than that of vanity
 “ occasioned the motions which she be-
 “ trayed; but for fear of his discover-
 “ ing her sentiments, she turned the
 “ discourse, and affected a gaiety dur-
 “ ing the rest of their conversation,
 “ which would have thrown the blame
 “ on his discernment, if he had not
 “ soon perceived the alteration.

“ As soon as the widow Cifuentes
 “ was alone, she turned extremely
 “ thoughtful. She then felt the utmost
 “ force of her passion for Don Juan,
 “ and

and imagining herself worse recompensed than she really was, "How cruel and unjust," said she sighing, "is that power which delights to inflame disagreeing hearts! I do not love Don Fadrique, and he adores me; and I burn for Don Juan, whose thoughts are taken up by another! Ah, Mendoza! no more reproach my indifference; thy friend has sufficiently revenged it."

At these words, struck with a quick sense of grief and jealousy, she dropped several tears; but hope, which assuages lovers pains, soon represented various flattering images to her mind. It suggested to her, that perhaps her rival might not be dangerous: that Don Juan might not be less seized by her charms, than amused by her favours, and that it was no hard matter to get rid of such feeble ties. But to enable her to judge herself what she ought to believe of the Toledan, she was resolved to speak with him in private. She sent for him; he came; and when they were alone, Donna Theodora thus began:

"I never thought that love could make a well-bred man forget the complaisance due to the ladies; and yet, Don Juan, since you have been in love, you avoid my house, for which I think I have reason to complain: but I am yet willing to believe that it is not of your own accord that you fly me; perhaps your lady may have forbid you seeing me. Confess it to me, Don Juan, and I will excuse it. I know lovers' actions are not free; they dare not disobey their mistresses."

"Madam," answered the Toledan, "I grant that my conduct ought to surprize you; but let me beg of you not to put me to justify it. Satisfy yourself with knowing that I have reason to avoid you."—"Whatever that reason may be," replied Donna Theodora, with the utmost emotion, "I insist upon it you tell me."—"Well, Madam," replied Don Juan, "you must be obeyed; but I shall not pity you, if you hear more than you desire to know."

"Don Fadrique," adds he, "has related to you the adventure which obliged me to quit Castile. In my travelling to Toledo, with a heart

full of resentment against women, I defied the whole sex ever to surprize me. With this fierce disposition I approached Valencia; I met you; and, what perhaps no other man has been able to do, I sustained the first sight of you without being moved. I even looked on you again afterwards with impunity; but, alas! how dear I paid for a few resolute days! You at last conquered my resistance; your beauty, wit, and charms, have exercised themselves on a rebel. In a word, I have all the love for you which you are capable of inspiring. "This, Madam, is what keeps me from you. The lady who you were told engrossed my thoughts, is but an imaginary one; and I only feigned the making Mendoza my confident, to prevent any suspicions I might raise in him, by my refusal to visit you along with him."

This unexpected discourse filled Donna Theodora with such an extraordinary joy, that she could not help discovering it. It is indeed true she did not concern herself at all to hide it; but instead of arming her eyes with some sort of severity, looking on the Toledan with a very tender air, she said, "You have told me your secret, Don Juan, and I will also discover mine."

"Insensible of the sighs of Don Alvaro Ponce, little moved at Mendoza's flames, I led an easy undisturbed life, when chance brought you near the wood where we met. Notwithstanding the confusion I was in, I yet observed you offered me your assistance with a very good grace; and the way in which you parted the two furious rivals, raised in me an advantageous opinion of your valour and address. But the means you proposed to reconcile them displeased me. I could not, without difficulty, resolve on the choice of either. But, not to conceal any thing from you, I believe you had then a small share in my repugnance; for at the very moment that my mouth, forced by necessity, named Don Fadrique, I felt my heart declare for the unknown cavalier. From that day, (which I may call happy, since you have owned your passion) your merit augmented my value for you."

"From

"From you," continued she, "I conceal no part of my thoughts, but impart them to you with the same frankness that I told Mendoça I did not love him. A woman who has the misfortune to conceive a passion for a person that can never love her, is in the right to restrain herself, and at least revenge her weakness by an eternal silence; but I take it for granted, that I may, without scruple, discover an innocent tenderness to a man whose intentions are lawful. Yes, I am in raptures to find you love me, and for that blessing render thanks to Heaven, which doubtless destined us for each other."

After these words the lady remained silent, to give Don Juan leave to speak, and room to discover those shining transports of joy and gratitude with which she believed she had inspired him; but, instead of appearing enchanted with what he had heard, he was profoundly thoughtful and melancholy.

"What do I see, Don Juan?" continued she, "When to make you a fortune, which another would think worth envying, I forget the pride of my sex, and shew you a soul charmed with you, can you resist the joy such an engaging declaration ought to raise in you? You remain in a frozen silence; nay, I see even grief in your eyes. Ah, Don Juan, what strange effects have my favours produced!"

"Alas! what other effects, Madam," interrupting her with a melancholy air, said the Toledan, "could they produce on a heart like mine? The greater degrees of passion you discover for me, so much the more miserable I am. You are not ignorant what Mendoça has done for me, and know the sacred friendship in which we are mutually engaged. Can I then found my happiness on the ruins of his most charming hopes?"—"You are too nice," said Donna Theodora; "I never promised Don Fadrique any thing which can obstruct my offering you my faith, without incurring his censure, and your receiving it without injustice. I own that the thoughts of an unhappy friend ought to give you some uneasiness; but, Don Juan, can that counterba-

lance the happy fate which attends you?"

"Yes, Madam," replied he warmly; "such a friend as Mendoça has more power over me than you imagine. If you could conceive all the tenderness and force of our friendship; what a miserable object of pity would you find me! Should I thus treat Don Fadrique, who has hidden nothing from me! My interests are become his, and the least concerns of mine never escape his vigilant care; to say all in a word, I share his soul with you."

"Alas! had I been destined to accept your favours, you should have shewn them before I had entered into such strict bonds of friendship. Then, charmed with the happiness of pleasing you, I should have looked on Mendoça with no other eyes than those of a rival; my heart, guarded against the affection he expressed for me, would not have returned it, and I should not have had those obligations I have at present to him. But, Madam, it is now too late; I have received all the services he could render me; I have followed the inclination I had for him: gratitude and affection have tied me up so close, and at last reduced me to the cruel necessity of renouncing the glorious fortune which you offer me."

Here Donna Theodora, whose eyes were covered with tears, dried them up with her handkerchief. This disturbed the Toledan; he found his resolution shaken and decaying, and could no longer answer for the consequences. "Wherefore," continued he, with a voice continually interrupted with sighs, "adieu, Madam, adieu! I must fly, to preserve my virtue; I cannot bear your tears, they render you too formidable: I separate myself from you for ever, and deplore the loss of so many charms, which my inexorable friendship forces me to sacrifice." These words ended, he retired with the poor remains of constancy, which were not a little difficult to retain.

After his departure, the widow Cisfuentes was agitated by a thousand confused emotions. She was ashamed of having declared herself to a man whom she could not keep. Yet finding no room to doubt but his passion

“sion was equal to her’s, and that the interest of his friend alone was what made him refuse the hand she offered, she was so just as to admire so very rare an instance of friendship, instead of being offended at it. Notwithstanding which, as one cannot help being afflicted when things do not succeed as one would have them, she therefore resolved for the country on the next day, to divert her melancholy: or rather to augment it; for solitude naturally tends rather to strengthen than weaken love.

“Don Juan, on the other side, not finding Mendoza in his apartment, locked himself up in his own, abandoning himself wholly to his grief; for, after what he had done for his friend, he thought he might be allowed at least to sigh. But Don Fadrique soon came to interrupt his thoughtfulness; and, concluding by his face that he was indisposed, he discovered no small concern; so that Don Juan, to remove it, was forced to assure him he wanted nothing but rest. Mendoza instantly left him to his repose, but with such an afflicted air, as more sensibly touched the Toledan with his misfortune. “O Heaven,” said he to himself, “why must the most tender friendship in the world occasion all the misery of my life!”

“The following day Don Fadrique was not yet risen, when word was brought him that Donna Theodora, and her whole family, were gone to her seat of Villa Real, from whence it was not probable they would soon return. This news less disturbed him on the pains he knew he should suffer by the distance of his beloved object, than that her departure was made a secret to him. Without knowing what to think, he took it for an ill presage.

“He rose to visit his friend, as well to talk with him concerning it, as to enquire after his health. But having just got dressed, Don Juan entered his chamber, saying, “I come myself to remove the uneasiness I gave you; I am very well to-day.” —“That good news,” answered Mendoza, “a little consoles me, after the ill I have received.” The Toledan asked what that was; and Don Fadrique, after sending away his ser-

vants, said, “Donna Theodora is this morning gone into the country, where it is believed she intends a long stay. I am very much surprized at it; why should she hide it from me? What think you of it, Don Juan? Have not I reason to be alarmed at it?”

“Zarate carefully avoided telling him his real sentiments, and endeavoured to persuade him that Donna Theodora might go out of town, without giving any reason for his fears. But Mendoza, very little satisfied with the reasons which his friend gave to hearten him, interrupted him: “All this discourse,” said he, “cannot remove the jealousy I have conceived. Perhaps I may imprudently have done something which may have displeased Donna Theodora, and to punish it, she leaves me without condescending so far as to let me know my crime.

“However it is, I cannot live in this uncertain condition; Don Juan, let us follow her, my horses shall be ready instantly.” —“I advise you,” said the Toledan, “not to take any body with you. This explanation of her conduct ought to be without witnesses.” —“Don Juan will not be accounted more than proper,” replied Don Fadrique; “Donna Theodora is not ignorant that you know all that passes in my heart. She values you; and far from being an obstacle, you will be assisting in the appeasing her in my favour.”

“No, Don Fadrique,” replied he, “my presence cannot be serviceable to you; I therefore conjure you to go alone.” —“No, dear Don Juan,” returned Mendoza, “we will go together; I expect this complaisance from your friendship.” —“How tyrannical is that!” cried the Toledan with an air of grief; “why do you exact from my friendship what it ought not to grant you?”

“These words, which Don Fadrique did not comprehend, and the warmth with which they were uttered, strangely surprized him. He looked very intently on his friend. “Don Juan,” said he, “what is the meaning of those words I have just heard? What horrid suspicion rises in my mind! Ah, you too much afflict me by

"by your too great constraint? Speak; what is the cause of the unwillingness to go along with me, which you expressed?"

"I would willingly hide it from you," answered the Toledan; "but since you yourself force me to discover it, I must no longer conceal it. Let us never more, Don Fadrique, applaud the sympathy of our affections; it is but too perfect. The beauty which has wounded you, has not spared your friend. Donna Theodora—" "You will then be my rival!" interrupted Mendoza, turning pale. "Ever since I discerned my love," returned Don Juan, "I have struggled against it. I have continually avoided the sight of the widow Cifuentes; you know it, and yourself have blamed me for it. I triumphed at least over my passion, though I could not destroy it."

"But yesterday that lady sent to acquaint me, that she desired to speak with me at her house. I went; she asked why I seemed to avoid her? At last I was forced to discover the true cause; believing that after that declaration she would approve my intention of always flying the sight of her; but by a fantastical turn of my ill stars—shall I tell you? Yes, Mendoza, I must tell you—I found Donna Theodora strongly prepossessed with a passion for me."

"Though Don Fadrique was the best natured and most reasonable man in the world, he was seized with a fit of rage at these words: and here interrupting his friend; "Hold, Don Juan," said he, "rather pierce my breast than pursue this fatal recital. You are not contented with owning yourself my rival, but also inform me that she loves you. Just Heaven! what is it that you venture to impart to me? You put our friendship to too severe a trial. But why do I say our friendship! you have long since violated it by encouraging the perfidious sentiments you have now declared to me."

"How much was I mistaken! I thought you master of a generous great soul, but find you a faithless friend, since you can entertain a passion which wounds me; I am sinking under this unexpected blow, which I feel the heavier for being

"given by a hand—" "In the name of God, do me more justice, Mendoza," interrupted the Toledan in his turn, "and allow yourself a moment's patience; I am not a false friend. Hear me, and you will repent calling me by that odious name."

"He then related what had passed between the widow Cifuentes and him; the tender owning of her passion, and the persuasions she used to engage him to yield without scruple to his love. He repeated his answer; and, as he advanced in the relation of what a firm resolution he discovered, by the same degrees Don Fadrique perceived his anger to wear off. "At last," adds Don Juan, "friendship carried it from love, and I refused to give my faith to Donna Theodora. She wept in angry despite; but, great God! what a storm did her tears raise in my soul! I can never remember them without trembling afresh at the danger I ran. I began to believe myself barbarous; and for some moments, Mendoza, my heart became unfaithful to you. I did not, however, yield to my weakness, but escaped those dangerous tears by a hasty flight. But it is not enough to have avoided this danger, it ought to be feared for the future; I must hasten my departure; I will no more expose myself to Theodora's eyes. After all this, will Don Fadrique any more accuse me of ingratitude and perfidiousness?"

"No," replied Mendoza, embracing him, "I return you all your innocence: my eyes are open; pardon my unjust reproaches, and impute them to the first transport of a lover, who had lost all his hopes. Alas! ought I to think that Donna Theodora could see you long without loving you, and yielding to those charms whose power I myself have tried! You are a true friend: I will no more charge my misery on any thing but fortune; and far from hating you, I feel my tenderness for you increase each minute. Can you renounce the possession of Donna Theodora? Can you offer up to friendship such a sacrifice; and must not I be touched with it? Can you conquer your love, and shall not

O

"I make

"I make an effort to restrain mine?
 "I ought to equal you in generosity.
 "Don Juan, follow the inclination
 "which draws you; marry the wi-
 "dow Cifuentes; let my heart, if
 "it will, sigh. Mendoza begs it of
 "you."

"You press me in vain," replied
 "the Toledan; "I confess I have a vio-
 "lent passion for her; but your re-
 "pose is dearer to me than my own
 "happiness."—"Ought then," an-
 "swered Don Fadrique, "Donna
 "Theodora's repose to be indifferent?
 "Let us not flatter ourselves; the in-
 "clination she has for you decides my
 "fate. Though you should remove
 "yourself, though, to yield her to
 "me, you should spend a deplorable
 "life in far distant countries, I should
 "never be the better for it; since, as
 "she never yet was pleased with me,
 "she never will: Heaven has reserved
 "her for you alone; she loved you
 "from the first moment she saw you;
 "in a word, she cannot be happy with-
 "out you. Accept then the hand
 "which she offers, accomplish her and
 "your own desires, leave me to my
 "ill fortune; and do not make all
 "three miserable, when one may ex-
 "haust all the rigour of destiny."

Asmodeus was here obliged to in-
 terrupt his discourse, to hearken to
 the student; who said, "What you
 tell me is surprizing; are there really
 any people in the world of this ex-
 traordinary character? I see no
 friends in the world who do not
 quarrel, I do not say for such mis-
 tresses as Theodora, but even for er-
 rant jilts. Can a lover renounce the
 object he adores, and by whom he
 is beloved, for the sake of a friend?
 I never thought that possible but in
 a romance: the nature of which is
 to give us men as they ought to be,
 not as they are."—"I agree with you,"
 answered the devil, "it is very un-
 common; but it is not only to be
 found in romances, but in the sub-
 lime nature of man, and that since
 the deluge, in which compass I have
 known two instances of it besides
 this. But to return to our story.

The two friends continued to sa-
 crifice their passion; and the one re-
 solving not to yield in point of ge-
 nerosity to the other, their amorous

sentiments remained suspended for
 some days. They ceased to speak of
 Donna Theodora; they durst not
 mention her name. But whilst friend-
 ship thus triumphed over love in the
 city of Valencia; love, as though he
 would revenge himself, reigned at
 another place with a tyrannic sway,
 and forced an absolute obedience
 without the least resistance.

Donna Theodora abandoned her-
 self to that tender passion at her seat of
 Villa Real, situate near the sea; she
 incessantly thought of Don Juan, and
 could not but hope she should marry
 him, though she had no reason to ex-
 pect it, after the rigid sentiments of
 friendship for Don Fadrique which
 he discovered.

One day, after sun-set, as she was
 walking on the sea-side with one of
 her women, she perceived a small
 shallop just got on shore. At first
 sight, there seemed to be on board
 seven or eight very ill-looking fellows;
 but after having looked on them
 nearer, and observed them with more
 attention, she concluded that she had
 mistaken masks for faces, accord-
 ingly they were really masked, and arm-
 ed with swords and bayonets.

She trembled at their frightful af-
 fects, and from thence fearing that
 the descent which they were going
 to make boded no good, she return-
 ed hastily towards her house. She
 looked back from time to time to ob-
 serve them, and perceiving that they
 were landed, and began to pursue
 her, she ran as fast as she could;
 but not being so nimble-footed as
 Atalanta, and the masked men be-
 ing strong and swift, they overtook
 her at her own door, and there seized
 her.

The lady and her woman shrieked
 out so loud, that they drew some of the
 domesticks thither, who alarmed the
 whole house, and all Donna Theodo-
 ra's footmen ran thither, armed with
 forks and clubs. Whilst two of the
 lustiest of the masked gang, after
 having seized in their arms the mis-
 tress and the maid, carried them to
 the shallop, maugre all their resist-
 ance; the remainder made head a-
 gainst the family, who began to
 press very hard upon them. The
 fight was long; but at last the mask-



Plate III.

Published as the Act directs, by Hamilton & Co. Aug. 6th 1780.

102A

1871
APR 10
1871

ers succeeded in their enterprize; and regained their shallop, fighting as they retreated. It was now time they should retire; for they were not embarked, before they saw coming from the Valencia road four or five cavaliers, who rode full speed that way, and seemed to fly to the relief of Donna Theodora. At this sight they made so much haste to get out to sea, that all the cavaliers endeavours were in vain.

These cavaliers were Don Fadrique and Don Juan. The first of them had received a letter, by which he was advised, that it was reported by good hands that Don Alvaro Ponce was at the isle of Majorca; that he had equipped a sort of tartan; and, assisted by twenty men of desperate fortunes, had designed to seize and carry off the widow Cifuentes the first time she should be at her country-seat. On this news the Toledan and he, with their valets de chambre, instantly set out, to acquaint Donna Theodora with this news. At a good distance they observed a very great number of people on the sea-shore, who seemed engaged against one another; and not doubting but that it was as they feared, they spurred on their horses full speed to oppose Don Alvaro's project. But whatever haste they could make, they arrived only soon enough to be witnesses of the rape which they designed to have prevented.

In the mean time Alvaro Ponce, trusting to the success of his audacious attempt, made off from the coast with his prey; and his shallop reached a small armed vessel, which expected him out at sea. It is not possible to be sensible of a greater sorrow than that which Mendoza and Don Juan felt. They poured out a thousand imprecations against the ravisher, and filled the air with complaints as lamentable as vain. All the domesticks of Donna Theodora, animated by such excellent examples, did not spare their tears. The shore resounded with mournful cries: rage, despair, and desolation, reigned on the melancholy strand; nor did the rape of Helen occasion a greater consternation in the Spartan court.

C H A P. V.

OF THE BROIL BETWIXT A TRAGIC AND COMIC AUTHOR.

HERE the student could not help interrupting the devil: Signior Asmodeus, said he, though the story you are telling is extremely moving, yet I am not able to resist my earnest desire to know the meaning of what I there see. I discern two men in their shirts in a chamber, pulling and tearing each other by the throat and hair, and several men in their night-gowns endeavouring to part them. Pray tell me what all that bustle means? The devil, who endeavoured to oblige him in every thing, without delay satisfied his request in the following manner.

Those persons whom you see fighting in their shirts, are two French authors; and those who are parting them, are two Germans, a Dutchman and an Italian, lodged all in the same inn, which is frequented by none but foreigners. One of these authors writes tragedies, and the other comedies. The first, upon some disgust he met with in France, crowded himself into the ambassador's retinue; and the other, discontented with his circumstances at Paris, came to Madrid in quest of a better fortune.

The tragic writer is a vain insolent fellow; who, in spite of the most sensible part of the public, has gained a great name in his own country. To keep his muse in breath, he writes every day. Not being able to sleep this night, he began a play whose plot is taken from Homer's Iliad. He has finished but one scene; and his least fault being that of the rest of the poets, an impertinent inclination to pester other people with their performances, he rises, snatches up his candle, and in his shirt knocks very hard at the chamber-door of the comic author; who, making a better use of his time, was got into a sound sleep; but soon waking at the noise, he opened the door to the other, who said, entering the room like a man possessed, "Fall down, my friend, fall at my feet, and adore a genius" which

" which Melpomene has honoured. I
 " have just brought forth some verses.
 " But why do I say I have just done
 " it! it is Apollo himself that dic-
 " tated them to me. If I were at
 " Paris, I would this day read them
 " from house to house, and I wait only
 " for day-light to charm monsieur the
 " ambassador, and all the French at
 " Madrid with them. But before I
 " shew them to any body, I will re-
 " peat them to you."

" I thank you for the preference,"
 " answered the comic author, with a
 " powerful yawn; " but the worst of
 " it is, that you have chosen an un-
 " seasonable time, for I went to bed so
 " late, that I am over-powered by
 " sleep, and so cannot promise to hear
 " all the verses you have to repeat,
 " without nodding."—" Oh, I will
 " answer for that," replied the tra-
 " gic author; " though you were dy-
 " ing, the scene which I have just now
 " written would revive you. My ver-
 " sification is not a rhapsody of stale
 " common thoughts and trivial ex-
 " pressions, supported barely by rhyme;
 " it is a noble masculine poem, which
 " moves the heart, and strikes the in-
 " tellect. I am none of those poet-
 " asters whose wretched modern com-
 " positions pass over the stage like so
 " many ghosts, and then go to Utica
 " to divert the Africans. My pieces,
 " worthy to be consecrated with my
 " statue in the library of Apollo Pa-
 " latinus, are crowded the thirtieth
 " night. But let us," added our
 " modest poet, " come to the verses I
 " intend to give you a sample of."

" This is my tragedy, *The death of*
Patroclus. Scene the first. Briseis
 " and other of Achilles's captives ap-
 " pear tearing their hair, and beating
 " their breasts, to express their grief
 " for the death of Patroclus. Wholly
 " unable to support themselves, being
 " utterly dispirited by despair, they
 " fall down on the stage. This you
 " will say is striking a bold stroke:
 " but it is what I aim at. Let your lit-
 " tle geniuses keep within the bounds
 " of imitation, without daring to go
 " an inch out of the common road.
 " With all my heart. Their fearfulness
 " is prudence. As for me, I
 " love novelty; and, in my opinion,
 " in order to move and transport spec-

tators, one must present them with
 new unexpected incidents.

" Well then, the captives are upon
 " the ground; Phoenix, Achilles's
 " governor, is with them to help them
 " one after another to rise, and then
 " opens the drama with these lines.

Priam shall lose his Hector and his Troy;
 Achilles, to revenge his friend prepares:
 See! glittering through the air, on every side,
 Pikes, lances, helmets, cuirasses, and darts;
 The rattling hail in less abundance pours.
 The Greeks all swear t' appease Patroclus'
 ghost.

Fierce Agamemnon, and divine Camelus,
 Old honour'd Nestor, equal to the gods,
 Leontes, dextrous at the manag'd spear,
 Strong Diomedes, and silver-tongu'd Ulysses,
 And see! Achilles comes—godlike he drives
 His steeds immortal towards Troy's proud
 walls,

And leaves the distant winds far off behind;
 Then thus he shouting cries—* O vigorous
 race,

Podargus, Xanthus, Balius, quick advance!
 And when with spoil and carnage we are
 tir'd,

Haste to regain our camp, but not without
 your master,

Fleet Xanthus bows his neck, and thus re-
 plies,

For Juno gave him speech—Achilles, know,
 Your faithful horses shall your will obey;
 But your dark hour of fate is drawing near,
 He spoke—and now the winged chariot flies.
 The exulting Greeks behold, and shouting
 loud,

With sounds of joy shake all th' adjacent
 coast.

Dress'd in Vulcanian arms the conqu'ring
 prince

Appears more glittering than the morning
 star,

Or than the sun commencing his career,
 When he moves on to bless the world with
 day;

He flames like fires which on some moun-
 tain-top

Are made at night by the rejoicing swains.

" I stop here," continued the tragic
 " author, " to give you a moment's
 " breathing: for if I should repeat
 " the whole scene at once, the too
 " great multiplicity of shining passages
 " and sublime thoughts would over-
 " come you. Observe the beauty and
 " justice of that comparison; *As bright*
 " *as fires made on the top of a moun-*
 " *tain at night*. Every body will not
 " discern it: but you, who have wit
 " and just sense; you, I say, ought

* Hom. Iliad, lib. 19.

"to be ravished with it."—"I am, doubtless," answered the comic poet with a malicious smile; "nothing is so fine; and I hope you will not forget, in your tragedy, the care which Thetis took to drive away the flies from Patroclus's body."—"Do not think to make a jest of it," replied the tragic poet. "A skillful writer may venture any thing. That passage perhaps of the whole piece is capable of affording the finest verses, and I assure you I shall not miscarry in it.

"All my works," added he, "as you see, are stamped with the image of venerable antiquity; and when I read them, observe how they are applauded! I stop at every verse to receive their due praises. I remember I one day read a tragedy in a house at Paris, where the beaux-esprits go at dinner-time, and where without vanity I do not pass for a Pradon. The old Countess of Villebrune was there, who has an admirable and nice taste. I am her favourite poet: she wept heartily at the first scene; called for a fresh handkerchief at the second act; did nothing but sob at the third; grew sick at the fourth; and, at the catastrophe, I thought she would have expired with the hero of the piece."

"At these words, the merry comic author, however desirous to keep his gravity, could not contain from bursting into a laugh: "Ay," said he, "I very well remember that countess's humour; she is a woman who cannot bear comedy; she has such an utter aversion for it, that she runs out of the box as soon as the music has done, to vent all her grief. Tragedy is her favourite passion; let the play be good or bad, provided there be unhappy lovers in it, you are sure of that lady's company; and, to be free with you, if I wrote serious poems, I should be glad of other applauders than her ladyship."

"Oh, I have others also," said the tragic poet: "I have the approbation of a thousand persons of quality of both sexes."—"I should very much mistrust the applause of such people," interrupted the comic writer. "I should be very cautious of standing by their judgments; and I will

tell you why: such sort of spectators are generally absent while a piece is reading, and are taken by the beauty of a verse or fine sentiment. This is enough to challenge their commendation of a whole work, otherwise very imperfect. On the other hand, a few flat hard verses shock them, and there needs no more to make them pass condemnation upon an excellent piece."

"Well, then," replied the grave author, "since you would have me distrust such judges, I trust them to the applause of the pit."—"Pray, if you please," replied the other, "do not talk to me of your pit; they are too fantastical in their decisions; they are sometimes so grossly mistaken at the playing of new pieces, that they shall continue, for two whole months together, enchanted with a bad play. Indeed when it comes out, their eyes are opened, and the author is damned after such success."

"That is a misfortune I am in no danger of," said the tragic writer; "my works are printed as often as played. I own, indeed, it is not so as to comedies, they being but trifles, wretched, feeble productions of wit."—"Not so fast, good Sir," interrupted the other author; "stop a little, if you please; you do not see you grow warm. I beseech you, speak of comedy with a little less contempt. Do you believe a comic piece less difficult to write than a tragedy; or that it is easier to make well-bred people laugh than cry? Undeceive yourself, and be assured that an ingenious subject, which turns on the manners of men, does not cost less pains than the finest heroic poem."

"Igad," said the tragic poet, with an air of raillery, "I am surprized to hear you express yourself thus: but, Monsieur Calidas, to avoid all dispute, I will for the future like your works, though I have hitherto despised them."—"I do not value your contempt, Monsieur Giblet," hastily returned the comic author; "and, to answer your insolent airs, I will now tell you, in my turn, what I think of the verses you have just recited. They are ridiculous, and the thoughts, though taken

“ taken out of Homer; are nevertheless flat. Achilles talks to his horses, and his horses answer him; that is a mean low image, as well as the comparison of the fire the peasants make on a mountain. To pillage the ancients in this manner, is not to do them any honour. They indeed abound with admirable beauties; but more sense and a better taste than you have, are requisite to make a happy choice of what ought to be borrowed from them.”

“ Since your genius is not sufficiently elevated,” replied Gible, “ to discern the beauties of my poem, and to punish your rashness in presuming to criticize on my scene, you shall not hear a line more of it.” — “ I have been too severely punished,” returned Calidas, “ in hearing the beginning. It becomes you indeed very well to despise my comedies! Know then, that the very worst I could ever write, will always appear far superior to your best pieces. Assure yourself, it is much easier to take a flight, and soar on lofty subjects, than to hit upon a delicate nice raillery.”

“ Thanks to my stars,” said the serious writer disdainfully, “ if I have the misfortune not to be approved of by you, I ought to be very easy under it! The court thinks more favourably of me than you; and the pension it vouchsafed——” “ Do not think to dazzle me with your court-pensions,” interrupted Calidas; “ I know too well how they are obtained, to value your works at all the more for that: and to prove that I am convinced it is easier to write tragedies, when I return to France, if I do not succeed in comedies, I will descend to the writing of tragedy.”

“ For a farce-scribbler,” interrupted the grave author, “ you have indeed a great deal of vanity.” — “ For a most wretched versifier,” said the comic author, “ you have really an extravagant opinion of yourself.” — “ You are an insolent fellow,” replied the other; “ I tell you, diminutive Monsieur Calidas, if I was not in your chamber, the catastrophe of this adventure should teach you how to respect the buskin.” — “ Oh, let not that consideration withhold you; great Monsieur Gible,” answered

Calidas; “ if you have a mind to fight, I will engage you here as readily as any where else.”

At these words they tore one another by the throat and hair, and both boxed very warmly, without sparing each other. An Italian, who lay in the next room, heard the whole dialogue, and by the noise of the blows concluded they were fighting; he then rose, and though an Italian, out of compassion for them, called up the house. A Dutchman and two Germans, whom you see in morning-gowns, came along with the Italian, to part the combatants.

“ This is a very pleasant fray,” said Don Cleofas; “ but, by what I see, it is plain that the tragic authors in France think themselves much more considerable men than those that write comedy.” — “ Undoubtedly,” answered Almodeus, “ the former suppose themselves as much above the latter, as the heroes of the tragedies are above the footmen in the comic plays.” — “ Upon what pretence can they found their arrogance?” replied the student; “ is it that it is more difficult to write a tragedy than a comedy?” — “ Your question,” answered the devil, “ has been an hundred times debated, and is still every day. My decision of it, without offence to such of mankind as are of a different sentiment, is this; that to form an excellent plot for a comedy does not require a less effort of genius than to lay the finest plan in the world for a tragedy; for if the latter were the more difficult, we must then conclude, that a writer of tragedies would be more capable of making a comedy than the best comic author, which would not agree with experience. These two sorts of poems then require a different genius, but equal skill.

“ Let us end this digression,” continued the devil, “ and I will re-assume the thread of my story, which you interrupted.”

CHAP. VI.

THE CONTINUATION, AND CONCLUSION OF THE STORY OF THE POWER OF FRIENDSHIP.

THOUGH Donna Theodora's servants could not hinder her being forced away, they yet courageously

ously opposed it, and their resistance was fatal to some of Alvaro's men; amongst others, they wounded one so dangerously, that, unable to follow his comrades, he remained almost dead on the sand.

This unfortunate wretch was known to be one of Alvaro's footmen; and Donna Theodora's servants, perceiving that he yet breathed, carried him to her house, where they spared nothing that could contribute to the recovery of his spirits; and they gained their end, though the great quantity of blood which he had lost rendered him extremely feeble. To engage him to speak, they promised to secure his life, and not to deliver him up to the severity of justice, provided he would tell where his master designed to carry Donna Theodora.

Flattered by this promise, though in his condition there appeared but small hopes of his ever taking the benefit of it, he collected his little remainder of strength, and in a very feeble tone confirmed the advice which Don Fadrique had before received; and added, that Don Alvaro's design was to carry the widow Cifuentes to Sassari in the island of Sardinia, where he had a relation whose interest and authority were very great, and who he knew would certainly protect him.

This confession somewhat abated the despair of Mendoza and the Tolledan. They left the wounded man in the house, where he died some hours after, and returning to Valencia consulted what measures to take. They resolved to pursue their common enemy to the place of his retreat. Accordingly, they both embarked very soon after at Denia for Port Mahon, not doubting their meeting with an opportunity there of a passage to Sardinia. Their hopes proved true; for they were no sooner arrived at Mahon, than they were informed that a vessel freighted for Cagliari was just ready to sail, and they took the opportunity.

The ship put off with the most favourable wind they could desire; but five or six hours after they were perfectly becalmed, and at night the wind turning directly contrary, they were obliged to steer from one side

to the other, without hope of its changing. They steered thus for three days; and on the fourth, at two in the afternoon, they discovered a vessel making all possible sail to them. They at first took it for a merchantman, but observing that it came within cannon shot of them without shewing any colours, they did not doubt but that it was a pirate.

They were not deceived; it was a Tunis ship, which supposed that the christians would yield without fighting; but when they perceived that they cleared their ship, and prepared their guns, they concluded them in earnest; wherefore they stopped, did the same, and prepared to engage.

They began to fire, and the christians seemed to have some advantage: but an Algerine, larger, and provided with more guns than both the other, coming in the midst of the action, and taking the part of the Tunis ship, made full sail to the Spaniard, and obliged him to sustain the fire of both ships.

At this sight the christians despairing, and resolving not to continue an engagement now become too unequal, gave over firing, when there appeared on the poop of the Algerine a slave, who cried out to them in Spanish, that if they expected quarter, they must surrender to the Algerine. These words ended, a Turk displayed the Algerine green taffata flag, with silver crescents. The christians, considering that all resistance would be vain, no longer thought of defending themselves, but yielded with all the grief which the horrid idea of slavery could cause in freemen; and the master of the vessel, fearing a longer delay might irritate the barbarous conquerors, took the colours from the poop, threw himself into the pinnacle with some of the sailors, and went on board the Algerine.

That pirate sent a parcel of soldiers to plunder the Spanish ship, as he of Tunis likewise gave the same order to some of his crew; so that all the passengers were, in an instant, disarmed and searched, and sent on board the Algerine, where the two pirates divided their prey by lot.

It had been at least a consolation for

for Mendoça and his friend, to have both fallen into the hands of the same pirate. Their chains would have been lighter, if they could have joined in the bearing them: but fortune, resolving they should experience all her severity, subjected Don Fadrique to the Tunis robber, and Don Juan to the Algerine. Imagine the despair that seized these friends when they saw they were going to part. They threw themselves at the pirate's feet, and conjured him not to separate them. But these savage villains, whose barbarity is proof against any sight, could not be moved; but, on the contrary, concluding these two captives to be considerable men, who could pay a large ransom, they resolved to keep them, as they were, divided.

Mendoça and Zarate, seeing they could not soften these merciless wretches, cast their eyes on each other, and by their looks expressed the excess of their affliction. But when the whole booty was divided, and the Tunis pirate was going to return on board his own ship with his slaves, the two friends were ready to expire with grief. Mendoça ran to the Toledan, and clasping him in his arms: "We must then," said he, "separate; Oh, terrible necessity! Is it not enough that the audacious villainy of a ravisher remains unpunished, but must we be incapacitated to unite our complaints and sorrows? Ah! Don Juan, what have we done to Heaven, that we must, in such a cruel manner, experience it's heavy displeasure?" — "Ah! look no where else for the cause of our misfortunes," answered Don Juan, "they ought only to be imputed to me; the death of the two persons whom I sacrificed, though excusable in men's eyes, must undoubtedly have irritated Heaven, which punishes you for having engaged in friendship with a miserable wretch, whom justice pursues."

At these words they both showered down tears in great abundance, and sighed with such violence, that the other slaves were not less touched with their grief than their own mis-

fortunes. The Tunis soldiers, yet more barbarous than their master, observing that Mendoça did not hasten to the vessel, brutally snatched him out of the Toledan's arms, and forced him along with them, loading him with blows. "Adieu, dear friend," cried he, "I shall never see you more! Donna Theodora is not yet revenged; the ills which I expect from these cruel men will be the least of the sufferings of my slavery."

Don Juan could not answer these words; the treatment which he saw his friend receive, threw him into a fit that rendered him speechless. The order of the story requiring us to follow the Toledan, we will leave Don Fadrique on board the Tunis ship.

The Algerine returned to his country, where being arrived, he carried the new slaves to the basha, and thence to the public slave-market. An officer belonging to the Dey Mezzomorto bought Don Juan for his master, and set him to work in the garden belonging to Mezzomorto's haram*. Though this employ must needs prove very painful to a gentleman, yet the solitude which it required rendered it agreeable; for in his present circumstances nothing could more divert him than the reflection on his misfortunes, on which he incessantly employed his thoughts; and was so far from endeavouring to dislodge these most afflicting images, that he seemed to take pleasure in the remembrance of them.

One day, not perceiving the dey, who was walking in the garden, he sung a melancholy song as he was working. Mezzomorto stopped to listen to it; and, being very well pleased with the voice, came up to him, and asked him his name. The Toledan told him it was Alvaro; for when he was sold to the dey, he thought fit to change his name, pursuant to the custom of other slaves, and hit upon that first, by reason the rape of Theodora by Alvaro Ponce was continually in his mind. Mezzomorto, who understood Spanish indifferently well, put several questions to him concerning the customs of

* Haram is the name given to all private persons seraglios; none but that of the grand signior being properly called the seraglio.

Spain, and particularly concerning the measures the men took to render themselves agreeable to the women; to all which Don Juan returned such answers as very well satisfied the dey.

"Alyaro," said he to him, "you seem not to want sense, and indeed I do not take you for a common man; but whatever you are, you have the good fortune to please me, and I will honour you so far as to make you my confident." Don Juan, at these words, prostrated himself at the dey's feet, and after having taken up the lowest border of his robe, with it touched his eyes, mouth, and head.

"To begin with giving you some marks of it," resumed Mezzomorto, "I will tell you that I have the finest women of Europe in my seraglio; amongst them I have one that is beyond all sort of comparison, and I do not believe that the grand signior himself is possessor of a more perfect beauty, though his ships continually bring him women from all parts of the world. Her face to me seems the sun reflected, and her shape is as exact as that of the rose-tree in the garden of Eram; you may see that I am enchanted.

"But this miracle of nature, though enriched with such rare beauty, gives herself wholly up to a fatal grief, which neither time nor my love can dissipate; and though fortune has subjected her to my desires, I have not yet satisfied them. I have constantly bridled them; and, contrary to the common custom of men in my circumstances, who aim no farther than at sensual pleasures, I have endeavoured to gain her heart by such a complaisance and profound respect, as the meanest muselman would be ashamed of ever owning to a christian slave.

"Yet all my tenderness only increases her melancholy, and her obstinacy begins at last to tire me. The idea of slavery is not graven in such deep tracks in others, and even those were soon effaced by my favourable treatment of them. This tedious grief fatigues my patience; but before I yield to the violent transports of love, I must make one effort more, in which I would use your assistance; the slave, being a christian, and of your nation, may

make you her confident, and you may persuade her better than any other. Advantageously represent to her my quality and riches; tell her that I will distinguish her from all my slaves; engage her to consider, if necessary, that she may one day become the wife of Mezzomorto; and assure her that I shall have a greater value for her than for a sultana whose hand his highness should himself tender me."

Don Juan a second time prostrated himself at the dey's feet, and though not very well pleased with his commission, assured him that he would do his best to acquit himself in the performance. "It is enough," replied Mezzomorto; "leave your work, and follow me. I will order it that you shall speak with this beautiful slave alone; but have a care how you abuse the trust, which if you do, your rashness shall be punished by tortures unknown even to Turks themselves. Endeavour to overcome your melancholy, and know that your liberty is annexed to the end of my sufferings." Don Juan left off working, and followed the dey, who was gone before to dispose the afflicted captive to admit his agent.

She was with two old slaves, who retired at his approach. The charming slave saluted him with profound respect; but could not help trembling, for fear of what might happen to her, every visit he made. He perceived it; and to dissipate her fears, "Fair captive," said he, "I come hither for no other reason than to tell you, that I have a Spaniard amongst my slaves, with whose conversation probably you may not be displeased; if you desire to see him, I will give you leave to speak with him, and that also without any witnesses."

The beautiful slave answered, that she most earnestly desired it. "I will immediately send him to you," replied Mezzomorto, "if his discourse can assuage your grief." These words ended, he ordered the two old slaves who served her, another way, and afterwards himself quitted her apartment; and meeting the Tole-dan, he whispered to him, "You may enter: and after you have talk-

"ed to the fair slave, come to my
"apartment, and give me an account
"of your success."

Don Juan entered the chamber,
and saluted the slave without fixing
his eyes on her; and she received his
salutation, without looking very in-
tently on him. But beginning to
look on each other more earnestly,
they burst out into tears of surprize
and joy. "O God," said the To-
ledan, approaching her, "am I
"not deluded by a phantom! Is it
"really Donna Theodora whom I
"see?"—"Ah, Don Juan," cried
the fair slave, "is it you that speak
"to me?"—"Yes, Madam," an-
swered he, tenderly kissing one of
her hands, "it is Don Juan himself.
"You may know me by the tears
"which my eyes, charmed with the
"happiness of seeing you again, can-
"not restrain, at the transports of
"joy which your presence is only ca-
"pable of exciting. I have done mur-
"muring at fortune, since she has re-
"stored you to my wishes. But whi-
"ther does my immoderate joy hurry
"me? Alas! I forget that you are
"in chains! What strange caprice of
"fortune brought you hither? How
"did you escape Don Alvaro's rash
"passion? Ah, what dismal alarms
"does that give me! and how much
"am I afraid that Heaven has not suf-
"ficiently protected your virtue."

"Heaven," said Donna Theodora,
"has revenged me of Alvaro Ponce. If
"I had time to tell you——" "You
"have enough," interrupted Don Ju-
an. "The dey has permitted me
"to be with you; and, what may sur-
"prize you, to talk with you alone.
"Let us make the best use of these
"happy moments, and pray acquaint
"me with all that has happened to
"you, from the time of your seizure,
"to this present."—"Ah, who told
"you that it was Don Alvaro that
"seized me?"—"I know it but too
"well," returned Don Juan. Then
"he succinctly related how he was in-
"formed of it, and how Mendocá and
"he embarked in search of the ravisher,
"and were taken by pirates. After
"which Donna Theodora immediately
"began the recital of her adventures
"in these words.

"It is needless to tell you that I
"was extremely surprized to find my-

self seized by a troop of masked men.
"I swooned away in the arms of him
"that carried me off, and when I got
"out of my fit, which doubtless was
"very long, I found myself alone
"with Agnes, one of my women, at
"sea, in the cabin of a vessel under
"sail."

Agnes exhorted me to patience,
and by her discourse gave me room
to conclude that she had a correspon-
dence with my ravisher: who then
presumed to shew himself to me; and
throwing himself at my feet, "Ma-
dam," said he, "pardon the way
"Don Alvaro has taken to possess you.
"You know what tender addresses I
"made to you, and with what con-
"stancy I disputed your heart with
"Don Fadrique, to the time that you
"gave him the preference. If my pas-
"sion for you had only been a com-
"mon one, I had conquered it, and
"comforted myself under the mis-
"fortune; but I am destined to adore
"your charms, and scorned as I am,
"I cannot free myself from their pow-
"er. But yet do not fear that my
"love will offer any violence. I did
"not make this attempt on your li-
"berty, to affright your virtue by
"base means; no, all I pretended to
"in the retirement whither I am con-
"veying you, is, that an eternal and
"sacred knot may bind our destinies."

He said several other things which
I cannot well remember; they tend-
ed to hint that he thought in forc-
ing me to marry him, he did not
tyrannize; and that I ought ra-
ther to look upon him as a pas-
sionate lover, than an insolent ra-
visher. Whilst he spake, I did no-
thing but weep and despair: where-
fore, without losing time in endea-
vours to persuade me, he left me;
but, at his retiring, made a sign to
Agnes, which I discerned was his
order to her to reinforce with ad-
drefs those arguments with which
he designed to dazzle my reason.

She acted her part to the full; she
suggested to me, that, after the noise
of a rape, I must of necessity be
forced to accept Don Alvaro's offer,
how great soever my aversion for
him might be. That my reputa-
tion demanded this sacrifice of my
heart. The laying me under the
necessity of such a hideous marriage
not

“not being the way to dry up my
“tears, I remained inconsolable. Ag-
“nes did not know what to say to me
“farther, when on a sudden we heard
“a great noise on the deck, which en-
“gaged all our attention.

“This was occasioned by the sur-
“prise of Don Alvaro’s men, at the
“sight of a large vessel making all
“possible sail towards us. Our ship
“not being so good a sailer as that, it
“was impossible for us to avoid it.
“He came up with us, and immedi-
“ately we heard a crying, “to wind-
“ward, to windward.”

“But Alvaro Ponce and his men,
“choosing rather to die than yield,
“ventured to dispute their liberty with
“the enemy. The action was very
“sharp; I will not run into particu-
“lars, but only acquaint you, that
“Don Alvaro and all his men were
“killed, after having fought with the
“utmost despair. As for us, we were
“conducted into the great ship, which
“belonged to Mezzomorto, and was
“commanded by Aby Aly Osman,
“one of his officers.

“Aby Aly earnestly looked at me
“with surprise, and knowing by my
“dress that I was a Spanish woman,
“he said to me in the Castilian tongue,
“Moderate your grief for being fal-
“len into slavery, it is a misfortune
“which was inevitable: but why do
“I call it a misfortune! it is an ad-
“vantage, for which you ought to
“applaud your happy stars; you are
“too charming to be confined only
“to be obeyed by christians; Heaven
“never formed you for those wretched
“mortals; you merit the addresses of
“the masters of the world, and none
“but musklemen are worthy to enjoy
“you. I will,” adds he, “return to
“Algier. Though I have taken no
“other prize, I am persuaded that the
“dey, my master, will be pleased
“with this expedition; nor can I fear
“his blaming my impatience to put
“into his hands a beauty that will
“afford him such delicious pleasures,
“and be the ornament of his seraglio.”

“At these words, which discovered
“what I had to expect, my tears re-
“doubled. Aby Aly, who looked
“on the reason of my fright with
“another eye than mine, only laugh-
“ed, and made all the sail he could
“towards Algiers; whilst I afflicted

“myself beyond all bounds of mode-
“ration; sometimes I directed my
“sighs to Heaven, and implored it’s
“assistance; at others, I wished some
“christian ships would attack us, or
“that the waves would swallow us
“up; and after that, I wished my
“grief and tears might render me so
“frightful, that the very sight of me
“might strike horror into the dey.
“Vain desires, alas! resulting from
“my alarmed modesty! We arrived
“at the port, I was conducted to the
“palace, and shewn to Mezzomorto.
“I do not know what Aby Aly
“said when he presented me to his
“master, or what he answered, because
“they spoke Turkish; but I fancied
“I could discover, by the gestures
“and looks of the dey, that I had
“the misfortune to please him; and
“what he afterwards said to me in
“Spanish, perfected my despair, by
“confirming me in that opinion.

“I threw myself in vain at his feet,
“and promised whatever he pleased
“for my ransom: I largely tempted
“his avarice, by the offer of all my
“estate; but he told me that he valued
“me above all the riches in the world.
“He caused this apartment, the most
“magnificent in all his palace, to be
“prepared for me; and has left no
“means unattempted to dispel that
“grief which overwhelmed me; he
“brought me all the slaves of both
“sexes, that could either sing or play
“on any instrument; he removed Ag-
“nes, believing she only fed my me-
“lancholy, and I am waited on by
“old slaves, who incessantly incul-
“cate to me their master’s love, and
“all the pleasures reserved for me.

“But all that has been done to divert
“me serves only to augment my sor-
“rows; nothing can comfort me. Cap-
“tive, as I am in this detestable place,
“which every day resounds with the
“cries of oppressed innocence, I suffer
“less by the loss of my liberty, than the
“terror with which the dey’s odious
“passion inspires me; for though I have
“hitherto found no other treatment
“from him than that of a complaisant
“lover, I am not less affrighted; and
“very much fear, lest abandoning
“that respect which perhaps has hi-
“therto restrained him, he should at
“last abuse his power. I am continual-
“ly afflicted by these dreadful reflec-

"tions, and every moment of my life is a fresh torment."

"Donna Theodora could not end these words without showers of tears, which stabbed Don Juan to the heart. It is not without reason, Madam," said he, "that you form such a horrible idea of what may happen to you; I am as much terrified at it as you: the dey's respect is nearer it's declension than you imagine; this submissive lover will soon throw off his feigned complaisance; I know it but too well, and know all the danger you are in."

"But," continued he, changing his tone, "I will not tamely see it; slave as I am, my despair is to be feared. Before Mezzomorto shall force you, I will plunge into his breast——" "Ah, Don Juan," interrupted Donna Theodora, "what a dangerous project are you venturing at? Ah, be extremely careful that you never put it in execution! What prodigious cruelties, great God, will be the consequences of his death! Will the Turks leave it unrevenged? Oh, the most dreadful torments!—I cannot think of them without trembling. Besides, is it not to expose yourself to an unnecessary danger? Can you, by killing the dey, restore my liberty? Alas, perhaps I may be sold to some villainous wretch that may have less regard for me than Mezzomorto has. Oh, Heaven! you ought to shew your justice: you know the dey's brutal desires; you forbid me the use of poison and sword; it therefore belongs to you to prevent a crime which offends you."

"Yes, Madam," replied Don Juan, "Heaven will prevent it: I perceive that it inspires me; what at present occurs to my mind, is doubtless suggested to me from thence. The dey gave me leave to see you for no other reason than to incline you to yield to his passion: I am charged to give him an account of our conversation; but I must deceive him. I will then tell him that you are not inconsolable; that his generous conduct with regard to you begins to alluage your griefs; and that, if he continues in the same measures, he ought to hope for whatever he wishes. Accordingly,

"when he comes to see you again, I wish he might find you less melancholy than ordinary, and feign your being in some measure pleased with his discourse."

"Oh, horrid constraint!" interrupted Donna Theodora; "how can a frank and sincere soul betray itself to that degree? and what advantage will result from such a painful dissimulation?"—"The dey," answered he, "will please himself with this alteration, and resolve to gain you wholly by complaisance. In the interim I will endeavour your liberty: the task, I own, is difficult; but I am acquainted with a slave whose great address and industry may not be unserviceable to us."

"I leave you," continued he; "the affair requires diligence, and we shall see one another again. I go now to the dey, whose impetuous flame I will endeavour to amuse by false intelligence; and you, Madam, must prepare to receive him. Dissemble, force your nature. Though his presence offend your eyes, yet disarm them of severity and hatred. Prevail on your mouth, which only opens itself daily to bewail your misfortunes, to learn a flattering tone; and do not fear shewing too much favour. You must promise every thing, in order to grant nothing."—"It is enough," replied Donna Theodora; "I will follow all your directions, since the fatal evil which threatens me, imposes on me this cruel necessity. Go, Don Juan, employ all your cares in putting an end to my slavery. It will be a great addition to the pleasure of liberty, to owe it to you."

The Toledan, pursuant to his orders, waited on Mezzomorto, who said with the utmost concern, "Well, Alvaro, what news do you bring me from the fair slave? Have you disposed her to hearken to me? If you tell me that I ought not to flatter myself with the hopes of ever subduing her cruel grief, I swear by the head of the grand signior, my master, that I will this day seize by force what she has hitherto refused to yield to my complaisance."—"Sir," answered Don Juan, "that inviolable oath is needless; you will not

“not be forced to make use of violence to satisfy your love. The slave is a young lady who never yet loved; she is so proud that she has rejected the addresses of the greatest men in Spain. She lived like a sovereign princess in her own country, and is a captive here. A haughty mind long resents the great difference betwixt these conditions; yet, Sir, this proud Spanish lady will by degrees grow familiar with slavery, and I dare venture to tell you that already her chains begin to belighten. The great deference you have always shewed her, and the respectful cares which she did not expect from you, have somewhat abated her sorrow, and do by little and little conquer her pride. Sooth this favourable disposition, and compleat the conquest of this fair slave, by fresh marks of respect, and you will soon find her yield to your desires, and lose the love of liberty in your arms.”

“Your words ravish me,” replied the dey. “The hopes which you have given me are sufficient to engage me to do any thing. Yes, I will restrain my impatient desires, to satisfy them better. But do not deceive me; or art thou not thyself deceived? I will immediately go talk with her, and see whether I can discover in her eyes those flattering appearances which you have observed.” These words ended, he went to Donna Theodora; and Don Juan returned to the garden, where he met the gardener, who was the dextrous slave by whose industry he promised to set the widow Cisuentes at liberty.

The gardener, whose name was Francisco, was of Navarre. He knew Algier perfectly well, having served several patrons before he lived with the dey. “Friend Francisco,” said Don Juan, approaching him, “I am extremely afflicted at what I have seen. There is in this palace a young lady of the first quality in Valencia; she has intreated Mezzomorto to set his own price on her ransom; but he will not part with her, because he is in love with her.”—“Alas! why does that trouble you so much?” said Francisco. “Because I am of the same

city,” replied the Toledan. “Her relations and mine are intimate friends, and there is nothing I would not undertake to contribute to her deliverance.”

“Though it is no very easy thing,” replied Francisco, “I dare engage to accomplish it, if this lady’s relations will be pleased to pay very well for this piece of service.”—“Do not doubt it in the least,” returned Don Juan; “I will be responsible for their acknowledgments, but more especially for her own gratitude. Her name is Donna Theodora; she is the widow of a man who has left her a very great estate, and she is as generous as rich. I am a Spanish gentleman, and my word ought to satisfy you.”

“Well,” replied the gardener, “I will depend on your promises, and go look for a renegade Catalan of my acquaintance, and propose it to him.”—“What do you say?” interrupted the Toledan, very much surprized: “can you rely on a wretch who has not been ashamed to abandon his religion for—” “Though a renegade,” interrupted Francisco in his turn, “he is yet an honest man, who deserves rather to be pitied than hated; and if his crime can admit of any excuse, I should indeed be willing to think him excusable: I will tell you his story in two words.

“He is a native of Barcelona, and a chirurgeon by profession. Perceiving that he did not succeed in his practice in his native place, he resolved to settle at Carthage, hoping that he might thrive better by removing. He embarked then for Carthage with his mother; but they met an Algerine pirate, who took and brought them hither. They were sold; his mother to a Moor, and he to a Turk, who used him so very ill, that he turned Mahometan to end his cruel slavery, as also to procure the liberty of his mother, who was very rigorously treated by the Moor her patron. Then entering himself in the basha’s pay, he made several voyages, and got four hundred patacoons, part of which he employed in the ransom of his mother; and, to improve it, he intended

"intended to rob on the sea for his own account.

"He became a captain, and bought a small vessel without a deck; and with some Turkish soldiers, who willingly joined with him, he went to cruize between Carthage and Alicant, and returned laden with booty. He went out again, and his voyage succeeded so well, that at last he fitted out a larger vessel, with which he took several considerable prizes: but his good fortune failing him, he one day attacked an English frigate, who so shattered his ship, that he could scarce regain the port of Algier; and as the people of this country judge of the merit of the pirates by the success of their enterprizes, this renegade began to be despised by the Turks; and growing very uneasy and melancholy, he sold his ship, and retired to a house out of town, where, ever since, he has lived on the estate he has left, with his mother and several slaves.

"I frequently visit him, for we lived together with the same patron, and are very great friends. He has disclosed to me his most secret thoughts, and within these three days he told me, with tears in his eyes, that his mind could never be at rest since he had renounced his faith; that, to appease the remorse which incessantly racked his mind, he was sometimes inclined to quit the turban, and hazard being burnt alive; to repair, by a public acknowledgment of his repentance, the scandal he had cast on the christians.

"This is the renegade to which I design to address myself," continued Francisco; "such a man as this you ought not to suspect. Under pretence of going to the bagnio*, I will go to his house, and suggest to him, that instead of consuming himself with grief for withdrawing himself from the bosom of the church, he ought to think of means of returning to it: that, to execute this design, he need only equip a ship, on pretence that, weary of an idle life, he would return to his old trade of cruizing; and with this ship we will gain the coast of Valencia, where Donna Theodora should give him

"enough to pass the rest of his days agreeably at Barcelona."

"Yes, dear Francisco," cried Don Juan, transported with the hopes which the Navarre slave gave him, "you may promise the renegade every thing; you and he shall be sure to be rewarded. But do you believe this project really practicable in the manner you have formed it?"—"It may meet with some difficulties which I do not foresee," replied Francisco; "but the renegade and I will remove them. Alvaro," added he, as he was leaving him, "I have a very good opinion of our enterprize, and hope at my return to bring you good news."

"It was not without anxiety that Don Juan waited for Francisco, who returned in three or four hours. "I have talked with the renegade," said he, "and proposed our design to him: and, after mature deliberation, we have agreed that he shall buy a small ship ready fitted to go out; and it being allowed to make use of slaves for sailors, he shall man the vessel with his own; that, to prevent suspicion, he should engage twelve Turkish soldiers, as though he really intended to go out to cruize; but that two days before that which he should assign for his departure, he should embark in the night with his slaves, weigh anchor without any noise, and come to fetch us on board with his skiff, from a little door of this garden near the sea. This is the plan of our enterprize; you may inform the captive lady of this, and assure her that, within fifteen days at farthest, she shall be freed from her slavery."

"How inexpressible was Zarate's joy, to have such a comfortable assurance to carry to Donna Theodora! To obtain permission to see her, he the next day searched for Mezzomorto; and having found him, "Pardon me, my lord," said he, "if I presume to ask you how you found the beautiful slave. Are you better satisfied?"—"I am charmed," interrupted the dey; "her eyes did not turn away from my tenderest addresses; her discourse, which always before consisted only of endless

* That is, the place where the slaves meet.

"reflections on her condition, was not intermixed with many complaints; but she even seemed to listen to mine, with an obliging attention.

"It is to your endeavours, Alvaro, that I owe this change. I see you know your own countrywomen; I will have you talk with her again. Finish what you have so happily begun; exhaust all your wit and address to hasten my felicity, and I will then break your chains; and I swear by the soul of our great prophet, that I will send you home to your own country so richly laden with presents, that the christians when they see thee shall not believe thou returnest from slavery."

The Toledan did not fail to flatter Mezzomorto's error; he feigned himself extremely sensible of his promises; and, under pretence of hastening the accomplishment of the dey's joys, he hastened to see the fair slave; whom he found alone in her apartment, the old women who attended her being employed elsewhere. He told her what the Navarre slave and the renegade had contrived, on the credit of the promises which he made them.

"It was no small consolation for Donna Theodora, to hear that such proper measures were taken for her deliverance. "Is it possible," said she, in the excess of her joy, "that I may hope to see Valencia, my dear country, again? How transporting will the bliss be, after so many fears and dangers, to live at ease with you! Ah, Don Juan, how charming is that thought? Will you share that pleasure with me? Do you think that, in delivering me from the dey, it is your wife which you tear from him?"

"Alas," answered Zarate, with a profound sigh, "those endearing words would charm me, if the remembrance of an unhappy friend did not throw in a bitter which spoils all the sweetness! Pardon me, Madam, that nicety, and confess also that Mendoza deserves your pity; it is for your sake that he went from Valencia, and lost his liberty. I can assure you, that at Tunis he is less loaded with the weight of his

chains, than the despair of ever revenging your sufferings."

"He doubtless deserved a better fate," interrupted Donna Theodora; "I take Heaven to witness that I am thoroughly sensible of all that he has done for me. I share with him the sufferings which I have caused; but, by the cruel malignity of the stars, my heart can never be the price of his services."

This conversation was interrupted by the arrival of the two old women who waited on Donna Theodora: when Don Juan turned the discourse; and, acting the dey's confident, "Yes, charming slave," said he, to the widow Cifuentes, "you have deprived him of liberty, who keeps you in chains. Mezzomorto, your master and mine, the most engaging and most amiable of all the Turks, is very well pleased with you: continue to treat him favourably, and you will soon see an end of your griefs." At the end of these last words he left Donna Theodora, who did not comprehend their true sense.

Affairs remained during eight days in this posture, at the dey's palace, whilst the renegade Catalan bought a small vessel almost wholly fitted for sailing, and prepared for his departure. But six days before he was ready to put to sea, Don Juan met with what very much alarmed his fears.

Mezzomorto sent for him; and being entered his closet, "Alvaro," said he, "you are free: you may return to Spain whenever you please; and these presents which I promised you are ready. I saw the fair slave to-day; and oh! how vastly different does she appear from the same person whose griefs have given me so much pain! The sense of her captivity every day wears off. I found her so charming, that I have this moment resolved to marry her. She shall be my wife within the space of two days."

At these words the Toledan changed colour; and, notwithstanding all the restraint he laid on himself, could not hide his disturbance and surprize from the dey, who asked him the cause of that disorder.

"My lord," answered Don Juan, "all

all in confusion, "I am doubtless very much amazed, to think that one of the greatest lords of the Ottoman empire should so debase himself as to marry a slave. I very well know it is not unprecedented amongst you; but for the illustrious Mezzomorto, who may pretend to the daughter of the principal officers of the porte—" "I allow what you say," interrupted the dey, "I might at the same time aspire to the grand vizir's daughter, and flatter myself with the hopes of succeeding my father-in-law; but I have an immense estate, and am not very ambitious. I prefer the ease and pleasures which I enjoy here in my vizirship, to that dangerous honour; to which we are no sooner raised, than the fear of the sultans, and the jealousy of those near them, who envy us, precipitate us into the lowest abyss of misery. Besides, I love my slave, and her beauty qualifies her to deserve the dignity to which my affection invites her.

"But," adds he, "in order to deserve the honours I design her, she must this very day change her religion. Do you believe that any ridiculous prejudices will prevail on her to despise my offers?"—"No, my lord," returned the Toledan, "I am persuaded that she will sacrifice all to such a high elevation. But give me leave to tell you, that you ought not to marry her so hastily: do nothing rashly; it is not to be doubted, but that the thoughts of abandoning the religion sucked in with her mother's milk will startle her at first. Give her then time to consider of it; when she represents to herself, that instead of dishonouring and afterwards suffering her to grow old and neglected amongst the rest of your captives, you join her to yourself by such a glorious marriage, her gratitude and vanity will by little and little remove her scruples. Defer therefore the execution of your design for eight days only."

The dey continued some time thinking. He did not at all like the delay his confident proposed, whose advice however appeared reasonable. "I yield to your reason," interrupted the dey; "though I am so impatient to enjoy the fair slave, I will yet

wait eight days. Go immediately to her, and dispose her to accomplish my desires at the expiration of that time. I desire that the same Alvaro, who has so faithfully discharged himself with regard to her, may have the honour to offer her my matrimonial faith."

Don Juan flew to the apartment of Donna Theodora, and informed her what passed betwixt Mezzomorto and him, that she might regulate herself accordingly. He also told her that the renegade's ship would be ready in six days; but she telling him that she was in great pain to know how she should get out of her apartment, since all the doors of the chambers, through which she was obliged to pass to reach the stairs, were close shut; "You ought not to give yourself much trouble on that account, Madam," said Don Juan; "one of your closet windows opens into the garden, and from thence you may descend by a ladder which I will provide you."

Accordingly, the six days being expired, Francisco advertised the Toledan, that the renegade was preparing to depart the next night; which you may very well think was expected with great impatience. The time came at last, and what rendered it yet more lucky, was, that it grew very dark. When the moment destined for the execution of their enterprize came, Don Juan raised the ladder to Donna Theodora's closet-window, who no sooner saw it, than she descended on it with the utmost concern and haste, and then leaned on the false Alvaro, who conducted her to the little garden-door, which opened on the sea.

They made all possible haste, and before-hand seemed to taste the pleasures of being freed from slavery; but fortune, who was not perfectly reconciled to these lovers, raised a more cruel misfortune than all those which they had hitherto suffered, and which they could not foresee.

They were gotten out of the garden, and hastening to the sea-side to reach the boat, which waited for them, when a man whom they took for one of their crew, and which they did not at all mistrust, came directly to Don Juan, with a naked

sword,

‘ sword, and running him into the breast, “Perfidious Alvaro Ponce,” cried he, “it is thus that Don Fadrique de Mendoza is obliged to punish a villainous ravisher. You do not deserve that I should attack you like a man of honour.”

‘ Don Juan could not resist the force of the push, which threw him down; and at the same time Donna Theodora, whom he supported, seized at once with amazement, grief, and the fright, swooned away on the other side. “Ah! Mendoza,” said the Toledan, “what have you done? It is Don Juan that you have wounded!” — “Just Heaven!” replied Don Fadrique, “is it possible that I should assassinate—” “I forgive you my death,” returned Zarate; “fate alone is to be blamed; or rather it was designed thus to put an end to our miseries. Yes, my dear Mendoza, I die contented, since I put into your hands the beautiful Theodora, who can assure you that my friendship for you has never been violated.”

‘ “Too generous friend,” said Don Fadrique, seized with a violent despair, “you shall not die alone; the same sword which plunged thus cruelly into your breast, shall punish your murderer. Though my mistake may excuse my crime, it cannot comfort me.” At these words he turned the point of his sword to his breast, run it up to the hilt, and fell upon Don Juan, who fainted away, less enfeebled by his own wound, than his friend’s rage.

‘ Francisco and the renegade, who were but ten paces off, and who had their reasons which detained them from running to the assistance of the slave Alvaro, were extremely astonished to hear Don Fadrique’s words, and to see his last action. They then found their mistake, and that the wounded men were two friends, and not mortal enemies as they thought. They ran to their assistance; but finding them senseless, as well as Donna Theodora, who yet remained in her swoon, they were at a loss what measures to take. Francisco was of opinion that they should content themselves with carrying off the lady, and leave the gentlemen on the shore,

‘ where, according to all appearances, they would immediately die, if they were not yet dead. But the renegade was not of that opinion. He concluded they ought not to be left; that their wounds might perhaps not be mortal, and that he could dress them on board, where he had all the instruments of his former trade, which he had not yet forgotten. Francisco fell in with his opinion.

‘ As he was not ignorant of what importance it was to be expeditious, the renegade and he, by the assistance of some slaves, carried into their skiff the unhappy widow Cifuentes, and her two lovers, yet more unfortunate than she; and in a very few minutes reached their ship. As soon as they were all gotten on board, some of them spread their sails, whilst others on their knees on the deck implored the assistance of Heaven, by the most fervent petitions which the fear of being pursued by Mezzomorto’s ships could inspire.

‘ The renegade, after having charged with the management of the ship, a French slave, who understood it perfectly well, applied himself first to Donna Theodora, whom he recovered out of her swoon, and then took such successful care of Don Fadrique and the Toledan, that they also recovered their senses. The widow Cifuentes, who fainted away at the sight of Don Juan’s being wounded, was very much surprized to find Mendoza there; and though at the sight of him she really believed that he had fallen on his own sword, for grief of having wounded his friend, yet she could not look on him otherwise than the murderer of the man she loved.

‘ It was certainly the most moving scene in the world, to see these three persons returned to themselves: and the condition out of which they had been recovered, though a resemblance of death, did not more deserve pity. Donna Theodora earnestly looked on Don Juan, with eyes in which were painted, in lively colours, all the emotions of a soul overwhelmed with grief and despair. And the two friends fixed on her their dying eyes, feebly uttering the most profound sighs.

‘ After

“ After having for some time kept a silence equally tender and unhappy, Don Fadrique thus broke it, by addressing himself to the widow Cifuentes: “ Madam,” said he, “ before I die, I have yet the satisfaction to see you delivered out of slavery; would to Heaven that you were indebted for your liberty to me; but it has appointed that you should owe that obligation to the man you love! I love that rival too well to murmur at it, and wish that the wound which I have been so unhappy as to give him, may not prevent the full enjoyment of your grateful acknowledgments.” The lady made no answer to these words, but far from being then sensible of the melancholy fate of Don Fadrique, she was only influenced by the aversion to him, which the present condition of the Toledan had inspired.

“ In the mean time the chirurgeon prepared to examine and probe the wounds. He began with that of Don Juan, and did not find it dangerous, by reason the pass had only glanced below the left pap, and had not touched any of the nobler vital parts. This report of the chirurgeon very much abated Donna Theodora’s affliction, and equally rejoiced Don Fadrique; who turning his head toward that lady, “ I am satisfied,” said he; “ I leave this life without regret, since my friend is out of danger: I shall not then die laden with your hate.”

“ These words were uttered with such a moving air, that Theodora was touched by them; and as her fear for Don Juan grew over, she ceased to hate Don Fadrique, and no longer looked on him otherwise than as a man who deserved her pity. “ Ah, Mendoza!” cried she, influenced by a generous transport, “ let your wound be dressed, it is not perhaps more dangerous than that of your friend. Oh, yield to our care of your life; and if I cannot make you happy, at least I will not bestow that felicity on another; but out of compassion and tenderness for you, I will withhold the hand which I designed to give Don Juan, and offer to you the same sacrifice which he has made you.”

“ Don Fadrique was going to reply,

“ but the chirurgeon, afraid that speaking might prejudice him, obliged him to silence, and searched his wound, which he judged mortal, by reason the sword had pierced the upper part of his lungs, as he concluded from his excessive flux of blood, the consequence of which was very much to be feared. As soon as he had dressed the gentlemen, he caused them to be carried to his own cabin, to repose them on two beds, one next the other; and conducted Donna Theodora thither, whose presence he thought would not be prejudicial to them.

“ Notwithstanding all this care, Mendoza fell into a fever, and towards night the flux of blood augmented. The chirurgeon then told him he was incurable; and informed him, that if he had any thing to say to his friend, or to Donna Theodora, he had no time to lose. This news strangely afflicted the Toledan; but Don Fadrique received it with indifference. He sent for the widow Cifuentes, who came to him in a condition much easier to be imagined than described.

“ Her face was covered with tears, and she sobbed with so much violence, that she disturbed Mendoza. “ Madam,” said he, “ I am unworthy those precious tears that you shed; restrain them, I beg, for a moment. —I ask the same of you, dear Zarate,” adds he, observing the insupportable grief which his friend shewed. “ I know that this separation must very sensibly afflict you; I am too well acquainted with your friendship to doubt it: but I beseech you to stay till my death, and reserve these tears to honour it with so many marks of tenderness and pity; suspend your grief till then, since that touches me more than the loss of my life. I must acquaint you through what meanders of fate I was conducted to this fatal shore, where I have tainted myself with my friend’s blood, and with my own. You must be in pain to know how I could take Don Juan for Don Alvaro, but I will immediately inform you, if the small remainder of life will allow me to make that melancholy discovery.

“ Some hours after the ship in which I was had quitted that wherein I left Don Juan, we met a French priva-

“ teer,

“teer, which attacked and took the
 “Turis ship, and set us on shore at
 “Alicant. I was no sooner at liberty,
 “than I thought of ransoming Don
 “Juar, to which end I went to Valen-
 “cia and raised money; and on advice
 “that at Barcelona there were several
 “monks of the order for the redemp-
 “tion of slaves ready to set out for
 “Algiers, I resolved not to lose this
 “occasion. But before I left Valen-
 “cia, I intreated Don Francisco de
 “Mendoza, my uncle, to use all his in-
 “terest at the court of Spain to obtain
 “a pardon for my friend, because my
 “design was to bring him back with
 “me, and re-establish him in his es-
 “tate, which was confiscated after the
 “death of the Duke of Naxera.

“As soon as we were arrived at Al-
 “giers, I went to the places frequented
 “by slaves; but having run through
 “all of them, I did not find what I
 “searched for. I met the Catalan re-
 “negade, to whom this vessel belongs,
 “whom I remembered formerly to
 “have been in my uncle’s service. I
 “told him the occasion of my voyage,
 “and desired him to make a strict
 “search for my friend. “I am for-
 “ry, Sir,” said he, “I cannot serve
 “you. I am to leave Algiers to-night
 “with a lady of Valencia, who is a
 “slave to the dey.”—“Pray what is
 “the lady’s name?” said I. “Her
 “name,” replied he, “is Theodora.”
 “My surprize at hearing this was
 “enough to let the renegade see that I
 “was concerned for that lady. He
 “discovered to me the design he laid
 “to knock off her chains. And as he
 “mentioned one Alvaro in his story,
 “I did not doubt but it was Alvaro
 “Ponce himself. “Assist my resent-
 “ment,” cried I, transported, to the re-
 “negade; “help me to revenge myself
 “on my enemy.”—“You shall soon
 “be satisfied,” answered he, “but let
 “me first know your cause of com-
 “plaint against Alvaro.” Upon this,
 “I told him our whole story! and he
 “having heard it, “It is enough,”
 “cried he: “you need only accom-
 “pany me on the night chosen for our
 “departure, where you will see your
 “enemy; and after you have punished
 “him, you shall take his place, and
 “join with us in conducting Donna
 “Theodora to Valencia.”

“Yet this impatience did not hinder

“my search after Don Juan; but de-
 “spairing to hear any news of him, I
 “left money for his ransom in the
 “hands of an Italian merchant, named
 “Francisco Capati, who lives at Al-
 “giers, and undertook his ransom if
 “he could ever find him.

“At last the night appointed for our
 “departure and my revenge came,
 “when I went to the renegade, who
 “led me to that part of the sea-shore
 “behind Mezzomorto’s gardens. We
 “stopt at a little door that soon open-
 “ed, whence came out a man who
 “made directly up to us, pointing with
 “his finger to a man and woman who
 “were coming after him. “Those
 “who follow me,” said he, “are Al-
 “varo and Donna Theodora.”

“At this sight, enraged to the last
 “degree, I drew my sword, ran to the
 “unfortunate Alvaro, and persuaded
 “that it was my hateful rival whom
 “I was approaching, I wounded that
 “faithful friend, whose uncertain des-
 “tiny was the cause of all my distur-
 “bance. But, thanks to Heaven,” con-
 “tinued he in a softer tone, “my mis-
 “take will neither cost him his life,
 “nor the eternal tears of Donna The-
 “odora!”

“Ah, Mendoza!” interrupted the
 “lady, “you injure my affliction; I
 “shall never comfort myself for the
 “loss of you; for though I should
 “even marry your friend, it would be
 “only uniting our griefs: your love,
 “your friendship, and your misfor-
 “tunes, would be the whole subject
 “of our discourse.”—“It is too much,”
 “Madam,” replied Don Fadrique;
 “I am not worthy your so long mourn-
 “ing for me. Allow, I conjure you,
 “Zarate to marry you, after he shall
 “have revenged you of Alvaro Ponce.”
 —“Don Alvaro is no more,” replied
 “the widow Cifuentes; “the same day
 “that he seized me, he was killed by
 “the pirate who took me.”

“Madam,” said Mendoza, “this
 “news gives me pleasure; my friend
 “will the sooner be happy: follow
 “without restraint the guidance of
 “your mutual passion, I see with joy
 “the moment approaching, which
 “will remove the obstacle your com-
 “passion and his generosity have raised
 “to prevent your mutual happiness.
 “May all your days be spent in re-
 “pose and union, which the jealousy

" of fortune may not dare to disturb.
 " Adieu, Madam—adieu, Don Juan!
 " youchsafe both of you sometimes to
 " remember a man, who never loved
 " any so well as you."

" The lady and the Toledan, instead
 " of answering, redoubled their tears;
 " Don Fadrique, who perceived it,
 " and found himself very ill, thus con-
 " tinued: " I grow too tender; death
 " has already surrounded me, and I
 " forget to supplicate the Divine Good-
 " ness, to pardon my having shorten-
 " ed a life which he alone ought to
 " have disposed of." At these words
 " he lifted up his eyes to heaven with
 " all the signs of a sincere repentance,
 " and the flux of blood immediately oc-
 " casioned a suffocation, and carried
 " him off.

" Then Don Juan, hurried by his
 " despair, tore off his plaisters, and
 " would have rendered his wound in-
 " curable; but Francisco and the re-
 " negade threw themselves on him, and
 " opposed his distraction; and Donna
 " Theodora, terribly affrighted at this
 " furious transport, assisted them both
 " in diverting Don Juan from his de-
 " sign. She besought him with such a
 " moving air, that returning to him-
 " self, he suffered his wound to be a-
 " gain bound up; and at last the in-
 " terest of a lover, by slow degrees,
 " abated the rage of a friend. But if
 " he recovered his reason, it served on-
 " ly to prevent the distracted effects of
 " his grief, and not to diminish the
 " sense of it.

" The renegade, who, amongst
 " other things he had brought out of
 " Spain, had some excellent Arabian
 " balsam and precious perfumes, em-
 " balmed Mendoza's body at the in-
 " stance of the lady and Don Juan,
 " who assured him, that at Valencia
 " they would perform all the honours
 " of his sepulture. The two lovers, too,
 " passionately indulged their grief all
 " the while they were on board; but
 " the rest were more chearful, and,
 " the wind being favourable, they were
 " not long before they discovered the
 " coasts of Spain.

" At that sight all the slaves yielded
 " themselves up to joy; and when the
 " vessel was happily arrived at the port
 " of Denia, every one took a different
 " course. The widow Cifuentes and
 " the Toledan sent a courier to Valen-

" cia with letters for the governor, and
 " Donna Theodora's family. The
 " news of that lady's return was receiv-
 " ed with all possible expressions of joy
 " by all her relations; but Don Fran-
 " cisco de Mendoza was extremely af-
 " flicted at the loss of his nephew; he
 " discovered it very plainly when he
 " accompanied the widow Cifuentes's
 " relations to Denia, where he desired
 " to see the corse of the unfortunate
 " Don Fadrique. The good old man
 " then melted into tears, and uttered
 " such lamentable complaints, as sen-
 " sibly touched all the spectators. He
 " enquired by what adventure his ne-
 " phew fell.

" I will tell you, my lord," said
 " the Toledan; " far from blotting it
 " out of my memory, I take a melan-
 " choly pleasure in continually calling
 " him to mind, and feeding my for-
 " rows." He then related to him the
 " sad accident; and the recital of his
 " story drawing fresh tears from him,
 " redoubled those of Don Francisco.
 " As for Donna Theodora, her rela-
 " tions expressed their great joy to see
 " her again, and felicitated her on the
 " miraculous manner of her delivery
 " from the tyranny of Mezzomorto.

" After a perfect relation of all par-
 " ticulars, Don Fadrique's corse was
 " put into a coach, and carried to Va-
 " lencia, but not buried there; be-
 " cause Don Francisco de Mendoza,
 " preparing to live at Madrid, resolved
 " to have his nephew's body carried to
 " that city.

" While all manner of preparations
 " were making for their journey, the
 " widow Cifuentes loaded Francisco
 " and the renegade with presents equal
 " to their wishes. Francisco went to
 " Navarre, and the renegade immedi-
 " ately returned with his mother to
 " Barcelona; there having renounced
 " his errors, and reconciled himself to
 " the church, he lives in a reputable
 " manner at this present time.

" In the mean while also Don Fran-
 " cisco received a packet from the
 " court, wherein was Don Juan's
 " pardon; which the king, notwith-
 " standing the great value he had for
 " the house of Naxera, could not re-
 " fuse the Mendoza's, who all joined
 " in soliciting it. This news was the
 " more agreeable to the Toledan, be-
 " cause it procured him the liberty of
 " accom-

‘ accompanying the corse of his friend, which he durst not have done without it.

‘ At last they all set forwards, accompanied with a great number of persons of quality; and as soon as they arrived at Madrid, they buried the corse of Don Fadrique in a church, where Zarate and Donna Theodora raised a noble monument over his grave. They did not stop there; but kept themselves in mourning for their friend for the space of a whole year, to eternize their grief and friendship.

‘ After having given such signal marks of their tenderness for Mendoza, they married; but by an inconceivable effect of the power of friendship, Don Juan long retained his melancholy for his friend, which nothing was able to remove. Don Fadrique was always present in his thoughts; he saw him every night in his dreams, and generally just as he had seen him breathing his last. But yet his reason began to dispel these melancholy views; and Donna Theodora’s charms, with which he was captivated, triumphed, by little and live, over the sad remembrance of Mendoza. To conclude, at last Don Juan was going to live happily, and very contentedly; but a few days past he fell from his horse, as he was hunting, and hurt his head; the wound grew to an imposthume, so that the physicians could not save him. He is just dead; and Theodora, the lady whom you see in the arms of two women who are watching her distraction, may probably soon follow him.

CHAP. VII.

OF DREAMS.

WHEN Asmodeus had ended his story, Don Cleofas said to him, ‘ This is a very fine image of friendship, but it is rare to find two men love one another like Don Juan and Don Fadrique; and I believe it will be more difficult to meet with two ladies so good friends, as generously to make a reciprocal sacrifice of their lovers to each other.’

‘ Without doubt,’ says the devil, ‘ it is what has not been yet and

‘ never will be seen in this world; women are not so complaisant to one another. Suppose two ladies love each other in an unusual degree, their friendship may be tender and sincere, and they may even forbear speaking ill of one another in absence, such good friends may they be; and that, I assure you, is a great deal: yet if you meet with them, and incline more to the one than the other, rage presently seizes the fair one that is slighted; not that she loves you, but she would be preferred. This is the nature of all women; they are too jealous one of another to be capable of friendship.’

‘ The story of these two unparalleled friends,’ replied Leandro Perez, ‘ is a little romantic, and has taken us up too much time. The night is already far advanced, and we shall immediately see the day begin to break. But still I expect a fresh entertainment from you. I see abundance of people asleep, and should be glad to know what they are dreaming of.’—‘ With all my heart,’ answered the dæmon; ‘ I see you love variety, and I will oblige you.’

‘ I fancy,’ said Zambullo, ‘ I shall hear a great many very ridiculous dreams.’—‘ Why so?’ answered the cripple. ‘ You, who are master of Ovid, must know what the poet says, that it is towards day-break that dreams are truest, because at that time the soul is disengaged from the vapours arising from digestion.’—‘ For my part,’ replied the student, ‘ whatever Ovid may please to say on this matter, I have no faith in dreams.’—‘ You are in the wrong then,’ answered Asmodeus; ‘ one should neither believe them all, nor treat them all as chimerical; for they are a sort of liars that sometimes speak truth. The Emperor Augustus, whose head sure was as good as a student’s, despised no dreams wherein he found himself concerned; and, at the battle of Philippi, was very near leaving his tent, upon the recital of a dream relating to him. I could give a thousand instances to convince you of your rashness, but I shall pass them over, to oblige you in this new inclination you so much long to have satisfied.

‘ Let us begin with that fine house

‘ on.

‘ on the right hand ; the master of it, whom you see sleeping in those rich lodgings, is a liberal and debauched count ; he is dreaming that he is at the play, that he hears a young actress sing, and is conquered by the voice of this Syren.

‘ In the next apartment lies the countess his wife, who loves play to madness. She is dreaming that she has no money, and is pawning her jewels to a jeweller, who lends her three hundred pistoles on them at common interest.

‘ In the next house to this lives a marquis, who is in love with a famous coquette ; he dreams that he has borrowed a considerable sum of money to make her a present ; and his steward, who lies in that little chamber there, a story higher, that he is growing rich as his master grows poor. Well, what think you of these two dreams ; do they appear extravagant ?—‘ No, really,’ replied Don Cleofas ; ‘ I find Ovid was in the right : but I would very fain know what spark that is who is asleep with his mustachoes in papers, like ladies favourites, and in his sleep has an air of gaiety, which persuades me he is no vulgar fellow.’—‘ It is a country gentleman,’ replied Alimodeus, ‘ a viscount of Arragon, proud and vain ; his soul is this very moment swimming in joy, for he dreams that he is with a great lord of the court, who gives him the place of honour at a public ceremony.’

‘ But in the same house I see two brothers, physicians, who are in very mortifying dreams : one dreams that there is a law made, forbidding any one to give a physician a fee, unless the patient be cured ; and his brother, that there is an order published, requiring all doctors to go into mourning for all the patients that die in their hands.’—‘ Would to God,’ quoth the student, ‘ this last order was true, and every doctor was obliged to go to the funeral of his patients, as the lieutenant-criminal in France is bound to be present at the execution of the malefactor he has condemned.’—‘ The comparison is just,’ replied the devil : ‘ all the difference is, that the latter may be said to see his sentence put into exe-

cution, whereas the other has already executed his.’

Here Don Cleofas interrupted the dæmon, crying, ‘ See, see ! who is that gentleman there that rubs his eyes, and gets up so hastily ?—‘ It is a courtier,’ replied the devil, ‘ who is soliciting for a government in New Spain ; a terrible dream has awaked him. He dreamed the first minister had looked coldly on him.’—‘ I see, too, a young creature that seems just awaked, and not very well pleased with her dream.’—‘ It is a young lady of condition, one as prudent as she is beautiful, who is besieged by two lovers. She has a very great tenderness for the one, and a horrid aversion for the other. She just now saw in her dream, the gallant she detests at her feet ; and he shewed so much love, and was so pressing, that, had she not waked, she was going to treat him with more kindness than she ever treated the other she loves. During sleep, nature throws off the restraints of reason and virtue.

‘ Look upon that house at the corner of that street : there lives an attorney ; see, he is abed with his wife, in a chamber hung with old tapestry hangings with antique figures : he dreams that he is going to pay a visit to one of his clients in the almshouse, and gives him charity out of his own pocket ; and his wife, that her husband has turned a young clerk, of whom he was jealous, out of doors.’

‘ I hear somebody snore,’ says the student, ‘ and believe it is that fat fellow there, in the little room, on the left hand of us.’—‘ The very same,’ replied Alimodeus ; ‘ it is a prebend, dreaming he is saying his prayers.

‘ Next to him is a mercer, who sells very dear bargains to people of quality, but all upon trust ; he has above ten thousand crowns owing him. He dreams his debtors are bringing him his money ; and his creditors are dreaming that he is on the point of breaking.’—‘ These two dreams,’ said the student, ‘ did not come out of the temple of sleep by the same gate.’—‘ No, I assure you,’ replied the dæmon ; ‘ the first for cer-

tain came out of the ivory gate, and the second at that of horn.

In the house next to the mercer lives a famous bookseller; he printed a book that went off very well a little while ago. When he bought it, he promised to give the author fifty pistoles on a second edition; and he dreams now of reprinting it without giving him any notice of it.

Ah! does he so? says Cleofas; I need not ask out of which gate this dream came, and I do not doubt that it will prove one of the truest that ever he had in his life. I am acquainted with those worthy gentlemen, the booksellers; they make no manner of conscience of cheating their authors. The daemon answered, Very true; but you should speak what you know of those worthy gentlemen, the authors, too. Upon my word, they have no more conscience than the booksellers. A little adventure that happened not an hundred years ago at Madrid, shall convince you of it.

Three booksellers were at supper together at a tavern, the conversation turned upon the scarcity of good modern books. Thereupon one of them said, "As you are my friends, I will tell you in confidence, what a bargain I had some days ago. I bought a copy, it was a little dear indeed, but written by such a hand! it is old gold!" Another of them then took up the discourse, telling them what a bargain he had the day before. "And I too, gentlemen," cried the third, in his turn, "will be as communicative as either of you; I have a jewel of a manuscript to shew you, and it was but this very day I had this lucky hit." At the same time each drew out of their pockets the valuable copy they had been talking of; and, as it appeared to be a new piece for the stage, called "The Wandering Jew," they were in amaze to see the same copy had been sold to them all three.

In another house, continued he, I see a timorous respectful lover, who is just awake. He is in love with a brisk young widow, and dreamed that he had her in the middle of a wood, where he said abundance of soft things to her, and she to him: As, "Ah! there's no resisting you;

I should yield to you, if I was not on my guard against all mankind: they are so false, I dare not trust them upon their words, I am for actions."—"What actions, Madam," replied the lover, "do you require of me? Must I undertake the twelve labours of Hercules to shew my love?"—"No, no, Don Nicasio," says the lady, "I do not demand any such thing of you, I only—" and then he awoke.

Pray, says the student, tell me, why the man who is asleep in yonder dark-coloured bed, talks to himself as if he was possessed. The devil answered, "Oh! that is a notable licentiate, who is in a dream that puts him in a terrible agitation; it is no less, than that he is in dispute, and maintaining the immortality of the soul against a little doctor of physic, who is as good a catholic as physician. On the second floor with the licentiate lives a gentleman of Estremadura, named Baltazor Fanfaronico, who is come post to court, to demand a reward for having killed a Portuguese with a blunderbuss: do you know what he is dreaming of! why, that they have given him the government of Antequere; and yet he is not satisfied, he thinks he deserves a vice-royalty.

I see two persons of consequence in furnished lodgings dreaming very disagreeably. One of them, governor of a fort, dreams he is besieged in it, and after a weak resistance he is obliged to surrender himself and his garrison prisoners of war. The other is the Bishop of Murcia: this eloquent prelate has orders to preach a sermon at the funeral of a princess, which is to be in two days. He dreams he is in the pulpit, and that he stops short at the very entrance of his discourse.—"It is not impossible," said Don Cleofas, "for such an unlucky accident really to happen."—"No, indeed," replied the devil, "and it is not long since it happened in good earnest to his lordship on such another occasion.

Shall I shew you a man that is used to walk in his sleep? Only look into the stables belonging to this house, and tell me what you see there?—"I discern," said Leandro Perez, "a man in his shirt, with a curry-comb in his

‘his hand.’—‘So he has,’ replied the devil; ‘it is a groom sleeping, who every night rises out of his bed and carries his horses in his sleep, and then goes to bed again. The people of the house think it is some whimsical spirit, and the groom himself is of their mind.’

‘In that great house over the way lives an old knight of the golden fleece, who was formerly viceroy of Mexico. He is fallen sick, and as he apprehends he shall die, his viceroyalty begins to make him uneasy. Indeed, his conduct in it is enough to make him so. The records of New Spain do not speak of him with honour. He has just had a dream, the horror of which is not yet quite over, and probably it may send him into the other world.’

‘This dream, then,’ said Zambullo, ‘must be very extraordinary.’—‘You shall hear it,’ replied Asmodeus, ‘it has something very odd in it. This lord just now dreamed that he was in the regions of the dead, where all the Mexicans, who have been the victims of his injustice and cruelty, came pouring in upon him, loading him with injurious and reproachful language, and would even have torn him to pieces, but that he took to his heels, and so escaped their fury. After which, he found himself in a great hall hung with black cloth, where were his father and grandfather sitting at a table with three covers on it. These two mournful guests made signs to him to come near them, and his father said, with the gravity natural to the deceased, “We have long expected you; come and take your place amongst us.”’

‘The villain is mad,’ cried the student; ‘we must pardon a sick man if he is light-headed.’—‘In return,’ said the cripple, ‘his niece, who lies in the apartment over him, is passing the night most deliciously. Her slumbers offer to her the most agreeable ideas. She is between twenty and thirty, ugly and ill made, and is dreaming that her uncle, whose sole heir she is, is dead; and that a crowd of young noblemen are flocking about her, and contending who shall have the glory of being most in her good graces.’

‘If I am not mistaken,’ said Don

Cleofas, ‘I hear somebody laugh behind us.’—‘No, you are not mistaken,’ replied the devil; ‘it is a woman hard by, laughing in her sleep. She is a widow who sets up for a prude, and whose darling pleasure is scandal; she dreams she is talking with an old devout lady, whose conversation delights her infinitely.’

‘I must laugh in my turn too,’ said the devil, ‘at that honest citizen in the room under the widow, who can scarce live tolerably on what he has. He dreams of picking up pieces of gold and silver, and that the more he picks up the more remain. He has already filled a great chest with them.’

—‘Poor soul!’ said Leandro, ‘he will not long enjoy his treasure.’—‘No,’ said the devil; ‘when he wakes, he will be in the same condition as the rich man on his death-bed, he will see all his riches disappear.’

‘If you have any curiosity to know the dreams of those two actresses, I will let you into them. One of them is dreaming she is catching birds with a bird-call, and that still as she takes them, she strips off their feathers, and throws them to be devoured by a fine large boar-cat she is fond of, and who is the only gainer by them. The other fancies she is turning a pack of greyhounds and Danish dogs, which she used to admire, out of her house, and that she intends to keep only one fine sleek lap-dog, which she has taken into favour.’—‘Two very odd dreams!’ cried the student. ‘I fancy if we had interpreters of dreams at Madrid, as they had formerly at Rome, they would be horribly perplexed to explain them.’—‘Not so much as you think,’ answered the devil. ‘A very little light into what passes amongst those gentry of the stage, would give one a very plain interpretation of them.’

‘For my part,’ said Don Cleofas, ‘I neither understand nor trouble my head about them. I had much rather know who that lady is asleep in the rich bed of yellow velvet fringed with silver, by whom there is a stand with a candle and book on it.’—‘She is a lady with a title,’ replied the dæmon, ‘who has a very genteel equipage, all which she is resolved shall consist of tall smart fellows. One of her customs is to read abed, with-

out which she is not able to lay her eyes together all night. Last night she took Ovid's *Metamorphoses* to bed with her, and her reading that is the occasion of the extravagant dream she is in at present. She is fancying that Jupiter is fallen in love with her, and is hiring himself to her in the form of a tall, well-shaped page.

Now we are upon *metamorphoses*, here is another more pleasant one. I discern a player, who is in his sleep enjoying the pleasure of a dream that flatters him very agreeably. This actor is so old, that there is not a soul in Madrid who can say they saw the first of him. He has been upon the stage so long, that one may say he is theatricized; and has a genius, but is so proud and vain of it, that he imagines he is something above mankind. Would you know what this mock hero is dreaming of? That he is dying, and sees all the deities of Olympus met together to decide what they shall do with a mortal of his importance. He hears Mercury telling the council of the gods, that so celebrated a comedian, after acting the part of Jupiter and the rest of the chief divinities so often, ought not to undergo the common fate of mankind, but that he ought to be received amongst themselves. Moinus applauds Mercury's opinion; but some of the other gods and goddesses being against so new an apotheosis, Jupiter, to avoid disputes, turns this old comedian into a scene.

The devil was going on, when Zambullo interrupted him; 'Hold,' said he, 'Signior Asinodens, you do not perceive it is day. I am afraid they may spy us out on this house. If the rabble should once have a view of your lordship's figure, they will never have done shouting.'

'I will warrant they shall never see us,' answered the daemon. 'I have the same power as those fabulous divinities we have been talking of. And as the amorous son of Saturn hid himself in a cloud on Mount Ida, that they might not see him care for his dear consort Juno; so I will raise a mist that the sight of man shall not be able to penetrate, and which shall not hinder your seeing whatever I in-

tend to shew you.' No sooner said but done, a thick vapour immediately encompassed them; yet, as dark as it was, it hid nothing from the student's eyes.

'Let us return to our dreams,' continued the cripple. 'But I do not consider,' added he, 'that the manner in which I have made you pass the night must have tired you. I think I must carry you home, and let you sleep for two or three hours. In the mean while I will take a turn over the four quarters of the world, and play some of my pranks; after which I will come and take you up, and we will divert ourselves afresh.'

'I am neither sleepy nor tired,' answered Don Cleofas; 'instead of leaving me, I pray oblige me in letting me into the various designs of those people that I see up, and going out. What are they going upon so early?'

'What you would know,' replied the daemon, 'is worth your observation. You are going to see a picture of the cares, motions and pains, that poor mortals give themselves in this life, in order to fill up that little space between their birth and their grave as agreeably as they can.'

C H A P. VIII.

WHERE YOU WILL SEE SEVERAL ORIGINALS THAT ARE NOT WITHOUT THEIR COPIES.

FIRST of all, mind that groupe of beggars already in the street. They are so many debauchees, most of them of good families, that live in a community like monks, and pass almost every night in debauchery in their own house, where there is always an ample provision of bread, meat, and wine. See, they are parting in order to go play their different parts in the churches, and at night will meet and drink the health of those well-disposed christians, who piously contribute towards their expences. Do but admire at the contrivances of those rogues, in disguising themselves, and moving people's pity. No coquette better knows how to dress herself in order to draw in a coxcomb.

Examine those three narrowly that

R

are

‘his hand.’—‘So he has,’ replied the devil; ‘it is a groom sleeping, who every night rises out of his bed and carries his horses in his sleep, and then goes to bed again. The people of the house think it is some whimsical spirit, and the groom himself is of their mind.’

‘In that great house over the way lives an old knight of the golden fleece, who was formerly viceroy of Mexico. He is fallen sick, and as he apprehends he shall die, his viceroyalty begins to make him uneasy. Indeed, his conduct in it is enough to make him so. The records of New Spain do not speak of him with honour. He has just had a dream, the horror of which is not yet quite over, and probably it may send him into the other world.’

‘This dream, then,’ said Zambullo, ‘must be very extraordinary.’—‘You shall hear it,’ replied Asmodeus, ‘it has something very odd in it. This lord just now dreamed that he was in the regions of the dead, where all the Mexicans, who have been the victims of his injustice and cruelty, came pouring in upon him, loading him with injurious and reproachful language, and would even have torn him to pieces, but that he took to his heels, and so escaped their fury. After which, he found himself in a great hall hung with black cloth, where were his father and grandfather sitting at a table with three covers on it. These two mournful guests made signs to him to come near them, and his father said, with the gravity natural to the deceased, “We have long expected you; come and take your place amongst us.”’

‘The villain is mad,’ cried the student; ‘we must pardon a sick man if he is light-headed.’—‘In return,’ said the cripple, ‘his niece, who lies in the apartment over him, is passing the night most deliciously. Her slumbers offer to her the most agreeable ideas. She is between twenty and thirty, ugly and ill made, and is dreaming that her uncle, whose sole heir she is, is dead; and that a crowd of young noblemen are flocking about her, and contending who shall have the glory of being most in her good graces.’

‘If I am not mistaken,’ said Don

Cleofas, ‘I hear somebody laugh behind us.’—‘No, you are not mistaken,’ replied the devil; ‘it is a woman hard by, laughing in her sleep. She is a widow who sets up for a prude, and whose darling pleasure is scandal; she dreams she is talking with an old devout lady, whose conversation delights her infinitely.’

‘I must laugh in my turn too,’ said the devil, ‘at that honest citizen in the room under the widow, who can scarce live tolerably on what he has. He dreams of picking up pieces of gold and silver, and that the more he picks up the more remain. He has already filled a great chest with them.’—‘Poor soul!’ said Leandro, ‘he will not long enjoy his treasure.’—‘No,’ said the devil; ‘when he wakes, he will be in the same condition as the rich man on his death-bed, he will see all his riches disappear.’

‘If you have any curiosity to know the dreams of those two actresses, I will let you into them. One of them is dreaming she is catching birds with a bird-call, and that still as she takes them, she strips off their feathers, and throws them to be devoured by a fine large boar-cat she is fond of, and who is the only gainer by them. The other fancies she is turning a pack of greyhounds and Danish dogs, which she used to admire, out of her house, and that she intends to keep only one fine sleek lap-dog, which she has taken into favour.’—‘Two very odd dreams!’ cried the student. ‘I fancy if we had interpreters of dreams at Madrid, as they had formerly at Rome, they would be horribly perplexed to explain them.’—‘Not so much as you think,’ answered the devil. ‘A very little light into what passes amongst those gentry of the stage, would give one a very plain interpretation of them.’

‘For my part,’ said Don Cleofas, ‘I neither understand nor trouble my head about them. I had much rather know who that lady is asleep in the rich bed of yellow velvet fringed with silver, by whom there is a stand with a candle and book on it.’—‘She is a lady with a title,’ replied the demon, ‘who has a very genteel equipage, all which she is resolved shall consist of tall smart fellows. One of her customs is to read abed, with-

• out

out which she is not able to lay her eyes together all night. Last night she took Ovid's *Metamorphoses* to bed with her, and her reading that is the occasion of the extravagant dream she is in at present. She is fancying that Jupiter is fallen in love with her, and is hiring himself to her in the form of a tall, well-shaped page.

Now we are upon *metamorphoses*, here is another more pleasant one. I discern a player, who is in his sleep enjoying the pleasure of a dream that flatters him very agreeably. This actor is so old, that there is not a soul in Madrid who can say they saw the first of him. He has been upon the stage so long, that one may say he is theatricized; and has a genius, but is so proud and vain of it, that he imagines he is something above mankind. Would you know what this mock hero is dreaming of? That he is dying, and sees all the deities of Olympus met together to decide what they shall do with a mortal of his importance. He hears Mercury telling the council of the gods, that so celebrated a comedian, after acting the part of Jupiter and the rest of the chief divinities so often, ought not to undergo the common fate of mankind, but that he ought to be received amongst themselves. Momus applauds Mercury's opinion; but some of the other gods and goddesses being against so new an apotheosis, Jupiter, to avoid disputes, turns this old comedian into a scene.

The devil was going on, when Zambullo interrupted him; 'Hold,' said he, 'Signior Asmodeus, you do not perceive it is day. I am afraid they may spy us out on this house. If the rabble should once have a view of your lordship's figure, they will never have done shouting.'

'I will warrant they shall never see us,' answered the daemon. 'I have the same power as those fabulous divinities we have been talking of. And as the amorous son of Saturn hid himself in a cloud on Mount Ida, that they might not see him caress his dear consort Juno; so I will raise a mist that the sight of man shall not be able to penetrate, and which shall not hinder your seeing whatever I in-

tend to shew you.' No sooner said but done, a thick vapour immediately encompassed them; yet, as dark as it was, it hid nothing from the student's eyes.

'Let us return to our dreams,' continued the cripple. 'But I do not consider,' added he, 'that the manner in which I have made you pass the night must have tired you. I think I must carry you home, and let you sleep for two or three hours. In the mean while I will take a turn over the four quarters of the world, and play some of my pranks; after which I will come and take you up, and we will divert ourselves afresh.' — 'I am neither sleepy nor tired,' answered Don Cleofas; 'instead of leaving me, I pray oblige me in letting me into the various designs of those people that I see up, and going out. What are they going upon so early?' — 'What you would know,' replied the daemon, 'is worth your observation. You are going to see a picture of the cares, motions and pains, that poor mortals give themselves in this life, in order to fill up that little space between their birth and their grave as agreeably as they can.'

CH A P. VIII.

WHERE YOU WILL SEE SEVERAL ORIGINALS THAT ARE NOT WITHOUT THEIR COPIES.

FIRST of all, mind that groupe of beggars already in the street. They are so many debauchees, most of them of good families, that live in a community like monks, and pass almost every night in debauchery in their own house, where there is always an ample provision of bread, meat, and wine. See, they are parting in order to go play their different parts in the churches, and at night will meet and drink the health of those well-disposed christians, who piously contribute towards their expences. Do but admire at the contrivances of those rogues, in disguising themselves, and moving people's pity. No coquette better knows how to dress herself in order to draw in a coxcomb.

Examine those three narrowly that

R

are

are together on the same side the way. He on crutches, who trembles all over, and seems to walk with so much difficulty that you would think he would be upon his nose every step he takes, though he has on a long grey beard, and looks so decrepit, is a young hale fellow, so nimble and light that he would out-run a stag. The other with a scald head is a handsome youth, whose head is covered with a skin that hides a head of hair fit for a court-page. And the other, with his breech in a bowl, is a comical dog; he has the art of fetching such lamentable sounds from the bottom of his stomach, that, at his dismal accents, there is not an old woman but what will come down four pair of stairs to give him a farthing.

Whilst these lazy rogues, under pretence of poverty, are picking the pockets of the public, I see a world of industrious artizans, though Spaniards, that are preparing to get their daily bread by the sweat of their brow. On all sides I perceive men rising and dressing themselves, in order to go to their several employments. How many designs, formed this night, will, before the next, be executed, or vanished into air! what various steps are interest, love, and ambition, putting men upon!

What is that I see in the street? interrupted Don Cleofas. Who is that woman loaded with medals, that a footman is leading with so much haste? Her business must be pressing, sure.—Yes, certainly, answered the devil; it is a venerable matron, trotting to a house where they want a cast of her office. She is going to an actress, who is screaming out, and has two cavaliers with her that seem to be in a peck of troubles. One is her husband, and the other a man of quality, concerned in what is going forward: for an actress's labour is like Alcmena's, always owing to a Jupiter and an Amphitryon.

Would not one say, to see that gentleman on horseback with his gun, that he was going to make war upon all the hares and partridges about Madrid; and yet that diversion is the farthest from his thoughts; he is taken up with another design. He is going to a little village, where he

will disguise himself like a peasant, and in that dress be introduced to a farmer's, where his mistress lives under the care of a severe and vigilant mother.

That young graduate you see taking such hasty strides, goes every morning to make court to an old uncle of his, whose prebendary he has an eye upon. Fix your eyes on that house over-against us; you see a man putting on his cloak, and preparing to go out. It is an honest rich citizen, whose rest is broken by a very weighty affair. He has an only daughter to dispose of. He does not know whether he shall bestow her upon a young attorney that courts her, or a haughty Hidalgo that demands her. He is going to consult his friends about it, and really it is a very perplexing business. He is afraid, if he should chuse the gentleman, that he may have a son-in-law to despise him; on the other side, if he should take the attorney, he is apprehensive lest he should take a worm into his family to eat up all the goods in it.

Pray observe a neighbour of this perplexed father, a man in a night-gown of red brocade flowered with gold, in that house so-magnificently furnished. He is a wit, that sets up for a man of quality in spite of his mean birth. It is not ten years since he was not worth a groat, and at present he has ten thousand ducats a year. He has a very pretty equipage, but he maintains it by pinching his table, the frugality of which is so great, that he generally eats his tit-bit by himself. Not but that, out of ostentation, he sometimes entertains people of quality, and has to-day invited several counsellors of state to dine with him. To this end he has just now sent for a cook, and is going to haggle with him for an odd farthing, after which he will write down on cards the several courses and dishes they agreed upon.—This fellow you are talking of must be a confounded miser, said Zambullo. Why, answered Asmodeus, all beggars that leap into estates turn misers or prodigals. It is the rule.

Pray tell me, said the student, who that fair lady is that I see at her toilet, entertaining a very handsome young

‘ young fellow ? ’ — ‘ Oh, really, ’ said the cripple, ‘ what you see there very well deserves your observation. That lady is a German widow, who lives upon her jointure at Madrid, and keeps very good company; and the gentleman with her is a young lord, whose name is Don Antonio de Monsalva. ’

‘ Though he be of one of the best families in Spain, yet he has promised the widow to have her, and has to that end given her a promissory note for three thousand pistoles. But he is crossed in this affair by his relations, who have threatened to confine him, if he do not break off all correspondence with the lady, whom they look upon as a designing creature. The gallant, mortified to see them all oppose his inclination, came last night to pay his mistress a visit, who seeing him uneasy, asked him the reason. He told her; at the same time assuring her that all the opposition he could suffer from his family should never shake his constancy. The lady appeared charmed with his resolution, and they parted about midnight very well pleased with each other. ’

‘ Monsalva came again this morning, and finding his widow at her toilet, began to entertain her again upon the subject of his passion. While they were chatting, the lady took off the papers from her favourites, and the cavalier, without reflection, took up one of them that was unpinned, and seeing his own hand, “ How, Madam, ” said he, smiling, “ is this the use that you put your billet-doux to ? ” — “ Yes, ” Monsalva, ” answered she, “ you see to what use I put those promises that young gentlemen make who would have me against the consent of their families; I wrap up my favourites in them. ” When Monsalva found it was really his note the lady had torn, he could not help admiring her disinterestedness, and again swore to her an eternal constancy. ’

‘ Cast your eye, ’ pursued the devil, upon that tall lean fellow walking just under us, with a large commonplace book under his arm, an ink-horn at his button, and a guitar on his back. — ‘ The man, ’ said the stu-

dent, ‘ makes but a ridiculous figure, and I warrant is an original. ’ — ‘ Certainly, ’ replied the devil, ‘ he is an odd mortal; but there are Cynic philosophers in Spain, and he is one. He is going to a meadow near Buen-retiro, where there is a clear spring, whose limpid water forms a stream that wanders amongst the flowers. He will stay there the whole day contemplating the beautiful riches of nature, playing upon the guitar, and writing his reflections into his commonplace book. He has the food he generally lives on in his pocket; that is, a few onions and a slice of bread. This is the sober and abstemious life he has lived for these ten years; and if any Aristippus were to tell him, as he did Diogenes, “ If thou knewest how to make thy court to the great, thou wouldst not eat onions; ” our modern philosopher would answer, “ I could make my court to the great, as well as thou, if I would debase one man so low as to make him cringe to another. ” ’

‘ And, indeed, this philosopher was formerly very assiduous in his addresses to great men, who in effect made his fortune; but finding that their service was no other than an honourable slavery, he broke off all correspondence with them. He kept a coach, which he laid down, because he saw he bespattered men that were better than himself. Nay, he has gone so far as to give away almost all his estate amongst his friends that wanted it, and has only reserved a subsistence in the way he lives; for he thinks it as dishonourable for a philosopher to beg of the common people as of the grandees. ’

‘ Pity the cavalier, who is walking after the philosopher with a dog; he may boast of being one of the best families in Castile. He was rich, but ruined himself, like Lucian’s Timon, by treating his friends every day, especially by making grand entertainments upon the birth-days or marriages of princes and princesses; in a word, on every occasion Spain has had to make rejoicings: but the moment his parasitical friends saw this reverse of fortune, they disappeared and abandoned him. None but his dog continued faithful to him. ’

‘ Tell me, Signior Devil, ’ cried Le-

andro Perez, 'what means all that noise?'—'It is,' answered the cripple, 'one of the ladies you lately saw round a table at cards, affrighted at the disagreeable sight of day; she is come home, and it is her footman that is thundering at her door. You see she is alighted out of her coach, got within doors, and is sat down; she has just lost five hundred pounds, and cannot go to bed till her maid has brought her a pack of cards, and she is going to wake her husband to shew him how she lost the last game; then falls into a passion, goes raving to bed, and rails at the good man for not getting a place at court.'

'By what I can find,' interrupted the student, 'the good man has a blessed time, to be tied to a baggage, who, not content with running out his fortune, must arraign his conduct, and rob him of his rest besides!—'Oh!' replied the cripple, 'you do not know the artifices of women. She has begun first, for fear of having the tables turned upon her.'

'Very well; very well, upon my word!' answered the student laughing: 'but methinks I see another equipage in the same street.'—'Yes,' replied the daemon, 'it belongs to a rich contador, who every morning comes to a house hard by, where lives a bona roba, who is under the care of this sinner of Moorish race, whom he loves to distraction. Last night he heard she had been playing him a trick, upon the news of which he falls into a rage, and writes her a letter full of threats and reproaches. You will hardly guess the fetch which our coquette resolved upon; instead of having the assurance to deny the fact, she has this very morning sent him word that his provocations are just, that he ought for the future to look on her with contempt since she could have the baseness to wrong so gallant a man; that she acknowledges and detests her fault, and that to punish herself for it, she has already cut off her fine hair, which he knows she doats on; in short, that she is determined to go expiate her crime in a monastery, and there pass the rest of her life in repentance.'

'But the old dotard is not able to hold out against his mistress's pretended remorse, and is got up thus ear-

ly to make her a visit. He has found her in tears; and the comedian has played her part so well, that he has just pardoned her for what is passed, and to comfort her for the loss of her hair, he is this moment promising her to make her lady of a manor, by buying her a fine estate, which is actually to be sold in the country near the Escorial.'

'I do not know what recompence he can make her for the next trick she plays him,' interrupted the student, 'without he marry her. But pray who is that pretty woman yonder,' continued he, 'so earnestly talking to her maid? some good housewife to be sure, by her being up so early.'—'You are mistaken,' answered Asmodeus; 'she has not yet been abed, but is going, and giving her maid orders not to let in her husband till she has called her up to rattle him for making her sit up so late.'

—'Rather early,' said the student. 'True,' answered the devil. 'But pray look into that tavern, there is the good man calling for another bottle, because he is afraid of going home at this time of day, and is therefore bottling up all the courage he can, to stand his wife's thunder.'

'All the shops are open,' said the student, 'and I discern a cavalier going into a cook's.'—'He is,' replied the daemon, 'a young fellow of a good family, who is eat up with the itch of writing, and is absolutely resolved to set up for an author. Not that he wants wit; nay, he has sufficient to criticize such pieces as appear upon the stage, but not enough to write a tolerable one himself. He is going into the cook's to order a great dinner; for this very day he treats four players, whom he would fain engage to protect a scurvy piece of his, which he is going to bring into their house.'

'Now we are upon the subject of authors,' continued he, 'there are two who are met in the street. Observe with what a sneer they salute; they despise each other, and very justly. The one writes as easily as the poet Crispinus, whom Horace compares to a smith's bellows: and the other ruins a vast deal of time in cool insipid compositions.'

'Who is that little man coming out of

‘ of his coach at that church-porch?’ said Zambullo, ‘ He is,’ answered the cripple, ‘ a person well worth your observation. It is not ten years since he quitted the profession of a notary, where he was head-clerk, to go bury himself in a monastery of Carthusians at Saragossa: he had not passed six months of his noviciate, before he bid adieu to his convent, and appeared again at Madrid. His acquaintance were surprized to see him all at once jump into the place of one of the principal members of the council of the Indies, and his sudden rise is still the subject of conversation. Some say he has sold himself to the devil; others, that he is in the good graces of some rich dowager; and others, in short, that he has found a treasure.’—‘ But you know the truth of it,’ interrupted Don Cleofas. ‘ Oh! as to that, certainly I do,’ replied the dæmon, ‘ and will unravel the mystery to you. During our monk’s noviciate, it happened one day whilst he was digging a deep hole in his garden to plant a tree there, he cast his eye upon a brass casket, which he opened, and within it found a gold box, which had in it about thirty exceeding fine diamonds. Though he had no judgment in jewels, he could not help thinking he had met with a very good booty; and immediately coming to the same resolution as Judge Gripus in one of Plautus’s comedies, who having found a treasure, gave over the trade of a fisherman, he threw off the gown, and by the means of a jeweller who was his friend, converted his precious stones into pieces of gold, and his pieces of gold into a post, which has enabled him to make a figure in civil society.

C H A P. IX.

FARTHER OBSERVATIONS MADE
BY THE DEVIL AND DON CLEOFAS.

‘ I Must,’ pursued Asmodeus, ‘ divert you with a passage concerning that man going into a chocolate-house. He is a physician of Biscay, and is going to drink a dish

‘ of chocolate, after which he will pass the whole day at chess.

‘ Be not in fear for his patients all the while; he has none; and if he had, the moments he spends at his beloved game would not be the most unhappy for them. He never fails visiting a handsome rich widow every night, whom he fain would marry, and pretends a vast passion for. Whilst he is with her, a rogue of a footman, who is the only servant he has, and is let into the affair, brings him a pretended list of names of several people of quality who have sent for him. The widow takes all this for gospel, and our chess-player is upon the point of winning his party.

‘ But let us stop a moment at that fine house over-against us. I must not go on without shewing you the people that live there. Examine the apartments. What do you see in them?’—‘ I see some ladies there,’ answered the student, ‘ and am dazzled with their beauty. Some of them I see rising, and others already up. What charms they discover to my eyes! I fancy I see so many of Diana’s nymphs, as they are painted to us by the poets.’

‘ If these women you so much admire,’ replied the cripple, ‘ have the charms of Diana’s nymphs, it is too sure they have not their chastity. They are four or five ladies of pleasure who live together upon a general stock. Their dangerous charms draw heedless young fellows in, like those fair damsels who by their allurements caused such knights as passed by the castles they inhabited, to stop. Woe to such who suffer themselves to be wheedled by them! To let passengers know the danger they are in, there should be a mark set upon such houses, in the same manner as they are placed along a river, to shew such passages one should not come near.’

‘ I do not ask you,’ said Leandro Perez, ‘ where those noblemen are going in their coaches; to be sure they are going to the king’s levee.’—‘ You are right,’ answered the devil; ‘ and if you have a mind to go thither too, I will carry you. We shall meet with something diverting there.’—‘ You could have proposed nothing more agree-

‘agreeable,’ replied Zambullo, ‘it is so great a pleasure that I taste it before-hand.’

Upon which, the devil, ready to obey all Don Cleofas’s motions, flew with him towards the king’s palace; but before they got thither, the student perceiving some men at work upon a very lofty gate, asked the devil if it was not the gate of a church they were building. ‘No,’ answered Asmodeus, ‘it is the gate of a new market, and is very grand, as you see. Yet were they to carry it up to the clouds, it will never come up to the two excellent Latin verses that are designed for an inscription to it.’

‘What is that you tell me?’ cried Leandro; ‘or what idea would you give me of those verses? I long to hear them.’—‘They are these,’ replied the dæmon. ‘Prepare yourself to admire them.’

*‘Quam bene Mercurius nunc merces vendit
opimas,
‘Morus ubi fatuos vendidit ante sales!’*

‘There is one of the prettiest puns in the world in these two verses.’—‘I cannot find out all the beauty of them,’ said the student. ‘I do not well understand what *fatuos sales* means.’ You do not know, then,’ answered the devil, ‘that on the ground where this market is building, stood a college of monks that taught school. The masters used to make their scholars act plays; but such insipid pieces, so strangely larded with interludes, that even the preterperfect tenses and supines of verbs were not excused dancing.’—‘Oh! pray no more of them,’ interrupted Zambullo, ‘I know but too well what stuff those college performances are! the inscription is admirable.’

Scarce were Asmodeus and the student got upon the stair-case leading to the king’s apartment, when they saw several courtiers going up, and still as any of those noblemen passed by them, the devil played the part of a nomenclator: ‘See there,’ said he to Leandro Perez, pointing to them with his finger one after another, ‘that is Count Villalonso, of the family of Puebla D’Ellerena; this is the Marquis of Castro Fuestes; that is Don Lopez de los Rios, first lord of the treasury;

this is the Count de Villa Hombrosa.’ Nor did he only tell their names, but their characters too; always maliciously adding some stroke of satire, giving every one of them a wipe.

‘This lord,’ said he of one of them, ‘is affable and obliging; he listens to you with an air of condescension: do you want his protection, he grants it you generously, and besides offers you his interest. It is pity a man who so much loves to oblige, has so short a memory, that in a quarter of an hour after you have been talking with him, he forgets what you have been saying.’

‘That duke,’ speaking of another, ‘is one of the most agreeable characters of any man at court: he is not changing every quarter of an hour, like the rest of his brethren; he has no caprice, no inequality in his humour. Besides, he is not ungrateful to such as shew an affection for his person, or do him any service; but unluckily he is a little too tardy in acknowledging them; he lets people wait so long for any favour they expect, that whenever they obtain it, they think they have paid very dear for it.’

After the dæmon had acquainted the student with the good and ill qualities of a great number of those noblemen, he carried him into a hall, where were people of all sorts, and amongst them so many knights, that Don Cleofas cried out, ‘Bless me, what a number of knights are here! sure, there must be a great many in Spain?’—‘That there are,’ replied the cripple; ‘nor ought it to be surprizing, since to be a knight of St. Jago, or Calatrava, it is not necessary, as it formerly was at Rome, to have five and twenty thousand crowns inheritance; and indeed you see they are a very sophisticated kind of a commodity.’

‘Observe that mean-looking man behind you.’—‘Speak lower,’ interrupted Zambullo, ‘the man hears you.’—‘No, no,’ answered the devil, ‘the same charm that makes us invisible, prevents our being heard. Look upon him; he is a Catalan just come from the Philippine Islands, where he has been a privateering. To look at him, would you imagine him to be such a thunderbolt of war? Yet he has done prodigious actions by his bravery. He is going this morning
to

to present a petition to the king, wherein he asks a particular post as the reward of his services: but I very much doubt whether he will obtain it, because he did not apply to the chief minister first.

At his right hand, said Leandro Perez, there is a tall, bulky man, who seems to be giving himself airs of consequence. Were one to judge of him by his haughty air, he should be some rich nobleman.—Far from it, replied Asmodeus, he is an Hidalgo, and wretchedly poor too, whose subsistence is a gaming-house he keeps under the protection of a grandee.

But there is a licentiate that deserves richly to be pointed out to you; he at the first window, in deep discourse with a cavalier in light grey velvet. They are talking of an affair that was yesterday decided by the king. I will give you the particulars of it.

About two months since, this licentiate, who is a member of the academy of Toledo, published a book of morality, which shocked all the old Castilian authors. They found it full of bold expressions, and new-coined words. Presently they entered into a confederacy against this very singular production: they meet and draw up a petition, which they present to the king, desiring him to condemn this book, as contrary to the purity and perspicuity of the Spanish tongue.

The petition was thought worthy his majesty's consideration, who named a committee of three to examine the piece. They reported that the style was really faulty, and so much the more dangerous, the more brilliant: and thus the king decreed upon that report, that under pain of his displeasure, two members of the same university, who write in the licentiate's goût, shall not compose any books for the future; and likewise, for the better preserving the Castilian tongue, that the places of those academicians, upon their demise, shall be filled up with persons of the first quality only.

A wonderful decision! cried Zambullo, laughing. The partisans of the vulgar Castilian have now nothing to fear.—Pardon me, replied the

dæmon; writers, who are enemies to this noble simplicity which charms sensible readers, are not all of the academy of Toledo.

Don Cleofas was desirous to know who that cavalier in light grey velvet was, whom he saw engaged in conversation with the licentiate. He is, said the cripple, a Castilian, and a younger brother, an officer of the Spanish guard; and, I assure you, a man of a great deal of wit. But to make you a judge of that, I will tell you a repartee that he made yesterday to a lady in very good company. For the better understanding it, you must know he has a brother whose name is Don Andre de Prada, that was for some years an officer in the same corps he is now in.

A rich farmer of the king's revenues one day came up to Don Andre, and accosting him said, "Signior de Prada, I bear the same name as you, but our families are different. I know you are of one of the best in Catalonia, and at the same time that you are not rich; as for me, I am rich, but of very obscure birth. Could there be no way of sharing between us the advantage which each of us enjoy separately? can you get at your patent of nobility?"—"Yes," said Don Andre. "Well, then," replied the farmer, "if you will give me a share in them, I will put them into the hands of an able genealogist, who shall go to work upon them, and make us cousins in spite of our ancestors; on which consideration, I will by way of acknowledgment present you with thirty thousand pistoles. Is it a bargain?" Don Andre was tempted by the sum, accepted the proposal, put his musty old originals into the farmer's hands, and with the money he received, bought a considerable estate in Catalonia, where he has ever since lived.

Now the younger brother of that gentleman, who had no advantage by the bargain, was yesterday at dinner, where by chance this Signior de Prada, the farmer of the king's revenues, happened to be talked of; and thereupon a lady in the company, addressing herself to this young officer, asked him if he was not a relation of his. "No, really, Ma-

dam,

"dam," answered he, "I have not that honour, it is my brother."

The student, vastly pleased with so diverting a repartee, burst out into a laugh; but of a sudden seeing a little man running after a courtier, he cried out, 'Good God! how many bows that little man following the nobleman is making him! certainly he has some favour to ask.'—'What you are remarking upon there,' said the devil, 'well deserves the trouble of telling you the occasion of so many civilities. That little man is an honest citizen that has a pretty neat box near Madrid, at a place where there are mineral waters in some esteem. This house he lent without any expectations to that lord for three months, who went thither to drink the waters. The citizen is at this instant most heartily intreating him to serve him on an occasion that offers, and the nobleman is very politely refusing him.'

'I must not let that cavalier of plebeian race escape me, who is pressing through the crowd, and giving himself airs of quality. He is lately grown excessively rich in a small time by the science of numbers. He keeps as many domesticks as a grandee, and his table for delicacy and abundance exceeds that of the chief minister. He has one equipage for himself, one for his wife, and another for his children. The finest horses and mules in the world are to be seen in his stables. And the other day he bought and paid ready money for a rich set of harnesses which the Prince of Spain cheapened, and thought too dear.'—'Insolence!' said Leandro; 'were a Turk to see this merry fellow flaunting it thus, he would be apt to think that his good fortune was just going to give him the slip.'—'As for what may happen, I know not,' said Asmodeus; 'but I cannot help thinking like a Turk.'

'Bless me, what do I see!' continued the daemon with astonishment: 'I can hardly believe my eyes. I see a poet in the hall who should not be here. How dares he venture hither, after having lampooned several of the chief of the Spanish nobility! Sure, he must depend upon being despised by them.'

'Consider attentively that honour-

able person who comes in leaning upon a squire; see how every body gives back to make way for him. It is Signior Don Josepho de Reynaste and Ayala, recorder of the city. He is come to give the king an account of what happened last night at Madrid. Pray do but admire the old gentleman.'

'Really,' said Zambullo, 'he has the look of an honest good man.'—'It were to be wished,' replied the cripple, 'that every corregidor would chuse him for their pattern. He is not one of those turbulent spirits that do every thing out of humour or passion. He will not commit a man upon the single evidence of a bailiff or clerk. He knows too well that such people generally are mercenary, and capable of committing the basest actions under his name and authority. Wherefore, when a man is to be committed, he sifts the affair till he has found out the truth. And indeed he never sends an innocent man to gaol. The guilty only are committed by him. Nor does he leave even them to the barbarity that is exercised in such places. He visits those unfortunate people himself, and takes care that no inhumanity shall be added to the just severities of the law.'

'What a charming character is this!' cried Leandro, 'and what an amiable man must he be! I should be glad to hear him talk to the king.'—'I am extremely sorry,' answered the devil, 'that I am obliged to tell you, I cannot comply with your desire without laying myself open to be insulted. I am not allowed access to crowned heads, that would be encroaching upon the rights of Leviathan, Belphegor, and Ashtaroth. I have already told you that those three spirits are in possession of the privilege of engrossing all sovereigns. Other daemons are forbid appearing in courts; and I do not know what I was thinking upon when it came into my head to bring you hither. I own it was taking a very rash step. If those three devils should light on me, they would fall upon me most furiously; and, between you and I, I should have much the worst of it.'

'Since we are in such ticklish circumstances,

‘circumstances,’ replied the student, ‘our best way would be to make off as soon as we can. I should be mortally grieved to see you worried by your brethren, without being able to assist you; for were I to take your part, I fancy you would be little the better for me.’—‘No, without doubt,’ replied Asmodeus; ‘they would not feel your blows, and you would sink under theirs.’

‘But,’ added he, ‘to make up for not being able to introduce you into your monarch’s closet, I will give you a satisfaction which is well worth that which you must lose.’ At these words he took Don Cleofas by the hand, and cleft the air with him towards the monastery De la Merci:

CHAP. X.

OF THE CAPTIVES:

THEY both alighted upon a house near the monastery, at the gate of which there was a vast concourse of people of both sexes. ‘What a world of people are here!’ said Leandro Perez; ‘what ceremony has brought all these folks together?’—‘It is,’ answered the daemon, ‘a ceremony you have never seen, though it is what happens at Madrid every now and then. Three hundred slaves, all of them subjects to the king of Spain, will be here in a moment. They are come back from Algiers, from whence the fathers of the redemption have ransomed them. All the streets they are to go through will immediately be crowded with spectators.’

‘Indeed,’ replied Zambullo, ‘it is a sight I have never yet been very fond of seeing; and if that be what your lordship reserves for me, I must tell you plainly you should not have cried it up to me so much.’—‘I know you too well,’ answered the devil, ‘to believe the sight of the unfortunate will be an agreeable amusement to you; but when I tell you, that at the same time I shew them you, I design to let you into such remarkable particulars as occur in the captivity of some of them; and the perplexity that others will find themselves in at their return home, I am persuaded you will not be sorry

that I have given you this diversion.’

—‘Oh, no! if the matter be as you represent it,’ cried the student; ‘what you tell me alters the case, and you will oblige me by keeping your promise.’

Whilst they were thus talking, they heard a great shout, which came from the mob at the sight of the captives, who advanced in this order; they marched two and two in their slaves habit, with their chains about their necks. A great many monks De la Merci, who had been to meet them, walked before, mounted upon mules, whose housings were black serge, as if they were leading up a funeral procession, and one of these good fathers carried the standard of the redemption. Then came the captives, the youngest first, the most aged followed, and behind them brought up the rear a monk of the same order as the first, mounted upon a small horse, and this reverend friar had altogether the air of a prophet. Indeed he was the head of the mission: he attracted the eyes of the spectators by his gravity, as well as by a long grey beard, which helped to give him that venerable look; and on the countenance of this Spanish Moses was to be read the inexpressible joy he felt at bringing back so many christians to their own country.

‘These captives,’ said the cripple, ‘are not all equally transported at recovering their liberty; and if there are some amongst them who are rejoiced at being so near seeing their relations again, there are others who are afraid lest, during their absence, something may have happened in their families more cruel to them than slavery itself.’

‘Those two, for example, that walk foremost, are in the latter case. One of them, a native of the little village of Velilla in the kingdom of Arragon, after having been ten years a slave amongst the Turks, without hearing any thing of his wife, will find her married to a second husband, and mother of five children that are none of his own. The other, the son of a clothier of Segovia, was carried off by a corsair near sixteen years ago. He is afraid, after so many years, that the face of the family may be very much altered; and his fears are not without foundation, for

‘ his father and mother are dead, and
‘ his brothers, who have divided the
‘ estate, have by their ill conduct since
‘ spent it.’

‘ I am examining the face of a slave,’
said the student, ‘ who by his air
‘ seems charmed with being no longer
‘ exposed to the bastinado.’—‘ The
‘ captive you are looking at,’ answered
the devil, ‘ has great reason to be
‘ rejoiced at his deliverance ; for he
‘ knows that an old aunt, whose sole
‘ heir he is, is just dead, and that he
‘ is going to enjoy a splendid fortune.
‘ This is the circumstance which so
‘ agreeably takes up his thoughts, and
‘ gives him the air of satisfaction you
‘ observe in him.

‘ But it is not so with the unfortu-
‘ nate cavalier that is next to him.
‘ A cruel uneasiness incessantly tor-
‘ ments him, and this is the cause of
‘ it. At the time he was taken by a
‘ pirate of Algiers in passing from
‘ Spain to Italy, he loved and was
‘ beloved by a fair lady, whose fide-
‘ lity he suspects was not proof against
‘ the impatience and uncertainty of
‘ his return.’—‘ And has he been long
‘ a slave ?’ said Zambullo. ‘ Eigh-
‘ teen months,’ replied Asmodeus.
‘ Why, then,’ said Leandro, ‘ I fancy
‘ this lover gives too much into an un-
‘ necessary and unjust fear. He has
‘ not put his lady’s constancy to suf-
‘ ficient proof, to be excusable for thus
‘ alarming himself.’—‘ Nay, but you
‘ are mistaken though,’ replied the
cripple ; ‘ for his princess no sooner
‘ heard he was a slave in Barbary,
‘ than she provided herself with ano-
‘ ther gallant.

‘ Would you think,’ continued the
devil, ‘ that man walking next the
‘ two we have been talking of, and
‘ whose thick red beard renders him
‘ frightful to look at ; would you, I
‘ say, think that man ever was a very
‘ pretty fellow ? Yet nothing is more
‘ certain ; and, under that hideous fi-
‘ gure you see a hero whose story is
‘ so uncommon that I will give it you.

‘ That tall youth’s name is Fabri-
‘ cio ; scarce was he fifteen when his
‘ father, a rich husbandman of Cin-
‘ quello, a great market-town in the
‘ kingdom of Leon, died, and shortly
‘ after his mother ; so that being the
‘ only son, he remained master of a
‘ considerable estate, which was com-

‘ mitted to the administration of an
‘ uncle, a man of probity. Fabricio
‘ finished his studies which he had then
‘ already begun at Salamanca, and af-
‘ terwards learned riding, fencing,
‘ and in short neglected nothing that
‘ could contribute to make him ap-
‘ pear amiable in the eyes of Donna
‘ Hippolita, the sister of a pretty gen-
‘ tleman, whose cottage was about
‘ two musket-shot from Cinquello.

‘ The lady was perfectly handsome,
‘ and much about the same age as Fa-
‘ bricio, who being used to see her from
‘ his infancy, had, as it were, sucked
‘ in his love for her, with his milk.
‘ Hippolita, too, had eyes to see he
‘ was not ugly ; but knowing him to
‘ be the son of an husbandman, dis-
‘ dained to look on him with much at-
‘ tention. She was insufferably proud,
‘ as well as her brother Don Thomaso
‘ de Xaral, who perhaps had not his
‘ equal in all Spain for his poverty,
‘ and the pride that puffed him up
‘ upon account of his nobility.

‘ This haughty country gentleman
‘ dwelt in a house which he called his
‘ castle ; but which, to give it its due,
‘ was no more than a heap of rubbish,
‘ it was so near falling over his head.
‘ Yet though his estate would not al-
‘ low him to repair it, and though it
‘ was as much as ever he could do to
‘ make both ends meet, still he must
‘ have a valet to wait on him, and his
‘ sister a negro woman besides.

‘ It was a diverting circumstance to
‘ see Don Thomaso make his appear-
‘ ance at the town on Sundays and ho-
‘ lidays, dressed in a suit of crimson
‘ velvet, the pile of which was quite
‘ worn off, and in a little hat with a
‘ rusty yellow plume of feathers in it,
‘ which he kept by him the rest of the
‘ week as carefully as relics. Trick-
‘ ed up in these tatters, which he look-
‘ ed upon as so many proofs of his
‘ nobility, he strutted like a lord, and
‘ thought he sufficiently repaid the low
‘ bows that were made him, by a look
‘ or a nod. His sister was not less
‘ conceited of the antiquity of her fa-
‘ mily, to which folly she added that
‘ of being so unconscionably vain of
‘ her beauty, as to live in a continual
‘ expectation of being demanded for
‘ a wife by some grandee.

‘ These were the characters of Don
‘ Thomaso and Hippolita. Fabricio

‘ was well acquainted with it; and in order to insinuate himself into the good graces of these two vain-glorious persons, resolved to flatter their vanity by a shew of respect; which he did with so much art, that the brother and sister at last condescended to allow him from time to time to come and pay his obeisance. Being as well acquainted with their poverty as their arrogance, he often longed to make them an offer of his purse; but this he was deterred from, by the fear of shocking their pride, and thereby making them his enemies. However, his ingenious generosity found means to assist them, without making them blush. “Signior,” said he one day to our gentleman, “I have two thousand ducats which I would deposit in some friend’s hands; be so good as to keep them for me, and you will oblige me vastly.”

‘ You need not ask whether Xaral consented. Besides that it was very low with him, he had the right conscience for a trustee. He readily took the sum, and as soon as he got it into his hands, without ceremony employed a good part of it in repairing his cottage, and providing himself with all manner of necessaries. A new suit of a very fine blue velvet was taken up and made at Salamanca; and a green feather, bought there likewise, robbed the old yellow plume of the glory which it had enjoyed from time immemorial, of adorning the noble scull of Don Thomaso. The fair Hippolita, too, had her gewgaws, and was entirely new-clothed from top to toe. It was thus Xaral run out the sum he was entrusted with, without ever considering it was none of his own, and that he should never be able to repay it. That was a scruple that never disturbed him; nay, he even thought it but reasonable that a plebeian should pay for the honour of a gentleman’s acquaintance.

‘ But Fabricio had foreseen all this, imagining at the same time that his ready money might soften Don Thomaso into a greater familiarity, and Hippolita, by degrees accustoming herself to bear his assiduities, might at last pardon him the boldness of lifting his thoughts so high as to her. Indeed, he had freer access to them

‘ than before, and they shewed him more civility than they used to do: but a man that is rich is always well received by the great, whenever he will make himself their milch-cow. Xaral and his sister, who before had never known any thing more of riches than it’s name, no sooner found how useful it was, but were of opinion such a man as Fabricio deserved a little complaisance. They treated him with a respect and attention that charmed him. He thought his person was now not disagreeable to them, and that they had assuredly reflected, that gentlemen, to keep up their nobility, were every day obliged to have recourse to alliances with mean families. This thought, which flattered his passion, made him determine to ask Hippolita in marriage.

‘ The first favourable moment he could find for speaking to Don Thomaso, he told him he passionately desired to be his brother-in-law, and that in order to enjoy this honour, he would not only relinquish his right to the deposit, but would besides make him a present of a thousand pistoles. The haughty Xaral reddened at this proposal, which awakened his pride; and in his first impulses of passion, could hardly forbear discovering all the contempt he entertained for the son of an husbandman. Yet how much soever he resented this rash attempt of Fabricio, he smothered it; and, without any signs of scorn, answered, that he could not immediately determine such an affair upon the spot; that it was proper Hippolita should be consulted upon it; and that there should be a meeting of relations.

‘ He sent the lover home with this answer, and in fact called a diet, composed of a few Hidalgos of his neighbourhood, who were related to him, and whose brains, like his, were turned with their fondness for the Hidalguia. He held a council with them, not to ask their opinions whether he should grant his sister to Fabricio, but to contrive how they should punish this young insolent fellow, who, notwithstanding his mean birth, had dared to aspire to the possession of a young lady of Hippolita’s quality.

When he had laid before the assembly this daring action, at the bare name of Fabricio, of a husbandman's son, you might have seen the eyes of all these nobles sparkle with rage. Each man vomited fire and flame at the audacious mortal. They all were unanimous that he ought to breathe his last under the ballinado, to expiate the affront he had done their family by the proposal only of so shameful a match. However, upon mature deliberation, the result of this important diet was, that the criminal should be suffered to live; but to teach him not to forget himself for the future, they should play him a trick which he might have cause to remember a long while.

Several mean rascally expedients were proposed, and at last this had the most hands: that Hippolita should pretend to favour Fabricio's address; and that, under colour of softening the lover's pain for Don Thomaso's refusal, she should make him an appointment to come one night to the castle; where, the moment of his being let in by the negro woman, people posted there on purpose should surprize him with that wench, and force him to marry her.

The sister of Xaral at first gave into this villainous contrivance without reluctance. She thought her pride was concerned to look upon the pursuits of a man of a condition so vastly inferior to her own, as an outrage done to her. But this haughty disposition soon gave way to emotions of pity; or rather love at one blow made himself master of the proud Hippolita.

From that moment she considered things with another eye. She looked upon the obscurity of Fabricio's birth as amply made up by the shining qualities he possessed; and saw nothing in him but a cavalier that deserved her tenderest affection. Admire, continued the dæmon, admire the prodigious alteration that love is able to produce. This very same young creature, who imagined that a prince scarce deserved her, in an instant grows fond of the son of an husbandman, and hugs herself in his pretensions, after thinking herself dishonoured by them.

She gave herself up to the incli-

nation that hurried her away; and, far from submitting to become an instrument of her brother's resentment, carried on a secret correspondence with Fabricio by means of the negro woman, who sometimes introduced him into the cottage. But Don Thomaso had some suspicion of what passed; he began to suspect his sister, he watched her, and was convinced by his own eyes, that instead of complying with the intentions of the family, she betrayed them. Immediately he informed two of his cousins of it, who, taking fire at the news, began to cry out, "Vengeance, Don Thomaso; vengeance!" Xaral, who wanted no prompting to demand satisfaction for an offence of this kind, answered them with a Spanish modesty, that they should see the use he could make of his sword, when his honour was to be revenged. He then desired them to be at his house on a night which he appointed them.

They were very exact to their appointment. He carried them in, and hid them in a little room, without being perceived by any of the family; he then left them, saying he would come and let them know, so soon as the gallant should have set his foot within the castle, provided he should think fit to come that night: which did not fail to happen; the unlucky planet of our lovers decreeing they should chuse this very night for an interview.

Already was Fabricio with his dear Hippolita; and they had begun upon a topick which they had gone through a hundred times, and yet, though repeated without intermission, has still always the graces of novelty, when they were disagreeably interrupted by those cavaliers that were upon the watch in order to surprize them. Don Thomaso and his two cousins came all three courageously pouring in upon Fabricio, who had but just time to draw, and who judging by this action of theirs that they intended to murder him, fought like one in despair. He wounded them all three, and still presenting the point of his sword, was so lucky as to gain the door and get off.

Upon this, Xaral finding his enemy had escaped him, after dishonour-

ing

ing his family unrevenged, turned his fury against the unfortunate Hipolita, and plunged his sword into her heart; and his two relations mortified to the last degree with the ill success of their designs, each of them went home with their wounds.

'Let us break off here,' continued Asmodeus; 'when we have seen all the captives go by, I will make an end of my story, and inform you how, after the law had seized upon all his estate on account of this melancholy accident, he had the misfortune, in a voyage, to be made a slave.'

'Whilst you was in your story,' said Don Cleofas, 'I could not help taking notice of one of these unfortunate people, a young fellow who looks so dejected, so languishing, that it was as much as I could do to forbear interrupting you to enquire into the cause of it.'—'Nor will you lose your labour,' answered the demon, 'for I can satisfy your curiosity. That slave, whose melancholy struck you, is the only son of a good family at Valladolid. He has been two years in captivity, with a patron who has an exceeding pretty wife; and his wife was violently in love with her slave, who returned her love by a very tender passion. The patron, suspecting something, made haste to sell the christian, for fear his business at his house might be the propagating of Turks. The tender hearted Castilian has ever since, without ceasing, bewailed the loss of his mistress, and his liberty is not able to make him easy under it.'

'An old gentleman with a very good aspect draws my eyes towards him,' said Leandro Perez; 'pray who may he be?'—'It is a barber of Guipuscoa,' answered the devil, 'who is returning to Biscay, after a forty years captivity. At the time he fell into a corsair's hands, in a voyage from Valencia to the island of Sardinia, he had a wife, two sons, and a daughter, of whom he has now only one son left; who, more fortunate than his father, has been at Peru, and is returned with immense riches to his own country, where he has bought two fine estates.'—'What satisfaction!' exclaimed the student, 'what transport it must be to that son to enjoy his father again,

and to be in a condition to make his last days happy and easy.'

'You talk like a tender affectionate child,' replied the cripple; 'but the Biscayan barber's son is of a tougher make. The unexpected arrival of his father will give him more uneasiness than pleasure; and instead of taking him home into his house at Guipuscoa, and sparing nothing to shew how overjoyed he is at recovering him, he may perhaps make him one of his game-keepers.'

'Behind the barber, is a little Aragonian physician, as like an ape as one drop of water to another. He has not been a fortnight at Algiers; for as soon as the Turks learned his profession, they refused to let him stay amongst them, and chose rather to give him up without any ransom to the fathers of the redemption, who were far from intending to redeem him, and have sore against their will brought him back to Spain.'

'For goodness sake, tell me,' said the student, 'who that very odd sour-looking fellow is, who walks by himself with a shambling gait, and his hat over his eyes?'—'He is,' answered Asmodeus, 'a very odd fellow indeed, and the ill-nature in his countenance proceeds from having nobody to talk to. He is one of those disagreeable people whom Horace has set a mark on by the name of question-askers, or praters. Not content with the produce of his own brains, he is eternally upon the hunt into other people's affairs, for some circumstances to administer ease to that restless prating humour so shocking to all mankind. And this fellow is so signally unfortunate that way, that an eighteen months slavery of his own, together with that of the whole ship's crew, is owing to this very silly habit of asking impertinent questions. For whilst he was enquiring of the pilot the longitude and latitude of several places, the knowledge of which could never be of the least use to him, the pilot, diverted from his observations by the young man's impertinence, suffered the ship to run upon a bank of sand, which gave an Algerine rover time to come up with them, and make a seizure of her, and all that was in her. While you live,' continued he,

he, 'avoid such company; trifling at best, they are good for nothing but to disturb the pleasure and repose of society; and if they happen, for the plague of mankind, to be ill-natured with their curiosity, there is no mischief they are not capable of.'

'You need not fear my profiting by this piece of advice,' replied the student, 'for my own sake at least.'—'Very well,' said the devil, 'then let us resume the thread of our observations, which that good for nothing creature has broke in upon. Observe that other slave that has a little brown cap upon his bald pate. You that have such a tender feeling of others misfortunes, alas! how much would you pity him, did you know the sufferings he has undergone in a twelve years slavery at Algiers under an English renegade to whose lot he fell.'—'And who is that poor captive?' said Zambullo. 'He is a cordelier of Navarre,' answered the daemon. 'I must own I am very glad he has suffered like a wretch as he is, since, by his discourses of morality, he hindered above a hundred christian slaves from taking the turban.'

'And I must tell you with the same freedom,' replied Don Cleofas, 'that I am sorry the good father has been so long at the mercy of a barbarian.'—'You are as much in the wrong to be afflicted, as I to rejoice at it,' answered Asmodeus: 'for this friar has so well improved by his twelve years sufferings, that it is much better for him to have passed that time in torments, than in his cell to combat temptations which he would not always have got the better of.'

'The captive that comes immediately after the cordelier,' said Leandro Perez, 'looks very composed for a man just come out of slavery. He raises my curiosity to know who he is.'—'You are before-hand with me,' replied the cripple, 'I was going to point him out to you. In him you see a citizen of Salamanca, an unhappy father, a mortal grown insensible of misfortunes, by having run through so many. I am tempted to relate to you his sad story, and there leave the rest of the captives: and, indeed, after him there are few whose adventures deserve reciting.'

The student, already tired with seeing so many sad figures, answered, he desired nothing better. Immediately the devil began the story contained in the following chapter.

CHAP. XI.

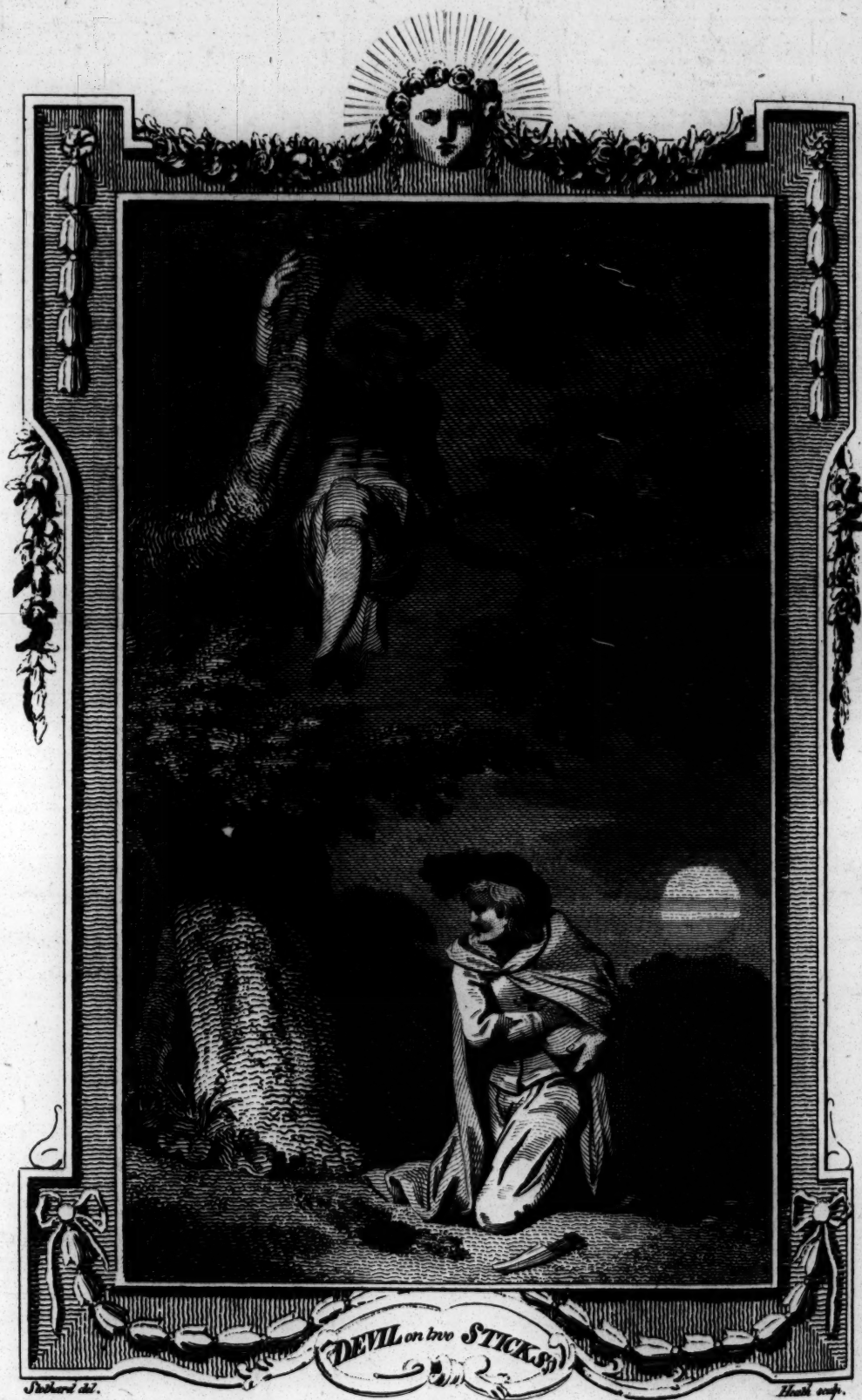
OF THE LAST STORY THAT ASMODEUS TOLD. HOW, AS HE WAS MAKING AN END OF IT, HE WAS SUDDENLY INTERRUPTED; AND HOW DISAGREEABLY FOR HIM DON CLEOFAS AND HE WERE PARTED.

PABLOS de Bahabon, son of an Alcade of a small town in Old Castile, after having divided between himself, and one brother and a sister, a small inheritance which their father, though a covetous man, had left them, set out for Salamanca, with design to increase the great number of students that then crowded to that university. He was well made, had wit, and was then in the twenty-third year of his age.

'With a good thousand of ducats, and a very great inclination to spend them in good cheer, he did not long fail of being talked of in the city. All the young people strove for a share in the friendship and entertainments which Don Pablos every day gave. I say *don*, for he had assumed that title in order to support his pretensions to a greater familiarity with such students, whose nobility might otherwise have obliged him to behave with greater reserve. But so much did he love diversion and good company, and so little did he manage his purse, that at fifteen months end his money failed him. However he still made a shift to rub on, as well by the means of credit he had given him, as of a few pistoles he borrowed; but that could not go far, and he soon remained without resource.'

'Upon this, his friends finding him unable to live as he had done, forbore their visits, and his creditors began to plague him; and though he assured the latter that in a few days he expected bills of exchange out of his own country, yet some of them grew impatient, and pursued him so closely





‘ closely with bailiffs, that he narrowly escaped being taken; when, as he was walking by the side of the River de Tormes, he met an acquaintance who accosted him thus: “Signior Don Pablos, take care of yourself; for I must tell you, there are several bailiffs in pursuit after you, and they intend to lay hold on you as soon as ever you set your foot within the town.”

‘ Bahabon, terrified with this piece of news, which but too well agreed with the state of his affairs, immediately made off towards Corita: but left the road with intent to gain a wood that was in his view, into which he threw himself, resolving to lie concealed there, till night should besfriend him with her darkness to pursue his journey with more security. It was a season when the trees were adorned with all their leaves; he chose the thickest, and got up into it, and there sat upon its branches, the leaves of which entirely hid him.

‘ Thinking himself safe here, the fear of bailiffs soon vanished: and as men make the finest reflections in the world, when their faults are committed; so he called over all his ill conduct, and resolved, if ever he should see himself rich again, to make a better use of his money; but, above all, he swore never more to be the bubble of those false friends, who draw young fellows into debauchery, and whose friendship is over with the fumes of their wine.

‘ Whilst he was thus entertaining himself with thoughts of a different kind, that crowded into his mind one after another, night came on. Upon which, disengaging himself from the branches and leaves that covered him, he was preparing to get down, when by the feeble light of the moon, that was then new, he thought he discerned the form of a man. At sight of this, his former fear returned, and he fancied it was the bailiff, who having traced him, was looking for him in this wood; and his fear increased upon seeing the man sit down at the foot of the tree where he was, after going two or three times round it.

‘ The devil on two sticks stopt short in his story here; “Signior Zambullo,

‘ said he to Cleofas, “give me leave for a few moments to divert myself with the perplexity I see I have at present put you into. You are very much in pain to know who the mortal could be that came so unluckily thither, and what could have brought him. This is what I am going this moment to let you into. I will not abuse your patience.

‘ The man, after sitting down at the foot of the tree, whose thick foliage hid Don Pablos from him, rested himself for a few minutes. He then began to dig the earth with a poignard, and made a large hole, wherein he buried a leathern bag; he then filled up the hole, covered it carefully with moss, and went away. Bahabon, who had observed all this with the greatest attention, and whose fears were changed into transports of joy, waited for the man’s being at a distance, that he might come down from his tree, and dig up the bag, in which he did not doubt but he should find either gold or silver. To this end he made use of his knife; but had he had none, he found himself so eager for the work, that with his hands only he would have penetrated to the very centre of the earth.

‘ The moment he had the bag in his hands, he began to sound it; and persuaded there was money in it, he hastened out of the wood with his booty, not so much then fearing to meet a bailiff, as the man who owned the bag. Transported as our student was with so lucky a hit, he walked nimbly all night long, without keeping any road, and without feeling any fatigue or inconvenience from the burden he was loaded with. But as soon as the day glimmered, he stopped under some trees, pretty near the town of Molorido, not so much indeed to rest himself, as at last to satisfy the curiosity he had to examine into the contents of his bag. He therefore untied it with that agreeable trembling you feel upon the approach of any vast pleasure. He therein found a parcel of good double pistoles; and, to crown his joy, counted to the tune of two hundred and fifty.

‘ Having contemplated them with excessive satisfaction, he began to be- think himself very seriously what course

course he should take; and when he had formed his resolution, fastened up his doubloons in his pockets, threw away the bag, and went to Molorido. He enquired out an inn, where, whilst his breakfast was preparing, he hired a mule, and that very day returned to Salamanca.

He perceived plainly, by the surprise every body shewed at seeing him again, that the reason of his disappearing was no secret; but he had his story ready. He told them, that having occasion for money, and receiving none from his own country, though he had written for it twenty times, he had resolved to take a turn thither himself; and that the day before, just as he got into Molorido, he had met his steward with money. So that he now found it was in his power to undeceive those who thought him a man who had no fortune. He added, he intended to shew his creditors they were in the wrong to drive an honest man to extremities, who long ago had paid them, had his stewards been more punctual in remitting him his rents.

In reality, the next day he sent for all his creditors, and paid them to the last farthing. The same friends, that had deserted him in his want, no sooner knew he had a fresh supply of money, but they came flocking in upon him, and once more began to flatter him, hoping to divert themselves again at his expence. But he laughed at them in his turn, and religiously observing the oath he had sworn in the wood, sent them away abruptly. Instead of following his former way of life, he turned his thoughts towards making a progress in the science of the laws, and study became his sole employment.

However, you will say, he was all this while very conscientiously spending the double pistoles that did not belong to him. I agree with you; and he was only doing what four parts in five of mankind will do in the like case. Yet he intended some time or other to restore them, if by chance he should discover who owned them. But relying upon his good intentions, he spent them without scruple, and patiently waited till he should find him out, which notwithstanding he did about a year after.

The report spread about Salamanca, that a man of that town, called Ambrosio Piquillo, going to a wood to fetch a bag full of pieces of gold, which he had buried, had found nothing but the hole, where he had taken it into his head to bury them, and that the poor man was thereby reduced to beggary.

I must say, in praise of Bahabon, that the secret reproaches of his conscience at hearing this were not thrown away. He enquired where Ambrosio lived, and made him a visit in a little poor habitation, where all the furniture was one chair and a wretched bed. "Friend," said he, with an hypocritical air, "I have heard from common fame the sad accident that has befallen you; and charity obliging us all to help one another as far as we can, I am come to bring you some small assistance. But I should be glad to hear your unfortunate adventure from your own mouth."

"Sir," answered Piquillo, "I will tell you in two words. I had a son who used to rob me. I perceived it, and fearing he might lay his hands upon a leathern bag, wherein I had two hundred and fifty good doubloons, I thought I could not do better than to bury them in the same wood, whither I had the folly to carry them. Since that unlucky day my son took all that I had, and ran away with a woman whom he had debauched. Finding myself in a deplorable condition, by the debaucheries of this wicked son of mine, or rather by my foolish tenderness for him, I had recourse to my leathern bag. But, alas! the only hopes of subsistence which I had left me, were cruelly torn from me."

The poor man could not bring out these words without finding his affliction renewed, and shedding abundance of tears. Don Pablos relented at so moving a scene, and said to him: "My dear Ambrosio, we must not lay the crosses we meet with too much to heart; your tears are of no service, they will never fetch back your money, which is really lost to you, if it be fallen into the hands of any rascal. But who knows! your double pistoles may have happened into an honest man's hands, who

“ who to be sure will restore them as soon as he knows they belong to you. Come, perhaps you may get them again, do not despair of it; and, in the mean while,” added he, (at the same time giving him ten of those very doubloons that came out of the leathern bag) “ here, take this, and come again in eight days. Having spoke thus to him, he told him his name, and where he lived, and went out of the room, quite contented at the blessings and acknowledgments Ambrosio bestowed upon him.” Such are for the most part all generous actions; we should be far from admiring them, could we see into their motives.

“ At the eight days end, Piquillo, who had not forgot Don Pablo’s commands, went and made him a visit. Bahabon made very much of him, and said very affectionately to him, “ Friend, upon the good character I have had of you, I am resolved to contribute my utmost towards your re-establishment. I will employ both my credit and my purse.

“ As a beginning,” continued he, “ do you know what I have done! I am acquainted with some persons of distinction who are extremely charitable; I have been with them, and have moved them to pity you so much, that I have got two hundred crowns of them for you.” At the same time he went into his closet, and came out in a moment with a linen-bag wherein he had put that sum in silver, and not in doubloons, lest the man might suspect the truth of the matter, by receiving so many double pistoles. Whereas by this artifice he obtained his end with more security; which was, to make restitution in such a manner, as might reconcile his conscience with his reputation.

“ And indeed poor Ambrosio was far from thinking these crowns a restitution. He sincerely took them for a gathering made for him, and having again humbly thanked Don Pablo, returned to his little cottage, blessing Heaven all the way for finding a gentleman so good as to take all this trouble to serve him.

“ The next day he met a friend in the street, whose affairs were not at all in a better posture than his own,

and who said to him, “ In two days I am going to Cadiz in order to embark on board a ship that is shortly to set sail for New Spain. I do not like the way of life I am in here, and my mind tells me, I shall succeed better at Mexico; I would advise you to go with me, if you can raise only a hundred crowns.”

“ I can raise two hundred,” answered Piquillo, “ without any trouble, and would willingly undertake this voyage, were I sure of a livelihood in the Indies.” Whereupon his friend boasted the fertility of New Spain, and laid before him so many ways of growing rich, that Ambrosio, giving into his friend’s views, thought of nothing but of preparing to set out for Cadiz. But before he left Salamanca, he took care to have a letter left with Bahabon, wherein he tells him, that having met with a very good opportunity of going to the Indies, he had a mind to make use of it, in order to try whether fortune would be kinder to him in a new country than she had been in his own; that he took the liberty of informing him of it, and of assuring him he would never forget his great favours to him.

“ Ambrosio’s departure a little vexed Don Pablos, who thereby saw the scheme he had laid, by little and little to discharge his conscience, quite disconcerted. But considering that in a few years the good old man might return to Salamanca, he insensibly grew easy, and applied himself more than ever to the civil and canon laws, and made so prodigious a progress, as well by his application, as the quickness of his parts, that he became the most shining member of the university, and was at last chosen rector of it. He was not content with supporting that honour by his profound learning, but took such infinite pains with himself, as to acquire all the qualities of a man of honour and integrity.

“ Whilst he was rector, he heard that a young fellow of Salamanca had been committed to prison upon an accusation for a rape, and was upon the point of being executed. Bahabon, upon this, remembering that Piquillo’s son had carried off a woman, enquired who the prisoner was;

T

and

and being informed it was this very son of Piquillo, undertook his defence. One admirable circumstance in the science of the law is, that it furnishes arguments on both sides; and as our rector was a compleat master of it, he made an excellent use of it in defence of the criminal. It is true he joined to it the credit of his friends, and the strongest solicitation; which, indeed, did more than all the rest.

The criminal then came off whiter than snow. He went to thank his deliverer, who said thus to him: "I have served you, but it was in regard to your father; I love him, and to give you a fresh instance of it, if you have any thoughts of continuing here, and living honestly, I will undertake to make a man of you; if, as your father has done, you have a mind to take a trip to the Indies, you may be sure of fifty pistoles, I engage my word for them." Young Piquillo made him this answer: "Since I have the honour of your lordship's protection, I should act very wrong to leave a place where I enjoy so great an advantage. No, my lord, I will remain at Salamanca, and do protest to you, that my conduct shall be such as shall please you." Upon these assurances, the rector put twenty pistoles into his hands, saying, "Here friend, take these; take up some honest profession, employ your time well, and rest assured that I will not desert you."

About two months afterwards, it happened that young Piquillo, who from time to time used to make his court to Don Pablos, one day appeared before him all in tears. "What is the matter with you?" said Bahabon. "Sir," answered the son of Ambrosio, "I have just heard a piece of news that breaks my heart. My father has been taken by an Algerine rover, and is actually in chains. An old man of this town, who is returned from Algiers after a ten years slavery, whom the fathers of mercy have lately redeemed, just now told me he left him there a captive.—Alas!" added he, beating his breast, and tearing his hair, "wretch that

I am! it was my debaucheries forced my father to hide his money, and banish himself from his country! it is I that have delivered him up to a barbarian who is loading him with fetters! Ah, Signior Don Pablos, why did you rescue me from the hands of justice! since you loved my father, you should have been his avenger, and suffered me, by my death, to have expiated the horrid, horrid crime, of having caused all his calamities."

At this discourse, which shewed a rakish son converted, the rector was moved with the grief which the young Piquillo testified. "My child," said he, "it is with pleasure I see you repent of your faults; but dry up your tears. It is sufficient that I know what is become of Ambrosio, to assure you that you shall see him again. His liberty is to be purchased with a ransom, and that I take upon myself. Whatever he may have suffered, I am persuaded that finding a discreet affectionate son in you at his return, he will no more complain of his ill fortune."

Don Pablos eased the mind of Ambrosio's son by this promise, and three or four days after set out for Madrid; where, upon his arrival, he put into the hands of the fathers of mercy a purse of an hundred pistoles, with a little label upon it in these words: "This sum is given the fathers of redemption, for the ransom of a poor citizen of Salamanca, named Ambrosio Piquillo, captive at Algiers." Those good fathers, in their last voyage to Algiers, have punctually followed the rector's intention. They have redeemed Ambrosio, who is the slave whose composed air you so much admired.

But methinks, said Don Cleofas, Bahabon is now not at all in the citizen's debt.—Don Pablos is not of your opinion, answered Asinodius: he intends to return both principal and interest. His nice conscience is even scrupulous of enjoying the wealth he has acquired during his rectorship. And when he sees Piquillo, he intends to say thus to him: "My dear friend, Ambrosio, no longer look on me as your

"your benefactor: in me you only
 "see a rascal who dug up the money
 "you hid in the wood. It is not suf-
 "ficient for me to restore you your
 "two hundred and fifty doubloons,
 "since I made use of it to attain the
 "rank I hold in life; whatever I have
 "is yours. I will keep no more than
 "you shall judge necessary to—"
 Here the Devil upon Two Sticks stooped
 short. He was suddenly taken with a
 frisson, and changed colour.

"What is the matter?" said the stu-
 dent; "what extraordinary motion
 "makes you shake, and stop short?"—
 "Ah, Signior Leandro," cried the
 daemon, with a trembling voice, "how
 "unfortunate am I! The conjuror, who
 "kept me in the bottle in his labora-
 "tory, has found I am flown. He is
 "going to recal me by such forcible
 "conjurations as I cannot resist."—
 "What a mortification is this to me!"
 said Don Cleofas, quite softened with
 compassion, "and what a loss am I
 "going to suffer! Alas, we are going
 "to part for ever!"—"I do not think
 "so," answered Asmodeus. "The
 "magician may want my assistance, and
 "if I have the good fortune to do him
 "any service, perhaps out of grati-
 "tude he may give me my liberty.
 "If that should happen, as I hope, de-
 "pend upon it I will soon be with you,
 "upon condition that you reveal to no
 "soul living what has this night passed
 "between us; for should you be so
 "indiscreet as to impart it to any bo-
 "dy, I tell you before-hand you will
 "never see me more."

"What makes my leaving you a lit-
 "tle easier to me," pursued he, "is,
 "that, at the worst, I have made your
 "fortune. You will marry the fair
 "Seraphina, whom I have made doat-
 "ingly fond of you. Signior Don
 "Pedro de Escolano, her father, is re-
 "solved to marry her to you. Do not
 "let slip so fine a settlement.—But,
 "bless me!" added he, "I already hear
 "the magician call me; all hell rings
 "with the terrible words pronounced
 "by this formidable cabalist. I can-
 "not stay any longer with your lord-
 "ship. Adieu, dear Zambullo, till
 "I see you again!" At these words,
 he embraced Don Cleofas, and hav-
 ing seen him safe to his apartment, dis-
 appeared.

C H A P. XII.

OF WHAT DON CLEOFAS DID AFTER
 THE DEVIL HAD LEFT HIM, AND
 HOW THE AUTHOR OF THIS
 WORK THOUGHT FIT TO END IT.

AS soon as Asmodeus was gone,
 the student finding himself fa-
 tigued with having been all the night
 on his legs, bestirring himself, un-
 dressed, and went to bed, to take a little
 rest. His spirits were so agitated, he
 could hardly get to sleep; but at last,
 paying Morpheus that tribute which
 all mortals owe, with usury, he fell
 into a dead sleep, in which he conti-
 nued that whole day and the following
 night.

In this condition he had remained
 for four and twenty hours, when Don
 Lewis de Lujana, a young gentleman
 of his acquaintance, came into his
 chamber, crying out as loud as he
 could, "Soho, Signior Don Cleofas!
 'up, up.' At this noise Zambullo
 waked. 'Do you know,' said Don
 Lewis, 'that you have been abed ever
 'since yesterday morning?'—'That
 'is impossible,' answered Leandro.
 'And yet nothing can be more true,'
 replied his friend; 'you have slept the
 'clock round twice. Every body in
 'the house has assured me it is fact.'

The student, astonished at so long a
 nap, was at first afraid that his adven-
 ture with the Devil upon Two Sticks was
 no more than a dream. Yet he could
 not think so neither; and when he re-
 called some particular circumstances,
 he no longer doubted but what he had
 seen was real. However, to ease his
 doubts, he got up, dressed with all haste,
 and went out with Don Lewis, whom
 he carried towards the gate of the sun,
 without telling him any reason. When
 they were there, and Don Cleofas found
 Don Pedro's house almost burnt to
 the ground, he pretended a surprise.
 'What is this I see!' said he. 'What
 'sad work the fire has made here!
 'whose was this unfortunate house?
 'Is it long since it was burnt?'

Don Lewis de Lujana answered his
 two questions; and thus pursued his
 discourse: 'The vast damages of this
 'fire make less noise in the city, than
 'a circumstance I am going to tell

‘you. Signior Don Pedro de Escolano has an only daughter beautiful as the day. They say she was in a room filled with fire and smoke, where she must inevitably have perished, and she was rescued, notwithstanding, by a young gentleman whose name I have not yet learned. It is the common topick of every conversation at Madrid. The cavalier’s bravery is cried up to the skies; and it is believed, that though he be nothing more than a private gentleman, he may very well obtain the daughter of Don Pedro, as the reward of so glorious an action.’

Leandro Perez listened to Don Lewis without shewing he was the least concerned in what he was talking of; and disengaging himself upon an excuse he feigned, he went to the Prado, and sitting down under some trees, fell into a deep thought. Immediately the Devil upon Two Sticks came into his mind. ‘I cannot,’ said he, ‘too much regret my dear Asmodeus. He would in a short time have carried me all over the world, and I should have made that tour without any of the inconveniences that travelling is liable to. Doubtless, I have a great loss!—But,’ presently subjoined he, ‘perhaps it is not irreparable. Why should I despair of seeing him again! it may happen, as he himself said, that the conjuror may immediately give him his liberty.’ Then thinking of Don Pedro and his daughter, he resolved to make him a visit, pushed on by the curiosity alone of seeing the fair Seraphina.

The moment he appeared before Don Pedro, that lord ran and embraced him with open arms; crying out, ‘Welcome, generous cavalier! I began to be angry with you. “How,”’ said I, “after the pressing instances I made Don Cleofas to come and see me, is he still absent from my eyes! How ill does he return the impatience I feel to testify the esteem and friendship I have for him!”’

Zambullo hung down his head out of respect at so obliging a reproach; and excused himself to the old gentleman, by telling him he feared he should have been troublesome in the confusion he judged he must have been in the day before. ‘That excuse will

‘not satisfy me,’ replied Don Pedro, ‘you could never be troublesome in a house, where, had it not been for you, a greater sadness would have reigned. But,’ added he, ‘be pleased to follow me, you have other thanks to receive besides mine.’ At these words, he took him by the hand, and led him into Seraphina’s apartment.

That lady was just come from prayers: ‘Daughter,’ said her father, ‘I am come to present the gentleman to you who so bravely saved your life. Shew him how sensible you are of the great favour he did you, since the condition you was in the day before yesterday would not permit you to do it then.’ Whereupon Signora Seraphina, opening a mouth of roses, addressed herself to him in a compliment that would charm all my readers, could I repeat it word for word; but as it has not been handed down to me exactly, I chuse rather to pass it over in silence, than spoil it.

I shall only say, that Don Cleofas imagined it was a divinity he saw and heard, and that he was at once taken by the eyes and the ears. Immediately he felt a violent passion for her. But far from considering her as one he was sure of marrying, he doubted, notwithstanding all the devil had said, whether so glorious a reward was to be the recompence of a service they imagined he had done them. The more charming she appeared to him, the less did he dare to flatter himself with the happiness of gaining her.

What confirmed him in his uncertainty of obtaining so great a blessing, was, that Don Pedro, during the long conversation they had, never touched once upon that string, and only loaded him with civilities, without hinting the least desire to be his father-in-law. Seraphina, too, on her side, as polite as her papa, turned the discourse wholly upon gratitude, without making use of any expression that could give Zambullo room to think that she loved him. So that he took his leave of Signior Escolano with a great deal of love, and very little hope.

‘Friend Asmodeus,’ said he in his way home, as if he had still been with the devil, ‘when you assured me that Don Pedro was inclined to make me his son-in-law, and that Seraphina burnt with a lively flame which you had

‘ had inspired her with for me, you
‘ must have intended to divert yourself
‘ at my expence, or else you must own
‘ that you know as little of the pre-
‘ sent as the future.’

Our student was sorry he had visited the lady; and, looking upon his passion for her as an ill-fated love he ought to conquer, resolved to spare no pains to accomplish it. He went farther; he reproached himself with his eagerness at pushing his design, supposing he had found the father inclined to grant him his daughter, and looked upon it as shameful to owe his happiness to an artifice.

He was still full of these reflections, when Don Pedro, having sent for him the next day, began thus: ‘ Signior Leandro Perez, it is time for me to prove by my actions, that when you obliged me, you did not do a good office to one of those courtiers who, were he in my place, would content himself with returning it with a little court holy-water. But I intend that Seraphina herself shall be the reward of that danger you run upon her account. I must tell you, too, that I have found her to be my own daughter, in the proposal I made her of marrying her deliverer. She shewed her joy, by a transport which has convinced me her gratitude equals my own. It is then resolved on, you shall have my daughter.’

At these words, the good Signior de Escolano, who expected Don Cleofas would have returned his most humble thanks for so great a favour, was surprised to see him stand speechless and confounded. ‘ Speak, Zambullo,’ said he; ‘ what am I to think of the disorder my proposal has put you into? What can have set you against her? Ought a private gentleman to refuse an alliance by which a grandee would think himself honoured? Has the nobility of my family any blemish that I am a stranger to?’

‘ My lord,’ answered Leandro, ‘ I am but too sensible of the distance which Heaven has placed between us.’ — ‘ Wherefore, then,’ replied Don Pedro, ‘ do you seem so little pleased at a marriage that does you so much honour? Come, be ingenuous, Don Cleofas, you are in love with

some lady to whom you have given your faith; and it is she whose interest at this time stands as a bar to your advancement.’ — ‘ Had I a mistress, to whom I might have engaged myself by any oath,’ answered the student, ‘ without doubt, no reason should induce me to be false to her. But it is not that which prevents my accepting your favours. The nice notion I have of honour commands me to forego the glorious establishment you design me; and, far from intending to make an ill use of the error you are in, I am going to undeceive you: I am not Seraphina’s deliverer.’

‘ What do I hear!’ cried the old gentleman, in amaze; ‘ was it not you that rescued her from the flames that were going to devour her? Was it not you that performed so gallant an action?’ — ‘ No, my lord,’ answered Zambullo. ‘ Vain had been that attempt to any mortal man, and I will plainly tell you it was a devil that saved your daughter.’

These words increased Don Pedro’s surprize; who, thinking he ought not to understand them in a literal sense, desired the student to speak plainer. Upon this, Leandro, without giving himself any pain for Asmodeus’s friendship, told him all that had passed between the devil and himself. The old gentleman then resumed the discourse, and said to Don Cleofas, ‘ The confidence you have now reposed in me, confirms me in my design of giving you my daughter. You are originally her deliverer; had not you interceded with the Devil upon Two Sticks, to snatch her from impending death, he had infallibly suffered her to perish. It is you, therefore, that have preserved Seraphina’s days. In a word, you have deserved her, and I offer her you with half my estate.’

Leandro Perez, at these words, which eased all scruples, threw himself at Don Pedro’s feet, in order to thank him for his great goodness. Shortly, after the wedding was celebrated with a magnificence suitable to the heiress of Signior Escolano, and to the great satisfaction of the friends of our student, who was thereby well rewarded for a few hours of liberty which he had procured the Devil upon Two Sticks.

BRITISH
4 APR 1911
MUSEUM

